

WAR AND PEACE, SIMPLIFIED NAMES
EDITION



LEO TOLSTOY

Translated by
LOUISE AND AYLMER MAUDE

Edited by
TOMKIN COLEMAN

PAWSITIVITY PRESS

CONTENTS

Copyright

Introduction By The Editor

Notes On Editing

List Of Names

1. BOOK 1: 1805
2. BOOK 2
3. BOOK 3: 1805
4. BOOK 4: 1806
5. BOOK 5: 1806 – 07
6. BOOK 6: 1808 - 10
7. BOOK 7: 1810 - 11
8. BOOK 8: 1811 - 12
9. BOOK 9: 1812
10. BOOK 10: 1812
11. BOOK 11: 1812
12. BOOK 12: 1812
13. BOOK 13: 1812
14. BOOK 14: 1812
15. BOOK 15: 1812 - 13
16. FIRST EPILOGUE: 1813 – 20
17. SECOND EPILOGUE

COPYRIGHT

This work is licensed under the Creative Commons CC0 1.0 Universal license. This license allows re-users to distribute, remix, adapt, and build upon the material in any medium or format. The license allows for commercial use.

Print ISBN: 979-8-218-11720-7

Ebook ISBN: 978-1-950255-15-3

INTRODUCTION BY THE EDITOR

Reason #1 people don't read *War and Peace*: Too many names.

In past versions, one character may have a half-dozen names. Some characters even share the same name. In this edition, all characters have only one name.

Reason #2: Too many phrases in French and other languages.

In this edition, I translated all foreign words into English and marked them with italics. Readers no longer have to refer to footnotes or look up foreign phrases that past translators assumed readers knew the meaning of.

Reason #3: Too many awkwardly translated phrases.

In this edition, I corrected the most egregious mistranslations. Examples include “rudenesses,” “scarriages,” and “beshashed.” I also adjusted many sentences that I felt were awkwardly translated by Louise and Aylmer Maude in their 1922 translation.

Reason #4: Too long.

With the above alterations in this edition of *War and Peace*, the novel is so clear and engaging that modern readers won't want it to end! After all, few people think the Downton Abbey series is too long. I hope that with the simplification of names and other edits in this new edition of *War and Peace*, readers will find this novel similarly enjoyable.

-Tomkin Coleman

December 2022

NOTES ON EDITING

I loved reading *War and Peace*. I loved, as Andrew D. Kaufman describes in his book, *Give War and Peace a Chance: Tolstoyan Wisdom for Troubled Times*, the novel's main theme of our “search to find meaning in a relentlessly unstable world.” Reading *War and Peace* helped me cope with Covid, national politics, and deaths in my family. What I didn’t love about *War and Peace* was how often I was distracted from appreciating the book’s wonderful plot, themes, and characters. I spent considerable time looking up information such as foreign words, anachronisms, and yes, looking up characters to find out who was who. I tried to find a more readable translation of the novel but there wasn’t one. So I decided to do something about it. My goal was to create a faithful version of Louise and Aylmer Maudes’ translation from 1922 but with small edits that make the text more readable. This edition eliminates many anachronisms, clarifies awkwardly translated passages, and simplifies character names. Now the reader can simply enjoy the text without puzzling over the author’s intention. It’s true that when names are simplified, something is lost. Tolstoy is playful in his use of nicknames and relationships to refer to characters. When he wrote *War and Peace*, readers of the original Russian understood his Russian references. Even English readers of his time understood the contemporary references. This edition attempts to re-create this kind of understanding. No

longer do readers have to puzzle out the confusing elements of the text. Instead, they can simply enjoy the actions and passion of the characters. Plot and character are no longer hidden behind awkwardly translated and hard-to-follow wordplay.

I chose to edit Louise and Aylmer Maudes' translation from 1922 because I think it is the easiest version to read. However, one thing that diminishes their version's readability is the translation of foreign phrases. Although most of the French words are translated into English, those translations are down in the footnotes. I did not use footnotes. Instead, I placed the translated words directly in the text and italicized them. I also translated the German, Russian, Latin, and other foreign words and put them in italics. Maudes' version is public domain, so I am making this version available as public domain, as well. My hope is that this version will inspire readers to make short stories, plays, audiobooks, and other adaptations.

The primary focus of this translation is the simplification of names and titles. My favorite example of name confusion in modern translations of *War and Peace* centers around the use of the word "Tzar." Tolstoy used "Tzar" to refer to the sovereigns of several nations. Adding to the confusion, Tolstoy also used the words "Emperor" and "Tzar" interchangeably. In English, however, the word "Tzar" is usually used only for the leader of Russia. In this edition, the word "Tzar" is used in a clear and simple way—it's reserved only for the Russian leader. For the Austrian sovereign, I use the term "the Emperor of Austria." Likewise, Napoleon is referred to simply as Napoleon. He is not referred to as "Bonaparte," "Buonaparte," "Tzar," or "Emperor." Nor is he referred to by any other name unless the character is talking about what title or name they should use for him. In this edition, the Russian Tzar is the only "Tzar" in the book. The Tzar's relations in this edition are "the Tzar's mother," "the Tzar's son," etc. His relation's names, nicknames, and titles are not used.

Other names required many fewer changes. For instance, Tolstoy refers to Pierre and Natasha fairly consistently throughout the book. Only occasionally does Tolstoy use their titles or nicknames. Even with these two characters, though, I've changed every reference to them to only their first names. This prevents confusion and makes the text more readable.

I made a more dramatic change to the names of Natasha's parents. In this edition, they are now referred to as "Count Rostov" and "Countess Rostov." In Russian, the female version of "Rostov" is "Rostova." I simply use the English translation of the name, "Rostov," for both the Count and Countess. In Tolstoy's original, he rarely uses these characters' names at all. Instead, he refers to "Natasha's father," "the count," or uses other vague terms. It's quite easy for a new reader to mix up these important characters with other ones. For instance, the name "Count Rostov" refers to several different characters! This sort of wordplay might be easy to follow in the original Russian, but an English translation read a hundred years later is not as clear and simple. When the novel's names and plot points are puzzling to the reader, it can be impossible to find humor in the confusion. In this new edition, the plots involving the Rostovs are quite clear, and both of these characters are always referred to in a consistent matter.

Tolstoy is not as straightforward with the characters of Andrei and Nicholas. In addition to their first names, they are often referred to by their titles or their last names. More confusion occurs because both characters share their titles with their fathers. In this edition, I refer to Andrei and Nicholas solely by their first names.

I made a bigger change to the names of Prince Vasili, Prince Bolkonski, and other princes in this edition. In the 1922 English translation by the Maudes, readers can become confused by the title of Prince. In the English tradition, "Prince" refers to a person who is in line to become the king. In Russia, this is not the case; the title of Prince was more like a Baron or a Duke. Such a title indicates that while they were powerful, that person is

not in line to become king. In many ways, “Baron” is a more accurate translation than “Prince.” Thus, this edition refers to the princes as barons.

Similarly, I refer to Princesses Lise, Marya, and others only by their first names. First of all, I do so because these characters are not in line to inherit the crown. Also, these characters aren’t as powerful as their prince and princess parents. Not using a title helps differentiate them from their parents.

With other characters, however, adding titles helps clarify their roles in the novel. For instance, I rename Bilíbin as “Adjutant Bilibin” and “Kozlówski” as “Aide-de-camp Kozlovski.” These added titles help the reader comprehend the characters’ roles in the plot at a glance. Changing “Mademoiselle Bourienne” to “Lady-in-waiting Bourienne” makes her title much more descriptive. It’s true that the character known as “Uncle” (with quotation marks) does have a descriptive name/title. Unfortunately, the quotation marks become distracting to the reader. (The distraction is especially acute when used with an apostrophe!) Tolstoy refers to “Uncle” almost a hundred times in the novel. I changed the name to the Russian word for “Uncle,” which is “Dyadya.” This change makes the character’s name much easier to read. It’s true that referring to the character as Dyadya isn’t as immediately descriptive as “Uncle.” But this tradeoff seems reasonable when one considers the improvement in readability.

Similarly, I altered military titles (and simplified them, when necessary). This way, the book’s war scenes are much easier to read. Tolstoy refers to different generals by their noble titles of Baron, Prince, or Duke. This edition uses the title of General for all the Russian generals to simplify their roles in the plot. I differentiate French military leaders from Russian ones by using the title of “Général.”

The character of Kutuzov has a couple different changes in this edition. These are necessary, in part, because of his military promotion in the middle of the book. First of all, I use the short title “Marshal” rather than

the long title “Commander-in-Chief.” In this edition, Kutuzov starts the book as simply “General Kutuzov.” When he is promoted to Marshal, then I refer to him as “Marshal Kutuzov.” Similarly, Barclay de Tolly is referred to as “Marshal Barclay” in the beginning of the book. When he is demoted, he becomes “General Barclay.”

Place names are often changed in this edition by adding a word of clarity. For instance, I changed “Schlappanitz” to “village of Schlappanitz.” Likewise, I changed “the Tverskáya” to “Tverskaya Street.” It is possible for modern readers to figure out place names by context. However, adding this clarification can be helpful.

The other name changes are more subtle. The above examples give a good idea of my intentions in altering the names of the characters.

I did make some additional changes, as well, throughout the book. When I felt the translation by the Maudes was overly literal, I made minor edits to make the text more readable. For instance, I inserted commas for clarity. Likewise, I removed many commas that were cumbersome and unnecessary. It's true that such corrections make the text less faithful to the original translation. However, I think it is more faithful to Tolstoy's original story in that it is much clearer. This clarity was lost when the work was translated into English in an overly literal way.

One example of these changes is in the first sentence of the novel:

The Maudes' translation:

“Well, Prince, so Genoa and Lucca are now just family estates of the Buonapartes.”

This new translation:

“Well, Baron Vasili, so the Italian cities of Genoa and Lucca are now just Napoleon's family estates.”

I hope you will enjoy this edited version of the translation and find it clear and easy to understand. My goal is for the reader to thoroughly

appreciate Tolstoy's clever writing, intricate plotting, and magnificent storylines.

LIST OF NAMES

Pierre: The main male character. Starts out as an oaf but goes through profound changes.

Count Bezukhov: Pierre's father. Rich and old.

Andrei: Pierre's best friend. Has unreasonably high ideals for achieving glory and having people love him.

Lise: Andrei's wife. Pregnant with their son, Nikolenka.

Baron Bolkonski: Andrei's father. Insufferably overbearing.

Marya: Andrei's sister. Religious. Devoted to their father, Baron Bolkonski.

Mademoiselle Bourienne: Marya's attendant.

Butler Tikhon, Overseer Alpatych, Dron: Andrei's servants.

Natasha: The main female character. Very passionate. Always surprising.

Sonya: Natasha's best friend and cousin, an orphan who lives with the family.

Nicholas: Natasha's brother, who wants to be a hero. Learns the true meaning of courage.

Denisov: Nicholas's boss.

Petya: Natasha's young brother. Sweet and impetuous. Eventually goes to war.

Count and Countess Rostov: Natasha's lovely parents. The count may fritter away his wife's money, but he is good at being happy.

Boris: The social climber. Smarmy and shallow.

Widow Drubetskoy: Boris's mother, who helps him in his social climbing.

Baron Vasili: The bad guy.

Helene: Baron Vasili's naughty daughter. A femme fatale.

Anatole: Baron Vasili's naughty son. A seducing Casanova.

Hippolyte: Another son.

Julie: Rich heiress. Pen pal of Marya (Andrei's religious sister).

Dolokhov: The psycho. A terrible friend but a great soldier.

Platón: The noble peasant. Understands the joy of simply being alive.

Anna Palovna: Socialite hostess.

Napoleon: The enemy.

Général Murat: One of Napoleon's many generals.

General (later promoted to Marshal) Kutuzov: The wise Russian military leader.

Marshal (later demoted to General) Barclay de Tolly: Kutuzov's boss (later replaced by Kutuzov).

Major Bagration: Kutuzov's main general.

General Pfuell: Smart general with a lot of plans that never work out.

General Raevsky: Showy general willing to sacrifice his sons for glory.

Artillery Captain Tushin: Hardworking but under-valued.

The Tzar: Head of Russia.

Secretary of State Speransky: A reformer of government with a cold and artificial manner.

Mayor Rastopchin: The foolish mayor/governor of Moscow.

Vereshchagin: Political prisoner.

BOOK 1: 1805



“Well, Baron Vasili, so the Italian cities of Genoa and Lucca are now just Napoleon’s family estates. But I warn you, if you don’t tell me that this means war, if you still try to defend the infamies and horrors perpetrated by that Antichrist named Napoleon—I really believe he is the Antichrist—then I will have nothing more to do with you and you are no longer my friend, no longer my ‘faithful slave,’ as you call yourself! But how do you do? I see I have frightened you—sit down and tell me all the news.”

It was in July 1805, and the speaker was the well-known Anna Pavlovna, a favorite of the Mother of the Tzar. With these words, she greeted Baron Vasili, a man of high rank and importance, who was the first to arrive at her reception. Anna had had a cough for some days. She was, as she said, suffering from a flu she called the grippe; “grippe” being then a new word in St. Petersburg, used only by the elite.

All of Anna Pavlovna’s invitations, without exception, were written in French, and delivered by a scarlet-liveried footman that morning, ran as follows:

“If you have nothing better to do, Count (or Baron), and if the prospect of spending an evening with a poor invalid is not too terrible, I shall be very charmed to see you tonight between 7 and 10—Anna Pavlovna.”

“Heavens! what an intense attack!” replied Baron Vasili, not in the least disconcerted by this reception. He had just entered, wearing an embroidered court uniform, knee breeches, and shoes, and had stars on his breast and a serene expression on his flat face. Baron Vasili spoke in that refined French in which our grandfathers not only spoke but thought, and with the gentle, patronizing intonation natural to a man of importance who had grown old in society and at court. He went up to Anna Pavlovna, kissed her hand, presented to her his bald, scented, and shining head, and complacently seated himself on the sofa.

“First of all, dear Anna Pavlovna, tell me how you are. Set your friend’s mind at rest,” said Baron Vasili without altering his tone, beneath the politeness and affected sympathy of which indifference and even irony could be discerned.

“Can one be well while suffering morally? Can one be calm in times like these if one has any feelings?” said Anna Pavlovna. “You are staying the whole evening, I hope?”

“And the fete at the English ambassador’s? Today is Wednesday. I must put in an appearance there,” said Baron Vasili. “My daughter is coming for me to take me there.”

“I thought today’s fete had been canceled. I confess all these festivities and fireworks are becoming wearisome.”

“If they had known that you wished it, the entertainment would have been put off,” said Baron Vasili who, like a wound-up clock, by force of habit said things he did not even wish to be believed.

“Don’t tease! Well, what has been decided about General Novosiltsev’s dispatch? You know everything.”

“What can one say about it?” replied Baron Vasili in a cold, listless tone. “What has been decided? They have decided that Napoleon has “burnt his boats” as a commitment to the war and I believe that we are ready to burn ours.”

Baron Vasili always spoke languidly, like an actor repeating a stale part. Anna Pavlovna, on the contrary, despite her forty years, overflowed with animation and impulsiveness. To be an enthusiast had become her social vocation and, sometimes even when she did not feel like it, she became enthusiastic in order not to disappoint the expectations of those who knew her. Anna Pavlovna's subdued smile which, though it did not suit her faded features, always played around her lips, and expressed, as in a spoiled child, a continual consciousness of her charming defect, which she neither wished, nor could, nor considered it necessary, to correct.

During a conversation on political matters Anna Pavlovna burst out:

"Oh, don't speak to me of Austria. Perhaps I don't understand things, but Austria never has wished, and does not wish, for war. She is betraying us! Russia alone must save Europe. Our gracious sovereign, the Tzar, recognizes his high vocation and will be true to it. That is the one thing I have faith in! Our good and wonderful sovereign has to perform the noblest role on earth, and he is so virtuous and noble that God will not forsake him. He will fulfill his vocation and crush the hydra of revolution, which has become more terrible than ever in the person of this murderer and villain! We alone must avenge the murder of the just one, Duc d'Enghien... Whom, I ask you, can we rely on?... England with her commercial spirit will not and cannot understand the Tzar's loftiness of soul. England has refused to evacuate Malta. She wanted to find, and still seeks, some secret motive for our actions. What answer did General Novosiltsev get? None. The English have not understood and cannot understand the self-abnegation of our Tzar who wants nothing for himself, but only desires the good of mankind. And what have the English promised? Nothing! And what little they have promised they will not perform! Prussia has always declared that Napoleon is invincible and that all of Europe is powerless before him... And I don't believe a word that the Prussian statesman Hardenburg says, or statesman Haugwitz either. This famous Prussian neutrality is just a trap. I have faith

only in God and the lofty destiny of our adored monarch, the Tzar. He will save Europe!”

Anna Pavlovna suddenly paused, smiling at her own impetuosity.

“I think,” said Baron Vasili with a smile, “that if you had been sent instead of our dear General Wintzingerode you would have captured the King of Prussia’s consent by assault. You are so eloquent. Will you give me a cup of tea?”

“In a moment. About that,” she added, becoming calm again, “I am expecting two very interesting men tonight, a viscount who is connected with the Montmorencys through the Rohans, one of the best French families. The viscount is one of the genuine emigres, the good ones. And also the Abbot Morio. Do you know that profound thinker? He has been received by the Tzar. Had you heard?”

“I shall be delighted to meet them,” said Baron Vasili. “But tell me,” he added with studied carelessness as if it had only just occurred to him, though the question he was about to ask was the chief motive of his visit, “is it true that the Mother of the Tzar wants Baron Funke to be appointed as first secretary at Vienna? Baron Funke by all accounts is a poor creature.”

Baron Vasili wished to obtain this post for his son, Anatole, but others were trying through the Mother of the Tzar to secure it for Baron Funke.

Anna Pavlovna almost closed her eyes to indicate that neither she nor anyone else had a right to criticize what the Mother of the Tzar desired or was pleased with.

“Baron Funke has been recommended to the Mother of the Tzar by her sister,” was all she said, in a dry and mournful tone.

As she named the Mother of the Tzar, Anna Pavlovna’s face suddenly assumed an expression of profound and sincere devotion and respect mingled with sadness, and this occurred every time she mentioned her illustrious patroness. She added that the Mother of the Tzar had deigned to

show Baron Funke much respect, and again her face clouded over with sadness.

Baron Vasili was silent and looked indifferent. But, with the womanly and courtier-like quickness and tact habitual to her, Anna Pavlovna wished both to rebuke him (for daring to speak as he had done of a man recommended to the Mother of the Tzar) and at the same time to console him, so she said:

“Now about your family. Do you know that since your daughter, Helene, came out everyone has been enraptured by her? They say she is amazingly beautiful.”

Baron Vasili bowed to signify his respect and gratitude.

“I often think,” Anna Pavlovna continued after a short pause, drawing nearer to the Baron and smiling amiably at him as if to show that political and social topics were ended and the time had come for intimate conversation—“I often think how unfairly sometimes the joys of life are distributed. Why has fate given you two such splendid children? I don’t speak of Anatole, your youngest son. I don’t like him,” she added in a tone admitting of no rejoinder and raising her eyebrows. “Two such charming children. And really you appreciate them less than anyone, and so you don’t deserve to have them.”

Anna Pavlovna smiled her ecstatic smile.

“I can’t help it,” said Baron Vasili. “The poet Lavater would have said I lack the bump of paternity.”

“Don’t joke; I mean to have a serious talk with you. Do you know I am dissatisfied with Anatole? Between ourselves” (and her face assumed its melancholy expression), “he was mentioned at the Mother of the Tzar’s and you were pitied...”

Baron Vasili answered nothing, but she looked at him significantly, awaiting a reply. He frowned.

“What would you have me do?” he said at last. “You know I did all a father could do for their education, and they have both turned out fools. My other son, Hippolyte is at least a quiet fool, but Anatole is an active one. That is the only difference between them.” He said this smiling in a way more natural and animated than usual so that the wrinkles around his mouth very clearly revealed something unexpectedly coarse and unpleasant.

“And why are children born to such men as you? If you were not a father there would be nothing I could reproach you with,” said Anna Pavlovna, looking up pensively.

“I am your faithful slave and to you alone I can confess that my children are the bane of my life. It is the cross I have to bear. That is how I explain it to myself. It can’t be helped!”

Baron Vasili said no more but expressed his resignation to cruel fate by a gesture. Anna Pavlovna meditated.

“Have you never thought of marrying off your prodigal son, Anatole?” she asked. “They say old maids have a mania for matchmaking, and though I don’t feel that weakness in myself as yet, I know a young woman who is very unhappy with her father. She is a relation of yours, Marya Bolkonski.”

Baron Vasili did not reply, though, with the quickness of memory and perception befitting a man of the world, he indicated by a movement of the head that he was considering this information.

“Do you know,” Baron Vasili said at last, evidently unable to check the sad current of his thoughts, “that Anatole is costing me forty thousand rubles a year? And,” he went on after a pause, “what will it be in five years if he goes on like this?” Presently he added: “That’s what we fathers have to put up with... Is this Marya of yours rich?”

“Marya’s father is very rich but stingy. He lives in the country. He is the well-known Baron Bolkonski who had to retire from the army under the late Tzar, and was nicknamed ‘the King of Prussia.’ Baron Bolkonski is very clever but eccentric, and a bore. The poor girl Marya is very unhappy.

She has a brother named Andrei; I think you know him, he married his wife, Lise, lately. Andrei is an aide-de-camp of General Kutuzov's and will be here tonight."

"Listen, dear Anna Pavlovna," said Baron Vasili, suddenly taking Anna's hand and for some reason drawing it downwards. "Arrange a marriage between this rich heiress, Marya, and my son, Andrei, and I shall always be your most devoted slave ("slafe" with an "f", as a village elder of mine writes in his reports). Marya is rich and of a good family and that's all I want."

And with the familiarity and easy grace peculiar to him, Baron Vasili raised Anna Pavlovna's hand to his lips, kissed it, and swung it to and fro as he lay back in his armchair, looking in another direction.

"Wait," said Anna Pavlovna, reflecting, "I'll speak to Lise, Baron Bolkonski's daughter-in-law, this very evening, and perhaps the marriage can be arranged. It shall be on your family's behalf that I'll start my apprenticeship as a matchmaker."

Anna Pavlovna's drawing room was gradually filling. The highest St. Petersburg society was assembled there: people differing widely in age and character but alike in the social circle to which they belonged. Baron Vasili's daughter, the beautiful Helene, came to take her father to the ambassador's entertainment; Helene wore a ball dress and her badge as maid of honor. The youthful little Lise Bolkonski, known as "the most fascinating woman in St. Petersburg", was also there. Lise had been married to her husband Andrei, during the previous winter, and being pregnant, Lise did not go to any large gatherings, but only to small receptions. Baron Vasili's second son, Hippolyte, had come with a viscount whom he introduced. The abbe and many others had also come.

To each new arrival Anna Pavlovna said, "You have not yet seen my aunt," or "You do not know my aunt?" and very gravely conducted him or her to a little old lady, wearing large bows of ribbon in her cap, who had

come sailing in from another room as soon as the guests began to arrive; and slowly turning her eyes from the visitor to her aunt, Anna mentioned each one's name to her aunt and then left them.

Each visitor performed the ceremony of greeting this old aunt whom not one of them knew, not one of them wanted to know, and not one of them cared about; Anna Pavlovna observed these greetings with mournful and solemn interest and silent approval. The elderly aunt spoke to each of the visitors in the same words, about their health and her own, and the health of the Mother of the Tzar, "who, thank God, was better today." And each visitor, though politeness prevented his showing impatience, left the old woman with a sense of relief at having performed a vexatious duty and did not return to her the whole evening.

The young Lise had brought some needlework in a gold-embroidered velvet bag. Her pretty little upper lip, on which a delicate dark down was just perceptible, was too short for her teeth, but it lifted all the more sweetly and was especially charming when she occasionally drew it down to meet the lower lip. As is always the case with a thoroughly attractive woman, her defect—the shortness of her upper lip and her half-open mouth—seemed to be Lise's own special and peculiar form of beauty. Everyone brightened at the sight of this pretty young woman, so soon to become a mother, so full of life and health, and carrying her burden so lightly. Old men and dull dispirited young ones who looked at Lise, after being in her company and talking to her a little while, felt as if they too were becoming, like her, full of life and health. All who talked to her, and at each word saw her bright smile and the constant gleam of her white teeth, thought that they were in a specially amiable mood that day.

Lise went round the table with quick, short, swaying steps, her workbag on her arm, and gaily spreading out her dress sat down on a sofa near the silver samovar, as if all she was doing was a pleasure to herself and all around her. "I have brought my needlework," said she in French, displaying

her bag and addressing all present. "Mind, Anna Pavlovna, I hope you have not played a wicked trick on me," she added, turning to her hostess. "You wrote that it was to be quite a small reception, and just see how badly I am dressed." And she spread out her arms to show her short-waisted, lace-trimmed, dainty gray dress, girdled with a broad ribbon just below the breast.

"Stay calm, Lise, you will always be prettier than anyone else," replied Anna Pavlovna.

"Did you know," said Lise in the same tone of voice and still in French, turning to a general, "that my husband, Andrei, is deserting me by going to war? He is going to get himself killed. Tell me what this wretched war is for?" she added, addressing Baron Vasili, and without waiting for an answer she turned to speak to his daughter, the beautiful Helene.

"What a delightful woman this Lise is!" said Baron Vasili to Anna Pavlovna.

One of the next arrivals was Pierre, a stout, heavily built young man with close-cropped hair, spectacles, the light-colored breeches fashionable at that time, a very high ruffle, and a brown dress coat. Pierre was an illegitimate son of Count Bezukhov, a well-known grandee of Catherine the Great's time who now lay dying in Moscow. Pierre had not yet entered either the military or civil service, as he had only just returned from abroad where he had been educated, and this was his first appearance in society. Anna Pavlovna greeted him with the nod she accorded to the lowest hierarchy in her drawing room. But despite this lowest-grade greeting, a look of anxiety and fear, as at the sight of something too large and unsuited to the place, came over Anna Pavlovna's face when she saw him enter. Though Pierre was certainly rather bigger than the other men in the room, her anxiety could only have reference to the clever though shy, but observant and natural, expression that distinguished him from everyone else in that drawing room.

“It is very good of you, Pierre, to come and visit a poor invalid,” said Anna Pavlovna, exchanging an alarmed glance with her aunt as she conducted Pierre to her.

Pierre murmured something unintelligible and continued to look around as if in search of something. On his way to the aunt, he bowed to Lise with a pleased smile, as to an intimate acquaintance.

Anna Pavlovna’s alarm was justified, for Pierre turned away from the elderly aunt without waiting to hear her speech about the health of the Mother of the Tzar. Anna, in dismay, detained Pierre with the words: “Do you know the abbot? He is a most interesting man.”

“Yes, I have heard of his scheme for perpetual peace, and while it is very interesting it is hardly feasible.”

“You think so?” rejoined Anna Pavlovna in order to say something and get away to attend to her duties as hostess. But Pierre now committed a double act of impoliteness. First, he had left the elderly aunt before she had finished speaking to him, and now he continued to speak to another who wished to get away. With his head bent, and his big feet spread apart, Pierre began explaining his reasons for thinking the abbot’s plan chimerical.

“We will talk of it later,” said Anna Pavlovna with a smile.

And having gotten rid of this young man who did not know how to behave, Anna Pavlovna resumed her duties as hostess and continued to listen and watch, ready to help at any point where the conversation might happen to flag. Like the foreman of a spinning mill, when he has set the hands to work, goes round and notices here a spindle that has stopped or there one that creaks or makes more noise than it should, and hastens to check the machine or set it in proper motion, so Anna Pavlovna moved about her drawing room, approaching now a silent, now a too-noisy group, and by a word or slight rearrangement kept the conversational machine in steady, proper, and regular motion. But amid these cares, her anxiety about Pierre was evident. Anna Pavlovna kept an anxious watch on him when he

approached the group around the viscount to listen to what was being said there, and again when he passed to another group whose center was the abbot.

Pierre had been educated abroad, and this reception at Anna Pavlovna was the first he had attended in Russia. He knew that all the intellectual lights of St. Petersburg were gathered there and, like a child in a toyshop, did not know which way to look, afraid of missing any clever conversation that was to be heard. Seeing the self-confident and refined expression on the faces of those present, Pierre was always expecting to hear something very profound. At last, he came up to the abbot. Here the conversation seemed interesting and he stood waiting for an opportunity to express his own views, as young people are fond of doing.

Anna Pavlovna's reception was in full swing. The spindles hummed steadily and ceaselessly on all sides. Except for the aunt, beside whom sat only one elderly lady, who with her thin careworn face was rather out of place in this brilliant society, the whole company had settled into three groups. One, chiefly masculine, had formed around the abbot. Another, of young people, was grouped around the beautiful Helene, Baron Vasili's daughter, and Lise, very pretty and rosy, though rather too plump for her age. The third group was gathered around the viscount and Anna Pavlovna.

The viscount was a nice-looking young man with soft features and polished manners, who evidently considered himself a celebrity but out of politeness modestly placed himself at the disposal of the circle in which he found himself. Anna Pavlovna was obviously serving him up as a treat to her guests. As a clever *maître d'hôtel* serves up as a specially choice delicacy a piece of meat that no one who had seen it in the kitchen would have cared to eat, so Anna Pavlovna served up to her guests, first the viscount and then the abbot, as peculiarly choice morsels. The group about the viscount immediately began discussing the murder of the Duc d'Enghien in France. The viscount said that the Duc d'Enghien had

perished by his own magnanimity and that there were particular reasons for Napoleon's hatred of him.

"Ah, yes! Do tell us all about it, viscount," said Anna Pavlovna, with a pleasant feeling that there was something in the manner of Louis XV in the sound of that sentence: "Do tell us all about it, viscount."

The viscount bowed and smiled courteously in token of his willingness to comply. Anna Pavlovna arranged a group around him, inviting everyone to listen to his tale.

"The viscount knew the Duc d'Enghien personally," whispered Anna Pavlovna to one of the guests. "The viscount is a wonderful raconteur," said she to another. "How evidently he belongs to the best society," said she to a third; and the viscount was served up to the company in the choicest and most advantageous style, like a well-garnished joint of roast beef on a hot dish.

The viscount wished to begin his story and gave a subtle smile.

"Come over here, Helene, dear," said Anna Pavlovna to the beautiful young Helene who was sitting some way off, the center of another group.

Helene smiled. She rose with the same unchanging smile with which she had first entered the room—the smile of a perfectly beautiful woman. With a slight rustle of her white dress trimmed with moss and ivy, with a gleam of white shoulders, glossy hair, and sparkling diamonds, she passed between the men who made way for her, not looking at any of them but smiling on all, as if graciously allowing each the privilege of admiring her beautiful figure and shapely shoulders, back, and bosom—which in the fashion of those days were very much exposed—and she seemed to bring the glamour of a ballroom with her as she moved toward Anna Pavlovna. Helene was so lovely that not only did she not show any trace of coquetry, but on the contrary, she even appeared shy of her unquestionable and all too victorious beauty. She seemed to wish, but to be unable, to diminish its effect.

“How lovely!” said everyone who saw Helene; and the viscount lifted his shoulders and dropped his eyes as if startled by something extraordinary when she took her seat opposite and beamed upon him also with her unchanging smile.

“I doubt my ability before such an audience,” said the viscount, smilingly inclining his head.

Helene rested her bare round arm on a little table and considered a reply unnecessary. She smilingly waited. All the time the story was being told she sat upright, glancing now at her beautiful round arm, altered in shape by its pressure on the table, now at her still more beautiful bosom, on which she readjusted a diamond necklace. From time to time she smoothed the folds of her dress, and whenever the story produced an effect Helene glanced at Anna Pavlovna, at once adopted just the expression she saw on the maid of honor’s face, and again relapsed into her radiant smile.

Lise had also left the tea table and followed Helene.

“Wait a moment, I’ll get my needlework... Now then, what are you thinking of?” Lise went on, turning to Helene’s brother, Hippolyte. “Fetch me my workbag.”

There was a general movement as Lise, smiling and talking merrily to everyone at once, sat down and gaily arranged herself in her seat.

“Now I am all right,” Lise said, and asking the viscount to begin, she took up her work.

Hippolyte, having brought Lise’s workbag, joined the circle and moving a chair close to hers seated himself beside her.

The charmer Hippolyte was surprising by his extraordinary resemblance to his beautiful sister, Helene, but yet more by the fact that in spite of this resemblance he was exceedingly ugly. Hippolyte’s features were like Helene’s, but while in her case everything was lit up by a joyous, self-satisfied, youthful, and constant smile of animation, and by the wonderful classic beauty of her figure, his face on the contrary was dulled by

imbecility and a constant expression of sullen self-confidence, while his body was thin and weak. His eyes, nose, and mouth all seemed puckered into a vacant, wearied grimace, and his arms and legs always fell into unnatural positions.

“It’s not going to be a ghost story?” Hippolyte said, sitting down beside Lise and hastily adjusting his opera glasses, as if without this instrument he could not begin to speak.

“Why no, my dear fellow,” said the astonished viscount, shrugging his shoulders.

“Because I hate ghost stories,” said Hippolyte in a tone that showed that he only understood the meaning of his words after he had uttered them.

Hippolyte spoke with such self-confidence that his hearers could not be sure whether what he said was very witty or very stupid. He was dressed in a dark-green dress coat, knee breeches of the color of the thigh of a frightened nymph, as he called it, shoes, and silk stockings.

The viscount told his tale very neatly. It was an anecdote, then current, to the effect that the Duc d’Enghien had gone secretly to Paris to visit the famous actress, Mademoiselle George; that at her house he came upon Napoleon, who also enjoyed the actress’s favors, and that in his presence Napoleon happened to fall into one of the fainting fits to which he was subject, and was thus at the Duc d’Enghien’s mercy. The Duc d’Enghien’s spared Napoleon, however, and this magnanimity Napoleon subsequently repaid by death.

The story was very pretty and interesting, especially at the point where the rivals suddenly recognized one another; and the ladies looked agitated.

“Charming!” said Anna Pavlovna with an inquiring glance at Lise.

“Charming!” whispered Lise sticking the needle into her work as if to testify that the interest and fascination of the story prevented her from going on with it.

The viscount appreciated this silent praise and smiling gratefully prepared to continue, but just then Anna Pavlovna, who had kept a watchful eye on Pierre who so alarmed her, noticed that he was talking too loudly and vehemently with the abbot, so she hurried to the rescue. Pierre had managed to start a conversation with the abbot about the balance of power, and the abbot, evidently interested by the young man's simple-minded eagerness, was explaining his pet theory. Both were talking and listening too eagerly and too naturally, which was why Anna Pavlovna disapproved.

"The means are ... the balance of power in Europe and the rights of the people," the abbot was saying. "It is only necessary for one powerful nation like Russia—barbaric as she is said to be—to place herself disinterestedly at the head of an alliance having for its object the maintenance of the balance of power of Europe, and by heading the alliance, Russia would save the world!"

"But how are you to get that balance?" Pierre was beginning.

At that moment Anna Pavlovna came up and, looking severely at Pierre, asked the abbot how he stood the Russian climate. The abbot's face instantly changed and assumed an offensively affected, sugary expression, evidently habitual to him when conversing with women.

"I am so enchanted by the brilliancy of the wit and culture of the society, more especially of the feminine society, in which I have had the honor of being received, that I have not yet had time to think of the climate," said the abbot.

Not letting the abbot and Pierre escape, Anna Pavlovna, the more conveniently to keep them under observation, brought them into the larger circle.

Just then another visitor entered the drawing room: Andrei, Lise's husband. Andrei was a very handsome young man, of medium height, with firm, clearcut features. Everything about him, from his weary, bored expression to his quiet, measured step, offered a most striking contrast to

his quiet little wife, Lise. It was evident that Andrei not only knew everyone in the drawing room but had found them to be so tiresome that it wearied him to look at or listen to them. And among all these faces that he found so tedious, none seemed to bore him so much as that of his pretty wife, Lise. He turned away from her with a grimace that distorted his handsome face, kissed Anna Pavlovna's hand, and screwed up his eyes to scan the whole company.

"You are off to the war, Andrei?" said Anna Pavlovna.

"Yes. General Kutuzov," said Andrei, speaking French and stressing the last syllable of the general's name like a Frenchman, "has been pleased to take me as an aide-de-camp..."

"And Lise, your wife?"

"She will go to the country."

"Are you not ashamed to deprive us of your charming wife?"

"Andrei," said Lise, addressing her husband in the same coquettish manner in which she spoke to other men, "the viscount has been telling us such a tale about Mademoiselle George and Napoleon!"

Andrei screwed up his eyes and turned away. Pierre, who from the moment Andrei entered the room had watched him with glad, affectionate eyes, now came up and took his arm. Before he looked around Andrei frowned again, expressing his annoyance with whoever was touching his arm, but when he saw Pierre's beaming face he gave him an unexpectedly kind and pleasant smile.

"There now!... So you, too, are in the great world?" said Andrei to Pierre.

"I knew you would be here," replied Pierre. "I will come to supper with you. May I?" he added in a low voice so as not to disturb the viscount who was continuing his story.

"No, impossible!" said Andrei, laughing and pressing Pierre's hand to show that there was no need to ask the question. He wished to say

something more, but at that moment Baron Vasili and his daughter got up to go and the two young men rose to let them pass.

“You must excuse me, dear viscount,” said Baron Vasili, holding him down by the sleeve in a friendly way to prevent his rising. “This unfortunate fete at the ambassador’s deprives me of a pleasure and obliges me to interrupt you. I am very sorry to leave your enchanting party,” said Baron Vasili, turning to Anna Pavlovna.

Baron Vasili’s daughter, Helene, passed between the chairs, lightly holding up the folds of her dress, and the smile shone still more radiantly on her beautiful face. Pierre gazed at her with rapturous, almost frightened, eyes as she passed him.

“Very lovely,” said Andrei.

“Very,” said Pierre.

In passing, Baron Vasili seized Pierre’s hand and said to Anna Pavlovna: “Educate this bear for me! Pierre has been staying with me for a whole month and this is the first time I have seen him in society. Nothing is so necessary for a young man as the society of clever women.”

Anna Pavlovna smiled and promised to take Pierre in hand. She knew Pierre’s father, Count Bezukhov, to be a connection of Baron Vasili’s. An elderly lady, Widow Drubetskoy, who had been sitting with the old aunt rose hurriedly and overtook Baron Vasili in the anteroom. All the affectation of interest she had assumed had left her kindly and tear-worn face and it now expressed only anxiety and fear.

“How about my son, Boris, Baron Vasili?” said Widow Drubetskoy, hurrying after him into the anteroom. “I can’t remain any longer in St. Petersburg. Tell me what news I may take back to my poor boy.”

Although Baron Vasili listened reluctantly and not very politely to Widow Drubetskoy, even betraying some impatience, she gave him an ingratiating and appealing smile and took his hand that he might not go away.

“What would it cost you to say a word to the Tzar, and then Boris would be transferred to the Guards at once?” said Widow Drubetskoy.

“Believe me, I am ready to do all I can,” answered Baron Vasili, “but it is difficult for me to ask the Tzar. I should advise you to appeal to Chancellor Rumyántsev through Privy Councilor Golítsyn. That would be the best way.”

The elderly lady, Widow Drubetskoy, belonged to one of the best families in Russia, but she was poor, and having long been out of society had lost her former influential connections. She had now come to St. Petersburg to procure an appointment in the Guards for her only son, Boris. It was, in fact, solely to meet Baron Vasili that she had obtained an invitation to Anna Pavlovna’s reception and had sat listening to the viscount’s story. Baron Vasili’s words frightened her, an embittered look clouded her once beautiful face, but only for a moment; then she smiled again and clutched Baron Vasili’s arm more tightly.

“Listen to me, Baron Vasili,” said Widow Drubetskoy. “I have never yet asked you for anything and I never will again, nor have I ever reminded you of my father’s friendship for you; but now I entreat you for God’s sake to do this for my son, Boris—and I shall always regard you as a benefactor,” she added hurriedly. “No, don’t be angry, but promise! I have already asked Privy Councilor Golítsyn and he has refused. Be the kindhearted man you always were,” she said, trying to smile though tears were in her eyes.

“Papa, we shall be late,” said Helene, turning her beautiful head and looking over her classically molded shoulder as she stood waiting by the door.

Influence in society, however, is a capital that has to be economized if it is to last. Baron Vasili knew this, and having once realized that if he asked on behalf of all who begged of him, he would soon be unable to ask for himself, he became chary of using his influence. But in Widow Drubetskoy’s case, he felt, after her second appeal, something like qualms

of conscience. She had reminded him of what was quite true; Baron Vasili had been indebted to her father for the first steps in his career. Moreover, he could see by her manners that she was one of those women—mostly mothers—who, having once made up their minds, will not rest until they have gained their end, and are prepared if necessary to go on insisting day after day and hour after hour, and even to make scenes. This last consideration moved him.

“My dear Widow Drubetskoy,” said Baron Vasili with his usual familiarity and weariness of tone, “it is almost impossible for me to do what you ask; but to prove my devotion to you and how I respect your father’s memory, I will do the impossible—your son Boris shall be transferred to the Guards. Here is my hand on it. Are you satisfied?”

“My dear benefactor! This is what I expected from you—I knew your kindness!”

Baron Vasili turned to go.

“Wait—just a word! When he has been transferred to the Guards...” Widow Drubetskoy faltered. “You are on good terms with General Kutuzov ... recommend Boris to him as adjutant! Then I shall be at rest, and then...”

Baron Vasili smiled.

“No, I won’t promise that. You don’t know how General Kutuzov is pestered since his appointment. He told me himself that all the Moscow ladies have conspired to give him all their sons as adjutants.”

“No, but do promise! I won’t let you go! My dear benefactor...”

“Papa,” said his beautiful daughter, Helene, in the same tone as before, “we shall be late.”

“Well, *goodbye*! Goodbye! You hear her?”

“Then tomorrow you will speak to the Tzar?”

“Certainly; but about General Kutuzov, I don’t promise.”

“Do promise, do promise, Baron Vasili!” cried Widow Drubetskoy as he went, with the smile of a coquettish girl, which at one time probably came

naturally to her, but was now very ill-suited to her careworn face.

Apparently, Widow Drubetskoy had forgotten her age and by force of habit employed all the old feminine arts. But as soon as Baron Vasili had gone, her face resumed its former cold, artificial expression. She returned to the group where the viscount was still talking and again pretended to listen while waiting till it would be time to leave. Her task was accomplished.

“And what do you think of this latest comedy, the coronation at Milan?” asked Anna Pavlovna, “and of the comedy of the people of the cities of Genoa and Lucca laying their petitions before Napoleon, and Napoleon sitting on a throne and granting the petitions of the nations? Adorable! It is enough to make one’s head whirl! It is as if the whole world had gone crazy.”

Andrei looked Anna Pavlovna straight in the face with a sarcastic smile.

““God has given the crown to me, let him who touches it beware!” They say Napoleon was very grand when he said that,” Andrei remarked, repeating the words in Italian: “*God has given the crown to me, let him who touches it beware!*”

“I hope this will prove the last drop that will make the glass run over,” Anna Pavlovna continued. “The sovereigns of Europe will not be able to endure this man Napoleon who is a menace to everything.”

“The sovereigns of Europe? I do not speak of Russia,” said the viscount, polite but hopeless: “The sovereigns of Europe, madame... What have they done for the French King Louis XVII, for the Queen, or for the famous actress Madame Elizabeth? Nothing!” and the viscount became more animated. “And believe me, these sovereigns are reaping the reward of their betrayal of the French cause. The sovereigns of Europe! Why, they are sending ambassadors to compliment the usurper Napoleon.”

And sighing disdainfully, the viscount again changed his position.

Hippolyte, who had been gazing at the viscount for some time through his opera glasses, suddenly turned completely round toward Lise, and

having asked for a needle, began tracing the Conde coat of arms on the table. He explained this to her with as much gravity as if she had asked him to do it.

“A bar of red running diagonally across three fleurs-de-lis on a background of blue—this is the Conde coat of arms,” said the viscount.

Lise listened, smiling.

“If Napoleon remains on the throne of France a year longer,” the viscount continued, with the air of a man who, in a matter with which he is better acquainted than anyone else, does not listen to others but follows the current of his own thoughts, “things will have gone too far. By intrigues, violence, exile, and executions, French society—I mean good French society—will have been forever destroyed, and then...”

The viscount shrugged his shoulders and spread out his hands. Pierre wished to make a remark, for the conversation interested him, but Anna Pavlovna, who had him under observation, interrupted:

“The Tzar,” said Anna Pavlovna, with the melancholy which always accompanied any reference of hers to the Imperial family, “has declared that he will leave it to the French people themselves to choose their own form of government; and I believe that once free from the usurper Napoleon, the whole nation will certainly throw itself into the arms of its rightful king,” she concluded, trying to be amiable to the royalist emigrant, the viscount.

“That is doubtful,” said Andrei. “The viscount quite rightly supposes that matters have already gone too far. I think it will be difficult for France to return to the old regime.”

“From what I have heard,” said Pierre, blushing and breaking into the conversation, “almost all the French aristocracy has already gone over to Napoleon’s side.”

“It is the pro-Napoleon faction who says that,” replied the viscount without looking at Pierre. “At the present time, it is difficult to know the real state of French public opinion.”

“Napoleon has said so,” remarked Andrei with a sarcastic smile.

It was evident that Andrei did not like the viscount and was aiming his remarks at him, though without looking at him.

“‘I showed them the path to glory, but they did not follow it,’” Andrei continued after a short silence, again quoting Napoleon’s words. “‘I opened my antechambers and they crowded in.’ I do not know, however, how far Napoleon was justified in saying so.”

“Not in the least,” replied the viscount. “After the murder of the Duc d’Enghien, even the most partial ceased to regard Napoleon as a hero. If to some people,” the viscount went on, turning to Anna Pavlovna, “Napoleon ever was a hero, after the murder of the Duc d’Enghien there was one martyr more in heaven and one hero less on earth.”

Before Anna Pavlovna and the others had time to smile their appreciation of the viscount’s epigram, Pierre again broke into the conversation, and though Anna Pavlovna felt sure he would say something inappropriate, she was unable to stop him.

“Napoleon’s execution of the Duc d’Enghien,” declared Pierre, “was a political necessity, and it seems to me that Napoleon showed greatness of soul by not fearing to take on himself the whole responsibility of that deed.”

“God! My God!” muttered Anna Pavlovna in a terrified whisper.

“What, Pierre... Do you consider that assassination shows greatness of soul?” said Lise, smiling and drawing her needlework nearer to her.

“Oh! Oh!” exclaimed several voices.

“Capital!” said Hippolyte in English, and began slapping his knee with the palm of his hand.

The viscount merely shrugged his shoulders. Pierre looked solemnly at his audience over his spectacles and continued.

“I say so,” Pierre continued desperately, “because the French nobility fled from the Revolution leaving the people to anarchy, and Napoleon alone

understood the Revolution and quelled it, and so for the general good, Napoleon could not stop short for the sake of one man's life."

"Won't you come over to the other table?" suggested Anna Pavlovna.

But Pierre continued his speech without heeding her.

"No," cried he, becoming more and more eager, "Napoleon is great because he rose above to the Revolution, suppressed its abuses, preserved all that was good in it—equality of citizenship and freedom of speech and of the press—and only for that reason did he obtain power."

"Yes, if having obtained power, without availing himself of it to commit murder, Napoleon had restored the power to the rightful king, I should have called him a great man," remarked the viscount.

"Napoleon could not do that. The people only gave him power so that he might rid them of the Bourbon kings and because they saw that he was a great man. The Revolution was a grand thing!" continued Pierre, betraying by this desperate and provocative proposition his extreme youth and his wish to express all that was in his mind.

"What? Revolution and regicide a grand thing?... Well, after that... But won't you come to this other table?" repeated Anna Pavlovna.

"Rousseau's Social Contract," said the viscount with a tolerant smile.

"I am not speaking of regicide, I am speaking about ideas."

"Yes, ideas of robbery, murder, and regicide," again interjected an ironical voice.

"Those were extremes, no doubt, but they are not what is most important. What is important are the rights of man, emancipation from prejudices, and equality of citizenship, and all these ideas Napoleon has retained in full force."

"Liberty and equality," said the viscount contemptuously, as if at last deciding seriously to prove to this youth how foolish Pierre's words were, "high-sounding words which have long been discredited. Who does not love liberty and equality? Even our Savior Jesus Christ preached liberty and

equality. Have people since the Revolution become happier? On the contrary. Our people in France wanted liberty, but Napoleon has destroyed it.”

Andrei kept looking with an amused smile from Pierre to the viscount and from the viscount to their hostess, Anna Pavlovna. In the first moment of Pierre’s outburst Anna Pavlovna, despite her social experience, was horror-struck. But when she saw that Pierre’s sacrilegious words had not exasperated the viscount, and had convinced herself that it was impossible to stop Pierre, she rallied her forces and joined the viscount in a vigorous attack on the orator.

“But, my dear Pierre,” said Anna Pavlovna, “how do you explain the fact of a great man executing a duke—or even an ordinary man who—is innocent and untried?”

“I should like,” said the viscount, “to ask how Pierre explains Napoleon’s coup; was not that an imposture? It was a swindle, and not at all like the conduct of a great man!”

“And the prisoners Napoleon killed in Africa? That was horrible!” said Lise, shrugging her shoulders.

“Napoleon’s a low fellow, say what you will,” remarked Hippolyte.

Pierre, not knowing whom to answer, looked at them all and smiled. His smile was unlike the half-smile of other people. When Pierre smiled, his grave, even rather gloomy, look was instantaneously replaced by another—a childlike, kindly, even rather silly look, which seemed to ask forgiveness.

The viscount who was meeting Pierre for the first time saw clearly that this young Jacobin was not so terrible as his words suggested. All were silent.

“How do you expect him to answer you all at once?” said Andrei. “Besides, in the actions of a statesman, one has to distinguish between his acts as a private person, as a general, and as a Tzar. So it seems to me.”

“Yes, yes, of course!” Pierre chimed in, pleased at the arrival of this reinforcement.

“One must admit,” continued Andrei, “that Napoleon as a man was great on the bridge of Arcola, and in the hospital at Jaffa where he gave his hand to the plague-stricken; but ... but there are other acts which it is difficult to justify.”

Andrei, who had evidently wished to tone down the awkwardness of Pierre’s remarks, rose and made a sign to Lise that it was time to go.

Suddenly Hippolyte started up making signs to everyone to pay attention, and asking them all to be seated began:

“I was told a charming Moscow story today and must treat you to it. Excuse me, viscount—I must tell it in Russian or the point will be lost...” And Hippolyte began to tell his story in such Russian as a Frenchman would speak after spending about a year in Russia. Everyone waited, so emphatically and eagerly did he demand their attention to his story.

“There is in Moscow a lady, a grand woman, and she is very stingy. She must have two footmen behind her carriage, and very big ones. That was her taste. And she had a lady’s maid, also big. So the lady said...”

Here Hippolyte paused, evidently collecting his ideas with difficulty.

“The grand lady said... Oh yes! She said to the maid, ‘Girl, put on a livery, get up behind the carriage, and come with me while I make some calls.’”

Here Hippolyte spluttered and burst out laughing long before his audience, which produced an effect unfavorable to the narrator. Several persons, among them the elderly lady and Anna Pavlovna, did however smile.

“The grand lady went. Suddenly there was a great wind. The girl lost her hat and her long hair came down...” Here Hippolyte could contain himself no longer and went on, between gasps of laughter: “And the whole world knew...”

And so the anecdote ended. Though it was unintelligible why Hippolyte had told it, or why it had to be told in Russian, yet Anna Pavlovna and the others appreciated Hippolyte's social tact in so agreeably ending Pierre's unpleasant and awkward outburst. After the anecdote, the conversation broke up into insignificant small talk about the last and next balls, about theatricals, and who would meet whom, and when and where.

Having thanked Anna Pavlovna for her charming soiree, the guests began to take their leave.

Pierre was ungainly. Stout, about the average height, broad, with huge red hands; Pierre did not know, as the saying is, how to enter a drawing room and still less how to leave one; that is, how to say something particularly agreeable before going away. Besides this he was absent-minded. When he rose to go, he took up instead of his own hat, the general's three-cornered hat, and held it, pulling at the plume, until the general asked him to restore it. All of Pierre's absent-mindedness and inability to enter a room and converse in it were, however, redeemed by his kindly, simple, and modest expression. Anna Pavlovna turned toward him and, with a Christian mildness that expressed forgiveness of his indiscretion, nodded and said: "I hope to see you again, but I also hope you will change your opinions, my dear Pierre."

When Anna Pavlovna said this, Pierre did not reply and only bowed, but again everybody saw his smile, which said nothing, unless perhaps, "Opinions are opinions, but you see what a capital, good-natured fellow I am." And everyone, including Anna Pavlovna, felt this.

Andrei had gone out into the hall, and, turning his shoulders to the footman who was helping him on with his cloak, listened indifferently to Lise's chatter with Hippolyte who had also come into the hall. Hippolyte stood close to the pretty, pregnant Lise, and stared fixedly at her through his opera glasses.

“Go in, Anna Pavlovna, or you will catch a cold,” said Lise, taking leave of Anna Pavlovna. “It is settled,” Lise added in a low voice.

Anna Pavlovna had already managed to speak to Lise about the match she contemplated between Baron Vasili’s son, Anatole, and Lise’s sister-in-law, Marya.

“I rely on you, my dear,” said Anna Pavlovna, also in a low tone. “Write to Marya and let me know how her father looks at the matter. Goodbye!”—and she left the hall.

Hippolyte approached Lise and, bending his face close to her, began to whisper something.

Two footmen, Lise’s and his own, stood holding a shawl and a cloak, waiting for the conversation to finish. The footmen listened to the French sentences which to them were meaningless, with an air of understanding but not wishing to appear to do so. Lise as usual spoke smilingly and listened with a laugh.

“I am very glad I did not go to the ambassador’s fete,” said Hippolyte. “So dull. It has been a delightful evening, has it not? Delightful!”

“They say the ball will be very good,” replied Lise, drawing up her downy little lip. “All the pretty women in society will be there.”

“Not all, for you will not be there; not all,” said Hippolyte smiling joyfully; and snatching the shawl from the footman, whom Hippolyte even pushed aside, he began wrapping it around Lise. Either from awkwardness or intentionally (no one could have said which) after the shawl had been adjusted, Hippolyte kept his arm around Lise for a long time, as though embracing her.

Still smiling, Lise gracefully moved away, turning and glancing at Andrei. His eyes were closed, so weary and sleepy did he seem.

“Are you ready?” Andrei asked his wife, opening his eyes and looking past her.

Hippolyte hurriedly put on his cloak, which in the latest fashion reached to his very heels, and, stumbling in it, ran out into the porch following Lise, whom a footman was helping into the carriage.

“Lise, goodbye,” cried Hippolyte, stumbling with his tongue as well as with his feet.

Lise, picking up her dress, was taking her seat in the dark carriage, Andrei was adjusting his saber; Hippolyte, under the pretense of helping, was in everyone’s way.

“Allow me, sir,” said Andrei in Russian in a cold, disagreeable tone to Hippolyte who was blocking his path.

“I am expecting you, Pierre,” also called out Andrei, but gently and affectionately.

The carriage started, the wheels rattling. Hippolyte laughed spasmodically as he stood on the porch waiting for the viscount whom he had promised to take home.

“Well, my dear,” said the viscount, having seated himself beside Hippolyte in his carriage, “your Lise is very nice, very nice indeed, quite French,” and he kissed the tips of his fingers. Hippolyte burst out laughing.

“Do you know, you are a terrible chap for all your innocent airs,” continued the viscount. “I pity the poor husband, Andrei, that little officer who gives himself the airs of a monarch.”

Hippolyte spluttered again, and amid his laughter said, “And you were saying that the Russian ladies are not equal to the French? One has to know how to deal with them.”

Pierre, reaching the house first, went into Andrei’s study like one who was quite at home, and from habit immediately lay down on the sofa, took from the shelf the first book that came to his hand (it was Caesar’s Commentaries), and resting on his elbow, began reading it in the middle.

“What have you done to Anna Pavlovna? She will be quite ill now,” said Andrei, as he entered the study, rubbing his small white hands.

Pierre turned his whole body, making the sofa creak. He lifted his eager face to Andrei, smiled, and waved his hand.

“That abbot is very interesting but he does not see the thing in the right light... In my opinion, perpetual peace is possible but—I do not know how to express it ... not by a balance of political power...”

It was evident that Andrei was not interested in such an abstract conversation.

“One can’t everywhere say all one thinks, my dear. Well, have you at last decided on anything? Are you going to be a guardsman or a diplomatist?” asked Andrei after a momentary silence.

Pierre sat up on the sofa, with his legs tucked under him.

“Really, I don’t yet know. I don’t like either the one career or the other.”

“But you must decide on something! Your father, Count Bezukhov, expects it.”

Pierre was the illegitimate son of Count Bezukhov, a very rich man. At the age of ten, Pierre had been sent abroad with a tutor and had remained away till he was twenty. When Pierre returned to Moscow, Count Bezukhov dismissed the tutor and said to Pierre, “Now go to St. Petersburg, look round, and choose your profession. I will agree to anything. Here is a letter to Baron Vasili, and here is money. Write to me all about it, and I will help you with everything.” Pierre had already been choosing a career for three months and had not decided on anything. It was about this choice that Andrei was speaking. Pierre rubbed his forehead.

“But he must be a Freemason,” said Pierre, referring to the optimistic abbot whom he had met that evening.

“That is all nonsense.” Andrei again interrupted him, “let us talk business. Have you been to the Horse Guards?”

“No, I have not; but this is what I have been thinking and wanted to tell you. There is a war now against Napoleon. If it was a war for freedom I could understand it and should be the first to enter the army; but to help England and Austria against Napoleon, the greatest man in the world, is not right.”

Andrei only shrugged his shoulders at Pierre’s childish words. He put on the air of one who finds it impossible to reply to such nonsense, but it would have been difficult to give any other answer than the one Andrei gave to this naive question.

“If no one fought except on his own conviction, there would be no wars,” Andrei said.

“And that would be splendid,” said Pierre.

Andrei smiled ironically.

“Very likely it would be splendid, but it will never come about...”

“Well, why are you going to the war?” asked Pierre.

“What for? I don’t know. I must. Besides that, I am going...” Andrei paused. “I am going because the life I am leading here does not suit me!”

The rustle of a woman’s dress was heard in the next room. Andrei shook himself as if waking up and his face assumed the look it had had in Anna Pavlovna’s drawing room. Pierre removed his feet from the sofa. Lise came in. She had changed her gown for a house dress as fresh and elegant as the other. Andrei rose and politely placed a chair for her.

“How is it,” Lise began, as usual in French, settling down briskly and fussily in the easy chair, “how is it Anna Pavlovna never got married? How stupid you men all are not to have married her! Excuse me for saying so, but you have no sense of women. What an argumentative fellow you are, Pierre!”

“And I am still arguing with Andrei. I can’t understand why he wants to go to the war,” replied Pierre, addressing Lise with none of the

embarrassment so commonly shown by young men in their discussions with young women.

Lise started. Evidently, Pierre's words touched her to the quick.

"Ah, that is just what I tell him!" said Lise. "I don't understand it; I don't in the least understand why men can't live without wars. How is it that we women don't want anything of the kind, don't need it? Now you shall judge between us. I always tell him: Here Andrei is my uncle's aide-de-camp, a most brilliant position. He is so well known, and so much appreciated by everyone. The other day at the Apráksins' I heard a lady asking, 'Is that the famous Andrei?' I did indeed." Lise laughed. "He is so well received everywhere. He might easily become aide-de-camp to the Tzar. You know the Tzar spoke to Andrei most graciously. Anna Pavlovna and I were speaking about how to arrange such a position. What do you think?"

Pierre looked at Andrei and, noticing that he did not like the conversation, gave no reply.

"When are you leaving?" Pierre asked.

"Oh, don't speak of his going, don't! I won't hear it spoken of," said Lise in the same petulantly playful tone in which she had spoken to Hippolyte in the drawing room and which was so plainly ill-suited to the family circle of which Pierre was almost a member. "Today when I remembered that all these delightful associations must be broken off ... and then you know, Andrei..." (she looked significantly at her husband) "I'm afraid, I'm afraid!" she whispered, and a shudder ran down her back.

Andrei looked at her as if surprised to notice that someone besides Pierre and himself was in the room, and addressed her in a tone of frigid politeness.

"What is it you are afraid of, Lise? I don't understand," said he.

"There, what egotists men all are: all, all egotists! Just for a whim of his own, goodness only knows why, Andrei leaves me and locks me up alone in

the country.”

“With my father and sister, remember,” said Andrei gently.

“Alone all the same, without my friends... And Andrei expects me not to be afraid.”

Lise’s tone was now querulous and her lip drawn up, giving her not a joyful, but an animal, squirrel-like expression. She paused as if she felt it indecorous to speak of her pregnancy before Pierre, though the gist of the matter lay in that.

“I still can’t understand what you are afraid of,” said Andrei slowly, not taking his eyes off Lise.

She blushed and raised her arms with a gesture of despair.

“No, Andrei, I must say you have changed. Oh, how you have...”

“Your doctor tells you to go to bed earlier,” said Andrei. “You had better go.”

Lise said nothing, but suddenly her short downy lip quivered. Andrei rose, shrugged his shoulders, and walked about the room.

Pierre looked over his spectacles with naive surprise, now at him and now at her, moved as if about to rise too, but changed his mind.

“Why should I mind Pierre being here?” exclaimed Lise suddenly, her pretty face all at once distorted by a tearful grimace. “I have long wanted to ask you, Andrei, why you have changed so to me? What have I done to you? You are going to war and have no pity for me. Why is it?”

“Lise!” was all Andrei said. But that one word expressed an entreaty, a threat, and above all conviction that she would herself regret her words. But she went on hurriedly:

“You treat me like an invalid or a child. I see it all! Did you behave like that six months ago?”

“Lise, I beg you to desist,” said Andrei still more emphatically.

Pierre, who had been growing more and more agitated as he listened to all this, rose and approached Lise. He seemed unable to bear the sight of

tears and was ready to cry himself.

“Calm yourself, Lise! It seems so to you because... I assure you I myself have experienced ... and so ... because ... No, excuse me! An outsider is out of place here... No, don't distress yourself... Goodbye!”

Andrei caught him by the hand.

“No, wait, Pierre! Lise is too kind to wish to deprive me of the pleasure of spending the evening with you.”

“No, Andrei thinks only of himself,” muttered Lise without restraining her angry tears.

“Lise!” said Andrei dryly, raising his voice to the pitch which indicates that patience is exhausted.

Suddenly the angry, squirrel-like expression on Lise's pretty face changed into a winning and piteous look of fear. Her beautiful eyes glanced askance at Andrei's face, and her own assumed the timid, deprecating expression of a dog when it rapidly but feebly wags its drooping tail.

“My God, my God!” she muttered, and lifting her dress with one hand she went up to Andrei and kissed him on the forehead.

“Good night, Lise,” said Andrei, rising and courteously kissing her hand as he would have done to a stranger.

Pierre and Andrei were silent. Neither cared to begin talking. Pierre continually glanced at Andrei; Andrei rubbed his forehead with his small hand.

“Let us go and have supper,” Andrei said with a sigh, going to the door.

They entered the elegant, newly decorated, and luxurious dining room. Everything from the table napkins to the silver, china, and glass bore that imprint of newness found in the households of the newly married.

Halfway through supper, Andrei leaned his elbows on the table and, with a look of nervous agitation such as Pierre had never before seen on his face, began to talk—as one who has long had something on his mind and suddenly is determined to speak out.

“Never, never marry, my dear Pierre! That’s my advice: never marry till you can say to yourself that you have done all you are capable of, and until you have ceased to love the woman of your choice and have seen her plainly as she is, or else you will make a cruel and irrevocable mistake. Marry when you are old and good for nothing—or all that is good and noble in you will be lost. It will all be wasted on trifles. Yes! Yes! Yes! Don’t look at me with such surprise. If you marry expecting anything from yourself in the future, you will feel at every step that for you all is ended, all is closed except the drawing room, where you will be ranged side by side with a court lackey and an idiot!... But what’s the good?...” Andrei said as he waved his arm.

Pierre took off his spectacles, which made his face seem different and the good-natured expression still more apparent, and gazed at his friend in amazement.

“My wife,” continued Andrei, “is an excellent woman, one of those rare women with whom a man’s honor is safe; but, oh, God, what would I not give now to be unmarried! You are the first and only one to whom I mention this because I like you.”

As he said this, Andrei was less than ever like that man who had lolled in Anna Pavlovna’s easy chairs and with half-closed eyes had uttered French phrases between his teeth. Every muscle of his thin face was now quivering with nervous excitement; his eyes, in which the fire of life had seemed extinguished, now flashed with brilliant light. It was evident that the more lifeless he seemed at ordinary times, the more impassioned he became in these moments of almost morbid irritation.

“You don’t understand why I say this,” Andrei continued, “but it is the whole story of life. You talk of Napoleon and his career,” said he (though Pierre had not mentioned Napoleon), “but Napoleon, when he worked, went step by step toward his goal. He was free, he had nothing but his aim to consider, and he reached it. But tie yourself up with a woman and, like a

chained convict, you lose all freedom! And all you have of hope and strength merely weighs you down and torments you with regret. Drawing rooms, gossip, balls, vanity, and triviality—these are the enchanted circle I cannot escape from. I am now going to the war, the greatest war there ever was, and I know nothing and am fit for nothing. I am very amiable and have a caustic wit,” continued Andrei, “and at Anna Pavlovna’s they listen to me. And that stupid set without whom my wife cannot exist, and those women... If you only knew what those society women are, and women in general! My father is right. Selfish, vain, stupid, trivial in everything—that’s what women are when you see them in their true colors! When you meet them in society it seems as if there were something in them, but there’s nothing, nothing, nothing! No, don’t marry, my dear fellow; don’t marry!” concluded Andrei.

“It seems funny to me,” said Pierre, “that *you, you* should consider yourself incapable and your life a spoiled life. You have everything before you, everything. And you...”

Pierre did not finish his sentence, but his tone showed how highly he thought of Andrei and how much he expected of him in the future.

“How can Andrei talk like that?” thought Pierre. He considered his friend a model of perfection because Andrei possessed in the highest degree just the very qualities Pierre lacked, which might be best described as strength of will. Pierre was always astonished at Andrei’s calm manner of treating everybody, his extraordinary memory, his extensive reading (he had read everything, knew everything, and had an opinion about everything), but above all at his capacity for work and study. And if Pierre was often struck by Andrei’s lack of capacity for philosophical meditation (to which he himself was particularly addicted), he regarded even this not as a defect but as a sign of strength.

Even in the best, most friendly, and simplest relations of life, praise and commendation are essential, just as grease is necessary to wheels so that

they may run smoothly.

“My part is played out,” said Andrei. “What’s the use of talking about me? Let us talk about you,” he added after a silence, smiling at his reassuring thoughts.

That smile was immediately reflected on Pierre’s face.

“But what is there to say about me?” said Pierre, his face relaxing into a careless, merry smile. “What am I? An illegitimate son!” He suddenly blushed crimson, and it was plain that he had made a great effort to say this. “Without a name and without means... And it really...” But he did not say what “it really” was. “For the present, I am free and am all right. Only I haven’t the least idea what I am to do; I wanted to consult you seriously.”

Andrei looked kindly at him, yet his glance—friendly and affectionate as it was—expressed a sense of his own superiority.

“I am fond of you, especially as you are the one live man among our whole set. Yes, you’re all right! Choose what career you will; it’s all the same. You’ll be all right anywhere. But look here: give up visiting those like Baron Vasili and his family and leading that sort of life. It suits you so badly—all this debauchery, dissipation, and the rest of it!”

“What would you have, my dear fellow?” answered Pierre, shrugging his shoulders. “Women, my dear fellow; women!”

“I don’t understand it,” replied Andrei. “Women who are *correct in behavior*, that’s a different matter; but Baron Vasili’s family, his set of women, ‘women and wine’, I don’t understand!”

Pierre was staying at Baron Vasili’s and sharing the dissipated life of his son Anatole, the son whom they were planning to reform by marrying him to Andrei’s sister, Marya.

“Do you know?” said Pierre, as if suddenly struck by a happy thought, “seriously, I have long been thinking of it... Leading such a life I can’t decide or think properly about anything. One’s head aches and one spends all one’s money. Anatole asked me to go out tonight, but I won’t go.”

“You give me your word of honor not to go?”

“On my honor!”

It was past one o'clock when Pierre left Andrei. It was a cloudless, northern, summer night. Pierre took an open cab intending to drive straight home. But the nearer he drew to Anatole's house the more he felt the impossibility of going to sleep on such a night. It was light enough to see a long way in the deserted street and it seemed more like morning or evening than night. On the way Pierre remembered that Anatole was expecting the usual set for cards that evening, after which there was generally a drinking bout, finishing with visits with prostitutes, visits of which Pierre was very fond.

“I should like to go to Anatole's,” thought Pierre.

But he immediately recalled his promise to Andrei not to go there. Then, as happens to people of weak character, he desired so passionately once more to enjoy that dissipation he was so accustomed to that he decided to go. The thought immediately occurred to him that his promise to Andrei was of no account because before he gave it he had already promised Anatole to come to his gathering; “Besides,” thought Pierre, “all such ‘words of honor’ are conventional things with no definite meaning, especially if one considers that by tomorrow one may be dead, or something so extraordinary may happen to one that honor and dishonor will be all the same!” Pierre often indulged in reflections of this sort, nullifying all his decisions and intentions. He went to Anatole's.

Reaching the large house near the Horse Guards' barracks in which Anatole lived, Pierre entered the lighted porch, ascended the stairs, and went in at the open door. There was no one in the anteroom; empty bottles, cloaks, and overshoes were lying about; there was a smell of alcohol, and sounds of voices and shouting in the distance.

Cards and supper were over, but the visitors had not yet dispersed. Pierre threw off his cloak and entered the first room, in which were the

remains of supper. A footman, thinking no one saw him, was drinking on the sly what was left in the glasses. From the third room came sounds of laughter, the shouting of familiar voices, the growling of a bear, and general commotion. Some eight or nine young men were crowding anxiously around an open window. Three others were romping with a young bear, one pulling the bear by his chain and trying to set him at the others.

“I bet a hundred on the Englishman!” shouted one.

“Remember, no holding on!” cried another.

“I bet on Dolokhov!” cried a third. “Anatole, you part our hands.”

“There, leave the bear alone; here’s a bet on.”

“At one draught, or he loses!” shouted a fourth.

“Footman, bring a bottle!” shouted Anatole, a tall, handsome fellow who stood in the midst of the group, without a coat, and with his fine linen shirt unfastened in front. “Wait a bit, you fellows... Here is Pierre! Good man!”

Another voice, from a man of medium height with clear blue eyes, particularly striking among all these drunken voices by its sober ring, cried from the window: “Come here; part the bets!” This was Dolokhov, an officer, a notorious gambler, and duelist, who was living with Anatole.

Pierre smiled, looking about him merrily.

“I don’t understand. What’s it all about?”

“Wait a bit, he is not drunk yet! A bottle here,” said Anatole, and taking a glass from the table he went up to Pierre.

“First of all, you must drink!”

Pierre drank one glass after another, looking from under his brows at the tipsy guests who were again crowding around the window, and listening to their chatter. Anatole kept on refilling Pierre’s glass while explaining that Dolokhov was betting with an English naval officer that he could drink an entire bottle of rum while sitting on the outer ledge of the third-floor window with his legs hanging out.

“Go on, you must drink it all,” said Anatole, giving Pierre the last glass, “or I won’t let you go!”

“No, I won’t,” said Pierre, pushing Anatole aside, and he went up to the window.

Dolokhov was holding the Englishman’s hand and clearly and distinctly repeating the terms of the bet, addressing himself, particularly to Anatole and Pierre.

Dolokhov was of medium height, with curly hair and light-blue eyes. He was about twenty-five. Like all infantry officers, he wore no mustache, so that his mouth, the most striking feature of his face, was clearly seen. The lines of that mouth were remarkably finely curved. The middle of the upper lip formed a sharp wedge and closed firmly on the firm lower one, and something like two distinct smiles played continually around the two corners of the mouth; this, together with the resolute, insolent intelligence of his eyes, produced an effect which made it impossible not to notice his face. Dolokhov was a man of small means and no connections. Yet, though Anatole spent tens of thousands of rubles, Dolokhov lived with him and had placed himself on such a footing that all who knew them, including Anatole himself, respected him more than they did Anatole. Dolokhov could play all games and nearly always won. However much he drank, he never lost his clear-headedness. Both Anatole and Dolokhov were at that time notorious among the rakes and scapegraces of St. Petersburg.

The bottle of rum was brought. The window frame which prevented anyone from sitting on the outer sill was being forced out by two footmen, who were evidently flustered and intimidated by the directions and shouts of the gentlemen around.

Anatole with his swaggering air strode up to the window. He wanted to smash something. Pushing away the footmen he tugged at the frame, but could not move it. Anatole smashed a pane.

“You have a try, big man,” said Anatole, turning to Pierre.

Pierre seized the crossbeam, tugged, and suddenly wrenched the oak frame out with a crash.

“Take the frame right out, or they’ll think I’m holding on,” said Dolokhov.

“Is the Englishman bragging?... Eh? Is it all right?” said Anatole.

“First-rate,” said Pierre, looking at Dolokhov, who with a bottle of rum in his hand was approaching the window, from which the light of the sky, the dawn merging with the afterglow of sunset, was visible.

Dolokhov, the bottle of rum still in his hand, jumped onto the window sill. “Listen!” he cried, standing there and addressing those in the room. All were silent.

“I bet fifty imperials”—Dolokhov spoke French so that the Englishman might understand him, but he did not speak it very well—“I bet fifty imperials ... or do you wish to make it a hundred?” added he, addressing the Englishman.

“No, fifty,” replied the Englishman.

“All right. Fifty imperials ... that I will drink a whole bottle of rum without taking it from my mouth, sitting outside the window on this spot” (Dolokhov stooped and pointed to the sloping ledge outside the window) “and without holding on to anything. Is that right?”

“Quite right,” said the Englishman.

Anatole turned to the Englishman and taking him by one of the buttons of his coat and looking down at him—the Englishman was short—began repeating the terms of the wager to him in English.

“Wait!” cried Dolokhov, hammering with the bottle on the window sill to attract attention. “Wait a bit, Anatole. Listen! If anyone else does the same, I will pay him a hundred imperials. Do you understand?”

The Englishman nodded but gave no indication whether he intended to accept this challenge or not. Anatole did not release him, and though he kept nodding to show that he understood, Anatole went on translating

Dolokhov's words into English. A thin young lad, a hussar of the Life Guards, who had been losing that evening, climbed on the window sill, leaned over, and looked down.

"Oh! Oh! Oh!" he muttered, looking down from the window at the stones of the pavement.

"Shut up!" cried Dolokhov, pushing him away from the window. The lad jumped awkwardly back into the room, tripping over his spurs.

Placing the bottle on the window sill where he could reach it easily, Dolokhov climbed carefully and slowly through the window and lowered his legs. Pressing against both sides of the window, he adjusted himself on his seat, lowered his hands, moved a little to the right and then to the left, and took up the bottle. Anatole brought two candles and placed them on the window sill, though it was already quite light. Dolokhov's back in his white shirt, and his curly head, were lit up from both sides. Everyone crowded to the window, the Englishman in front. Pierre stood smiling but silent. One man, older than the others present, suddenly pushed forward with a scared and angry look and wanted to seize hold of Dolokhov's shirt.

"I say, this is folly! He'll be killed," said this more sensible man.

Anatole stopped him.

"Don't touch him! You'll startle him and then he will be killed. Eh?... What then?... Eh?"

Dolokhov turned round and, again holding on with both hands, arranged himself on his seat.

"If anyone comes meddling again," said Dolokhov, emitting the words separately through his thin compressed lips, "I will throw him down there. Now then!"

Saying this Dolokhov again turned round, dropped his hands, took the bottle and lifted it to his lips, threw back his head, and raised his free hand to balance himself. One of the footmen who had stooped to pick up some broken glass remained in that position without taking his eyes from the

window and from Dolokhov's back. Anatole stood erect with staring eyes. The Englishman looked on sideways, pursing up his lips. The man who had wished to stop the affair ran to a corner of the room and threw himself on a sofa with his face to the wall. Pierre hid his face, from which a faint smile forgot to fade though his features now expressed horror and fear. All were still. Pierre took his hands from his eyes. Dolokhov still sat in the same position, only his head was thrown further back till his curly hair touched his shirt collar, and the hand holding the bottle was lifted higher and higher and trembled with the effort. The bottle was emptying perceptibly and rising still higher and his head tilting yet further back. "Why is it so long?" thought Pierre. It seemed to him that more than half an hour had elapsed. Suddenly Dolokhov made a backward movement with his spine, and his arm trembled nervously; this was sufficient to cause his whole body to slip as he sat on the sloping ledge. As Dolokhov began slipping down, his head and arm wavered still more with the strain. One hand moved as if to clutch the window sill, but refrained from touching it. Pierre again covered his eyes and thought he would never open them again. Suddenly Pierre was aware of a stir all around. He looked up: Dolokhov was standing on the window sill, with a pale but radiant face.

"It's empty."

Dolokhov threw the bottle to the Englishman, who caught it neatly. Dolokhov jumped down. He smelt strongly of rum.

"Well done!... Fine fellow!... There's a bet for you!... Devil take you!" came from different sides.

The Englishman took out his purse and began counting out the money. Dolokhov stood frowning and did not speak. Then Pierre jumped upon the window sill.

"Gentlemen, who wishes to bet with me? I'll do the same thing!" Pierre suddenly cried. "Even without a bet, there! Tell them to bring me a bottle. I'll do it... Bring a bottle!"

“Let Pierre do it, let him do it,” said Dolokhov, smiling.

“What next? Have you gone mad, Pierre?... No one would let you!... Why, you go dizzy even on a staircase,” exclaimed several voices.

“I’ll drink it! Let’s have a bottle of rum!” shouted Pierre, banging the table with a determined and drunken gesture and preparing to climb out of the window.

They seized Pierre by his arms, but he was so strong that everyone who touched him was sent flying.

“No, you’ll never manage Pierre that way,” said Anatole. “Wait a bit and I’ll get round him... Listen! Pierre, I’ll take your bet tomorrow, but now we are all going to ——’s.”

“Come on then,” cried Pierre. “Come on!... And we’ll take the bear with us.”

And Pierre caught the bear, took it in his arms, lifted it from the ground, and began dancing round the room with it.

Baron Vasili kept the promise he had given to Widow Drubetskoy who had spoken to him on behalf of her only son Boris on the evening of Anna Pavlovna’s soiree. The matter was mentioned to the Tzar, an exception was made, and Boris was transferred into the regiment of Semënov Guards with the rank of cornet. He received, however, no appointment to General Kutuzov’s staff despite all of Widow Drubetskoy’s endeavors and entreaties. Soon after Anna Pavlovna’s reception, Widow Drubetskoy returned to Moscow and went straight to her rich relations, the Rostovs, with whom she stayed when in the town and where her darling Boris, who had only just entered a regiment of the line and was being at once transferred to the Guards as a cornet, had been educated from childhood and lived for years at a time. The Semënov Guards had already left St. Petersburg on the tenth of August, and Boris, who had remained in Moscow for his equipment, was to join them on the march to Radzivilov.

It was St. Natalia's day and the name day of two of the Rostov family—the mother and the youngest daughter—both named Natasha. Ever since the morning, carriages with six horses had been coming and going continually, bringing visitors to Countess Rostov's big house on Povarskáya Boulevard, so well-known to all of Moscow. Countess Rostov herself and her handsome eldest daughter, Vera, were in the drawing room with the visitors who came to congratulate, and who constantly succeeded one another in relays.

Countess Rostov was a woman of about forty-five, with a thin Oriental type of face, evidently worn out with childbearing—she had had twelve. A languor of motion and speech, resulting from weakness, gave her a distinguished air that inspired respect. Widow Drubetskoy, who as a member of the household was also seated in the drawing room, helped to receive and entertain the visitors. The young people were in one of the inner rooms, not considering it necessary to take part in receiving the visitors. Count Rostov met the guests and saw them off, inviting them all to dinner.

"I am very, very grateful to you, *my dear*"—Count Rostov called everyone without exception and without the slightest variation in his tone, "my dear," whether they were above or below him in rank—"I thank you for myself and for our two dear ones whose name day we are keeping. But mind you come to dinner or I shall be offended, *my dear!* On behalf of the whole family, I beg you to come, *my dear!*" These words Count Rostov repeated to everyone without exception or variation, and with the same expression on his full, cheerful, clean-shaven face, the same firm pressure of the hand and the same quick, repeated bows. As soon as he had seen a visitor off he returned to one of those who were still in the drawing room, drew a chair toward him or her, and jauntily spread out his legs and put his hands on his knees with the air of a man who enjoys life and knows how to live, he swayed to and fro with dignity, offered surmises about the weather, or touched on questions of health, sometimes in Russian and sometimes in

very bad but self-confident French; then again, like a man weary but unflinching in the fulfillment of duty, he rose to see some visitors off and, stroking his scanty gray hairs over his bald patch, also asked them to dinner. Sometimes on his way back from the anteroom he would pass through the conservatory and pantry into the large marble dining hall, where tables were being set out for eighty people; and looking at the footmen, who were bringing in silver and china, moving tables, and unfolding damask table linen, Count Rostov would call Dmítri, a man of good family and the manager of all his affairs, and while looking with pleasure at the enormous table would say: "Well, Dmítri, you'll see that things are all as they should be? That's right! The great thing is the serving, that's it." And with a complacent sigh, he would return to the drawing room.

Countess Rostov's gigantic footman entered the drawing room and in his bass voice announced that they had more visitors. Countess Rostov reflected a moment and took a pinch from a gold snuffbox with her husband's portrait on it.

"I'm quite worn out by these callers. However, I'll see them and no more. The mother is so affected. Ask them in," she said to the footman in a sad voice, as if saying: "Very well, finish me off."

A tall, stout, and proud-looking woman, with a round-faced smiling daughter, entered the drawing room, their dresses rustling.

"Dear Countess Rostov, what an age... She has been laid up, poor child ... at the Razumóvski's ball ... and Countess Apráksina ... I was so delighted..." came the sounds of animated feminine voices, interrupting one another and mingling with the rustling of dresses and the scraping of chairs. Then one of those conversations began which lasted out until, at the first pause, the guests rise with a rustle of dresses and say, "I am so delighted... Mamma's health... and Countess Apráksina..." and then, again rustling, pass into the anteroom, put on cloaks or mantles, and drive away. The conversation was on the chief topic of the day: the illness of the wealthy

and celebrated beau of Catherine the Great's day, Count Bezukhov, and about his illegitimate son, Pierre, the one who had behaved so improperly at Anna Pavlovna's reception.

"I am so sorry for poor Count Bezukhov," said the visitor. "He is in such bad health, and now this vexation about his son, Pierre, is enough to kill him!"

"What is that?" asked Countess Rostov as if she did not know what the visitor alluded to, though she had already heard about the cause of Count Bezukhov's distress some fifteen times.

"That's what comes of a modern education," exclaimed the visitor. "It seems that while Pierre was abroad he was allowed to do as he liked, now in St. Petersburg, I hear he has been doing such terrible things that he has been expelled by the police."

"You don't say so!" replied Countess Rostov.

"Pierre chose his friends badly," interposed Widow Drubetskoy. "Anatole, he, and a certain Dolokhov have, it is said, been up to heaven only knows what! And they have had to suffer for it. Dolokhov has been degraded to the ranks and Pierre sent back to Moscow. Baron Vasili managed somehow to get his son Anatole's affair hushed up, but even Anatole was ordered out of St. Petersburg."

"But what have they been up to?" asked Countess Rostov.

"They are regular brigands, especially Dolokhov," replied the visitor. "Dolokhov is a son of a worthy woman, but there, just fancy! Those three got hold of a bear somewhere, put it in a carriage, and set off with it to visit some actresses! The police tried to interfere, and what did the young men do? They tied a policeman and the bear back to back and put the bear into the Moyka Canal. And there was the bear swimming about with the policeman on his back!"

"What a nice figure the policeman must have cut, my dear!" shouted Count Rostov, dying with laughter.

“Oh, how dreadful! How can you laugh at it?”

Yet the ladies themselves could not help laughing.

“It was all they could do to rescue the poor man,” continued the visitor. “And to think it is Count Bezukhov’s son, Pierre, who amuses himself in this sensible manner! And Pierre was said to be so well-educated and clever. This is all that his foreign education has done for him! I hope that here in Moscow no one will receive him, in spite of his money. They wanted to introduce him to me, but I quite declined: I have my daughters to consider.”

“Why do you say this young man, Pierre, is so rich?” asked Countess Rostov, turning away from the girls, who at once assumed an air of inattention. “Count Bezukhov’s children are all illegitimate. I think Pierre also is illegitimate.”

The visitor made a gesture with her hand.

“I should think Count Bezukhov has a score of them.”

Widow Drubetskoy intervened in the conversation, evidently wishing to show her connections and knowledge of what went on in society.

“The fact of the matter is,” said Widow Drubetskoy significantly, and also in a half whisper, “everyone knows Count Bezukhov’s reputation... He has lost count of his children, but this Pierre was his favorite.”

“How handsome Count Bezukhov was still was only a year ago!” remarked Countess Rostov. “I have never seen a more handsome man.”

“Count Bezukhov is very much altered now,” said Widow Drubetskoy. “Well, as I was saying, Baron Vasili is the next heir through his wife, but Count Bezukhov is very fond of Pierre, looked after his education, and wrote to the Tzar about him; so that in the case of his death—and he is so ill that he may die at any moment, and Dr. Lorrain has come from St. Petersburg—no one knows who will inherit his immense fortune, Pierre or Baron Vasili. Forty thousand serfs and millions of rubles! I know it all very well for Baron Vasili told me himself. Besides, Pierre is my mother’s

second cousin. Count Bezukhov is also my son Boris's godfather," Widow Drubetskoy added as if she attached no importance at all to the fact.

"Baron Vasili arrived in Moscow yesterday. I hear he has come on some inspection business," remarked the visitor.

"Yes, but between ourselves," said Widow Drubetskoy, "that is a pretext. The fact is that Baron Vasili has come to see Count Bezukhov, hearing how ill he is."

"But do you know, my dear, that was a capital joke," said Count Rostov; and seeing that the elder visitor was not listening, he turned to the young ladies. "I can just imagine what a funny figure that policeman cut!"

And as Count Rostov waved his arms to impersonate the policeman, his portly form again shook with a deep ringing laugh, the laugh of one who always eats well and, in particular, drinks well. "So do come and dine with us!" he said.

Silence ensued. Countess Rostov looked at her callers, smiling affably, but not concealing the fact that she would not be distressed if they now rose and took their leave. The visitor's daughter was already smoothing down her dress with an inquiring look at her mother, when suddenly from the next room were heard the footsteps of boys and girls running to the door and the noise of a chair falling over, and a girl of thirteen, Natasha, hiding something in the folds of her short muslin frock, darted in and stopped short in the middle of the room. It was evident that Natasha had not intended her flight to bring her so far. Behind her in the doorway appeared a student with a crimson coat collar, an officer of the Guards, a girl of fifteen, and a plump rosy-faced boy in a short jacket.

Count Rostov jumped up and, swaying from side to side, spread his arms wide and threw them around the little girl, Natasha, who had run in.

"Ah, here she is!" he exclaimed laughing. "Natasha, my pet, whose name day it is. My dear pet!"

“*My dear*, there is a time for everything,” said Countess Rostov with feigned severity. “You spoil her,” she added, turning to her husband.

“How do you do, my dear? I wish you many happy returns of your name day,” said the visitor. “What a charming child,” she added, addressing Countess Rostov.

Natasha, this black-eyed, wide-mouthed girl, not pretty but full of life—with childish bare shoulders which after her run heaved and shook her bodice, with black curls tossed backward, thin bare arms, little legs in lace-frilled drawers, and feet in low slippers—was just at that charming age when a girl is no longer a child, though the child is not yet a young woman. Escaping from her father she ran to hide her flushed face in the lace of her mother’s mantilla—not paying the least attention to her severe remark—and began to laugh. Natasha laughed, and in fragmentary sentences tried to explain about a doll that she produced from the folds of her frock.

“Do you see?... My doll... Mimi... You see...” was all Natasha managed to utter (to her everything seemed funny). She leaned against her mother and burst into such a loud, ringing fit of laughter that even the prim visitor could not help joining in.

“Now then, go away and take your monstrosity with you,” said Countess Rostov, pushing away her daughter with pretended sternness, and turning to the visitor she added: “Natasha is my youngest girl.”

Natasha, raising her face for a moment from her mother’s shawl, glanced up at her through tears of laughter, and again hid her face.

The visitor, compelled to look on at this family scene, thought it necessary to take some part in it.

“Tell me, my dear,” said the visitor to Natasha, “is your doll Mimi a relation of yours? A daughter, I suppose?”

Natasha did not like the visitor’s tone of condescension to childish things. Natasha did not reply but looked at her seriously.

Meanwhile, the younger generation: Boris, the officer (Widow Drubetskoy's son); Nicholas, the undergraduate (Count Rostov's eldest son); Sonya, Count Rostov's fifteen-year-old orphan niece, and little Petya, his youngest boy, had all settled down in the drawing room and were obviously trying to restrain within the bounds of decorum the excitement and mirth that shone in all their faces. Evidently in the back rooms, from which they had dashed out so impetuously, the conversation had been more amusing than the drawing room talk of society scandals, the weather, and the visitors. Now and then the young people glanced at one another, hardly able to suppress their laughter.

The two young men, Boris and Nicholas, friends from childhood, were of the same age and both handsome fellows, though not alike. Boris was tall and fair, and his calm and handsome face had regular, delicate features. Nicholas was short with curly hair and an open expression. Dark hairs were already showing on his upper lip, and his whole face expressed impetuosity and enthusiasm. Nicholas blushed when he entered the drawing room. He evidently tried to find something to say but failed. Boris on the contrary at once found his footing, and related quietly and humorously how he had known Natasha's doll Mimi when she was still quite a young lady before her nose was broken; how she had aged during the five years he had known her, and how her head had cracked right across the skull. When Boris said this, Nicholas glanced at Natasha. She turned away from him and glanced at her younger brother, Petya, who was screwing up his eyes and shaking with suppressed laughter, and unable to control herself any longer, she jumped up and rushed from the room as fast as her nimble little feet would carry her. Boris did not laugh.

"You were meaning to go out, weren't you, Mamma? Do you want the carriage?" Boris asked his mother with a smile.

"Yes, yes, go and tell them to get it ready," Widow Drubetskoy answered, returning his smile.

Boris quietly left the room and went in search of Natasha. Petya ran after them angrily, as if vexed that their program had been disturbed.

The only young people remaining in the drawing room, not counting the young lady visitor and Countess Rostov's eldest daughter, Vera (who was four years older than her sister and behaved already like a grown-up person), were Nicholas and Sonya, the orphan niece. Sonya was a slender little brunette with a tender look in her eyes which were veiled by long lashes, thick black plaits coiling twice around her head, and a tawny tint in her complexion and especially in the color of her slender but graceful and muscular arms and neck. By the grace of her movements, by the softness and flexibility of her small limbs, and by a certain coyness and reserve of manner, she reminded one of a pretty, half-grown kitten that promises to become a beautiful little cat. The orphan niece Sonya evidently considered it proper to show an interest in the general conversation by smiling, but in spite of herself her eyes under their thick long lashes watched her cousin who was going to join the army, with such passionate girlish adoration that her smile could not for a single instant impose upon anyone, and it was clear that the kitten had settled down only to spring up with more energy and again play with her cousin, Nicholas, as soon as they too could, like Natasha and Boris, escape from the drawing room.

"Ah yes, my dear," said Count Rostov, addressing the visitor and pointing to Nicholas, "Nicholas's friend Boris has become an officer, and so for friendship's sake Nicholas, too, is leaving the university and me, and entering the military service. And there was a place and everything waiting for him in the Archives Department! Isn't that friendship?" remarked Count Rostov in an inquiring tone.

"But they say that war has been declared," replied the visitor.

"They've been saying so a long while," said Count Rostov, "and they'll say so again and again, and that will be the end of it. My dear, there's friendship for you," he repeated. "Nicholas is joining the hussars."

The visitor, not knowing what to say, shook her head.

“It’s not at all from friendship with Boris,” declared Nicholas, flaring up and turning away as if from a shameful aspersion. “It is not from friendship at all; I simply feel that the army is my vocation.”

Nicholas glanced at Boris and the young lady visitor, and they were both regarding him with a smile of approbation.

“Schubert, the colonel in the hussars, is dining with us today. He has been here on leave and is taking Nicholas back with him. It can’t be helped!” said Count Rostov, shrugging his shoulders and speaking playfully of a matter that evidently distressed him.

“I have already told you, Papa,” said Nicholas, “that if you don’t wish to let me go, I’ll stay. But I know I am no use anywhere except in the army; I am not a diplomat or a government clerk.—I don’t know how to hide what I feel.” As Nicholas spoke he kept glancing with the flirtatiousness of a handsome youth at the orphan niece Sonya and the young lady visitor.

Natasha, the little kitten, feasting her eyes on Nicholas, seemed ready at any moment to start her gambols again and display her kittenish nature.

“All right, all right!” said Count Rostov. “Nicholas always flares up! Napoleon has turned everyone’s heads; they all think of how he rose from an ensign and became the leader of France. Well, well, God grant it,” he added, not noticing his visitor’s sarcastic smile.

The elders began talking about Napoleon. The visitor’s daughter turned to Nicholas.

“What a pity you weren’t at the Arkhárovs’ on Thursday. It was so dull without you,” said she, giving him a tender smile.

Nicholas, flattered, sat down nearer to her with a coquettish smile and engaged the smiling visitor in a confidential conversation without at all noticing that his involuntary smile had stabbed the heart of the orphan Sonya, who blushed and smiled unnaturally. In the midst of his talk, Nicholas glanced around at Sonya. She gave him a passionately angry

glance, and hardly able to restrain her tears and maintain the artificial smile on her lips, she got up and left the room. All of Nicholas' animation vanished. He waited for the first pause in the conversation, and then with a distressed face left the room to find Sonya.

"How plainly all these young people wear their hearts on their sleeves!" said Widow Drubetskoy, pointing to Nicholas as he went out. "Cousinhood is a dangerous neighborhood," she added.

"Yes," said Countess Rostov when the brightness these young people had brought into the room had vanished; and as if answering a question no one had put but which was always in her mind, "and how much suffering, how much anxiety one has had to go through that we might rejoice in them now! And yet really the anxiety is greater now than the joy. One is always, always anxious! Especially just at this age, so dangerous both for girls and boys."

"It all depends on the bringing up," remarked the visitor.

"Yes, you're quite right," continued Countess Rostov. "Till now I have always, thank God, been my children's friend and had their full confidence," said she, repeating the mistake of so many parents who imagine that their children have no secrets from them. "I know I shall always be my daughters' first confidante, and that if Nicholas, with his impulsive nature, does get into mischief (a boy can't help it), he will all the same never be like those St. Petersburg young men."

"Yes, they are splendid, splendid youngsters," chimed in Count Rostov who always solved questions that seemed to him perplexing by deciding that everything was splendid. "Just fancy: Nicholas wants to be a hussar. What's one to do, my dear?"

"What a charming creature your younger girl, Natasha, is," said the visitor; "a little volcano!"

"Yes, Natasha is a regular volcano," said Count Rostov. "Takes after me! And what a voice she has; though she's my daughter, I tell the truth

when I say she'll be a singer, a second Salomoni! We have engaged an Italian to give her lessons."

"Isn't she too young? I have heard that it harms the voice to train it at that age."

"Oh no, not at all too young!" replied Count Rostov. "Why, our mothers used to be married at twelve or thirteen."

"And Natasha's in love with Boris already. Just fancy!" said Countess Rostov with a gentle smile, looking at Boris. She went on, evidently concerned with a thought that always occupied her: "Now you see if I were to be severe with her and to forbid it ... goodness knows what they might be up to on the sly" (she meant that they would be kissing), "but as it is, I know every word she utters. Natasha will come running to me of her own accord in the evening and tell me everything. Perhaps I spoil her, but really that seems the best plan. With Vera, I was stricter."

"Yes, I was brought up quite differently," remarked the Rostov's handsome elder daughter, Vera, with a smile.

But the smile did not enhance Vera's beauty as smiles generally do; on the contrary, it gave her an unnatural, and therefore unpleasant, expression. Vera was good-looking, not at all stupid, quick at learning, was well brought up, and had a pleasant voice; what she said was true and appropriate, yet, strange to say, everyone—the visitors and countess alike—turned to look at her as if wondering why she had said it, and they all felt awkward.

"People are always too clever with their eldest children and try to make something exceptional of them," said the visitor.

"What's the good of denying it, my dear? My wife was too clever with Vera," said Count Rostov. "Well, what of that? She's turned out splendidly all the same," he added, winking at Vera.

The guests got up and took their leave, promising to return to dinner.

“What manners! I thought they would never go,” said Countess Rostov, when she had seen her guests out.

When Natasha ran out of the drawing room she only went as far as the conservatory. There she paused and stood listening to the conversation in the drawing room, waiting for Boris to come out. She was already growing impatient, and stamped her foot, ready to cry at his not coming at once, when she heard the young man’s discreet steps approaching neither quickly nor slowly. At this Natasha dashed swiftly among the flower tubs and hid there.

Boris paused in the middle of the room, looked around, brushed a little dust from the sleeve of his uniform, and going up to a mirror examined his handsome face. Natasha, very still, peered out from her ambush, waiting to see what he would do. He stood a little while before the glass, smiled, and walked toward the other door. Natasha was about to call him but changed her mind. “Let him look for me,” thought she. Hardly had Boris gone than Sonya, flushed, in tears, and muttering angrily, came in at the other door. Natasha checked her first impulse to run out to her, and remained in her hiding place, watching—as under an invisible cap—to see what went on in the world. She was experiencing a new and peculiar pleasure. Sonya, muttering to herself, kept looking around toward the drawing-room door. It opened and Nicholas came in.

“Sonya, what is the matter with you? How can you?” said Nicholas, running up to her.

“It’s nothing, nothing; leave me alone!” sobbed Sonya.

“Ah, I know what it is.”

“Well, if you do, so much the better, and you can go back to the pretty young visitor you were staring at!”

“Só-o-onya! Look here! How can you torture me and yourself like that, for a mere fancy?” said Nicholas taking her hand.

Sonya did not pull it away and she stopped crying.

Natasha, not stirring and scarcely breathing, watched from her ambush with sparkling eyes. "What will happen now?" thought she.

"Sonya! What is anyone in the world to me? You alone are everything!" said Nicholas. "And I will prove it to you."

"I don't like you to talk like that."

"Well, then, I won't; only forgive me, Sonya!" He drew her to him and kissed her.

"Oh, how nice," thought Natasha; and when Sonya and Nicholas had gone out of the conservatory Natasha followed and called Boris to her.

"Boris, come here," said Natasha with a sly and significant look. "I have something to tell you. Here, here!" and she led him into the conservatory to the place among the tubs where she had been hiding.

Boris followed her, smiling.

"What is the *something*?" asked Boris.

She grew confused, glanced around, and, seeing the doll she had thrown down on one of the tubs, picked it up.

"Kiss the doll," said Natasha.

Boris looked attentively and kindly at her eager face but did not reply.

"Don't you want to? Well, then, come here," said she, and went further in among the plants and threw down the doll. "Closer, closer!" she whispered.

She caught the young Boris by his cuffs, and a look of solemnity and fear appeared on her flushed face.

"And me? Would you like to kiss me?" she whispered almost inaudibly, glancing up at him from under her brows, smiling, and almost crying from excitement.

Boris blushed.

"How funny you are!" he said, bending down to her and blushing still more, but he waited and did nothing.

Suddenly Natasha jumped up onto a tub to be higher than he, embraced him so that both her slender bare arms clasped him above his neck, and, tossing back her hair, kissed him full on the lips.

Then she slipped down among the flowerpots on the other side of the tubs and stood, hanging her head.

“Natasha,” Boris said, “you know that I love you, but...”

“You are in love with me?” Natasha broke in.

“Yes, I am, but please don’t let us act like that... In another four years ... then I will ask for your hand.”

Natasha considered.

“Thirteen, fourteen, fifteen, sixteen,” she counted on her slender little fingers. “All right! Then it’s settled?”

A smile of joy and satisfaction lit up her eager face.

“Settled!” replied Boris.

“Forever?” said the little girl. “Till death itself?”

Natasha took Boris’s arm and with a happy face went with him into the adjoining sitting room.

After receiving her visitors, Countess Rostov was so tired that she gave orders to admit no more, but the porter was told to be sure to invite to dinner all who came “to congratulate.” Countess Rostov wished to have a tête-à-tête talk with the friend of her childhood, Widow Drubetskoy, whom she had not seen properly since she returned from St. Petersburg. Widow Drubetskoy, with her tear-worn but pleasant face, drew her chair nearer to that of Countess Rostov.

“With you, I will be quite frank,” said Widow Drubetskoy. “There are not many left of us old friends! That’s why I so value your friendship.”

Widow Drubetskoy looked at Vera and paused. Countess Rostov pressed Widow Drubetskoy’s hand.

“Vera!” Countess Rostov said to her eldest daughter who was evidently not a favorite, “How is it you have so little tact? Don’t you see you are not

wanted here? Go to the other girls, or..."

The handsome Vera smiled contemptuously but did not seem at all hurt.

"If you had told me sooner, Mamma, I would have gone," Vera replied as she left to go to her room.

But as Vera passed the sitting room she noticed two couples sitting, one pair at each window. She stopped and smiled scornfully. Sonya was sitting close to Nicholas who was copying out some verses for her, the first he had ever written. Boris and Natasha were at the other window and ceased talking when Vera entered. Sonya and Natasha looked at Vera with guilty, happy faces.

It was pleasant and touching to see these little girls in love, but apparently, the sight of them roused no pleasant feeling in Vera.

"How often have I asked you not to take my things?" Vera said. "You have a room of your own," and she took the inkstand from Nicholas.

"In a minute, in a minute," Nicholas said, dipping his pen.

"You always manage to do things at the wrong time," continued Vera. "You came rushing into the drawing room so that everyone felt ashamed of you."

Though what Vera said was quite fair, perhaps for that very reason no one replied, and the four simply looked at one another. She lingered in the room with the inkstand in her hand.

"And at your age what secrets can there be between Natasha and Boris, or between you two? It's all nonsense!"

"Now, Vera, what does it matter to you?" said Natasha in defense, speaking very gently.

Natasha seemed that day to be more kind and affectionate than ever to everyone.

"Very silly," said Vera. "I am ashamed of you. Secrets indeed!"

"Everyone has secrets of their own," answered Natasha, getting warmer. "We don't interfere with you and Berg."

“I should think not,” said Vera, “because there can never be anything wrong in my behavior. But I’ll just tell Mamma how you are behaving with Boris.”

“Natasha behaves very well to me,” remarked Boris. “I have nothing to complain of.”

“Don’t, Boris! You are such a diplomat that it is really tiresome,” said Natasha in a mortified voice that trembled slightly. (She used the word “diplomat,” which was just then much in vogue among the children, in the special sense they attached to it.) “Why does she bother me?” And Natasha added, turning to Vera, “You’ll never understand it because you’ve never loved anyone. You have no heart! You are a Madame de Genlis and nothing more” (this nickname, bestowed on Vera by Nicholas, was considered very stinging), “and your greatest pleasure is to be unpleasant to people! Go and flirt with Berg as much as you please,” Natasha finished quickly.

“I shall at any rate not run after a young man before visitors...”

“Well, now you’ve done what you wanted,” put in Nicholas—“you’ve said unpleasant things to everyone and upset them. We’re going to go to the nursery.”

All four young people, like a flock of scared birds, got up and left the room.

“The unpleasant things were said to me,” remarked Vera, “I said none to anyone.”

“Madame de Genlis! Madame de Genlis!” shouted laughing voices through the door.

The handsome Vera, who produced such an irritating and unpleasant effect on everyone, smiled and, evidently unmoved by what had been said to her, went to the looking glass and arranged her hair and scarf. Looking at her own handsome face she seemed to become still colder and calmer.

In the drawing-room, the conversation was still going on.

“Ah, my dear,” said Countess Rostov, “my life is not all roses either. Don’t I know that at the rate we are living our means won’t last long? It’s all the Club and Count Rostov’s easygoing nature. Even in the country do we get any rest? Theatricals, hunting, and heaven knows what besides! But don’t let’s talk about me; tell me how you managed everything. I often wonder at you, Widow Drubetskoy—how at your age you can rush off alone in a carriage to Moscow, to St. Petersburg, to those ministers and great people, and know how to deal with them all! It’s quite astonishing. How did you get things settled? I couldn’t possibly do it.”

“Ah, my love,” answered Widow Drubetskoy, “God grant you never know what it is to be left a widow without means and with a son you love to distraction! One learns many things then,” she added with a certain pride. “That lawsuit taught me much. When I want to see one of those big people I write a note: ‘Baroness So-and-So desires an interview with So-and-So,’ and then I take a cab and go myself two, three, or four times—till I get what I want. I don’t mind what they think of me.”

“Well, and to whom did you plead about your son, Boris?” asked Countess Rostov. “You see Boris as already an officer in the Guards, while my Nicholas is going as a mere cadet. There’s no one to champion Nicholas for him. To whom did you apply?”

“To Baron Vasili. He was so kind. He at once agreed to everything, and put the matter before the Tzar,” said Widow Drubetskoy enthusiastically, quite forgetting all the humiliation she had endured to gain her end.

“Has Baron Vasili aged much?” asked Countess Rostov. “I have not seen him since we acted together at the Rummyantsovs’ theatricals. I expect he has forgotten me. He paid me attention in those days,” said Countess Rostov, with a smile.

“Baron Vasili is just the same as ever,” replied Widow Drubetskoy, “overflowing with amiability. His position has not turned his head at all. He said to me, ‘I am sorry I can do so little for you, Widow Drubetskoy. I am at

your command.' Yes, he is a fine fellow and a very kind relation. But you know my love for my son: I would do anything for his happiness! And my affairs are in such a bad way that my position is now a terrible one," continued Widow Drubetskoy, sadly, dropping her voice. "My wretched lawsuit takes all I have and makes no progress. Would you believe it, I have literally not a penny and don't know how to equip Boris." She took out her handkerchief and began to cry. "I need five hundred rubles and have only one twenty-five-ruble note. I am in such a state... My only hope now is in Count Bezukhov. If he will not assist his godson—you know he is Boris's godfather—and allow him something for his maintenance, all my trouble will have been thrown away... I shall not be able to equip him."

Countess Rostov's eyes filled with tears and she pondered in silence.

"I often think, though, perhaps it's a sin," said Widow Drubetskoy, "that here lives Count Bezukhov so rich, all alone... that tremendous fortune... and what is his life worth? It's a burden to him, and Boris's life is only just beginning..."

"Surely Count Bezukhov will leave something to Boris," said Countess Rostov.

"Heaven only knows, my dear! These rich grandees are so selfish. Still, I will take Boris and go to see Count Bezukhov at once, and I shall speak to him straight out. Let people think what they will of me, it's really all the same to me when Boris's fate is at stake." Widow Drubetskoy rose. "It's now two o'clock and you dine at four. There will just be time."

And like a practical St. Petersburg lady who knows how to make the most of time, Widow Drubetskoy sent someone to call Boris and went into the anteroom with him.

"Good-by, my dear," said Widow Drubetskoy to Countess Rostov who saw her to the door, and added in a whisper so that her son should not hear, "Wish me good luck."

“Are you going to Count Bezukhov’s home, my dear?” said Count Rostov coming out from the dining hall into the anteroom, and he added: “If he is better, ask his son, Pierre, to dine with us. Pierre has been to the house, you know, and danced with the children. Be sure to invite him, my dear. We will see how Count Rostov distinguishes himself today. He says Count Orlóv never gave such a dinner as ours will be!”

“My dear Boris,” said Widow Drubetskoy to her son, Boris, as Countess Rostov’s carriage in which they were seated drove over the straw-covered street and turned into the wide courtyard of Pierre’s house. “My dear Boris,” said the mother, drawing her hand from beneath her old mantle and laying it timidly and tenderly on her son’s arm, “be affectionate and attentive to him. Count Bezukhov is your godfather after all, and your future depends on him. Remember that, my dear, and be nice to him, as you so well know how to be.”

“If only I knew that anything besides humiliation would come of it...” answered Boris coldly. “But I have promised and will do it for your sake.”

Although the hall porter saw someone’s carriage standing at the entrance, after scrutinizing Widow Drubetskoy and Boris (who without asking to be announced had passed straight through the glass porch between the rows of statues in niches) and looking significantly at the Widow Drubetskoy’s old cloak, the hall porter asked whether they wanted Count Bezukhov or Katerina or her sisters, and, hearing that they wished to see Count Bezukhov, said his excellency was worse today, and that his excellency was not receiving anyone.

“We may as well go back,” said Boris in French.

“My dear!” exclaimed his mother imploringly, again laying her hand on his arm as if that touch might soothe or rouse him.

Boris said no more but looked inquiringly at his mother without taking off his cloak.

“My friend,” said Widow Drubetskoy in gentle tones, addressing the hall porter, “I know Count Bezukhov is very ill... that’s why I have come... I am a relative. I shall not disturb him, my friend... I only need to see Baron Vasili: he is staying here, is he not? Please announce me.”

The hall porter sullenly pulled a bell that rang upstairs and turned away.

“Widow Drubetskoy to see Baron Vasili,” he called to a footman dressed in knee breeches, shoes, and a swallow-tail coat, who ran downstairs and looked over from the halfway landing.

Widow Drubetskoy smoothed the folds of her dyed silk dress before a large Venetian mirror in the wall, and in her trodden-down shoes briskly ascended the carpeted stairs.

“My dear,” Widow Drubetskoy said to Boris, once more stimulating him by a touch, “you promised me!”

Boris, lowering his eyes, followed her quietly.

They entered the large hall, from which one of the doors led to the apartments assigned to Baron Vasili.

Just as Widow Drubetskoy and Boris, having reached the middle of the hall, were about to ask their way of an elderly footman who had sprung up as they entered, the bronze handle of one of the doors turned and Baron Vasili came out—wearing a velvet coat with a single star on his breast, as was his custom when at home—taking leave of a good-looking, dark-haired man. This was the celebrated St. Petersburg doctor, Dr. Lorrain.

“Then it is certain?” said Baron Vasili.

“Baron, *to err is human*, but...” replied the doctor, swallowing his *r*’s, and pronouncing the Latin words with a French accent.

“Very well, very well...”

Seeing Widow Drubetskoy and her son, Baron Vasili dismissed the doctor with a bow and approached them silently and with a look of inquiry. Boris noticed that an expression of profound sorrow suddenly clouded his mother’s face, and he smiled slightly.

“Ah, Baron Vasili! In what sad circumstances do we meet again! And how is our dear invalid, Count Bezukhov?” said Widow Drubetskoy, as though unaware of the cold offensive look fixed on her.

Baron Vasili stared at her and at Boris questioningly and perplexed. Boris bowed politely. Baron Vasili without acknowledging the bow turned to Widow Drubetskoy, answering her query by a movement of the head and lips indicating very little hope for Count Bezukhov.

“Is it possible?” exclaimed Widow Drubetskoy. “Oh, how awful! It is terrible to think... This is my son,” she added, indicating Boris. “He wanted to thank you himself.”

Boris bowed again politely.

“Believe me, Baron Vasili, a mother’s heart will never forget what you have done for us.”

“I am glad I was able to do you a service, my dear Widow Drubetskoy,” said Baron Vasili, arranging his lace frill, and in tone and manner, here in Moscow to this woman whom he had placed under an obligation, assuming an air of much greater importance than he had done in St. Petersburg at Anna Pavlovna’s reception.

“Try to serve well and show yourself worthy,” added Baron Vasili, addressing Boris with severity. “I am glad... Are you here on leave?” Baron Vasili went on in his usual tone of indifference.

“I am awaiting orders to join my new regiment, your excellency,” replied Boris, betraying neither annoyance at Baron Vasili’s brusque manner nor a desire to enter into conversation, but speaking so quietly and respectfully that Baron Vasili gave him a searching glance.

“Are you living with your mother?”

“No, I am living at Countess Rostov’s,” replied Boris, again adding, “your excellency.”

“That is, with Count and Countess Rostov,” said Widow Drubetskoy.

“I know, I know,” answered Baron Vasili in his monotonous voice. “I never could understand how she made up her mind to marry that young bear, Count Rostov! A perfectly absurd and stupid fellow, and a gambler too, I am told.”

“But Count Rostov is a very kind man, Baron Vasili,” said Widow Drubetskoy with a pathetic smile, as though she too knew that Count Rostov deserved this censure, but asked him not to be too hard on the poor old man. “What do the doctors say about Count Bezukhov?” asked Widow Drubetskoy after a pause, her worn face again expressing deep sorrow.

“They give little hope,” replied Baron Vasili.

“And I should so like to thank *Uncle* once for all his kindness to me and Boris. Boris is Count Bezukhov’s godson,” she added, her tone suggesting that this fact ought to give Baron Vasili much satisfaction.

Baron Vasili became thoughtful and frowned. Widow Drubetskoy saw that Baron Vasili was afraid of finding in her a rival for Pierre’s fortune, and hastened to reassure him.

“If it were not for my sincere affection and devotion to *Uncle*,” said Widow Drubetskoy, uttering the word with peculiar assurance and unconcern, “I know Count Bezukhov’s character: noble, upright ... but you see Count Bezukhov has no one with him except Katerina and her sisters... They are still young...” She bent her head and continued in a whisper: “Has Count Bezukhov performed his final duty, Baron Vasili? How priceless are those last moments! It can make things no worse, and it is absolutely necessary to prepare him if he is so ill. We women, Baron Vasili,” and she smiled tenderly, “always know how to say these things. I absolutely must see him, however painful it may be for me. I am used to suffering.”

Evidently, Baron Vasili understood her, and also understood, as he had done at Anna Pavlovna’s, that it would be difficult to get rid of Widow Drubetskoy.

“Would not such a meeting be too trying for Count Bezukhov, dear Widow Drubetskoy?” said Baron Vasili. “Let us wait until evening. The doctors are expecting a crisis.”

“But one cannot delay, Baron Vasili, at such a moment! Consider that the welfare of his soul is at stake. Ah, it is awful: the duties of a Christian...”

A door of one of the inner rooms opened and Katerina entered with a cold, stern face. The length of her body was strikingly out of proportion to her short legs. Baron Vasili turned to her.

“Well, how is Count Bezukhov?”

“Still the same; but what can you expect, this noise...” said Katerina, looking at Widow Drubetskoy as at a stranger.

“Ah, my dear Katerina, I hardly knew you,” said Widow Drubetskoy with a happy smile, ambling lightly up to her. “I have come, and am at your service to help you nurse *my uncle*. I imagine what you have gone through,” and she sympathetically turned up her eyes.

Katerina gave no reply and did not even smile, but left the room as Widow Drubetskoy took off her gloves and, occupying the position she had conquered, settled down in an armchair, inviting Baron Vasili to take a seat beside her.

“Boris,” she said to Boris with a smile, “I shall go in to see my uncle, Count Bezukhov, soon; but you, my dear, had better go to Pierre meanwhile, and don’t forget to give him the Rostovs’ invitation. They ask him to dinner. I suppose you won’t want Pierre to go?” she continued, turning to Baron Vasili.

“On the contrary,” replied Baron Vasili, who had plainly become depressed, “I shall be only too glad if you relieve me of that young man, Pierre... Here he is, and Count Bezukhov has not once asked for him.”

Baron Vasili shrugged his shoulders. A footman conducted Boris down one flight of stairs and up another, to Pierre’s rooms.

Pierre, after all, had not managed to choose a career for himself in St. Petersburg and had been expelled from there for riotous conduct and sent to Moscow. The story told about him at Count Rostov's was true. Pierre had taken part in tying a policeman to a bear. He had now been for some days in Moscow and was staying as usual at his father's house. Though he expected that the story of his escapade would be already known in Moscow and that the ladies about his father, Count Bezukhov—the ladies were never favorably disposed toward him—would have used it to turn Count Bezukhov against him, he nevertheless on the day of his arrival went to his father's part of the house. Entering the drawing-room, where Katerina and her sisters spent most of their time, he greeted the ladies, two of whom were sitting at embroidery frames while a third read aloud. It was the eldest, Katerina, who was reading—the one who had met Widow Drubetskoy. The two younger ones were embroidering: both were rosy and pretty and they differed only in that one had a little mole on her lip which made her much prettier. Pierre was received as if he were a corpse or a leper. Katerina paused in her reading and silently stared at him with frightened eyes; her sister assumed precisely the same expression; while the youngest sister, the one with the mole, who was of a cheerful and lively disposition, bent over her frame to hide a smile probably evoked by the amusing scene she foresaw. She drew her wool thread down through the canvas and, scarcely able to refrain from laughing, stooped as if trying to make out the pattern.

“How do you do, Katerina?” said Pierre. “You don't recognize me?”

“I recognize you only too well, too well.”

“How is Count Bezukhov? Can I see him?” asked Pierre, awkwardly as usual, but unabashed.

“Count Bezukhov is suffering physically and mentally, and apparently you have done your best to increase his mental suffering.”

“Can I see him?” Pierre again asked.

“Hmm... If you wish to kill him, to kill him outright, you can see him... Olga, go and see whether Count Bezukhov’s beef tea is ready—it is almost time,” Katerina added, giving Pierre to understand that they were busy, and busy making his father comfortable, while evidently he, Pierre, was only busy causing him annoyance.

Olga went out. Pierre stood looking at the sisters; then he bowed and said: “Then I will go to my rooms. You will let me know when I can see him.”

And Pierre left the room, followed by the low but ringing laughter of the sister with the mole.

The day before, Baron Vasili had arrived and settled in at Count Bezukhov’s house. Baron Vasili had then sent for Pierre and said to him: “Pierre, if you are going to behave here as you did in St. Petersburg, you will end very badly; that is all I have to say to you. Count Bezukhov is very, very ill, and you must not see him at all.”

Since then Pierre had not been disturbed and had spent the whole time in his rooms upstairs.

When Boris appeared at his door, Pierre was pacing up and down his room, stopping occasionally at a corner to make menacing gestures at the wall, as if running a sword through an invisible foe, and glaring savagely over his spectacles, and then again resuming his walk, muttering indistinct words, shrugging his shoulders and gesticulating.

“England is done for,” said Pierre, scowling and pointing his finger at someone unseen. “Pitt, as England’s prime minister, is a traitor to the nation and to the rights of man, and so he is sentenced to...” But before Pierre—who at that moment imagined himself to be Napoleon in person and to have just effected the dangerous crossing of the Straits of Dover and captured London—could pronounce Pitt’s sentence, he saw a well-built and handsome young officer entering his room. Pierre paused. He had left

Moscow when Boris was a boy of fourteen and had quite forgotten him, but in his usual impulsive and hearty way, he took Boris by the hand with a friendly smile.

“Do you remember me?” asked Boris quietly with a pleasant smile. “I have come with my mother to see Count Bezukhov, but it seems he is not well.”

“Yes, it seems Count Bezukhov is ill. People are always disturbing him,” answered Pierre, trying to remember who this young man was.

Boris felt that Pierre did not recognize him but did not consider it necessary to introduce himself, and without experiencing the least embarrassment, Boris looked Pierre straight in the face.

“Count Rostov asks you to come to dinner today,” said Boris, after a considerable pause which made Pierre feel uncomfortable.

“Ah, Count Rostov!” exclaimed Pierre joyfully. “Then you are his son, Ilyá? Only fancy, I didn’t know you at first. Do you remember how we went to the Sparrow Hills with Madame Jacquot?... It’s such an age...”

“You are mistaken,” said Boris deliberately, with a bold and slightly sarcastic smile. “I am Boris, son of Widow Drubetskoy. Count Rostov, the father, is Ilyá, and his son is Nicholas. I never knew any Madame Jacquot.”

Pierre shook his head and arms as if attacked by mosquitoes or bees.

“Oh dear, what am I thinking about? I’ve mixed everything up. One has so many relatives in Moscow! So you are Boris? Of course. Well, now we know where we are. And what do you think of the English’s Boulogne expedition? The British will come off badly, you know, if Napoleon gets across the English Channel. I think the expedition is quite feasible. If only General Villeneuve doesn’t make a mess of things!”

Boris knew nothing about the Boulogne expedition; he did not read the papers and it was the first time he had heard Villeneuve’s name.

“We here in Moscow are more occupied with dinner parties and scandal than with politics,” said Boris in his quiet ironical tone. “I know nothing

about it and have not thought about it. Moscow is chiefly busy with gossip,” he continued. “Just now they are talking about you and your father, Count Bezukhov.”

Pierre smiled in his good-natured way as if afraid for Boris’s sake that the latter might say something he would afterward regret. But Boris spoke distinctly, clearly, and dryly, looking straight into Pierre’s eyes.

“Moscow has nothing else to do but gossip,” Boris went on. “Everybody is wondering to whom Count Bezukhov will leave his fortune, though he may perhaps outlive us all, as I sincerely hope he will...”

“Yes, it is all very horrid,” interrupted Pierre, “very horrid.”

Pierre was still afraid that Boris might inadvertently say something disconcerting to himself.

“And it must seem to you,” said Boris flushing slightly, but not changing his tone or attitude, “it must seem to you that everyone is trying to get something out of the rich man?”

“So it does,” thought Pierre.

“But I just wish to say, to avoid misunderstandings, that you are quite mistaken if you reckon me or my mother among such people. We are very poor, but for my own part at any rate, for the very reason that your father, Count Bezukhov, is rich, I don’t regard myself as a relation of his, and neither I nor my mother would ever ask or take anything from him.”

For a long time, Pierre could not understand, but when he did, he jumped up from the sofa, seized Boris under the elbow in his quick, clumsy way, and, blushing far more than Boris, began to speak with a feeling of mingled shame and vexation.

“Well, this is strange! Do you suppose I... who could think?... I know very well...”

But Boris again interrupted him.

“I am glad I have spoken out fully. Perhaps you did not like that I did so? You must excuse me,” said Boris, putting Pierre at ease instead of being

put at ease by him, “but I hope I have not offended you. I always make it a rule to speak out... Well, what answer am I to take? Will you come to dinner at the Rostovs’?”

And Boris, having apparently relieved himself of an onerous duty and extricated himself from an awkward situation and placed another in it, became quite pleasant again.

“No, but I say,” said Pierre, calming down, “you are a wonderful fellow! What you have just said is good, very good. Of course, you don’t know me. We have not met for such a long time... not since we were children. You might think that I... I understand, quite understand. I could not have done it myself, I should not have had the courage, but it’s splendid. I am very glad to have made your acquaintance. It’s queer,” Pierre added after a pause, “that you should have suspected me!” He began to laugh. “Well, what of it! I hope we’ll get better acquainted,” and he pressed Boris’ hand. “Do you know, I have not once been in to see Count Rostov. He has not sent for me... I am sorry for him as a man, but what can one do?”

“And so you think Napoleon will manage to get an army across?” asked Boris with a smile.

Pierre saw that Boris wished to change the subject, and being of the same mind he began explaining the advantages and disadvantages of the Boulogne expedition.

A footman came in to summon Boris—Widow Drubetskoy was going. Pierre, in order to make Boris’ better acquaintance, promised to come to dinner at the Rostov’s, and warmly pressing his hand looked affectionately over his spectacles into Boris’ eyes. After Boris had gone Pierre continued pacing up and down the room for a long time, no longer piercing an imaginary foe with his imaginary sword, but smiling at the remembrance of that pleasant, intelligent, and resolute young man.

As often happens in early youth, especially to one who leads a lonely life, Pierre felt an unaccountable tenderness for Boris and made up his mind that they would be friends.

Baron Vasili saw Widow Drubetskoy off. She held a handkerchief to her eyes and her face was tearful.

“It is dreadful, dreadful!” she was saying, “but cost me what it may, I shall do my duty. I will come and spend the night. Count Bezukhov must not be left like this. Every moment is precious. I can’t think why his nieces put it off. Perhaps God will help me to find a way to prepare him!... Goodbye, Baron Vasili! May God support you...”

“*Goodbye, my beautiful friend,*” answered Baron Vasili turning away from her.

“Oh, Count Bezukhov is in a dreadful state,” said Widow Drubetskoy to Boris when they were in the carriage. “He hardly recognizes anybody.”

“I don’t understand, Mamma—what is Count Bezukhov’s attitude to Pierre?” asked Boris.

“Count Bezukhov’s will is going to reveal that, my dear; our fate also depends on it.”

“But why do you expect that Count Bezukhov will leave us anything?”

“Ah, my dear! He is so rich, and we are so poor!”

“Well, that is hardly a sufficient reason, Mamma...”

“Oh, heavens! How ill he is!” exclaimed Widow Drubetskoy.

After Widow Drubetskoy had driven off with Boris to visit Count Bezukhov, Countess Rostov sat for a long time all alone applying her handkerchief to her eyes. At last, she rang.

“What is the matter with you, my dear?” Countess Rostov said crossly to the maid who kept her waiting some minutes. “Don’t you wish to serve me? Then I’ll find you another place.”

Countess Rostov was upset by Widow Drubetskoy's sorrow and humiliating poverty and was therefore out of sorts, a state of mind which with her always found expression in calling her maid "my dear" and speaking to her with exaggerated politeness.

"I am very sorry, ma'am," answered the maid.

"Ask Count Rostov to come to me."

Count Rostov came waddling in to see his wife with a rather guilty look as usual.

"Well, my dear? What a *saute* of game with *Madiera sauce* we are to have, my dear! I tasted it. The thousand rubles I paid for the chef were not ill-spent. He is worth it!"

He sat down by his wife, his elbows on his knees and his hands ruffling his gray hair.

"What are your commands, dear?"

"You see, my dear... What's that mess?" Countess Rostov said, pointing to his waistcoat. "It's the *saute*, most likely," she added with a smile. "Well, you see, husband, I want some money."

Countess Rostov's face became sad.

"Oh, my dear!" ... and Count Rostov began bustling to get out his pocketbook.

"I want a great deal, husband! I want five hundred rubles," and taking out her cambric handkerchief she began wiping her husband's waistcoat.

"Yes, immediately, immediately! Hey, who's there?" Count Rostov called out in a tone only used by persons who are certain that those they call will rush to obey the summons. "Send Dmítri to me!"

Dmítri, a man of a good family who had been brought up in Count Rostov's house and now managed all his affairs, stepped softly into the room.

"This is what I want, my dear fellow," said Count Rostov to the deferential young man who had entered. "Bring me..." he reflected a

moment, “yes, bring me seven hundred rubles, yes! But mind, don’t bring me such tattered and dirty notes as last time, but nice clean ones for my wife.”

“Yes, Dmítiri, clean ones, please,” said Countess Rostov, sighing deeply.

“When would you like them, Count Rostov?” asked Dmítiri. “Allow me to inform you... But, don’t be uneasy,” he added, noticing that Count Rostov was beginning to breathe heavily and quickly which was always a sign of approaching anger. “I was forgetting... Do you wish it brought at once?”

“Yes, yes; just so! Bring it. Give it to Countess Rostov.”

“What a treasure that Dmítiri is,” added Count Rostov with a smile when the young man had departed. “There is never any ‘impossible’ with him. That’s a thing I hate! Everything is possible.”

“Ah, money, husband, money! How much sorrow it causes in the world,” said Countess Rostov. “But I am in great need of this sum.”

“You, my dear, are a notorious spendthrift,” said Count Rostov, and having kissed his wife’s hand he went back to his study.

When Widow Drubetskoy returned from Count Bezukhov’s, the money, all in clean notes, was lying ready under a handkerchief on Countess Rostov’s little table. Countess Rostov noticed that something was agitating her.

“Well, my dear?” asked Countess Rostov.

“Oh, what a terrible state Count Bezukhov is in! One would not know him, he is so ill! I was only there a few moments and hardly said a word...”

“For heaven’s sake don’t refuse me,” Countess Rostov began, with a blush that looked very strange on her thin, dignified, elderly face, and she took the money from under the handkerchief.

Widow Drubetskoy instantly guessed Countess Rostov’s intention and stooped to be ready to embrace Countess Rostov at the appropriate moment.

“This is for Boris from me, for his outfit.”

Widow Drubetskoy was already embracing her and weeping. Countess Rostov wept too. They wept because they were friends, and because they were kindhearted, and because they—friends from childhood—had to think about such a base thing as money, and because their youth was over... But those tears were pleasant to them both.

Countess Rostov, with her daughters and a large number of guests, was already seated in the drawing room. Count Rostov took the gentlemen into his study and showed them his choice collection of Turkish pipes. From time to time he went out to ask: “Hasn’t she come yet?” They were expecting Mary Dmitrievna, known in society as *the terrible dragon*, a lady distinguished not for wealth or rank, but for common sense and frank plainness of speech. Mary Dmitrievna was known to the Tzar’s family as well as to all Moscow and St. Petersburg, and both cities wondered at her, laughed privately at her rude remarks, and told good stories about her, while nonetheless all without exception respected and feared her.

In Count Rostov’s room, which was full of tobacco smoke, they talked of the war that had been announced in a manifesto, and about the recruiting. None of them had yet seen the manifesto, but they all knew it had appeared. Count Rostov sat on the sofa between two guests who were smoking and talking. He neither smoked nor talked, but bending his head first to one side and then to the other watched the smokers with evident pleasure and listened to the conversation of his two neighbors, whom he egged on against each other.

One of the smokers was a sallow, clean-shaven civilian with a thin and wrinkled face, already growing old, though he was dressed like a most fashionable young man. He sat with his legs up on the sofa as if quite at home and, having stuck an amber mouthpiece far into his mouth, was inhaling the smoke spasmodically and screwing up his eyes. This was an old bachelor, Cousin Sinchin, a cousin of Countess Rostov’s, a man with “a sharp tongue” as they said in Moscow society. He seemed to be

condescending to his companion. The latter, a fresh, rosy officer of the Guards, irreproachably washed, brushed, and buttoned, held his pipe in the middle of his mouth and with red lips gently inhaled the smoke, letting it escape from his handsome mouth in rings. This was Berg, an officer in a regiment with whom Boris was to travel to join the army, and about whom Natasha had teased her elder sister Vera by speaking of Berg as her “intended.” Count Rostov sat between them and listened attentively. His favorite occupation when not playing boston, a card game he was very fond of, was that of a listener, especially when he succeeded in setting two loquacious talkers at one another.

“Well, then, old chap, *my very honorable* Berg,” said Cousin Sinchin, laughing ironically and mixing the most ordinary Russian expressions with the choicest French phrases—which was a peculiarity of his speech. “*You expect to make an income out of the government,*” you want to make something out of your company?”

“No, Cousin Sinchin; I only want to show that in the cavalry the advantages are far less than in the infantry. Just consider my own position now...”

Berg always spoke quietly, politely, and with great precision. His conversation always related entirely to himself; he would remain calm and silent when the talk related to any topic that had no direct bearing on himself. He could remain silent for hours without being at all put out of countenance himself or making others uncomfortable, but as soon as the conversation concerned himself he would begin to talk circumstantially and with evident satisfaction.

“Consider my position, Cousin Sinchin. Were I in the cavalry I should get not more than two hundred rubles every four months, even with the rank of lieutenant; but as it is I receive two hundred and thirty,” said he, looking at Cousin Sinchin and Count Rostov with a joyful, pleasant smile, as if it

were obvious to him that his success must always be the chief desire of everyone else.

“Besides that, Cousin Sinchin, by exchanging into the Guards I shall be in a more prominent position,” continued Berg, “and vacancies occur much more frequently in the Foot Guards. Then just think what can be done with two hundred and thirty rubles! I even manage to put a little aside and send something to my father,” he went on, emitting a smoke ring.

“*So that squares matters...* A German knows how to skin a flint, as the proverb says,” remarked Cousin Sinchin, moving his pipe to the other side of his mouth and winking at Count Rostov.

Count Rostov burst out laughing. The other guests seeing that Cousin Sinchin was talking came up to listen. Berg, oblivious of irony or indifference, continued to explain how by exchanging into the Guards he had already gained a step on his old comrades of the Cadet Corps; how in wartime the company commander might get killed, and he, as senior in the company, might easily succeed to the post; how popular he was with everyone in the regiment, and how satisfied his father was with him. Berg evidently enjoyed narrating all this and did not seem to suspect that others, too, might have their own interests. But all he said was so prettily sedate, and the naivete of his youthful egotism was so obvious, that he disarmed his hearers.

“Well, Berg, my boy, you’ll get along wherever you go—foot or horse—that I’ll warrant,” said Cousin Sinchin, patting him on the shoulder and taking his feet off the sofa.

Berg smiled joyously. Count Rostov, followed by his guests, went into the drawing room.

It was just the moment before a big dinner when the assembled guests, expecting the summons to hors d’oeuvres, avoid engaging in any long conversation but think it necessary to move about and talk, in order to show that they are not at all impatient for their food. Count and Countess Rostov

look toward the door, and now and then glance at one another, and the visitors try to guess from these glances who, or what, they are waiting for—some important relation who has not yet arrived, or a dish that is not yet ready.

Pierre had come just at dinnertime and was sitting awkwardly in the middle of the drawing room on the first chair he had come across, blocking the way for everyone. Countess Rostov tried to make him talk, but he went on naively looking around through his spectacles as if in search of somebody and answered all her questions in monosyllables. Pierre was in the way and was the only one who did not notice the fact. Most of the guests, knowing of the affair with the bear, looked with curiosity at this big, stout, quiet man, wondering how such a clumsy, modest fellow could have played such a prank on a policeman.

“You have only lately arrived?” Countess Rostov asked him.

“Yes, *madam*,” replied Pierre, looking around him.

“You have not yet seen my husband, Count Rostov?”

“No, *madam*.” He smiled quite inappropriately.

“You have been in Paris recently, I believe? I suppose it’s very interesting.”

“Very interesting.”

Countess Rostov exchanged glances with Widow Drubetskoy. The latter understood that she was being asked to entertain Pierre, and sitting down beside him she began to speak about his father, Count Bezukhov; but he answered her, as he had Countess Rostov, only in monosyllables. The other guests were all conversing with one another. “The Razumóvskis... It was charming... You are very kind... Countess Apráksina...” was heard on all sides. Countess Rostov rose and went into the ballroom.

“Mary Dmitrievna?” came her voice from there.

“Herself,” came the answer in a rough voice, and Mary Dmitrievna entered the room.

All the unmarried ladies and even the married ones except the very oldest rose. Mary Dmitrievna paused at the door. Tall and stout, holding high her fifty-year-old head with its gray curls, she stood surveying the guests, and leisurely arranged her wide sleeves as if rolling them up. Mary Dmitrievna always spoke in Russian.

“Health and happiness to her whose name day we are keeping and to her children,” Mary Dmitrievna said, in her loud, full-toned voice which drowned all others. “Well, you old sinner,” she went on, turning to Count Rostov who was kissing her hand, “you’re feeling dull in Moscow, I daresay? Nowhere to hunt with your dogs? But what is to be done, old man? Just see how these nestlings are growing up,” and she pointed to the girls. “You must look for husbands for them whether you like it or not...”

“Well,” said Mary Dmitrievna, “how’s my Cossack?” (Mary Dmitrievna always called Natasha a Cossack) and she stroked the child’s arm as she came up fearless and gay to kiss her hand. “I know she’s a scamp of a girl, but I like her.”

Mary Dmitrievna took a pair of pear-shaped ruby earrings from her huge reticule and, having given them to the rosy Natasha, who beamed with the pleasure of her saint’s-day fete, turned away at once and addressed herself to Pierre.

“Eh, eh, friend! Come here a bit,” said Mary Dmitrievna, assuming a soft high tone of voice. “Come here, my friend Pierre...” and she ominously tucked up her sleeves still higher. Pierre approached, looking at her in a childlike way through his spectacles.

“Come nearer, come nearer, friend! I used to be the only one to tell your father, Count Bezukhov, the truth when he was in favor, and in your case, it’s my evident duty.” She paused. All were silent, expectant of what was to follow, for this was clearly only a prelude.

“That Pierre...A fine lad!” Mary Dmitrievna said sarcastically. “My word! A fine lad!... Pierre’s father, Count Bezukhov, lies on his deathbed

and Pierre amuses himself by setting a policeman astride a bear! For shame, sir, for shame! It would be better if Pierre went to the war.”

She turned away and gave her hand to Count Rostov, who could hardly keep from laughing.

“Well, I suppose it is time we were at table?” said Mary Dmitrievna.

Count Rostov went in first with Mary Dmitrievna, Countess Rostov followed on the arm of a colonel of hussars, a man of importance to them because Nicholas was to go with him to the regiment; then came Widow Drubetskoy with Cousin Sinchin. Berg gave his arm to Vera. The smiling Julie went in with Nicholas. After them other couples followed, filling the whole dining hall, and last of all the children, tutors, and governesses followed singly. The footmen began moving about, chairs scraped, the band struck up in the gallery, and the guests settled down in their places. Then the strains of Count Rostov’s household band were replaced by the clatter of knives and forks, the voices of visitors, and the soft steps of the footmen. At one end of the table sat Countess Rostov with Mary Dmitrievna on her right and Widow Drubetskoy on her left, the other lady visitors were farther down. At the other end sat Count Rostov, with the hussar colonel on his left and Cousin Sinchin and the other male visitors on his right. Midway down the long table on one side sat the grown-up young people: Vera beside Berg, Pierre beside Boris; and on the other side, the children, tutors, and governesses. From behind the crystal decanters and fruit vases, Count Rostov kept glancing at his wife and her tall cap with its light-blue ribbons, and busily filled his neighbors’ glasses, not neglecting his own. Countess Rostov in turn, without omitting her duties as hostess, threw significant glances from behind the pineapples at her husband whose face and bald head seemed by their redness to contrast more than usual with his gray hair. At the ladies’ end, an even chatter of voices was heard all the time, at the men’s end the voices sounded louder and louder, especially that of the colonel of hussars who, growing more and more flushed, ate and drank so

much that Count Rostov held him up as a pattern to the other guests. Berg with tender smiles was saying to Vera that love is not an earthly but a heavenly feeling. Boris was telling his new friend Pierre who the guests were and exchanging glances with Natasha, who was sitting opposite. Pierre spoke little but examined the new faces, and ate a great deal. Of the two soups, he chose turtle with savory patties and went on to the game without omitting a single dish or one of the wines. These latter the butler thrust mysteriously forward, wrapped in a napkin, from behind the next man's shoulders and whispered: "Dry Madeira," "Hungarian," or "Rhine wine", as the case might be. Of the four crystal glasses engraved with Count Rostov's monogram that stood before his plate, Pierre held out one at random and drank with enjoyment, gazing with ever-increasing amiability at the other guests. Natasha, who sat opposite, was looking at Boris as girls of thirteen look at the boy they are in love with and have just kissed for the first time. Sometimes that same look fell on Pierre, and that funny lively little girl's look made him inclined to laugh without knowing why.

Nicholas sat at some distance from the orphan niece Sonya, beside Julie, to whom he was again talking with the same involuntary smile. Sonya wore a company smile but was evidently tormented by jealousy; now she turned pale, now blushed and strained every nerve to overhear what Nicholas and Julie were saying to one another. The governess kept looking around uneasily as if preparing to resent any slight that might be put upon the children. The German tutor was trying to remember all the dishes, wines, and kinds of dessert, in order to send a full description of the dinner to his people in Germany; and he felt greatly offended when the butler with a bottle wrapped in a napkin passed him by. He frowned, trying to appear as if he did not want any of that wine, but was mortified because no one would understand that it was not to quench his thirst or from greediness that he wanted it, but simply from a conscientious desire for knowledge.

At the men's end of the table, the talk grew more and more animated. The colonel told them that the declaration of war had already appeared in St. Petersburg and that a copy, which he had himself seen, had that day been forwarded by courier to General Kutuzov.

"And why the deuce are we going to fight Napoleon?" remarked Cousin Sinchin. "He has stopped Austria's cackle and I fear it will be our turn next."

The colonel was a stout, tall, plethoric German, evidently devoted to the service and patriotically Russian. He resented Cousin Sinchin's remark.

"It is for the reason, my goot sir," said the colonel, speaking with a German accent, "for the reasson zat ze Tzar knows zat. He declares in ze manifessto zat he cannot fiew wiz indifference ze danger vreatening Russia and zat ze safety and dignity of ze Empire as vell as ze sanctity of its *alliances*..." he spoke this last word with particular emphasis as if in it lay the gist of the matter.

Then with the unerring official memory that characterized him, the colonel repeated the opening words of the manifesto:

... and the wish, which constitutes the Tzar's sole and absolute aim—to establish peace in Europe on firm foundations—has now decided him to dispatch part of the army abroad and to create a new condition for the attainment of that purpose.

"Zat, my dear sir, is vy..." the colonel concluded, drinking a tumbler of wine with dignity and looking to Count Rostov for approval.

"Do you know the proverb: 'Jerome, Jerome, do not roam, but turn spindles at home!'" said Cousin Sinchin, puckering his brows and smiling. "That suits us down to the ground. Suvórov, Russia's most famous general who never lost a battle— Suvórov knew what he was about; yet they beat him *hollow*, and where are we to find Suvórovs now? I just ask you that," said he, continually changing from French to Russian.

“Ve must vight to the last tr-r-op of our plood!” said the colonel, thumping the table; “and ve must tie for our Tzar, and zen all vill pe vell. And ve must discuss it as little as po-o-ossible” he dwelt particularly on the word *possible*... “as po-o-ossible,” he ended, again turning to Count Rostov. “Zat is how ve old hussars look at it, and zere’s an end of it! And how do you, a young man and a young hussar, how do you judge of it?” he added, addressing Nicholas (who when he heard that the war was being discussed had turned from his partner with eyes and ears intent on the colonel).

“I am quite of your opinion,” replied Nicholas, flaming up, turning his plate around and moving his wine glasses about with as much decision and desperation as though he were at that moment facing some great danger. “I am convinced that we Russians must die or conquer,” he concluded, conscious—as were others—after the words were uttered that his remarks were too enthusiastic and emphatic for the occasion and were therefore awkward.

“What you said just now was splendid!” said his table partner Julie.

The orphan niece Sonya trembled all over and blushed to her ears and behind them and down to her neck and shoulders while Nicholas was speaking.

Pierre listened to the colonel’s speech and nodded approvingly.

“That’s fine,” said he.

“The young man’s a real hussar!” shouted the colonel, again thumping the table.

“What are you making such a noise about over there?” Mary Dmitrievna’s deep voice suddenly inquired from the other end of the table. “What are you thumping the table for?” she demanded of the hussar, “and why are you exciting yourself? Do you think the French are here?”

“I am speaking ze truce,” replied the colonel with a smile.

“It’s all about the war,” Count Rostov shouted down the table. “You know Nicholas is going, Mary Dmitrievna? My son Nicholas is going.”

“I have four sons in the army but still I don’t fret. It is all in God’s hands. You may die in your bed or God may spare you in a battle,” replied Mary Dmitrievna’s deep voice, which easily carried the whole length of the table.

“That’s true!”

Once more the conversations concentrated, the ladies’ at the one end and the men’s at the other.

“You won’t ask,” Natasha’s little brother was saying; “I know you won’t ask!”

“I will,” replied Natasha.

Her face suddenly flushed with reckless and joyous resolution. Natasha half rose, by a glance inviting Pierre, who sat opposite, to listen to what was coming, and turning to her mother:

“Mamma!” rang out the clear contralto notes of her childish voice, audible the whole length of the table.

“What is it?” asked Countess Rostov, startled; but seeing by Natasha’s face that it was only mischief, she shook a finger at her sternly with a threatening and forbidding movement of her head.

The conversation was hushed.

“Mamma! What sweets are we going to have?” Natasha’s voice sounded still more firm and resolute.

Countess Rostov tried to frown, but could not. Mary Dmitrievna shook her fat finger.

“Cossack!” she said threateningly.

Most of the guests, uncertain how to regard this sally, looked at the elders.

“You had better take care!” said Countess Rostov.

“Mamma! What sweets are we going to have?” Natasha again cried boldly, with saucy gaiety, confident that her prank would be taken in good part.

Sonya and fat little Petya doubled up with laughter.

“You see! *I have* asked,” whispered Natasha to her little brother and to Pierre, glancing at him again.

“Ice pudding, but you won’t get any,” said Mary Dmitrievna.

Natasha saw there was nothing to be afraid of and so she braved even Mary Dmitrievna.

“Mary Dmitrievna! What kind of ice pudding? I don’t like ice cream.”

“Carrot ices.”

“No! What kind, Mary Dmitrievna? What kind?” Natasha almost screamed; “I want to know!”

Mary Dmitrievna and Countess Rostov burst out laughing, and all the guests joined in. Everyone laughed, not at Mary Dmitrievna’s answer but at the incredible boldness and smartness of this little girl who had dared to treat Mary Dmitrievna in this fashion.

Natasha only desisted when she had been told that there would be pineapple ice. Before the ices, champagne was served around. The band again struck up, Count Rostov and countess kissed, and the guests, leaving their seats, went up to congratulate Countess Rostov, and reached across the table to clink glasses with Count Rostov, with the children, and with one another. Again the footmen rushed about, chairs scraped, and in the same order in which they had entered but with redder faces, the guests returned to the drawing room and to Count Rostov’s study.

The card tables were drawn out, sets made up for card games, and Count Rostov’s visitors settled themselves, some in the two drawing rooms, some in the sitting room, some in the library.

Count Rostov, holding his cards fanwise, kept himself with difficulty from dropping into his usual after-dinner nap, and laughed at everything. The young people, at Countess Rostov’s instigation, gathered around the clavichord and harp. Julie by general request played first. After she had played a little air with variations on the harp, she joined the other young

ladies in begging Natasha and Nicholas, who were noted for their musical talent, to sing something. Natasha, who was treated as though she were grown up, was evidently very proud of this but at the same time felt shy.

“What shall we sing?” she said.

“‘The Brook,’” suggested Nicholas.

“Well, then, let’s be quick. Boris, come here,” said Natasha. “But where is Sonya?”

She looked round and seeing that her friend was not in the room ran to look for her.

Running into Sonya’s room and not finding her there, Natasha ran to the nursery, but Sonya was not there either. Natasha concluded that she must be on the chest in the passage. The chest in the passage was the place of mourning for the younger female generation in the Nicholas household. And there in fact was Sonya lying face downward on Nurse’s dirty feather bed on the top of the chest, crumpling her gauzy pink dress under her, hiding her face with her slender fingers, and sobbing so convulsively that her bare little shoulders shook. Natasha’s face, which had been so radiantly happy all that saint’s day, suddenly changed: her eyes became fixed, and then a shiver passed down her broad neck and the corners of her mouth drooped.

“Sonya! What is it? What is the matter?... Ooh... Ooh... Ooh...!” And Natasha’s large mouth widened, making her look quite ugly, and she began to wail like a baby without knowing why, except that Sonya was crying. Sonya tried to lift her head to answer but could not, and hid her face still deeper in the bed. Natasha wept, sitting on the blue-striped feather bed and hugging her friend. With an effort, Sonya sat up and began wiping her eyes and explaining.

“Nicholas is going away in a week’s time, his... papers... have come... he told me himself... but still I should not cry,” and Sonya showed a paper

she held in her hand—with the verses Nicholas had written, “still, I should not cry, but you can’t... no one can understand... what a soul he has!”

And Sonya began to cry again because Nicholas had such a noble soul.

“It’s all very well for you... I am not envious... I love you and Boris also,” Sonya went on, gaining a little strength; “he is nice... there are no difficulties in your way... But Nicholas is my cousin... one would have to... the Metropolitan himself... and even then it can’t be done. And besides, if Vera tells Mamma” (Sonya looked upon Countess Rostov as her mother and called her so) “that I am spoiling Nicholas’ career and am heartless and ungrateful, while truly... God is my witness,” and Sonya made the sign of the cross, “I love her so much, and all of you, only Vera... And what for? What have I done to her? I am so grateful to you that I would willingly sacrifice everything, only I have nothing...”

Sonya could not continue and she again hid her face in her hands and in the feather bed. Natasha began consoling her, but her face showed that she understood all the gravity of her friend’s trouble.

“Sonya,” Natasha suddenly exclaimed, as if she had guessed the true reason for her friend’s sorrow, “I’m sure Vera has said something to you since dinner? Hasn’t she?”

“Yes, these verses Nicholas wrote himself and I copied some others, and Vera found them on my table and said she’d show them to Mamma, and that I was ungrateful, and that Mamma would never allow Nicholas to marry me, but that he’ll marry Julie. You see how he’s been with her all day... Natasha, what have I done to deserve it?...”

And again Sonya began to sob, more bitterly than before. Natasha lifted her up, hugged her, and, smiling through her tears, began comforting her.

“Sonya, don’t believe her, darling! Don’t believe her! Do you remember how we and Nicholas, all three of us, talked in the sitting room after supper? Why, we settled how everything was to be. I don’t quite remember how, but don’t you remember that it could all be arranged and how nice it

all was? After all, Cousin Sinchin's brother has married his first cousin. And Boris and I are only second cousins, you know. Boris says it is quite possible. You know I have told him all about it. He is so clever and so good!" said Natasha. "Don't you cry, Sonya, dear love, darling Sonya!" and she kissed her and laughed. "Vera's spiteful; never mind her! And all will come right and she won't say anything to Mamma. Nicholas will tell her himself, and he doesn't care at all for Julie."

Natasha kissed her on the hair.

Sonya sat up. The little kitten brightened, its eyes shone, and it seemed ready to lift its tail, jump down on its soft paws, and begin playing with the ball of worsted as a kitten should.

"Do you think so?... Really? Truly?" Sonya said, quickly smoothing her frock and hair.

"Really, truly!" answered Natasha, pushing in a crisp lock that had strayed from under her friend's plaits.

Both laughed.

"Well, let's go and sing 'The Brook.'"

"Come along!"

"Do you know, that fat Pierre who sat opposite me is so funny!" said Natasha, stopping suddenly. "I feel so happy!"

And Natasha set off at a run along the passage.

Sonya, shaking off some down which clung to her and tucking away the verses in the bosom of her dress close to her bony little chest, ran after Natasha down the passage into the sitting room with a flushed face and light, joyous steps. At the visitors' request, the young people sang the quartette, "The Brook," with which everyone was delighted. Then Nicholas sang another song which had just learned:

"At nighttime in the moon's fair glow
How sweet, as fancies wander free,
To feel that in this world there's one

Who still is thinking but of thee!
That while her fingers touch the harp
Wafting sweet music o'er the lea,
It is for thee thus swells her heart,
Sighing its message out to thee...
A day or two, then bliss unspoiled,
But oh! till then I cannot live!..."

Nicholas had not finished the last verse before the young people began to get ready to dance in the large hall, and the sound of the feet and the coughing of the musicians were heard from the gallery.

Pierre was sitting in the drawing room where Cousin Sinchin had engaged him, as a man recently returned from abroad, in a political conversation in which several others joined but which bored Pierre. When the music began Natasha came in and walking straight up to Pierre said, laughing and blushing:

"Mamma told me to ask you to join the dancers."

"I am afraid of mixing the figures," Pierre replied; "but if you will be my teacher..." And lowering his big arm he offered it to the slender little girl.

While the couples were arranging themselves and the musicians tuning up, Pierre sat down with his little partner. Natasha was perfectly happy; she was dancing with a *grown-up* man, who had been *abroad*. She was sitting in a conspicuous place and talking to him like a grown-up lady. She had a fan in her hand that one of the ladies had given her to hold. Assuming quite the pose of a society woman (heaven knows when and where she had learned it) she talked with her partner, fanning herself and smiling over the fan.

"Dear, dear! Just look at her!" exclaimed Countess Rostov as she crossed the ballroom, pointing to Natasha.

Natasha blushed and laughed.

“Well, really, Mamma! Why should you? What is there to be surprised at?”

In the midst of the third dance, there was a clatter of chairs being pushed back in the sitting room where Count Rostov and Mary Dmitrievna had been playing cards with the majority of the more distinguished and older visitors. They now, stretching themselves after sitting so long, and replacing their purses and pocketbooks, entered the ballroom. First came Mary Dmitrievna and Count Rostov, both with merry countenances. Count Rostov, with playful ceremony somewhat in ballet style, offered his bent arm to Mary Dmitrievna. He drew himself up, a smile of debonair gallantry lit up his face and as soon as the last figure of the dance was ended, he clapped his hands to the musicians and shouted up to their gallery, addressing the first violin:

“Hello there! Do you know the *Daniel Cooper*?”

This was Count Rostov’s favorite dance, which he had danced in his youth. (Strictly speaking, *Daniel Cooper* was one figure of the *anglaise*.)

“Look at Papa!” shouted Natasha to the whole company, and quite forgetting that she was dancing with a grown-up partner she bent her curly head to her knees and made the whole room ring with her laughter.

And indeed everybody in the room looked with a smile of pleasure at the jovial old gentleman, Count Rostov, who standing beside his tall and stout partner, Mary Dmitrievna, curved his arms, beat time, straightened his shoulders, turned out his toes, tapped gently with his foot, and, by a smile that broadened his round face more and more, prepared the onlookers for what was to follow. As soon as the provocatively gay strains of *Daniel Cooper* (somewhat resembling those of a merry peasant dance) began to sound, all the doorways of the ballroom were suddenly filled by the domestic serfs—the men on one side and the women on the other—who with beaming faces had come to see their master making merry.

“Just look at the master! A regular eagle he is!” loudly remarked the nurse, as she stood in one of the doorways.

Count Rostov danced well and knew it. But his partner, Mary Dmitrievna, could not and did not want to dance well. Her enormous figure stood erect, her powerful arms hanging down (she had handed her reticule to Countess Rostov), and only her stern but handsome face really joined in the dance. What was expressed by the whole of Count Rostov’s plump figure, in Mary Dmitrievna found expression only in her more and more beaming face and quivering nose. But if Count Rostov, getting more and more into the swing of it, charmed the spectators by the unexpectedness of his adroit maneuvers and the agility with which he capered about on his light feet, Mary Dmitrievna produced no less impression by slight exertions—the least effort to move her shoulders or bend her arms when turning, or stamp her foot—which everyone appreciated in view of her size and habitual severity. The dance grew livelier and livelier. The other couples could not attract a moment’s attention to their own evolutions and did not even try to do so. All were watching Count Rostov and Mary Dmitrievna. Natasha kept pulling everyone by sleeve or dress, urging them to “look at Papa!” though as it was they never took their eyes off the couple. In the intervals of the dance Count Rostov, breathing deeply, waved and shouted to the musicians to play faster. Faster, faster, and faster; lightly, more lightly, and yet more lightly whirled Count Rostov, flying round Mary Dmitrievna, now on his toes, now on his heels; until, turning his partner round to her seat, he executed the final *pas*, raising his soft foot backward, bowing his perspiring head, smiling and making a wide sweep with his arm, amid a thunder of applause and laughter led by Natasha. Both partners stood still, breathing heavily and wiping their faces with their cambric handkerchiefs.

“That’s how we used to dance in our time, *my dear*,” said Count Rostov.

“That *was* a *Daniel Cooper!*” exclaimed Mary Dmitrievna, tucking up her sleeves and puffing heavily.

While in the Rostovs’ ballroom the sixth dance was being danced, to a tune in which the weary musicians blundered, and while tired footmen and cooks were getting the supper, Count Bezukhov had a sixth stroke. The doctors pronounced recovery impossible. After a mute confession, communion was administered to the dying man, preparations made for the sacrament of unction, and in his house, there was the bustle and thrill of suspense usual at such moments. Outside the house, beyond the gates, a group of undertakers, who hid whenever a carriage drove up, waited in expectation of an important order for an expensive funeral. The Military Governor of Moscow, who had been assiduous in sending aides-de-camp to inquire after Count Bezukhov’s health, came himself that evening to bid a last farewell to the celebrated grandee of the former Catherine the Great’s court, Count Bezukhov.

The magnificent reception room was crowded. Everyone stood up respectfully when the Military Governor, having stayed about half an hour alone with the dying man, passed out, slightly acknowledging their bows and trying to escape as quickly as possible from the glances fixed on him by the doctors, clergy, and relatives of the family. Baron Vasili, who had grown thinner and paler during the last few days, escorted him to the door, repeating something to him several times in low tones.

When the Military Governor had gone, Baron Vasili sat down all alone on a chair in the ballroom, crossing one leg high over the other, leaning his elbow on his knee, and covering his face with his hand. After sitting so for a while he rose, and, looking about him with frightened eyes, went with unusually hurried steps down the long corridor leading to the back of the house, to the room of Katerina.

Those who were in the dimly lit reception room spoke in nervous whispers, and, whenever anyone went into or came from the dying man’s

room, grew silent and gazed with eyes full of curiosity or expectancy at his door, which creaked slightly when opened.

“The limits of human life ... are fixed and may not be overpassed,” said an old priest to a lady who had taken a seat beside him and was listening naively to his words.

“I wonder, is it not too late to administer unction?” asked the lady, adding the priest’s clerical title, as if she had no opinion of her own on the subject.

“Ah, madam, it is a great sacrament,” replied the priest, passing his hand over the thin grizzled strands of hair combed back across his bald head.

“Who was that? The Military Governor himself?” was being asked at the other side of the room. “How young-looking he is!”

“Yes, and he is over sixty. I hear Count Bezukhov no longer recognizes anyone. They wished to administer the sacrament of unction.”

“I knew someone who received that sacrament seven times.”

Katerina’s sister had just come from the sick room with her eyes red from weeping and sat down beside Dr. Lorrain, who was sitting in a graceful pose under a portrait of Catherine the Great, leaning his elbow on a table.

“Beautiful,” said the doctor in answer to a remark about the weather. “The weather is beautiful, Katerina; and besides, in Moscow, one feels as if one were in the country.”

“Yes, indeed,” replied Katerina with a sigh. “So Count Bezukhov may have something to drink?”

Dr. Lorrain considered.

“Has he taken his medicine?”

“Yes.”

The doctor glanced at his watch.

“Take a glass of boiled water and put a pinch of cream of tartar,” and Dr. Lorrain indicated with his delicate fingers what he meant by a pinch.

“Dere has neffer been a gase,” a German doctor was saying to an aide-de-camp, “dat one liffs after de sird stroke.”

“And what a well-preserved man Count Bezukhov was!” remarked the aide-de-camp. “And who will inherit his wealth?” he added in a whisper.

“It von’t go begging,” replied the German with a smile.

Everyone again looked toward the door, which creaked as Katerina’s sister went in with the drink she had prepared according to Dr. Lorrain’s instructions. The German doctor went up to Dr. Lorrain.

“Do you think he can last till morning?” asked the German, addressing Dr. Lorrain in French which he pronounced badly.

Dr. Lorrain, pursing up his lips, waved a severely negative finger before his nose.

“Tonight, not later,” said he in a low voice, and he moved away with a decorous smile of self-satisfaction at being able clearly to understand and state the patient’s condition.

Meanwhile, Baron Vasili had opened the door to Katerina’s room.

In this room it was almost dark; only two tiny lamps were burning before the icons and there was a pleasant scent of flowers and burnt pastilles. The room was crowded with small pieces of furniture, whatnots, cupboards, and little tables. The quilt of a high, white feather bed was just visible behind a screen. A small dog began to bark.

“Ah, is it you, Baron Vasili?”

Katerina rose and smoothed her hair, which was as usual so extremely smooth that it seemed to be made of one piece with her head and covered with varnish.

“Has anything happened?” she asked. “I am so terrified.”

“No, there is no change. I only came to have a talk about business, Katerina,” muttered Baron Vasili, seating himself wearily on the chair she

had just vacated. "You have made the place warm, I must say," he remarked. "Well, sit down: let's have a talk."

"I thought perhaps something had happened," she said with her unchanging stonily severe expression; and, sitting down opposite the Baron, she prepared to listen.

"I wished to get a nap, *my cousin*, but I can't."

"Well, my dear?" said Baron Vasili, taking her hand and bending it downwards as was his habit.

It was plain that this "well?" referred to much that they both understood without naming.

Katerina, who had a straight, rigid body, abnormally long for her legs, looked directly at Baron Vasili with no sign of emotion in her prominent gray eyes. Then she shook her head and glanced up at the icons with a sigh. This might have been taken as an expression of sorrow and devotion, or of weariness and hope of resting before long. Baron Vasili understood it as an expression of weariness.

"And I?" he said; "do you think it is easier for me? I am as worn out as a post horse, but still, I must have a talk with you, Katerina, a very serious talk."

Baron Vasili said no more and his cheeks began to twitch nervously, now on one side, now on the other, giving his face an unpleasant expression that was never to be seen on it in a drawing room. His eyes too seemed strange; at one moment they looked impudently sly and at the next glanced around in alarm.

Katerina, holding her little dog on her lap with her thin bony hands, looked attentively into Baron Vasili's eyes evidently resolved not to be the first to break the silence, if she had to wait till morning.

"Well, you see, my dear cousin Katerina," continued Baron Vasili, returning to his theme, apparently not without an inner struggle; "at such a

moment as this one must think of everything. One must think of the future, of all of you... I love you all, like children of my own, as you know.”

Katerina continued to look at him without moving, and with the same dull expression.

“And then of course my family has also to be considered,” Baron Vasili went on, testily pushing away a little table without looking at her. “You know, Katerina, that we—you three sisters, Mámontov, and my wife—are Count Bezukhov’s only direct heirs. I know, I know how hard it is for you to talk or think of such matters. It is no easier for me; but, my dear, I am getting on for sixty and must be prepared for anything. Do you know that I have sent for Pierre? Count Bezukhov,” pointing to his portrait, “definitely demanded that he should be called.”

Baron Vasili looked questioningly at Katerina, but could not make out whether she was considering what he had just said or whether she was simply looking at him.

“There is one thing I constantly pray God to grant, *my cousin*,” Katerina replied, “and it is that He would be merciful to him and would allow his noble soul peacefully to leave this...”

“Yes, yes, of course,” interrupted Baron Vasili impatiently, rubbing his bald head and angrily pulling back toward him the little table that he had pushed away. “But... in short, the fact is... you know yourself that last winter Count Bezukhov made a will by which he left all his property, not to us his direct heirs, but to Pierre.”

“Count Bezukhov has made wills enough!” quietly remarked Katerina. “But he cannot leave the estate to Pierre. Pierre is illegitimate.”

“But, my dear,” said Baron Vasili suddenly, clutching the little table and becoming more animated and talking more rapidly: “what if a letter has been written to the Tzar in which Count Bezukhov asks for Pierre’s legitimation? Do you understand that in consideration of Count Bezukhov’s services, his request would be granted?...”

Katerina smiled as people do who think they know more about the subject under discussion than those they are talking with.

“I can tell you more,” continued Baron Vasili, seizing her hand, “that letter was written, though it was not sent, and the Tzar knew of it. The only question is, has it been destroyed or not? If not, then as soon as *all is over*,” and Baron Vasili sighed to intimate what he meant by the words *all is over*, “and Count Bezukhov’s papers are opened, the will and letter will be delivered to the Tzar, and the petition will certainly be granted. Pierre will get everything as the legitimate son.”

“And our share?” asked Katerina smiling ironically, as if anything might happen, only not that.

“But, my poor Katerina, it is as clear as daylight! Pierre will then be the legal heir to everything and you won’t get anything. You must know, my dear, whether the will and letter were written, and whether they have been destroyed or not. And if they have somehow been overlooked, you ought to know where they are and must find them, because...”

“What next?” Katerina interrupted, smiling sardonically and not changing the expression of her eyes. “I am a woman, and you think we are all stupid; but I know this: an illegitimate son cannot inherit... *a bastard!*” she added as if supposing that this translation of the word would effectively prove to Baron Vasili the invalidity of his contention.

“Well, really, Katerina! Can’t you understand! You are so intelligent, how is it you don’t see that if Count Bezukhov has written a letter to the Tzar begging him to recognize Pierre as legitimate, it follows that Pierre will become the new count, and Pierre will then inherit everything under the will? And if the will and letter are not destroyed, then you will have nothing but the consolation of having been dutiful. *And all that follows is therefrom!* That’s certain.”

“I know the will was made, but I also know that it is invalid; and you, *my cousin*, seem to consider me a perfect fool,” said Katerina with the

expression women assume when they suppose they are saying something witty and stinging.

“My dear Katerina,” began Baron Vasili impatiently, “I came here not to wrangle with you, but to talk about your interests as with a kinswoman, a good, kind, true relation. And I tell you for the tenth time that if the letter to the Tzar and the will in Pierre’s favor are among Count Bezukhov’s papers, then, my dear girl, you and your sisters are not heiresses! If you don’t believe me, then believe an expert. I have just been talking to Dmítri Onúfrich” (the family solicitor) “and he says the same.”

At this a sudden change evidently took place in Katerina’s ideas; her thin lips grew white, though her eyes did not change, and her voice when she began to speak passed through such transitions as she herself evidently did not expect.

“That would be a fine thing!” said Katerina. “I never wanted anything and I don’t now.”

She pushed the little dog off her lap and smoothed her dress.

“And this is gratitude—this is recognition for those who have sacrificed everything for his sake!” Katerina cried. “It’s splendid! Fine! I don’t want anything, Baron Vasili.”

“Yes, but you are not the only one. There are your sisters...” replied Baron Vasili.

But Katerina did not listen to him.

“Yes, I knew it long ago but had forgotten. I knew that I could expect nothing but meanness, deceit, envy, intrigue, and ingratitude—the blackest ingratitude—in this house...”

“Do you or do you not know where that will is?” insisted Baron Vasili, his cheeks twitching more than ever.

“Yes, I was a fool! I still believed in people, loved them, and sacrificed myself. But only the base, the vile succeed! I know who has been intriguing!”

Katerina wished to rise, but Baron Vasili held her by the hand. She had the air of one who has suddenly lost faith in the whole human race. She gave her companion an angry glance.

“There is still time, my dear. You must remember, Katerina, that it was all done casually in a moment of anger, of illness, and was afterward forgotten. Our duty, my dear, is to rectify his mistake, to ease his last moments by not letting him commit this injustice, and not to let him die feeling that he is rendering unhappy those who...”

“Who sacrificed everything for him,” chimed in Katerina, who would again have risen had not Baron Vasili still held her fast, “though he never could appreciate it. No, *my cousin*,” she added with a sigh, “I shall always remember that in this world one must expect no reward, that in this world there is neither honor nor justice. In this world, one has to be cunning and cruel.”

“Now come, come! Be reasonable. I know your excellent heart.”

“No, I have a wicked heart.”

“I know your heart,” repeated Baron Vasili. “I value your friendship and wish you to have as good an opinion of me. Don’t upset yourself, and let us talk sensibly while there is still time, be it a day or be it but an hour... Tell me all you know about the will, and above all where it is. You must know. We will take it at once and show it to Count Bezukhov. He has, no doubt, forgotten it and will wish to destroy it. You understand that my sole desire is conscientiously to carry out his wishes; that is my only reason for being here. I came simply to help him and you.”

“Now I see it all! I know who has been intriguing—I know!” cried Katerina.

“That’s not the point, my dear.”

“It’s that protégé of yours, that sweet Widow Drubetskoy, that woman whom I would not take for a housemaid... the infamous, vile woman!”

“Do not let us lose any time...”

“Ah, don’t talk to me! Last winter Widow Drubetskoy wheedled herself in here and told Count Bezukhov such vile, disgraceful things about us, especially about Sophie—I can’t repeat them—that it made Count Bezukhov quite ill and he would not see us for a whole fortnight. I know it was then he wrote this vile, infamous paper, but I thought the thing was invalid.”

“We’ve got to it at last—why did you not tell me about it sooner?”

“It’s in the inlaid portfolio that he keeps under his pillow,” said Katerina, ignoring his question. “Now I know! Yes; if I have a sin, a great sin, it is hatred of that vile woman!” almost shrieked Katerina, now quite changed. “And what does she come worming herself in here for? But I will give her a piece of my mind. The time will come!”

While these conversations were going on in the reception room and Katerina’s room, a carriage containing Pierre (who had been sent for) and Widow Drubetskoy (who found it necessary to accompany him) was driving into the court of Count Bezukhov’s house. As the wheels rolled softly over the straw beneath the windows, Widow Drubetskoy, having turned with words of comfort to her companion, realized that he was asleep in his corner and woke him up. Rousing himself, Pierre followed Widow Drubetskoy out of the carriage, and only then began to think of the interview with his dying father which awaited him. He noticed that they had not come to the front entrance but to the back door. While he was getting down from the carriage steps two men, who looked like tradespeople, ran hurriedly from the entrance and hid in the shadow of the wall. Pausing for a moment, Pierre noticed several other men of the same kind hiding in the shadow of the house on both sides. But neither Widow Drubetskoy nor the footman nor the coachman, who could not help seeing these people, took any notice of them. “It seems to be all right,” Pierre concluded and followed Widow Drubetskoy. She hurriedly ascended the narrow dimly lit stone staircase, calling to Pierre, who was lagging behind, to follow. Though he

did not see why it was necessary for him to go to Count Bezukhov at all, still less why he had to go by the back stairs, yet judging by Widow Drubetskoy's air of assurance and haste, Pierre concluded that it was all absolutely necessary. Halfway up the stairs, they were almost knocked over by some men who, carrying pails, came running downstairs, their boots clattering. These men pressed close to the wall to let Pierre and Widow Drubetskoy pass and did not evince the least surprise at seeing them there.

"Is this the way to Katerina's apartments?" asked Widow Drubetskoy of one of them.

"Yes," replied a footman in a bold loud voice, as if anything were now permissible; "the door to the left, ma'am."

"Perhaps Count Bezukhov did not ask for me," said Pierre when he reached the landing. "I'd better go to my own room."

Widow Drubetskoy paused and waited for him to come up.

"Ah, my friend Pierre!" she said, touching his arm as she had done her son's when speaking to him that afternoon, "believe me I suffer no less than you do, but be a man!"

"But really, hadn't I better go away?" Pierre asked, looking kindly at her over his spectacles.

"Ah, my dear friend Pierre! Forget the wrongs that may have been done to you. Think that he is your father ... perhaps in the agony of death." She sighed. "I have loved you like a son from the first. Trust yourself to me, Pierre. I shall not forget your interests."

Pierre did not understand a word, but the conviction that all this had to be done grew stronger, and he meekly followed Widow Drubetskoy who was already opening a door.

This door led into a back anteroom. An old man, a servant of Katerina, sat in a corner knitting a stocking. Pierre had never been in this part of the house and did not even know of the existence of these rooms. Widow Drubetskoy, addressing a maid who was hurrying past with a decanter on a

tray as “my dear” and “my sweet,” asked about the health of Katerina and her sisters, and then led Pierre along a stone passage. The first door on the left led into Katerina and her sisters' apartments. The maid with the decanter in her haste had not closed the door (everything in the house was done in haste at that time), and Pierre and Widow Drubetskoy in passing instinctively glanced into the room, where Baron Vasili and Katerina were sitting close together talking. Seeing them pass, Baron Vasili drew back with obvious impatience, while Katerina jumped up and with a gesture of desperation slammed the door with all her might.

This action was so unlike her usual composure and the fear depicted on Baron Vasili's face so out of keeping with his dignity that Pierre stopped and glanced inquiringly over his spectacles at his guide. Widow Drubetskoy evinced no surprise, she only smiled faintly and sighed, as if to say that this was no more than she had expected.

“Be a man, my friend Pierre. I will look after your interests,” said she in reply to his look, and went still faster along the passage.

Pierre could not make out what it was all about, and still less what “watching over his interests” meant, but he decided that all these things had to be. From the passage, they went into a large, dimly lit room adjoining Count Bezukhov's reception room. It was one of those sumptuous but cold apartments known to Pierre only from the front approach, but even in this room there now stood an empty bath, and water had been spilled on the carpet. They were met by a deacon with a censer and by a servant who passed out on tiptoe without heeding them. They went into the reception room familiar to Pierre, with two Italian windows opening into the conservatory, with its large bust and a full-length portrait of Catherine the Great. The same people were still sitting here in almost the same positions as before, whispering to one another. All became silent and turned to look at the pale tear-worn Widow Drubetskoy as she entered, and at the big stout figure of Pierre who, hanging his head, meekly followed her.

Widow Drubetskoy's face expressed a consciousness that the decisive moment had arrived. With the air of a practical St. Petersburg lady she now, keeping Pierre close beside her, entered the room even more boldly than that afternoon. She felt that as she brought with her the person the dying man wished to see, her own admission was assured. Casting a rapid glance at all those in the room and noticing Count Bezukhov's confessor there, she glided up to him with a sort of amble, not exactly bowing yet seeming to grow suddenly smaller, and respectfully received the blessing first of one and then of another priest.

"God be thanked that you are in time," said Widow Drubetskoy to one of the priests; "all we relatives have been in such anxiety. This young man, Pierre, is Count Bezukhov's son," she added more softly. "What a terrible moment!"

Having said this she went up to the doctor.

"Dear doctor," said she, "this young man, Pierre, is Count Bezukhov's son. Is there any hope?"

The doctor cast a rapid glance upwards and silently shrugged his shoulders. Widow Drubetskoy with just the same movement raised her shoulders and eyes, almost closing the latter, sighed, and moved away from the doctor to Pierre. To him, in a particularly respectful and tenderly sad voice, she said:

"Trust in His mercy!" and pointing out a small sofa for Pierre to sit and wait for her, Widow Drubetskoy went silently toward the door that everyone was watching and it creaked very slightly as she disappeared behind it.

Pierre, having made up his mind to obey his mistress implicitly, moved toward the sofa she had indicated. As soon as Widow Drubetskoy had disappeared he noticed that the eyes of all in the room turned to him with something more than curiosity and sympathy. He noticed that they whispered to one another, casting significant looks at him with a kind of

awe and even servility. A deference such as he had never before received was shown to him. A strange lady, the one who had been talking to the priests, rose and offered him her seat; an aide-de-camp picked up and returned a glove Pierre had dropped; the doctors became respectfully silent as he passed by, and moved to make way for him. At first, Pierre wished to take another seat so as not to trouble the lady, and also to pick up the glove himself and to pass around the doctors who were not even in his way; but all at once he felt that this would not do, and that tonight he was a person obliged to perform some sort of awful rite which everyone expected of him, and that he was therefore bound to accept their services. He took the glove in silence from the aide-de-camp, and sat down in the lady's chair, placing his huge hands symmetrically on his knees in the naive attitude of an Egyptian statue, and decided in his own mind that all was as it should be and that in order not to lose his head and do foolish things he must not act on his own ideas tonight, but must yield himself up entirely to the will of those who were guiding him.

Not two minutes had passed before Baron Vasili with head erect majestically entered the room. He was wearing his long coat with three stars on his breast. He seemed to have grown thinner since the morning; his eyes seemed larger than usual when he glanced around and noticed Pierre. He went up to him, took his hand (a thing he never used to do), and drew it downwards as if wishing to ascertain whether it was firmly fixed on.

"Courage, courage, my friend! He has asked to see you. That is well!" Baron Vasili turned to go.

But Pierre thought it necessary to ask: "How is..." and hesitated, not knowing whether it would be proper to call the dying man "Count Bezukhov," yet ashamed to call him "father."

"Count Bezukhov had another stroke about half an hour ago. Courage, my friend..."

Pierre's mind was in such a confused state that the word "stroke" suggested to him a blow from something. He looked at Baron Vasili in perplexity, and only later grasped that a stroke was an attack of illness. Baron Vasili said something to Dr. Lorrain in passing and went through the door on tiptoe. He could not walk well on tiptoe and his whole body jerked at each step. Katerina followed him, and the priests and deacons and some servants also went in at the door. Through that door was heard a noise of things being moved about, and at last Widow Drubetskoy, still with the same expression, pale but resolute in the discharge of duty, ran out and touching Pierre lightly on the arm said:

"The divine mercy is inexhaustible! Unction is about to be administered. Come."

Pierre went in at the door, stepping on the soft carpet, and noticed that the strange lady, the aide-de-camp, and some of the servants, all followed him in as if there were now no further need for permission to enter that room.

Pierre well knew this large room divided by columns and an arch, its walls hung round with Persian carpets. The part of the room behind the columns, with a high silk-curtained mahogany bedstead on one side and on the other an immense case containing icons, was brightly illuminated with red light like a Russian church during evening service. Under the gleaming icons stood a long invalid chair, and in that chair on snowy-white smooth pillows, evidently freshly changed, Pierre saw—covered to the waist by a bright green quilt—the familiar, majestic figure of his father, Count Bezukhov, with that gray mane of hair above his broad forehead which reminded one of a lion, and the deep characteristically noble wrinkles of his handsome, ruddy face. He lay just under the icons; his large thick hands outside the quilt. Into the right hand, which was lying palm downwards, a wax taper had been thrust between forefinger and thumb, and an old servant, bending over from behind the chair, held it in position. By the chair

stood the priests, their long hair falling over their magnificent glittering vestments, with lighted tapers in their hands, slowly and solemnly conducting the service. A little behind them stood Katerina's sisters holding handkerchiefs to their eyes, and just in front of them their eldest sister, Katerina, with a vicious and determined look steadily fixed on the icons, as though declaring to all that she could not answer for herself should she glance round. Widow Drubetskoy, with a meek, sorrowful, and all-forgiving expression on her face, stood by the door near the strange lady. Baron Vasili in front of the door, near the invalid chair, a wax taper in his left hand, was leaning his left arm on the carved back of a velvet chair he had turned round for the purpose and was crossing himself with his right hand, turning his eyes upward each time he touched his forehead. Baron Vasili's face wore a calm look of piety and resignation to the will of God. "If you do not understand these sentiments," he seemed to be saying, "so much the worse for you!"

Behind Baron Vasili stood the aide-de-camp, the doctors, and the menservants; the men and women had separated as in church. All were silently crossing themselves, and the reading of the church service, the subdued chanting of deep bass voices, and in the intervals sighs and the shuffling of feet were the only sounds that could be heard. Widow Drubetskoy, with an air of importance that showed that she felt she quite knew what she was about, went across the room to where Pierre was standing and gave him a taper. He lit it and, distracted by observing those around him, began crossing himself with the hand that held the taper.

Katerina's sister, Sophie, the rosy, laughter-loving, youngest sister with the mole, watched him. She smiled, hid her face in her handkerchief, and remained with it hidden for a while; then looking up and seeing Pierre she again began to laugh. She evidently felt unable to look at him without laughing, but could not resist looking at him: so to be out of temptation she slipped quietly behind one of the columns. In the midst of the service the

voices of the priests suddenly ceased, they whispered to one another, and the old servant who was holding Count Bezukhov's hand got up and said something to the ladies. Widow Drubetskoy stepped forward and, stooping over the dying man, beckoned to Lorrain from behind her back. The French doctor held no taper; he was leaning against one of the columns in a respectful attitude implying that he, a foreigner, in spite of all differences of faith, understood the full importance of the rite now being performed and even approved of it. He now approached Count Bezukhov with the noiseless step of one in the full vigor of life, with his delicate white fingers raised from the green quilt the hand that was free, and turning sideways felt the pulse and reflected a moment. Count Bezukhov was given something to drink, there was a stir around him, then the people resumed their places and the service continued. During this interval, Pierre noticed that Baron Vasili left the chair on which he had been leaning, and—with an air which intimated that he knew what he was about and if others did not understand him it was so much the worse for them—did not go up to the dying man, but passed by him, joined Katerina, and moved with her to the side of the room where stood the high bedstead with its silken hangings. On leaving the bed both Baron Vasili and Katerina passed out by a back door but returned to their places one after the other before the service was concluded. Pierre paid no more attention to this occurrence than to the rest of what went on, having made up his mind once and for all that what he saw happening around him that evening was in some way essential.

The chanting of the service ceased, and the voice of the priest was heard respectfully congratulating the dying man on having received the sacrament. The dying Count Bezukhov lay as lifeless and immovable as before. Around him everyone began to stir: steps were audible and whispers, among which Widow Drubetskoy's was the most distinct.

Pierre heard her say:

“Certainly Count Bezukhov must be moved onto the bed; here it will be impossible...”

The sick man, Count Bezukhov, was so surrounded by doctors, Katerina and her sisters, and servants that Pierre could no longer see the reddish-yellow face with its gray mane—which, though he saw other faces as well, he had not lost sight of for a single moment during the whole service. He judged by the cautious movements of those who crowded around the invalid chair that they had lifted the dying man and were moving him.

“Catch hold of my arm or you’ll drop him!” Pierre heard one of the servants say in a frightened whisper. “Catch hold from underneath. Here!” exclaimed different voices, and the heavy breathing of the bearers and the shuffling of their feet grew more hurried as if the weight they were carrying were too much for them.

As the bearers, among whom was Widow Drubetskoy, passed Pierre he caught a momentary glimpse between their heads and backs of the dying man’s high, stout, uncovered chest and powerful shoulders, raised by those who were holding him under the armpits, and of his gray, curly, leonine head. This head, with its remarkably broad brow and cheekbones, its handsome, sensual mouth, and its cold, majestic expression, was not disfigured by the approach of death. It was the same as Pierre remembered it three months before when Count Bezukhov had sent him to St. Petersburg. But now this head was swaying helplessly with the uneven movements of the bearers, and the cold listless gaze fixed itself upon nothing.

After a few minutes of bustle beside the high bedstead, those who had carried the sick man dispersed. Widow Drubetskoy touched Pierre’s hand and said, “Come.” Pierre went with her to the bed on which the sick man had been laid in a stately pose in keeping with the ceremony just completed. He lay with his head propped high on the pillows. His hands were symmetrically placed on the green silk quilt, the palms downward. When

Pierre came up Count Bezukhov was gazing straight at him but with a look the significance of which could not be understood by mortal man. Either this look meant nothing but that as long as one has eyes they must look somewhere, or it meant too much. Pierre hesitated, not knowing what to do, and glanced inquiringly at his guide. Widow Drubetskoy made a hurried sign with her eyes, glancing at the sick man's hand and moving her lips as if to send it a kiss. Pierre, carefully stretching his neck so as not to touch the quilt, followed her suggestion and pressed his lips to the large boned, fleshy hand. Neither the hand nor a single muscle of Count Bezukhov's face stirred. Once more Pierre looked questioningly at Widow Drubetskoy to see what he was to do next. Widow Drubetskoy with her eyes indicated a chair that stood beside the bed. Pierre obediently sat down, his eyes asking if he was doing right. Widow Drubetskoy nodded approvingly. Again Pierre fell into the naively symmetrical pose of an Egyptian statue, evidently distressed that his stout and clumsy body took up so much room and doing his utmost to look as small as possible. He looked at Count Bezukhov, who still gazed at the spot where Pierre's face had been before he sat down. Widow Drubetskoy indicated by her attitude her consciousness of the pathetic importance of these last moments of meeting between the father and son. This lasted about two minutes, which to Pierre seemed an hour. Suddenly the broad muscles and lines of Count Bezukhov's face began to twitch. The twitching increased, the handsome mouth was drawn to one side (only now did Pierre realize how near death his father was), and from that distorted mouth issued an indistinct, hoarse sound. Widow Drubetskoy looked attentively at the sick man's eyes, trying to guess what he wanted; she pointed first to Count Bezukhov, then to some drink, then named Baron Vasili in an inquiring whisper, then pointed to the quilt. The eyes and face of the sick man showed impatience. He made an effort to look at the servant who stood constantly at the head of the bed.

“Wants to turn on the other side,” whispered the servant, and got up to turn Count Bezukhov’s heavy body toward the wall.

Pierre rose to help him.

While Count Bezukhov was being turned over, one of his arms fell back helplessly and he made a fruitless effort to pull it forward. Whether he noticed the look of terror with which Pierre regarded that lifeless arm, or whether some other thought flitted across his dying brain, at any rate, he glanced at the refractory arm, at Pierre’s terror-stricken face, and again at the arm, and on his face, a feeble, piteous smile appeared, quite out of keeping with his features, that seemed to deride his own helplessness. At the sight of this smile, Pierre felt an unexpected quivering in his breast and a tickling in his nose, and tears dimmed his eyes. Count Bezukhov was turned onto his side with his face to the wall. He sighed.

“Count Bezukhov is dozing,” said Widow Drubetskoy, observing that one of Katerina’s sisters was coming to take her turn at watching. “Let us go.”

Pierre went out.

There was now no one in the reception room except Baron Vasili and Katerina, who were sitting under the portrait of Catherine the Great and talking eagerly. As soon as they saw Pierre and his companion, Widow Drubetskoy, they became silent, and Pierre thought he saw Katerina hide something as she whispered:

“I can’t bear the sight of Widow Drubetskoy.”

“Katerina has had tea served in the small drawing room,” said Baron Vasili to Widow Drubetskoy. “Go and take something, my poor Widow Drubetskoy, or you will not hold out.”

To Pierre he said nothing, merely giving his arm a sympathetic squeeze below the shoulder. Pierre went with Widow Drubetskoy into the small drawing room.

“There is nothing so refreshing after a sleepless night as a cup of this delicious Russian tea,” Dr. Lorrain was saying with an air of restrained animation as he stood sipping tea from a delicate Chinese handle-less cup before a table on which tea and a cold supper were laid in the small circular room. Around the table, all who were at Count Bezukhov’s house that night had gathered to fortify themselves. Pierre well remembered this small circular drawing room with its mirrors and little tables. During balls given at the house of Count Bezukhov, who did not know how to dance, had liked sitting in this room to watch the ladies who, as they passed through in their ball dresses with diamonds and pearls on their bare shoulders, looked at themselves in the brilliantly lighted mirrors which repeated their reflections several times. Now this same room was dimly lit by two candles. On one small table, tea things and supper dishes stood in disorder, and in the middle of the night, a motley throng of people sat there, not merrymaking, but somberly whispering, and betraying by every word and movement that none of them forgot what was happening and what was about to happen in the bedroom. Pierre did not eat anything though he would very much have liked to. He looked inquiringly at his mistress and saw that she was again going on tiptoe to the reception room where they had left Baron Vasili and Katerina. Pierre concluded that this also was essential, and after a short interval followed her. Widow Drubetskoy was standing beside Katerina, and they were both speaking in excited whispers.

“Permit me, Widow Drubetskoy, to know what is necessary and what is not necessary,” said Katerina, evidently in the same state of excitement as when she had slammed the door of her room.

“But, my dear Katerina,” answered Widow Drubetskoy blandly but impressively, blocking the way to the bedroom and preventing the other from passing, “won’t this be too much for poor Count Bezukhov at a moment when he needs repose? Worldly conversation at a moment when his soul is already prepared...”

Baron Vasili was seated in an easy chair in his familiar attitude, with one leg crossed high above the other. His cheeks, which were so flabby that they looked heavier below, were twitching violently; but he wore the air of a man little concerned in what the two ladies were saying.

“Come, my dear Widow Drubetskoy, let Katerina do as she pleases. You know how fond Count Bezukhov is of her.”

“I don’t even know what is in this paper,” said Katerina, addressing Baron Vasili and pointing to an inlaid portfolio she held in her hand. “All I know is that his real will is in his writing table, and this is a paper he has forgotten...”

She tried to pass Widow Drubetskoy, but the latter sprang so as to bar her path.

“I know, my dear, kind Katerina,” said Widow Drubetskoy, seizing the portfolio so firmly that it was plain she would not let go easily. “Dear Katerina, I beg and implore you, have some pity on him! *I beg you...*”

Katerina did not reply. Their efforts in the struggle for the portfolio were the only sounds audible, but it was evident that if Katerina did speak, her words would not be flattering to Widow Drubetskoy. Though the latter held on tenaciously, her voice lost none of its honeyed firmness and softness.

“Pierre, my dear, come here. I think Pierre will not be out of place in a family consultation; is it not so, Baron Vasili?”

“Why don’t you speak, Pierre?” suddenly shrieked Katerina so loud that those in the drawing room heard her and were startled. “Why do you remain silent when heaven knows who permits herself to interfere, making a scene on the very threshold of a dying man’s room? Intriguer!” she hissed viciously, and tugged with all her might at the portfolio.

But Widow Drubetskoy went forward a step or two to keep her hold on the portfolio and changed her grip.

Baron Vasili rose. "Oh!" said he with reproach and surprise, "this is absurd! Come, let go I tell you."

Katerina let go.

"And you too!"

But Widow Drubetskoy did not obey him.

"Let go, I tell you! I will take responsibility. I myself will go and ask Count Bezukhov, I will!... does that satisfy you?"

"But, Baron Vasili," said Widow Drubetskoy, "after such a solemn sacrament, allow him a moment's peace! Here, Pierre, tell them your opinion," said she, turning to Pierre who, having come quite close, was gazing with astonishment at the angry face of Katerina which had lost all dignity, and at the twitching cheeks of Baron Vasili.

"Remember that you will answer for the consequences," said Baron Vasili severely. "You don't know what you are doing."

"Vile woman!" shouted Katerina, darting unexpectedly at Widow Drubetskoy and snatching the portfolio from her.

Baron Vasili bent his head and spread out his hands.

At this moment that terrible door, which Pierre had watched so long and which had always opened so quietly, burst noisily open and banged against the wall, and the second of the three sisters rushed out wringing her hands.

"What are you doing!" she cried vehemently. "He is dying and you leave me alone with him!"

Katerina dropped the portfolio. Widow Drubetskoy, stooping, quickly caught up the object of contention and ran into the bedroom. Katerina and Baron Vasili, recovering themselves, followed her.

A few minutes later the eldest sister came out with a pale hard face, again biting her underlip. At the sight of Pierre, her expression showed an irrepressible hatred.

"Yes, now you may be glad!" said she; "this is what you have been waiting for." And bursting into tears she hid her face in her handkerchief

and rushed from the room.

Baron Vasili came next. He staggered to the sofa on which Pierre was sitting and dropped onto it, covering his face with his hand. Pierre noticed that he was pale and that his jaw quivered and shook as if in a fever.

“Ah, my friend!” said Baron Vasili, taking Pierre by the elbow, and there was in his voice a sincerity and weakness Pierre had never observed in it before. “How often we sin, how much we deceive, and all for what? I am near sixty, dear friend... I too... All will end in death, all! Death is awful...” and he burst into tears.

Widow Drubetskoy came out last. She approached Pierre with slow, quiet steps.

“Pierre!” she said.

Pierre gave her an inquiring look. Widow Drubetskoy kissed Pierre on his forehead, wetting him with her tears. Then after a pause, she said:

“Count Bezukhov is no more...”

Pierre looked at her over his spectacles.

“Come, I will go with you. Try to weep, nothing gives such relief as tears.”

Widow Drubetskoy led Pierre into the dark drawing room and Pierre was glad no one could see his face. She left him, and when she returned he was fast asleep with his head on his arm.

In the morning Widow Drubetskoy said to Pierre:

“Yes, my dear, this is a great loss for us all, not to speak of you. But God will support you: you are young and are now, I hope, in command of an immense fortune. The will has not yet been opened. I know you well enough to be sure that this will not turn your head, but it imposes duties on you, and you must be a man.”

Pierre was silent.

“Perhaps later on I may tell you, my dear boy, that if I had not been there, God only knows what would have happened! You know, Count Bezukhov promised me only the day before yesterday not to forget Boris. But he had no time. I hope, my dear friend, you will carry out your father’s wish?”

Pierre understood nothing of all this and coloring shyly looked in silence at Widow Drubetskoy.

After her talk with Pierre, Widow Drubetskoy returned to the Rostovs’s home and went to bed. On waking in the morning she told the Rostovs and all her acquaintances the details of Count Bezukhov’s death. She said Count Bezukhov had died as she would herself wish to die, that his end was not only touching but edifying. As to the last meeting between Count Bezukhov and Pierre, it was so touching that she could not think of it without tears, and did not know which had behaved better during those awful moments—Count Bezukhov who so remembered everything and everybody at last and had spoken such pathetic words to the son, or Pierre, whom it had been pitiful to see, so stricken was he with grief, though he tried hard to hide it in order not to sadden his dying father. “It is painful, but it does one good. It uplifts the soul to see such men as Count Bezukhov and his worthy son,” said she. Of the behavior of Katerina and Baron Vasili she spoke disapprovingly, but in whispers and as a great secret.

At Bald Hills, Baron Bolkonski’s estate, the arrival of his son, Andrei, and his wife, Lise, was daily expected, but this expectation did not upset the regular routine of life of the household. Baron Bolkonski was named General in Chief (nicknamed in society, “the King of Prussia”) ever since the late Tzar had exiled him to his country estate had lived there continuously with his daughter, Marya, and her companion, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne. Though in the new reign Baron Bolkonski was free to return to the capitals, he still continued to live in the country, remarking that

anyone who wanted to see him could come the hundred miles from Moscow to Bald Hills, while he himself needed no one and nothing. He used to say that there are only two sources of human vice—idleness and superstition, and only two virtues—activity and intelligence. Baron Bolkonski himself undertook his daughter Marya's education, and to develop these two cardinal virtues in her gave her lessons in algebra and geometry till she was twenty, and arranged her life so that her whole time was occupied. He was himself always occupied: writing his memoirs, solving problems in higher mathematics, turning snuffboxes on a lathe, working in the garden, or superintending the building that was always going on at his estate. As regularity is a prime condition facilitating activity, regularity in his household was carried to the highest point of exactitude. He always came to the table under precisely the same conditions, and not only at the same hour but at the same minute. With those about him, from his daughter to his serfs, Baron Bolkonski was sharp and invariably exacting, so that without being a hardhearted man he inspired such fear and respect as few hardhearted men would have aroused. Although he was in retirement and had now no influence in political affairs, every high official appointed to the province in which Baron Bolkonski's estate lay considered it his duty to visit him and waited in the lofty antechamber just as the architect, gardener, or Marya did, till Baron Bolkonski appeared punctually to the appointed hour. Everyone sitting in this antechamber experienced the same feeling of respect and even fear when the enormously high study door opened and showed the figure of a rather small old man, with a powdered wig, small withered hands, and bushy gray eyebrows which, when he frowned, sometimes hid the gleam of his shrewd, youthfully glittering eyes.

On the morning of the day that Andrei and Lise were to arrive, Marya entered the antechamber as usual at the time appointed for the morning greeting, crossing herself with trepidation and repeating a silent prayer.

Every morning Marya came in like that, and every morning prayed that the daily interview might pass off well.

An old powdered manservant who was sitting in the antechamber rose quietly and said in a whisper: "Please walk in."

Through the door came the regular hum of a lathe. Marya timidly opened the door which moved noiselessly and easily. She paused at the entrance. Baron Bolkonski was working at the lathe and after glancing around continued his work.

The enormous study was full of things evidently in constant use. The large table covered with books and plans, the tall glass-fronted bookcases with keys in the locks, the high desk for writing while standing up, on which lay an open exercise book, and the lathe with tools laid ready to hand and shavings scattered around—all indicated continuous, varied, and orderly activity. The motion of the small foot shod in a Tartar boot embroidered with silver, and the firm pressure of the lean sinewy hand, showed that Baron Bolkonski still possessed the tenacious endurance and vigor of hardy old age. After a few more turns of the lathe, he removed his foot from the pedal, wiped his chisel, dropped it into a leather pouch attached to the lathe, and, approaching the table, summoned his daughter. Baron Bolkonski never gave his children a blessing, so he simply held out his bristly cheek (as yet unshaven) and, regarding her tenderly and attentively, said severely:

"Quite well? All right then, sit down." Baron Bolkonski took the exercise book containing lessons in geometry written by himself and drew up a chair with his foot.

"For tomorrow!" he said, quickly finding the page and making a scratch from one paragraph to another with his hard nail.

Marya bent over the exercise book on the table.

"Wait a bit, here's a letter for you," said Baron Bolkonski suddenly, taking a letter addressed in a woman's hand from a bag hanging above the

table, onto which he threw it.

At the sight of the letter red patches showed themselves on Marya's face. She took it quickly and bent her head over it.

"From your friend Julie?" asked Baron Bolkonski with a cold smile that showed his still sound, yellowish teeth.

"Yes, it's from Julie," replied Marya with a timid glance and a timid smile.

"I'll let two more letters pass, but the third I'll read," said Baron Bolkonski sternly; "I'm afraid you write much nonsense. I'll read the third!"

"Read this if you like, Father," said Marya, blushing still more and holding out the letter.

"The third, I said the third!" cried Baron Bolkonski abruptly, pushing the letter away, and leaning his elbows on the table he drew toward him the exercise book containing geometrical figures.

"Well, madam," Baron Bolkonski began, stooping over the book close to his daughter and placing an arm on the back of the chair on which she sat so that she felt surrounded on all sides by the acrid scent of old age and tobacco, which she had known so long. "Now, madam, these triangles are equal; please note that the angle *ABC*..."

Marya looked in a scared way at her father's eyes glittering close to her; the red patches on her face came and went, and it was plain that she understood nothing and was so frightened that her fear would prevent her from understanding any of her father's further explanations, however clear they might be. Whether it was the teacher's fault or the pupil's, this same thing happened every day: Marya's eyes grew dim, she could not see and could not hear anything, but was only conscious of her stern father's withered face close to her, of his breath and the smell of him, and could think only of how to get away quickly to her own room to make out the problem in peace. Baron Bolkonski was beside himself: moved the chair on

which he was sitting noisily backward and forward, made efforts to control himself and not become vehement, but almost always did become vehement, scolded, and sometimes flung the exercise book away.

Marya gave a wrong answer.

“Well now, isn’t she a fool!” shouted Baron Bolkonski, pushing the book aside and turning sharply away; but rising immediately, he paced up and down, lightly touched his daughter’s hair, and sat down again.

Baron Bolkonski drew up his chair and continued to explain.

“This won’t do, Marya; it won’t do,” said he, when Marya, having taken and closed the exercise book with the next day’s lesson, was about to leave: “Mathematics are most important, madam! I don’t want to have you like our silly ladies. Get used to it and you’ll like it,” and he patted her cheek. “It will drive all the nonsense out of your head.”

Marya turned to go, but he stopped her with a gesture and took an uncut book from the high desk.

“Here is some sort of *Key to the Mysteries* that your Julie has sent you. Religious! I don’t interfere with anyone’s belief... I have looked at it. Take it. Well, now go. Go.”

Baron Bolkonski patted her on the shoulder and closed the door after her.

Marya went back to her room with the sad, scared expression that rarely left her and which made her plain, sickly face yet plainer. She sat down at her writing table, on which stood miniature portraits and which was littered with books and papers. Marya was as untidy as her father was tidy. She put down the geometry book and eagerly broke the seal of her letter. It was from her most intimate friend from childhood; that same Julie who had been at the Rostovs’ name-day party.

Julie wrote in French:

Dear and precious Marya, How terrible and frightful a thing is a separation! Though I tell myself that half my life and half my happiness are

wrapped up in you and that in spite of the distance separating us our hearts are united by indissoluble bonds, my heart rebels against fate, and in spite of the pleasures and distractions around me, I cannot overcome a certain secret sorrow that has been in my heart ever since we parted. Why are we not together as we were last summer, in your big study, on the blue sofa, the confidential sofa? Why cannot I now, as three months ago, draw fresh moral strength from your look, so gentle, calm, and penetrating, a look I loved so well and seem to see before me as I write?

Having read thus far, Marya sighed and glanced into the mirror which stood on her right. It reflected a weak, ungraceful figure and a thin face. Her eyes, always sad, now looked with particular hopelessness at her reflection in the glass. "She flatters me," thought Marya, turning away and continuing to read. But Julie did not flatter her friend, Marya's eyes—large, deep, and luminous (it seemed as if at times there radiated from them shafts of warm light)—were so beautiful that very often in spite of the plainness of her face they gave her an attraction more powerful than that of beauty. But Marya never saw the beautiful expression of her own eyes—the look they had when she was not thinking of herself. As with everyone, her face assumed a forced unnatural expression as soon as she looked into a glass. She went on reading:

All Moscow talks of nothing but war. One of my two brothers is already abroad, the other is with the Guards, who are starting on their march to the frontier. Our dear Tzar has left St. Petersburg and it is thought intends to expose his precious person to the chances of war. God grant that the Corsican monster, Napoleon, who is destroying the peace of Europe may be overthrown by the angel whom it has pleased the Almighty, in His goodness, to give us as sovereign! To say nothing of my brothers, this war has deprived me of one of the associations nearest my heart. I mean young Nicholas, who with his enthusiasm could not bear to remain inactive and has left the university to join the army. I will confess to you, dear Marya,

that in spite of his extreme youth his departure for the army was a great grief to me. This young man, of whom I spoke to you last summer, is so noble-minded and full of that real youthfulness which one seldom finds nowadays among our old men of twenty, and, particularly, he is so frank and has so much heart. He is so pure and poetic that my relations with him, transient as they were, have been one of the sweetest comforts to my poor heart, which has already suffered so much. Someday I will tell you about our parting and all that was said then. That is still too fresh. Ah, dear friend, you are happy not to know these poignant joys and sorrows. You are fortunate, for the latter are generally the stronger! I know very well that Nicholas is too young ever to be more to me than a friend, but this sweet friendship, this poetic and pure intimacy, was what my heart needed. But enough of this! The chief news, about which all Moscow gossips, is the death of Count Bezukhov, and his inheritance. Fancy! Katerina and her sisters have received very little, Baron Vasili nothing, and it is Pierre who has inherited all the property and has besides been recognized as legitimate; so that he is now the new count and possessor of the finest fortune in Russia. It is rumored that Baron Vasili played a very despicable part in this affair and that he returned to St. Petersburg quite crestfallen.

I confess I understand very little about all these matters of wills and inheritance; but I do know that since Pierre, whom we all used to know as plain Monsieur Pierre, has become count and the owner of one of the largest fortunes in Russia, I am much amused to watch the change in the tone and manners of the mammas burdened by marriageable daughters, and of the young ladies themselves, toward him, though, between you and me, he always seemed to me a poor sort of fellow. As for the past two years, people have amused themselves by finding husbands for me (most of whom I don't even know), the matchmaking chronicles of Moscow now speak of me as the future Countess. But you will understand that I have no desire for the post. *In regards to marriages:* do you know that a while ago that *universal*

auntie Widow Drubetskoy told me, under the seal of strict secrecy, of a plan of marriage for you? It is neither more nor less than with Baron Vasili's son Anatole, whom they wish to reform by marrying him to someone rich and *distinguished*, and it is on you that his relations' choice has fallen. I don't know what you will think of it, but I consider it my duty to let you know of it. He is said to be very handsome and a terrible scapegrace. That is all I have been able to find out about him.

But enough gossip. I am at the end of my second sheet of paper, and Mamma has sent for me to go and dine at the Apráksins'. Read the mystical book I am sending you; it has an enormous success here. Though there are things in it difficult for the feeble human mind to grasp, it is an admirable book that calms and elevates the soul. Adieu! Give my respects to Baron Bolkonski and my compliments to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne. I embrace you as I love you.

JULIE

P.S. Let me have news of your brother, Andrei, and his charming little wife, Lise.

Marya pondered awhile with a thoughtful smile and her luminous eyes lit up so that her face was entirely transformed. Then she suddenly rose and with her heavy tread went up to the table. She took a sheet of paper and her hand moved rapidly over it. This is the reply she wrote, also in French:

Dear and precious Julie, Your letter of the 13th has given me great delight. So you still love me, my romantic Julie? Separation, of which you say so much that is bad, does not seem to have had its usual effect on you. You complain about our separation. What then should I say, if I *dared* complain, I who am deprived of all who are dear to me? Ah, if we had not religion to console us life would be very sad. Why do you suppose that I should look severely on your affection for that young man? On such matters, I am only severe with myself. I understand such feelings in others, and if never having felt them I cannot approve of them, neither do I

condemn them. Only it seems to me that Christian love, love of one's neighbor, love of one's enemy, is worthier, sweeter, and better than the feelings which the beautiful eyes of a young man can inspire in a romantic and loving young girl like yourself.

The news of Count Bezukhov's death reached us before your letter and Baron Bolkonski was much affected by it. He says Count Bezukhov was the last representative but one of the great century, and that it is his own turn now, but that he will do all he can to let his turn come as late as possible. God preserve us from that terrible misfortune!

I cannot agree with you about Pierre, whom I knew as a child. Pierre always seemed to me to have an excellent heart, and that is the quality I value most in people. As to his inheritance and the part played by Baron Vasili, it is very sad for both. Ah, my dear friend, our divine Savior's words, that it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of God, are terribly true. I pity Baron Vasili but am still more sorry for Pierre. So young, and burdened with such riches—to what temptations he will be exposed! If I were asked what I desire most on earth, it would be to be poorer than the poorest beggar. A thousand thanks, dear friend, for the volume you have sent me and which has such success in Moscow. Yet since you tell me that among some good things it contains others that our weak human understanding cannot grasp, it seems to me rather useless to spend time in reading what is unintelligible and can therefore bear no fruit. I never could understand the fondness some people have for confusing their minds by dwelling on mystical books that merely awaken their doubts and excite their imagination, giving them a bent for exaggeration quite contrary to Christian simplicity. Let us rather read the Epistles and Gospels. Let us not seek to penetrate what mysteries they contain; for how can we, miserable sinners that we are, know the terrible and holy secrets of Providence while we remain in this flesh which forms an impenetrable veil between us and the Eternal? Let us rather confine

ourselves to studying those sublime rules which our divine Savior has left for our guidance here below. Let us try to conform to them and follow them, and let us be persuaded that the less we let our feeble human minds roam, the better we shall please God, who rejects all knowledge that does not come from Him; and the less we seek to fathom what He has been pleased to conceal from us, the sooner will He vouchsafe its revelation to us through His divine Spirit.

Baron Bolkonski has not spoken to me of a suitor but has only told me that he has received a letter and is expecting a visit from Baron Vasili. In regard to this project of marriage for me, I will tell you, dear sweet friend, that I look on marriage as a divine institution to which we must conform. However painful it may be to me, should the Almighty lay the duties of wife and mother upon me I shall try to perform them as faithfully as I can, without disquieting myself by examining my feelings toward him whom He may give me for husband.

I have had a letter from my brother, Andrei, who announces his speedy arrival at Bald Hills with his wife, Lise. This pleasure will be but a brief one, however, for he will leave us again to take part in this unhappy war into which we have been drawn, God knows how or why. Not only where you are—at the heart of affairs and of the world—is the talk all of the war, even here amid fieldwork and the calm of nature—which townsfolk consider characteristic of the country—rumors of war are heard and painfully felt. My father talks of nothing but marches and countermarches, things of which I understand nothing; and the day before yesterday during my daily walk through the village I witnessed a heartrending scene... It was a convoy of conscripts enrolled from our people and starting to join the army. You should have seen the state of the mothers, wives, and children of the men who were going and should have heard the sobs. It seems as though mankind has forgotten the laws of its divine Savior, Who preached love and

forgiveness of injuries—and that men attribute the greatest merit to skill in killing one another.

Adieu, dear and kind friend; may our divine Savior and His most Holy Mother keep you in their holy and all-powerful care!

MARYA

“Ah, you are sending off a letter, Marya? I have already dispatched mine. I have written to my poor mother,” said the smiling Lady-in-waiting Bourienne rapidly, in her pleasant mellow tones and with guttural *r*’s. She brought into Marya’s strenuous, mournful, and gloomy world a quite different atmosphere, careless, lighthearted, and self-satisfied.

“Marya, I must warn you,” she added, lowering her voice and evidently listening to herself with pleasure, and speaking with exaggerated *gravity*, “Baron Bolkonski has been scolding his architect, Michael Ivanovich. He is in a very bad humor, very morose. Be prepared.”

“Ah, dear friend,” replied Marya, “I have asked you never to warn me of the humor my father is in. I do not allow myself to judge him and would not have others do so.”

Marya glanced at her watch and, seeing that she was five minutes late in starting her practice on the clavichord, went into the sitting room with a look of alarm. Between twelve and two o’clock, as the day was mapped out, Baron Bolkonski rested and the Marya played the clavichord.

The gray-haired valet was sitting drowsily listening to the snoring of Baron Bolkonski, who was in his large study. From the far side of the house through the closed doors came the sound of difficult passages—twenty times repeated—of a sonata by Dussek.

Just then a closed carriage and another with a hood drove up to the porch. Andrei got out of the carriage, helped his little wife to alight, and let her pass into the house before him. The butler, Butler Tikhon, wearing a wig, put his head out of the door of the antechamber, reported in a whisper that the Baron was sleeping, and hastily closed the door. Butler Tikhon

knew that neither Andrei's arrival nor any other unusual event must be allowed to disturb the appointed order of the day. Andrei apparently knew this as well as Butler Tikhon; he looked at his watch as if to ascertain whether his father's habits had changed since he was at home last, and, having assured himself that they had not, he turned to his wife.

"Baron Bolkonski will get up in twenty minutes. Let us go across to Marya's room," he said.

Lise had grown stouter during this time, but her eyes and her short, downy, smiling lip lifted when she began to speak just as merrily and prettily as ever.

"Why, this is a palace!" she said to Andrei, looking around with the expression with which people compliment their host at a ball. "Let's come, quick, quick!" And with a glance round, she smiled at Butler Tikhon, at Andrei, and at the footman who accompanied them.

"Is that Marya practicing? Let's go quietly and take her by surprise."

Andrei followed her with a courteous but sad expression.

"You've grown older, Butler Tikhon," Andrei said in passing to the old man, who kissed his hand.

Before they reached the room from which the sounds of the clavichord came, the pretty, fair-haired Frenchwoman, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, rushed out apparently beside herself with delight.

"Ah! What joy for Marya!" exclaimed Lady-in-waiting Bourienne: "At last! I must let her know."

"No, no, please not... You are Lady-in-waiting Bourienne," said Lise, kissing her. "I know you already through my sister-in-law's friendship with you. She was not expecting us?"

They went up to the door of the sitting room from which came the sound of the oft-repeated passage of the sonata. Andrei stopped and made a grimace as if expecting something unpleasant.

Lise entered the room. The passage broke off in the middle, a cry was heard, then Marya's heavy tread and the sound of kissing. When Andrei went in the two women, who had only met once before for a short time at his wedding, were in each other's arms warmly pressing their lips to whatever place they happened to touch. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne stood near them pressing her hand to her heart, with a beatific smile and obviously equally ready to cry or to laugh. Andrei shrugged his shoulders and frowned, as lovers of music do when they hear a false note. Marya and Lise let go of one another, and then, as if afraid of being too late, seized each other's hands, kissing them and pulling them away, and again began kissing each other on the face, and then to Andrei's surprise both began to cry and kissed again. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne also began to cry. Andrei evidently felt ill at ease, but to the two women it seemed quite natural that they should cry, and apparently, it never entered their heads that it could have been otherwise at this meeting.

"Ah! My dear!... Ah! Marya!..." they suddenly exclaimed, and then laughed. "I dreamed last night..."—"You were not expecting us?..." "Ah! Marya, you have got thinner?..." "And you have grown stouter!..."

"I knew Lise at once," put in Lady-in-waiting Bourienne.

"And I had no idea!..." exclaimed Marya. "Ah, Andrei, I did not see you."

Andrei and Marya, hand in hand, kissed one another, and he told her she was still the same crybaby as ever. Marya had turned toward Andrei, and through her tears, the loving, warm, gentle look of her large luminous eyes, very beautiful at that moment, rested on Andrei's face.

Lise talked incessantly, her short, downy upper lip continually and rapidly touching her rosy nether lip when necessary and drawing up again the next moment when her face broke into a smile of glittering teeth and sparkling eyes. She told of an accident they had had on the Spásski Hill which might have been serious for her in her condition, and immediately

after that informed them that she had left all her clothes in St. Petersburg and that heaven knew what she would have to dress in here; and that Andrei had quite changed, and that Kitty Odýntsova had married an old man, and that there was a suitor for Marya, a real one, but that they would talk of that later. Marya was still looking silently at her brother and her beautiful eyes were full of love and sadness. It was plain that she was following a train of thought independent of her sister-in-law's words. In the midst of a description of the last St. Petersburg fete she addressed her brother:

“So you are really going to the war, Andrei?” Marya said sighing.

Lise sighed too.

“Yes, and even tomorrow,” replied Andrei.

“Andrei is leaving me here, God knows why, when he might have had promotion...”

Marya did not listen to the end, but continuing her train of thought turned to Lise with a tender glance at her figure.

“Is it certain?” Marya said.

Lise's face changed. She sighed and said: “Yes, quite certain. Ah! it is very dreadful...”

Lise's lip descended. She brought her face close to her sister-in-law's and unexpectedly again began to cry.

“She needs rest,” said Andrei with a frown. “Don't you, Lise? Take her to your room and I'll go to Father. How is he? Just the same?”

“Yes, just the same. Though I don't know what your opinion will be,” answered Lise joyfully.

“And are the hours the same? And the walks in the avenues? And the lathe?” asked Andrei with a scarcely perceptible smile which showed that, in spite of all his love and respect for his father, he was aware of his weaknesses.

“The hours are the same, and the lathe, and also the mathematics and my geometry lessons,” said Marya gleefully, as if her lessons in geometry

were among the greatest delights of her life.

When the twenty minutes had elapsed and the time had come for Baron Bolkonski to get up, Butler Tikhon came to call Andrei to his father. Baron Bolkonski made a departure from his usual routine in honor of his son's arrival: he gave orders to admit him to his apartments while he dressed for dinner. Baron Bolkonski always dressed in old-fashioned style, wearing an antique coat and powdered hair; and when Andrei entered his father's dressing room (not with the contemptuous look and manner he wore in drawing rooms, but with the animated face with which he talked to his son, Andrei), Baron Bolkonski was sitting on a large leather-covered chair, wrapped in a powdering mantle, entrusting his head to Butler Tikhon.

"Ah! Here's the warrior Andrei! You want to vanquish Napoleon?" said Baron Bolkonski, shaking his powdered head as much as the tail, which Butler Tikhon was holding fast to plait, would allow.

"You at least must tackle him properly, or else if he goes on like this he'll soon have us, too, for his subjects! How are you?" And Baron Bolkonski held out his cheek.

Baron Bolkonski was in a good temper after his nap before dinner. (He used to say that a nap "after dinner was silver—before dinner, golden.") He cast happy, sidelong glances at his son from under his thick, bushy eyebrows. Andrei went up and kissed his father on the spot indicated to him. He made no reply on his father's favorite topic—making fun of the military men of the day, and more particularly of Napoleon.

"Yes, Father, I have come to you and brought my wife who is pregnant," said Andrei, following every movement of his father's face with an eager and respectful look. "How is your health?"

"Only fools and rakes fall ill, my boy. You know me: I am busy from morning till night and abstemious, so of course, I am well."

"Thank God," said Andrei smiling.

“God has nothing to do with it! Well, go on,” Baron Bolkonski continued, returning to his hobby; “tell me how the Germans have taught you to fight Napoleon by this new science you call ‘strategy.’”

Andrei smiled.

“Give me time to collect my wits, Father,” said he, with a smile that showed that his father’s foibles did not prevent his son from loving and honoring him. “Why, I have not yet had time to settle down!”

“Nonsense, nonsense!” cried Baron Bolkonski, shaking his pigtail to see whether it was firmly braided, and grasping his by the hand. “The house for your wife is ready. Marya will take her there and show her over, and they’ll talk nineteen to the dozen. That’s their woman’s way! I am glad to have her. Sit down and talk. About General Mikhelson’s army, I understand— Grand Marshal of the Court Tolstóy’s too... a simultaneous expedition... But what’s the southern army to do? Prussia is neutral... I know that. What about Austria?” said he, rising from his chair and pacing up and down the room followed by Butler Tikhon, who ran after him, handing him different articles of clothing. “What of Sweden? How will they cross Pomerania, the area between Germany and Poland?”

Andrei, seeing that his father insisted, began—at first reluctantly, but gradually with more and more animation, and from habit changing unconsciously from Russian to French as he went on—to explain the plan of operation for the coming campaign. He explained how an army, ninety thousand strong, was to threaten Prussia so as to bring her out of her neutrality and draw her into the war; how part of that army was to join some Swedish forces at the city of Stralsund, Pomerania; how two hundred and twenty thousand Austrians, with a hundred thousand Russians, were to operate in Italy and on the Rhine; how fifty thousand Russians and as many English were to land at Naples, Italy, and how a total force of five hundred thousand men was to attack the French from different sides. Baron Bolkonski did not evince the least interest during this explanation, but as if

he were not listening to it continued to dress while walking about, and three times unexpectedly interrupted. Once he stopped it by shouting: "The white one, the white one!"

This meant that Butler Tikhon was not handing him the waistcoat he wanted. Another time Baron Bolkonski interrupted, saying:

"And will she soon be confined?" and shaking his head reproachfully said: "That's bad! Go on, go on."

The third interruption came when Andrei was finishing his description. The old man began to sing, in the cracked voice of old age: "*Marlborough is going to the wars; God knows when he'll return.*"

Andrei only smiled.

"I don't say it's a plan I approve of," said Andrei; "I am only telling you what it is. Napoleon has also formed his plan by now, not worse than this one."

"Well, you've told me nothing new," Baron Bolkonski repeated, meditatively and rapidly:

"*God knows when he'll return.* Go to the dining room."

At the appointed hour Baron Bolkonski, powdered and shaven, entered the dining room where his daughter-in-law, Marya, and Lady-in-waiting Bourienne were already awaiting him together with his architect, Michael Ivanovich, who by a strange caprice of his employer's was admitted to the table though the position of that insignificant individual was such as could certainly not have caused him to expect that honor. Baron Bolkonski, who generally kept very strictly to social distinctions and rarely admitted even important government officials to his table, had unexpectedly selected the architect Michael Ivanovich (who always went into a corner to blow his nose on his checked handkerchief) to illustrate the theory that all men are equals, and had more than once impressed on Marya that Michael Ivanovich was "not a whit worse than you or I." At dinner, the Baron

usually spoke to the taciturn Michael Ivanovich more often than to anyone else.

In the dining room, which like all the rooms in the house was exceedingly lofty, the members of the household and the footmen—one behind each chair—stood waiting for the Baron to enter. The head butler, napkin on arm, was scanning the setting of the table, making signs to the footmen, and anxiously glancing from the clock to the door by which the Baron was to enter. Andrei was looking at a large gilt frame, new to him, containing the genealogical tree of the family Bolkonski, opposite which hung another such frame with a badly painted portrait (evidently by the hand of the artist belonging to the estate) of a ruling Baron, in a crown—an alleged descendant of Rúrik and ancestor of the Bolkonski's. Andrei, looking again at that genealogical tree, shook his head, laughing as a man laughs who looks at a portrait so characteristic of the original as to be amusing.

“How thoroughly like father that is!” Andrei said to Marya, who had come up to him.

Marya looked at him in surprise. She did not understand what he was laughing at. Everything her father did inspire her with reverence and was beyond question.

“Everyone has his Achilles' heel,” continued Andrei. “Fancy, with *his* powerful mind, indulging in such nonsense!”

Marya could not understand the boldness of her brother's criticism and was about to reply when the expected footsteps were heard coming from the study. Baron Bolkonski walked in quickly and jauntily as was his wont, as if intentionally contrasting the briskness of his manners with the strict formality of his house. At that moment the great clock struck two and another with a shrill tone joined in from the drawing room. The Baron stood still; his lively glittering eyes from under their thick, bushy eyebrows sternly scanned all present and rested on Lise. She felt, as courtiers do when

the Tzar enters, the sensation of fear and respect which the old man inspired in all around him. Baron Bolkonski stroked her hair and then patted her awkwardly on the back of her neck.

“I’m glad, glad, to see you,” Baron Bolkonski said, looking attentively into her eyes, and then quickly went to his place and sat down. “Sit down, sit down! Sit down, Michael Ivanovich!”

He indicated a place beside him to his daughter-in-law, Lise. A footman moved the chair for her.

“Ho, ho!” said Baron Bolkonski, casting his eyes on her rounded figure. “You’ve been in a hurry. That’s bad!”

He laughed in his usual dry, cold, unpleasant way, with his lips only and not with his eyes.

“You must walk, walk as much as possible, as much as possible,” he said.

Lise did not, or did not wish to, hear his words. She was silent and seemed confused. Baron Bolkonski asked her about her father, and she began to smile and talk. He asked about mutual acquaintances, and she became still more animated and chattered away giving him greetings from various people and retelling the town gossip.

“Countess Apráksina, poor thing, has lost her husband and she has cried her eyes out,” Lise said, growing more and more lively.

As she became animated Baron Bolkonski looked at her more and more sternly, and suddenly, as if he had studied her sufficiently and had formed a definite idea of her, he turned away and addressed the architect Michael Ivanovich.

“Well, Michael Ivanovich, our Napoleon will be having a bad time of it. Andrei” (he always spoke thus of his son) “has been telling me what forces are being collected against him! While you and I never thought much of him.”

Michael Ivanovich did not at all know when “you and I” had said such things about Napoleon, but understanding that he was wanted as a peg on which to hang the Baron’s favorite topic, he looked inquiringly at the young Baron, wondering what would follow.

“He is a great tactician!” said Baron Bolkonski to his Andrei, pointing to the architect Michael Ivanovich.

And the conversation again turned to the war, on Napoleon, and the generals and statesmen of the day. Baron Bolkonski seemed convinced not only that all the men of the day were mere babies who did not know the A B C of war or of politics, and that Napoleon was an insignificant little Frenchy, successful only because there were no longer any Potëmkins or Suvórovs left to oppose him; but he was also convinced that there were no political difficulties in Europe and no real war, but only a sort of puppet show at which the men of the day were playing, pretending to do something real. Andrei gaily bore with his father’s ridicule of the new men, drew him on, and listened to him with evident pleasure.

“The past always seems good,” said Andrei, “but did not Suvórov himself fall into a carriage Moreau set him, and from which he did not know how to escape?”

“Who told you that? Who?” cried Baron Bolkonski. “Suvórov never lost a battle!” And he jerked away his plate, which Butler Tikhon briskly caught. “Suvórov!... Consider, Andrei. Two... Frederick and Suvórov; Moreau!... Moreau would have been a prisoner if Suvórov had had a free hand, but he had the *War Council* on his hands. It would have puzzled the devil himself! When you get there you’ll find out what those on the *War Council* are like! Even the great Suvórov couldn’t manage them so what chance does General Kutuzov have? No, my dear boy,” he continued, “you and your generals won’t get on against Napoleon; you’ll have to call in the French, so that birds of a feather may fight together. The German, Pahlen, has been sent to New York in America, to fetch the Frenchman, Moreau,”

he said, alluding to the invitation made that year to Moreau to enter the Russian service... “Wonderful!... Were the Potëmkins, Suvórovs, and Orlóvs Germans? No, Andrei, either you fellows have all lost your wits, or I have outlived mine. May God help you, but we’ll see what will happen. Napoleon has become a great commander among them! Hm!...”

“I don’t at all say that all the plans are good,” said Andrei, “I am only surprised at your opinion of Napoleon. You may laugh as much as you like, but all the same, Napoleon is a great general!”

“Michael Ivanovich!” cried Baron Bolkonski to the architect Michael Ivanovich who, busy with his roast meat, hoped he had been forgotten: “Didn’t I tell you Napoleon was a great tactician? Here, Andrei says the same thing.”

“To be sure, your excellency,” replied the architect Michael Ivanovich.

Baron Bolkonski again laughed his frigid laugh.

“Napoleon was born with a silver spoon in his mouth. He has got splendid soldiers. Besides he began by attacking Germans. And only idlers have failed to beat the Germans. Since the world began everybody has beaten the Germans. They beat no one—except one another. He made his reputation fighting them.”

And Baron Bolkonski began explaining all the blunders which, according to him, Napoleon had made in his campaigns and even in politics. Andrei made no rejoinder, but it was evident that whatever arguments were presented he was as little able as his father to change his opinion. He listened, refraining from a reply, and involuntarily wondered how this old man, living alone in the country for so many years, could know and discuss so minutely and acutely all the recent European military and political events.

“You think I’m an old man and don’t understand the present state of affairs?” concluded Baron Bolkonski. “But it troubles me. I don’t sleep at

night. Come now, where has this great commander of yours shown his skill?" he concluded.

"That would take too long to tell," answered Andrei.

"Well, then go off to your Napoleon! Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, here's another admirer of that powder-monkey Napoleon of yours," he exclaimed in excellent French.

"You know that I am not a supporter of Napoleon!"

"Marlborough is going to war; God knows when he'll return." hummed Baron Bolkonski out of tune and, with a laugh still more so, he quitted the table.

Lise during the whole discussion and the rest of the dinner sat silent, glancing with a frightened look now at Baron Bolkonski and now at Marya. When they left the table Lise took Marya's arm and drew her into another room.

"What a clever man your father is," said Lise; "perhaps that is why I am afraid of him."

"Oh, he is so kind!" answered Marya.

Andrei was to leave the next evening. Baron Bolkonski, not altering his routine, retired as usual after dinner. Lise was in her sister-in-law, Marya's room. Andrei in a traveling coat without epaulets had been packing with his valet in the rooms assigned to him. After inspecting the carriage himself and seeing the trunks put in, he ordered the horses to be harnessed. Only those things he always kept with him remained in his room; a small box, a large canteen fitted with silver plate, two Turkish pistols, and a saber—a present from his father who had brought it from the siege of Ochákov. All these traveling effects of Andrei's were in very good order: new, clean, and in cloth covers carefully tied with tapes.

When starting on a journey or changing their mode of life, men capable of reflection are generally in a serious frame of mind. At such moments one reviews the past and plans for the future. Andrei's face looked very

thoughtful and tender. With his hands behind him, he paced briskly from corner to corner of the room, looking straight before him and thoughtfully shaking his head. Did he fear going to the war, or was he sad at leaving his wife?—perhaps both, but evidently he did not wish to be seen in that mood, for hearing footsteps in the passage he hurriedly unclasped his hands, stopped at a table as if tying the cover of the small box, and assumed his usual tranquil and impenetrable expression. It was the heavy tread of Marya that Andrei heard.

“I hear you have given orders to harness,” Marya cried, panting (she had apparently been running), “and I did so wish to have another talk with you alone! God knows how long we may again be parted. You are not angry with me for coming? You have changed so, Andrúsha,” she added as if to explain such a question.

She smiled as she uttered his pet name, “Andrúsha.” It was obviously strange to her to think that this stern handsome man should be Andrúsha—the slender mischievous boy who had been her playfellow in childhood.

“And where is Lise?” Andrei asked, answering her question only with a smile.

“She was so tired that she has fallen asleep on the sofa in my room. Oh, Andrei! What a treasure of a wife you have,” said she, sitting down on the sofa, facing her brother. “Lise is quite a child: such a dear, merry child. I have grown so fond of her.”

Andrei was silent, but Marya noticed the ironical and contemptuous look that showed itself on his face.

“One must be indulgent to little weaknesses; who is free from them, Andrei? Don’t forget that she has grown up and been educated in society, so her position now is not a rosy one. We should enter into everyone’s situation. *To understand all is to forgive all.* Think what it must be for her, poor thing, after what she has been used to, to be parted from her husband and be left alone in the country, in her condition! It’s very hard.”

Andrei smiled as he looked at Marya, as we smile at those we think we thoroughly understand.

“You live in the country and don’t think that country life is terrible,” he replied.

“I... that’s different. Why speak of me? I don’t want any other life, and can’t, for I know no other. But think, Andrei: for a young society woman to be buried in the country during the best years of her life, all alone—for Papa is always busy, and I... well, you know what poor resources I have for entertaining a woman used to the best society. There is only Lady-in-waiting Bourienne...”

“I don’t like your Lady-in-waiting Bourienne at all,” said Andrei.

“No? She is very nice and kind and, above all, she’s much to be pitied. She has no one, no one. To tell the truth, I don’t need her, and she’s even in my way. You know I always was a savage, and now am even more so. I like being alone... Father likes her very much. She and the architect Michael Ivanovich are the two people to whom he is always gentle and kind because he has been a benefactor to them both. As Sterne says: ‘We don’t love people so much for the good they have done us, as for the good we have done them.’ Father took her when she was homeless after losing her own father. She is very good-natured, and my father likes her way of reading. She reads to him in the evenings and reads splendidly.”

“To be quite frank, Marya, I expect Father’s character sometimes makes things trying for you, doesn’t it?” Andrei asked suddenly.

Marya was first surprised and then aghast at this question.

“For me? For me?... Trying for me!...” said she.

“He always was rather harsh, and now I should think he’s getting very trying,” said Andrei, apparently speaking lightly of their father in order to puzzle or test his sister.

“You are good in every way, Andrei, but you have a kind of intellectual pride,” said Marya, following the train of her own thoughts rather than the

trend of the conversation—"and that's a great sin. How can one judge Father? But even if one might, what feeling except veneration could such a man as my father evoke? And I am so contented and happy with him. I only wish you were all as happy as I am."

Andrei shook his head incredulously.

"The only thing that is hard for me... I will tell you the truth, Andrei... is Father's way of treating religious subjects. I don't understand how a man of his immense intellect can fail to see what is as clear as day and can go so far astray. That is the only thing that makes me unhappy. But even in this, I can see lately a shade of improvement. His satire has been less bitter of late, and there was a monk he received and had a long talk with."

"Ah! my dear, I am afraid you and your monk are wasting your powder," said Andrei banteringly yet tenderly.

"Ah! *My dear*, I only pray and hope that God will hear me. Andrei..." she said timidly after a moment's silence, "I have a great favor to ask of you."

"What is it, dear?"

"No—promise that you will not refuse! It will give you no trouble and is nothing unworthy of you, but it will comfort me. Promise, Andrei!..." said she, putting her hand in her reticule but not yet taking out what she was holding inside it, as if what she held were the subject of her request and must not be shown before the request was granted.

Marya looked timidly at her brother.

"Even if it were a great deal of trouble..." answered Andrei, as if guessing what it was about.

"Think what you please! I know you are just like Father. Think as you please, but do this for my sake! Please do! Father's father, our grandfather, wore it in all his wars." (She still did not take out what she was holding in her reticule.) "So you promise?"

"Of course. What is it?"

“Andrei, I bless you with this icon and you must promise me you will never take it off. Do you promise?”

“If it does not weigh a hundred pounds and won’t break my neck... To please you...” said Andrei. But immediately, noticing the pained expression his joke had brought to his sister’s face, he repented and added: “I am glad; really, dear, I am very glad.”

“Against your will, God will save and have mercy on you and bring you to Himself, for in Him alone is truth and peace,” said Marya in a voice trembling with emotion, solemnly holding up in both hands before her brother a small, oval, antique, dark-faced icon of the Savior in a gold setting, on a finely wrought silver chain.

Marya crossed herself, kissed the icon, and handed it to Andrei.

“Please, Andrei, for my sake!...”

Rays of gentle light shone from her large, timid eyes. Those eyes lit up the whole of her thin, sickly face and made it beautiful. Andrei would have taken the icon, but she stopped him. He understood, crossed himself, and kissed the icon. There was a look of tenderness, for he was touched, but also a gleam of irony on his face.

“Thank you, my dear.” Marya kissed him on the forehead and sat down again on the sofa. They were silent for a while.

“As I was saying to you, Andrei, be kind and generous as you always used to be. Don’t judge Lise harshly,” she began. “She is so sweet, so good-natured, and her position now is a very hard one.”

“I do not think I have complained of my wife to you, Marya, or blamed her. Why do you say all this to me?”

Red patches appeared on Marya’s face and she was silent as if she felt guilty.

“I have said nothing to you, but you have already been talked to. And I am sorry for that,” Andrei went on.

The patches grew deeper on her forehead, neck, and cheeks. She tried to say something but could not. Her brother had guessed right: Lise had been crying after dinner and had spoken of her forebodings about her confinement, and how she dreaded it and had complained of her fate, her father-in-law, and her husband. After crying she had fallen asleep. Andrei felt sorry for Marya.

“Know this, Marya: I can’t reproach, have not reproached, and never shall reproach *my wife* with anything, and I cannot reproach myself with anything in regard to her, and that always will be so in whatever circumstances I may be placed. But if you want to know the truth... if you want to know whether I am happy? No! Is she happy? No! But why this is so I don’t know...”

As Andrei said this he rose, went to his sister, and, stooping, kissed her forehead. His fine eyes lit up with a thoughtful, kindly, and unaccustomed brightness, but he was looking not at his sister but over her head toward the darkness of the open doorway.

“Let us go to her, I must say goodbye. Or—go and wake and I’ll come in a moment. Petrúshka!” he called to his valet: “Come here, take these away. Put this on the seat and this to the right.”

Marya rose and moved to the door, then stopped and said: “Andrei, if you had faith you would have turned to God and asked Him to give you the love you do not feel, and your prayer would have been answered.”

“Well, maybe!” said Andrei. “Go, Marya; I’ll come immediately.”

On the way to his sister’s room, in the passage which connected one wing with the other, Andrei met Lady-in-waiting Bourienne smiling sweetly. It was the third time that day that, with an ecstatic and artless smile, she had met him in secluded passages.

“Oh! I thought you were in your room,” Lady-in-waiting Bourienne said, for some reason blushing and dropping her eyes.

Andrei looked sternly at her and an expression of anger suddenly came over his face. He said nothing to her but looked at her forehead and hair, without looking at her eyes, with such contempt that the Frenchwoman blushed and went away without a word. When he reached his sister's room his wife was already awake and her merry voice, hurrying one word after another, came through the open door. She was speaking as usual in French, and as if after long self-restraint she wished to make up for the lost time.

“No, but imagine Countess Zúbova, with false curls and her mouth full of false teeth, as if she were trying to cheat old age... Ha, ha, ha! Marya!”

This very sentence about Countess Zúbova and this same laugh Andrei had already heard from Lise in the presence of others some five times. He entered the room softly. Lise, plump and rosy, was sitting in an easy chair with her work in her hands, talking incessantly, repeating St. Petersburg reminiscences and even phrases. Andrei came up, stroked her hair, and asked if she felt rested after their journey. She answered him and continued her chatter.

The coach with six horses was waiting at the porch. It was an autumn night, so dark that the coachman could not see the carriage pole. Servants with lanterns were bustling about on the porch. The immense house was brilliant with lights shining through its lofty windows. The domestic serfs were crowding in the hall, waiting to bid good-bye to the young Baron. The members of the household were all gathered in the reception hall: the architect Michael Ivanovich, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, Marya, and Lise. Andrei had been called to his father's study as the latter wished to say good-bye to him alone. All were waiting for them to come out.

When Andrei entered the study Baron Bolkonski in his old-age spectacles and white dressing gown, in which he received no one but his son, sat at the table writing. He glanced around.

“Going?” And Baron Bolkonski went on writing.

“I’ve come to say goodbye.”

“Kiss me here,” and he touched his cheek: “Thanks, thanks!”

“What do you thank me for?”

“For not dilly-dallying and not hanging to a woman’s apron strings. The Service before everything. Thanks, thanks!” And Baron Bolkonski went on writing so that his quill spluttered and squeaked. “If you have anything to say, say it. These two things can be done together,” he added.

“About Lise... I am ashamed as it is to leave her on your hands...”

“Why talk nonsense? Say what you want.”

“When her confinement is due, send to Moscow for a *doctor that specializes in birthing babies*... Let him be here...”

Baron Bolkonski stopped writing and, as if not understanding, fixed his stern eyes on his son.

“I know that no one can help if nature does not do her work,” said Andrei, evidently confused. “I know that out of a million cases only one goes wrong, but it is her fancy and mine. They have been telling her things. She has had a dream and is frightened.”

“Hm... Hm...” muttered Baron Bolkonski to himself, finishing what he was writing. “I’ll do it.”

He signed with a flourish and suddenly turning to his son began to laugh.

“It’s a bad business, eh?”

“What is bad, Father?”

“The wife!” said Baron Bolkonski, briefly and significantly.

“I don’t understand!” said Andrei.

“No, it can’t be helped, lad,” said Baron Bolkonski. “They’re all like that; one can’t unmarry. Don’t be afraid; I won’t tell anyone, but you know it yourself.”

Baron Bolkonski seized his son by the hand with small bony fingers, shook it, looked straight into his son’s face with keen eyes which seemed to

see through him, and again laughed his frigid laugh.

Andrei sighed, thus admitting that his father had understood him. Baron Bolkonski continued to fold and seal his letter, snatching up and throwing down the wax, the seal, and the paper, with his accustomed rapidity.

“What’s to be done? She’s pretty! I will do everything. Make your mind easy,” said he in abrupt sentences while sealing his letter.

Andrei did not speak; he was both pleased and displeased that his father understood him. The old man got up and gave the letter to his son.

“Listen!” said Baron Bolkonski; “don’t worry about your wife: what can be done shall be. Now listen! Give this letter to General Kutuzov. I have written that he should make use of you in proper places and not keep you long as an adjutant: a bad position! Tell him I remember and like him. Write and tell me how he receives you. If he is all right—serve him. You need not serve under anyone if you are in disfavor. Now come here.”

Baron Bolkonski spoke so rapidly that he did not finish half his words, but his son was accustomed to understanding him. He led him to the desk, raised the lid, drew out a drawer, and took out an exercise book filled with his bold, tall, close handwriting.

“I shall probably die before you. So remember, these are my memoirs; hand them to the Tzar after my death. Now here is a Lombard bond and a letter; it is a premium for the man who writes a history of Suvórov’s wars. Send it to the Academy. Here are some jottings for you to read when I am gone. You will find them useful.”

Andrei did not tell Baron Bolkonski that he would no doubt live a long time yet. He felt that he must not say it.

“I will do it all, Father,” he said.

“Well, now, good-by!” Baron Bolkonski gave his son his hand to kiss and embraced him. “Remember this, Andrei, if they kill you it will hurt me, your old father...” he paused unexpectedly, and then in a querulous voice

suddenly shrieked: “but if I hear that you have not behaved like a son of mine, I shall be ashamed!”

“You need not have said that to me, Father,” said Andrei with a smile.

Baron Bolkonski was silent.

“I also wanted to ask you,” continued Andrei, “if I’m killed and if I have a son, do not let him be taken away from you—as I said yesterday... let him grow up with you... Please.”

“Not let Lise have him?” said the old man, and laughed.

They stood silent, facing one another. Baron Bolkonski’s sharp eyes were fixed straight on his son’s. Something twitched in the lower part of the father’s face.

“We’ve said good-by. Go!” Baron Bolkonski suddenly shouted in a loud, angry voice, opening his door.

“What is it? What?” asked Marya and Lise when they saw for a moment at the door Andrei and the figure of Baron Bolkonski in a white dressing gown, spectacled and wigless, shouting in an angry voice.

Andrei sighed and made no reply.

“Well!” he said, turning to Lise.

And this “Well!” sounded coldly ironic, as if he were saying: “Now go through your performance.”

“Andrei, already!” said Lise, turning pale and looking with dismay at her husband.

Andrei embraced her. She screamed and fell unconscious on his shoulder.

He cautiously released the shoulder she leaned on, looked into her face, and carefully placed her in an easy chair.

“Adieu, Marya,” said he gently to his sister, taking her by the hand and kissing her, and then he left the room with rapid steps.

Lise lay in the armchair, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne chafing her temples. Marya, supporting Lise, still looked with her beautiful eyes full of

tears at the door through which Andrei had gone and made the sign of the cross in his direction. From the study, like pistol shots, came the frequent sound of Baron Bolkonski angrily blowing his nose. Hardly had Andrei gone when the study door opened quickly and the stern figure of the old man in the white dressing gown looked out.

“Gone? That’s all right!” said Baron Bolkonski; and looking angrily at the unconscious Lise, he shook his head reprovably and slammed the door.

BOOK 2



*I*n October 1805, a Russian army was occupying the villages and towns of the Archduchy of Austria, and yet other regiments freshly arriving from Russia were settling near the fortress of Braunau and burdening the inhabitants on whom they were quartered. Braunau was the headquarters of General Kutuzov.

On October 11, 1805, one of the infantry regiments that had just reached Braunau had halted half a mile from the town, waiting to be inspected by General Kutuzov. Despite the un-Russian appearance of the locality and surroundings—fruit gardens, stone fences, tiled roofs, and hills in the distance—and despite the fact that the inhabitants (who gazed with curiosity at the soldiers) were not Russians, the regiment had just the appearance of any Russian regiment preparing for an inspection anywhere in the heart of Russia.

On the evening of the last day's march, an order had been received that General Kutuzov would inspect the regiment on the march. Though the words of the order were not clear to the regimental commander, and the question arose whether the troops were to be in marching order or not, it was decided at a consultation between the battalion commanders to present the regiment in parade order, on the principle that it is always better to “bow too low than not bow low enough.” So the soldiers, after a twenty-mile

march, were kept mending and cleaning all night long without closing their eyes, while the adjutants and company commanders calculated and reckoned, and by morning the regiment—instead of the straggling, disorderly crowd it had been on its last march the day before—presented a well-ordered array of two thousand men each of whom knew his place and his duty, had every button and every buckle in place, and shone with cleanliness. And not only externally was all in order, but had it pleased General Kutuzov to look under the uniforms he would have found on every man a clean shirt, and in every knapsack the appointed number of articles, “awl, soap, and all,” as the soldiers say. There was only one circumstance concerning which no one could be at ease. It was the state of the soldiers’ boots. More than half the men’s boots were in holes. But this defect was not due to any fault of the regimental commander, for in spite of repeated demands boots had not been issued by the Austrian commissariat, and the regiment had marched some seven hundred miles.

The commander of the regiment was an elderly, choleric, stout, and thick-set general with grizzled eyebrows and whiskers, and wider from chest to back than across the shoulders. He had on a brand-new uniform showing the creases where it had been folded and thick gold epaulets which seemed to stand rather than lie down on his massive shoulders. He had the air of a man happily performing one of the most solemn duties of his life. He walked about in front of the line and at every step pulled himself up, slightly arching his back. It was plain that the commander admired his regiment, rejoiced in it, and that his whole mind was engrossed by it, yet his strut seemed to indicate that, besides military matters, social interests and the fair sex occupied no small part of his thoughts.

“Well?” he said, addressing one of the battalion commanders who smilingly pressed forward (it was plain that they both felt happy). “We had our hands full last night. However, I think the regiment is not a bad one, eh?”

The underling perceived the jovial irony and laughed.

“It would not be turned off the field even on the Tzarítsin Meadow.”

“What?” asked the commander, not understanding his underling’s joke.

At that moment, on the road from the town on which signalers had been posted, two men appeared on horseback. They were an aide-de-camp followed by a Cossack.

The aide-de-camp was sent to confirm the order which had not been clearly worded the day before, namely, that General Kutuzov wished to see the regiment just in the state in which it had been on the march: in their greatcoats, and packs, and without any preparation whatever.

An Austrian general from Vienna had come to General Kutuzov the day before with proposals and demands for him to join up with the army of Archduke Ferdinand and General Mack, and General Kutuzov, not considering this junction advisable, meant, among other arguments in support of his view, to show the Austrian general the wretched state in which the troops arrived from Russia. With this object he intended to meet the regiment; so the worse the condition it was in, the better pleased General Kutuzov would be. Though the aide-de-camp did not know these circumstances, he nevertheless delivered the definite order that the men should be in their greatcoats and in marching order and that General Kutuzov would otherwise be dissatisfied. On hearing this the regimental commander hung his head, silently shrugged his shoulders, and spread out his arms with a choleric gesture.

“A fine mess we’ve made of it!” the regimental commander remarked.

“There now! Didn’t I tell you that if it was said ‘on the march’ it meant in greatcoats?” said he reproachfully to the battalion commander. “Oh, my God!” he added, stepping resolutely forward. “Company commanders!” he shouted in a voice accustomed to command. “Sergeants major!... How soon will he be here?” he asked the aide-de-camp with a respectful politeness evidently relating to the personage he was referring to.

“In an hour’s time, I should say.”

“Shall we have time to change clothes?”

“I don’t know...”

The regimental commander, going up to the line himself, ordered the soldiers to change into their greatcoats. The company commanders ran off to their companies, the sergeant majors began bustling (the greatcoats were not in very good condition), and instantly the squares that had up to then been in regular order and silent began to sway and stretch and hum with voices. On all sides soldiers were running to and fro, throwing up their knapsacks with a jerk of their shoulders and pulling the buckles over their heads, unbuckling their overcoats, and drawing the sleeves on with upraised arms.

In half an hour all was again in order, only the squares had become gray instead of black. The regimental commander walked with his jerky steps to the front of the regiment and examined it from a distance.

“Whatever is this? This!” he shouted and stood still. “Commander of the third company!”

“Commander of the third company wanted by the regimental commander!... commander to the regimental commander... third company to the regimental commander.” The words passed along the lines and an adjutant ran to look for the missing officer.

When the eager but misrepeated words had reached their destination in a cry of: “The general to the third company,” the missing officer appeared from behind his company and, though he was a middle-aged man and not in the habit of running, trotted awkwardly stumbling on his toes. The captain’s face showed the uneasiness of a schoolboy who is told to repeat a lesson he has not learned. Spots appeared on his nose, the redness of which was evidently due to intemperance, and his mouth twitched nervously. The regimental commander looked the captain up and down as he came up panting, slackening his pace as he approached.

“You will soon be dressing your men in petticoats! What is this?” shouted the regimental commander, thrusting forward his jaw and pointing at a soldier in the ranks of the third company in a greatcoat of bluish cloth, which contrasted with the others. “What have you been after? General Kutuzov is expected and you leave your place? Eh? I’ll teach you to dress the men in fancy coats for a parade... Eh...?”

The captain, with his eyes fixed on his superior, pressed two fingers more and more rigidly to his cap as if in this pressure lay his only hope of salvation.

“Well, why don’t you speak? Whom have you got there dressed up as a Hungarian?” said the regimental commander with an austere gibe.

“Your excellency...”

“Well, your excellency, what? Your excellency! But what about your excellency?... nobody knows.”

“Your excellency, it’s the officer Dolokhov, who has been reduced to the ranks,” said the captain softly.

“Well? Has Dolokhov been degraded into a general, or into a soldier? If a soldier, he should be dressed in regulation uniform like the others.”

“Your excellency, you gave Dolokhov leave yourself, on the march.”

“Gave him leave? Leave? That’s just like you young men,” said the regimental commander cooling down a little. “Leave indeed... One says a word to you and you... What?” he added with renewed irritation, “I beg you to dress your men decently.”

And the regimental commander, turning to look at the adjutant, directed his jerky steps down the line. He was evidently pleased with his own display of anger and walking up to the regiment wished to find a further excuse for wrath. Having snapped at an officer for an unpolished badge, and at another because his line was not straight, he reached the third company.

“H-o-o-w are you standing? Where’s your leg? Your leg?” shouted the regimental commander with a tone of suffering in his voice, while there

were still five men between him and Dolokhov with his bluish-gray uniform. (We last saw Dolokhov when he was winning a bet by drinking a bottle of rum while sitting in an open window.)

Dolokhov slowly straightened his bent knee, looking straight with his clear, insolent eyes into the regimental commander's face.

"Why a blue coat? Off with it... Sergeant major! Change his coat... the ras..." he did not finish.

"Regimental commander, I must obey orders, but I am not bound to endure..." Dolokhov hurriedly interrupted.

"No talking in the ranks!... No talking, no talking!"

"Not bound to endure insults," Dolokhov concluded in loud, ringing tones.

The eyes of the regimental commander and the soldier met. The commander became silent, angrily pulling down his tight scarf.

"I request you to have the goodness to change your coat," the regimental commander said as he turned away.

"General Kutuzov is coming!" shouted the signaler at that moment.

The regimental commander, flushing, ran to his horse, seized the stirrup with trembling hands, threw his body across the saddle, righted himself, drew his saber, and with a happy and resolute countenance, opening his mouth awry, prepared to shout. The regiment fluttered like a bird preening its plumage and became motionless.

"Attention!" shouted the regimental commander in a soul-shaking voice which expressed joy for himself, severity for the regiment, and welcome for the approaching chief.

Along the broad country road, edged on both sides by trees, came a high, light blue Viennese carriage, slightly creaking on its springs and drawn by six horses at a smart trot. Behind the carriage galloped the suite and a convoy of Croats. Beside General Kutuzov sat an Austrian general, in a white uniform that looked strange among the Russian black ones.

The carriage stopped in front of the regiment. General Kutuzov and the Austrian general were talking in low voices and Kutuzov smiled slightly as treading heavily he stepped down from the carriage just as if those two thousand men breathlessly gazing at him and the regimental commander did not exist.

The word of command rang out, and again the regiment quivered, as with a jingling sound it presented arms. Then amidst a dead silence, the feeble voice of General Kutuzov was heard. The regiment roared, "Health to your ex... len... len... lency!" and again all became silent. At first, General Kutuzov stood still while the regiment moved; then he and the Austrian general in white, accompanied by the suite, walked between the ranks.

From the way the regimental commander saluted General Kutuzov and devoured him with his eyes, drawing himself up obsequiously, and from the way he walked through the ranks behind the generals, bending forward and hardly able to restrain his jerky movements, and from the way he darted forward at every word or gesture of General Kutuzov, it was evident that he performed his duty as a subordinate with even greater zeal than his duty as a commander. Thanks to the strictness and assiduity of its commander the regiment, in comparison with others that had reached Braunau, Austria at the same time, was in splendid condition. There were only 217 sick and stragglers. Everything was in good order except the boots.

General Kutuzov walked through the ranks, sometimes stopping to say a few friendly words to officers he had known in the Turkish war, sometimes also to the soldiers. Looking at their boots he several times shook his head sadly, pointing them out to the Austrian general with an expression that seemed to say that he was not blaming anyone, but could not help noticing what a bad state of things it was. The regimental commander ran forward on each such occasion, fearing to miss a single word of General Kutuzov's regarding the regiment. Behind General Kutuzov, at a distance that allowed

every softly spoken word to be heard, followed some twenty men of his suite. These gentlemen talked among themselves and sometimes laughed. Nearest of all to General Kutuzov walked a handsome adjutant. This was Boris. Beside him was his comrade Sergeant Nesvitski, a tall staff officer, extremely stout, with a kindly, smiling, handsome face and moist eyes. Sergeant Nesvitski could hardly keep from laughter provoked by a swarthy hussar officer who walked beside him. This hussar, with a grave face and without a smile or a change in the expression of his fixed eyes, watched the regimental commander's back and mimicked his every movement. Each time the commander started and bent forward, the hussar started and bent forward in exactly the same manner. Sergeant Nesvitski laughed and nudged the others to make them look at the wag.

General Kutuzov walked slowly and languidly past thousands of eyes that were starting from their sockets to watch their chief. On reaching the third company he suddenly stopped. His suite, not having expected this, involuntarily came closer to him.

"Ah, Captain Timokhin!" said he, recognizing the red-nosed captain who had been reprimanded on account of the blue greatcoat.

One would have thought it impossible for a man to stretch himself more than Captain Timokhin had done when he was reprimanded by the regimental commander, but now that General Kutuzov addressed him he drew himself up to such an extent that it seemed he could not have sustained it had Kutuzov continued to look at him, and so Kutuzov, who evidently understood his case and wished him nothing but good, quickly turned away, a scarcely perceptible smile flitting over his scarred and puffy face.

"Another Ismail comrade," said Kutuzov. "A brave officer! Are you satisfied with Captain Timokhin?" he asked the regimental commander.

And the latter—unconscious that he was being reflected in the hussar officer as in a looking glass—started, moved forward, and answered:

“Highly satisfied, your excellency!”

“We all have our weaknesses,” said General Kutuzov smiling and walking away from him. “Captain Timokhin used to have a predilection for Bacchus.”

The regimental commander was afraid he might be blamed for this and did not answer. The hussar at that moment noticed the face of the red-nosed Captain Timokhin and his drawn-in stomach, and mimicked his expression and pose with such exactitude that Sergeant Nesvitski could not help laughing. General Kutuzov turned round. The hussar evidently had complete control of his face, and while General Kutuzov was turning managed to make a grimace and then assume a most serious, deferential, and innocent expression.

The third company was the last, and General Kutuzov pondered, apparently trying to recollect something. Andrei stepped forward from among the suite and said in French:

“You told me to remind you of the officer Dolokhov, reduced to the ranks in this regiment.”

“Where is Dolokhov?” asked General Kutuzov.

Dolokhov, who had already changed into a soldier’s gray greatcoat, did not wait to be called. The shapely figure of the fair-haired soldier, with his clear blue eyes, stepped forward from the ranks, went up to General Kutuzov, and presented arms.

“Have you a complaint to make?” General Kutuzov asked with a slight frown.

“This is Dolokhov,” said Andrei.

“Ah!” said General Kutuzov. “I hope this will be a lesson to you. Do your duty. The Tzar is gracious, and I shan’t forget you if you deserve well.”

Dolokhov's clear blue eyes looked at General Kutuzov just as boldly as they had looked at the regimental commander, seeming by their expression to tear open the veil of convention that separates a Marshal so widely from a private.

"One thing I ask of your excellency," Dolokhov said in his firm, ringing, deliberate voice. "I ask an opportunity to atone for my fault and prove my devotion to His Majesty the Tzar and to Russia!"

General Kutuzov turned away. The same smile of the eyes with which he had turned from Captain Timokhin again flitted over his face. He turned away with a grimace as if to say that everything Dolokhov had said to him and everything he could say had long been known to him, that he was weary of it and it was not at all what he wanted. He turned away and went to the carriage.

The regiment broke up into companies, which went to their appointed quarters near Braunau, where they hoped to receive boots and clothes and to rest after their hard marches.

"You won't bear me a grudge, Captain Timokhin?" said the regimental commander, overtaking the third company on its way to its quarters and riding up to Captain Timokhin who was walking in front. (The regimental commander's face now that the inspection was happily over beamed with irrepressible delight.) "It's in the Tzar's service... it can't be helped... one is sometimes a bit hasty on parade... I am the first to apologize, you know me!... Marshal Kutuzov was very pleased!" And he held out his hand to the captain.

"Don't mention it, regimental commander, as if I'd be so bold!" replied Captain Timokhin, his nose growing redder as he gave a smile that showed where two front teeth were missing that had been knocked out by the butt end of a gun at Ismail.

"And tell Dolokhov that I won't forget him—he may be quite easy. And tell me, please—I've been meaning to ask—how is Dolokhov behaving

himself...”

“As far as the service goes, Dolokhov is quite punctilious, your excellency; but his character...” said Captain Timokhin.

“And what about his character?” asked the regimental commander.

“It’s different on different days,” answered the captain. “One day Dolokhov is sensible, well educated, and good-natured, and the next he’s a wild beast... In Poland, if you please, he nearly killed a Jew.”

“Oh, well, well!” remarked the regimental commander. “Still, one must have pity on a young man in misfortune. You know Dolokhov has important connections... Well, then, you just...”

“I will, your excellency,” said Captain Timokhin, showing by his smile that he understood his commander’s wish.

“Well, of course, of course!”

The regimental commander sought out Dolokhov in the ranks and, reining in his horse, said to him:

“After the next affair... epaulets.”

Dolokhov looked round but did not say anything, nor did the mocking smile on his lips change.

“Well, that’s all right,” continued the regimental commander. “A cup of vodka for the men from me,” he added so that the soldiers could hear. “I thank you all! God be praised!” and he rode past that company and overtook the next one.

“Well, he’s really a good fellow, one can serve under him,” said Captain Timokhin to the subaltern beside him.

“In a word, a hearty one...” said the subaltern, laughing (the regimental commander was nicknamed *King of Hearts*).

The cheerful mood of their officers after the inspection infected the soldiers. The company marched on gaily. The soldiers’ voices could be heard on every side.

“And they said General Kutuzov was blind of one eye?”

“And so he is! Quite blind!”

“No, friend, he is sharper-eyed than you are. Boots and leg bands... he noticed everything...”

“When he looked at my feet, friend... well, thinks I...”

“And that other one with him, the Austrian general, looked as if he were smeared with chalk—as white as flour! I suppose they polish him up as they do the guns.”

“I say!... Did General Kutuzov say when the battles are to begin? You were near him. Everybody said that Napoleon himself was at Braunau.”

“Napoleon himself!... Just listen to the fool, what he doesn’t know! The Prussians are up in arms now. The Austrians, you see, are putting them down. When they’ve been put down, the war with Napoleon will begin. And he says Napoleon is in Braunau! Shows you’re a fool. You’d better listen more carefully!”

“What devils these quartermasters are! See, the fifth company is turning into the village already... they will have their buckwheat cooked before we reach our quarters.”

“Give me a biscuit, you devil!”

“And did you give me tobacco yesterday? That’s just it, friend! Ah, well, never mind, here you are.”

“They might call a halt here or we’ll have to do another four miles without eating.”

“Wasn’t it fine when those Germans gave us lifts! You just sit still and are drawn along.”

“And here, friend, the people are quite beggarly. There they all seemed to be Poles—all under the Russian crown—but here they’re all regular Germans.”

“Singers to the front” came the captain’s order.

And from the different ranks, some twenty men ran to the front. A drummer, their leader, turned round facing the singers, and flourishing his arm, began a long-drawn-out soldiers' song, commencing with the words: "*Morning dawned, the sun was rising,*" and concluding: "*On then, brothers, on to glory, led by Father Kámski.*" This song had been composed in the Turkish campaign and is now being sung in Austria, the only change being that the words "Father Kámski" were replaced by "Father General Kutuzov."

Having jerked out these last words as soldiers do and waved his arms as if flinging something to the ground, the drummer—a lean, handsome soldier of forty—looked sternly at the singers and screwed up his eyes. Then having satisfied himself that all eyes were fixed on him, the drummer raised both arms as if carefully lifting some invisible but precious object above his head and, holding it there for some seconds, suddenly flung it down and began:

"*Oh, my bower, oh, my bower...!*"

"*Oh, my bower new...!*" chimed in twenty voices, and the castanet player, in spite of the burden of his equipment, rushed out to the front and, walking backward before the company, jerked his shoulders and flourished his castanets as if threatening someone. The soldiers, swinging their arms and keeping time spontaneously, marched with long steps. Behind the company, the sound of wheels, the creaking of springs, and the tramp of horses' hoofs were heard. General Kutuzov and his suite were returning to the town. General Kutuzov made a sign that the men should continue to march at ease, and he and all his suite showed pleasure at the sound of the singing and the sight of the dancing soldier and the gay and smartly marching men. In the second file from the right flank, beside which the carriage passed the company, a blue-eyed soldier involuntarily attracted notice. It was Dolokhov marching with particular grace and boldness in time to the song and looking at those driving past as if he pitied all who

were not at that moment marching with the company. The hussar cornet of General Kutuzov's suite who had mimicked the regimental commander fell back from the carriage and rode up to Dolokhov.

Corporal Zherkov had at one time, in St. Petersburg, belonged to the wild set led by Dolokhov. Zherkov had met Dolokhov abroad as a private and had not seen fit to recognize him. But now that General Kutuzov had spoken to the gentleman ranker, Corporal Zherkov addressed Dolokhov with the cordiality of an old friend.

"My dear fellow, how are you?" said Corporal Zherkov through the singing, making his horse keep pace with the company.

"How am I?" Dolokhov answered coldly. "I am as you see."

The lively song gave a special flavor to the tone of free and easy gaiety with which Corporal Zherkov spoke, and to the intentional coldness of Dolokhov's reply.

"And how do you get on with the officers?" inquired Corporal Zherkov.

"All right. They are good fellows. And how have you wriggled onto the staff?"

"I was attached; I'm on duty."

Both were silent.

"*She let the hawk fly upward from her wide right sleeve,*" went the song, arousing an involuntary sensation of courage and cheerfulness. Their conversation would probably have been different but for the effect of that song.

"Is it true that Austrians have been beaten?" asked Dolokhov.

"The devil only knows! They say so."

"I'm glad," answered Dolokhov briefly and clearly, as the song demanded.

"I say, come round some evening and we'll have a game of faro!" said Corporal Zherkov.

"Why, have you too much money?"

“Do come.”

“I can’t. I’ve sworn not to. I won’t drink and won’t play till I get reinstated.”

“Well, that’s only till the first engagement.”

“We shall see.”

They were again silent.

“Come if you need anything. One can at least be of use on the staff...”

Dolokhov smiled. “Don’t trouble. If I want anything, I won’t beg—I’ll take it!”

“Well, never mind; I only...”

“And I only...”

“Good-by.”

“Good health...”

“It’s a long, long way.

To my native land...”

Corporal Zherkov touched his horse with the spurs; it pranced excitedly from foot to foot uncertain with which to start, then settled down, galloped past the company, and overtook the carriage, still keeping time to the song.

On returning from the review, General Kutuzov took the Austrian general into his private room and, calling Andrei, asked for some papers relating to the condition of the troops on their arrival, and the letters that had come from Archduke Ferdinand, who was in command of the advanced army. Andrei came into the room with the required papers. General Kutuzov and the Austrian general were sitting at the table on which a plan was spread out.

“Ah!...” said General Kutuzov glancing at Andrei as if by this exclamation he was asking him to wait, and he went on with the conversation in French.

“All I can say, general,” said Kutuzov with a pleasant elegance of expression and intonation that obliged one to listen to each deliberately

spoken word. It was evident that General Kutuzov himself listened with pleasure to his own voice. “All I can say, general, is that if the matter depended on my personal wishes, the will of the Emperor of Austria would have been fulfilled long ago. I should long ago have joined the archduke. And believe me on my honor that to me personally, it would be a pleasure to hand over the supreme command of the army into the hands of a better informed and more skillful general—of whom Austria has so many—and to lay down all this heavy responsibility. But circumstances are sometimes too strong for us, general.”

And General Kutuzov smiled in a way that seemed to say, “You are quite at liberty not to believe me and I don’t even care whether you do or not, but you have no grounds for telling me so. And that is the whole point.”

The Austrian general looked dissatisfied but had no option but to reply in the same tone.

“On the contrary,” the Austrian general said, in a querulous and angry tone that contrasted with his flattering words, “on the contrary, your participation in the common action is highly valued by the Emperor of Austria, but we think the present delay is depriving the splendid Russian troops and their commander of the laurels they have been accustomed to winning in their battles,” the Austrian general concluded his evidently prearranged sentence.

General Kutuzov bowed with the same smile.

“But that is my conviction, and judging by the last letter with which His Highness Archduke Ferdinand has honored me, I imagine that the Austrian troops, under the direction of so skillful a leader as General Mack, have by now already gained a decisive victory and no longer need our aid,” said General Kutuzov.

The Austrian general frowned. Though there was no definite news of an Austrian defeat, there were many circumstances confirming the unfavorable

rumors that were afloat, and so General Kutuzov's suggestion of an Austrian victory sounded much like irony. But General Kutuzov went on blandly smiling with the same expression, which seemed to say that he had a right to suppose so. And, in fact, the last letter he had received from General Mack's army informed him of a victory and stated strategically the position of the army was very favorable.

"Give me that letter," said General Kutuzov turning to Andrei. "Please have a look at it"—and Kutuzov with an ironical smile about the corners of his mouth read to the Austrian general the following passage, in German, from Archduke Ferdinand's letter:

We have fully concentrated forces of nearly seventy thousand men with which to attack and defeat the enemy should he cross the Lech. Also, as we are masters of Ulm, we cannot be deprived of the advantage of commanding both sides of the Danube, so that should the enemy not cross the Lech, we can cross the Danube, throw ourselves on his line of communications, recross the river lower down, and frustrate his intention should he try to direct his whole force against our faithful ally. We shall therefore confidently await the moment when the Imperial Russian army will be fully equipped, and shall then, in conjunction with it, easily find a way to prepare for the enemy the fate he deserves.

General Kutuzov sighed deeply on finishing this paragraph and looked at the Austrian general mildly and attentively.

"But you know the wise maxim, advising one to expect the worst," said the Austrian general, evidently wishing to have done with jests and to come to business. He involuntarily looked round at Andrei.

"Excuse me, general," interrupted General Kutuzov, also turning to Andrei. "Look here, Andrei, get from Aide-de-camp Kozlovski all the reports from our scouts. Here are two letters from Count Nostitz and here is one from Archduke Ferdinand and here are these," he said, handing Andrei several papers, "make a neat memorandum in French out of all this,

showing all the news we have had of the movements of the Austrian army, and then give it to the Austrian general.”

Andrei bowed his head in token of having understood from the first not only what had been said but also what General Kutuzov would have liked to tell him. Andrei gathered up the papers and with a bow to both, stepped softly over the carpet and went out into the waiting room.

Though not much time had passed since Andrei had left Russia, he had changed greatly during that period. In the expression of his face, in his movements, in his walk, scarcely a trace was left of his former affected languor and indolence. Andrei now looked like a man who has time to think of the impression he makes on others but is occupied with agreeable and interesting work. His face expressed more satisfaction with himself and those around him, his smile and glance were brighter and more attractive.

General Kutuzov, whom Andrei had overtaken in Poland, had received him very kindly, promised not to forget him, distinguished him above the other adjutants, and had taken him to Vienna and given him the more serious commissions. From Vienna, General Kutuzov wrote to his old comrade, Andrei’s father, Baron Bolkonski.

“Andrei bids fair to become an officer distinguished by his industry, firmness, and expedition. I consider myself fortunate to have such a subordinate by me.”

On General Kutuzov’s staff, among his fellow officers, and in the army generally, Andrei had, as he had had in St. Petersburg society, two quite opposite reputations. Some, a minority, acknowledged him to be different from themselves and from everyone else, expected great things of him, listened to him, admired, and imitated him, and with them, Andrei was natural and pleasant. Others, the majority, disliked him and considered him conceited, cold, and disagreeable. But among these people, Andrei knew how to take his stand so that they respected and even feared him.

Coming out of General Kutuzov's room into the waiting room with the papers in his hand Andrei came up to his comrade, Aide-de-camp Kozlovski, who was sitting at the window with a book.

"Well, Andrei?" asked Aide-de-camp Kozlovski.

"I am ordered to write a memorandum explaining why we are not advancing."

"And why is it?"

Andrei shrugged his shoulders.

"Any news from General Mack?"

"No."

"If it were true that he has been beaten, news would have come."

"Probably," said Andrei moving toward the outer door.

But at that instant a tall Austrian general in a greatcoat, with the order of Mary Theresa on his neck and a black bandage round his head, who had evidently just arrived, entered quickly, slamming the door. Andrei stopped short.

"General Kutuzov?" said the newly arrived general speaking quickly with a harsh German accent, looking to both sides and advancing straight toward the inner door.

"General Kutuzov is engaged," said Aide-de-camp Kozlovski, going hurriedly up to the unknown general and blocking his way to the door. "Whom shall I announce?"

The unknown general looked disdainfully down at Kozlovski, who was rather short, as if surprised that anyone should not know him.

"General Kutuzov is engaged," repeated Aide-de-camp Kozlovski calmly.

The general's face clouded, and his lips quivered and trembled. He took out a notebook, hurriedly scribbled something in pencil, tore out the leaf, gave it to Aide-de-camp Kozlovski, stepped quickly to the window, and threw himself into a chair, gazing at those in the room as if asking, "Why do

they look at me?" Then he lifted his head and stretched his neck as if he intended to say something, but immediately, with affected indifference, began to hum to himself, producing a queer sound that immediately broke off. The door of the private room opened and General Kutuzov appeared in the doorway. The general with the bandaged head bent forward as though running away from some danger, and, making long, quick strides with his thin legs, went up to General Kutuzov.

"I am the unfortunate General Mack," he uttered in a broken voice.

General Kutuzov's face, as he stood in the open doorway, remained perfectly immobile for a few moments. Then wrinkles ran over his face like a wave and his forehead became smooth again, he bowed his head respectfully, closed his eyes, silently let General Mack enter his room before him, and closed the door himself behind him.

The report which had been circulated that the Austrians had been beaten and that the whole army had surrendered at Ulm proved to be correct. Within half an hour adjutants had been sent in various directions with orders which showed that the Russian troops, who had hitherto been inactive, would also soon have to meet the enemy.

Andrei was one of those rare staff officers whose chief interest lay in the general progress of the war. When Andrei saw General Mack and heard the details of his disaster he understood that half the campaign was lost, understood all the difficulties of the Russian army's position, and vividly imagined what awaited it and the part he would have to play. Involuntarily Andrei felt a joyful agitation at the thought of the humiliation of arrogant Austria and that in a week's time he might, perhaps, see and take part in the first Russian encounter with the French since Suvórov met them. He feared that Napoleon's genius might outweigh all the courage of the Russian troops, and at the same time could not admit the idea of his hero, Napoleon, being disgraced.

Excited and irritated by these thoughts Andrei went toward his room to write to his father, to whom he wrote every day. In the corridor he met Sergeant Nesvitski, with whom he shared a room, and the wag Corporal Zherkov; they were as usual laughing.

“Why are you so glum?” asked Sergeant Nesvitski noticing Andrei’s pale face and glittering eyes.

“There’s nothing to be gay about,” answered Andrei.

Just as Andrei met Sergeant Nesvitski and Corporal Zherkov, there came toward them from the other end of the corridor, Strauch, an Austrian general who was on General Kutuzov’s staff in charge of the provisioning of the Russian army, and the Austrian general who had arrived the previous evening. There was room enough in the wide corridor for the generals to pass the three officers quite easily, but Corporal Zherkov, pushing Sergeant Nesvitski aside with his arm, said in a breathless voice,

“The generals are coming!... they’re coming!... Stand aside, make way, please make way!”

The generals were passing by, looking as if they wished to avoid embarrassing attention. On the face of the wag Corporal Zherkov, there suddenly appeared a stupid smile of glee which he seemed unable to suppress.

“Your excellency,” said Corporal Zherkov in German, stepping forward and addressing the Austrian general, “I have the honor to congratulate you.”

Corporal Zherkov bowed his head and scraped first with one foot and then with the other, awkwardly, like a child at a dancing lesson.

The Austrian general looked at him severely but, seeing the seriousness of his stupid smile, could not but give him a moment’s attention. He screwed up his eyes showing that he was listening.

“I have the honor to congratulate you. General Mack has arrived, quite well, only a little bruised just here,” Corporal Zherkov added, pointing with a beaming smile to his head.

General Mack frowned, turned away, and went on.

“*Good God, what an idiot!*” said General Mack said angrily, after he had gone a few steps.

Sergeant Nesvitski with a laugh threw his arms around Andrei, but Andrei, turning still paler, pushed him away with an angry look and turned to Corporal Zherkov. The nervous irritation aroused by the appearance of General Mack, the news of his defeat, and the thought of what lay before the Russian army found vent in anger at Corporal Zherkov’s untimely jest.

“If you, Sergeant Nesvitski, choose to make a *buffoon* of yourself,” Andrei said sharply, with a slight trembling of the lower jaw, “I can’t prevent your doing so; but I warn you that if you *dare* to play the fool in my presence, I will teach you to behave yourself.”

Sergeant Nesvitski and Corporal Zherkov were so surprised by Andrei’s outburst that they gazed at Bolkonski silently with wide-open eyes.

“What’s the matter with my teasing? I only congratulated them,” said Corporal Zherkov.

“I am not jesting with you; please be silent!” cried Andrei, and taking Sergeant Nesvitski’s arm he left Corporal Zherkov, who did not know what to say.

“Come, what’s the matter, Andrei?” said Sergeant Nesvitski trying to soothe him as they walked away together.

“What’s the matter?” exclaimed Andrei standing still in his excitement. “Don’t you understand that either we are officers serving our Tzar and our country, rejoicing in the successes and grieving at the misfortunes of our common cause, or we are merely lackeys who care nothing for their master’s business? *Forty thousand men massacred and the army of our allies destroyed, and you find that a cause for jesting!*”,” Andrei said as if strengthening his views by this French sentence. “*It is all very well for that good-for-nothing fellow of whom you have made a friend, but not for you, not for you.*” Only a *hobbledehoy* could amuse himself in this way,” he

added in Russian—but pronouncing the word with a French accent—having noticed that Corporal Zherkov could still hear him.

Andrei waited a moment to see whether Corporal Zherkov would answer, but he turned and went out of the corridor.

The Pávlograd Hussars were stationed two miles from Braunau, Austria. The squadron in which Nicholas, the oldest son of Count and Countess Rostov, served as a cadet was quartered in the German village of Salzeneck. The best quarters in the village were assigned to Denisov, the squadron commander. Nicholas, ever since he had overtaken the regiment in Poland, had lived with him.

On October 11, the day when all was astir at headquarters over the news of General Mack's defeat, the camp life of the officers of this squadron was proceeding as usual. Denisov, who had been losing at cards all night, had not yet come home when Nicholas rode back early in the morning from a foraging expedition. Nicholas in his cadet uniform, with a jerk to his horse, rode up to the porch, swung his leg over the saddle with a supple youthful movement, stood for a moment in the stirrup as if loathe to part from his horse, and at last sprang down and called to his orderly.

"Ah, Bondarenko, dear friend!" said Nicholas to the hussar who rushed up headlong to the horse. "Walk him up and down, my dear fellow," he continued, with that gay brotherly cordiality that goodhearted young people show to everyone when they are happy.

"Yes, your excellency," answered Bondarenko gaily, tossing his head.

"Mind, walk him up and down well!"

Another hussar also rushed toward the horse, but Bondarenko had already thrown the reins of the snaffle bridle over the horse's head. It was evident that Nicholas was liberal with his tips and that it paid to serve him. Nicholas patted the horse's neck and then his flank, and lingered for a moment.

“Splendid! What a horse he will be!” Nicholas thought with a smile, and holding up his saber, his spurs jingling, he ran up the steps of the porch. His German landlord, who in a waistcoat and a pointed cap, pitchfork in hand, was clearing manure from the cowhouse, looked out, and his face immediately brightened on seeing Nicholas. “*A very good morning! A very good morning!*” he said winking with a merry smile, evidently pleased to greet the landlord.

“*Busy already?*” said Nicholas with the same gay brotherly smile which did not leave his eager face. “*Hurrah for the Austrians! Hurrah for the Russians! Hurrah for the Tzar!*” said Nicholas, quoting words often repeated by the German landlord.

The German landlord laughed, came out of the cowshed, pulled off his cap, and waving it above his head cried:

“*And hurrah for the whole world!*”

Nicholas waved his cap above his head like the German landlord and cried laughing, “*And hurrah for the whole world!*” Though neither the German cleaning his cowshed nor Nicholas back with his platoon from foraging for hay had any reason for rejoicing, they looked at each other with joyful delight and brotherly love, wagged their heads in token of their mutual affection, and parted smiling, the German landlord returning to his cowshed and Nicholas going to the cottage he occupied with Denisov.

“What about your master?” Nicholas asked Lavrushka, Denisov’s orderly, whom all the regiment knew for a rogue.

“Denisov hasn’t been in since the evening. Must have been losing,” answered Lavrushka. “I know by now that if he wins he comes back early to brag about it, but if he stays out till morning it means he’s lost and will come back in a rage. Will you have coffee?”

“Yes, bring some.”

Ten minutes later Lavrushka brought the coffee. “Denisov’s coming!” said he. “Now for trouble!” Nicholas looked out of the window and saw

Denisov coming home. He was a small man with a red face, sparkling black eyes, and a black tousled mustache and hair. He wore an unfastened cloak, wide breeches hanging down in creases, and a crumpled shako on the back of his head. He came up to the porch gloomily, hanging his head.

“Lavwúska!” Denisov shouted loudly and angrily, “take it off, blockhead!”

“Well, I am taking it off,” replied Lavrúshka’s voice.

“Ah, you’re up already,” said Denisov, entering the room.

“Long ago,” answered Nicholas, “I have already been for the hay, and have seen Fräulein Mathilde.”

“Weally! And I’ve been losing, bwother. I lost yesterday like a damned fool!” cried Denisov, not pronouncing his *r*’s, either because he had a lisp or because he was imitating a French accent. “Such ill luck! Such ill luck. As soon as you left, it began and went on. Hullo there! Tea!”

Puckering up his face though smiling, and showing his short strong teeth, Denisov began with stubby fingers of both hands to ruffle up his thick tangled black hair.

“And what devil made me go to that wat?” (an officer nicknamed “the rat”) he said, rubbing his forehead and whole face with both hands. “Just fancy, he didn’t let me win a single cahd, not one cahd.”

Denisov took the lighted pipe that was offered to him, gripped it in his fist, and tapped it on the floor, making the sparks fly, while he continued to shout.

“He lets one win the singles and collahs it as soon as one doubles it; gives the singles and snatches the doubles!”

Denisov scattered the burning tobacco, smashed the pipe, and threw it away. Then he remained silent for a while, and all at once looked cheerfully with his glittering, black eyes at Nicholas.

“If at least we had some women here; but there’s nothing foh one to do but dwink. If we could only get to fighting soon. Hullo, who’s there?” he

said, turning to the door as he heard a tread of heavy boots and the clinking of spurs that came to a stop and a respectful cough.

“The squadron quartermaster!” said Lavrushka.

Denisov’s face puckered still more.

“Wetted!” he muttered, throwing down a purse with some gold in it. “Nicholas, deah fellow, just see how much there is left and shove the purse undah the pillow,” he said and went out to the quartermaster.

Nicholas took the money and, mechanically arranging the old and new coins in separate piles began counting them.

“Ah! Lieutenant Telyánin! How d’ye do? They plucked me last night,” came Denisov’s voice from the next room.

“Where? At Bykov’s, at the rat’s... I knew it,” replied a piping voice, and Lieutenant Telyánin, a small officer of the same squadron, entered the room.

Nicholas thrust the purse under the pillow and shook the damp little hand which was offered him. Lieutenant Telyánin for some reason had been transferred from the Guards just before this campaign. He behaved very well in the regiment but was not liked; Nicholas especially detested him and was unable to overcome or conceal his groundless antipathy to the man.

“Well, young hussar, how is my Rook behaving?” Lieutenant Telyánin asked. (Rook was a young horse Lieutenant Telyánin had sold to Nicholas.)

Lieutenant Telyánin never looked the man he was speaking to straight in the face; his eyes continually wandered from one object to another.

“I saw you riding this morning...” Lieutenant Telyánin added.

“Oh, he’s all right, a good horse,” answered Nicholas, though the horse for which he had paid seven hundred rubbles was not worth half that sum. “He’s begun to go a little lame on the left foreleg,” he added.

“The hoof’s cracked! That’s nothing. I’ll teach you what to do and show you what kind of rivet to use.”

“Yes, please do,” said Nicholas.

“I’ll show you, I’ll show you! It’s not a secret. And it’s a horse you’ll thank me for.”

“Then I’ll have it brought around,” said Nicholas wishing to avoid Lieutenant Telyánin, and he went out to give the order.

In the passage Denisov, with a pipe, was squatting on the threshold facing the quartermaster who was reporting to him. On seeing Nicholas, Denisov screwed up his face and pointing over his shoulder with his thumb to the room where Lieutenant Telyánin was sitting, he frowned and gave a shudder of disgust.

“Ugh! I don’t like that fellow,” Denisov said, regardless of the quartermaster’s presence.

Nicholas shrugged his shoulders as much as to say: “Nor do I, but what’s one to do?” and, having given his order, he returned to Lieutenant Telyánin.

Lieutenant Telyánin was sitting in the same indolent pose in which Nicholas had left him, rubbing his small white hands.

“Well there certainly are disgusting people,” thought Nicholas as he entered.

“Have you told them to bring the horse?” asked Lieutenant Telyánin, getting up and looking carelessly about him.

“I have.”

“Let us go ourselves. I only came round to ask Denisov about yesterday’s order. Have you got it, Denisov?”

“Not yet. But where are you off to?”

“I want to teach this young man how to shoe a horse,” said Lieutenant Telyánin.

They went through the porch and into the stable. Lieutenant Telyánin explained to Nicholas how to rivet the hoof and went away to his own quarters.

When Nicholas went back there was a bottle of vodka and a sausage on the table. Denisov was sitting there scratching with his pen on a sheet of paper. He looked gloomily into Nicholas's face and said: "I am writing to her."

He leaned his elbows on the table with his pen in his hand and, evidently glad of a chance to say quicker in words what he wanted to write, told Nicholas the contents of his letter.

"You see, my friend," he said, "we sleep when we don't love. We are children of the dust... but one falls in love and one is a God, one is pure as on the first day of creation... Who's that now? Send him to the devil, I'm busy!" he shouted to Lavrushka, who went up to him, not in the least abashed.

"Who should it be? You yourself told him to come. It's the quartermaster for the money."

Denisov frowned and was about to shout some reply but stopped.

"Wretched business," he muttered to himself. "How much is left in the purse?" he asked, turning to Nicholas.

"Seven new and three old imperials."

"Oh, it's wretched! Well, what are you standing there for, you scoundrel? Call the quartermaster," he shouted to Lavrushka.

"Please, Denisov, let me lend you some: I have some, you know," said Nicholas, blushing.

"Don't like bowwowling from my own fellows, I don't," growled Denisov.

"But if you won't accept money from me like a comrade, you will offend me. Really I have some," Nicholas repeated.

"No, I tell you."

And Denisov went to the bed to get the purse from under the pillow.

"Where have you put it, Nicholas?"

"Under the lower pillow."

“It’s not there.”

Denisov threw both pillows on the floor. The purse was not there.

“That’s a miwacle.”

“Wait, haven’t you dropped it?” said Nicholas, picking up the pillows one at a time and shaking them.

Denisov pulled off the quilt and shook it. The purse was not there.

“Dear me, can I have forgotten? No, I remember thinking that you kept it under your head like a treasure,” said Nicholas. “I put it just here. Where is it?” he asked, turning to Lavrúshka.

“I haven’t been in the room. It must be where you put it.”

“But it isn’t?...”

“You’re always like that; you throw a thing down anywhere and forget it. Feel in your pockets.”

“No, if I hadn’t thought of it being a treasure,” said Nicholas, “but I remember putting it there.”

Lavrúshka turned all the bedding over, looked under the bed and under the table, searched everywhere, and stood still in the middle of the room. Denisov silently watched Lavrúshka’s movements, and when Lavrúshka threw up his arms in surprise saying it was nowhere to be found Denisov glanced at Nicholas.

“Nicholas, you’ve not been playing schoolboy twicks...”

Nicholas felt Denisov’s gaze fixed on him, raised his eyes, and instantly dropped them again. All the blood which had seemed congested somewhere below his throat rushed to his face and eyes. He could not draw breath.

“And there hasn’t been anyone in the room except Lieutenant Telyánin and yourselves. It must be here somewhere,” said Lavrúshka.

“Now then, you devil’s puppet, look alive and hunt for it!” shouted Denisov, suddenly, turning purple and rushing at the man with a threatening gesture. “If the purse isn’t found I’ll flog you, I’ll flog you all.”

Nicholas, his eyes avoiding Denisov, began buttoning his coat, buckled on his saber and put on his cap.

“I must have that purse, I tell you,” shouted Denisov, shaking his orderly by the shoulders and knocking him against the wall.

“Denisov, let him alone, I know who has taken it,” said Nicholas, going toward the door without raising his eyes. Denisov paused, thought a moment, and, evidently understanding what Nicholas hinted at, seized his arm.

“Nonsense!” Denisov cried, and the veins on his forehead and neck stood out like cords. “You are mad, I tell you. I won’t allow it. The purse is here! I’ll flay this scoundrel alive, and it will be found.”

“I know who has taken it,” repeated Nicholas in an unsteady voice and went to the door.

“And I tell you, don’t you dare to do it!” shouted Denisov, rushing at the cadet to restrain him.

But Nicholas pulled away his arm and, with as much anger as though Denisov were his worst enemy, firmly fixed his eyes directly on his face.

“Do you understand what you’re saying?” Denisov said in a trembling voice. “There was no one else in the room except myself. So that if it is not so, then...”

Denisov could not finish and ran out of the room.

“Ah, may the devil take you and everybody,” were the last words Nicholas heard.

Nicholas went to Lieutenant Telyánin’s quarters.

“The master is not in, he’s gone to headquarters,” said Lieutenant Telyánin’s orderly. “Has something happened?” he added, surprised at the cadet’s troubled face.

“No, nothing.”

“You’ve only just missed him,” said the orderly.

The headquarters were situated two miles away from Salzeneck, and Nicholas, without returning home, took a horse and rode there. There was an inn in the village in which the officers stayed. Nicholas rode up to it and saw Lieutenant Telyánin's horse at the porch.

In the second room of the inn, Lieutenant Telyánin was sitting over a dish of sausages and a bottle of wine.

"Ah, you've come here too, Nicholas!" he said, smiling and raising his eyebrows.

"Yes," said Nicholas as if it cost him a great deal to utter the word, and he sat down at the nearest table.

Both were silent. There were two Germans and a Russian officer in the room. No one spoke and the only sounds heard were the clatter of knives and the munching of the lieutenant.

When Lieutenant Telyánin had finished his lunch he took out of his pocket a double purse and, drawing its rings aside with his small, white, turned-up fingers, drew out a gold imperial, and lifting his eyebrows gave it to the waiter.

"Please be quick," he said.

The coin was a new one. Nicholas rose and went up to Lieutenant Telyánin.

"Allow me to look at your purse," Nicholas said in a low, almost inaudible, voice.

With shifting eyes but eyebrows still raised, Lieutenant Telyánin handed him the purse.

"Yes, it's a nice purse. Yes, yes," he said, growing suddenly pale, and added, "Look at it, Nicholas."

Nicholas took the purse in his hand, examined it and the money in it, and looked at Lieutenant Telyánin. The lieutenant was looking about in his usual way and suddenly seemed to grow very merry.

“If we get to Vienna I’ll get rid of it there but in these wretched little towns there’s nowhere to spend it,” said he. “Well, let me have it, Nicholas, I’m going.”

Nicholas did not speak.

“And you? Are you going to have lunch too? They feed you quite decently here,” continued Lieutenant Telyánin. “Now then, let me have it.”

Lieutenant Telyánin stretched out his hand to take hold of the purse. Nicholas let go of it. Lieutenant Telyánin took the purse and began carelessly slipping it into the pocket of his riding breeches, with his eyebrows lifted and his mouth slightly open, as if to say, “Yes, yes, I am putting my purse in my pocket and that’s quite simple and is no one else’s business.”

“Well, Nicholas?” he said with a sigh, and from under his lifted brows, he glanced into Nicholas’s eyes.

Some flash as of an electric spark shot from Lieutenant Telyánin’s eyes to Nicholas’s and back, and back again and again in an instant.

“Come here,” said Nicholas, catching hold of Lieutenant Telyánin’s arm and almost dragging him to the window. “That money is Denisov’s; you took it...” he whispered just above Lieutenant Telyánin’s ear.

“What? What? How dare you? What?” said Lieutenant Telyánin.

But these words came like a piteous, despairing cry and an entreaty for pardon. As soon as Nicholas heard them, an enormous load of doubt fell from him. Nicholas was glad, and at the same instant began to pity the miserable man who stood before him, but the task he had begun had to be completed.

“Heaven only knows what the people here may imagine,” muttered Lieutenant Telyánin, taking up his cap and moving toward a small empty room. “We must have an explanation...”

“I know it and shall prove it,” said Nicholas.

“I...”

Every muscle of Lieutenant Telyánin's pale, terrified face began to quiver, his eyes still shifted from side to side but with a downward look not rising to Nicholas's face, and his sobs were audible.

"Nicholas!... Don't ruin a young fellow... here is this wretched money, take it..." Lieutenant Telyánin threw it on the table. "I have an old father and mother!..."

Nicholas took the money, avoiding Lieutenant Telyánin's eyes, and went out of the room without a word. But at the door, he stopped and then retraced his steps. "Oh, God," he said with tears in his eyes, "how could you do it?"

"Nicholas..." said Lieutenant Telyánin drawing nearer to him.

"Don't touch me," said Nicholas, drawing back. "If you need it, take the money," and he threw the purse to him and ran out of the inn.

That same evening there was an animated discussion among the squadron's officers in Denisov's quarters.

"And I tell you, Nicholas, that you must apologize to the colonel!" said a tall, grizzly-haired staff captain, with enormous mustaches and many wrinkles on his large features, to Nicholas who was crimson with excitement.

The staff captain had twice been reduced to the ranks for affairs of honor and had twice regained his commission.

"I will allow no one to call me a liar!" cried Nicholas. "Lieutenant Telyánin told me I lied, and I told him he lied. And there it rests. The colonel may keep me on duty every day or may place me under arrest, but no one can make me apologize, because if he, as commander of this regiment, thinks it beneath his dignity to give me satisfaction, then..."

"You just wait a moment, my dear fellow, and listen," interrupted the staff captain in his deep bass, calmly stroking his long mustache. "You tell the colonel in the presence of other officers that a Lieutenant Telyánin has stolen..."

“I’m not to blame that the conversation began in the presence of other officers. Perhaps I ought not to have spoken before them, but I am not a diplomatist. That’s why I joined the hussars, thinking that here one would not need finesse; the colonel tells me that I am lying—so let him give me satisfaction...”

“That’s all right. No one thinks you are a coward, but that’s not the point. Ask Denisov whether it is not out of the question for a cadet to demand satisfaction of his regimental commander?”

Denisov sat gloomily biting his mustache and listening to the conversation, evidently with no wish to take part in it. He answered the staff captain’s question with a disapproving shake of his head.

“You speak to the colonel about this nasty business before other officers,” continued the staff captain, “and Colonel Bogdánich” (the colonel was called Colonel Bogdánich) “shuts you up.”

“The colonel did not shut me up, he said I was telling an untruth.”

“Well, have it so, and you talked a lot of nonsense to him and must apologize.”

“Not on any account!” exclaimed Nicholas.

“I did not expect this of you,” said the staff captain seriously and severely. “You don’t wish to apologize, but, man, it’s not only to him but to the whole regiment—all of us—you’re to blame all around. The case is this: you ought to have thought the matter over and taken advice; but no, you go and blurt it all straight out before the officers. Now, what was the colonel to do? Has Lieutenant Telyánin tried and disgrace the whole regiment? Disgrace the whole regiment because of one scoundrel? Is that how you look at it? We don’t see it like that. And Colonel Bogdánich was a brick: he told you you were saying what was not true. It’s not pleasant, but what’s to be done, my dear fellow? You landed yourself in it. And now, when one wants to smooth the thing over, some conceit prevents your apologizing, and you wish to make the whole affair public. You are offended at being put

on duty a bit, but why not apologize to an old and honorable officer? Whatever Colonel Bogdánich may be, anyway he is an honorable and brave old colonel! You're quick at taking offense, but you don't mind disgracing the whole regiment!" The staff captain's voice began to tremble. "You have been in the regiment next to no time, Nicholas, you're here today and tomorrow you'll be appointed adjutant somewhere and can snap your fingers when it is said 'There are thieves among the Pávlograd officers!' But it's not all the same to us! Am I not right, Denisov? It's not the same!"

Denisov remained silent and did not move, but occasionally looked with his glittering black eyes at Nicholas.

"You value your own pride and don't wish to apologize," continued the staff captain, "but we old fellows, who have grown up in and, God willing, are going to die in the regiment, we prize the honor of the regiment, and Colonel Bogdánich knows it. Oh, we do prize it, old fellow! And all this is not right, it's not right! You may take offense or not but I always stick to mother truth. It's not right!"

And the staff captain rose and turned away from Nicholas.

"That's twue, devil take it!" shouted Denisov, jumping up. "Now then, Nicholas, now then!"

Nicholas, growing red and pale alternately, looked first at one officer and then at the other.

"No, gentlemen, no... you mustn't think... I quite understand. You're wrong to think that of me... I... for me... for the honor of the regiment I'd... Ah well, I'll show that in action, and for me the honor of the flag... Well, never mind, it's true I'm to blame, to blame all around. Well, what else do you want?..."

"Come, that's right, Nicholas!" cried the staff captain, turning round and clapping Nicholas on the shoulder with his big hand.

"I tell you," shouted Denisov, "Nicholas is a fine fellow."

“That’s better, Nicholas,” said the staff captain, beginning to address Nicholas by his title, as if in recognition of his confession. “Go and apologize, Nicholas. Yes, go!”

“Gentlemen, I’ll do anything. No one shall hear a word from me,” said Nicholas in an imploring voice, “but I can’t apologize, by God, I can’t, do what you will! How can I go and apologize like a little boy asking forgiveness?”

Denisov began to laugh.

“It’ll be worse for you. Colonel Bogdánich is vindictive and you’ll pay for your obstinacy,” said the staff captain.

“No, on my word it’s not obstinacy! I can’t describe the feeling. I can’t...”

“Well, it’s as you like,” said the staff captain. “And what has become of that scoundrel, Lieutenant Telyánin?” he asked Denisov.

“He has weported himself sick, he’s to be stwuck off the list tomowwow,” muttered Denisov.

“It is an illness, there’s no other way of explaining it,” said the staff captain.

“Illness or not, Lieutenant Telyánin had better not cwoss my path. I’d kill him!” shouted Denisov in a bloodthirsty tone.

Just then Corporal Zherkov entered the room.

“What brings you here?” cried the officers turning to the newcomer.

“We’re to go into action, gentlemen! General Mack has surrendered with his whole army.”

“It’s not true!”

“I’ve seen him myself!”

“What? Saw the real General Mack? With hands and feet?”

“Into action! Into action! Bring him a bottle for such news! But how did you come here?”

“I’ve been sent back to the regiment all on account of that devil, General Mack. An Austrian general complained about me. I congratulated him on General Mack’s arrival... What’s the matter, Nicholas? You look as if you’d just come out of a hot bath.”

“Oh, my dear fellow, we’re in such a stew here these last two days.”

The regimental adjutant came in and confirmed the news brought by Corporal Zherkov. They were under orders to advance the next day.

“We’re going into action, gentlemen!”

“Well, thank God! We’ve been sitting here too long!”

General Kutuzov fell back toward Vienna, destroying behind him the bridges over the rivers Inn (at Braunau) and Traun (near Linz). On October 23, the Russian troops were crossing the river Enns. At midday, the Russian baggage train, the artillery, and columns of troops were defiling the town of Enns on both sides of the bridge.

It was a warm, rainy, autumnal day. The wide expanse that opened out before the heights on which the Russian batteries stood guarding the bridge was at times veiled by a diaphanous curtain of slanting rain, and then, suddenly spread out in the sunlight, far-distant objects could be clearly seen glittering as though freshly varnished. Down below, the little town could be seen with its white, red-roofed houses, its cathedral, and its bridge, on both sides of which streamed jostling masses of Russian troops. At the bend of the Danube, vessels, an island, and a castle with a park surrounded by the waters of the confluence of the Enns and the Danube became visible, and the rocky left bank of the Danube covered with pine forests, with a mystic background of green treetops and bluish gorges. The turrets of a convent stood out beyond a wild virgin pine forest, and far away on the other side of the Enns, the enemy’s horse patrols could be discerned.

Among the field guns on the brow of the hill, the general in command of the rearguard stood with a staff officer, scanning the country through his field glass. A little behind them Sergeant Nesvitski, who had been sent to

the rearguard by General Kutuzov, was sitting on the trail of a gun carriage. A Cossack who accompanied him had handed him a knapsack and a flask, and Sergeant Nesvitski was treating some officers to pies and real schnaps. The officers gladly gathered around him, some on their knees, some squatting in Turkish fashion on the wet grass.

“Yes, the Austrian Baron who built that castle was no fool. It’s a fine place! Why are you not eating anything, gentlemen?” Sergeant Nesvitski was saying.

“Thank you very much, Sergeant Nesvitski,” answered one of the officers, pleased to be talking to a staff officer of such importance. “It’s a lovely place! We passed close to the park and saw two deer... and what a splendid house!”

“Look, Sergeant Nesvitski,” said another, who would have dearly liked to take another pie but felt shy, and therefore pretended to be examining the countryside—“See, our infantrymen have already got there. Look there in the meadow behind the village, three of them are dragging something. They’ll ransack that castle,” he remarked with evident approval.

“So they will,” said Sergeant Nesvitski. “No, but what I should like,” added he, munching a pie in his moist-lipped handsome mouth, “would be to slip in over there.”

He pointed with a smile to a turreted nunnery, and his eyes narrowed and gleamed.

“That would be fine, gentlemen!”

The officers laughed.

“Just to flutter the nuns a bit. They say there are Italian girls among them. On my word, I’d give five years of my life for it!”

“They must be feeling dull, too,” said one of the bolder officers, laughing.

Meanwhile, the staff officer standing in front pointed out something to the general, who looked through his field glass.

“Yes, so it is, so it is,” said the general angrily, lowering the field glass and shrugging his shoulders, “so it is! They’ll be fired on at the crossing. And why are they dawdling there?”

On the opposite side, the enemy could be seen by the naked eye, and from their battery, a milk-white cloud arose. Then came the distant report of a shot, and our troops could be seen hurrying to the crossing.

Sergeant Nesvitski rose, puffing, and went up to the general, smiling.

“Would not the general like a little refreshment?” he said.

“It’s a bad business,” said the general without answering him, “our men have been wasting time.”

“Hadn’t I better ride over, your excellency?” asked Sergeant Nesvitski.

“Yes, please do,” answered the general, and he repeated the order that had already once been given in detail: “and tell the hussars that they are to cross last and to fire the bridge as I ordered, and the inflammable material on the bridge must be reinspected.”

“Very good,” answered Sergeant Nesvitski.

Sergeant Nesvitski called his aide with his horse, told his aide to put away the knapsack and flask, and swung his heavy person easily into the saddle.

“I’ll really call in on the nuns,” Sergeant Nesvitski said to the officers who watched him smilingly, and he rode off by the winding path down the hill.

“Now then, let’s see how far it will carry, Sergeant Nesvitski. Just try!” said the general, turning to an artillery officer. “Have a little fun to pass the time.”

“Crew, to your guns!” commanded the artillery officer.

In a moment the men came running gaily from their campfires and began loading.

“One!” came the command from the artillery officer.

Gunner number one jumped briskly aside. The gun rang out with a deafening metallic roar, and a whistling grenade flew above the heads of our troops below the hill and fell far short of the enemy, a little smoke showing the spot where it burst.

The faces of officers and men brightened up at the sound. Everyone got up and began watching the movements of our troops below, as plainly visible as if but a stone's throw away, and the movements of the approaching enemy farther off. At the same instant, the sun came fully out from behind the clouds, and the clear sound of the solitary shot and the brilliance of the bright sunshine merged in a single joyous and spirited impression.

Two of the enemy's shots had already flown across the bridge, where there was a crush. Halfway across stood Sergeant Nesvitski, who had alighted from his horse and whose big body was jammed against the railings. He looked back laughing to his aide who stood a few steps behind him holding two horses by their bridles. Each time Sergeant Nesvitski tried to move on, soldiers and carts pushed him back again and pressed him against the railings, and all he could do was to smile.

"What a fine fellow you are, friend!" said the aide to a convoy soldier with a wagon, who was pressing onto the infantrymen who were crowded together close to his wheels and his horses. "What a fellow! You can't wait a moment! Don't you see the general wants to pass?" (Sergeant Nesvitski was not a general, but his aide thought that the rank might get the convoy soldiers to move.)

But the convoyman took no notice of the word "general" and shouted at the soldiers who were blocking his way. "Hi there, boys! Keep to the left! Wait a bit." But the soldiers, crowded together shoulder to shoulder, their bayonets interlocking, moved over the bridge in a dense mass. Looking down over the rails Sergeant Nesvitski saw the rapid, noisy little waves of the Enns, which rippling and eddying around the piles of the bridge chased

each other along. Looking on the bridge he saw equally uniform living waves of soldiers, shoulder buckles, covered shakos, knapsacks, bayonets, long muskets, and, under the shakos, faces with broad cheekbones, sunken cheeks, listless tired expressions, and feet that moved through the sticky mud that covered the planks of the bridge. Sometimes through the monotonous waves of men, like a fleck of white foam on the waves of the Enns, an officer, in a cloak and with a type of face different from that of the men, squeezed his way along; sometimes like a chip of wood whirling in the river, a hussar on foot, an orderly, or a townsman was carried through the waves of infantry; and sometimes like a log floating down the river, an officers' or company's baggage wagon, piled high, leather covered, and hemmed in on all sides, moved across the bridge.

"It's as if a dam had burst," said the aide hopelessly. "Are there many more of you to come?"

"A million all but one!" replied a waggish soldier in a torn coat, with a wink, and passed on followed by another, an old man.

"If *he*" (*he* meant the enemy) "begins popping at the bridge now," said the old soldier dismally to a comrade, "you'll forget to scratch yourself."

That soldier passed on, and after him came another sitting on a cart.

"Where the devil have the leg bands been shoved to?" said an orderly, running behind the cart and fumbling in the back of it.

And he also passed on with the wagon. Then came some merry soldiers who had evidently been drinking.

"And then, old fellow, he gives him one in the teeth with the butt end of his gun..." a soldier whose greatcoat was well tucked up said gaily, with a wide swing of his arm.

"Yes, the ham was just delicious..." answered another with a loud laugh. And they, too, passed on, so that Sergeant Nesvitski did not learn who had been struck on the teeth, or what the ham had to do with it.

“Bah! How they scurry. He just sends a ball and they think they’ll all be killed,” a sergeant was saying angrily and reproachfully.

“As it flies past me, Daddy, the ball I mean,” said a young soldier with an enormous mouth, hardly refraining from laughing, “I felt like dying of fright. I did, ‘pon my word, I got that frightened!” said he, as if bragging of having been frightened.

That one also passed. Then followed a cart unlike any that had gone before. It was a German cart with a pair of horses led by a German and seemed loaded with a whole houseful of effects. A fine brindled cow with a large udder was attached to the cart behind. A woman with an unweaned baby, an old woman, and a healthy German girl with bright red cheeks were sitting on some feather beds. Evidently, these fugitives were allowed to pass by special permission. The eyes of all the soldiers turned toward the women, and while the vehicle was passing at foot pace all the soldiers’ remarks related to the two young ones. Every face bore almost the same smile, expressing unseemly thoughts about the women.

“Just see, the German sausage is making tracks, too!”

“Sell me the missis,” said another soldier, addressing the German, who, angry and frightened, strode energetically along with downcast eyes.

“See how smart she’s made herself! Oh, the devils!”

“There, Fedótov, you should be quartered on them!”

“I have seen as much before now, mate!”

“Where are you going?” asked an infantry officer who was eating an apple, also half smiling as he looked at the handsome girl.

The German closed his eyes, signifying that he did not understand.

“Take it if you like,” said the officer, giving the girl an apple.

The girl smiled and took it. Sergeant Nesvitski like the rest of the men on the bridge did not take his eyes off the women till they had passed. When they had gone by, the same stream of soldiers followed, with the same kind of talk, and at last all stopped. As often happens, the horses of a

convoy wagon became restive at the end of the bridge, and the whole crowd had to wait.

“And why are they stopping? There’s no proper order!” said the soldiers. “Where are you shoving to? Devil take you! Can’t you wait? It’ll be worse if he fires the bridge. See, here’s an officer jammed in too”—different voices were saying in the crowd, as the men looked at one another, and all pressed toward the exit from the bridge.

Looking down at the waters of the Enns under the bridge, Sergeant Nesvitski suddenly heard a sound new to him, of something swiftly approaching... something big, that splashed into the water.

“Just see where it carries to!” a soldier nearby said sternly, looking round at the sound.

“Encouraging us to get along quicker,” said another uneasily.

The crowd moved on again. Sergeant Nesvitski realized that it was a cannonball.

“Hey, Cossack, my horse!” he said. “Now, then, you there! get out of the way! Make way!”

With great difficulty he managed to get to his horse, and shouting continually he moved on. The soldiers squeezed themselves to make way for him but again pressed on him so that they jammed his leg, and those nearest him were not to blame for they were themselves pressed still harder from behind.

“Sergeant Nesvitski, Sergeant Nesvitski! You numskull!” came a hoarse voice from behind him.

Sergeant Nesvitski looked round and saw, some fifteen paces away but separated by the living mass of moving infantry, Denisov, red and shaggy, with his cap on the back of his black head and a cloak hanging jauntily over his shoulder.

“Tell these devils, these fiends, to let me pass!” shouted Denisov evidently in a fit of rage, his coal-black eyes with their bloodshot whites

glittering and rolling as he waved his sheathed saber in a small bare hand as red as his face.

“Ah, Denisov!” joyfully replied Sergeant Nesvitski. “What’s up with you?”

“The squadwon can’t pass,” shouted Denisov, showing his white teeth fiercely and spurring his black thoroughbred Arab, which twitched its ears as the bayonets touched it, and snorted, spurting white foam from his bit, tramping the planks of the bridge with his hoofs, and apparently ready to jump over the railings had his rider let him. “What is this? They’re like sheep! Just like sheep! Out of the way!... Let us pass!... Stop there, you devil with the cart! I’ll hack you with my saber!” he shouted, actually drawing his saber from its scabbard and flourishing it.

The soldiers crowded against one another with terrified faces, and Denisov joined Sergeant Nesvitski.

“How’s it you’re not drunk today?” said Sergeant Nesvitski when the other had ridden up to him.

“They don’t even give one time to dwink!” answered Denisov. “They keep dwagging the wegiment to and fwo all day. If they mean to fight, let’s fight. But the devil knows what this is.”

“What a dandy you are today!” said Sergeant Nesvitski, looking at Denisov’s new cloak and saddlecloth.

Denisov smiled, took out of his sabretache a handkerchief that diffused a smell of perfume, and put it to Sergeant Nesvitski’s nose.

“Of course. I’m going into action! I’ve shaved, bwushed my teeth, and scented myself.”

The imposing figure of Sergeant Nesvitski followed by his aide, and the determination of Denisov who flourished his sword and shouted frantically had such an effect that they managed to squeeze through to the farther side of the bridge and stopped the infantry. Beside the bridge Sergeant Nesvitski

found the colonel to whom he had to deliver the order, and having done this he rode back.

Having cleared the way Denisov stopped at the end of the bridge. Carelessly holding in his stallion that was neighing and pawing the ground, eager to rejoin its fellows, he watched his squadron draw nearer. Then the clang of hoofs, as of several horses galloping, resounded on the planks of the bridge, and the squadron, officers in front and men four abreast, spread across the bridge and began to emerge on his side of it.

The infantry who had been stopped crowded near the bridge in the trampled mud and gazed with that particular feeling of ill-will, estrangement, and ridicule with which troops of different arms usually encounter one another at the clean, smart hussars who moved past them in regular order.

“Smart lads! Only fit for a fair!” said one.

“What good are they? They’re led about just for show!” remarked another.

“Don’t kick up the dust, you infantry!” jested a hussar whose prancing horse had splashed mud over some foot soldiers.

“I’d like to put you on a two days march with a knapsack! Your fine cords would soon get a bit rubbed,” said an infantryman, wiping the mud off his face with his sleeve. “Perched up there, you’re more like a bird than a man.”

“There now, Zíkin, they ought to put you on a horse. You’d look fine,” said a corporal, chaffing a thin little soldier who bent under the weight of his knapsack.

“Take a stick between your legs, that’ll suit you for a horse!” the hussar shouted back.

The last of the infantry hurriedly crossed the bridge, squeezing together as they approached it as if passing through a funnel. At last, the baggage wagons had all crossed, the crush was less, and the last battalion came onto

the bridge. Only Denisov's squadron of hussars remained on the farther side of the bridge facing the enemy, who could be seen from the hill on the opposite bank but was not yet visible from the bridge, for the horizon as seen from the valley through which the river flowed was formed by the rising ground only half a mile away. At the foot of the hill lay wasteland over which a few groups of our Cossack scouts were moving. Suddenly on the road at the top of the high ground, artillery and troops in blue uniforms were seen. These were the French. A group of Cossack scouts retired down the hill at a trot. All the officers and men of Denisov's squadron, though they tried to talk of other things and to look in other directions, thought only of what was there on the hilltop, and kept constantly looking at the patches appearing on the skyline, which they knew to be the enemy's troops. The weather had cleared again since noon and the sun was descending brightly upon the Danube and the dark hills around it. It was calm, and at intervals, the bugle calls and the shouts of the enemy could be heard from the hill. There was no one now between the squadron and the enemy except a few scattered skirmishers. An empty space of some seven hundred yards was all that separated them. The enemy ceased firing, and that stern, threatening, inaccessible, and intangible line which separates two hostile armies was all the more clearly felt.

A viewer might think, "One step beyond that boundary line which resembles the line dividing the living from the dead lies uncertainty, suffering, and death. And what is there? Who is there?—there beyond that field, that tree, that roof lit up by the sun? No one knows, but one wants to know. You fear and yet long to cross that line, and know that sooner or later it must be crossed and you will have to find out what is there, just as you will inevitably have to learn what lies on the other side of death. But you are strong, healthy, cheerful, and excited, and are surrounded by other such excitedly animated and healthy men." So thinks, or at any rate feels, anyone who comes in sight of the enemy, and that feeling gives a particular

glamour and glad keenness of impression to everything that takes place at such moments.

On the high ground where the enemy was, the smoke of a cannon rose, and a ball flew whistling over the heads of the hussar squadron. The Russian officers who had been standing together rode off to their places. The hussars began carefully aligning their horses. Silence fell on the whole squadron. All were looking at the enemy in front and at the squadron commander, awaiting the word of command. A second and a third cannon ball flew past. Evidently, they were firing at the hussars, but the balls with rapid rhythmic whistles flew over the heads of the horsemen and fell somewhere beyond them. The hussars did not look round, but at the sound of each shot, as at the word of command, the whole squadron with its rows of faces so alike yet so different, holding its breath while the ball flew past, rose in the stirrups and sank back again. The soldiers without turning their heads glanced at one another, curious to see their comrades' impression. Every face, from Denisov's to that of the bugler, showed one common expression of conflict, irritation, and excitement, around the chin and mouth. The quartermaster frowned, looking at the soldiers as if threatening to punish them. Cadet Mirónov ducked every time a ball flew past. Nicholas on the left flank mounted on his Rook—a handsome horse despite its game leg—had the happy air of a schoolboy called up before a large audience for an examination in which he feels sure he will distinguish himself. He was glancing at everyone with a clear, bright expression as if asking them to notice how calmly he sat under fire. But despite himself, on his face too that same indication of something new and stern showed round the mouth.

“Who's that curtseying there? Cadet Miwónov! That's not wight! Look at me,” cried Denisov who, unable to keep still on one spot, kept turning his horse in front of the squadron.

The black, hairy, snub-nosed face of Denisov, and his whole short sturdy figure with the sinewy hairy hand and stumpy fingers in which he held the hilt of his naked saber, looked just as it usually did, especially toward evening when he had emptied his second bottle; he was only redder than usual. With his shaggy head thrown back like birds when they drink, pressing his spurs mercilessly into the sides of his good horse, Bedouin, and sitting as though falling backward in the saddle, he galloped to the other flank of the squadron and shouted in a hoarse voice to the men to look to their pistols. He rode up to the staff captain. The staff captain on his broad-backed, steady mare came at a walk to meet him. His face with its long mustache was serious as always, only his eyes were brighter than usual.

“Well, what about it?” said he to Denisov. “It won’t come to a fight. You’ll see—we shall retire.”

“The devil only knows what they’re about!” muttered Denisov. “Ah, Nicholas,” he cried noticing Nicholas’s bright face, “you’ve got it at last.”

And he smiled approvingly, evidently pleased with Nicholas. Nicholas felt perfectly happy. Just then the colonel appeared on the bridge. Denisov galloped up to him.

“Colonel! Let us attack them! I’ll dwive them off.”

“Attack indeed!” said the colonel in a bored voice, puckering up his face as if driving off a troublesome fly. “And why are you stopping here? Don’t you see the skirmishers are retreating? Lead the squadron back.”

The squadron crossed the bridge and drew out of range of fire without having lost a single man. The second squadron that had been in the front line followed them across and the last Cossacks quitted the farther side of the river.

The two Russian squadrons from Pávlograd, having crossed the bridge, retired up the hill one after the other. Their colonel, Colonel Bogdánich, came up to Denisov’s squadron and rode at a footpace not far from Nicholas, without taking any notice of him although they were now meeting

for the first time since their encounter concerning Lieutenant Telyánin. Nicholas, feeling that he was at the front and in the power of a man toward whom he now admitted that he had been to blame, did not lift his eyes from the colonel's athletic back, his nape covered with light hair and his red neck. It seemed to Nicholas that Colonel Bogdánich was only pretending not to notice him and that his whole aim now was to test the cadet's courage, so he drew himself up and looked around him merrily; then it seemed to him that Colonel Bogdánich rode so near in order to show him his courage. Next, he thought that his enemy would send the squadron on a desperate attack just to punish him—Nicholas. Then he imagined how, after the attack, Colonel Bogdánich would come up to him as he lay wounded and would magnanimously extend the hand of reconciliation.

The high-shouldered figure of Corporal Zherkov, familiar to the Pávlograd regiment as he had but recently left them, rode up to Colonel Bogdánich. After his dismissal from headquarters Corporal Zherkov had not remained in the regiment, saying he was not such a fool as to slave at the front when he could get more rewards by doing nothing on the staff and had succeeded in attaching himself as an orderly officer to Major-General Bagration. He now came to his former chief with an order from the commander of the rear guard.

"Colonel Bogdánich," he said, addressing Nicholas's enemy with an air of gloomy gravity and glancing round at his comrades, "there is an order to stop and fire the bridge."

"An order to who?" asked Colonel Bogdánich morosely.

"I don't myself know 'to who,'" replied the cornet in a serious tone, "but the Baron told me to 'go and tell Colonel Bogdánich that the hussars must return quickly and fire the bridge.'"

Corporal Zherkov was followed by an officer of the suite who rode up to the colonel of hussars with the same order. After him, the stout Sergeant

Nesvitski came galloping up on a Cossack horse that could scarcely carry his weight.

“How’s this, Colonel Bogdánich?” he shouted as he approached. “I told you to fire the bridge, and now someone has gone and blundered; they are all beside themselves over there and one can’t make anything out.”

Colonel Bogdánich deliberately stopped the regiment and turned to Sergeant Nesvitski.

“You spoke to me of inflammable material,” said he, “but you said nothing about firing it.”

“But, my dear sir,” said Sergeant Nesvitski as he drew up, taking off his cap and smoothing his hair wet with perspiration with his plump hand, “wasn’t I telling you to fire the bridge, when inflammable material had been put in position?”

“I am not your ‘dear sir,’ Mr. Staff Officer, and you did not tell me to burn the bridge! I know the service, and it is my habit orders strictly to obey. You said the bridge would be burned, but who would burn it, I could not know by the holy spirit!”

“Ah, that’s always the way!” said Sergeant Nesvitski with a wave of the hand. “How did you get here?” said he, turning to Corporal Zherkov.

“On the same business. But you *are* damp! Let me wring you out!”

“You were saying, Mr. Staff Officer...” continued Colonel Bogdánich in an offended tone.

“Colonel Bogdánich,” interrupted the officer of the suite, “You must be quick or the enemy will bring up his guns to use grapeshot.”

Colonel Bogdánich looked silently at the officer of the suite, at the stout staff officer, and at Corporal Zherkov, and he frowned.

“I will the bridge fire,” the colonel said in a solemn tone as if to announce that in spite of all the unpleasantness he had to endure he would still do the right thing.

Striking his horse with his long muscular legs as if it were to blame for everything, the colonel moved forward and ordered the second squadron, that in which Nicholas was serving under Denisov, to return to the bridge.

“There, it’s just as I thought,” said Nicholas to himself. “The colonel wishes to test me!” His heart contracted and the blood rushed to his face. “Let him see whether I am a coward!” he thought.

Again on all the bright faces of the squadron, the serious expression appeared that they had worn when under fire. Nicholas watched his enemy, Colonel Bogdánich, closely—to find in his face confirmation of his own conjecture, but the colonel did not once glance at Nicholas and looked as he always did when at the front, solemn and stern. Then came the word of command.

“Look sharp! Look sharp!” several voices repeated around him.

Their sabers catching in the bridles and their spurs jingling, the hussars hastily dismounted, not knowing what they were to do. The men were crossing themselves. Nicholas no longer looked at Colonel Bogdánich, he had no time. He was afraid of falling behind the hussars, so much afraid that his heart stood still. His hand trembled as he gave his horse into an orderly’s charge, and he felt the blood rush to his heart with a thud. Denisov rode past him, leaning back and shouting something. Nicholas saw nothing but the hussars running all around him, their spurs catching and their sabers clattering.

“Stretchers!” shouted someone behind him.

Nicholas did not think what this call for stretchers meant; he ran on, trying only to be ahead of the others; but just at the bridge, not looking at the ground, he came on some sticky, trodden mud, stumbled, and fell on his hands. The others outstripped him.

“At both sides, Denisov,” he heard the voice of Colonel Bogdánich, who, having ridden ahead, had pulled up his horse near the bridge, with a triumphant, cheerful face.

Nicholas wiping his muddy hands on his breeches looked at his enemy and was about to run on, thinking that the farther he went to the front the better. But Colonel Bogdánich, without looking at or recognizing Nicholas, shouted to him:

“Who’s that running on the middle of the bridge? To the right! Come back, Cadet!” the colonel cried angrily; and turned to Denisov, who, showing off his courage, had ridden onto the planks of the bridge:

“Why run risks, Denisov? You should dismount,” the colonel said.

“Oh, every bullet has its billet,” answered Denisov, turning in his saddle.

Meanwhile, Sergeant Nesvitski, Corporal Zherkov, and the officer of the suite were standing together out of range of the shots, watching, now the small group of men with yellow shakos, dark-green jackets braided with cord, and blue riding breeches, who were swarming near the bridge, and then at what was approaching in the distance from the opposite side—the blue uniforms and groups with horses, easily recognizable as artillery.

The soldiers wondered, “Will they burn the bridge or not? Who’ll get there first? Will they get there and fire the bridge or will the French get within grapeshot range and wipe them out?” These were the questions each man of the troops on the high ground above the bridge involuntarily asked himself with a sinking heart—watching the bridge and the hussars in the bright evening light and the blue tunics advancing from the other side with their bayonets and guns.

“Ugh. The hussars will get it hot!” said Sergeant Nesvitski; “they are within grapeshot range now.”

“He shouldn’t have taken so many men,” said the officer of the suite.

“True enough,” answered Sergeant Nesvitski; “two smart fellows could have done the job just as well.”

“Ah, your excellency,” put in Corporal Zherkov, his eyes fixed on the hussars, but still with that naive air that made it impossible to know whether he was speaking in jest or in earnest. “Ah, your excellency! How you look at things! Send two men? And who then would give us the Vladímir medal and ribbon? But now, even if they do get peppered, the squadron may be recommended for honors and he may get a ribbon. Our Colonel Bogdánich knows how things are done.”

“There now!” said the officer of the suite, “that’s grapeshot.”

He pointed to the French guns, the limbers of which were being detached and hurriedly removed.

On the French side, amid the groups with cannons, a cloud of smoke appeared, then a second and a third almost simultaneously, and at the moment when the first report was heard a fourth was seen. Then two reports one after another, and a third.

“Oh! Oh!” groaned Sergeant Nesvitski as if in fierce pain, seizing the officer of the suite by the arm. “Look! A man has fallen! Fallen, fallen!”

“Two, I think.”

“If I were Tzar I would never go to war,” said Sergeant Nesvitski, turning away.

The French guns were hastily reloaded. The infantry in their blue uniforms advanced toward the bridge at a run. Smoke appeared again but at irregular intervals, and grapeshot cracked and rattled onto the bridge. But this time Sergeant Nesvitski could not see what was happening there, as a dense cloud of smoke arose from it. The hussars had succeeded in setting it on fire and the French batteries were now firing at them, no longer to hinder them but because the guns were trained and there was someone to fire at.

The French had time to fire three rounds of grapeshot before the hussars got back to their horses. Two were misdirected and the shot went too high, but the last round fell in the midst of a group of hussars and knocked three of them over.

Nicholas, absorbed by his relations with Colonel Bogdánich, had paused on the bridge not knowing what to do. There was no one to hew down (as he had always imagined battles to himself), nor could he help to fire the bridge because he had not brought any burning straw with him like the other soldiers. He stood looking about him when suddenly he heard a rattle on the bridge as if nuts were being spilled, and the hussar nearest to him fell against the rails with a groan. Nicholas ran up to him with the others. Again someone shouted, "Stretchers!" Four men seized the hussar and began lifting him.

"For Christ's sake let me alone!" cried the wounded man, but still, he was lifted and laid on the stretcher.

Nicholas turned away and, as if searching for something, gazed into the distance, at the waters of the Danube, at the sky, and at the sun. How beautiful the sky looked; how blue, how calm, and how deep! How bright and glorious was the setting sun! With what soft glitter the waters of the distant Danube shone. And fairer still were the faraway blue mountains beyond the river, the nunnery, the mysterious gorges, and the pine forests veiled in the mist of their summits... There was peace and happiness... "I should wish for nothing else, nothing, if only I were there," thought Nicholas. "In myself alone and in that sunshine there is so much happiness; but here... groans, suffering, fear, and this uncertainty and hurry... There—they are shouting again, and again are all running back somewhere, and I shall run with them, and it, death, is here above me and around... Another instant and I shall never again see the sun, this water, that gorge!..."

At that instant, the sun began to hide behind the clouds, and other stretchers came into view before Nicholas. And the fear of death and of the stretchers, and love of the sun and of life, all merged into one feeling of sickening agitation.

"Oh Lord, God! Thou who art in that heaven, save, forgive, and protect me!" Nicholas whispered.

The hussars ran back to the men who held their horses; their voices sounded louder and calmer, and the stretchers disappeared from sight.

“Well, fwieend? So you’ve smelt powdah!” shouted Denisov just above his ear.

“It’s all over, but I am a coward—yes, a coward!” thought Nicholas, and sighing deeply he took Rook, his horse, which stood resting one foot, from the orderly and began to mount.

“Was that grapeshot?” he asked Denisov.

“Yes and no mistake!” cried Denisov. “You worked like wegular bwicks and it’s nasty work! An attack’s pleasant work! Hacking away at the dogs! But this sort of thing is the very devil, with them shooting at you like a target.”

And Denisov rode up to a group that had stopped near Nicholas, composed of the colonel, Sergeant Nesvitski, Corporal Zherkov, and the officer from the suite.

“Well, it seems that no one has noticed,” thought Nicholas. And this was true. No one had taken any notice, for everyone knew the sensation that the cadet under fire for the first time had experienced.

“Here’s something for you to report,” said Corporal Zherkov. “See if I don’t get promoted to sub-lieutenant.”

“Inform the Baron that I fired the bridge!” said Colonel Bogdánich triumphantly and gaily.

“And if he asks about the losses?”

“A trifle,” said Colonel Bogdánich in his bass voice: “Two hussars wounded, and one knocked out,” he added, unable to restrain a happy smile, and pronouncing the phrase “knocked out” with ringing distinctness.

Pursued by the French army of a hundred thousand men under the command of Napoleon, encountering a population that was unfriendly to it, losing confidence in its allies, suffering from shortness of supplies, and compelled to act under conditions of war unlike anything that had been

foreseen, the Russian army of thirty-five thousand men commanded by General Kutuzov was hurriedly retreating along the Danube, stopping where overtaken by the enemy and fighting rearguard actions only as far as necessary to enable it to retreat without losing its heavy equipment. There had been actions at Lambach, Amstetten, and Melk; but despite the courage and endurance—acknowledged even by the enemy—with which the Russians fought, the only consequence of these actions was a yet more rapid retreat. Austrian troops that had escaped capture at Ulm and had joined General Kutuzov at Braunau now separated from the Russian army and Kutuzov was left with only his own weak and exhausted forces. The defense of Vienna was no longer to be thought of. Instead of an offensive, the plan of which, carefully prepared in accord with the modern science of strategics, had been handed to General Kutuzov when he was in Vienna by the Austrian general, the sole and almost unattainable aim remaining for him was to effect a junction with the forces that were advancing from Russia, without losing his army as General Mack had done at Ulm.

On the twenty-eighth of October General Kutuzov with his army crossed to the left bank of the Danube and took up a position for the first time with the river between himself and the main body of the French. On the thirtieth General Kutuzov attacked Général Mortier's division, which was on the left bank, and broke it up. In this action for the first time trophies were taken: banners, cannon, and two enemy generals. For the first time, after a fortnight's retreat, the Russian troops had halted and after a fight had not only held the field but had repulsed the French. Though the troops were ill-clad, exhausted, and had lost a third of their number in killed, wounded, sick, and stragglers; though a number of sick and wounded had been abandoned on the other side of the Danube with a letter in which General Kutuzov entrusted them to the humanity of the enemy; and though the big hospitals and the houses in Krems converted into military hospitals could no longer accommodate all the sick and wounded, yet the stand made

at Krems and the victory over Général Mortier raised the spirits of the army considerably. Throughout the whole army and at headquarters most joyful though erroneous rumors were rife of the imaginary approach of columns from Russia, of some victory gained by the Austrians, and of the retreat of the frightened Napoleon.

Andrei during the battle had been in attendance on the Austrian General Schmidt, who was killed in the action. His horse had been wounded under him and his own arm slightly grazed by a bullet. As a mark of General Kutuzov's special favor, he was sent with the news of this victory to the Austrian court, now no longer at Vienna (which was threatened by the French) but at Brünn. Despite his apparently delicate build, Andrei could endure physical fatigue far better than many very muscular men, and on the night of the battle, having arrived at Krems excited but not weary, with dispatches from General Dokhtúrov to General Kutuzov, he was sent via carriage immediately with a special dispatch to Brünn. To be so sent meant not only a reward but an important step toward promotion.

The night was dark but starry, the road showed black in the snow that had fallen the previous day—the day of the battle. Reviewing his impressions of the recent battle, picturing pleasantly to himself the impression his news of a victory would create or recalling the send-off given him by General Kutuzov and his fellow officers, Andrei was galloping along in a carriage enjoying the feelings of a man who has at length begun to attain a long-desired happiness. As soon as he closed his eyes his ears seemed filled with the rattle of the wheels and the sensation of victory. Then he began to imagine that the Russians were running away and that he himself was killed, but he quickly roused himself with a feeling of joy, as if learning afresh that this was not so but that on the contrary, the French had run away. He again recalled all the details of the victory and his own calm courage during the battle and feeling reassured he dozed off... The dark starry night was followed by a bright cheerful morning. The snow

was thawing in the sunshine, the horses galloped quickly, and on both sides of the road were forests of different kinds, fields, and villages.

At one of the post stations, Andrei's carriage overtook a convoy of Russian wounded. The Russian officer in charge of the transport lolled back in the front cart, shouting and scolding a soldier with coarse abuse. In each of the long German carts six or more pale, dirty, bandaged men were being jolted over the stony road. Some of them were talking (he heard Russian words), others were eating bread; the more severely wounded looked silently, with the languid interest of sick children, at the envoy hurrying past them.

Andrei told his driver to stop and asked a soldier in what action they had been wounded. "Day before yesterday, on the Danube," answered the soldier. Andrei took out his purse and gave the soldier three gold pieces.

"That's for them all," Andrei said to the officer who came up.

"Get well soon, lads!" Andrei continued, turning to the soldiers. "There's plenty to do still."

"What news, sir?" asked the officer, evidently anxious to start a conversation.

"Good news!... Go on!" Andrei shouted to the driver, and they galloped on.

It was already quite dark when Andrei rattled over the paved streets of Brünn and found himself surrounded by high buildings, the lights of shops, houses, and street lamps, fine carriages, and all that atmosphere of a large and active town which is always so attractive to a soldier after camp life. Despite his rapid journey and sleepless night, Andrei when he drove up to the palace felt even more vigorous and alert than he had done the day before. Only his eyes gleamed feverishly and his thoughts followed one another with extraordinary clearness and rapidity. He again vividly recalled the details of the battle, no longer dim, but definite and in the concise form in which he imagined himself stating them to the Austrian Emperor. He

vividly imagined the casual questions that might be put to him and the answers he would give. He expected to be at once presented to the Austrian Emperor. At the chief entrance to the palace, however, an official came running out to meet him, and learning that he was a special messenger led him to another entrance.

“To the right from the corridor, your highborn! There you will find the adjutant on duty,” said the official. “He will conduct you to the War Minister.”

The adjutant on duty, meeting Andrei, asked him to wait, and went in to the War Minister. Five minutes later he returned and bowing with particular courtesy ushered Andrei before him along a corridor to the cabinet where the War Minister was at work. The adjutant by his elaborate courtesy appeared to wish to ward off any attempt at familiarity on the part of the Russian messenger.

Andrei’s joyous feeling was considerably weakened as he approached the door of the minister’s room. He felt offended, and without his noticing it the feeling of offense immediately turned into one of disdain which was quite uncalled for. His fertile mind instantly suggested to him a point of view that gave him a right to despise the adjutant and the minister. “Away from the smell of powder, they probably think it easy to gain victories!” he thought. Andrei’s eyes narrowed disdainfully, he entered the room of the War Minister with peculiarly deliberate steps. This feeling of disdain was heightened when he saw the minister seated at a large table reading some papers and making pencil notes on them, and for the first two or three minutes taking no notice of his arrival. A wax candle stood at each side of the minister’s bent bald head with its gray temples. He went on reading to the end, without raising his eyes at the opening of the door and the sound of footsteps.

“Take this and deliver it,” said Andrei to his adjutant, handing him the papers and still taking no notice of the special messenger.

Andrei felt that either the actions of General Kutuzov's army interested the War Minister less than any of the other matters he was concerned with, or he wanted to give the Russian special messenger that impression. "But that is a matter of perfect indifference to me," Andrei thought. The War Minister drew the remaining papers together, arranged them evenly, and then raised his head. He had an intellectual and distinctive head, but the instant he turned to Andrei the firm, intelligent expression on his face changed in a way evidently deliberate and habitual to him. His face took on the stupid artificial smile (which does not even attempt to hide its artificiality) of a man who is continually receiving many petitioners one after another.

"From General Kutuzov?" the War Minister asked. "I hope it is good news? There has been an encounter with Général Mortier? A victory? It was high time!"

The War Minister took the dispatch which was addressed to him and began to read it with a mournful expression.

"Oh, my God! My God! Schmidt!" he exclaimed in German. "What a calamity! What a calamity!"

Having glanced through the dispatch the War Minister laid it on the table and looked at Andrei, evidently considering something.

"Ah what a calamity! You say the affair was decisive? But Général Mortier was not captured." Again he pondered. "I am very glad you have brought good news, though Schmidt's death is a heavy price to pay for the victory. The Austrian Emperor will no doubt wish to see you, but not today. I thank you! You must have a rest. Be at the levee tomorrow after the parade. However, I will let you know."

The stupid smile, which had left his face while he was speaking, reappeared.

"*Goodbye!* Thank you very much. The Austrian Emperor will probably desire to see you," the War Minister added, bowing his head.

When Andrei left the palace he felt that all the interest and happiness the victory had afforded him had been now left in the indifferent hands of the War Minister and the polite adjutant. The whole tenor of his thoughts instantaneously changed; the battle seemed the memory of a remote event long past.

Andrei stayed at Brünn with Adjutant Bilibin, a Russian acquaintance of his in the diplomatic service.

“Ah, Andrei! I could not have a more welcome visitor,” said Adjutant Bilibin as he came out to meet Andrei. “Franz, put the Baron’s things in my bedroom,” said he to the servant who was ushering Andrei in. “So you’re a messenger of victory, eh? Splendid! And I am sitting here ill, as you see.”

After washing and dressing, Andrei came into the diplomat’s luxurious study and sat down to the dinner prepared for him. Adjutant Bilibin settled down comfortably beside the fire.

After his journey and the campaign during which he had been deprived of all the comforts of cleanliness and all the refinements of life, Andrei felt a pleasant sense of repose among luxurious surroundings such as he had been accustomed to from childhood. Besides it was pleasant, after his reception by the Austrians, to speak if not in Russian (for they were speaking French) at least with a Russian who would, he supposed, share the general Russian antipathy to the Austrians which was then particularly strong.

Adjutant Bilibin was a man of thirty-five, a bachelor, and of the same circle as Andrei. They had known each other previously in St. Petersburg, but had become more intimate when Andrei was in Vienna with General Kutuzov. Just as Andrei was a young man who gave promise of rising high in the military profession, so to an even greater extent Adjutant Bilibin gave promise of rising in his diplomatic career. He was still a young man but no longer a young diplomat, as he had entered the service at the age of sixteen, had been in Paris and Copenhagen, and now held a rather important post in

Vienna. Both the foreign minister and our ambassador in Vienna knew him and valued him. He was not one of those many diplomats who are esteemed because they have certain negative qualities, avoid doing certain things, and speak French. He was one of those, who, liking work, knew how to do it, and despite his indolence would sometimes spend a whole night at his writing table. He worked well whatever the import of his work. It was not the question "What for?" but the question "How?" that interested him. What the diplomatic matter might be he did not care, but it gave him great pleasure to prepare a circular, memorandum, or report, skillfully, pointedly, and elegantly. Adjutant Bilibin's services were valued not only for what he wrote, but also for his skill in dealing and conversing with those in the highest spheres.

Adjutant Bilibin liked conversation as he liked work, only when it could be made elegantly witty. In society, he always awaited an opportunity to say something striking and took part in a conversation only when that was possible. His conversation was always sprinkled with wittily original, finished phrases of general interest. These sayings were prepared in the inner laboratory of his mind in a portable form as if intentionally, so that insignificant society people might carry them from drawing room to drawing room. And, in fact, Adjutant Bilibin's witticisms were hawked about in the Viennese drawing rooms and often had an influence on matters considered important.

Adjutant Bilibin's thin, worn, sallow face was covered with deep wrinkles, which always looked as clean and well-washed as the tips of one's fingers after a Russian bath. The movement of these wrinkles formed the principal play of expression on his face. Now his forehead would pucker into deep folds and his eyebrows were lifted, then his eyebrows would descend and deep wrinkles would crease his cheeks. His small, deep-set eyes always twinkled and looked out straight.

"Well, now tell me about your exploits," said Adjutant Bilibin.

Andrei, very modestly without once mentioning himself, described the engagement and his reception by the War Minister.

“They received me and my news as one receives a dog in a game of skittles,” said he in conclusion.

Adjutant Bilibin smiled and the wrinkles on his face disappeared.

“*But, my dear fellow,*” he remarked, examining his nails from a distance and puckering the skin above his left eye, “*with all my respect for the Orthodox Russian army, I must say that your victory was not particularly victorious.*”

Adjutant Bilibin went on talking in this way in French, uttering only those words in Russian on which he wished to put a contemptuous emphasis.

“Come now! You with all your forces fall on the unfortunate Général Mortier and his one division, and even then he slips through your fingers! Where’s the victory?”

“But seriously,” said Andrei, “we can at any rate say without boasting that it was a little better than at Ulm...”

“Why didn’t you capture one, just one, general for us?”

“Because not everything happens as one expects or with the smoothness of a parade. We had expected, as I told you, to get at their rear by seven in the morning but had not reached it by five in the afternoon.”

“And why didn’t you do it at seven in the morning? You ought to have been there at seven in the morning,” returned Adjutant Bilibin with a smile. “You ought to have been there at seven in the morning.”

“Why did you not succeed in impressing on Napoleon by diplomatic methods that he had better leave Genoa alone?” retorted Andrei in the same tone.

“I know,” interrupted Adjutant Bilibin, “you’re thinking it’s very easy to take generals, sitting on a sofa by the fire! That is true, but still why didn’t you capture him? So don’t be surprised if not only the War Minister but also

his Most August Majesty the Austrian Emperor is not much delighted by your victory. Even I, a poor secretary of the Russian Embassy, do not feel any need in token of my joy to give my Franz a thaler, or let him go with his *Liebchen* to the Prater... True, we have no Prater here..."

Adjutant Bilibin looked straight at Andrei and suddenly unwrinkled his forehead.

"It is now my turn to ask you 'why?' *my dear*," said Andrei. "I confess I do not understand: perhaps there are diplomatic subtleties here beyond my feeble intelligence, but I can't make it out. General Mack loses a whole army, the Archduke Ferdinand and the Archduke Karl give no signs of life and make blunder after blunder. General Kutuzov alone at last gains a real victory, destroying the spell of the invincibility of the French, and the War Minister does not even care to hear the details."

"That's just it, Andrei. You see it's *hurrah* for the Tzar, for Russia, for the Orthodox Greek faith! All that is beautiful, but what do we, I mean the Austrian court, care for your victories? Bring us nice news of a victory by the Archduke Karl or Ferdinand (one archduke's as good as another, as you know) and even if it is only over a fire brigade of Napoleon's, that will be another story and we'll fire off some cannon! But this sort of thing seems done on purpose to vex us. The Archduke Karl does nothing, the Archduke Ferdinand disgraces himself. You abandon Vienna, give up its defense—as much as to say: 'Heaven is with us, but heaven help you and your capital!' The one general whom we all loved, Schmidt, you expose to a bullet, and then you congratulate us on the victory! Admit that more irritating news than yours could not have been conceived. It's as if it had been done on purpose, on purpose. Besides, suppose you did gain a brilliant victory, if even the Archduke Karl gained a victory, what effect would that have on the general course of events? It's too late now when Vienna is occupied by the French army!"

"What? Occupied? Vienna occupied?"

“Not only occupied, but Napoleon is at Schönbrunn, and our dear General Vrba, goes to him for orders.”

After the fatigues and impressions of the journey, his reception, and especially after having dined, Andrei felt that he could not take in the full significance of the words he heard.

“Count Lichtenfels was here this morning,” Adjutant Bilibin continued, “and showed me a letter in which the parade of the French in Vienna was fully described: Général Murat *is shaking*...You see that your victory is not a matter for great rejoicing and that you can’t be received as a savior.”

“Really I don’t care about that, I don’t care at all,” said Andrei, beginning to understand that his news of the battle before Krems was really of small importance in view of such events as the fall of Austria’s capital. “How is it Vienna was taken? What of the bridge and its celebrated bridgehead and Baron Auersperg? We heard reports that Baron Auersperg was defending Vienna?” he said.

“Baron Auersperg is on this, on our side of the river, and is defending us—doing it very badly, I think, but still he is defending us. But Vienna is on the other side. No, the bridge has not yet been taken and I hope it will not be, for it is mined and orders have been given to blow it up. Otherwise we should long ago have been in the mountains of Bohemia, and you and your army would have spent a bad quarter of an hour between two fires.”

“But still this does not mean that the campaign is over,” said Andrei.

“Well, I think it is. The bigwigs here think so too, but they dare not say so. It will be as I said at the beginning of the campaign, it won’t be your skirmishing at Dürrenstein, or gunpowder at all, that will decide the matter, but those who devised it,” said Adjutant Bilibin quoting one of his own mots, releasing the wrinkles on his forehead, and pausing. “The only question is what will come of the meeting between the Tzar and the King of Prussia in Berlin? If Prussia joins the Allies, Austria’s hand will be forced

and there will be war. If not it is merely a question of settling where the preliminaries of the new Campo Formio are to be drawn up.”

“What an extraordinary genius!” Andrei suddenly exclaimed, clenching his small hand and striking the table with it, “and what luck the man has!”

“Napoleon?” said Adjutant Bilibin inquiringly, puckering up his forehead to indicate that he was about to say something witty. “Napoleon Buonaparte?” he repeated, accentuating the *u*: “I think, however, now that he lays down laws for Austria at Schönbrunn, *We must let him off the u!*, and no longer call him by his coarse Corsican name, Napoleon Buonaparte, but rather, by the French version of his name, Napoleon Bonaparte. Actually, I shall certainly adopt an innovation and call him simply Napoleon!”

“But joking apart,” said Andrei, “do you really think the campaign is over?”

“This is what I think. Austria has been made a fool of, and she is not used to it. She will retaliate. And she has been fooled in the first place because her provinces have been pillaged—they say the Holy Russian army loots terribly—her army is destroyed, her capital taken, and all this for the *fine eyes* of His Sardinian Majesty, Napoleon. And therefore—this is between ourselves—I instinctively feel that we are being deceived, my instinct tells me of negotiations with France and projects for peace, a secret peace concluded separately.”

“We are concluding peace with Napoleon? Impossible!” cried Andrei. “That would be too base.”

“If we live we shall see,” replied Adjutant Bilibin, his face again becoming smooth as a sign that the conversation was at an end.

When Andrei reached the room prepared for him and lay down in a clean shirt on the feather bed with its warmed and fragrant pillows, he felt that the battle of which he had brought tidings was far, far away from him. The alliance with Prussia, Austria’s treachery, Napoleon’s new triumph,

tomorrow's levee and parade, and the audience with the Austrian Emperor occupied his thoughts.

Andrei closed his eyes, and immediately a sound of cannonading, of musketry and the rattling of carriage wheels seemed to fill his ears, and now again drawn out in a thin line the musketeers were descending the hill, the French were firing, and he felt his heart palpitating as he rode forward beside Schmidt with the bullets merrily whistling all around, and he experienced tenfold the joy of living, as he had not done since childhood.

Andrei woke up...

"Yes, that all happened!" he said, and, smiling happily to himself like a child, he fell into a deep, youthful slumber.

The next day, Andrei woke late. Recalling his recent impressions, the first thought that came into his mind was that today he had to be presented to the Austrian Emperor; he remembered the War Minister, the polite Austrian adjutant, Adjutant Bilibin, and last night's conversation. Having dressed for his attendance at court in full parade uniform, which he had not worn for a long time, he went into Adjutant Bilibin's study fresh, animated, and handsome, with his hand bandaged. In the study were four gentlemen of the diplomatic corps. With Baron Vasili's son, Hippolyte, who was a secretary to the embassy, Andrei was already acquainted. Adjutant Bilibin introduced him to the others.

The gentlemen assembled at Adjutant Bilibin's were young, wealthy, gay society men, who here, as in Vienna, formed a special set which Adjutant Bilibin, their leader, called *ours*. This set, consisting almost exclusively of diplomats, evidently had its own interests which had nothing to do with war or politics but related to high society, to certain women, and to the official side of the service. These gentlemen received Andrei as one of themselves, an honor they did not extend to many. From politeness and to start conversation, they asked him a few questions about the army and the battle, and then the talk went off into merry jests and gossip.

“But the best of it was,” said one, telling of the misfortune of a fellow diplomat, “that the Chancellor told him flatly that his appointment to London was a promotion and that he was so to regard it. Can you fancy the figure he cut?...”

“But the worst of it, gentlemen—I am giving Hippolyte away to you—is that that man suffers, and this Don Juan, wicked fellow, is taking advantage of it!”

Hippolyte was lolling in a lounge chair with his legs over its arm. He began to laugh.

“Tell me about that!” he said.

“Oh, you Don Juan! You serpent!” cried several voices.

“You, Andrei, don’t know,” said Adjutant Bilibin turning to him, “that all the atrocities of the French army (I nearly said of the Russian army) are nothing compared to what Hippolyte has been doing among the women!”

“*Woman is a man’s companion*,” announced Hippolyte, and began looking through a opera glasses at his elevated legs.

Adjutant Bilibin and the rest of “ours” burst out laughing in Hippolyte’s face, and Andrei saw that Hippolyte, of whom—he had to admit—he had almost been jealous on Lise’s account, was the butt of this set.

“Oh, I must give you a treat,” Adjutant Bilibin whispered to Andrei. “Hippolyte is exquisite when he discusses politics—you should see his gravity!”

Adjutant Bilibin sat down beside Hippolyte and wrinkling his forehead began talking to him about politics. Andrei and the others gathered round these two.

“The Berlin cabinet cannot express a feeling of alliance,” began Hippolyte gazing round with importance at the others, “without expressing... as in its last note... you understand... Besides, unless His Majesty the Austrian Emperor derogates from the principle of our alliance...

“Wait, I have not finished...” Hippolyte said to Andrei, seizing him by the arm, “I believe that intervention will be stronger than non-intervention. And...” he paused. “Finally one cannot impute the nonreceipt of our dispatch of November 18. That is how it will end.” And he released Andrei’s arm to indicate that he had now quite finished.

“Demosthenes, I know thee by the pebble thou hides in thy golden mouth!” said Adjutant Bilibin, and the mop of hair on his head moved with satisfaction.

Everybody laughed, and Hippolyte louder than anyone. He was evidently distressed, and breathed painfully, but could not restrain the wild laughter that convulsed his usually impassive features.

“Well now, gentlemen,” said Adjutant Bilibin, “Andrei is my guest in this house and in Brünn itself. I want to entertain him as far as I can, with all the pleasures of life here. If we were in Vienna it would be easy, but here, in this wretched Moravian hole, it is more difficult, and I beg you all to help me. Brünn’s attractions must be shown him. You can undertake the theater, I society, and you, Hippolyte, of course, the women.”

“We must let him see Amelie, she’s exquisite!” said one of “ours,” kissing his fingertips.

“In general we must turn this bloodthirsty soldier to more humane interests,” said Adjutant Bilibin.

“I shall scarcely be able to avail myself of your hospitality, gentlemen, it is already time for me to go,” replied Andrei looking at his watch.

“Where to?”

“To the Austrian Emperor.”

“Oh! Oh! Oh!”

“Well, *goodbye*, Andrei! *Goodbye* Andrei! Come back early to dinner,” cried several voices. “We’ll take you in hand.”

“When speaking to the Austrian Emperor, try as far as you can to praise the way that provisions are supplied and the routes indicated,” said Adjutant

Bilibin, accompanying him to the hall.

“I should like to speak well of them, but as far as I know the facts, I can’t,” replied Andrei, smiling.

“Well, talk as much as you can, anyway. the Austrian Emperor has a passion for giving audiences, but he does not like talking himself and can’t do it, as you will see.”

At the levee Andrei stood among the Austrian officers as he had been told to, and the Austrian Emperor merely looked fixedly into his face and just nodded to him with his long head. But after it was over, the adjutant he had seen the previous day ceremoniously informed Andrei that the Austrian Emperor desired to give him an audience. The Austrian Emperor received him standing in the middle of the room. Before the conversation began Andrei was struck by the fact that the Austrian Emperor seemed confused and blushed as if not knowing what to say.

“Tell me, when did the battle begin?” the Austrian Emperor asked hurriedly.

Andrei replied. Then followed other questions just as simple: “Was General Kutuzov well? When had he left Krems?” and so on. The Austrian Emperor spoke as if his sole aim were to put a given number of questions—the answers to these questions, as was only too evident, did not interest him.

“At what o’clock did the battle begin?” asked the Austrian Emperor.

“I cannot inform Your Majesty at what o’clock the battle began at the front, but at Dürrenstein, where I was, our attack began after five in the afternoon,” replied Andrei growing more animated and expecting that he would have a chance to give a reliable account, which he had ready in his mind, of all he knew and had seen. But the Tzar smiled and interrupted him.

“How many miles?”

“From where to where, Your Majesty?”

“From Dürrenstein to Krems.”

“Three and a half miles, Your Majesty.”

“The French have abandoned the left bank?”

“According to the scouts the last of them crossed on rafts during the night.”

“Is there sufficient forage in Krems?”

“Forage has not been supplied to the extent...”

The Austrian Emperor interrupted him.

“At what o’clock was General Schmidt killed?”

“At seven o’clock, I believe.”

“At seven o’clock? It’s very sad, very sad!”

The Austrian Emperor thanked Andrei and bowed. Andrei withdrew and was immediately surrounded by courtiers on all sides. Everywhere he saw friendly looks and heard friendly words. Yesterday’s adjutant reproached him for not having stayed at the palace, and offered him his own house. The War Minister came up and congratulated him on the Mary Theresa Order of the third grade, which the Austrian Emperor was conferring on him. The Empress’ chamberlain invited him to see Her Majesty. The archduchess also wished to see him. He did not know whom to answer, and for a few seconds collected his thoughts. Then the Russian ambassador took him by the shoulder, led him to the window, and began to talk to him.

Contrary to Adjutant Bilibin’s forecast the news he had brought was joyfully received. A thanksgiving service was arranged, General Kutuzov was awarded the Grand Cross of Mary Theresa, and the whole army received rewards. Andrei was invited everywhere, and had to spend the whole morning calling on the principal Austrian dignitaries. Between four and five in the afternoon, having made all his calls, he was returning to Adjutant Bilibin’s house thinking out a letter to his father about the battle and his visit to Brünn. At the door he found a vehicle half full of luggage. Franz, Adjutant Bilibin’s man, was dragging a portmanteau with some difficulty out of the front door.

Before returning to Adjutant Bilibin's, Andrei had gone to a bookshop to provide himself with some books for the campaign, and had spent some time in the shop.

"What is it?" Andrei asked.

"Oh, your excellency!" said Franz, with difficulty rolling the portmanteau into the vehicle, "we are to move on still farther. The scoundrel is again at our heels!"

"Eh? What?" asked Andrei.

Adjutant Bilibin came out to meet him. His usually calm face showed excitement.

"There now! Confess that this is delightful," said he. "This affair of the Thabor Bridge, at Vienna... They have crossed without striking a blow!"

Andrei could not understand.

"But where do you come from not to know what every coachman in the town knows?"

"I come from the archduchess'. I heard nothing there."

"And you didn't see that everybody is packing up?"

"I did not... What is it all about?" inquired Andrei impatiently.

"What's it all about? Why, the French have crossed the bridge that Auersperg was defending, and the bridge was not blown up: so Général Murat is now rushing along the road to Brünn and will be here in a day or two."

"What? Here? But why did they not blow up the bridge, if it was mined?"

"That is what I ask you. No one, not even Napoleon, knows why."

Andrei shrugged his shoulders.

"But if the bridge is crossed it means that the army too is lost? It will be cut off," said he.

"That's just it," answered Adjutant Bilibin. "Listen! The French entered Vienna as I told you. Very well. The next day, which was yesterday, those

enemy gentlemen, *the French généraux*, Général Murat, Général Lannes, and Général Belliard, mount and ride to the bridge. (Observe that all three are French Gascons.) ‘Gentlemen,’ says one of them, ‘you know the Thabor Bridge is mined and doubly mined and that there are menacing fortifications at its head and an army of fifteen thousand men has been ordered to blow up the bridge and not let us cross? But it will please our sovereign, Napoleon, if we take this bridge, so let us three go and take it!’ ‘Yes, let’s!’ say the others. And off they go and take the bridge, cross it, and now with their whole enemy army are on this side of the Danube, marching on us, you, and your lines of communication.”

“Stop jesting,” said Andrei sadly and seriously. This news grieved him and yet he was pleased.

As soon as Andrei learned that the Russian army was in such a hopeless situation it occurred to Andrei that it was he who was destined to lead it out of this position; that here was his “Toulon opportunity”, where he could etch his name in eternity as Achilles did. This opportunity would lift him from the ranks of obscure officers and offer him the first step to fame! Listening to Adjutant Bilibin he was already imagining how on reaching the army he would give an opinion at the war council which would be the only one that could save the army, and how he alone would be entrusted with the executing of the plan.

“Stop this jesting,” Andrei said.

“I am not jesting,” Adjutant Bilibin went on. “Nothing is truer or sadder. These French military gentlemen ride onto the bridge alone and wave white handkerchiefs; they assure the officer on duty that they, the French généraux, are on their way to negotiate with General Auersperg. He lets them enter the *bridgehead*. These French généraux spin the officer on duty a thousand lies, saying that the war is over, that the Austrian Emperor is arranging a meeting with Napoleon, that they desire to see our General Auersperg, and so on. The officer sends for General Auersperg; these gentlemen embrace

the généraux, crack jokes, sit on the cannon, and meanwhile a French battalion gets to the bridge unobserved, flings the bags of flammable material into the water, and approaches the *bridgehead*. At length appears the Russian general, our dear General Auersperg himself. ‘Dearest foe! Flower of the Austrian army, hero of the Turkish wars! Hostilities are ended, we can shake one another’s hand... Napoleon burns with impatience to make General Auersperg’s acquaintance.’ In a word, those gentlemen, French indeed, so bewildered General Auersperg with fine words, and he is so flattered by his rapidly established intimacy with the French généraux, and so dazzled by the sight of Général Murat’s mantle and ostrich plumes, *That their fire gets into his eyes and General Auersperg forgets that he ought to be firing at the enemy.!*” In spite of the animation of his speech, Adjutant Bilibin did not forget to pause after this to give time for its due appreciation. “The French battalion rushes to the bridgehead, spikes the guns, and the bridge is taken! But what is best of all,” he went on, his excitement subsiding under the delightful interest of his own story, “is that the sergeant in charge of the cannon which was to give the signal to fire the mines and blow up the bridge, this sergeant, seeing that the French troops were running onto the bridge, was about to fire, but Général Lannes stayed his hand. The sergeant, who was evidently wiser than his general, goes up to General Auersperg and says: ‘General, you are being deceived, here are the French!’ Général Murat, seeing that all is lost if the sergeant is allowed to speak, turns to general Auersperg with feigned astonishment (he is a true Frenchman) and says: ‘I don’t recognize the world-famous Austrian discipline, if you allow a subordinate to address you like that!’ It was a stroke of genius. General Auersperg feels his dignity at stake and orders the sergeant to be arrested. Come, you must own that this affair of the Thabor Bridge is delightful! It is not exactly stupidity, nor rascality...”

“It may be treachery,” said Andrei, vividly imagining the gray overcoats, wounds, the smoke of gunpowder, the sounds of firing, and the

glory that awaited him.

“Not that either. That puts the court in too bad a light,” replied Adjutant Bilibin. “It’s not treachery nor rascality nor stupidity: it is just as at Ulm... it is...”—he seemed to be trying to find the right expression. “*It is... it is a bit of General Mack. We are General Macked,*” he concluded, feeling that he had produced a good epigram, a fresh one that would be repeated. His hitherto puckered brow became smooth as a sign of pleasure, and with a slight smile he began to examine his nails.

“Where are you off to?” Adjutant Bilibin said suddenly to Andrei who had risen and was going toward his room.

“I am going away.”

“Where to?”

“To the army.”

“But you meant to stay another two days?”

“But now I am off at once.”

And Andrei after giving directions about his departure went to his room.

“Do you know, *my dear*,” said Adjutant Bilibin following him, “I have been thinking about you. Why are you going?”

And in proof of the conclusiveness of his opinion all the wrinkles vanished from Adjutant Bilibin’s face.

Andrei looked inquiringly at him and gave no reply.

“Why are you going? I know you think it your duty to gallop back to the army now that it is in danger. I understand that. *My dear*, it is heroism!”

“Not at all,” said Andrei.

“But as you are a philosopher, be a consistent one, look at the other side of the question and you will see that your duty, on the contrary, is to take care of yourself. Leave it to those who are no longer fit for anything else... You have not been ordered to return and have not been dismissed from here; therefore, you can stay and go with us wherever our ill luck takes us. They

say we are going to Olmütz, and Olmütz is a very decent town. You and I will travel comfortably in my carriage.”

“Do stop joking, Adjutant Bilibin,” cried Andrei.

“I am speaking sincerely as a friend! Consider! Where and why are you going, when you might remain here? You are faced by one of two things,” and the skin over his left temple puckered, “either you will not reach your regiment before peace is concluded, or you will share defeat and disgrace with General Kutuzov’s whole army.”

And Adjutant Bilibin unwrinkled his temple, feeling that the dilemma was insoluble.

“I cannot argue about it,” replied Andrei coldly, but he thought: “I am going to save the army.”

“My dear Andrei, you are a hero!” said Adjutant Bilibin.

That same night, having taken leave of the War Minister, Andrei set off to rejoin the army, not knowing where he would find it and fearing to be captured by the French on the way to Krems.

In the city of Brünn, everybody attached to the Prussian court was packing up, and the heavy baggage was already being dispatched to Olmütz. Near Hetzelsdorf, Andrei struck the high road along which the Russian army was moving with great haste and in the greatest disorder. The road was so obstructed with carts that it was impossible to get by in a carriage. Andrei took a horse from a Cossack commander, and hungry and weary, making his way past the baggage wagons, rode in search of General Kutuzov and of his own luggage. Very sinister reports of the position of the army reached him as he went along, and the appearance of the troops in their disorderly flight confirmed these rumors.

“That Russian army which has been brought from the ends of the earth by English gold, we shall cause to share the same fate—(the fate of the army at Ulm).” Andrei remembered these words in Napoleon’s address to his army at the beginning of the campaign, and they awoke in him

astonishment at the genius of his hero, a feeling of wounded pride, and a hope of glory. "And should there be nothing left but to die?" he thought. "Well, if need be, I shall do it no worse than others."

Andrei looked with disdain at the endless confused mass of detachments, carts, guns, artillery, and again baggage wagons and vehicles of all kinds overtaking one another and blocking the muddy road, three and sometimes four abreast. From all sides, behind and before, as far as ear could reach, there were the rattle of wheels, the creaking of carts and gun carriages, the tramp of horses, the crack of whips, shouts, the urging of horses, and the swearing of soldiers, orderlies, and officers. All along the sides of the road fallen horses were to be seen, some flayed, some not, and broken-down carts beside which solitary soldiers sat waiting for something, and again soldiers straggling from their companies, crowds of whom set off to the neighboring villages, or returned from them dragging sheep, fowls, hay, and bulging sacks. At each ascent or descent of the road the crowds were yet denser and the din of shouting more incessant. Soldiers floundering knee-deep in mud pushed the guns and wagons themselves. Whips cracked, hoofs slipped, traces broke, and lungs were strained with shouting. The officers directing the march rode backward and forward between the carts. Their voices were but feebly heard amid the uproar and one saw by their faces that they despaired of the possibility of checking this disorder.

"Here is our dear Orthodox Russian army," thought Andrei, recalling Adjutant Bilibin's words.

Wishing to find out where General Kutuzov was, Andrei rode up to a convoy. Directly opposite to him came a strange one-horse vehicle, evidently rigged up by soldiers out of any available materials and looking like something between a cart, a cabriolet, and a carriage. A soldier was driving, and a woman enveloped in shawls sat behind the apron under the leather hood of the vehicle. Andrei rode up and was just putting his

question to a soldier when his attention was diverted by the desperate shrieks of the woman in the vehicle. An officer in charge of transport was beating the soldier who was driving the woman's vehicle for trying to get ahead of others, and the strokes of his whip fell on the apron of the equipage. The woman screamed piercingly. Seeing Andrei she leaned out from behind the apron and, waving her thin arms from under the woolen shawl, cried:

"Mr. Aide-de-camp! Mr. Aide-de-camp!... For heaven's sake... Protect me! What will become of us? I am the wife of the doctor of the Seventh Chasseurs... They won't let us pass, we are left behind and have lost our people..."

"I'll flatten you into a pancake!" shouted the angry officer to the driver. "Turn back with your slut!"

"Mr. Aide-de-camp! Help me!... What does it all mean?" screamed the doctor's wife to Andrei.

"Kindly let this cart pass. Don't you see it's a woman?" said Andrei riding up to the officer.

The officer glanced at him, and without replying turned again to the driver. "I'll teach you to push on!... Back!"

"Let them pass, I tell you!" repeated Andrei, compressing his lips.

"And who are you?" cried the officer, turning on him with tipsy rage, "who are *you*? Are you in command here? Eh? I am commander here, not you! Go back or I'll flatten you into a pancake," repeated he. This expression evidently pleased him.

"That was a nice snub for the little aide-de-camp," came a voice from behind.

Andrei saw that the officer was in that state of senseless, tipsy rage when a man does not know what he is saying. He saw that his championship of the doctor's wife in her queer carriage might expose him to what Andrei dreaded more than anything in the world—to ridicule; but

his instinct urged him on. Before the officer finished his sentence Andrei, his face distorted with fury, rode up to him and raised his riding whip.

“Kind...ly let—them—pass!”

The officer flourished his arm and hastily rode away.

“It’s all the fault of these fellows on the staff that there’s this disorder,” the officer muttered. “Do as you like.”

Andrei, without lifting his eyes, rode hastily away from the doctor’s wife, who was calling him her deliverer, and recalling with a sense of disgust the minutest details of this humiliating scene he galloped on to the village where he was told where General Kutuzov was.

On reaching the village Andrei dismounted and went to the nearest house, intending to rest if but for a moment, eat something, and try to sort out the stinging and tormenting thoughts that confused his mind. “This is a mob of scoundrels and not an army,” he was thinking as he went up to the window of the first house, when a familiar voice called him by name.

He turned round. Sergeant Nesvitski’s handsome face looked out of the little window. Sergeant Nesvitski, moving his moist lips as he chewed something, and flourishing his arm, called him to enter.

“Andrei! Andrei!... Don’t you hear? Eh? Come quick...” he shouted.

Entering the house, Andrei saw Sergeant Nesvitski and another adjutant having something to eat. They hastily turned round to him asking if he had any news. On their familiar faces he read agitation and alarm. This was particularly noticeable on Sergeant Nesvitski’s usually laughing countenance.

“Where is General Kutuzov?” asked Andrei.

“Here, in that house,” answered the adjutant.

“Well, is it true that we are going to make peace with Napoleon and capitulate?” asked Sergeant Nesvitski.

“I was going to ask you. I know nothing except that it was all I could do to get here.”

“And we, my dear Andrei! It’s terrible! I was wrong to laugh at General Mack, we’re getting it still worse,” said Sergeant Nesvitski. “But sit down and have something to eat.”

“You won’t be able to find either your baggage or anything else now, Andrei. And God only knows where your man Peter is,” said the other adjutant.

“Where are headquarters?”

“We are to spend the night in Znaim.”

“Well, I have got all I need into packs for two horses,” said Sergeant Nesvitski. “They’ve made up splendid packs for me—fit to cross the Bohemian mountains with. It’s a bad lookout, old fellow! But what’s the matter with you? You must be ill to shiver like that,” he added, noticing that Andrei winced as at an electric shock.

“It’s nothing,” replied Andrei.

Andrei had just remembered his recent encounter with the doctor’s wife and the convoy officer.

“What is General Kutuzov doing here?” Andrei asked.

“I can’t make out at all,” said Sergeant Nesvitski.

“Well, all I can make out is that everything is abominable, abominable, quite abominable!” said Andrei, and he went off to the house where General Kutuzov was.

Passing by General Kutuzov’s carriage and the exhausted saddle horses of his suite, with their Cossacks who were talking loudly together, Andrei entered the passage. General Kutuzov himself, he was told, was in the house with Major-General Bagration and General Weyrother. General Weyrother was the Austrian general who had succeeded Schmidt. In the passage little Aide-de-camp Kozlovski was squatting on his heels in front of a clerk. The clerk, with cuffs turned up, was hastily writing at a tub turned upside down. Aide-de-camp Kozlovski’s face looked worn—he too had

evidently not slept all night. He glanced at Andrei and did not even nod to him.

“Second line... have you written it?” Aide-de-camp Kozlovski continued dictating to the clerk. “The Kiev Grenadiers, Podolian...”

“One can’t write so fast, your honor,” said the clerk, glancing angrily and disrespectfully at Aide-de-camp Kozlovski.

Through the door came the sounds of General Kutuzov’s voice, excited and dissatisfied, interrupted by another, an unfamiliar voice. From the sound of these voices, the inattentive way Aide-de-camp Kozlovski looked at him, the disrespectful manner of the exhausted clerk, the fact that the clerk and Aide-de-camp Kozlovski were squatting on the floor by a tub so near to General Kutuzov, and from the noisy laughter of the Cossacks holding the horses near the window, Andrei felt that something important and disastrous was about to happen.

Andrei turned to Aide-de-camp Kozlovski with urgent questions.

“Immediately, Andrei,” said Aide-de-camp Kozlovski. “Dispositions for Major-General Bagration.”

“What about us capitulating to Napoleon?”

“Nothing of the sort. Orders are issued for a battle.”

Andrei moved toward the door from whence voices were heard. Just as he was going to open it the sounds ceased, the door opened, and General Kutuzov with his eagle nose and puffy face appeared in the doorway. Andrei stood right in front of General Kutuzov but the expression of his one sound eye showed him to be so preoccupied with thoughts and anxieties as to be oblivious of his presence. He looked straight at his Andrei’s face without recognizing him.

“Well, have you finished?” said Kutuzov to Aide-de-camp Kozlovski.

“One moment, your excellency.”

Major-General Bagration, a gaunt middle-aged man of medium height with a firm, impassive face of Oriental type, came out after General

Kutuzov.

“I have the honor to present myself,” repeated Andrei rather loudly, handing General Kutuzov an envelope.

“Ah, from Vienna? Very good. Later, later!”

General Kutuzov went out into the porch with Major-General Bagration.

“Well, good-bye,” said Kutuzov to Major-General Bagration. “My blessing, and may Christ be with you in your great endeavor!”

Kutuzov’s face suddenly softened and tears came into his eyes. With his left hand he drew Major-General Bagration toward him, and with his right, on which he wore a ring, Kutuzov made the sign of the cross over him with a gesture evidently habitual, offering his puffy cheek, but Major-General Bagration kissed him on the neck instead.

“Christ be with you!” General Kutuzov repeated and went toward his carriage. “Get in with me,” said he to Andrei.

“Your excellency, I should like to be of use here. Allow me to remain with Major-General Bagration’s detachment.”

“Get in,” said General Kutuzov, and noticing that Andrei still delayed, he added: “I need good officers myself, need them myself!”

They got into the carriage and drove for a few minutes in silence.

“There is still much, much before us,” General Kutuzov said, as if with an old man’s penetration he understood all that was passing in Andrei’s mind. “If a tenth part of his detachment returns I shall thank God,” he added as if speaking to himself.

Andrei glanced at Kutuzov’s face only a foot distant from him and involuntarily noticed the carefully washed seams of the scar near his temple, where an Ismail bullet had pierced his skull, and the empty eye socket. “Yes, he has a right to speak so calmly of those men’s death,” thought Andrei.

“That is why I beg to be sent to that detachment,” Andrei said.

General Kutuzov did not reply. He seemed to have forgotten what he had been saying, and sat plunged in thought. Five minutes later, gently swaying on the soft springs of the carriage, he turned to Andrei. There was not a trace of agitation on his face. With delicate irony he questioned Andrei about the details of his interview with the Austrian Emperor, about the remarks he had heard at court concerning the Krems affair, and about some ladies they both knew.

On November 1, General Kutuzov had received, through a spy, news that the army he commanded was in an almost hopeless position. The spy reported that the French, after crossing the bridge at Vienna, were advancing in immense force upon Kutuzov's line of communication with the troops that were arriving from Russia. If General Kutuzov decided to remain at Krems, Napoleon's army of one hundred and fifty thousand men would cut him off completely and surround his exhausted army of forty thousand, and he would find himself in the position of the losing General Mack at Ulm. If General Kutuzov decided to abandon the road connecting him with the troops arriving from Russia, he would have to march with no road into unknown parts of the Bohemian mountains, defending himself against superior forces of the enemy and abandoning all hope of a junction with Buxhöwden. If Kutuzov decided to retreat along the road from Krems to Olmütz, to unite with the troops arriving from Russia, he risked being forestalled on that road by the French who had crossed the Vienna bridge, and encumbered by his baggage and transport, having to accept battle on the march against an enemy three times as strong, who would hem him in from two sides.

General Kutuzov chose this latter course.

The French, the spy reported, having crossed the Vienna bridge, were advancing by forced marches toward Znaim, which lay sixty-six miles off on the line of General Kutuzov's retreat. If he reached Znaim before the French, there would be great hope of saving the army; to let the French

forestall him at Znaim meant the exposure of his whole army to a disgrace such as that of Ulm, or to utter destruction. But to forestall the French with his whole army was impossible. The road for the French from Vienna to Znaim was shorter and better than the road for the Russians from Krems to Znaim.

The night he received the news, General Kutuzov sent Major-General Bagration's vanguard, four thousand strong, to the right across the hills from the Krems-Znaim to the Vienna-Znaim road. Major-General Bagration was to make this march without resting, and to halt facing Vienna with Znaim to his rear, and if he succeeded in forestalling the French he was to delay them as long as possible. General Kutuzov himself with all his transport took the road to Znaim.

Marching thirty miles that stormy night across roadless hills, with his hungry, ill-shod soldiers, and losing a third of his men as stragglers by the way, Major-General Bagration came out on the Vienna-Znaim road at Hollabrünn a few hours ahead of the French who were approaching Hollabrünn from Vienna. General Kutuzov with his transport had still to march for some days before he could reach Znaim. Hence Major-General Bagration with his four thousand hungry, exhausted men would have to detain for days the whole enemy army that came upon him at Hollabrünn, which was clearly impossible. But a freak of fate made the impossible possible. The success of the trick that had placed the Vienna bridge in the hands of the French without a fight led Général Murat to try to deceive General Kutuzov in a similar way. Meeting Major-General Bagration's weak detachment on the Znaim road, Général Murat supposed it to be General Kutuzov's whole army. To be able to crush it absolutely, Général Murat awaited the arrival of the rest of the troops who were on their way from Vienna, and with this object offered a three days' truce on condition that both armies should remain in position without moving. Général Murat declared that negotiations for peace were already proceeding, and that he

therefore offered this truce to avoid unnecessary bloodshed. General Nostitz, the Austrian General occupying the advanced posts, believed Général Murat's emissary and retired, leaving Major-General Bagration's division exposed. Another French emissary rode to the Russian line to announce the peace negotiations and to offer the Russian army the three days' truce. Major-General Bagration sensibly replied that he was not authorized either to accept or refuse a truce and sent his adjutant to General Kutuzov to report the offer he had received.

A truce was General Kutuzov's sole chance of gaining time, giving Major-General Bagration's exhausted troops some rest, and letting the transport and heavy convoys (whose movements were concealed from the French) advance if but one stage nearer Znaim. The offer of a truce gave the only, and a quite unexpected, chance of saving the Russian army. On receiving the news, General Kutuzov's immediately dispatched General Wintzingerode, who was in attendance on him, to the enemy camp. General Wintzingerode was not merely to agree to the truce but also to offer false terms of capitulation, and meanwhile General Kutuzov sent his adjutants back to hasten to the utmost the movements of the baggage trains of the entire army along the Krems-Znaim road. Major-General Bagration's exhausted and hungry detachment, which alone covered this movement of the transport and of the whole army, had to remain stationary in face of an enemy eight times as strong as itself.

General Kutuzov's expectations that the proposals of capitulation (which were in no way binding) might give time for part of the transport to pass, and also that Général Murat's mistake would very soon be discovered, proved correct. As soon as Napoleon (who was at Schönbrunn, sixteen miles from Hollabrunn) received Général Murat's dispatch with the proposal of a truce and a capitulation, Napoleon detected a ruse and wrote the following letter to Général Murat:

Schönbrunn, 25th Brumaire, 1805,

At eight o'clock in the morning
To GÉNÉRAL MURAT,

I cannot find words to express to you my displeasure. You command only my advance guard, and have no right to arrange an armistice without my order. You are causing me to lose the fruits of a campaign. Break the armistice immediately and march on the enemy. Inform him that the general who signed that capitulation had no right to do so, and that no one but the Tzar has that right.

If, however, the Tzar ratifies that convention, I will ratify it; but it is only a trick. March on, destroy the Russian army... You are in a position to seize its baggage and artillery.

The Tzar's aide-de-camp is an impostor. Officers are nothing when they have no powers; this one had none... The Austrians let themselves be tricked at the crossing of the Vienna bridge, you are letting yourself be tricked by an aide-de-camp of the Tzar.

NAPOLEON

Napoleon's adjutant rode full gallop with this menacing letter to Général Murat. Napoleon himself, not trusting to his generals, moved with all the Guards to the field of battle, afraid of letting a ready victim escape, and Major-General Bagration's four thousand men merrily lighted campfires, dried and warmed themselves, cooked their porridge for the first time for three days, and not one of them knew or imagined what was in store for him.

Between three and four o'clock in the afternoon Andrei, who had persisted in his request to General Kutuzov, arrived at Grunth and reported himself to Major-General Bagration. Napoleon's adjutant had not yet reached Général Murat's detachment and the battle had not yet begun. In Major-General Bagration's detachment no one knew anything of the general position of affairs. They talked of peace but did not believe in its possibility; others talked of a battle but also disbelieved in the nearness of

an engagement. Major-General Bagration, knowing Andrei to be a favorite and trusted adjutant, received him with distinction and special marks of favor, explaining to him that there would probably be an engagement that day or the next, and giving him full liberty to remain with him during the battle or to join the rearguard and have an eye on the order of retreat, “which is also very important.”

“However, there will hardly be an engagement today,” said Major-General Bagration as if to reassure Andrei.

“If Andrei is one of the ordinary little staff dandies sent to earn a medal he can get his reward just as well in the rearguard, but if he wishes to stay with me, let him... he’ll be of use here if he’s a brave officer,” thought Major-General Bagration. Andrei, without replying, asked Major-General Bagration’s permission to ride round the position to see the disposition of the forces, so as to know his bearings should he be sent to execute an order. The officer on duty, a handsome, elegantly dressed man with a diamond ring on his forefinger, who was fond of speaking French though he spoke it badly, offered to conduct Andrei.

On all sides they saw rain-soaked officers with dejected faces who seemed to be seeking something, and soldiers dragging doors, benches, and fencing from the village.

“There now, Andrei! We can’t stop those fellows,” said the staff officer pointing to the soldiers. “The officers don’t keep them in hand. And there,” he pointed to a sutler’s tent, “they crowd in and sit. This morning I turned them all out and now look, it’s full again. I must go there, Andrei, and scare them a bit. It won’t take a moment.”

“Yes, let’s go in and I will get myself a roll and some cheese,” said Andrei who had not yet had time to eat anything.

“Why didn’t you mention it, Andrei? I would have offered you something.”

They dismounted and entered the tent. Several officers, with flushed and weary faces, were sitting at the table eating and drinking.

“Now what does this mean, gentlemen?” said the staff officer, in the reproachful tone of a man who has repeated the same thing more than once. “You know it won’t do to leave your posts like this. The Baron gave orders that no one should leave his post. Now you, Artillery Captain Tushin,” and he turned to a thin, dirty little artillery officer who without his boots (he had given them to the canteen keeper to dry), in only his stockings, rose when they entered, smiling not altogether comfortably.

“Well, aren’t you ashamed of yourself, Artillery Captain Tushin?” he continued. “One would think that as an artillery officer you would set a good example, yet here you are without your boots! The alarm will be sounded and you’ll be in a pretty position without your boots!” (The staff officer smiled.) “Kindly return to your posts, gentlemen, all of you, all!” he added in a tone of command.

Andrei smiled involuntarily as he looked at the Artillery Captain Tushin, who silent and smiling, shifting from one stockinged foot to the other, glanced inquiringly with his large, intelligent, kindly eyes from Andrei to the staff officer.

“The soldiers say it feels easier without boots,” said Artillery Captain Tushin smiling shyly in his uncomfortable position, evidently wishing to adopt a jocular tone. But before he had finished he felt that his jest was unacceptable and had not come off. He grew confused.

“Kindly return to your posts,” said the staff officer trying to preserve his gravity.

Andrei glanced again at Artillery Captain Tushin’s small figure. There was something peculiar about it, quite unsoldierly, rather comic, but extremely attractive.

The staff officer and Andrei mounted their horses and rode on.

Having ridden beyond the village, continually meeting and overtaking soldiers and officers of various regiments, they saw on their left some entrenchments being thrown up, the freshly dug clay of which showed up red. Several battalions of soldiers, in their shirt sleeves despite the cold wind, swarmed in these earthworks like a host of white ants; spadefuls of red clay were continually being thrown up from behind the bank by unseen hands. Andrei and the officer rode up, looked at the entrenchment, and went on again. Just behind it they came upon some dozens of soldiers, continually replaced by others, who ran from the entrenchment. They had to hold their noses and put their horses to a trot to escape from the poisoned atmosphere of these latrines.

“This is a pleasure one gets in camp, Andrei,” said the staff officer.

They rode up the opposite hill. From there the French could already be seen. Andrei stopped and began examining the position.

“That’s our battery,” said the staff officer indicating the highest point. “It’s in charge of the queer fellow we saw without his boots, Artillery Captain Tushin. You can see everything from there; let’s go there, Andrei.”

“Thank you very much, I will go on alone,” said Andrei, wishing to rid himself of this staff officer’s company, “please don’t trouble yourself further.”

The staff officer remained behind and Andrei rode on alone.

The farther forward and nearer the enemy Andrei went, the more orderly and cheerful were the troops. The greatest disorder and depression had been in the baggage train he had passed that morning on the Znaim road seven miles away from the French. At Grunth also some apprehension and alarm could be felt, but the nearer Andrei came to the French lines the more confident was the appearance of our troops. The soldiers in their greatcoats were ranged in lines, the sergeants major and company officers were counting the men, poking the last man in each section in the ribs and telling him to hold his hand up. Soldiers scattered over the whole place

were dragging logs and brushwood and were building shelters with merry chatter and laughter; around the fires sat others, dressed and undressed, drying their shirts and leg bands or mending boots or overcoats and crowding round the boilers and porridge cookers. In one company dinner was ready, and the soldiers were gazing eagerly at the steaming boiler, waiting till the sample, which a quartermaster sergeant was carrying in a wooden bowl to an officer who sat on a log before his shelter, had been tasted.

Another company, a lucky one for not all the companies had vodka, crowded round a pockmarked, broad-shouldered sergeant major who, tilting a keg, filled one after another the canteen lids held out to him. The soldiers lifted the canteen lids to their lips with reverential faces, emptied them, rolling the vodka in their mouths, and walked away from the sergeant major with brightened expressions, licking their lips and wiping them on the sleeves of their greatcoats. All their faces were as serene as if all this were happening at home awaiting peaceful encampment, and not within sight of the enemy before an action in which at least half of them would be left on the field. After passing a chasseur regiment and in the lines of the Kiev grenadiers—fine fellows busy with similar peaceful affairs—near the shelter of the regimental commander, higher than and different from the others, Andrei came out in front of a platoon of grenadiers before whom lay a naked man. Two soldiers held him while two others were flourishing their switches and striking him regularly on his bare back. The man shrieked unnaturally. A stout major was pacing up and down the line, and regardless of the screams kept repeating:

“It’s a shame for a soldier to steal; a soldier must be honest, honorable, and brave, but if he robs his fellows there is no honor in him, he’s a scoundrel. Go on! Go on!”

So the swishing sound of the strokes, and the desperate but unnatural screams, continued.

“Go on, go on!” said the stout major.

A young officer with a bewildered and pained expression on his face stepped away from the man being punished and looked round inquiringly at Andrei as he rode by.

Andrei, having reached the front line, rode along it. Our front line and that of the enemy were far apart on the right and left flanks, but in the center where the men with a flag of truce had passed that morning, the lines were so near together that the men could see one another’s faces and speak to one another. Besides the soldiers who formed the picket line on either side, there were many curious onlookers who, jesting and laughing, stared at their strange foreign enemies.

Since early morning—despite an injunction not to approach the picket line—the officers had been unable to keep sight-seers away. The soldiers forming the picket line, like showmen exhibiting a curiosity, no longer looked at the French but paid attention to the sight-seers and grew weary waiting to be relieved. Andrei halted to have a look at the French.

“Look! Look there!” one soldier was saying to another, pointing to a Russian musketeer who had gone up to the enemy picket line with an officer and was rapidly and excitedly talking to a French grenadier. “Hark to him jabbering! Fine, isn’t it? It’s all the Frenchy can do to keep up with him. There now, Sidorov!”

“Wait a bit and listen. It’s fine!” answered Sidorov, who was considered an adept at French.

The soldier to whom the laughs referred was Dolokhov, the man infamous for drinking a bottle of rum on a bet while hanging out a window. Andrei recognized him and stopped to listen to what he was saying. Dolokhov had come from the left flank where their regiment was stationed, with his captain.

“Now then, go on, go on!” incited Dolokhov’s captain, bending forward and trying not to lose a word of the French which was incomprehensible to

him. "More, please: more! What's he saying?"

Dolokhov did not answer his captain; he had been drawn into a hot dispute with the French grenadier. They were naturally talking about the campaign. The Frenchman, confusing the Austrians with the Russians, was trying to prove that the Russians had surrendered and had fled all the way from Ulm, while Dolokhov maintained that the Russians had not surrendered but had beaten the French.

"We have orders to drive you off here, and we shall drive you off," said Dolokhov.

"Only take care you and your Cossacks are not all captured!" said the French grenadier.

The French onlookers and listeners laughed.

"We'll make you dance as we did under Suvórov...," said Dolokhov.

"*What is he singing about?*" asked a Frenchman.

"It's ancient history," said another, guessing that it referred to a former war. "The Tzar will teach your Suvórov as he has taught the others..."

"Napoleon..." began Dolokhov, but the Frenchman interrupted him.

"Not Napoleon. You should refer to him as the French Tzar! *His is a sacred name...!*" cried he angrily.

"The devil skin your French Tzar."

And Dolokhov swore at him in coarse soldier's Russian and shouldering his musket walked away.

"Let us go, Iván Lukích," Dolokhov said to his captain.

"Ah, that's the way to talk French," said the picket soldiers. "Now, Sídorov, you have a try!"

Sídorov, turning to the French, winked, and began to jabber meaningless sounds very fast: "*Kari, mala, tafa, safi, muter, Kaská,*" he said, trying to give an expressive intonation to his voice.

"Ho! ho! ho! Ha! ha! ha! ha! Ooh! Ooh!" came peals of such healthy and good-humored laughter from the soldiers that it infected the French

involuntarily, so much so that the only thing left to do seemed to be to unload the muskets, explode the ammunition, and all return home as quickly as possible.

But the guns remained loaded, the loopholes in blockhouses and entrenchments looked out just as menacingly, and the unlimbered cannon confronted one another as before.

Having ridden round the whole line from right flank to left, Andrei made his way up to the battery from which the staff officer had told him the whole field could be seen. Here he dismounted, and stopped beside the farthest of the four unlimbered cannon. Before the guns an artillery sentry was pacing up and down; he stood at attention when Andrei arrived, but at a sign resumed his measured, monotonous pacing. Behind the guns were their limbers and still farther back picket ropes and artillerymen's bonfires. To the left, not far from the farthest cannon, was a small, newly constructed wattle shed from which came the sound of officers' voices in eager conversation.

From this view, Andrei could see nearly the whole Russian position and the greater part of the enemy's that opened out from this battery. Just facing it, on the crest of the opposite hill, the village of Schön Grabern could be seen, and in three places to left and right the French troops amid the smoke of their campfires, the greater part of whom were evidently in the village itself and behind the hill. To the left from that village of Schön Grabern, amid the smoke, was something resembling a battery, but it was impossible to see it clearly with the naked eye. Our right flank was posted on a rather steep incline which dominated the French position. Our infantry were stationed there, and at the farthest point the dragoons. In the center, where Artillery Captain Tushin's battery stood and from which Andrei was surveying the position, was the easiest and most direct descent and ascent to the brook separating us from the village of Schön Grabern. On the left our troops were close to a grove of trees, in which smoked the bonfires of our

infantry who were felling wood. The French line was wider than ours, and it was plain that they could easily outflank us on both sides. Behind our position was a steep and deep dip, making it difficult for artillery and cavalry to retire. Andrei took out his notebook and, leaning on the cannon, sketched a plan of the position. He made some notes on two points, intending to mention them to Major-General Bagration. His idea was, first, to concentrate all the artillery in the center, and secondly, to withdraw the cavalry to the other side of the dip. Andrei, being always near General Kutuzov, closely following the mass movements and general orders, and constantly studying historical accounts of battles, involuntarily pictured to himself the course of events in the forthcoming action in broad outline. He imagined only important possibilities: “If the enemy attacks the right flank,” he said to himself, “the Kiev grenadiers and the Podólsk chasseurs must hold their position till reserves from the center come up. In that case the dragoons could successfully make a flank counterattack. If they attack our center we, having the center battery on this high ground, shall withdraw the left flank under its cover, and retreat to the dip by echelons.” So he reasoned... All the time he had been beside the gun, he had heard the voices of the officers distinctly, but as often happens had not understood a word of what they were saying. Suddenly, however, Andrei was struck by a voice coming from the shed, and its tone was so sincere that he could not but listen.

“No, friend,” said a pleasant and, as it seemed to Andrei, a familiar voice, “what I say is that if it were possible to know what is beyond death, none of us would be afraid of it. That’s so, friend.”

Another, a younger voice, interrupted him: “Afraid or not, you can’t escape it anyhow.”

“All the same, one is afraid! Oh, you clever people,” said a third manly voice interrupting them both. “Of course you artillery men are very wise, because you can take everything along with you—vodka and snacks.”

And the owner of the manly voice, evidently an infantry officer, laughed.

“Yes, one is afraid,” continued the first speaker, he of the familiar voice. “One is afraid of the unknown, that’s what it is. Whatever we may say about the soul going to the sky... we know there is no sky but only an atmosphere.”

The manly voice again interrupted the artillery officer.

“Well, stand us some of your herb vodka, Artillery Captain Tushin,” it said.

“Why,” thought Andrei, “that’s the captain who stood up in the sutler’s hut without his boots.” He recognized the agreeable, philosophizing voice with pleasure.

“Some herb vodka? Certainly!” said Artillery Captain Tushin. “But still, to conceive a future life...”

He did not finish. Just then there was a whistle in the air; nearer and nearer, faster and louder, louder and faster, a cannon ball, as if it had not finished saying what was necessary, thudded into the ground near the shed with super human force, throwing up a mass of earth. The ground seemed to groan at the terrible impact.

And immediately Artillery Captain Tushin, with a short pipe in the corner of his mouth and his kind, intelligent face rather pale, rushed out of the shed followed by the owner of the manly voice, a dashing infantry officer who hurried off to his company, buttoning up his coat as he ran.

Mounting his horse again Andrei lingered with the battery, looking at the puff from the gun that had sent the ball. His eyes ran rapidly over the wide space, but he only saw that the hitherto motionless masses of the French now swayed and that there really was a battery to their left. The smoke above it had not yet dispersed. Two mounted Frenchmen, probably adjutants, were galloping up the hill. A small but distinctly visible enemy column was moving down the hill, probably to strengthen the front line.

The smoke of the first shot had not yet dispersed before another puff appeared, followed by a report. The battle had begun! Andrei turned his horse and galloped back to Grunth to find Major-General Bagration. He heard the cannonade behind him growing louder and more frequent. Evidently our guns had begun to reply. From the bottom of the slope, where the parleys had taken place, came the report of musketry.

The French messenger, Lemarrois, had just arrived at a gallop with Napoleon's stern letter, and Général Murat, humiliated and anxious to expiate his fault, had at once moved his forces to attack the center and outflank both the Russian wings, hoping before evening and before the arrival of the Napoleon to crush the contemptible detachment that stood before him.

"It has begun. Here it is!" thought Andrei, feeling the blood rush to his heart. "But where and how will my "moment of Toulon" present itself to win glory like Achilles did?"

Passing between the companies that had been eating porridge and drinking vodka a quarter of an hour before, Andrei saw everywhere the same rapid movement of soldiers forming ranks and getting their muskets ready, and on all their faces he recognized the same eagerness that filled his heart. "It has begun! Here it is, dreadful but enjoyable!" was what the face of each soldier and each officer seemed to say.

Before Andrei had reached the embankments that were being thrown up, he saw, in the light of the dull autumn evening, mounted men coming toward him. The foremost, wearing a Cossack cloak and lambskin cap and riding a white horse, was Major-General Bagration. Andrei stopped, waiting for him to come up; Major-General Bagration reined in his horse and recognizing Andrei nodded to him. He still looked ahead while Andrei told him what he had seen.

The feeling, "It has begun! Here it is!" was seen even on Major-General Bagration's hard brown face with its half-closed, dull, sleepy eyes. Andrei

gazed with anxious curiosity at that impassive face and wished he could tell what, if anything, this man was thinking and feeling at that moment. "Is there anything at all behind that impassive face?" Andrei asked himself as he looked. Major-General Bagration bent his head in sign of agreement with what Andrei told him, and said, "Very good!" in a tone that seemed to imply that everything that took place and was reported to him was exactly what he had foreseen. Andrei, out of breath with his rapid ride, spoke quickly. Major-General Bagration, uttering his words with an Oriental accent, spoke particularly slowly, as if to impress the fact that there was no need to hurry. However, he put his horse to a trot in the direction of Artillery Captain Tushin's battery. Andrei followed with the suite. Behind Major-General Bagration rode an officer of the suite, Major-General Bagration's personal adjutant, Corporal Zherkov, an orderly officer, the staff officer on duty, riding a fine bobtailed horse, and a civilian—an accountant who had asked permission to be present at the battle out of curiosity. The accountant, a stout, full-faced man, looked around him with a naive smile of satisfaction and presented a strange appearance among the hussars, Cossacks, and adjutants, in his camel coat, as he jolted on his horse with a convoy officer's saddle.

"He wants to see a battle," said Corporal Zherkov to Andrei, pointing to the accountant, "but he feels a pain in the pit of his stomach already."

"Oh, leave off!" said the accountant with a beaming but rather cunning smile, as if flattered at being made the subject of Corporal Zherkov's joke, and purposely trying to appear stupider than he really was.

"It is very strange, *mon Monsieur Andrei*," said the staff officer. (He remembered that in French there is some peculiar way of addressing a Baron like Andrei, but could not get it quite right.)

By this time they were all approaching Artillery Captain Tushin's battery, and a ball struck the ground in front of them.

"What's that that has fallen?" asked the accountant with a naive smile.

“A French pancake,” answered Corporal Zherkov.

“So that’s what they hit with?” asked the accountant. “How awful!”

The accountant seemed to swell with satisfaction. He had hardly finished speaking when they again heard an unexpectedly violent whistling which suddenly ended with a thud into something soft... *f-f-flop!* and a Cossack, riding a little to their right and behind the accountant, crashed to earth with his horse. Corporal Zherkov and the staff officer bent over their saddles and turned their horses away. The accountant stopped, facing the Cossack, and examined him with attentive curiosity. The Cossack was dead, but the horse still struggled.

Major-General Bagration screwed up his eyes, looked round, and, seeing the cause of the confusion, turned away with indifference, as if to say, “Is it worthwhile noticing trifles?” He reined in his horse with the care of a skillful rider and, slightly bending over, disengaged his saber which had caught in his cloak. It was an old-fashioned saber of a kind no longer in general use. Andrei remembered the story of Suvórov giving his saber to Major-General Bagration in Italy, and the recollection was particularly pleasant at that moment. They had reached the battery at which Andrei had been when he examined the battlefield.

“Whose company?” asked Major-General Bagration of an artilleryman standing by the ammunition wagon.

He asked, “Whose company?” but he really meant, “Are you frightened here?” and the artilleryman understood him.

“Artillery Captain Tushin’s, your excellency!” shouted the red-haired, freckled gunner in a merry voice, standing to attention.

“Yes, yes,” muttered Major-General Bagration as if considering something, and he rode past the limbers to the farthest cannon.

As he approached, a ringing shot issued from it deafening the general and his suite, and in the smoke that suddenly surrounded the gun they could see the gunners who had seized it straining to roll it quickly back to its

former position. A huge, broad-shouldered gunner, Number One, holding a mop, his legs far apart, sprang to the wheel; while Number Two with a trembling hand placed a charge in the cannon's mouth. The short, round-shouldered Artillery Captain Tushin, stumbling over the tail of the gun carriage, moved forward and, not noticing the general, looked out shading his eyes with his small hand.

"Lift it two lines more and it will be just right," cried Artillery Captain Tushin in a feeble voice to which he tried to impart a dashing note, ill-suited to his weak figure. "Number Two!" he squeaked. "Fire, Medvédev!"

Major-General Bagration called to him, and Artillery Captain Tushin, raising three fingers to his cap with a bashful and awkward gesture not at all like a military salute but like a priest's benediction, approached the general. Though Artillery Captain Tushin's guns had been intended to cannonade the valley, he was firing incendiary balls at the village of Schön Grabern visible just opposite, in front of which large masses of French were advancing.

No one had given Artillery Captain Tushin orders where and at what to fire, but after consulting his sergeant major, Zakharchénko, for whom he had great respect, Artillery Captain Tushin had decided that it would be a good thing to set fire to the village. "Very good!" said Major-General Bagration in reply to the officer's report, and began deliberately to examine the whole battlefield extended before him. The French had advanced nearest on our right. Below the height on which the Kiev regiment was stationed, in the hollow where the rivulet flowed, the soul-stirring rolling and crackling of musketry was heard, and much farther to the right beyond the dragoons, the officer of the suite pointed out to Major-General Bagration a French column that was outflanking us. To the left the horizon bounded by the adjacent wood. Major-General Bagration ordered two battalions from the center to be sent to reinforce the right flank. The officer of the suite ventured to remark to Major-General Bagration that if these battalions went away, the guns would remain without support. Major-

General Bagration turned to the officer and with his dull eyes looked at him in silence. It seemed to Andrei that the officer's remark was just and that really no answer could be made to it. But at that moment an adjutant galloped up with a message from the commander of the regiment in the hollow and news that immense masses of the French were coming down upon them and that his regiment was in disorder and was retreating upon the Kiev grenadiers. Major-General Bagration bowed his head in sign of assent and approval. He rode off at a walk to the right and sent an adjutant to the dragoons with orders to attack the French. But this adjutant returned half an hour later with the news that the commander of the dragoons had already retreated beyond the dip in the ground, as a heavy fire had been opened on him and he was losing men uselessly, and so had hastened to throw some sharpshooters into the wood.

“Very good!” said Major-General Bagration.

As he was leaving the battery, firing was heard on the left also, and as it was too far to the left flank for him to have time to go there himself, Major-General Bagration sent Corporal Zherkov to tell the general in command (the one who had paraded his regiment before General Kutuzov at Braunau) that he must retreat as quickly as possible behind the hollow in the rear, as the right flank would probably not be able to withstand the enemy's attack very long. About Artillery Captain Tushin and the battalion that had been in support of his battery all was forgotten. Andrei listened attentively to Major-General Bagration's colloquies with his officers and the orders he gave them and, to his surprise, found that no orders were really given, but that Major-General Bagration tried to make it appear that everything done by necessity, by accident, or by the will of subordinate officers was done, if not by his direct command, at least in accord with his intentions. Andrei noticed, however, that though what happened was due to chance and was independent of the commander's will, owing to the tact Major-General Bagration showed, his presence was very valuable. Officers who

approached him with disturbed countenances became calm; soldiers and officers greeted him gaily, grew more cheerful in his presence, and were evidently anxious to display their courage before him.

Major-General Bagration, having reached the highest point of the Russian right flank, began riding downhill to where the roll of musketry was heard but where on account of the smoke nothing could be seen. The nearer Major-General Bagration and his retinue got to the hollow the less they could see but the more they felt the nearness of the actual battlefield. They began to meet wounded men. One with a bleeding head and no cap was being dragged along by two soldiers who supported him under the arms. There was a gurgle in his throat and he was spitting blood. A bullet had evidently hit him in the throat or mouth. Another was walking sturdily by himself but without his musket, groaning aloud and swinging his arm which had just been hurt, while blood from it was streaming over his greatcoat as from a bottle. He had that moment been wounded and his face showed fear rather than suffering. Crossing a road they descended a steep incline and saw several men lying on the ground; they also met a crowd of soldiers some of whom were not wounded. The soldiers were ascending the hill breathing heavily, and despite the general's presence were talking loudly and gesticulating. In front of them rows of gray cloaks were already visible through the smoke, and an officer catching sight of Major-General Bagration rushed shouting after the crowd of retreating soldiers, ordering them back. Major-General Bagration rode up to the ranks along which shots crackled now here and now there, drowning the sound of voices and the shouts of command. The whole air reeked with smoke. The excited faces of the soldiers were blackened with it. Some were using their ramrods, others putting powder on the touchpans or taking charges from their pouches, while others were firing, though who they were firing at could not be seen for the smoke which there was no wind to carry away. A pleasant humming and whistling of bullets were often heard. "What is this?" thought Andrei

approaching the crowd of soldiers. “It can’t be an attack, for they are not moving; it can’t be a square—for they are not drawn up for that.”

The elderly commander of the regiment, a thin, feeble-looking old man with a pleasant smile—his eyelids drooping more than half over his old eyes, giving him a mild expression, rode up to Major-General Bagration and welcomed him as a host welcomes an honored guest. He reported that his regiment had been attacked by French cavalry and that, though the attack had been repulsed, he had lost more than half his men. He said the attack had been repulsed, employing this military term to describe what had occurred to his regiment, but in reality he did not himself know what had happened during that half-hour to the troops entrusted to him, and could not say with certainty whether the attack had been repulsed or his regiment had been broken up. All this elderly commander of the regiment knew was that at the commencement of the action balls and shells began flying all over his regiment and hitting men and that afterwards someone had shouted “Cavalry!” and our men had begun firing. They were still firing, not at the cavalry which had disappeared, but at French infantry who had come into the hollow and were firing at our men. Major-General Bagration bowed his head as a sign that this was exactly what he had desired and expected. Turning to his adjutant he ordered him to bring down the two battalions of the Sixth Chasseurs whom they had just passed. Andrei was struck by the changed expression on Major-General Bagration’s face at this moment. It expressed the concentrated and happy resolution you see on the face of a man who on a hot day takes a final run before plunging into the water. The dull, sleepy expression was no longer there, nor the affectation of profound thought. The round, steady, hawk’s eyes looked before him eagerly and rather disdainfully, not resting on anything although his movements were still slow and measured.

The elderly commander of the regiment turned again to Major-General Bagration, entreating him to go back as it was too dangerous to remain

where they were. "Please, for God's sake!" he kept saying, glancing for support at an officer of the suite who turned away from him. "There, you see!" and he drew attention to the bullets whistling, singing, and hissing continually around them. He spoke in the tone of entreaty and reproach that a carpenter uses to a gentleman who has picked up an ax: "We are used to it, but you, sir, will blister your hands." He spoke as if those bullets could not kill him, and his half-closed eyes gave still more persuasiveness to his words. The staff officer joined in the elderly commander of the regiment's appeals, but Major-General Bagration did not reply; he only gave an order to cease firing and re-form, so as to give room for the two approaching battalions. While he was speaking, the curtain of smoke that had concealed the hollow, driven by a rising wind, began to move from right to left as if drawn by an invisible hand, and the hill opposite, with the French moving about on it, opened out before them. All eyes fastened involuntarily on this French column advancing against them and winding down over the uneven ground. One could already see the soldiers' shaggy caps, distinguish the officers from the men, and see the standard flapping against its staff.

"They march splendidly," remarked someone in Major-General Bagration's suite.

The head of the column had already descended into the hollow. The clash would take place on this side of it...

The remains of our regiment which had been in action rapidly formed up and moved to the right; from behind it, dispersing the laggards, came two battalions of the Sixth Chasseurs in fine order. Before they had reached Major-General Bagration, the weighty tread of the mass of men marching in step could be heard. On their left flank, nearest to Major-General Bagration, marched a fine round-faced company commander with a stupid and happy expression—the same man who had rushed out of the wattle shed. At that moment he was clearly thinking of nothing but how dashing a fellow he would appear as he passed the commander.

With the self-satisfaction of a man on parade, the round-faced company commander stepped lightly with his muscular legs as if sailing along, stretching himself to his full height without the smallest effort, his ease contrasting with the heavy tread of the soldiers who were keeping step with him. He carried close to his leg a narrow unsheathed sword (small, curved, and not like a real weapon) and looked now at the superior officers and now back at the men without losing step, his whole powerful body turning flexibly. It was as if all the powers of his soul were concentrated on passing the commander in the best possible manner, and feeling that he was doing it well he was happy. “Left... left... left...” he seemed to repeat to himself at each alternate step; and in time to this, with stern but varied faces, the wall of soldiers burdened with knapsacks and muskets marched in step, and each one of these hundreds of soldiers seemed to be repeating to himself at each alternate step, “Left... left... left...” A fat major skirted a bush, puffing and falling out of step; a soldier who had fallen behind, his face showing alarm at his defection, ran at a trot, panting to catch up with his company. A cannon ball, cleaving the air, flew over the heads of Major-General Bagration and his suite, and fell into the column to the measure of “*Left... left!*” “Close up!” came the round-faced company commander’s voice in jaunty tones. The soldiers passed in a semicircle round something where the ball had fallen, and an old trooper on the flank, a noncommissioned officer who had stopped beside the dead men, ran to catch up his line and, falling into step with a hop, looked back angrily, and through the ominous silence and the regular tramp of feet beating the ground in unison, one seemed to hear *left... left... left*.

“Well done, lads!” said Major-General Bagration.

“Glad to do our best, your ex’len-lency!” came a confused shout from the ranks. A morose soldier marching on the left turned his eyes on Major-General Bagration as he shouted, with an expression that seemed to say:

“We know that ourselves!” Another, without looking round, as though fearing to relax, shouted with his mouth wide open and passed on.

The order was given to halt and down knapsacks.

Major-General Bagration rode round the ranks that had marched past him and dismounted. He gave the reins to a Cossack, took off and handed over his felt coat, stretched his legs, and set his cap straight. The head of the enemy French column, with its officers leading, appeared from below the hill.

“Forward, with God!” said Major-General Bagration, in a resolute, sonorous voice, turning for a moment to the front line, and slightly swinging his arms, he went forward uneasily over the rough field with the awkward gait of a cavalryman. Andrei felt that an invisible power was leading him forward, and experienced great happiness.

The French were already near. Andrei, walking beside Major-General Bagration, could clearly distinguish the enemy’s bandoliers, red epaulets, and even their faces. (Andrei distinctly saw an old French officer who, with gaitered legs and turned-out toes, climbed the hill with difficulty.) Major-General Bagration gave no further orders and silently continued to walk on in front of the ranks. Suddenly one shot after another rang out from the French, smoke appeared all along their uneven ranks, and musket shots sounded. Several of our men fell, among them the round-faced company commander who had marched so gaily and complacently. But at the moment the first report was heard, Major-General Bagration looked round and shouted, “Hurrah!”

“Hurrah—ah!—ah!” rang a long-drawn shout from our ranks, and passing Major-General Bagration and racing one another they rushed in an irregular but joyous and eager crowd down the hill at their disordered foe.

The attack of the Russian Sixth Chasseurs secured the retreat of our right flank. In the center Artillery Captain Tushin’s forgotten battery, which had managed to set fire to the Schön Grabern village, delayed the French

advance. The French were putting out the fire which the wind was spreading, and thus gave us time to retreat. The retirement of the center to the other side of the dip in the ground at the rear was hurried and noisy, but the different companies did not get mixed. But our left—which consisted of the Azóv and Podólsk infantry and the Pávlograd hussars—was simultaneously attacked and outflanked by superior French forces under Général Lannes and was thrown into confusion.

Major-General Bagration had sent Corporal Zherkov to the general commanding that left flank with orders to retreat immediately. Corporal Zherkov, not removing his hand from his cap, turned his horse about and galloped off. But no sooner had he left Major-General Bagration than his courage failed him. Corporal Zherkov was seized by panic and could not go where it was dangerous. Having reached the left flank, instead of going to the front where the firing was, Corporal Zherkov began to look for the general and his staff where they could not possibly be, and so did not deliver the order.

The command of the left flank belonged by seniority to the commander of the regiment Kutúzov had reviewed at Braunau and in which Dólokhov was serving as a private. But the command of the extreme left flank had been assigned to the commander of the Pávlograd regiment in which Rostóv was serving, and a misunderstanding arose. The two commanders were much exasperated with one another and, long after the action had begun on the right flank and the French were already advancing, the commanders were engaged in discussion with the sole object of offending one another. But the regiments, both cavalry and infantry, were by no means ready for the impending action. From privates to general they were not expecting a battle and were engaged in peaceful occupations, the cavalry feeding the horses and the infantry collecting wood. But haste was becoming imperative. Cannon and musketry, mingling together, thundered on the right and in the center, while the first of the Général Lannes' sharpshooters were

already seen crossing the mill's dam and was forming up within twice the range of a musket shot. The Russian general went toward his horse with jerky steps, and having mounted, he drew himself up very straight and tall and rode to the German colonel. The two commanders met with polite bows but with secret malevolence in their hearts.

"Once again, Colonel," said the Russian general, "I can't leave half my men in the wood. I *beg* of you, I *beg* of you," he repeated, "to occupy the *position* and prepare for an attack."

"I peg of you yourself not to mix in vot is not your business!" suddenly replied the irate German colonel. "If you vere in the cavalry..."

"I am not in the cavalry, Colonel, but I am a Russian general and if you are not aware of the fact..."

"Quite avare, your excellency," suddenly shouted the German colonel, touching his horse and turning purple in the face. "Vill you be so goot to come to ze front and see dat zis position iss no goot? I don't vish to destroy my men for your pleasure!"

"You forget yourself, Colonel. I am not considering my own pleasure and I won't allow it to be said!"

Taking the German colonel's outburst as a challenge to his courage, the Russian general expanded his chest and rode, frowning, beside him to the front line, as if their differences would be settled there amongst the bullets. The two commanders reached the front, several bullets sped over them, and they halted in silence. There was nothing fresh to be seen from the line, for from where they had been before it had been evident that it was impossible for cavalry to act among the bushes and broken ground, as well as that the French were outflanking our left. The Russian general and German colonel looked sternly and significantly at one another like two fighting cocks preparing for battle, each vainly trying to detect signs of cowardice in the other. Both passed the examination successfully. As there was nothing to be said, and neither wished to give occasion for it to be alleged that he had

been the first to leave the range of fire, they would have remained there for a long time testing each other's courage had it not been that just then they heard the rattle of French musketry and a muffled shout almost behind them in the wood. The French had attacked the men collecting wood in the grove. It was no longer possible for the cavalry to retreat with the infantry. They were cut off from the line of retreat on the left by the French. However inconvenient the position, it was now necessary to attack in order to cut a way through for themselves.

Nicholas was serving under the Russian general, and his squadron had scarcely time to mount before it was halted facing the enemy. Again, as at the Enns bridge, there was nothing between the squadron and the enemy, and again that terrible dividing line of uncertainty and fear—resembling the line separating the living from the dead—lay between them. All were conscious of this unseen line, and the question whether they would cross it or not, and how they would cross it, agitated them all.

The German colonel rode to the front, angrily gave some reply to questions put to him by his officers, and, like a man desperately insisting on having his own way, gave an order. No one said anything definite, but the rumor of an attack spread through the squadron. The command to form up rang out and the sabers whizzed as they were drawn from their scabbards. Still no one moved. The troops of the left flank, infantry and hussars alike, felt that the German colonel did not himself know what to do, and this irresolution communicated itself to the men.

“If only they would be quick!” thought Nicholas, feeling that at last the time had come to experience the joy of an attack of which he had so often heard from his fellow hussars.

“Fo’ward, with God, lads!” rang out Denisov’s voice. “At a twot fo’ward!”

The horses’ croups began to sway in the front line. Nicholas’s horse pulled at the reins and started of his own accord.

Before him, on the right, Nicholas saw the front lines of his cavalry and still farther ahead a dark line which he could not see distinctly but took to be the enemy. Shots could be heard, but some way off.

“Faster!” came the word of command, and Nicholas felt his horse Rook’s flanks drooping as he broke into a gallop.

Nicholas anticipated his horse’s movements and became more and more elated. He had noticed a solitary tree ahead of him. This tree had been in the middle of the line that had seemed so terrible—and now he had crossed that line and not only was there nothing terrible, but everything was becoming more and more happy and animated. “Oh, how I will slash at him!” thought Nicholas, gripping the hilt of his saber.

“Hur-a-a-a-ah!” came a roar of voices. “Let anyone come my way now,” thought Nicholas driving his spurs into his horse, Rook, and letting him go at a full gallop so that he outstripped the others. Ahead, the enemy was already visible. Suddenly something like a birch broom seemed to sweep over the squadron. Nicholas raised his saber, ready to strike, but at that instant the trooper Nikítenko, who was galloping ahead, shot away from him, and Nicholas felt as in a dream that he continued to be carried forward with unnatural speed but yet stayed on the same spot. From behind him Bondarchúk, an hussar he knew, jolted against him and looked angrily at him. Bondarchúk’s horse swerved and galloped past.

“How is it I am not moving? I have fallen, I am killed!” Nicholas asked and answered at the same instant. He was alone in the middle of a field. Instead of the moving horses and the cavalry’s backs, he saw nothing before him but the motionless earth and the stubble around him. There was warm blood under his arm. “No, I am wounded and the horse is killed.” His horse, Rook, tried to rise on his forelegs but fell back, pinning his rider’s leg. Blood was flowing from his head; he struggled but could not rise. Nicholas also tried to rise but fell back, his sabretache having become entangled in

the saddle. Where our men were, and where the French, he did not know. There was no one near.

Having disentangled his leg, Nicholas rose. "Where, on which side, was now the line that had so sharply divided the two armies?" he asked himself and could not answer. "Can something bad have happened to me?" he wondered as he got up: and at that moment he felt that something superfluous was hanging on his benumbed left arm. The wrist felt as if it were not his. Nicholas examined his hand carefully, vainly trying to find blood on it. "Ah, here are people coming," he thought joyfully, seeing some men running toward him. "They will help me!" In front came a man wearing a strange shako and a blue cloak, swarthy, sunburned, and with a hooked nose. Then came two more, and many more running behind. One of them said something strange, not in Russian. In among the hindmost of these men wearing similar shakos was a Russian hussar. He was being held by the arms and his horse was being led behind him.

"It must be the enemy with one of ours as a prisoner. Yes. Can it be that they will take me too? Who are these men?" thought Nicholas, scarcely believing his eyes. "Can they be French?" He looked at the approaching French soldiers, and though but a moment before he had been galloping to get at them and hack them to pieces, their proximity now seemed so awful that he could not believe his eyes. "Who are they? Why are they running? Can they be coming at me? And why? To kill me? *Me* whom everyone is so fond of?" Nicholas remembered his mother's love for him, and his family's, and his friends', and the enemy's intention to kill him seemed impossible. "But perhaps they may do it!" For more than ten seconds he stood not moving from the spot or realizing the situation. The foremost French soldier, the one with the hooked nose, was already so close that the expression of his face could be seen. And the excited, alien face of that enemy soldier with his bayonet hanging down, holding his breath, and running so lightly, frightened Nicholas. He seized his pistol and, instead of

firing it, flung it at the French soldier and then turned and ran away with all his might back toward some far off bushes. Nicholas did not now run away with the feeling of doubt and conflict with which he had trodden the Enns bridge, but with the feeling of a hare fleeing from the hounds. One single sentiment, that of fear for his young and happy life, possessed his whole being. Rapidly leaping the shallow furrow trenches, he continued to flee across the field with the impetuosity he used to show at catchplay, now and then turning his good-natured, pale, young face to look back. A shudder of terror went through him: "No, better not look," Nicholas thought, but having reached the bushes he glanced round once more. The enemy French soldiers had fallen behind, and just as he looked round the first French soldier changed his run to a walk and over his shoulder shouted something loudly to another French soldier farther back. Nicholas paused. "No, there's some mistake," he thought. "They can't have wanted to kill me." But at the same time, his left arm felt as heavy as if a seventy-pound weight were tied to it. He could run no more. The French soldier also stopped and took aim. Nicholas closed his eyes and stooped down. One bullet and then another whistled past him. Nicholas mustered his last remaining strength, took hold of his left hand with his right, and reached the bushes. Behind these were some Russian sharpshooters.

Farther on the left flank, infantry regiments that had been caught unawares in the outskirts of the wood ran out of it, the different companies getting mixed, and retreated as a disorderly crowd. One soldier, in his fear, uttered the senseless cry, "Cut off!" that is so terrible in battle, and that word infected the whole crowd with a feeling of panic.

"Surrounded! Cut off? We're lost!" shouted the fugitives.

The moment he heard the firing and the cry from behind, the Russian general realized that something dreadful had happened to his regiment, and the thought that he, an exemplary officer of many years' service who had never been to blame, might be held responsible at headquarters for

negligence or inefficiency so staggered him that, forgetting the recalcitrant German colonel, his own dignity as a Russian general, and above all quite forgetting the danger and all regard for self-preservation, he clutched the crupper of his saddle and, spurring his horse, galloped forward to the regiment under a hail of bullets which fell around, but fortunately missed him. His one desire was to know what was happening and at any cost correct, or remedy, the mistake if he had made one, so that he, an exemplary officer of twenty-two years' service, who had never been censured, should not be held to blame.

Having galloped safely through the French, the Russian general reached a field behind the grove across which our men, regardless of orders, were running and descending the valley. That moment of moral hesitation which decides the fate of battles had arrived. Would this disorderly crowd of soldiers attend to the voice of their general, or would they, disregarding him, continue their flight? Despite the Russian general's desperate shouts that used to seem so terrible to the soldiers, despite his furious purple countenance distorted out of all likeness to his former self, and the flourishing of his saber, his soldiers all continued to run, talking, firing into the air, and disobeying orders. The moral hesitation which decided the fate of battles was evidently culminating in a panic.

The Russian general had a fit of coughing as a result of shouting and of the powder smoke and stopped in despair. Everything seemed lost. But at that moment the French who were attacking, suddenly and without any apparent reason, ran back and disappeared from the outskirts, and Russian sharpshooters showed themselves in the grove. It was Captain Timokhin's company, which alone had maintained its order in the wood and, having lain in ambush in a ditch, now attacked the French unexpectedly. Captain Timokhin, armed only with a sword, had rushed at the enemy with such a desperate cry and such mad, drunken determination that, taken by surprise, the French had thrown down their muskets and run. Dolokhov, running

beside Captain Timokhin, killed a French soldier at close quarters and was the first to seize a surrendering French officer by his collar. Our fugitives returned back to the front, the battalions re-formed, and the French who had nearly cut our left flank in half were for the moment repulsed. Our reserve units were able to join up, and the fight was at an end. The regimental commander and Major Ekonómov had stopped beside a bridge, letting the retreating companies pass by them, when Dolokhov came up and took hold of the commander's stirrup, almost leaning against him. He was wearing a bluish coat of broadcloth, he had no knapsack or cap, his head was bandaged, and over his shoulder, a French munition pouch was slung. Dolokhov had an officer's sword in his hand. He was pale, his blue eyes looked impudently into the commander's face, and his lips were smiling. Though the commander was occupied in giving instructions to Major Ekonómov, he could not help taking notice of Dolokhov.

"Your excellency, here are two trophies," said Dolokhov, pointing to the French sword and pouch. "I have taken an officer prisoner. I stopped the company." Dolokhov breathed heavily from weariness and spoke in abrupt sentences. "The whole company can bear witness. I beg you will remember this, commander!"

"All right, all right," replied the commander, and turned to Major Ekonómov.

But Dolokhov did not go away; he untied the handkerchief around his head, pulled it off, and showed the blood congealed on his hair.

"A bayonet wound. I remained at the front. Remember, commander!"

Artillery Captain Tushin's battery had been forgotten and only at the very end of the action did Major-General Bagration, still hearing the cannonade in the center, send his orderly staff officer, and later Andrei also, to order the battery to retire as quickly as possible. When the supports attached to Artillery Captain Tushin's battery had been moved away in the

middle of the action by someone's order, the battery had continued firing and was only not captured by the French because the enemy could not surmise that anyone could have the effrontery to continue firing from four quite undefended guns. On the contrary, the energetic action of that battery led the French to suppose that here—in the center—the main Russian forces were concentrated. Twice they had attempted to attack this point, but on each occasion had been driven back by grapeshot from the four isolated guns on the hillock.

Soon after Major-General Bagration had left him, Artillery Captain Tushin had succeeded in setting fire to the village of Schön Grabern.

“Look at them scurrying! It's burning! Just see the smoke! Fine! Grand! Look at the smoke, the smoke!” exclaimed his artillerymen, brightening up.

All of Artillery Captain Tushin's guns, without waiting for orders, were being fired in the direction of the conflagration. As if urging each other on, his soldiers cried at each shot: “Fine! That's good! Look at it... Grand!” The fire, fanned by the breeze, was rapidly spreading. The enemy French columns that had advanced beyond the village went back; but as though in revenge for this failure, the French placed ten guns to the right of the village and began firing them at Artillery Captain Tushin's battery.

In their childlike glee, aroused by the fire and their luck in successfully cannonading the French, Artillery Captain Tushin's artillerymen only noticed this battery when two balls, and then four more, fell among our guns, one knocking over two horses and another tearing off a munition-wagon driver's leg. Their spirits once roused were, however, not diminished, but only changed character. The horses were replaced by others from a reserve gun carriage, the wounded were carried away, and the four guns were turned against the ten-gun battery. Artillery Captain Tushin's companion officer had been killed at the beginning of the engagement and within an hour seventeen of the forty men of the guns' crews had been disabled, but the artillerymen were still as merry and lively as ever. Twice

they noticed the French appearing below them, and then they fired grapeshot at them.

Artillery Captain Tushin, moving feebly and awkwardly, kept telling his orderly to “refill my pipe for that one!” and then, scattering sparks from it, ran forward shading his eyes with his small hand to look at the French.

“Smack at ‘em like General Mack, lads!” he kept saying, seizing the guns by the wheels and working the screws himself.

Amid the smoke, deafened by the incessant reports which always made him jump, Artillery Captain Tushin not taking his pipe from his mouth ran from gun to gun, now aiming, now counting the charges, now giving orders about replacing dead or wounded horses and harnessing fresh ones, and shouting in his feeble voice, so high pitched and irresolute. His face grew more and more animated. Only when a man was killed or wounded did he frown and turn away from the sight, shouting angrily at the men who, as is always the case, hesitated about lifting the injured or dead. His soldiers, for the most part handsome fellows and, as is always the case in an artillery company, a head and shoulders taller and twice as broad as their officer—all looked at Artillery Captain Tushin like children in an embarrassing situation, and the expression on his face was invariably reflected on theirs.

Owing to the terrible uproar and the necessity for concentration and activity, Artillery Captain Tushin did not experience the slightest unpleasant sense of fear, and the thought that he might be killed or badly wounded never occurred to him. On the contrary, he became more and more elated. It seemed to him that it was a very long time ago, almost a day, since he had first seen the enemy and fired the first shot, and that the corner of the field he stood on was well-known and familiar ground. Though Artillery Captain Tushin thought of everything, considered everything, and did everything the best of officers could do in his position, he was in a state akin to feverish delirium or drunkenness.

From the deafening sounds of his own guns around him, the whistle and thud of the enemy's cannon balls, from the flushed and perspiring faces of the crew bustling round the guns, from the sight of the blood of men and horses, from the little puffs of smoke on the enemy's side (always followed by a ball flying past and striking the earth, a man, a gun, a horse), from the sight of all these things a fantastic world of his own had taken possession of his brain and at that moment afforded him pleasure. The enemy's guns were in his fancy not guns but pipes from which occasional puffs were blown by an invisible smoker.

"There... he's puffing again," muttered Artillery Captain Tushin to himself, as a small cloud rose from the hill and was borne in a streak to the left by the wind.

"Now look out for the ball... we'll throw it back."

"What do you want?" asked an artilleryman, standing close by, who heard him muttering.

"Nothing... only a shell..." he answered.

"Come along, our Matvévna!" he said to himself. "Matvévna" (Daughter of Mathew) was the name his fancy gave to the farthest gun of the battery, which was large and of an old pattern. The French swarming round their guns seemed to him like ants. In that world, the handsome drunkard Number One of the second gun's crew was called "Uncle"; Artillery Captain Tushin looked at him more often than at anyone else and took delight in his every movement. The sound of musketry at the foot of the hill, now diminishing, now increasing, seemed like someone's breathing. He listened intently to the ebb and flow of these sounds.

"Ah! Breathing again, breathing!" Artillery Captain Tushin muttered to himself.

He imagined himself as an enormously tall, powerful man who was throwing cannon balls at the French with both hands.

“Now then, Matvévna, dear old lady, don’t let me down!” he was saying as he moved from the gun, when a strange, unfamiliar voice called above his head: “Artillery Captain Tushin!”

Artillery Captain Tushin turned round in dismay. It was the staff officer who had turned him out of the booth at Grunth. He was shouting in a gasping voice:

“Are you mad? You have twice been ordered to retreat, and you...”

“Why are they down on me?” thought Artillery Captain Tushin, looking in alarm at his superior.

“I... don’t...” he muttered, holding up two fingers to his cap. “I...”

But the staff officer did not finish what he wanted to say. A cannon ball, flying close to him, caused him to duck and bend over his horse. He paused, and just as he was about to say something more, another ball stopped him. He turned his horse and galloped off.

“Retire! All to retire!” he shouted from a distance.

The soldiers laughed. A moment later, an adjutant arrived with the same order.

It was Andrei. The first thing he saw on riding up to the space where Artillery Captain Tushin’s guns were stationed was an unharnessed horse with a broken leg, that lay screaming piteously beside the harnessed horses. Blood was gushing from its leg as from a spring. Among the limbers lay several dead men. One ball after another passed over as he approached and he felt a nervous shudder run down his spine. But the mere thought of being afraid roused him again. “I cannot be afraid,” thought Andrei, and dismounted slowly among the guns. He delivered the order and did not leave the battery. He decided to have the guns removed from their positions and withdrawn in his presence. Together with Artillery Captain Tushin, stepping across the bodies and under a terrible fire from the French, Andrei attended to the removal of the guns.

“A staff officer was here a minute ago, but skipped off,” said an artilleryman to Andrei. “Not like your honor!”

Andrei said nothing to Artillery Captain Tushin. They were both so busy as to seem not to notice one another. When having limbered up the only two cannon that remained uninjured out of the four, they began moving down the hill (one shattered gun and one unicorn were left behind), Andrei rode up to Artillery Captain Tushin.

“Well, till we meet again...” Andrei said, holding out his hand to Artillery Captain Tushin.

“Good-by, my dear fellow,” said Artillery Captain Tushin. “Dear soul! Good-by, my dear fellow!” and for some unknown reason tears suddenly filled his eyes.

The wind had fallen and black clouds, merging with the powder smoke, hung low over the field of battle on the horizon. It was growing dark and the glow of two conflagrations was the more conspicuous. The cannonade was dying down, but the rattle of musketry behind and on the right sounded oftener and nearer. As soon as Artillery Captain Tushin with his guns, continually driving round or coming upon wounded men, was out of range of fire and had descended into the dip, he was met by some of the staff, among them the staff officer and Corporal Zherkov, who had been twice sent to Artillery Captain Tushin’s battery but had never reached it. Interrupting one another, they all gave, and transmitted, orders as to how to proceed, reprimanding and reproaching him. Artillery Captain Tushin gave no orders, and, silently—fearing to speak because at every word he felt ready to weep without knowing why—rode behind on his artillery nag. Though the orders were to abandon the wounded, many of them dragged themselves after troops and begged for seats on the gun carriages. The jaunty infantry officer who just before the battle had rushed out of Artillery Captain Tushin’s wattle shed was laid, with a bullet in his stomach, on “Matvévna’s” carriage. At the foot of the hill, a pale Nichola, supporting

one hand with the other, came up to Artillery Captain Tushin and asked for a seat.

“Captain, for God’s sake! I’ve hurt my arm,” Nicholas said timidly. “For God’s sake... I can’t walk. For God’s sake!”

It was plain that Nicholas had already repeatedly asked for a lift and been refused. He asked in a hesitating, piteous voice.

“Tell them to give me a seat, for God’s sake!”

“Give him a seat,” said Artillery Captain Tushin. “Lay a cloak for him to sit on, lad,” he said, addressing his favorite soldier. “And where is the wounded officer?”

“He has been set down. He died,” replied someone.

“Help him up. Sit down, dear fellow, sit down! Spread out the cloak, Antónov.”

With one hand Nicholas supported the other; he was pale and his jaw trembled, shivering feverishly. Nicholas was placed on “Matvévna,” the gun from which they had removed the dead officer. The cloak they spread under him was wet with blood which stained his breeches and arm.

“What, are you wounded, my lad?” said Artillery Captain Tushin, approaching the gun on which Nicholas sat.

“No, it’s a sprain.”

“Then what is this blood on the gun carriage?” inquired Artillery Captain Tushin.

“It was the officer, your honor, stained it,” answered the artilleryman, wiping away the blood with his coat sleeve, as if apologizing for the state of his gun.

It was all that they could do to get the guns up the rise aided by the infantry, and having reached the village of Gruntersdorf they halted. It had grown so dark that one could not distinguish the uniforms ten paces off, and the firing had begun to subside. Suddenly, nearby on the right, shouting and firing were again heard. Flashes of shot gleamed in the darkness. This was

the last French attack and was met by soldiers who had sheltered in the village houses. They all rushed out of the village again, but Artillery Captain Tushin's guns could not move, and the artillerymen, Artillery Captain Tushin, and Nicholas exchanged silent glances as they awaited their fate. The firing died down and soldiers, talking eagerly, streamed out of a side street.

"Not hurt, Petróv?" asked one.

"We've given it 'em hot, mate! They won't make another push now," said another.

"You couldn't see a thing. How they shot at their own fellows! Nothing could be seen. Pitch-dark, brother! Isn't there something to drink?"

The French had been repulsed for the last time. And again and again in the complete darkness Artillery Captain Tushin's guns moved forward, surrounded by the humming infantry as by a frame.

In the darkness, it seemed as though a gloomy unseen river was flowing always in one direction, humming with whispers and talk and the sound of hoofs and wheels. Amid the general rumble, the groans and voices of the wounded were more distinctly heard than any other sound in the darkness of the night. The gloom that enveloped the army was filled with their groans, which seemed to melt into one with the darkness of the night. After a while the moving mass became agitated, someone rode past on a white horse followed by his suite, and said something in passing: "What did he say? Where to, now? Halt, is it? Did he thank us?" came eager questions from all sides. The whole moving mass began pressing closer together and a report spread that they were ordered to halt: evidently those in front had halted. All remained where they were in the middle of the muddy road.

Fires were lighted and the talk became more audible. Captain Artillery Captain Tushin, having given orders to his company, sent a soldier to find a dressing station or a doctor for Nicholas, and sat down by a bonfire the soldiers had kindled on the road. Nicholas, too, dragged himself to the fire.

From pain, cold, and damp, a feverish shivering shook his whole body. Drowsiness was irresistibly mastering him, but he kept awake by an excruciating pain in his sprained arm, for which he could find no satisfactory position. Nicholas kept closing his eyes and then again looking at the fire, which seemed to him dazzlingly red, and at the feeble, round-shouldered figure of Artillery Captain Tushin who was sitting cross-legged like a Turk beside him. Artillery Captain Tushin's large, kind, intelligent eyes were fixed with sympathy and commiseration on Nicholas, who saw that Artillery Captain Tushin with his whole heart wished to help him but could not.

From all sides were heard the footsteps and talk of the infantry, who were walking, driving past, and settling down all around. The sound of voices, the tramping feet, the horses' hoofs moving in mud, the crackling of wood fires near and afar, merged into one tremulous rumble.

It was no longer, as before, a dark, unseen river flowing through the gloom, but a dark sea swelling and gradually subsiding after a storm. Nicholas looked at and listened listlessly to what passed before and around him. An infantryman came to the fire, squatted on his heels, held his hands to the blaze, and turned away his face.

"You don't mind your honor?" he asked Artillery Captain Tushin. "I've lost my company, your honor. I don't know where... such bad luck!"

Along with the infantryman, an infantry officer with a bandaged cheek came up to the bonfire, and addressing Artillery Captain Tushin, asked him to have the guns moved a trifle to let a wagon go past. After the infantry officer had gone, two soldiers rushed to the campfire. They were quarreling and fighting desperately, each trying to snatch from the other a boot they were both holding on to.

"You picked it up?... I dare say! You're very smart!" one of them shouted hoarsely.

Then a thin, pale soldier, his neck bandaged with a bloodstained leg band, came up and in angry tones asked the artillerymen for water.

“Must one die like a dog?” said he.

Artillery Captain Tushin told them to give the man some water. Then a cheerful soldier ran up, begging a little fire for the infantry.

“A nice little hot torch for the infantry! Good luck to you, fellow countrymen. Thanks for the fire—we’ll return it with interest,” said he, carrying away into the darkness a glowing stick.

Next came four soldiers, carrying something heavy on a cloak, and passed by the fire. One of them stumbled.

“Who the devil has put the logs on the road?” snarled he.

“He’s dead—why carry him?” said another.

“Shut up!”

And they disappeared into the darkness with their load.

“Still aching?” Artillery Captain Tushin asked Nicholas in a whisper.

“Yes.”

“Your honor, you’re wanted by the general. He is in the hut here,” said a gunner, coming up to Artillery Captain Tushin.

“Coming, friend.”

Artillery Captain Tushin rose and, buttoning his greatcoat and pulling it straight, walked away from the fire.

Not far from the artillery campfire, in a hut that had been prepared for him, Major-General Bagration sat at dinner, talking with some commanding officers who had gathered at his quarters. The elderly company commander with the half-closed eyes was there greedily gnawing a mutton bone, and the Russian general who had served blamelessly for twenty-two years, flushed by a glass of vodka and the dinner; and the staff officer with the signet ring, and Corporal Zherkov, uneasily glancing at them all, and Andrei, pale, with compressed lips and feverishly glittering eyes.

In a corner of the hut stood a standard captured from the French, and the accountant with the naive face was feeling its texture, shaking his head in perplexity—perhaps because the banner really interested him, perhaps because it was hard for him, hungry as he was, to look on at a dinner where there was no place for him. In the next hut there was a French colonel who had been taken prisoner by our dragoons. Our officers were flocking in to look at him. Major-General Bagration was thanking the individual commanders and inquiring into details of the action and our losses. The Russian general under which Dolokhov served was informing Major-General Bagration that as soon as the action began he had withdrawn from the wood, mustered the men who were woodcutting, and, allowing the French to pass him, had made a bayonet charge with two battalions and had broken up the French troops.

“When I saw, Major-General Bagration, that their first battalion was disorganized, I stopped in the road and thought: ‘I’ll let them come on and will meet them with the fire of the whole battalion’—and that’s what I did.”

The Russian general had so wished to do this and was so sorry he had not managed to do it that it seemed to him as if it had really happened. Perhaps it might really have been so? Could one possibly make out amid all that confusion what did or did not happen?

“By the way, Major-General Bagration, I should inform you,” he continued—remembering Dolokhov’s conversation with General Kutuzov and his last interview with the gentleman-ranker—“that Private Dolokhov, who was reduced to the ranks, took a French officer prisoner in my presence and particularly distinguished himself.”

“I saw the cavalry attack there, your excellency,” chimed in Corporal Zherkov, looking uneasily around. He had not seen the cavalry all that day, but had heard about them from an infantry officer. “They broke up two squares, your excellency.”

Several of those present smiled at Corporal Zherkov's words, expecting one of his usual jokes, but noticing that what he was saying redounded to the glory of our arms and of the day's work, they assumed a serious expression, though many of them knew that what he was saying was a lie devoid of any foundation. Major-General Bagration turned to the old colonel:

"Gentlemen, I thank you all; all arms have behaved heroically: infantry, cavalry, and artillery. How was it that two guns were abandoned in the center?" he inquired, searching with his eyes for someone. (Major-General Bagration did not ask about the guns on the left flank; he knew that all the guns there had been abandoned at the very beginning of the action.) "I think I sent you?" he added, turning to the staff officer on duty.

"One was damaged," answered the staff officer, "and the other I can't understand. I was there all the time giving orders and had only just left... It is true that it was hot there," he added, modestly.

Someone mentioned that Captain Artillery Captain Tushin was bivouacking close to the village and had already been sent for.

"Oh, but you were there?" said Major-General Bagration, addressing Andrei.

"Of course, we only just missed one another," said the staff officer, with a smile to Andrei.

"I had not the pleasure of seeing you," said Andrei, coldly and abruptly.

All were silent. Artillery Captain Tushin appeared at the threshold and made his way timidly from behind the backs of the generals. As he stepped past the generals in the crowded hut, feeling embarrassed as he always was by the sight of his superiors, he did not notice the staff of the banner and stumbled over it. Several of those present laughed.

"How was it a gun was abandoned?" asked Major-General Bagration, frowning, not so much at the captain as at those who were laughing, among whom Corporal Zherkov laughed loudest.

Only now, when he was confronted by the stern authorities, did his guilt and the disgrace of having lost two guns and yet remaining alive present themselves to Artillery Captain Tushin in all their horror. He had been so excited that he had not thought about it until that moment. The officers' laughter confused him still more. He stood before Major-General Bagration with his lower jaw trembling and was hardly able to mutter: "I don't know... your excellency... I had no men... your excellency."

"You might have taken some from the covering troops."

Artillery Captain Tushin did not say that there were no covering troops, though that was perfectly true. He was afraid of getting some other officer into trouble, and silently fixed his eyes on Major-General Bagration as a schoolboy who has blundered looks at an examiner.

The silence lasted some time. Major-General Bagration, apparently not wishing to be severe, found nothing to say; the others did not venture to intervene. Andrei looked at Artillery Captain Tushin from under his brows and his fingers twitched nervously.

"Major-General Bagration!" Andrei broke the silence with his abrupt voice, "you were pleased to send me to Captain Artillery Captain Tushin's battery. I went there and found two thirds of the men and horses knocked out, two guns smashed, and no supports at all."

Major-General Bagration and Artillery Captain Tushin looked with equal intentness at Andrei, who spoke with suppressed agitation.

"And, if Major-General Bagration will allow me to express my opinion," he continued, "we owe today's success chiefly to the action of that battery and the heroic endurance of Captain Artillery Captain Tushin and his company," and without awaiting a reply, Andrei rose and left the table.

Major-General Bagration looked at Artillery Captain Tushin, evidently reluctant to show distrust in Andrei's emphatic opinion yet not feeling able

fully to credit it, bent his head, and told Artillery Captain Tushin that he could go. Andrei went out with him.

“Thank you; you saved me, my dear fellow!” said Artillery Captain Tushin.

Andrei gave him a look, but said nothing and went away. He felt sad and depressed. It was all so strange, so unlike what he had hoped.

“Who are they? Why are they here? What do they want? And when will all this end?” thought Nicholas, looking at the changing shadows before him. The pain in his sprained arm became more and more intense. Irresistible drowsiness overpowered him, red rings danced before his eyes, and the impression of those voices and faces and a sense of loneliness merged with the physical pain. It was they, these soldiers—wounded and unwounded—it was they who were crushing, weighing down, and twisting the sinews and scorching the flesh of his sprained arm and shoulder. To rid himself of them he closed his eyes.

For a moment Nicholas dozed, but in that short interval innumerable things appeared to him in a dream: his mother and her large white hand, orphan niece Sonya’s thin little shoulders, Natasha’s eyes and laughter, Denisov with his voice and mustache, and Lieutenant Telyánin and all that affair with the Lieutenant and Colonel Bogdánich. That affair was the same thing as this soldier with the harsh voice, and it was that affair and this soldier that were so agonizingly, incessantly pulling and pressing his arm and always dragging it in one direction. He tried to get away from them, but they would not for an instant let his shoulder move a hair’s breadth. It would not ache—it would be well—if only they did not pull it, but it was impossible to get rid of them.

Nicholas opened his eyes and looked up. The black canopy of night hung less than a yard above the glow of the charcoal. Flakes of falling snow were fluttering in that light. Artillery Captain Tushin had not returned, the

doctor had not come. He was alone now, except for a soldier who was sitting naked at the other side of the fire, warming his thin yellow body.

“Nobody wants me!” thought Nicholas. “There is no one to help me or pity me. Yet I was once at home, strong, happy, and loved.” Nicholas sighed and, doing so, groaned involuntarily.

“Eh, is anything hurting you?” asked the naked soldier, shaking his shirt out over the fire, and not waiting for an answer he gave a grunt and added: “What a lot of men have been crippled today—frightful!”

Nicholas did not listen to the soldier. He looked at the snowflakes fluttering above the fire and remembered a Russian winter at his warm, bright home, his fluffy fur coat, his quickly gliding sleigh, his healthy body, and all the affection and care of his family. “And why did I come here?” Nicholas wondered.

The next day the French army did not renew their attack, and the remnant of Major-General Bagration’s detachment was reunited to General Kutuzov’s army.

BOOK 3: 1805



*B*aron Vasili was not a man who deliberately thought out his plans. Still less did he think of injuring anyone for his own advantage. He was merely a man of the world who had got on and to whom getting on had become a habit. Schemes and devices for which he never rightly accounted to himself, but which formed the whole interest of his life, were constantly shaping themselves in his mind, arising from the circumstances and persons he met. Of these plans he had not merely one or two in his head but dozens, some only beginning to form themselves, some approaching achievement, and some in course of disintegration. He did not, for instance, say to himself: "This man now has influence, I must gain his confidence and friendship and through him obtain a special grant." Nor did he say to himself: "Pierre is now a rich man, I must entice him to marry my daughter and lend me the forty thousand rubles I need." But when he came across a man of position his instinct immediately told him that this man could be useful, and without any premeditation Baron Vasili took the first opportunity to gain his confidence, flatter him, become intimate with him, and finally make his request.

Baron Vasili had Pierre at hand in Moscow and procured for him an appointment as Gentleman of the Bedchamber, which at that time conferred the status of Councilor of State, and insisted on the young man

accompanying him to St. Petersburg and staying at his house. With apparent absent-mindedness, yet with unhesitating assurance that he was doing the right thing, Baron Vasili did everything to get Pierre to marry his daughter Helene. Had he thought out his plans beforehand he could not have been so natural and shown such unaffected familiarity in intercourse with everybody both above and below him in social standing. Something always drew him toward those richer and more powerful than himself and he had rare skill in seizing the most opportune moment for making use of people.

Pierre, on unexpectedly becoming the new count and a rich man, felt himself after his recent loneliness and freedom from cares so beset and preoccupied that only in bed was he able to be by himself. He had to sign papers, to present himself at government offices, the purpose of which was not clear to him, to question his chief steward, to visit his estate near Moscow, and to receive many people who formerly did not even wish to know of his existence but would now have been offended and grieved had he chosen not to see them. These different people—businessmen, relations, and acquaintances alike—were all disposed to treat the young heir in the most friendly and flattering manner: they were all evidently firmly convinced of Pierre's noble qualities. He was always hearing such words as: "With your remarkable kindness," or, "With your excellent heart," "You are yourself so honorable, Count," or, "Were he as clever as you," and so on, till he began sincerely to believe in his own exceptional kindness and extraordinary intelligence, the more so as in the depth of his heart it had always seemed to him that he really was very kind and intelligent. Even people who had formerly been spiteful toward him and evidently unfriendly now became gentle and affectionate. Katerina, with the long waist and hair plastered down like a doll's, had come into Pierre's room after the funeral. With drooping eyes and frequent blushes she told him she was very sorry about their past misunderstandings and did not now feel she had a right to ask him for anything, except only for permission, after the blow she had

received, to remain for a few weeks longer in the house she so loved and where she had sacrificed so much. She could not refrain from weeping at these words. Touched that Katerina, so statuesque, could so change, Pierre took her hand and begged her forgiveness, without knowing what for. From that day Katerina quite changed toward Pierre and began knitting a striped scarf for him.

“Do this for my sake, *my dear*; after all, she had to put up with a great deal from the deceased,” said Baron Vasili to Pierre, handing him a deed to sign for Katerina’s benefit.

Baron Vasili had come to the conclusion that it was necessary to throw this bone—a bill for thirty thousand rubles—to Katerina that it might not occur to her to speak of his share in the affair of the inlaid portfolio. Pierre signed the deed and after that Katerina grew still kinder. Katerina’s sisters also became affectionate to him, especially the youngest, the pretty one with the mole, who often made him feel confused by her smiles and her own confusion when meeting him.

It seemed so natural to Pierre that everyone should like him, and it would have seemed so unnatural had anyone disliked him, that he could not but believe in the sincerity of those around him. Besides, he had no time to ask himself whether these people were sincere or not. He was always busy and always felt in a state of mild and cheerful intoxication. He felt as though he were the center of some important and general movement; that something was constantly expected of him, that if he did not do it he would grieve and disappoint many people, but if he did this and that, all would be well; and he did what was demanded of him, but still that happy result always remained in the future.

More than anyone else, Baron Vasili took possession of Pierre’s affairs and of Pierre himself in those early days. From the death of Count Bezukhov he did not let go his hold of Pierre. Baron Vasili had the air of a man oppressed by business, weary and suffering, who yet would not, for

pity's sake, leave this helpless youth who, after all, was the son of his old friend and the possessor of such enormous wealth, to the caprice of fate and the designs of rogues. During the few days he spent in Moscow after the death of Count Bezukhov, he would call Pierre, or go to him himself, and tell him what ought to be done in a tone of weariness and assurance, as if he were adding every time: "You know I am overwhelmed with business and it is purely out of charity that I trouble myself about you, and you also know quite well that what I propose is the only thing possible."

"Well, my dear fellow, tomorrow we are off at last," said Baron Vasili one day, closing his eyes and fingering Pierre's elbow, speaking as if he were saying something which had long since been agreed upon and could not now be altered. "We start tomorrow and I'm giving you a place in my carriage. I am very glad. All our important business here is now settled, and I ought to have been off long ago. Here is something I have received from the chancellor. I asked him for you, and you have been entered in the diplomatic corps and made a Gentleman of the Bedchamber. The diplomatic career now lies open before you."

Notwithstanding the tone of wearied assurance with which these words were pronounced, Pierre, who had so long been considering his career, wished to make some suggestion. But Baron Vasili interrupted him in the special deep cooing tone, precluding the possibility of interrupting his speech, which he used in extreme cases when special persuasion was needed.

My dear, I did this for my own sake, to satisfy my conscience, and there is nothing to thank me for. No one has ever complained yet of being too much loved; and besides, you are free, you could throw it up tomorrow. But you will see everything for yourself when you get to St. Petersburg. It is high time for you to get away from these terrible recollections." Baron Vasili sighed. "Yes, yes, my boy. And my valet can go in your carriage. Ah! I was nearly forgetting," he added. "You know, *my dear*, your father and I

had some accounts to settle, so I have received what was due from the Ryazán estate and will keep it; you won't require it. We'll go into the accounts later."

By "what was due from the Ryazán estate" Baron Vasili meant several thousand rubles quitrent received from Count Bezukhov's serfs, which Baron Vasili had retained for himself.

In St. Petersburg, as in Moscow, Pierre found the same atmosphere of gentleness and affection. He could not refuse the post, or rather the rank (for he did nothing), that Baron Vasili had procured for him, and acquaintances, invitations, and social occupations were so numerous that, even more than in Moscow, he felt a sense of bewilderment, bustle, and continual expectation of some good, always in front of him but never attained.

Of his former bachelor acquaintances many were no longer in St. Petersburg. The Guards had gone to the front; Dolokhov had been reduced to the ranks; Anatole was in the army somewhere in the provinces; Andrei was abroad; so Pierre had not the opportunity to spend his nights as he used to like to spend them, or to open his mind by intimate talks with a friend older than himself and whom he respected. His whole time was taken up with dinners and balls and was spent chiefly at Baron Vasili's house in the company of his stout wife, and his beautiful daughter Helene.

Like the others, Anna Pavlovna showed Pierre the change of attitude toward him that had taken place in society.

Formerly in Anna Pavlovna's presence, Pierre had always felt that what he was saying was out of place, tactless and unsuitable, that remarks which seemed to him clever while they formed in his mind became foolish as soon as he uttered them, while on the contrary Hippolyte's stupidest remarks came out clever and apt. Now everything Pierre said was *charming*. Even if Anna Pavlovna did not say so, he could see that she wished to and only refrained out of regard for his modesty.

In the beginning of the winter of 1805-6 Pierre received one of Anna Pavlovna's usual pink notes with an invitation to which was added: "You will find the beautiful Helene here, whom it is always delightful to see."

When he read that sentence, Pierre felt for the first time that some link which other people recognized had grown up between himself and Helene, and that thought both alarmed him, as if some obligation were being imposed on him which he could not fulfill, and pleased him as an entertaining supposition.

Anna Pavlovna's "At Home" party was like her former party, only the novelty she offered her guests this time was not the viscount, but a diplomatist fresh from Berlin with the very latest details of the Tzar's visit to Napoleon in Potsdam, and of how the Tzar and Napoleon were now two august friends who had pledged themselves in an indissoluble alliance to uphold the cause of justice against the enemy of the human race. Anna Pavlovna received Pierre with a shade of melancholy, evidently relating to the Pierre's recent loss by the death of Count Bezukhov (everyone constantly considered it a duty to assure Pierre that he was greatly afflicted by the death of the father he had hardly known), and her melancholy was just like the august melancholy she showed at the mention of her most august Mother of the Tzar. Pierre felt flattered by this. Anna Pavlovna arranged the different groups in her drawing room with her habitual skill. The large group, in which were Baron Vasili and the generals, had the benefit of the diplomat. Another group was at the tea table. Pierre wished to join the former, but Anna Pavlovna—who was in the excited condition of a commander on a battlefield to whom thousands of new and brilliant ideas occur which there is hardly time to put in action—seeing Pierre, touched his sleeve with her finger, saying:

"Wait a bit, I have something in view for you this evening." (She glanced at Helene and smiled at her.) "My dear Helene, be charitable to my poor aunt who adores you. Go and keep her company for ten minutes. And

that it will not be too dull, here is Pierre who will not refuse to accompany you.”

Beautiful Helene went to the aunt, but Anna Pavlovna detained Pierre for a moment, looking as if she had to give some final necessary instructions.

“Isn’t Helene exquisite?” she said to Pierre, pointing to Helene’s stately beauty as she glided away. “And how she carries herself! For so young a girl, such tact, such masterly perfection of manner! It comes from her heart. Happy the man who wins her! With her the least worldly of men would occupy a most brilliant position in society. Don’t you think so? I only wanted to know your opinion,” and Anna Pavlovna let Pierre go.

Pierre, in reply, sincerely agreed with her as to Helene’s perfection of manner. If he ever thought of Helene, it was just of her beauty and her remarkable skill in appearing silently dignified in society.

The old aunt received Helene and Pierre in her corner, but seemed desirous of hiding her adoration for Helene and inclined rather to show her fear of Anna Pavlovna. The old aunt looked at her niece, Anna Pavlovna, as if inquiring what she was to do with these people. On leaving them, Anna Pavlovna again touched Pierre’s sleeve, saying: “I hope you won’t say that it is dull in my house again,” and she glanced at Helene.

Helene smiled, with a look implying that she did not admit the possibility of anyone seeing her without being enchanted. The old aunt coughed, swallowed, and said in French that she was very pleased to see Helene, then she turned to Pierre with the same words of welcome and the same look. In the middle of a dull and halting conversation, Helene turned to Pierre with the beautiful bright smile that she gave to everyone. Pierre was so used to that smile, and it had so little meaning for him, that he paid no attention to it. The old aunt was just speaking of a collection of snuffboxes that had belonged to Pierre’s father, Count Bezukhov, and

showed them her own box. Helene asked to see the portrait of the aunt's husband on the box lid.

"That is probably the work of Vinesse," said Pierre, mentioning a celebrated miniaturist, and he leaned over the table to take the snuffbox while trying to hear what was being said at the other table.

Pierre half rose, meaning to go round, but the old aunt handed him the snuffbox, passing it across Helene's back. Helene stooped forward to make room, and looked round with a smile. She was, as always at evening parties, wearing a dress such as was then fashionable, cut very low at front and back. Her bust, which had always seemed like marble to Pierre, was so close to him that his shortsighted eyes could not but perceive the living charm of her neck and shoulders, so near to his lips that he need only have bent his head a little to have touched them. He was conscious of the warmth of Helene's body, the scent of perfume, and the creaking of her corset as she moved. He did not see her marble beauty forming a complete whole with her dress, but all the charm of her body only covered by her garments. And having once seen this Pierre could not help being aware of it, just as we cannot renew an illusion we have once seen through.

"So you have never noticed before how beautiful I am?" Helene seemed to say. "You had not noticed that I am a woman? Yes, I am a woman who may belong to anyone—to you too," said her glance. And at that moment Pierre felt that Helene not only could, but must, be his wife, and that it could not be otherwise.

Pierre knew this at that moment as surely as if he had been standing at the altar with her. How and when this would be he did not know, he did not even know if it would be a good thing (he even felt, he knew not why, that it would be a bad thing), but he knew it would happen.

Pierre dropped his eyes, lifted them again, and wished once more to see Helene as a distant beauty far removed from him, as he had seen her every day until then, but he could no longer do it. He could not, any more than a

man who has been looking at a tuft of steppe grass through the mist and taking it for a tree can again take it for a tree after he has once recognized it to be a tuft of grass. Helene was terribly close to him. She already had power over him, and between them there was no longer any barrier except the barrier of his own will.

“Well, I will leave you in your little corner,” came Anna Pavlovna’s voice, “I see you are all right there.”

And Pierre, anxiously trying to remember whether he had done anything reprehensible, looked round with a blush. It seemed to Pierre that everyone knew what had happened to him as he knew it himself.

A little later when Pierre went up to the large circle, Anna Pavlovna said to him: “I hear you are refitting your St. Petersburg house?”

This was true. The architect had told him that it was necessary, and Pierre, without knowing why, was having his enormous St. Petersburg house done up.

“That’s a good thing, but don’t move from Baron Vasili’s. It is good to have a friend like him,” she said, smiling at Baron Vasili. “I know something about that. Don’t I? And you are still so young. You need advice. Don’t be angry with me for exercising an old woman’s privilege.”

Anna Pavlovna paused, as women always do, expecting something after they have mentioned their age. “If you marry it will be a different thing,” she continued, uniting them both in one glance. Pierre did not look at Helene nor she at him. But she was just as terribly close to him. Pierre muttered something and colored.

Later on, when Pierre got home he could not sleep for a long time for thinking of what had happened. What had happened? Nothing. He had merely understood that the woman he had known as a child, of whom when her beauty was mentioned he had said absent-mindedly: “Yes, Helene is good looking,” he had understood that this woman might belong to him.

“But Helene is stupid. I have myself said she is stupid,” he thought. “There is something nasty, something wrong, in the feeling she excites in me. I have been told that her brother Anatole was in love with her and she with him, that there was quite a scandal and that that’s why he was sent away. Hippolyte is her brother... Baron Vasili is her father... It’s bad...” he reflected, but while he was thinking this (the reflection was still incomplete), he caught himself smiling and was conscious that another line of thought had sprung up, and while thinking of her worthlessness he was also dreaming of how she would be his wife, how she would love him become quite different, and how all he had thought and heard of her might be false. And he again saw her not as the daughter of Baron Vasili, but visualized her whole body only veiled by its gray dress. “But no! Why did this thought never occur to me before?” and again he told himself that it was impossible, that there would be something unnatural, and as it seemed to him dishonorable, in this marriage. Pierre recalled her former words and looks and the words and looks of those who had seen them together. He recalled Anna Pavlovna’s words and looks when she spoke to him about his house, recalled thousands of such hints from Baron Vasili and others, and was seized by terror lest he had already, in some way, bound himself to do something that was evidently wrong and that he ought not to do. But at the very time he was expressing this conviction to himself, in another part of his mind her image rose in all its womanly beauty.

In November, 1805, Baron Vasili had to go on a tour of inspection in four different provinces. He had arranged this for himself so as to visit his neglected estates at the same time and pick up his son Anatole where his regiment was stationed, and take him to visit Baron Bolkonski in order to arrange a match for him with Marya, the daughter of that rich old man. But before leaving home and undertaking these new affairs, Baron Vasili had to settle matters with Pierre, who, it is true, had latterly spent whole days at home, that is, in Baron Vasili’s house where he was staying, and had been

absurd, excited, and foolish in Helene's presence (as a lover should be), but had not yet proposed to her.

"This is all very fine, but things must be settled," said Baron Vasili to himself, with a sorrowful sigh, one morning, feeling that Pierre who was under such obligations to him ("But never mind that") was not behaving very well in this matter. "Youth, frivolity... well, God be with him," thought he, relishing his own goodness of heart, "but it must be brought to a head. The day after tomorrow will be Helene's name day. I will invite two or three people, and if he does not understand what he ought to do then it will be my affair—yes, my affair. I am her father."

Six weeks after Anna Pavlovna's "At Home" party and after the sleepless night when Pierre had decided that to marry Helene would be a calamity and that he ought to avoid her and go away, he, despite that decision, had not left Baron Vasili's home and felt with terror that in people's eyes he was every day more and more connected with Helene, that it was impossible for him to return to his former conception of her, that he could not break away from her, and that though it would be a terrible thing he would have to unite his fate with hers. Pierre might perhaps have been able to free himself but that Baron Vasili (who had rarely before given receptions) now hardly let a day go by without having an evening party at which Pierre had to be present unless he wished to spoil the general pleasure and disappoint everyone's expectation. Baron Vasili, in the rare moments when he was at home, would take Pierre's hand in passing and draw it downwards, or absent-mindedly hold out his wrinkled, clean-shaven cheek for Pierre to kiss and would say: "Till tomorrow," or, "Be in to dinner or I shall not see you," or, "I am staying in for your sake," and so on. And though Baron Vasili, when he stayed in (as he said) for Pierre's sake, hardly exchanged a couple of words with him, Pierre felt unable to disappoint him. Every day he said to himself one and the same thing: "It is time I understood her and made up my mind what she really is. Was I mistaken

before, or am I mistaken now? No, Helene is not stupid, she is an excellent girl,” he sometimes said to himself “she never makes a mistake, never says anything stupid. She says little, but what she does say is always clear and simple, so she is not stupid. She never was abashed and is not abashed now, so she cannot be a bad woman!” Pierre had often begun to make reflections or think aloud in her company, and she had always answered him either by a brief but appropriate remark—showing that it did not interest her—or by a silent look and smile which more palpably than anything else showed Pierre her superiority. She was right in regarding all arguments as nonsense in comparison with that smile.

Helene always addressed Pierre with a radiantly confiding smile meant for him alone, in which there was something more significant than in the smile that usually brightened her face. Pierre knew that everyone was waiting for him to say a word and cross a certain line, and he knew that sooner or later he would step across it, but an incomprehensible terror seized him at the thought of that dreadful step. A thousand times during that month and a half while he felt himself drawn nearer and nearer to that dreadful abyss, Pierre said to himself: “What am I doing? I need resolution. Can it be that I have none?”

Pierre wished to take a decision, but felt with dismay that in this matter he lacked that strength of will which he had known in himself and really possessed. Pierre was one of those who are only strong when they feel themselves quite innocent, and since that day when he was overpowered by a feeling of desire while stooping over the snuffbox at Anna Pavlovna’s, an unacknowledged sense of the guilt of that desire paralyzed his will.

On Helene’s name day, a small party of just their own people—as Baron Vasili’s wife said—met for supper at Baron Vasili’s. All these friends and relations had been given to understand that the fate of Helene would be decided that evening. The visitors were seated at supper. Baron Vasili’s wife, a portly imposing woman who had once been handsome, was sitting

at the head of the table. On either side of her sat the more important guests—an old general and his wife, and Anna Pavlovna. At the other end sat the younger and less important guests, and there too sat the members of the family, and Pierre and Helene, side by side. Baron Vasili was not having any supper: he went round the table in a merry mood, sitting down now by one, now by another, of the guests. To each of them he made some careless and agreeable remark except to Pierre and Helene, whose presence he seemed not to notice. He enlivened the whole party. The wax candles burned brightly, the silver and crystal gleamed, so did the ladies' toilets and the gold and silver of the men's epaulets; servants in scarlet liveries moved round the table, the clatter of plates, knives, and glasses mingled with the animated hum of several conversations. At one end of the table, the old chamberlain was heard assuring an old baroness that he loved her passionately, at which she laughed; at the other could be heard the story of the misfortunes of some Marya Víktorovna or other. At the center of the table, Baron Vasili attracted everybody's attention. With a facetious smile on his face, he was telling the ladies about last Wednesday's meeting of the Imperial Council, at which Sergéy Kuzmích, the new military governor general of St. Petersburg, had received and read the then famous rescript of the Tzar from the army to Sergéy Kuzmích, in which the Tzar said that he was receiving from all sides declarations of the people's loyalty, that the declaration from St. Petersburg gave him particular pleasure, and that he was proud to be at the head of such a nation and would endeavor to be worthy of it. This rescript began with the words: "Sergéy Kuzmích, From all sides reports reach me," etc.

"Well, and so he never got farther than: 'Sergéy Kuzmích'?" asked one of the ladies.

"Exactly, not a hair's breadth farther," answered Baron Vasili, laughing, "'Sergéy Kuzmích... From all sides... From all sides... Sergéy Kuzmích...'" Poor Vyazmítinov could not get any farther! He began the rescript again

and again, but as soon as he uttered '*Sergéy*' he sobbed, '*Kuz-mí-ch*,' tears, and '*From all sides*' was smothered in sobs and he could get no farther. And again his handkerchief, and again: '*Sergéy Kuzmích, From all sides*,'... and tears, till at last somebody else was asked to read it."

"Kuzmích... From all sides... and then tears," someone repeated laughing.

"Don't be unkind," cried Anna Pavlovna from her end of the table holding up a threatening finger. "He is such a worthy and excellent man, our dear Kuzmích..."

Everybody laughed a great deal. At the head of the table, where the honored guests sat, everyone seemed to be in high spirits and under the influence of a variety of exciting sensations. Only Pierre and Helene sat silently side by side almost at the bottom of the table, a suppressed smile brightening both their faces, a smile that had nothing to do with Sergéy Kuzmích—a smile of bashfulness at their own feelings. But much as all the rest laughed, talked, and joked, much as they enjoyed their Rhine wine, *sauté*, and ices, and however they avoided looking at the young couple, and heedless and unobservant as they seemed of them, one could feel by the occasional glances they gave that the story about Sergéy Kuzmích, the laughter, and the food were all a pretense, and that the whole attention of that company was directed to—Pierre and Helene. Baron Vasili mimicked the sobbing of Sergéy Kuzmích and at the same time his eyes glanced toward his daughter, and while he laughed the expression on his face clearly said: "Yes... it's getting on, it will all be settled today." Anna Pavlovna threatened him on behalf of "our dear Kuzmích," and in her eyes, which, for an instant, glanced at Pierre, Baron Vasili read a congratulation on his future son-in-law and on his daughter's happiness. Baron Vasili's wife sighed sadly as she offered some wine to the old lady next to her and the old lady glanced angrily at her daughter, and her sigh seemed to say: "Yes, there's nothing left for you and me but to sip sweet wine, my dear,

now that the time has come for these young ones to be thus boldly, provocatively happy.” “And what nonsense all this is that I am saying!” thought a diplomatist, glancing at the happy faces of the lovers. “That’s happiness!”

Into the insignificant, trifling, and artificial interests uniting that society had entered the simple feeling of the attraction of a healthy and handsome young man and woman for one another. And this human feeling dominated everything else and soared above all their affected chatter. Jests fell flat, news was not interesting, and the animation was evidently forced. Not only the guests but even the footmen waiting at table seemed to feel this, and they forgot their duties as they looked at the beautiful Helene with her radiant face and at the red, broad, and happy though uneasy face of Pierre. It seemed as if the very light of the candles was focused on those two happy faces alone.

Pierre felt that he was the center of it all, and this both pleased and embarrassed him. He was like a man entirely absorbed in some occupation. He did not see, hear, or understand anything clearly. Only now and then detached ideas and impressions from the world of reality shot unexpectedly through his mind.

“So it is all finished!” he thought. “And how has it all happened? How quickly! Now I know that not because of her alone, nor of myself alone, but because of everyone, *it* must inevitably come about. They are all expecting *it*, they are so sure that it will happen that I cannot, I cannot, disappoint them. But how will it be? I do not know, but it will certainly happen!” thought Pierre, glancing at those dazzling shoulders close to his eyes.

Or Pierre would suddenly feel ashamed of he knew not what. He felt it awkward to attract everyone’s attention and to be considered a lucky man and, with his plain face, to be looked on as a sort of Paris possessed of a Helen. “But no doubt it always is and must be so!” he consoled himself.

“And besides, what have I done to bring it about? How did it begin? I traveled from Moscow with Baron Vasili. Then there was nothing. So why should I not stay at his house? Then I played cards with her and picked up her reticule and drove out with her. How did it begin, when did it all come about?” And here he was sitting by Helene’s side as her betrothed, seeing, hearing, feeling her nearness, her breathing, her movements, her beauty. Then it would suddenly seem to him that it was not she but he was so unusually beautiful, and that that was why they all looked so at him, and flattered by this admiration he would expand his chest, raise his head, and rejoice at his good fortune. Suddenly he heard a familiar voice repeating something to him a second time. But Pierre was so absorbed that he did not understand what was said.

“I am asking you when you last heard from Andrei,” repeated Baron Vasili a third time. “How absent-minded you are, my dear fellow.”

Baron Vasili smiled, and Pierre noticed that everyone was smiling at him and Helene. “Well, what of it, if you all know it?” thought Pierre. “What of it? It’s the truth!” and he himself smiled his gentle childlike smile, and Helene smiled too.

“When did you get the letter? Was it from Olmütz?” repeated Baron Vasili, who pretended to want to know this in order to settle a dispute.

“How can one talk or think of such trifles?” thought Pierre.

“Yes, from Olmütz,” he answered, with a sigh.

After supper Pierre and Helene followed the others into the drawing room. The guests began to disperse, some without taking leave of Helene. Some, as if unwilling to distract her from an important occupation, came up to her for a moment and made haste to go away, refusing to let her see them off. The diplomatist preserved a mournful silence as he left the drawing room. He pictured the vanity of his diplomatic career in comparison with Pierre’s happiness. The old general grumbled at his wife when she asked

how his leg was. "Oh, the old fool," he thought. "That Helene will be beautiful still when she's fifty."

"I think I may congratulate you," whispered Anna Pavlovna to Baron Vasili's wife, kissing her soundly. "If I hadn't this headache I'd have stayed longer."

Baron Vasili's wife did not reply, she was tormented by jealousy of her daughter Helene's happiness.

While the guests were taking their leave Pierre remained for a long time alone with Helene in the little drawing room where they were sitting. He had often before, during the last six weeks, remained alone with her, but had never spoken to her of love. Now he felt that it was inevitable, but he could not make up his mind to take the final step. He felt ashamed; he felt that he was occupying someone else's place here beside Helene. "This happiness is not for you," some inner voice whispered to him. "This happiness is for those who have not in them what there is in you."

But, as Pierre had to say something, he began by asking Helene whether she was satisfied with the party. She replied in her usual simple manner that this name day of hers had been one of the pleasantest she had ever had.

Some of the nearest relatives had not yet left. They were sitting in the large drawing room. Baron Vasili came up to Pierre with languid footsteps. Pierre rose and said it was getting late. Baron Vasili gave him a look of stern inquiry, as though what Pierre had just said was so strange that one could not take it in. But then the expression of severity changed, and he drew Pierre's hand downwards, made him sit down, and smiled affectionately.

"Well, Helene?" he asked, turning instantly to his daughter and addressing her with the careless tone of habitual tenderness natural to parents who have petted their children from babyhood, but which Baron Vasili had only acquired by imitating other parents.

And he again turned to Pierre.

“Sergéy Kuzmích—From all sides—” he said, unbuttoning the top button of his waistcoat.

Pierre smiled, but his smile showed that he knew it was not the story about Sergéy Kuzmích that interested Baron Vasili just then, and Baron Vasili saw that Pierre knew this. He suddenly muttered something and went away. It seemed to Pierre that even Baron Vasili was disconcerted. The sight of the discomposure of that old man of the world touched Pierre: he looked at Helene and she too seemed disconcerted, and her look seemed to say: “Well, it is your own fault.”

“The step must be taken but I cannot, I cannot!” thought Pierre, and he again began speaking about indifferent matters, about Sergéy Kuzmích, asking what the point of the story was as he had not heard it properly. Helene answered with a smile that she too had missed it.

When Baron Vasili returned to the drawing room, his wife was talking in low tones to the elderly lady about Pierre.

“Of course, it is a very brilliant match, but happiness, my dear...”

“Marriages are made in heaven,” replied the elderly lady.

Baron Vasili passed by, seeming not to hear the ladies, and sat down on a sofa in a far corner of the room. He closed his eyes and seemed to be dozing. His head sank forward and then he roused himself.

Baron Vasili said to his wife, “go and see what they are about.”

Baron Vasili’s wife went up to the door, passed by it with a dignified and indifferent air, and glanced into the little drawing room. Pierre and Helene still sat talking just as before.

“Still the same,” she said to her husband.

Baron Vasili frowned, twisting his mouth, his cheeks quivered and his face assumed the coarse, unpleasant expression peculiar to him. Shaking himself, he rose, threw back his head, and with resolute steps went past the ladies into the little drawing room. With quick steps he went joyfully up to

Pierre. His face was so unusually triumphant that Pierre rose in alarm on seeing it.

“Thank God!” said Baron Vasili. “My wife has told me everything!” (He put one arm around Pierre and the other around his daughter.)—“My dear boy... Helene... I am very pleased.” (His voice trembled.) “I loved your father... and she will make you a good wife... God bless you!...”

He embraced his daughter, and then again Pierre, and kissed him with his malodorous mouth. Tears actually moistened his cheeks.

Baron Vasili shouted to his wife, and she came in and also wept. The elderly lady was using her handkerchief too. Pierre was kissed, and he kissed the beautiful Helene’s hand several times. After a while they were left alone again.

“All this had to be and could not be otherwise,” thought Pierre, “so it is useless to ask whether it is good or bad. It is good because it’s definite and one is rid of the old tormenting doubt.” Pierre held the hand of his betrothed in silence, looking at her beautiful bosom as it rose and fell.

“Helene!” he said aloud and paused.

“Something special is always said in such cases,” Pierre thought, but could not remember what it was that people say. He looked at her face. She drew nearer to him. Her face flushed.

“Oh, take those off... those...” Helene said, pointing to his spectacles.

Pierre took them off, and his eyes, besides the strange look eyes have from which spectacles have just been removed, had also a frightened and inquiring look. He was about to stoop over her hand and kiss it, but with a rapid, almost brutal movement of her head, she intercepted his lips and met them with her own. Helene’s face struck Pierre, by its altered, unpleasantly excited expression.

“It is too late now, it’s done; besides I love her,” thought Pierre.

“*I love you!*” Pierre said, remembering what has to be said at such moments: but his words sounded so weak that he felt ashamed of himself.

Six weeks later he was married, and settled in Pierre's large, newly furnished St. Petersburg house, the happy possessor, as people said, of a wife who was a celebrated beauty and of millions of money.

Baron Bolkonski received a letter from Baron Vasili in November, 1805, announcing that he and his son Anatole would be paying him a visit. "I am starting on a journey of inspection, and of course I shall think nothing of an extra seventy miles to come and see you at the same time, my honored benefactor," wrote Baron Vasili. "My son Anatole is accompanying me on his way to the army, so I hope you will allow him personally to express the deep respect that, emulating his father, he feels for you."

"It seems that there will be no need to bring Marya out, suitors are coming to us of their own accord," incautiously remarked Lise on hearing the news.

Baron Bolkonski frowned, but said nothing.

A fortnight after the letter Baron Vasili's servants came one evening in advance of him, and he and his son arrived the next day.

Baron Bolkonski had always had a poor opinion of Baron Vasili's character, but more so recently, since in the new reign of the Tzar, Baron Vasili had risen to high position and honors. And now, from the hints contained in his letter and given by Lise, he saw which way the wind was blowing, and his low opinion changed into a feeling of contemptuous ill will. He snorted whenever he mentioned him. On the day of Baron Vasili's arrival, Baron Bolkonski was particularly discontented and out of temper. Whether he was in a bad temper because Baron Vasili was coming, or whether his being in a bad temper made him specially annoyed at Baron Vasili's visit, he was in a bad temper, and in the morning Butler Tikhon had already advised the architect Michael Ivanovich not to go to Baron Bolkonski with his report.

"Do you hear how he's walking?" said Butler Tikhon, bringing the architect Michael Ivanovich's attention to the sound of Baron Bolkonski's

footsteps. "Stepping flat on his heels—we know what that means..."

However, at nine o'clock Baron Bolkonski, in his velvet coat with a sable collar and cap, went out for his usual walk. It had snowed the day before and the path to the hothouse, along which the Baron was in the habit of walking, had been swept: the marks of the broom were still visible in the snow and a shovel had been left sticking in one of the soft snowbanks that bordered both sides of the path. Baron Bolkonski went through the conservatories, the serfs' quarters, and the outbuildings, frowning and silent.

"Can a sleigh pass?" Baron Bolkonski asked his overseer, a venerable man, resembling his master in manners and looks, who was accompanying him back to the house.

"The snow is deep. I am having the avenue swept, your honor."

Baron Bolkonski bowed his head and went up to the porch. "God be thanked," thought the overseer, "the storm has blown over!"

"It would have been hard to drive up, your honor," he added. "I heard, your honor, that a minister is coming to visit your honor."

Baron Bolkonski turned round to the overseer and fixed his eyes on him, frowning. "What? A minister? What minister? Who gave orders?" he said in a shrill, harsh voice. "The road is not swept for my daughter Marya, but for a minister! For me, there are no ministers!"

"Your honor, I thought..."

"You thought!" shouted Baron Bolkonski, his words coming more and more rapidly and indistinctly. "You thought!... Rascals! Blackguards!... I'll teach you to think!" and lifting his stick he swung it and would have hit the overseer, had not the he instinctively avoided the blow. "Thought... Blackguards..." shouted Baron Bolkonski rapidly.

But although the overseer, frightened at his own temerity in avoiding the blow, came up to Baron Bolkonski, bowing his bald head resignedly before him, or perhaps for that very reason, Baron Bolkonski, though he

continued to shout: “Blackguards!... Throw the snow back on the road!” did not lift his stick again but hurried into the house.

Before dinner, Marya and Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, who knew that Baron Bolkonski was in a bad humor, stood awaiting him; Lady-in-waiting Bourienne with a radiant face that said: “I know nothing, I am the same as usual,” and Marya pale, frightened, and with downcast eyes. What she found hardest to bear was to know that on such occasions she ought to behave like Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, but could not. Marya thought: “If I seem not to notice he will think that I do not sympathize with him; if I seem sad and out of spirits myself, he will say (as he has done before) that I’m in the dumps.”

Baron Bolkonski looked at his daughter’s frightened face and snorted.

“Fool... or dummy!” he muttered.

“And the other one is not here. They’ve been telling tales,” he thought—referring to Lise who was not in the dining room.

“Where is Lise?” he asked. “Hiding?”

“Lise is not very well,” answered Lady-in-waiting Bourienne with a bright smile, “so she won’t come down. It is natural in her state.”

“Hm! Hm!” muttered Baron Bolkonski, sitting down. His plate seemed to him not quite clean, and pointing to a spot he flung it away. Butler Tikhon caught it and handed it to a footman. Lise was not actually unwell, but had such an overpowering fear of Baron Bolkonski that, hearing he was in a bad humor, she had decided not to appear.

“I am afraid for the baby,” Lise said to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne: “Heaven knows what a fright might do.”

In general, at the Bald Hills estate Lise lived in constant fear, and with a sense of antipathy to Baron Bolkonski which she did not realize because the fear was so much the stronger feeling. Baron Bolkonski reciprocated this antipathy, but it was overpowered by his contempt for her. When Lise had grown accustomed to life at Bald Hills, she took a special fancy to Lady-in-

waiting Bourienne, spent whole days with her, asked her to sleep in her room, and often talked with her about Baron Bolkonski and criticized him.

“So we are to have visitors, *mon Baron?*” remarked Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, unfolding her white napkin with her rosy fingers. “His Excellency Baron Vasili and his son Anatole, I understand?” she said inquiringly.

“Hm!—his excellency is a puppy... I got him his appointment in the service,” said Baron Bolkonski disdainfully. “Why his son Anatole is coming I don’t understand. Perhaps Lise and Marya know. I don’t want him.” (He looked at his blushing daughter.) “Are you unwell today? Eh? Afraid of the ‘minister’ as that idiot overseer called him this morning?”

“No, *mon père.*”

Though Lady-in-waiting Bourienne had been so unsuccessful in her choice of a subject, she did not stop talking, but chattered about the conservatories and the beauty of a flower that had just opened, and after the soup Baron Bolkonski became more genial.

After dinner, Baron Bolkonski went to see his daughter-in-law, Lise. She was sitting at a small table, chattering with Másha, her maid. Lise grew pale on seeing her father-in-law. She was much altered. Lise was now plain rather than pretty. Her cheeks had sunk, her lip was drawn up, and her eyes drawn down.

“Yes, I feel a kind of oppression,” Lise said in reply to Baron Bolkonski’s question as to how she felt.

“Do you want anything?”

“No, *merci, mon père.*”

“Well, all right, all right.”

Baron Bolkonski left the room and went to the waiting room where the overseer stood with bowed head.

“Has the snow been shoveled back?”

“Yes, your excellency. Forgive me for heaven’s sake... It was only my stupidity.”

“All right, all right,” interrupted Baron Bolkonski, and laughing in an unnatural way, he stretched out his hand for the overseer to kiss, and then proceeded to his study.

Baron Vasili arrived that evening. He was met in the avenue by coachmen and footmen, who, with loud shouts, dragged his sleighs up to one of the lodges over the road purposely laden with snow.

Baron Vasili and Anatole had separate rooms assigned to them.

Anatole, having taken off his overcoat, sat with arms akimbo before a table on a corner of which he smilingly and absent-mindedly fixed his large and handsome eyes. He regarded his whole life as a continual round of amusement which someone for some reason had to provide for him. And he looked on this visit to a churlish old man, Baron Bolkonski, and a rich and ugly heiress, Marya, in the same way. All this might, he thought, turn out very well and amusingly. He thought, “And why not marry her if she really has so much money? That never does any harm,” thought Anatole.

Anatole then shaved and scented himself with the care and elegance which had become habitual to him and, his handsome head held high, entered his father’s room with the good-humored and victorious air natural to him. Baron Vasili’s two valets were busy dressing him, and he looked round with much animation and cheerfully nodded to his son as the latter entered, as if to say: “Yes, that’s how I want you to look.”

“I say, Father, joking apart, is Marya very hideous?” Anatole asked, as if continuing a conversation the subject of which had often been mentioned during the journey.

“Enough! What nonsense! Above all, try to be respectful and cautious with Baron Bolkonski.”

“If he starts a row I’ll go away,” said Anatole. “I can’t bear those old men! Eh?”

“Remember, for you everything depends on this.”

In the meantime, not only was it known in the maidservants’ rooms that Baron Vasili and Anatole had arrived, but the appearance of both had been minutely described. Marya was sitting alone in her room, vainly trying to master her agitation.

“Why did they write, why did Lise tell me about it? It can never happen!” Marya said, looking at herself in the glass. “How shall I enter the drawing room? Even if I like him I can’t now be myself with him.” The mere thought of Baron Bolkonski’s look filled her with terror. Lise and Lady-in-waiting Bourienne had already received from Másha, the lady’s maid, the necessary report of how handsome Anatole was, with his rosy cheeks and dark eyebrows, and with what difficulty Baron Vasili had dragged his legs upstairs while Anatole had followed him like an eagle, three steps at a time. Having received this information, Lise and Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, whose chattering voices had reached her from the corridor, went into Marya’s room.

“You know they’ve come, Marya?” said Lise, waddling in, and sinking heavily into an armchair.

Marya was no longer in the loose gown she generally wore in the morning, but had on one of her best dresses. Her hair was carefully done and her face was animated, which, however, did not conceal its sunken and faded outlines. Dressed as she used to be in St. Petersburg society, it was still more noticeable how much plainer she had become. In contrast, one unobtrusive touch had been added to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne’s toilet which rendered the lady’s maid’s fresh and pretty face yet more attractive.

“What! Are you going to remain as you are, dear Lise?” Lady-in-waiting Bourienne began. “They’ll be announcing that the gentlemen are in the drawing room and we shall have to go down, and you have not smartened yourself up at all!”

Lise got up, rang for the maid, and hurriedly and merrily began to devise and carry out a plan of how Marya should be dressed. Marya's self-esteem was wounded by the fact that the arrival of a suitor agitated her, and still more so by both her companions' not having the least conception that it could be otherwise. To tell them that she felt ashamed for herself and for them would be to betray her agitation, while to decline their offers to dress her would prolong their banter and insistence. She flushed, her beautiful eyes grew dim, red blotches came on her face, and it took on the unattractive expression of martyrdom it so often wore, as she submitted herself to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne and Lise. Both these women *quite sincerely* tried to make Marya look pretty. She was so plain that neither of them could think of her as a rival, so they began dressing her with perfect sincerity, and with the naive and firm conviction women have that dress can make a face pretty.

"No really, my dear, this dress is not pretty," said Lise, looking sideways at Marya from a little distance. "You have a maroon dress, have it fetched. Really! You know the fate of your whole life may be at stake. But this one is too light, it's not becoming!"

It was not the dress, but the face and whole figure of Marya that was not pretty, but neither Lady-in-waiting Bourienne nor Lise felt this; they still thought that if a blue ribbon were placed in the hair, the hair combed up, and the blue scarf arranged lower on the best maroon dress, and so on, all would be well. They forgot that the frightened face and the figure could not be altered, and that however they might change the setting and adornment of that face, it would still remain piteous and plain. After two or three changes to which Marya meekly submitted, just as her hair had been arranged on the top of her head (a style that quite altered and spoiled her looks) and she had put on a maroon dress with a pale-blue scarf, Lise walked twice round her, now adjusting a fold of the dress with her little

hand, now arranging the scarf and looking at her with her head bent first on one side and then on the other.

“No, it will not do,” Lise said decidedly, clasping her hands. “No, Marya, really this dress does not suit you. I prefer you in your little gray everyday dress. Now please, do it for my sake. Lise said to the maid, “bring Marya her gray dress, and you’ll see, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, how I shall arrange it,” she added, smiling with a foretaste of artistic pleasure.

But when the maid brought the required dress, Marya remained sitting motionless before the glass, looking at her face, and saw in the mirror her eyes full of tears and her mouth quivering, ready to burst into sobs.

“Come, Marya,” said Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, “just one more little effort.”

Lise, taking the dress from the maid, came up to Marya.

“Well, now we’ll arrange something quite simple and becoming,” she said.

The three voices, hers, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne’s, and the maid’s, who was laughing at something, mingled in a merry sound, like the chirping of birds.

“No, leave me alone,” said Marya.

Marya’s voice sounded so serious and so sad that the chirping of the birds was silenced at once. They looked at the beautiful, large, thoughtful eyes full of tears and of thoughts, gazing shingly and imploringly at them, and understood that it was useless and even cruel to insist.

“At least, change your coiffure,” said Lise. “Didn’t I tell you,” she went on, turning reproachfully to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, “Marya’s is a face which such a coiffure does not suit in the least. Not in the least! Please change it.”

“Leave me alone, please leave me alone! It is all quite the same to me,” answered Marya, her voice struggling with tears.

Lady-in-waiting Bourienne and Lise had to own to themselves that Marya in this guise looked very plain, worse than usual, but it was too late. She was looking at them with an expression they both knew, an expression thoughtful and sad. While Marya's expression did not frighten them (she never inspired fear in anyone), they knew that when it appeared on her face, she became mute and was not to be shaken in her determination.

"You will change it, won't you?" said Lise. And as Marya gave no answer, she left the room.

Marya was left alone. She did not comply with Lise's request, she not only left her hair as it was, but did not even look in her glass. Letting her arms fall helplessly, she sat with downcast eyes and pondered. A husband, a man, a strong dominant and strangely attractive being rose in her imagination, and carried her into a totally different happy world of his own. She fancied a child, *her own*—such as she had seen the day before in the arms of her nurse's daughter—at her own breast, the husband standing by and gazing tenderly at her and the child. "But no, it is impossible, I am too ugly," she thought.

"Please come to tea. Baron Bolkonski will be out in a moment," came the maid's voice at the door.

Marya roused herself, and felt appalled at what she had been thinking, and before going down she went into the room where the icons hung and, her eyes fixed on the dark face of a large icon of the Savior lit by a lamp, she stood before it with folded hands for a few moments. A painful doubt filled her soul. Could the joy of love, of earthly love for a man, be for her? In her thoughts of marriage Marya dreamed of happiness and of children, but her strongest, most deeply hidden longing was for earthly love. The more she tried to hide this feeling from others and even from herself, the stronger it grew. "Oh God," she said, "how am I to stifle in my heart these temptations of the devil? How am I to renounce forever these vile fancies, so as peacefully to fulfill Thy will?" And scarcely had she put that question

than God gave her the answer in her own heart. "Desire nothing for thyself, seek nothing, be not anxious or envious. Man's future and thy own fate must remain hidden from thee, but live so that thou mayest be ready for anything. If it be God's will to prove thee in the duties of marriage, be ready to fulfill His will." With this consoling thought (but yet with a hope for the fulfillment of her forbidden earthly longing) Marya sighed, and having crossed herself went down, thinking neither of her gown and coiffure nor of how she would go in nor of what she would say. What could all that matter in comparison with the will of God, without Whose care not a hair of man's head can fall?

When Marya came down, Baron Vasili and Anatole were already in the drawing room, talking to Lise and Lady-in-waiting Bourienne. When Marya entered with her heavy step, treading on her heels, the gentlemen and Lady-in-waiting Bourienne rose and Lise, indicating her to the gentlemen, said: "*Here she is: Marya!*" Marya saw them all and saw them in detail. She saw Baron Vasili's face, serious for an instant at the sight of her, but immediately smiling again, and Lise curiously noting the impression that her exclamation produced on the visitors. And Marya saw Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, with her ribbon and pretty face, and her unusually animated look which was fixed on Anatole, but Anatole she could not see, she only saw something large, brilliant, and handsome moving toward her as she entered the room. Baron Vasili approached first, and Marya kissed his bold forehead as he bent over her hand and she answered his question by saying that, on the contrary, she remembered him quite well. Then Anatole came up to her. Marya still could not see him. She only felt a soft hand taking hers firmly, and she touched with her lips a white forehead, over which was beautiful light-brown hair smelling of pomade. When she looked up at him she was struck by his beauty. Anatole stood with his right thumb under a button of his uniform, his chest expanded and his back drawn in, slightly swinging one foot, and, with his head a little bent, looked with beaming

face at Marya without speaking and evidently not thinking about her at all. Anatole was not quick-witted, nor ready or eloquent in conversation, but he had the faculty, so invaluable in society, of composure and imperturbable self-possession. If a man lacking in self-confidence remains dumb on a first introduction and betrays a consciousness of the impropriety of such silence and an anxiety to find something to say, the effect is bad. But Anatole was dumb, swung his foot, and smilingly examined Marya's hair. It was evident that he could be silent in this way for a very long time. "If anyone finds this silence inconvenient, let him talk, but I don't want to," he seemed to say. Besides this, in his behavior to women Anatole had a manner which particularly inspires in them curiosity, awe, and even love—a supercilious consciousness of his own superiority. It was as if he said to them: "I know you, I know you, but why should I bother about you? You'd be only too glad, of course." Perhaps he did not really think this when he met women—even probably he did not, for he thought very little—but his looks and manner gave that impression. Marya felt this, and as if wishing to show him that she did not even dare expect to interest him, she turned to Baron Vasili. The conversation was, thanks to Lise's voice and little downy lip that lifted over her white teeth. Lise met Baron Vasili with that playful manner often employed by lively chatty people, and consisting in the assumption that between the person they so address and themselves there are some semi-private, long-established jokes and amusing reminiscences, though no such reminiscences really exist—just as none existed in this case. Baron Vasili readily adopted her tone and Lise also drew Anatole, whom she hardly knew, into these amusing recollections of things that had never occurred. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne also shared them and even Marya felt herself pleasantly made to share in these merry reminiscences.

"Here at least we shall have the benefit of your company all to ourselves, Baron Vasili," said Lise (of course, in French). "It's not as at

Anna Pavlova receptions where you always ran away; you remember *this dear Anna Pavlovna!*”

“Ah, but you won’t talk politics to me like Anna Pavlovna!”

“And our little tea table?”

“Oh, yes!”

“Why is it you were never at Anna Pavlovna’s?” Lise asked Anatole. “Ah, I know, I know,” she said with a sly glance, “your brother Hippolyte told me about your goings on. Oh!” and she shook her finger at him, “I have even heard of your doings in Paris!”

“And didn’t Hippolyte tell you?” asked Baron Vasili, turning to Anatole and seizing Lise’s arm as if she would have run away and he had just managed to catch her, “didn’t Hippolyte tell you how he himself was pining for Lise, and how she showed him the door? Oh, Lise is a pearl among women,” he added, turning to Marya.

When Paris was mentioned, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne for her part seized the opportunity of joining in the general current of recollections.

She took the liberty of inquiring whether it was long since Anatole had left Paris and how he had liked that city. Anatole answered Lady-in-waiting Bourienne very readily and, looking at her with a smile, talked to her about her native land. When he saw the pretty little Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, Anatole came to the conclusion that he would not find Bald Hills dull either. “Not at all bad!” he thought, examining her, “not at all bad, that little companion! I hope Marya will bring Lady-in-waiting Bourienne along with her when we’re married, *the little one is charming.*”

Baron Bolkonski dressed leisurely in his study, frowning and considering what he was to do. The coming of these visitors annoyed him. “What are Baron Vasili and Anatole of his to me? Baron Vasili is a shallow braggart and Anatole, no doubt, is a fine specimen,” he grumbled to himself. What angered Baron Bolkonski was that the coming of these visitors revived in his mind an unsettled question he always tried to stifle,

one about which he always deceived himself. The question was whether he could ever bring himself to part from his daughter Marya and give her to a husband. Baron Bolkonski never directly asked himself that question, knowing beforehand that he would have to answer it justly, and justice clashed not only with his feelings but with the very possibility of life. Life without Marya, little as he seemed to value her, was unthinkable to him. "And why should she marry?" he thought. "To be unhappy for certain. There's Lise, married to Andrei—a better husband one would think could hardly be found nowadays—but is she contented with her lot? And who would marry Marya for love? Plain and awkward! They'll take her for her connections and wealth. Are there no women living unmarried, and even the happier for it?" So thought Baron Bolkonski while dressing, and yet the question he was always putting off demanded an immediate answer. Baron Vasili had brought Anatole with the evident intention of proposing, and today or tomorrow he would probably ask for an answer. His birth and position in society were not bad. "Well, I've nothing against it," Baron Bolkonski said to himself, "but he must be worthy of her. And that is what we shall see."

"That is what we shall see! That is what we shall see!" he added aloud.

Baron Bolkonski entered the drawing room with his usual alert step, glancing rapidly round the company. He noticed the change in Lise's dress, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne's ribbon, Marya's unbecoming coiffure, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne's and Anatole's smiles, and the loneliness of Marya amid the general conversation. "Got herself up like a fool!" he thought, looking irritably at her. "She is shameless, and he ignores her!"

Baron Bolkonski went straight up to Baron Vasili.

"Well! How d'ye do? How d'ye do? Glad to see you!"

"Friendship laughs at distance," began Baron Vasili in his usual rapid, self-confident, familiar tone. "Here is my second son; please love and befriend him."

Baron Bolkonski surveyed Anatole.

“Fine young fellow! Fine young fellow!” he said. “Well, come and kiss me,” and he offered his cheek.

Anatole kissed Baron Bolkonski, and looked at him with curiosity and perfect composure, waiting for a display of the eccentricities his father had told him to expect.

Baron Bolkonski sat down in his usual place in the corner of the sofa and, drawing up an armchair for Baron Vasili, pointed to it and began questioning him about political affairs and news. Baron Bolkonski seemed to listen attentively to what Baron Vasili said, but kept glancing at Marya.

“And so they are writing from Potsdam already?” Baron Bolkonski said, repeating Baron Vasili’s last words. Then rising, he suddenly went up to Marya.

“Is it for visitors you’ve got yourself up like that, eh?” said Baron Bolkonski. “Fine, very fine! You have done up your hair in this new way for the visitors, and before the visitors I tell you that in future you are never to dare to change your way of dress without my consent.”

“It was my fault, *father*,” interceded Lise, with a blush.

“You must do as you please,” said Baron Bolkonski, bowing to Lise, “but she need not make a fool of herself, she’s plain enough as it is.”

And Baron Bolkonski sat down again, paying no more attention to Marya, who was reduced to tears.

“On the contrary, that coiffure suits Marya very well,” said Baron Vasili.

“Now you, Anatole, what’s your name?” said Baron Bolkonski, turning to him, “come here, let us talk and get acquainted.”

“Now the fun begins,” thought Anatole, sitting down with a smile beside Baron Bolkonski.

“Well, Anatole, I hear you’ve been educated abroad, not taught to read and write by the deacon, like your father and me. Now tell me, my dear boy,

are you serving in the Horse Guards?" asked Baron Bolkonski, scrutinizing Anatole closely and intently.

"No, I have been transferred to the line," said Anatole, hardly able to restrain his laughter.

"Ah! That's a good thing. So, Anatole, you wish to serve the Tzar and the country? It is wartime. Such a fine fellow must serve. Well, are you off to the front?"

"No, Baron Bolkonski, our regiment has gone to the front, but I am attached... what is it I am attached to, Papa?" said Anatole, turning to Baron Vasili with a laugh.

"A splendid soldier, splendid! 'What am I attached to!' Ha, ha, ha!" laughed Baron Bolkonski, and Anatole laughed still louder. Suddenly Baron Bolkonski frowned.

"You may go," he said to Anatole.

Anatole returned smiling to the ladies.

"And so you've had him educated abroad, Baron Vasili, haven't you?" said Baron Bolkonski to Baron Vasili.

"I have done my best for Anatole, and I can assure you the education there is much better than ours."

"Yes, everything is different nowadays, everything is changed. Anatole is a fine fellow, a fine fellow! Well, come with me now." Baron Bolkonski took Baron Vasili's arm and led him to his study. As soon as they were alone together, Baron Vasili announced his hopes and wishes to Baron Bolkonski.

"Well, do you think I shall prevent Marya from marrying, that I can't part from her?" said Baron Bolkonski angrily. "What an idea! I'm ready for it tomorrow! Only let me tell you, I want to know my Anatole better. You know my principles—everything aboveboard! I will ask Marya tomorrow in your presence; if she is willing, then he can stay on. He can stay and I'll

see.” Baron Bolkonski snorted. “Let her marry, it’s all the same to me!” he screamed in the same piercing tone as when parting from his son.

“I will tell you frankly,” said Baron Vasili in the tone of a crafty man convinced of the futility of being cunning with so keen-sighted a companion. “You know, you see right through people. Anatole is no genius, but he is an honest, goodhearted lad; an excellent son or kinsman.”

“All right, all right, we’ll see!”

As always happens when women lead lonely lives for any length of time without male society, on Anatole’s appearance all the three women of Baron Bolkonski’s household felt that their life had not been real till then. Their powers of reasoning, feeling, and observing immediately increased tenfold, and their life, which seemed to have been passed in darkness, was suddenly lit up by a new brightness, full of significance.

Marya grew quite unconscious of her face and coiffure. The handsome open face of Anatole, who might perhaps be her husband, absorbed all her attention. Anatole seemed to her kind, brave, determined, manly, and magnanimous. She felt convinced of that. Thousands of dreams of a future family life continually rose in her imagination. She drove them away and tried to conceal them.

“But am I not too cold with him?” thought Marya. “I try to be reserved because in the depth of my soul I feel too near to him already, but then Anatole cannot know what I think of him and may imagine that I do not like him.”

And Marya tried, but could not manage, to be cordial to Anatole.

“Poor girl, she’s devilish ugly!” thought Anatole.

Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, also roused to great excitement by Anatole’s arrival, thought in another way. Of course, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, a handsome young woman without any definite position, without relations or even a country, did not intend to devote her life to serving Baron Bolkonski, to reading aloud to him and being friends with

Marya. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne had long been waiting for a Russian Baron who, able to appreciate at a glance her superiority to the plain, badly dressed, ungainly Russian Baronesses, would fall in love with her and carry her off; and here at last was a Russian Baron. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne knew a story, heard from her aunt but finished in her own way, which she liked to repeat to herself. It was the story of a girl who had been seduced, and to whom her poor mother (*sa pauvre mère*) appeared, and reproached her for yielding to a man without being married. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne was often touched to tears as in imagination she told this story to *him*, her seducer. And now *he*, a real Russian Baron, had appeared. He would carry her away and then *his poor mother* would appear and he would marry her. So her future shaped itself in Lady-in-waiting Bourienne's head at the very time she was talking to Anatole about Paris. It was not calculation that guided her (she did not even for a moment consider what she should do), but all this had long been familiar to her, and now that Anatole had appeared it just grouped itself around him and she wished and tried to please him as much as possible.

Lise, like an old war horse that hears the trumpet, unconsciously and quite forgetting her condition, prepared for the familiar gallop of coquetry, without any ulterior motive or any struggle, but with naive and lighthearted gaiety.

Although in female society Anatole usually assumed the role of a man tired of being run after by women, his vanity was flattered by the spectacle of his power over these three women. Besides that, he was beginning to feel for the pretty and provocative Lady-in-waiting Bourienne that passionate animal feeling which was apt to master him with great suddenness and prompt him to the coarsest and most reckless actions.

After tea, the company went into the sitting room and Marya was asked to play on the clavichord. Anatole, laughing and in high spirits, came and leaned on his elbows, facing her and beside Lady-in-waiting Bourienne.

Marya felt his look with a painfully joyous emotion. Her favorite sonata bore her into a most intimately poetic world and the look she felt upon her made that world still more poetic. But Anatole's expression, though his eyes were fixed on her, referred not to her but to the movements of Lady-in-waiting Bourienne's little foot, which he was then touching with his own under the clavichord. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne was also looking at Marya, and in her lovely eyes there was a look of fearful joy and hope that was also new to Marya.

"How Lady-in-waiting Bourienne loves me!" thought Marya. "How happy I am now, and how happy I may be with such a friend as Lady-in-waiting Bourienne and such a husband as Anatole! Husband? Can it be possible?" Marya thought, not daring to look at his face, but still feeling his eyes gazing at her.

In the evening, after supper, when all were about to retire, Anatole kissed Marya's hand. Marya did not know how she found the courage, but she looked straight into his handsome face as it came near to her shortsighted eyes. Turning from Marya, Anatole went up and kissed Lady-in-waiting Bourienne's hand. (This was not etiquette, but then he did everything so simply and with such assurance!) Lady-in-waiting Bourienne flushed, and gave Marya a frightened look.

"What delicacy!" thought Marya. "Is it possible that Amélie" (Lady-in-waiting Bourienne) "thinks I could be jealous of her, and not value her pure affection and devotion to me?" She went up to her and kissed her warmly.

Anatole went up to kiss Lise's hand.

"No! No! No! When Baron Vasili writes to tell me that you are behaving well I will give you my hand to kiss. Not till then!" Lise said. And smilingly raising a finger at him, she left the room.

They all separated, but, except Anatole who fell asleep as soon as he got into bed, all kept awake a long time that night.

“Is Anatole really to be my husband, this stranger who is so kind—yes, kind, that is the chief thing,” thought Marya; and fear, which she had seldom experienced, came upon her. She feared to look round, it seemed to her that someone was there standing behind the screen in the dark corner. And this someone was *he*—the devil—and *he* was also this man with the white forehead, black eyebrows, and red lips.

Marya rang for her maid and asked her to sleep in her room.

Lady-in-waiting Bourienne walked up and down the conservatory for a long time that evening, vainly expecting someone, now smiling at someone, now working herself up to tears with the imaginary words of her *poor mother* rebuking her for her fall.

Lise grumbled to her maid that her bed was badly made. She could not lie either on her face or on her side. Every position was awkward and uncomfortable, and her burden oppressed her now more than ever because Anatole’s presence had vividly recalled to her the time when she was not like that and when everything was light and gay. She sat in an armchair in her dressing jacket and nightcap and her maid, sleepy and disheveled, beat and turned the heavy feather bed for the third time, muttering to herself.

“I told you it was all lumps and holes!” Lise repeated. “I should be glad enough to fall asleep, so it’s not my fault!” and her voice quivered like that of a child about to cry.

Baron Bolkonski did not sleep either. Butler Tikhon, half asleep, heard him pacing angrily about and snorting. Baron Bolkonski felt as though he had been insulted through his daughter, Marya. The insult was the more pointed because it concerned not himself but another, Marya, whom he loved more than himself. Baron Bolkonski kept telling himself that he would consider the whole matter and decide what was right and how he should act, but instead of that he only excited himself more and more.

“The first man that turns up—she forgets me and everything else, runs upstairs and does up her hair and wags her tail and is unlike herself! Glad to

throw me over! And she knew I should notice it. Fr... fr... fr! And don't I see that that idiot Anatole had eyes only for Bourienne—I shall have to get rid of her. And how is it Marya has not pride enough to see it? If she has no pride for herself she might at least have some for my sake! Marya must be shown that the blockhead Anatole thinks nothing of her and looks only at Bourienne. No, Marya has no pride... but I'll let her see..."

Baron Bolkonski knew that if he told Marya she was making a mistake and that Anatole meant to flirt with Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, Marya's self-esteem would be wounded and his point (not to be parted from her) would be gained, so pacifying himself with this thought, he called Butler Tikhon and began to undress.

"What devil brought Baron Vasili and Anatole here?" thought Baron Bolkonski, while Butler Tikhon was putting the nightshirt over his dried-up old body and gray-haired chest. "I never invited them. They came to disturb my life—and there is not much of it left."

"Devil take 'em!" Baron Bolkonski muttered, while his head was still covered by the shirt.

Butler Tikhon knew Baron Bolkonski's habit of sometimes thinking aloud, and therefore met with unaltered looks the angrily inquisitive expression of the face that emerged from the shirt.

"Gone to bed?" asked Baron Bolkonski.

Butler Tikhon, like all good valets, instinctively knew the direction of his master's thoughts. He guessed that the question referred to Baron Vasili and Anatole.

"They have gone to bed and put out their lights, Baron Bolkonski."

"No good... no good..." said Baron Bolkonski rapidly, and thrusting his feet into his slippers and his arms into the sleeves of his dressing gown, he went to the couch on which he slept.

The next day, though no words had passed between Anatole and Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, they quite understood one another as to the first part

of their romance, up to the appearance of the *poor mother*; they understood that they had much to say to one another in private and so they had been seeking an opportunity since morning to meet one another alone. Thus, when Marya went to her father's room at the usual hour, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne and Anatole met in the conservatory.

Marya went to the door of her father's room with special trepidation. It seemed to her that not only did everybody know that her fate would be decided that day, but that they also knew what she thought about it. Marya read this in Butler Tikhon's face and in that of Baron Vasili's valet, who made her a low bow when she met him in the corridor carrying hot water.

Baron Bolkonski was very affectionate and careful in his treatment of Marya that morning. Marya well knew this painstaking expression of her father's. Baron Bolkonski's face wore that expression when his dry hands clenched with vexation at her not understanding a sum in arithmetic, when rising from his chair he would walk away from her, repeating in a low voice the same words several times over.

Baron Bolkonski came to the point at once, treating her ceremoniously.

"I have had a proposition made me concerning you, Marya," he said with an unnatural smile. "I expect you have guessed that Baron Vasili has not come and brought his pupil with him" (for some reason Baron Bolkonski referred to Anatole as a "pupil") "for the sake of my beautiful eyes. Last night Baron Vasili made a proposition on your account and, as you know my principles, I refer it to you."

"How am I to understand you, Father?" said Marya, growing pale and then blushing.

"How understand me!" cried her father angrily. "Baron Vasili finds you to his taste as a daughter-in-law and he makes a proposal to you on his pupil's behalf. That's how it's to be understood! 'How understand it'!... And I ask you!"

"I do not know what you think, Father," whispered Marya.

“I? I? What of me? Leave me out of the question. I’m not going to get married. What about *you*? That’s what I want to know.”

Marya saw that Baron Bolkonski regarded the matter with disapproval, but at that moment the thought occurred to her that her fate would be decided now or never. Marya lowered her eyes so as not to see the gaze under which she felt that she could not think, but would only be able to submit from habit, and she said: “I wish only to do your will, but if I had to express my own desire...” She had no time to finish. Baron Bolkonski interrupted her.

“That’s admirable!” he shouted. “Anatole will take you with your dowry and take Lady-in-waiting Bourienne into the bargain. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne will do “the wife’s duties”, while you...”

Baron Bolkonski stopped. He saw the effect his joke had produced on Marya. She lowered her head and was ready to burst into tears.

“Now then, now then, I’m only joking!” he said. “Remember this, Marya, I hold to the principle that a maiden has a full right to choose. I give you freedom. Only remember that your life’s happiness depends on your decision. Never mind me!”

“But I do not know, Father!”

“There’s no need to talk! Anatole receives his orders and will marry you or anybody; but you, Marya, are free to choose... Go to your room, think it over, and come back in an hour and tell me in Anatole’s presence: yes or no. I know you will pray over it. Well, pray if you like, but you had better *think* it over. Go! Yes or no, yes or no, yes or no!” he still shouted when Marya, as if lost in a fog, had already staggered out of the study.

Marya’s fate was decided and happily decided. But what Baron Bolkonski had said about Lady-in-waiting Bourienne was dreadful. It was untrue to be sure, but still it was terrible, and Marya could not help thinking of it. She was going straight on through the conservatory, neither seeing nor hearing anything, when suddenly the well-known whispering of Lady-in-

waiting Bourienne aroused her. Marya raised her eyes, and two steps away saw Anatole embracing Lady-in-waiting Bourienne and whispering something to her. With a horrified expression on Anatole's handsome face, he looked at Marya, but did not at once take his arm from the waist of Lady-in-waiting Bourienne who had not yet seen her.

"Who's that? Why? Wait a moment!" Anatole's face seemed to say. Marya looked at them in silence. She could not understand it. At last Lady-in-waiting Bourienne saw her, gave a scream and ran away. Anatole bowed to Marya with a gay smile, as if inviting her to join in a laugh at this strange incident, and then shrugging his shoulders went to the door that led to his own apartments.

An hour later, Butler Tikhon came to call Marya to Baron Bolkonski; he added that Baron Vasili was also there. When Butler Tikhon came to Marya, she was sitting on the sofa in her room, holding the weeping Lady-in-waiting Bourienne in her arms and gently stroking her hair. Mar's beautiful eyes with all their former calm radiance were looking with tender affection and pity at Lady-in-waiting Bourienne's pretty face.

"No, Marya, I have lost your affection forever!" said Lady-in-waiting Bourienne.

"Why? I love you more than ever," said Marya, "and I will try to do all I can for your happiness."

"But you despise me. You who are so pure can never understand being so carried away by passion. Oh, only my poor mother..."

"I quite understand," answered Marya, with a sad smile. "Calm yourself, my dear. I will go to Baron Bolkonski," she said, and went out.

Baron Vasili, with one leg thrown high over the other and a snuffbox in his hand, was sitting there with a smile of deep emotion on his face, as if stirred to his heart's core and himself regretting and laughing at his own sensibility, when Marya entered. He hurriedly took a pinch of snuff.

“Ah, my dear, my dear!” Baron Vasili began, rising and taking her by both hands. Then, sighing, he added: “Anatole’s fate is in your hands. Decide, my dear, good, gentle Marie, whom I have always loved as a daughter!”

He drew back and a real tear appeared in his eye.

“Fr... fr...” snorted Baron Bolkonski. “Baron Vasili is making a proposition to you in his pupil’s—I mean, his son’s—name. Do you wish or not to be Anatole’s wife? Reply: yes or no,” he shouted, “and then I shall reserve the right to state my opinion also. Yes, my opinion, and only my opinion,” added Baron Bolkonski, turning to Baron Vasili and answering his imploring look. “Yes, or no?”

“My desire is never to leave you, Father, never to separate my life from yours. I don’t wish to marry,” Marya answered positively, glancing at Baron Vasili and at her father with her beautiful eyes.

“Humbug! Nonsense! Humbug, humbug, humbug!” cried Baron Bolkonski, frowning and taking Marya’s hand; he did not kiss her, but only bending his forehead to hers just touched it, and squeezed her hand so hard that she winced and uttered a cry.

Baron Vasili rose.

“My dear Marya, I must tell you that this is a moment I shall never, never forget. But, my dear, will you not give us a little hope of touching my heart, so kind and generous? Say ‘perhaps’... The future is so long. Say ‘perhaps.’”

“Baron Vasili, what I have said is all there is in my heart. I thank you for the honor, but I shall never be Anatole’s wife.”

“Well, so that’s finished! I am very glad to have seen you, Baron Vasili. Very glad! Go back to your rooms, Marya. Go!” said Baron Bolkonski.

“Very, very glad to have seen you,” repeated he, embracing Baron Vasili.

“My vocation is a different one,” thought Marya. “My vocation is to be happy with another kind of happiness, the happiness of love and self-

sacrifice. And cost what it may, I will arrange poor Lady-in-waiting Bourienne's happiness, she loves Anatole so passionately, and so passionately repents. I will do all I can to arrange the match between them. If Anatole is not rich I will give her the means; I will ask my father and Andrei. I shall be so happy when Lady-in-waiting Bourienne is his wife. She is so unfortunate, a stranger, alone, helpless! And, oh God, how passionately she must love him if she could so far forget herself! Perhaps I might have done the same!"

It was long since the Rostovs had news of Nicholas. Not till midwinter was Count Rostov at last handed a letter addressed in his son's handwriting. On receiving it, he ran on tiptoe to his study in alarm and haste, trying to escape notice, closed the door, and began to read the letter.

Widow Drubetskoy, who always knew everything that passed in the house, on hearing of the arrival of the letter went softly into the room and found Count Rostov with it in his hand, sobbing and laughing at the same time.

Widow Drubetskoy, though her circumstances had improved, was still living with the Rostovs.

"Count Rostov? My dear friend?" said she, in a tone of pathetic inquiry, prepared to sympathize in any way.

Count Rostov sobbed yet more.

"Nicholas... a letter... wa... a... s... wounded... my darling boy... Countess Rostov Nicholas... Nicholas promoted to be an officer... thank God... How tell my wife!"

Widow Drubetskoy sat down beside him, with her own handkerchief wiped the tears from his eyes and from the letter, then having dried her own eyes she comforted Count Rostov, and decided that at dinner and till teatime she would prepare Countess Rostov, and after tea, with God's help, would inform her.

So at dinner, Widow Drubetskoy talked the whole time about the war news and about Nicholas, twice asked when the last letter had been received from him, though she knew that already, and remarked that they might very likely be getting a letter from him that day. Each time that these hints began to make Countess Rostov anxious and she glanced uneasily at Count Rostov and at Widow Drubetskoy, the latter very adroitly turned the conversation to insignificant matters. Natasha, who, of the whole family, was the most gifted with a capacity to feel any shades of intonation, look, and expression, pricked up her ears from the beginning of the meal and was certain that there was some secret between her father and Widow Drubetskoy, that it had something to do with her brother, Nicholas, and that Widow Drubetskoy was preparing them for it. Bold as she was, Natasha, who knew how sensitive her mother was to anything relating to her dear son Nicholas, did not venture to ask any questions at dinner, but she was too excited to eat anything and kept wriggling about on her chair regardless of her governess' remarks.

After dinner, Natasha rushed headlong after Widow Drubetskoy and, dashing at her, flung herself on her neck as soon as she overtook her in the sitting room.

"Auntie, darling, do tell me what it is!"

"Nothing, my dear."

"No, dearest, sweet one, honey, I won't give up—I know you know something."

Widow Drubetskoy shook her head.

"You are a little slyboots," Natasha said.

"A letter from Nicholas! I'm sure of it!" exclaimed Natasha, reading confirmation in Widow Drubetskoy's face.

"Yes, but for God's sake, be careful, you know how it may affect your mamma."

"I will, I will, only tell me! You won't? Then I will go and tell at once."

Widow Drubetskoy, in a few words, told her the contents of the letter, on condition that Natasha should tell no one.

“No, on my true word of honor,” said Natasha, crossing herself, “I won’t tell anyone!” and she ran off at once to the orphan niece Sonya.

“Sweet Nicholas... wounded... a letter,” Natasha announced in gleeful triumph.

“*Nicholas!*” was all Sonya said, instantly turning white.

Natasha, seeing the impression the news of her brother’s wound produced on Sonya, felt for the first time the sorrowful side of the news.

Natasha rushed to Sonya, hugged her, and began to cry.

“A little wound, but Nicholas has been made an officer; he is well now, he wrote himself,” said Natasha through her tears.

“There now! It’s true that all you women are crybabies,” remarked Natasha’s little brother Petya, pacing the room with large, resolute strides. “Now I’m very glad, very glad indeed, that Nicholas has distinguished himself so. You are all blubberers and understand nothing.”

Natasha smiled through her tears.

“You haven’t read the letter?” asked Sonya.

“No, but Widow Drubetskoy said that it was all over and that Nicholas is now an officer.”

“Thank God!” said Sonya, crossing herself. “But perhaps Widow Drubetskoy deceived you. Let us go to Mamma.”

Petya paced the room in silence for a time.

“If I’d been in Nicholas’s place I would have killed even more of those enemy Frenchmen,” he said. “What nasty brutes they are! I’d have killed so many that there’d have been a heap of them.”

“Hold your tongue, Petya, what a goose you are!”

“I’m not a goose, but they are who cry about trifles,” said Petya.

“Do you remember him?” Natasha suddenly asked Sonya, after a moment’s silence.

Sonya smiled.

“Do I remember *Nicholas*?”

“Yes, but do you remember Nicholas so that you remember him perfectly, remember everything?” said Natasha, with an expressive gesture, evidently wishing to give her words a very definite meaning. “I remember Nicholas too, I remember him well,” she said. “But I don’t remember Boris. I don’t remember him a bit.”

“What! You don’t remember Boris?” asked Sonya in surprise.

“It’s not that I don’t remember—I know what he is like, but not as I remember Nicholas. Him—I just shut my eyes and remember, but Boris... No!” (She shut her eyes.) “No! there’s nothing at all.”

“Oh, Natasha!” said Sonya, looking ecstatically and earnestly at her cousin as if she did not consider her worthy to hear what she meant to say and as if she were saying it to someone else, with whom joking was out of the question, “I am in love with your brother Nicholas once for all and, whatever may happen to him or to me, shall never cease to love him as long as I live.”

Natasha looked at Sonya with wondering and inquisitive eyes, and said nothing. Natasha felt that Sonya was speaking the truth, that there was such love as Sonya was speaking of. But Natasha had not yet felt anything like it. She believed it could be, but did not understand it.

“Shall you write to him?” Natasha asked.

Sonya became thoughtful. The question of how to write to *Nicholas*, and whether she ought to write, tormented her. Now that Nicholas was already an officer and a wounded hero, would it be right to remind him of herself and, as it might seem, of the obligations to her he had taken on himself?

“I don’t know. I think if he writes, I will write too,” Sonya said, blushing.

“And you won’t feel ashamed to write to him?”

Sonya smiled.

“No.”

“And I should be ashamed to write to Boris. I’m not going to.”

“Why should you be ashamed?”

“Well, I don’t know. It’s awkward and would make me ashamed.”

“And I know why Natasha would be ashamed,” said Petya, offended by Natasha’s previous remark. “It’s because she was in love with that fat one in spectacles” (that was how Petya described his namesake, Pierre, the new count) “and now she’s in love with that singer” (he meant Natasha’s Italian singing master), “that’s why she’s ashamed!”

“Petya, you’re stupid!” said Natasha.

“Not more stupid than you, madam,” said the nine-year-old Petya, with the air of an old brigadier.

Countess Rostov had been prepared by Widow Drubetskoy’s hints at dinner. On retiring to her own room, Countess Rostov sat in an armchair, her eyes fixed on a miniature portrait of her son Nicholas on the lid of a snuffbox, while the tears kept coming into her eyes. Widow Drubetskoy, with the letter, came on tiptoe to Countess Rostov’s door and paused.

“Don’t come in,” Widow Drubetskoy said to Count Rostov who was following her. “Come later.” And she went in, closing the door behind her.

Count Rostov put his ear to the keyhole and listened. At first he heard the sound of indifferent voices, then Widow Drubetskoy’s voice alone in a long speech, then a cry, then silence, then both voices together with glad intonations, and then footsteps. Widow Drubetskoy opened the door. Her face wore the proud expression of a surgeon who has just performed a difficult operation and admits the public to appreciate his skill.

“It is done!” Widow Drubetskoy’s said to Count Rostov, pointing triumphantly to Countess Rostov, who sat holding in one hand the snuffbox with its portrait and in the other the letter, and pressing them alternately to her lips.

When she saw her husband, Countess Rostov stretched out her arms to him, embraced his bald head, over which she again looked at Nicholas's letter and the portrait, and in order to press them again to her lips, she slightly pushed away the bald head. Vera, Natasha, Sonya, and Petya now entered the room, and the reading of the letter began. After a brief description of the campaign and the two battles in which he had taken part, and his promotion, Nicholas said that he kissed his father's and mother's hands asking for their blessing, and that he kissed Vera, Natasha, and Petya. Besides that, he sent greetings to Monsieur Schelling, Madame Schoss, and his old nurse, and asked them to kiss for him "dear Sonya, whom he loved and thought of just the same as ever." When she heard this, orphan cousin Sonya blushed so that tears came into her eyes and, unable to bear the looks turned upon her, ran away into the dancing hall, whirled round it at full speed with her dress puffed out like a balloon, and, flushed and smiling, plumped down on the floor. Countess Rostov was crying.

"Why are you crying, Mamma?" asked Vera. "From all he says one should be glad and not cry."

This was quite true, but Count Rostov, Countess Rostov, and Natasha looked at her reproachfully. "And who is it Vera takes after?" thought Countess Rostov.

Through the following days, Nicholas' letter was read over hundreds of times, and those who were considered worthy to hear it had to come to Countess Rostov, for she did not let it out of her hands. The tutors came, and the nurses, and Dmítri, and several acquaintances, and Countess Rostov reread the letter each time with fresh pleasure and each time discovered in it fresh proofs of Nicholas's virtues. How strange, how extraordinary, how joyful it seemed, that her son, the scarcely perceptible motion of whose tiny limbs she had felt twenty years ago within her, that son about whom she used to have quarrels with the too indulgent count, that son who had first learned to say "pear" and then "granny," that this son should now be away

in a foreign land amid strange surroundings, a manly warrior doing some kind of man's work of his own, without help or guidance. The universal experience of ages, showing that children do grow imperceptibly from the cradle to manhood, did not exist for Countess Rostov. Nicholas's growth toward manhood, at each of its stages, had seemed as extraordinary to her as if there had never existed the millions of human beings who grew up in the same way. As twenty years before, it seemed impossible that the little creature who lived somewhere under her heart would ever cry, suck her breast, and begin to speak, so now she could not believe that that little creature could be this strong, brave man, this model son and officer that, judging by this letter, he now was.

"What a *style!* How charmingly he describes!" said Countess Rostov, reading the descriptive part of the letter. "And what a soul! Not a word about himself... Not a word! About some Denisov or other, though he himself, I dare say, is braver than any of them. Nicholas says nothing about his sufferings. What a heart! How like him it is! And how Nicholas has remembered everybody! Not forgetting anyone. I always said when he was only so high—I always said..."

For more than a week preparations were being made, rough drafts of letters to Nicholas from all the household were written and copied out, while under the supervision of Countess Rostov and the solicitude of Count Rostov, money and all things necessary for the uniform and equipment of Nicholas, the newly commissioned officer, were collected.

Widow Drubetskoy, practical woman that she was, had even managed by favor with army authorities to secure advantageous means of communication for herself and her son Boris. Widow Drubetskoy had opportunities of sending her letters to the Grand Duke Pávlovich, who commanded the Guards. The Rostovs supposed that *The Russian Guards, Abroad*, was quite a definite address, and that if a letter reached the Grand Duke in command of the Guards there was no reason why it should not

reach the Pávlograd regiment, which was presumably somewhere in the same neighborhood. And so it was decided to send the letters and money by the Grand Duke's courier to Boris and then Boris was to forward them to Nicholas. The letters were from Count Rostov, Countess Rostov, Petya, Vera, Natasha, and Sonya, and finally there were six thousand rubles Count Rostov send to Nicholas's new outfit and various other things.

On the twelfth of November, General Kutuzov's active army, in camp before the city of Olmütz, was preparing to be reviewed the next day by the two sovereigns—the Tzar and the Austrian Emperor. The Guards, just arrived from Russia, spent the night ten miles from Olmütz and next morning were to come straight to the review, reaching the field at Olmütz by ten o'clock.

That day Nicholas received a letter from Boris, telling him that the Ismáýlov regiment was quartered for the night ten miles from Olmütz and that Boris wanted to see him as he had a letter and money for him. Nicholas was particularly in need of money now that the troops, after their active service, were stationed near Olmütz and the camp swarmed with well-provisioned sutlers and Austrian Jews offering all sorts of tempting wares. The Pávlograds soldiers held feast after feast, celebrating awards they had received for the campaign, and made expeditions to Olmütz to visit a certain Caroline the Hungarian, who had recently opened a restaurant there with girls as waitresses. Nicholas, who had just celebrated his promotion to cornet and had bought Denisov's horse, Bedouin, was in debt all round, to his comrades and the sutlers. On receiving Boris' letter Nicholas rode with a fellow officer to Olmütz, dined there, drank a bottle of wine, and then set off alone to the Guards' camp to find his old playmate, Boris. Nicholas had not yet had time to get his uniform. He had on a shabby cadet jacket, decorated with a soldier's cross, equally shabby cadet's riding breeches lined with worn leather, and an officer's saber with a sword knot. The horse he was riding was one was of a breed known as the "Russian Don" which

he had bought from a Cossack during the campaign, and he wore a crumpled hussar cap stuck jauntily back on one side of his head. As Nicholas rode up to the camp he thought how he would impress Boris and all his comrades of the Russian Guards by his appearance—that of a fighting hussar who had been under fire.

The Russian Guards had made their whole march as if on a pleasure trip, parading their cleanliness and discipline. They had come by easy stages, their knapsacks conveyed on carts, and the Austrian authorities had provided excellent dinners for the officers at every halting place. The regiments had entered and left the town with their bands playing, and by the Grand Duke's orders the men had marched all the way in step (a practice on which the Guards prided themselves), the officers on foot and at their proper posts.

Boris had been quartered with Berg and had marched all the way with him. Both men had done quite well for themselves in the last campaign. Berg, was now in command of a company and had obtained his captaincy. During the campaign he had gained the confidence of his superiors by his promptitude and accuracy, and all in all, Berg had arranged his money matters very satisfactorily. Boris, too, had made the acquaintance of many persons who might prove useful to him during the campaign, and by a letter of recommendation Boris had brought from Pierre, he had become acquainted with Andrei, through whom he hoped to obtain a post on General Kutuzov's staff.

Berg and Boris, having rested after yesterday's march, were sitting, clean and neatly dressed, at a round table in the clean quarters allotted to them, playing chess. Berg held a smoking pipe between his knees. Boris, in the accurate way characteristic of him, was building a little pyramid of chessmen with his delicate white fingers while awaiting Berg's move, and watched his opponent's face, evidently thinking about the game as he always thought only of whatever he was engaged on.

“Well, how are you going to get out of that?” Boris remarked.

“We’ll try to,” replied Berg, touching a pawn and then removing his hand.

At that moment the door opened.

“Here he is at last!” shouted Nicholas as he burst in. “And Berg too! Oh, you *petisenfans, allay cushay dormir!*” he exclaimed, imitating his Russian nurse’s French, at which he and Boris used to laugh long ago.

“Dear me, how you have changed!”

Boris rose to meet Nicholas, but in doing so did not omit to steady and replace some chessmen that were falling. Boris was then about to embrace his friend, but Nicholas avoided him. With that peculiar feeling of youth, that dread of beaten tracks, and wish to express itself in a manner different from that of its elders which is often insincere, Nicholas wished to do something special on meeting his friend. He wanted to pinch him, push him, do anything but kiss him—a thing everybody did. But notwithstanding this, Boris reached out and embraced Nicholas in a quiet, friendly way and kissed him three times.

Nicholas and Boris had not met for nearly half a year and, being at the age when young men take their first steps on life’s road, each saw immense changes in the other, quite a new reflection of the society in which they had taken those first steps. Both had changed greatly since they last met and both were in a hurry to show the changes that had taken place in them.

“Oh, you damned dandies! Clean and fresh as if you’d been to a fete, not like us sinners of the line,” cried Nicholas, with martial swagger and with baritone notes in his voice, new to Boris, pointing to his own mud-bespattered breeches.

The German landlady, hearing Nicholas’s loud voice, popped her head in at the door.

“Eh, is she pretty?” Nicholas asked Boris with a wink.

“Why do you shout so? You’ll frighten them!” said Boris. “I did not expect you today,” he added. “I only sent you the note yesterday by Andrei—an adjutant of General Kutuzov’s, who’s a friend of mine. I did not think he would get it to you so quickly... Well, how are you? Been under fire already?” asked Boris.

Without answering, Nicholas shook the soldier’s Cross of St. George fastened to the cording of his uniform and, indicating a bandaged arm, glanced at Berg with a smile.

“As you see,” Nicholas said.

“Indeed? Yes, yes!” said Boris, with a smile. “And we too have had a splendid march. You know, of course, that the Tzar rode with our regiment all the time, so that we had every comfort and every advantage. What receptions we had in Poland! What dinners and balls! I can’t tell you. And the Tzar’s son was very gracious to all our officers.”

And the two friends told each other of their doings, Nicholas of his hussar revels and life in the fighting line, Boris of the pleasures and advantages of service under members of the Tzar’s family.

“Oh, you Guards!” said Nicholas. “I say, send for some wine.”

Boris made a grimace. “If you really want it,” said he. Boris went to his bed, drew a purse from under the clean pillow, and sent for wine.

“Yes, and I have some money and a letter to give you,” Boris added.

Nicholas took the letter and, throwing the money on the sofa, put both arms on the table and began to read. After reading a few lines, Nicholas glanced angrily at Berg, then, meeting his eyes, hid his face behind the letter.

“Well, they’ve sent you a tidy sum,” said Berg, eyeing the heavy purse that sank into the sofa. “As for us, Nicholas, we get along on our pay. I can tell you for myself...”

“I say, Berg, my dear fellow,” said Nicholas, “when you get a letter from home and meet one of your own people whom you want to talk

everything over with, and I happen to be there, I'll go at once, to be out of your way! Do go somewhere, anywhere... to the devil!" Nicholas exclaimed, and immediately seizing Berg by the shoulder and looking amiably into his face, evidently wishing to soften the rudeness of his words, Nicholas added, "Don't be hurt, my dear fellow; you know I speak from my heart as to an old acquaintance."

"Oh, don't mention it, Nicholas! I quite understand," said Berg, getting up and speaking in a muffled and guttural voice.

"Go across to our hosts, Berg: they invited you," added Boris.

Berg put on the cleanest of coats, without a spot or speck of dust, stood before a looking glass and brushed the hair on his temples upwards, in the way affected by the Tzar, and, having assured himself from the way Nicholas looked at it that his coat had been noticed, left the room with a pleasant smile.

"Oh dear, what a beast I am!" muttered Nicholas, as he read the letter.

"Why?"

"Oh, what a pig I am, not to have written and to have given them such a fright! Oh, what a pig I am!" Nicholas repeated, flushing suddenly. "Well, have you sent your aide for some wine? All right let's have some!"

In the letter from Nicholas's parents was enclosed a letter of recommendation to Major-General Bagration which Countess Rostov, at Widow Drubetskoy's advice, had obtained through an acquaintance and sent to Boris, asking him to take it to its destination and make use of it.

"What nonsense! Much I need it!" said Nicholas, throwing the letter under the table.

"Why have you thrown that away?" asked Boris.

"It is some letter of recommendation... what the devil do I want it for!"

"Why 'What the devil'?" said Boris, picking it up and reading the address. "This letter would be of great use to you."

"I want nothing, and I won't be anyone's adjutant."

“Why not?” inquired Boris.

“It’s a lackey’s job!”

“You are still the same dreamer, I see,” remarked Boris, shaking his head.

“And you’re still the same diplomatist! But that’s not the point... Come, how are you?” asked Nicholas.

“Well, as you see. So far everything’s all right, but I confess I should much like to be an adjutant and not remain at the front.”

“Why?”

“Because when once a man starts on military service, he should try to make as successful a career of it as possible.”

“Oh, that’s it!” said Nicholas, evidently thinking of something else.

Nicholas looked intently and inquiringly into Boris’s eyes, evidently trying in vain to find the answer to some question.

The aide brought in the wine.

“Shouldn’t we now send for Berg?” asked Boris. “He would drink with you. I can’t.”

“Well, send for him... and how do you get on with that German?” asked Nicholas, with a contemptuous smile.

“Berg is a very, very nice, honest, and pleasant fellow,” answered Boris.

Again Nicholas looked intently into Boris’ eyes and sighed. Berg returned, and over the bottle of wine conversation between the three officers became animated. Boris and Berg told Nicholas of their march and how they had been made much of in Russia, Poland, and abroad. They spoke of the sayings and doings of their commander, the Grand Duke, and told stories of his kindness and irascibility. Berg, as usual, kept silent when the subject did not relate to himself, but in connection with the stories of the Grand Duke’s quick temper he related with gusto how in Galicia he had managed to deal with the Grand Duke when the latter made a tour of the regiments and was annoyed at the irregularity of a movement. With a

pleasant smile Berg related how the Grand Duke had ridden up to him in a violent passion, shouting: “Arnauts!” (“Arnauts” was the Tzar’s son’s favorite expression when he was in a rage) and called for the company commander.

Berg said, “Would you believe it, Nicholas, I was not at all alarmed, because I knew I was right. Without boasting, you know, I may say that I know the Army Orders by heart and know the Regulations as well as I do the Lord’s Prayer. So, Nicholas, there never is any negligence in my company, and so my conscience was at ease. I came forward...” (Berg stood up and showed how he presented himself, with his hand to his cap, and really it would have been difficult for a face to express greater respect and self-complacency than his did.) “Well, the Grand Duke stormed at me, as the saying is, stormed and stormed and stormed! It was not a matter of life but rather of death, as the saying is. ‘Albanians!’ and ‘devils!’ and ‘To Siberia!’” said Berg with a sagacious smile. “I knew I was in the right so I kept silent; was not that best, Nicholas?... ‘Hey, are you dumb?’ the Grand Duke shouted. Still I remained silent. And what do you think, Nicholas? The next day it was not even mentioned in the Orders of the Day. That’s what keeping one’s head means. That’s the way, Nicholas,” said Berg, lighting his pipe and emitting rings of smoke.

“Yes, that was fine,” said Nicholas, smiling.

But Boris noticed that Nicholas was preparing to make fun of Berg, and so Boris skillfully changed the subject. He asked Nicholas to tell them how and where he got his wound. This pleased Nicholas and he began talking about it, and as he went on became more and more animated. Nicholas told them of his adventure at the battle near the village of Schön Grabern, just as those who have taken part in a battle generally do describe it, that is, as they would like it to have been, as they have heard it described by others, and as sounds well, but not at all as it really was. Nicholas was a truthful young man and would on no account have told a deliberate lie. He began his story

meaning to tell everything just as it happened, but imperceptibly, involuntarily, and inevitably he lapsed into falsehood. If Nicholas had told the truth to his hearers—who like himself had often heard stories of attacks and had formed a definite idea of what an attack was and were expecting to hear just such a story—they would either not have believed him or, still worse, would have thought that Nicholas was himself to blame since what generally happens to the narrators of cavalry attacks had not happened to him. Nicholas could not tell them simply that everyone went at a trot and that he fell off his horse and sprained his arm and then ran away as hard as he could from a French soldier into the woods. Besides, to tell everything as it really happened, it would have been necessary to make an effort of will to tell only what happened. It is very difficult to tell the truth, and young people are rarely capable of it. Nicholas's hearers expected a story of how beside himself and all aflame with excitement, he had flown like a storm at the square, cut his way in, slashed right and left, how his saber had tasted flesh and he had fallen exhausted, and so on. And so Nicholas told them all that.

In the middle of his story, just as Nicholas was saying: "You cannot imagine what a strange frenzy one experiences during an attack," Andrei, whom Boris was expecting, entered the room. Andrei, who liked to help young men, was flattered by being asked for his assistance and being well disposed toward Boris, who had managed to please him the day before, he wished to do what Boris wanted. Having been sent with papers from General Kutuzov to the Tzar's son, Andrei looked in on Boris, hoping to find him alone. When Andrei came in and saw Nicholas, an hussar of the line, recounting his military exploits (Andrei could not endure that sort of man), Andrei gave Boris a pleasant smile, frowned as with half-closed eyes he looked at Nicholas, bowed slightly and wearily, and sat down languidly on the sofa: Andrei felt it unpleasant to have dropped in on bad company. Nicholas flushed up on noticing this, but he did not care, this was a mere

stranger. Glancing, however, at Boris, Nicholas saw that Boris, too, seemed ashamed of Nicholas's boasting.

As a result of Andrei's disagreeable, ironical tone, in spite of the contempt with which Nicholas, from his *fighting* army point of view, regarded all these little adjutants on the staff of whom the newcomer was evidently one, Nicholas felt confused, blushed, and became silent.

Boris inquired of Andrei what news there might be on the staff, and what, without indiscretion, one might ask about our plans.

"We shall probably advance," replied Andrei, evidently reluctant to say more in the presence of a stranger.

Berg took the opportunity to ask Andrei, with great politeness, whether, as was rumored, the allowance of forage money to captains of companies would be doubled. To this Andrei answered with a smile that he could give no opinion on such an important government order, and Berg laughed gaily.

"As to your business," Andrei continued, addressing Boris, "we will talk of it later" (and he looked round at Nicholas). "Come to me after the review and we will do what is possible."

And, having glanced round the room, Andrei turned to Nicholas, whose state of unconquerable childish embarrassment now changing to anger he did not condescend to notice, and Andrei said: "I think you were talking of the Schön Grabern battle? Were you there?"

"I was there," said Nicholas angrily, as if intending to insult the aide-de-camp Andrei.

Andrei noticed Nicholas's state of mind, and it amused him. With a slightly contemptuous smile, Andrei said: "Yes, there are many stories now told about that battle!"

"Yes, stories!" repeated Nicholas loudly, looking with eyes suddenly grown furious, now at Boris, now at Andrei. "Yes, many stories! But our stories are the stories of men who have been under the enemy's

fire! *Our* stories have some weight, not like the stories of those fellows on the staff who get rewards without doing anything!"

"Of whom you imagine me to be one?" said Andrei, with a quiet and particularly amiable smile.

A strange feeling of exasperation and yet of respect for this man's self-possession mingled at that moment in Nicholas's soul.

"I am not talking about you," Nicholas said, "I don't know you and, frankly, I don't want to. I am speaking of the staff in general."

"And I will tell you this," Andrei interrupted in a tone of quiet authority, "you wish to insult me, and I am ready to agree with you that it would be very easy to do so if you haven't sufficient self-respect, but admit that the time and place are very badly chosen. In a day or two we shall all have to take part in a greater and more serious duel, and besides, Boris, who says he is an old friend of yours, is not at all to blame that my face has the misfortune to displease you. However," Andrei added rising, "you know my name and where to find me, but don't forget that I do not regard either myself or you as having been at all insulted, and as a man older than you, my advice is to let the matter drop. Well then, Boris, on Friday after the review I shall expect you. *Goodbye!*" exclaimed Andrei, and with a bow to them both he went out.

Only when Andrei was gone did Nicholas think of what he ought to have said. And Nicholas was still more angry at having omitted to say it. He ordered his horse at once and, coldly taking leave of Boris, rode home. Should he go to headquarters the next day and challenge that affected adjutant, or really let the matter drop, was the question that worried Nicholas all the way. He thought angrily of the pleasure he would have at seeing the fright of Andrei, that small and frail but proud man, when covered by his pistol. Then, to his surprise, Nicholas felt that of all the men he knew there was none he would so much like to have for a friend as Andrei, that very adjutant whom he so hated.

The day after Nicholas had been to see Boris, a review was held of the Austrian and Russian troops, both those freshly arrived from Russia and those who had been campaigning under General Kutuzov. The two sovereigns, the Tzar with his son, and the Austrian Emperor with the Archduke, inspected the allied army of eighty thousand men.

From early morning the smart clean troops were on the move, forming up on the field before the fortress. Now thousands of feet and bayonets moved and halted at the officers' command, turned with banners flying, formed up at intervals, and wheeled round other similar masses of infantry in different uniforms; now was heard the rhythmic beat of hoofs and the jingling of showy cavalry in blue, red, and green braided uniforms, with smartly dressed bandmen in front mounted on black, roan, or gray horses; then again, spreading out with the brazen clatter of the polished shining cannon that quivered on the gun carriages and with the smell of linstocks, came the artillery which crawled between the infantry and cavalry and took up its appointed position. Not only the generals in full parade uniforms, with their thin or thick waists drawn in to the utmost, their red necks squeezed into their stiff collars, and wearing scarves and all their decorations, not only the elegant, pomaded officers, but every soldier with his freshly washed and shaven face and his weapons clean and polished to the utmost, and every horse groomed till its coat shone like satin and every hair of its wetted mane lay smooth—felt that no small matter was happening, but an important and solemn affair. Every general and every soldier was conscious of his own insignificance, aware of being but a drop in that ocean of men, and yet at the same time was conscious of his strength as a part of that enormous whole.

From early morning strenuous activities and efforts had begun and by ten o'clock all had been brought into due order. The ranks were drawn up on the vast field. The whole army was extended in three lines: the cavalry in front, behind it the artillery, and behind that again the infantry.

A space like a street was left between each two lines of troops. The three parts of that army were sharply distinguished: General Kutuzov's fighting army (with the Pávlograds on the right flank of the front); those recently arrived from Russia, both Guards and regiments of the line; and the Austrian troops. But they all stood in the same lines, under one command, and in a like order.

Like wind over leaves ran an excited whisper: "They're coming! The Tzar and Emperor are coming!" Alarmed voices were heard, and a stir of final preparation swept over all the troops.

From the direction of Olmütz in front of them, a group was seen approaching. And at that moment, though the day was still, a light gust of wind blowing over the army slightly stirred the streamers on the lances and the unfolded standards fluttered against their staffs. It looked as if by that slight motion the army itself was expressing its joy at the approach of the Tzar and Emperor. One voice was heard shouting: "Eyes front!" Then, like the crowing of cocks at sunrise, this was repeated by others from various sides and all became silent.

In the deathlike stillness only the tramp of horses was heard. This was the leaders' suites. The Tzar and Emperor rode up to the flank, and the trumpets of the first cavalry regiment played the general march. It seemed as though not the trumpeters were playing, but as if the army itself, rejoicing at their leaders' approach, had naturally burst into music. Amid these sounds, only the youthful kindly voice of the Tzar was clearly heard. He gave the words of greeting, and the first regiment roared "Hurrah!" so deafeningly, continuously, and joyfully that the men themselves were awed by their multitude and the immensity of the power they constituted.

Nicholas, standing in the front lines of General Kutuzov's army which the Tzar approached first, experienced the same feeling as every other man in that army: a feeling of self-forgetfulness, a proud consciousness of might, and a passionate attraction to him who was the cause of this triumph.

Nicholas felt that at a single word from that man all this vast mass (and he himself an insignificant atom in it) would go through fire and water, commit crime, die, or perform deeds of highest heroism, and so he could not but tremble and his heart stand still at the imminence of that word.

“Hurrah! Hurrah! Hurrah!” thundered from all sides, one regiment after another greeting the Tzar with the strains of the march, and then “Hurrah!” Then the general march, and again “Hurrah! Hurrah!” growing ever stronger and fuller and merging into a deafening roar.

Till the Tzar reached it, each regiment in its silence and immobility seemed like a lifeless body, but as soon as he came up it became alive, its thunder joining the roar of the whole line along which he had already passed. Through the terrible and deafening roar of those voices, amid the square masses of troops standing motionless as if turned to stone, hundreds of riders composing the suites moved carelessly but symmetrically and above all freely, and in front of them two men—the Tzar and the Emperor of Austria. Upon them the undivided, tensely passionate attention of that whole mass of men was concentrated.

The handsome young Tzar, in the uniform of the Horse Guards, wearing a cocked hat with its peaks front and back, with his pleasant face and resonant though not loud voice, attracted everyone’s attention.

Nicholas was not far from the trumpeters, and with his keen sight had recognized the Tzar and watched his approach. When he was within twenty paces, and Nicholas could clearly distinguish every detail of his handsome, happy young face, he experienced a feeling of tenderness and ecstasy such as he had never before known. Every trait and every movement of the Tzar’s seemed to him enchanting.

Stopping in front of the Pávlograds, the Tzar said something in French to the Austrian Emperor and smiled.

Seeing that smile, Nicholas involuntarily smiled himself and felt a still stronger flow of love for his sovereign. He longed to show that love in some

way and knowing that this was impossible was ready to cry. The Tzar called the colonel of the regiment and said a few words to him.

“Oh God, what would happen to me if the Tzar spoke to me?” thought Nicholas. “I should die of happiness!”

The Tzar addressed the officers also: “I thank you all, gentlemen, I thank you with my whole heart.” To Nicholas every word sounded like a voice from heaven. How gladly would he have died at once for his Tzar!

“You have earned the St. George’s standards and will be worthy of them.”

“Oh, to die, to die for him,” thought Nicholas.

The Tzar said something more which Nicholas did not hear, and the soldiers, straining their lungs, shouted “Hurrah!”

Nicholas too, bending over his saddle, shouted “Hurrah!” with all his might, feeling that he would like to injure himself by that shout, if only to express his rapture fully.

The Tzar stopped a few minutes in front of the hussars as if undecided.

“How can the Tzar be undecided?” thought Nicholas, but then even this indecision appeared to him majestic and enchanting, like everything else the Tzar did.

That hesitation lasted only an instant. The Tzar’s foot, in the narrow pointed boot then fashionable, touched the groin of the bobtailed bay mare he rode, his hand in a white glove gathered up the reins, and he moved off accompanied by an irregularly swaying sea of aides-de-camp. Farther and farther he rode away, stopping at other regiments, till at last only his white plumes were visible to Nicholas from amid the suites that surrounded the Tzar and the Emperor of Austria.

Among the gentlemen of the suite, Nicholas noticed Andrei, sitting his horse indolently and carelessly. Nicholas recalled their quarrel of yesterday and the question presented itself whether he ought or ought not to challenge Andrei. “Of course not!” he now thought. “Is it worth thinking or speaking

of it at such a moment? At a time of such love, such rapture, and such self-sacrifice, what do any of our quarrels and affronts matter? I love and forgive everybody now.”

When the Tzar had passed nearly all the regiments, the troops began a ceremonial march past him, and Nicholas on new horse, Bedouin, recently purchased from Denisov, rode past too, at the rear of his squadron—that is, alone and in full view of the Tzar.

Before he reached him, Nicholas, who was a splendid horseman, spurred Bedouin twice and successfully put him to the showy trot in which the animal went when excited. Bending his foaming muzzle to his chest, his tail extended, Bedouin, as if also conscious of the Tzar’s eye upon him, passed splendidly, lifting his feet with a high and graceful action, as if flying through the air without touching the ground.

Nicholas himself, his legs well back and his stomach drawn in and feeling himself one with his horse, rode past the Tzar with a frowning but blissful face “like a vewy devil,” as Denisov expressed it.

“Fine fellows, the Pávlograds!” remarked the Tzar.

“My God, how happy I should be if he ordered me to leap into the fire this instant!” thought Nicholas.

When the review was over, the newly arrived officers, and also General Kutuzov’s, collected in groups and began to talk about the awards, about the Austrians and their uniforms, about their lines, about Napoleon, and how badly the latter would fare now, especially if the Essen corps arrived and Prussia took our side.

But the talk in every group was chiefly about the Tzar. His every word and movement was described with ecstasy.

They all had but one wish: to advance as soon as possible against the enemy under the Tzar’s command. Commanded by the Tzar himself they could not fail to vanquish anyone, be it whom it might: so thought the Tzar and most of the officers after the review.

All were then more confident of victory than the winning of two battles would have made them.

The day after the review, Boris, in his best uniform and with his comrade Berg's best wishes for success, rode to Olmütz to see Andrei, wishing to profit by his friendliness and obtain for himself the best post he could—preferably that of adjutant to some important personage, a position in the army which seemed to him most attractive. "It is all very well for Nicholas, whose father sends him ten thousand rubles at a time, to talk about not wishing to cringe to anybody and not be anyone's lackey, but I who have nothing but my brains have to make a career and must not miss opportunities, but must avail myself of them!" he reflected.

Boris did not find Andrei in Olmütz that day, but the appearance of the town where the headquarters and the diplomatic corps were stationed and the Tzar and Napoleon were living with their suites, households, and courts only strengthened his desire to belong to that higher world.

Boris knew no one, and despite his smart Guardsman's uniform, all these exalted personages passing in the streets in their elegant carriages with their plumes, ribbons, and medals, both courtiers and military men, seemed so immeasurably above him, an insignificant officer of the Guards, that they not only did not wish to, but simply could not, be aware of his existence. At the quarters of the General Kutuzov, where Boris inquired for Andrei, all the adjutants and even the orderlies looked at him as if they wished to impress on him that a great many officers like him were always coming there and that everybody was heartily sick of them. In spite of this, or rather because of it, the next day, November 15, after dinner Boris again went to Olmütz and, entering the house occupied by General Kutuzov, asked for Andrei.

Andrei was in and so Boris was shown into a large hall probably formerly used for dancing, but in which five beds now stood, and furniture of various kinds: a table, chairs, and a clavichord. One adjutant, nearest the

door, was sitting at the table in a Persian dressing gown, writing. Another, the red, stout Sergeant Nesvitski, lay on a bed with his arms under his head, laughing with an officer who had sat down beside him. A third was playing a Viennese waltz on the clavichord, while a fourth, lying on the clavichord, sang the tune. Andrei was not there. None of these gentlemen changed his position on seeing Boris. The one who was writing and whom Boris addressed turned round crossly and told him Andrei was on duty and that he should go through the door on the left into the reception room if he wished to see him. Boris thanked him and went to the reception room, where he found some ten officers and generals.

When he entered, Andrei, his eyes drooping contemptuously (with that peculiar expression of polite weariness which plainly says, "If it were not my duty I would not talk to you for a moment"), was listening to an old Russian general with decorations, who stood very erect, almost on tiptoe, with a soldier's obsequious expression on his purple face, reporting something.

"Very well, then, be so good as to wait," said Andrei to the general, in Russian, speaking with the French intonation he affected when he wished to speak contemptuously, and noticing Boris, Andrei, paying no more heed to the general who ran after him imploring him to hear something more, nodded and turned to him with a cheerful smile.

At that moment Boris clearly realized what he had before surmised, that in the army, besides the subordination and discipline prescribed in the military code, which he and the others knew in the regiment, there was another, more important, subordination, which made this tight-laced, purple-faced general wait respectfully while Andrei, a mere captain, for his own pleasure chose to chat with Boris, a mere lieutenant. More than ever was Boris resolved to serve in future not according to the written code, but under this unwritten law. He felt now that merely by having been

recommended to Andrei he had already risen above the general (who at the front had the power to annihilate him, a mere lieutenant of the Guards).

Andrei came up to Boris and took his hand.

"I am very sorry you did not find me in yesterday. I was fussing about with Germans all day. We went with General Weyrother to survey the dispositions. When Germans start being accurate, there's no end to it!"

Boris smiled, as if he understood what Andrei was alluding to as something generally known. But it was the first time he had heard General Weyrother's name, or even the term "dispositions."

"Well, my dear fellow, so you still want to be an adjutant? I have been thinking about you."

"Yes, I was thinking"—for some reason Boris could not help blushing—"of asking General Kutuzov for the promotion. He has had a letter from Baron Vasili about me. I only wanted to ask because I fear the Guards won't be in action," Boris added as if in apology.

"All right, all right. We'll talk it over," replied Andrei. "Only let me report this gentleman's business, and I shall be at your disposal."

While Andrei went to report about the purple-faced general, that gentleman—evidently not sharing Boris' conception of the advantages of the unwritten code of subordination—looked so fixedly at the Boris, this presumptuous lieutenant who had prevented his finishing what he had to say to Andrei, that Boris felt uncomfortable. He turned away and waited impatiently for Andrei's return from General Kutuzov's room.

"You see, my dear fellow, I have been thinking about you," said Andrei to Boris when he returned, and they proceeded into the large room where the clavichord was. "It's no use your going to General Kutuzov. He would say a lot of pleasant things, ask you to dinner" ("That would not be bad as regards the unwritten code," thought Boris), "but nothing more would come of it. There will soon be a battalion of us aides-de-camp and adjutants! But this is what we'll do: I have a good friend, an adjutant general and an

excellent fellow, General Dolgorúkov; and though you may not know it, the fact is that now General Kutuzov with his staff and all of us count for nothing. Everything is now centered round the Tzar. So we will go to General Dolgorúkov; I have to go there anyhow and I have already spoken to him about you. We shall see whether he cannot attach you to himself or find a place for you somewhere nearer the sun.”

Andrei always became specially keen whenever he had to guide a young man and help him to worldly success. Under cover of obtaining help of this kind for another, which from pride he would never accept for himself, he kept in touch with the circle which confers success and which attracted him. He very readily took up Boris’ cause and went with him to General Dolgorúkov.

It was late in the evening when Boris and Andrei entered the palace at Olmütz occupied by the Tzar and the Austrian Emperor and their retinues.

That day, a council of war had been held in which all the members of the Hofkriegsrath and both the Tzar and the Austrian Emperor took part. At that council, contrary to the views of General Kutuzov and Baron Schwartzenberg, it had been decided to advance immediately and give battle to Napoleon. The council of war was just finishing when Andrei, accompanied by Boris, arrived at the palace to find General Dolgorúkov.

Everyone at headquarters was still under the spell of the day’s council, at which the party of the young had triumphed. The voices of those who counseled delay and advised waiting for something else before advancing had been so completely silenced and their arguments disproved by such conclusive evidence of the advantages of attacking that what had been discussed at the council—the coming battle and the victory that would certainly result from it—no longer seemed to be in the future but in the past. All the advantages were on our side. Our enormous forces, undoubtedly superior to Napoleon’s, were concentrated in one place, the troops inspired by the presence of the Tzar and the Austrian Emperor were eager for action.

The strategic position where the operations would take place was familiar in all its details to the Austrian General Weyrother: a lucky accident had ordained that the Austrian army should maneuver the previous year on the very fields where the French had now to be fought; the adjacent locality was known and shown in every detail on the maps, and Napoleon, evidently weakened, was undertaking nothing.

General Dolgorúkov, one of the warmest advocates of an attack, had just returned from the council, tired and exhausted but eager and proud of the victory that had been gained. Andrei introduced his protégé, but General Dolgorúkov politely and firmly pressing his hand said nothing to Boris and, evidently unable to suppress the thoughts which were uppermost in his mind at that moment, addressed Andrei in French.

“Ah, my dear fellow, what a battle we have gained! God grant that the one that will result from it will be as victorious! However, dear fellow,” General Dolgorúkov said abruptly and eagerly, “I must confess to having been unjust to the Austrians and especially to General Weyrother. What exactitude, what minuteness, what knowledge of the locality, what foresight for every eventuality, every possibility even to the smallest detail! No, my dear fellow, no conditions better than our present ones could have been devised. This combination of Austrian precision with Russian valor—what more could be wished for?”

“So the attack is definitely resolved on?” asked Andrei.

“And do you know, my dear fellow, it seems to me that Napoleon has decidedly lost bearings, you know that a letter was received from him today for the Tzar.” General Dolgorúkov smiled significantly.

“Is that so? And what did he say?” inquired Andrei.

“What can he say? Tra-di-ri-di-ra and so on... merely to gain time. I tell you Napoleon is in our hands, that’s certain! But what was most amusing,” General Dolgorúkov continued, with a sudden, good-natured laugh, “was that we could not think how to address the reply to Napoleon! If not as

‘Consul’ would be appropriate, and of course not ‘Tzar,’ it so seemed to me it should be to ‘General Napoleon.’”

“But between not recognizing him as Tzar and calling him General Napoleon, there is a difference,” remarked Andrei.

“That’s just it,” interrupted General Dolgorúkov quickly, laughing. “You know Adjutant Bilibin—he’s a very clever fellow. He suggested addressing him as ‘Usurper and Enemy of Mankind.’”

General Dolgorúkov laughed merrily.

“Only that?” said Andrei.

“All the same, it was Adjutant Bilibin who found a suitable form for the address. He is a wise and clever fellow.”

“What was it?”

“To the Head of the French Government... *Au chef du gouvernement français*,” said General Dolgorúkov, with grave satisfaction. “Good, wasn’t it?”

“Yes, but Napoleon will dislike it extremely,” said Andrei.

“Oh yes, very much! My brother knows Napoleon, he’s dined with him—Napoleon, who is the present leader—more than once in Paris, and my brother tells me he never met a more cunning or subtle diplomatist—you know, a combination of French adroitness and Italian play-acting! Do you know the tale about Napoleon and Count Markóv? Count Markóv was the only man who knew how to handle Napoleon. You know the story of the handkerchief? It is delightful!”

And the talkative General Dolgorúkov, turning now to Boris, now to Andrei, told how Napoleon, wishing to test Markóv, our ambassador, purposely dropped a handkerchief in front of him and stood looking at Markóv, probably expecting Markóv to pick it up for him, and how Markóv immediately dropped his own beside it and picked it up without touching Napoleon’s.

“Delightful!” said Andrei. “But I have come to you, General Dolgorúkov, as a petitioner on behalf of this young man. You see...” but before Andrei could finish, an aide-de-camp came in to summon General Dolgorúkov to the Tzar.

“Oh, what a nuisance,” said General Dolgorúkov, getting up hurriedly and pressing the hands of Andrei and Boris. “You know I should be very glad to do all in my power both for you and for this dear young man.” Again he pressed the hand of Boris’s with an expression of good-natured, sincere, and animated levity. “But you see... another time!”

Boris was excited by the thought of being so close to the higher powers as he felt himself to be at that moment. He was conscious that here he was in contact with the springs that set in motion the enormous movements of the mass of which in his regiment he felt himself a tiny, obedient, and insignificant atom. They followed General Dolgorúkov out into the corridor and met—coming out of the door of the Tzar’s room by which General Dolgorúkov had entered—a short man in civilian clothes with a clever face and sharply projecting jaw which, without spoiling his face, gave him a peculiar vivacity and shiftiness of expression. This short man nodded to General Dolgorúkov as to an intimate friend and stared at Andrei with cool intensity, walking straight toward him and evidently expecting him to bow or to step out of his way. Andrei did neither: a look of animosity appeared on his face and the other turned away and went down the side of the corridor.

“Who was that?” asked Boris.

“He is one of the most remarkable, but to me most unpleasant of men—the Minister of Foreign Affairs, Baron Czartorýski... It is such men as he who decide the fate of nations,” added Bolkonski with a sigh he could not suppress, as they passed out of the palace.

The next day, the army began its campaign, and up to the very battle of Austerlitz, Boris was unable to see either Andrei or General Dolgorúkov

again and remained for a while with the Ismáýlov regiment.

At dawn on the sixteenth of November, Denisov's squadron, in which Nicholas served and which was in Major-General Bagration's detachment, moved from the place where it had spent the night, advancing into action as arranged, and after going behind other columns for about two-thirds of a mile was stopped on the highroad. Nicholas saw the Cossacks and then the first and second squadrons of hussars and infantry battalions and artillery pass by and go forward and then Major-General Bagration and General Dolgorúkov ride past with their adjutants. All the fear before action that he had experienced previously, all the inner struggle to conquer that fear, all his dreams of distinguishing himself as a true hussar in this battle, had been wasted. Their squadron remained in reserve and Nicholas spent that day in a dull and wretched mood. At nine in the morning, he heard firing in front and shouts of *hurrah* and saw wounded being brought back (there were not many of them), and at last, he saw how a whole detachment of French cavalry was brought in, convoyed by a *company* of Cossacks. Evidently, the affair was over and, though not big, had been a successful engagement. The men and officers returning spoke of a brilliant victory, of the occupation of the town of Wischau and the capture of a whole French squadron. The day was bright and sunny after a sharp night frost, and the cheerful glitter of that autumn day was in keeping with the news of victory which was conveyed, not only by the tales of those who had taken part in it, but also by the joyful expression on the faces of soldiers, officers, generals, and adjutants, as they passed Nicholas going or coming. And Nicholas, who had vainly suffered all the dread that precedes a battle and had spent that happy day in inactivity, was all the more depressed.

"Come here, Nicholas. Let's dwink to dwown our gwief!" shouted Denisov, who had settled down by the roadside with a flask and some food.

The officers gathered around Denisov's canteen, eating and talking.

“There! They are bringing another!” cried one of the officers, indicating a captive French cavalryman who was being brought in on foot by two Cossacks.

One of the Cossacks was leading by the bridle a fine large French horse he had taken from the prisoner.

“Sell us that horse!” Denisov called out to the Cossacks.

“If you like, your honor!”

The officers got up and stood around the Cossacks and their prisoner. The French hussar was a young Alsatian who spoke French with a German accent. He was breathless with agitation, his face was red, and when he heard some French spoken he at once began speaking to the officers, addressing first one, then another. He said he would not have been taken, it was not his fault but the corporal’s who had sent him to seize some horsecloths, though he had told him the Russians were there. And at every word he added: “But don’t hurt my little horse!” and stroked the animal. It was plain that the dazed cavalryman did not quite grasp where he was. Now he excused himself for having been taken prisoner and now, imagining himself before his own officers, insisted on his soldierly discipline and zeal in the service. He brought with him into our rearguard all the freshness of atmosphere of the French army, which was so alien to us.

The Cossacks sold the horse for two gold pieces, and Nicholas, being the richest of the officers now that he had received his money, bought it.

“But don’t hurt my little horse!” said the Alsatian good-naturedly to Nicholas when the animal was handed over to the hussar.

Nicholas smilingly reassured the hussar and gave him money.

“Alley! Alley!” said the Cossack, touching the prisoner’s arm to make him go on.

“The Tzar! The Tzar is coming!” was suddenly heard among the hussars.

All began to run and bustle and Nicholas saw coming up the road behind him several riders with white plumes in their hats. In a moment everyone was in his place, waiting.

Nicholas did not know or remember how he ran to his place and mounted. Instantly his regret at not having been in action and his dejected mood amid people of whom he was weary had gone, instantly every thought of himself had vanished. He was filled with happiness at his nearness to the Tzar. He felt that this nearness by itself made up to him for the day he had lost. Nicholas was happy as a lover when the longed-for moment of meeting arrives. Not daring to look round and without looking round, he was ecstatically conscious of *his* approach. He felt it not only from the sound of the hoofs of the approaching cavalcade, but because as *he* drew near everything grew brighter, more joyful, more significant, and more festive around him. Nearer and nearer to Nicholas came that sun shedding beams of mild and majestic light around, and already he felt enveloped in those beams, he heard *his* voice, that kindly, calm, and majestic voice that was yet so simple! And as if in accord with Nicholas's feeling, there was a deathly stillness amid which was heard the Tzar's voice.

"The Pávlograd hussars?" the Tzar inquired.

"The reserves, sire!" replied a voice, a very human one compared to that which had said: "The Pávlograd hussars?"

The Tzar drew level with Nicholas and halted. The Tzar's face was even more beautiful than it had been three days before at the review. It shone with such gaiety and youth, such innocent youth, that it suggested the liveliness of a fourteen-year-old boy, and yet it was the face of the majestic Tzar. Casually, while surveying the squadron, the Tzar's eyes met Nicholas's and rested on them for not more than two seconds. Whether or not the Tzar understood what was going on in Nicholas's soul (it seemed to Nicholas that the Tzar understood everything), at any rate, the Tzar's light-

blue eyes gazed for about two seconds into Nicholas's face. A gentle, mild light poured from them. Then all at once, the Tzar raised his eyebrows, abruptly touched his horse with his left foot, and galloped on.

Earlier in the day, the Tzar had not been able to not restrain his wish to be present at the battle and, in spite of the remonstrances of his courtiers, at twelve o'clock he left the third column with which he had been and galloped toward the vanguard. Before the Tzar came up with the hussars, several adjutants met him with news of the successful result of the action.

This battle, which consisted in the capture of a French squadron, was represented as a brilliant victory over the French, and so the Tzar and the whole army, especially while the smoke hung over the battlefield, believed that the French had been defeated and were retreating against their will.

A few minutes after the Tzar had passed, the Pávlograd division was ordered to advance. In Wischau itself, a petty German town, Nicholas saw the Tzar again. In the marketplace, where there had been some rather heavy firing before the Tzar's arrival, lay several killed and wounded soldiers whom there had not been time to move. The Tzar, surrounded by his suite of officers and courtiers, was riding a bobtailed chestnut mare, a different one from that which he had ridden at the review, and bending to one side he gracefully held a gold opera glasses to his eyes and looked at a soldier who lay prone, with blood on his uncovered head. The wounded soldier was so dirty, coarse, and revolting that his proximity to the Tzar shocked Nicholas. Nicholas saw how the Tzar's rather round shoulders shuddered as if a cold shiver had run down them, how his left foot began convulsively tapping the horse's side with the spur, and how the well-trained horse looked round unconcerned and did not stir. An adjutant, dismounting, lifted the soldier under the arms to place him on a stretcher that had been brought. The soldier groaned.

"Gently, gently! Can't you do it more gently?" said the Tzar apparently suffering more than the dying soldier, and he rode away.

Nicholas had seen tears filling the Tzar's eyes and had heard him, as he was riding away, say to Czartorýski: "What a terrible thing war is: what a terrible thing! *What a terrible thing is war!*"

The troops of the vanguard were stationed before Wischau, within sight of the enemy's lines, which all day long had yielded ground to us at the least firing. The Tzar's gratitude was announced to the vanguard, rewards were promised, and the men received a double ration of vodka. The campfires crackled and the soldiers' songs resounded even more merrily than on the previous night. Denisov celebrated his promotion to the rank of major, and Nicholas, who had already drunk enough, at the end of the feast proposed the Tzar's health. "Not 'our Sovereign, the Tzar,' as they say at official dinners," said Nicholas, "but the health of our Sovereign, that good, enchanting, and great man! Let us drink to his health and to the certain defeat of the French!"

"If we fought before," Nicholas said, "not letting the French pass, as at the battle at the village Schön Grabern, what shall we not do now when *he* is at the front? We will all die for him gladly! Is it not so, gentlemen? Perhaps I am not saying it right, but I have drunk a good deal—but that is how I feel, and so do you too! To the health of the Tzar! Hurrah!"

"Hurrah!" rang the enthusiastic voices of the officers.

Even the old cavalry captain shouted enthusiastically and no less sincerely than the twenty-year-old Nicholas.

When the officers had emptied and smashed their glasses, the old cavalry captain filled others and, in shirt sleeves and breeches, went glass in hand to the soldiers' bonfires and with his long gray mustache, his white chest showing under his open shirt, he stood in a majestic pose in the light of the campfire, waving his uplifted arm.

"Lads! here's to our Sovereign, the Tzar, and victory over our enemies! Hurrah!" the old cavalry captain exclaimed in his dashing, old, hussar's

baritone.

The hussars crowded around and responded heartily with loud shouts.

Late that night, when all had separated, Denisov with his short hand patted his favorite, Nicholas, on the shoulder.

“As there are no women to fall in love with on campaign, Nicholas has fallen in love with the Tzar,” Denisov said.

“Denisov, don’t make fun of it!” cried Nicholas. “It is such a lofty, beautiful feeling, such a...”

“I believe it, I believe it, friend, and I share and approve...”

“No, you don’t understand!”

And Nicholas got up and went wandering among the campfires, dreaming of what happiness it would be to die—not in saving the Tzar’s life (he did not even dare to dream of that), but simply to die before his eyes. Nicholas really was in love with the Tzar and the glory of the Russian arms and the hope of future triumph. And he was not the only man to experience that feeling during those memorable days preceding the battle of Austerlitz: nine-tenths of the men in the Russian army were then in love, though less ecstatically, with their Tzar and the glory of the Russian arms.

The next day the Tzar stopped at Wischau, and Villier, his physician, was repeatedly summoned to see him. At headquarters and among the troops nearby the news spread that the Tzar was unwell. The Tzar ate nothing and had slept badly that night, those around him reported. The cause of this indisposition was the strong impression made on his sensitive mind by the sight of the killed and wounded.

At daybreak on the seventeenth, a French officer who had come with a flag of truce, demanding an audience with the Tzar, was brought into Wischau from our outposts. This officer was Savary. The Tzar had only just fallen asleep and so Savary had to wait. At midday, Savary was admitted to the Tzar, and an hour later he rode back with General Dolgorúkov to the advanced post of the French army.

It was rumored that Savary had been sent to propose to the Tzar a meeting with Napoleon. To the joy and pride of the whole army, a personal interview was refused, and instead of the Tzar, it was just General Dolgorúkov, the victor at Wischau, who was sent with Savary to negotiate with Napoleon if, contrary to expectations, these negotiations were actuated by a real desire for peace.

Toward evening General Dolgorúkov came back, went straight to the Tzar, and remained alone with him for a long time.

On the eighteenth and nineteenth of November, the army advanced two days' march, and the enemy's outposts after a brief interchange of shots retreated. In the highest army circles from midday on the nineteenth, a great, excitedly bustling activity began which lasted till the morning of the twentieth, when the memorable battle of Austerlitz was fought.

Till midday on the nineteenth, the activity—the eager talk, running to and fro, and dispatching of adjutants—was confined to the Tzar's headquarters. But on the afternoon of that day, this activity reached General Kutuzov's headquarters and the staffs of the commanders of columns. By evening, the adjutants had spread it to all ends and parts of the army, and in the night from the nineteenth to the twentieth, the whole eighty thousand allied troops rose from their bivouacs to the hum of voices, and the army swayed and started in one enormous mass six miles long.

The concentrated activity which had begun at the Tzar's headquarters in the morning and had started the whole movement that followed was like the first movement of the main wheel of a large tower clock. One wheel slowly moved, another was set in motion, and a third, and wheels began to revolve faster and faster, levers and cogwheels to work, chimes to play, figures to pop out, and the hands to advance with regular motion as a result of all that activity.

Just as in the mechanism of a clock, so in the mechanism of the military machine, an impulse once given leads to the final result; and just as

indifferently quiescent till the moment when motion is transmitted to them are the parts of the mechanism which the impulse has not yet reached. Wheels creak on their axles as the cogs engage one another and the revolving pulleys whirr with the rapidity of their movement, but a neighboring wheel is as quiet and motionless as though it were prepared to remain so for a hundred years, but the moment comes when the lever catches it and obeying the impulse that wheel begins to creak and joins in the common motion the result and aim of which are beyond its ken.

Just as in a clock, the result of the complicated motion of innumerable wheels and pulleys is merely a slow and regular movement of the hands which shows the time, so the result of all the complicated human activities of 160,000 Russians and French—all their passions, desires, remorse, humiliations, sufferings, outbursts of pride, fear, and enthusiasm—was only the loss of the battle of Austerlitz, the so-called battle of the three nations—that is to say, a slow movement of the hand on the dial of human history.

Andrei was on duty that day and in constant attendance on General Kutuzov.

At six in the evening, General Kutuzov went to the Tzar's headquarters and after staying but a short time with the Tzar went to see Grand Marshal of the Court Tolstóy.

Andrei took the opportunity to go in to get some details of the coming action from General Dolgorúkov. Andrei felt that General Kutuzov was upset and dissatisfied about something and that at headquarters they were dissatisfied with Kutuzov, and also that at the Tzar's headquarters everyone adopted toward him the tone of men who know something others do not know: Andrei, therefore, wished to speak to General Dolgorúkov.

"Well, how d'you do, my dear Andrei?" said General Dolgorúkov, who was sitting at tea with Adjutant Bilibin. "The fete is for tomorrow. How is General Kutuzov? Out of sorts?"

"I won't say he is out of sorts, but I fancy he would like to be heard."

“But they heard Kutuzov at the council of war and will hear him when he talks sense, but to temporize and wait for something now when Napoleon fears nothing so much as a general battle is impossible.”

“Yes, you have seen Napoleon?” said Andrei. “Well, what is he like? How did he impress you?”

“Yes, I saw Napoleon, and am convinced that he fears nothing so much as a general engagement,” repeated General Dolgorúkov, evidently prizing this conclusion which he had arrived at from his meeting. “If Napoleon weren’t afraid of a battle why did he ask for that meeting? Why negotiate, and above all why retreat, when to retreat is so contrary to his method of conducting war? Believe me, Napoleon is afraid, afraid of a general battle. His hour has come! Mark my words!”

“But tell me, what is he like, eh?” said Andrei again.

“Napoleon is merely a man in a gray overcoat, very anxious that I should call him ‘Your Majesty,’ but who, to his chagrin, got no title from me! That’s the sort of man Napoleon is, and nothing more,” replied General Dolgorúkov, looking round at Adjutant Bilibin with a smile.

“Despite my great respect for old General Kutuzov,” General Dolgorúkov continued, “we should be a nice set of fellows if we were to wait about and so give Napoleon a chance to escape, or to trick us, now that we certainly have him in our hands! No, we mustn’t forget Suvórov and his rule—not to put yourself in a position to be attacked, but instead, you should attack the enemy first. Believe me, in war the energy of young men often shows the way better than all the experience of old procrastinators.”

“But in what position are we going to attack Napoleon? I have been at the outposts today and it is impossible to say where Napoleon’s chief forces are situated,” said Andrei.

Andrei wished to explain to General Dolgorúkov a plan of attack he had himself formed.

“Oh, that is all the same,” General Dolgorúkov said quickly, and getting up he spread a map on the table. “All eventualities have been foreseen. If Napoleon is standing before Brünn...”

And General Dolgorúkov rapidly but indistinctly explained General Weyrother’s plan of a flanking movement.

Andrei began to reply and to state his own plan, which might have been as good as General Weyrother’s, but for the disadvantage that General Weyrother’s had already been approved. As soon as Andrei began to demonstrate the defects of the latter and the merits of his own plan, General Dolgorúkov ceased to listen to him and gazed absent-mindedly not at the map, but at Andrei’s face.

“There will be a council of war at General Kutuzov’s tonight, though; you can say all this there,” remarked General Dolgorúkov.

“I will do so,” said Andrei, moving away from the map.

“Whatever are you bothering about, gentlemen?” said Adjutant Bilibin, who, till then, had listened with an amused smile to their conversation and now was evidently ready with a joke. “Whether tomorrow brings victory or defeat, the glory of our Russian arms is secure. Except for your General Kutuzov, there is not a single Russian in command of a column! The commanders are Herr General Wimpfen, Commander Langeron, le Baron de Lichtenstein, le Baron de Hohenlohe, and finally Prishprish, and so on like all those Polish names.”

“Be quiet, backbiter!” said General Dolgorúkov. “It is not true; there are now two Russians, General Milorádovich, and General Dokhtúrov, and there would be a third, War Minister Arakchéev, if his nerves were not too weak.”

“However, I think General Kutuzov has come out,” said Andrei. “I wish you good luck and success, gentlemen!” he added and went out after shaking hands with General Dolgorúkov and Adjutant Bilibin.

On the way home, Andrei could not refrain from asking General Kutuzov, who was sitting silently beside him, what he thought of tomorrow's battle.

General Kutuzov looked sternly at his adjutant and, after a pause, replied: "I think the battle will be lost, and so I told Grand Marshal of the Court Tolstóy and asked him to tell the Tzar. What do you think he replied? 'But, my dear general, I am engaged with rice and cutlets, look after military matters yourself!' Yes... That was the answer I got!"

Shortly after nine o'clock that evening, General Weyrother drove with his plans to General Kutuzov's quarters where the council of war was to be held. All the commanders of columns were summoned and with the exception of Major-General Bagration, who declined to come, were all there at the appointed time.

General Weyrother, who was in full control of the proposed battle, by his eagerness and briskness presented a marked contrast to the dissatisfied and drowsy General Kutuzov, who reluctantly played the part of chairman and president of the council of war. General Weyrother evidently felt himself to be at the head of a movement that had already become unable to be restrained. He was like a horse running downhill harnessed to a heavy cart. Whether he was pulling it or being pushed by it he did not know but rushed along at headlong speed with no time to consider what this movement might lead to. General Weyrother had been twice that evening to the enemy's picket line to reconnoiter personally, and twice to the Tzar and the Austrian Emperor, to report and explain, and to his headquarters where he had dictated the dispositions in German, and now, much exhausted, he arrived at General Kutuzov's.

General Weyrother was evidently so busy that he even forgot to be polite to General Kutuzov. He interrupted him, talked rapidly and indistinctly, without looking at the man he was addressing and did not reply to questions put to him. He was bespattered with mud and had a pitiful,

weary, and distracted air, though at the same time he was haughty and self-confident.

General Kutuzov was occupying a nobleman's castle of modest dimensions near Ostraltitz. In the large drawing room which had become his office were gathered Kutuzov himself, General Weyrother, and the members of the council of war. They were drinking tea and only awaited Major-General Bagration to begin the council. At last Major-General Bagration's orderly arrived with the news that the general could not attend. Hearing this, Andrei came into the drawing room to inform the General Kutuzov and, availing himself of permission previously given him by General Kutuzov to be present at the council, Andrei remained in the room.

"Since Major-General Bagration is not coming, we may begin," said General Weyrother, hurriedly rising from his seat and going up to the table on which an enormous map of the environs of Brünn was spread out.

General Kutuzov, with his uniform unbuttoned so that his fat neck bulged over his collar as if escaping, was sitting almost asleep in a low chair, with his podgy old hands resting symmetrically on its arms. At the sound of General Weyrother's voice, he opened his one eye with an effort.

"Yes, yes, if you please! It is already late," said General Kutuzov, and nodding his head he let it droop and again closed his eye.

If at first the members of the council thought that General Kutuzov was pretending to sleep, the sounds his nose emitted during the reading that followed proved that General Kutuzov at that moment was absorbed by a far more serious matter than a desire to show his contempt for the dispositions or anything else—he was engaged in satisfying the irresistible human need for sleep. He really was asleep. General Weyrother, with the gesture of a man too busy to lose a moment, glanced at General Kutuzov and, having convinced himself that he was asleep, took up a paper and in a loud, monotonous voice began to read out the dispositions for the impending battle, under a heading which he also read out:

“Dispositions for an attack on the enemy position behind Kobelnitz and Sokolnitz, November 30, 1805.”

The dispositions were very complicated and difficult. They began as follows:

“As the enemy’s left wing rests on wooded hills and his right extends along Kobelnitz and Sokolnitz behind the ponds that are there, while we, on the other hand, with our left wing by far outflank his right, it is advantageous to attack the enemy’s latter wing especially if we occupy the villages of Sokolnitz and Kobelnitz, whereby we can both fall on his flank and pursue him over the plain between Schlappanitz and the Thuerassa forest, avoiding the defiles of Schlappanitz and Bellowitz which cover the enemy’s front. For this object, it is necessary that... The first column marches... The second column marches... The third column marches...” and so on, read General Weyrother.

The generals seemed to listen reluctantly to the difficult dispositions. The tall, fair-haired General Buxhöwden stood, leaning his back against the wall, his eyes fixed on a burning candle, and seemed not to listen or even to wish to be thought to listen. Exactly opposite General Weyrother, with his glistening wide-open eyes fixed upon him and his mustache twisted upwards, sat the ruddy General Milorádovich in a military pose, his elbows turned outwards, his hands on his knees, and his shoulders raised. He remained stubbornly silent, gazing at General Weyrother’s face, and only turned away his eyes when the Austrian chief of staff finished reading. Then General Milorádovich looked around significantly at the other generals. But one could not tell from that significant look whether he agreed or disagreed and was satisfied or not with the arrangements. Next to General Weyrother sat Commander Langeron who, with a subtle smile that never left his typically southern French face during the whole time of the reading, gazed at his delicate fingers which rapidly twirled by its corners a gold snuffbox on which was a portrait. In the middle of one of the longest

sentences, he stopped the rotary motion of the snuffbox, raised his head, and with inimical politeness lurking in the corners of his thin lips interrupted General Weyrother, wishing to say something. But the Austrian general, continuing to read, frowned angrily and jerked his elbows as if to say: "You can tell me your views later, but now be so good as to look at the map and listen." Commander Langeron lifted his eyes with an expression of perplexity and turned round to General Milorádovich as if seeking an explanation, but meeting the latter's impressive but meaningless gaze drooped his eyes sadly and again took to twirling his snuffbox.

"A geography lesson!" Commander Langeron muttered as if to himself, but loud enough to be heard.

Przebyszewski, with respectful but dignified politeness, held his hand to his ear toward General Weyrother, with the air of a man absorbed in attention. Dohktúrov, a little man, sat opposite General Weyrother, with an assiduous and modest mien, and stooping over the outspread map conscientiously studied the dispositions and the unfamiliar locality. He asked General Weyrother several times to repeat words he had not clearly heard and the difficult names of villages. General Weyrother complied and Dohktúrov noted them down.

When the reading which lasted more than an hour was over, Commander Langeron again brought his snuffbox to rest and, without looking at General Weyrother or at anyone in particular, began to say how difficult it was to carry out such a plan in which the enemy's position was assumed to be known, whereas it was perhaps not known, since the enemy was in movement. Commander Langeron's objections were valid but it was obvious that their chief aim was to show General Weyrother—who had read his dispositions with as much self-confidence as if he were addressing school children—that he had to do, not with fools, but with men who could teach him something in military matters.

When the monotonous sound of General Weyrother's voice ceased, General Kutuzov opened his eye as a miller wakes up when the soporific drone of the mill wheel is interrupted. He listened to what Commander Langeron said as if remarking, "So you are still at that silly business!" quickly closed his eye again, and let his head sink still lower.

Commander Langeron, trying as virulently as possible to sting General Weyrother's vanity as author of the military plan, argued that Napoleon might easily attack instead of being attacked, and so render the whole of this plan perfectly worthless. General Weyrother met all objections with a firm and contemptuous smile, evidently prepared beforehand to meet all objections be they what they might.

"If he could attack us, he would have done so today," said he.

"So you think he is powerless?" said Commander Langeron.

"He has forty thousand men at most," replied General Weyrother, with the smile of a doctor to whom an old wife wishes to explain the treatment of a case.

"In that case, he is inviting his doom by awaiting our attack," said Commander Langeron, with a subtly ironical smile, again glancing around for support to General Milorádovich who was near him.

But General Milorádovich was at that moment evidently thinking of anything rather than of what the room was disputing about.

"*My faith!*" said he, "tomorrow we shall see all that on the battlefield."

General Weyrother again gave that smile that seemed to say that to him it was strange and ridiculous to meet objections from Russian generals and to have to prove to them what he had not merely convinced himself of, but had also convinced the sovereigns of.

"The enemy has quenched his fires and a continual noise is heard from his camp," said General Weyrother. "What does that mean? Either he is retreating, which is the only thing we need fear, or he is changing his position." (He smiled ironically.) "But even if he also took up a position in

the Thuerassa, he merely saves us a great deal of trouble and all our arrangements to the minutest detail remain the same.”

“How is that?...” began Andrei, who had for long been waiting for an opportunity to express his doubts.

General Kutuzov here woke up, coughed heavily, and looked round at the generals.

“Gentlemen, the dispositions for tomorrow—or rather for today, for it is past midnight—cannot now be altered,” said he. “You have heard them, and we shall all do our duty. But before a battle, there is nothing more important...” he paused, “than to have a good sleep.”

General Kutuzov moved as if to rise. The officers bowed and retired. It was past midnight. Andrei went out.

The council of war, at which Andrei had not been able to express his opinion as he had hoped to, left on him a vague and uneasy impression. Whether General Dolgorúkov and General Weyrother, or General Kutuzov, Commander Langeron, and the others who did not approve of the plan of attack, were right—he did not know. “But was it really not possible for General Kutuzov to state his views plainly to the Tzar? Is it possible that on account of court and personal considerations tens of thousands of lives, and my life, *my life*,” Andrei thought, “must be risked?”

“Yes, it is very likely that I shall be killed tomorrow,” Andrei thought. And suddenly, at this thought of death, a whole series of most distant, most intimate, memories rose in his imagination: he remembered his last parting from his father and his wife; he remembered the days when he first loved her. He thought of her pregnancy and felt sorry for her and for himself, and in a nervously emotional and softened mood, he went out of the hut in which he was billeted with Sergeant Nesvitski and began to walk up and down before it.

The night was foggy and through the fog, the moonlight gleamed mysteriously. “Yes, tomorrow, tomorrow!” Andrei thought. “Tomorrow

everything may be over for me! All these memories will be no more, none of them will have any meaning for me. Tomorrow perhaps, even certainly, I have a presentiment that for the first time I shall have to show all I can do.” And his fancy pictured the battle, its loss, the concentration of fighting at one point, and the hesitation of all the commanders. And then that happy moment, that Toulon for which he had so long waited, presents itself to him at last. He firmly and clearly expresses his opinion to General Kutuzov, to General Weyrother, to the Tzar, and to the Austrian Emperor. All are struck by the justness of his views, but no one undertakes to carry them out, so he takes a regiment, a division—stipulates that no one is to interfere with his arrangements—leads his division to the decisive point, and gains the victory alone. “But death and suffering?” suggested another voice. Andrei, however, did not answer that voice and went on dreaming of his triumphs. The dispositions for the next battle are planned by him alone. Nominally he is only an adjutant on General Kutuzov’s staff, but he does everything alone. The next battle is won by him alone. General Kutuzov is removed and he is appointed... “Well and then?” asked the other voice. “If before that you are not ten times wounded, killed, or betrayed, well... what then?...” “Well then,” Andrei answered himself, “I don’t know what will happen and don’t want to know, and can’t, but if I want this—want glory, want to be known to men, want to be loved by them, it is not my fault that I want it and want nothing but that and live only for that. Yes, for that alone! I shall never tell anyone, but, oh God! what am I to do if I love nothing but fame and men’s esteem? Death, wounds, the loss of family—I fear nothing. And precious and dear as many persons are to me—father, sister, wife—those dearest to me—yet dreadful and unnatural as it seems, I would give them all at once for a moment of glory, of triumph over men, of love from men I don’t know and never shall know, for the love of these men here,” he thought, as he listened to voices in General Kutuzov’s courtyard. The voices were those of the orderlies who were packing up; one voice, probably a

coachman's, was teasing General Kutuzov's old cook whom Andrei knew, and who was called Tit. He was saying, "Tit, I say, Tit!"

"Well?" returned the old cook.

"Go, Tit, thresh a bit!" said the wag.

"Oh, go to the devil!" called out a voice, drowned by the laughter of the orderlies and servants.

"All the same," Andrei thought, "I love and value nothing but triumph over them all, I value this mystic power and glory that is floating here above me in this mist!"

That same night, Nicholas was with a platoon on skirmishing duty in front of Major-General Bagration's detachment. Nicholas's hussars were placed along the line in couples and he himself rode along the line trying to master the sleepiness that kept coming over him. An enormous space, with our army's campfires dimly glowing in the fog, could be seen behind him; in front of him was misty darkness. Nicholas could see nothing, peer as he would into that foggy distance: now something gleamed gray, now there was something black, now little lights seemed to glimmer where the enemy ought to be, now he fancied it was only something in his own eyes. His eyes kept closing, and in his fancy appeared—now the Tzar, now Denisov, and now Moscow memories—and he again hurriedly opened his eyes and saw close before him the head and ears of the horse he was riding, and sometimes, when he came within six paces of them, the black figures of hussars, but in the distance was still the same misty darkness. "Why not?... It might easily happen," thought Nicholas, "that the Tzar will meet me and give me an order as he would to any other officer; he'll say: 'Go and find out what's there.' There are many stories of his getting to know an officer in just such a chance way and attaching him to himself! What if he gave me a place near him? Oh, how I would guard him, how I would tell him the truth, how I would unmask his deceivers!" And in order to realize vividly his love and devotion to the sovereign, Nicholas pictured to himself an enemy or a

deceitful German, whom he would not only kill with pleasure but whom he would slap in the face before the Tzar. Suddenly a distant shout aroused him. He started and opened his eyes.

Nicholas thought, “Where am I? Oh yes, in the skirmishing line... pass and watchword—*shaft, Olmütz*. What a nuisance that our squadron will be in reserve tomorrow,” he thought. “I’ll ask leave to go to the front, this may be my only chance of seeing the Tzar. It won’t be long now before I am off duty. I’ll take another turn and when I get back I’ll go to the general and ask him.” Nicholas readjusted himself in the saddle and touched up his horse to ride once more around his hussars. It seemed to him that it was getting lighter. To the left, he saw a sloping descent lit up, and facing it a black knoll that seemed as steep as a wall. On this knoll there was a white patch that Nicholas could not at all make out: was it a glade in the wood lit up by the moon, or some unmelted snow, or some white houses? He even thought something moved on that white spot. “I expect it’s snow... that spot... a spot—*une tache*,” he thought. “There now... it’s not a *tache*... Natasha... sister, black eyes... Na... tasha... (Won’t she be surprised when I tell her how I’ve seen the Tzar?) Natasha... take my sabretache...” —“Keep to the right, your honor, there are bushes here,” came the voice of a hussar, past whom Nicholas was riding in the act of falling asleep. Nicholas lifted his head that had sunk almost to his horse’s mane and pulled up beside the hussar. He was succumbing to irresistible, youthful, childish drowsiness. “But what was I thinking? I mustn’t forget. How shall I speak to the Tzar? No, that’s not it—that’s tomorrow. Oh yes! Natasha... sabretache... saber them... Whom? The hussars... Ah, the hussars with mustaches. Along Tverskáya Street rode the hussar with mustaches... I thought about him too, just opposite Gúryev’s house... Old Gúryev... Oh, but Denisov’s a fine fellow. But that’s all nonsense. The chief thing is that the Tzar is here. How he looked at me and wished to say something, but dared not... No, it was I who dared not. But that’s nonsense, the chief thing is not to forget the important

thing I was thinking of. Yes, Na-tásha, sabretache, oh, yes, yes! That's right!" And his head once more sank to his horse's neck. All at once, it seemed to him that he was being fired at. "What? What? What?... Cut them down! What?..." said Nicholas, waking up. At the moment he opened his eyes he heard in front of him, where the enemy was, the long-drawn shouts of thousands of voices. His horse and the horse of the hussar near him pricked their ears at these shouts. Over there, where the shouting came from, a fire flared up and went out again, then another, and all along the French line on the hill fires flared up and the shouting grew louder and louder. Nicholas could hear the sound of French words but could not distinguish them. The din of many voices was too great; all he could hear was: "ahahah!" and "rrrr!"

"What's that? What do you make of it?" said Nicholas to the hussar beside him. "That must be the enemy's camp!"

The hussar did not reply.

"Why, don't you hear it?" Nicholas asked again, after waiting for a reply.

"Who can tell, your honor?" replied the hussar reluctantly.

"From the direction, it must be the enemy," repeated Nicholas.

"It may be *he* or it may be nothing," muttered the hussar. "It's dark... Steady!" he cried to his fidgeting horse.

Nicholas's horse was also getting restive: it pawed the frozen ground, pricking its ears at the noise and looking at the lights. The shouting grew still louder and merged into a roar that only an army of several thousand men could produce. The lights spread farther and farther, probably along the line of the French camp. Nicholas no longer wanted to sleep. The gay triumphant shouting of the enemy army had a stimulating effect on him. "*Long live Napoleon! Long live Napoleon!*" he now heard distinctly.

"They can't be far off, probably just beyond the stream," Nicholas said to the hussar beside him.

The hussar only sighed without replying and coughed angrily. The sound of horse's hoofs approaching at a trot along the line of hussars was heard, and out of the foggy darkness, the figure of a sergeant of hussars suddenly appeared, looming huge as an elephant.

"Your honor, the generals are coming!" said the sergeant, riding up to Nicholas.

Nicholas, still looking around toward the fires and the shouts, rode with the sergeant to meet some mounted men who were riding along the line. One was on a white horse. Major-General Bagration and General Dolgorúkov with their adjutants had come to witness the curious phenomenon of the lights and shouts in the enemy's camp. Nicholas rode up to Major-General Bagration, reported to him, and then joined the adjutants listening to what the generals were saying.

"Believe me," said General Dolgorúkov, addressing Major-General Bagration, "it is nothing but a trick! He has retreated and ordered the rearguard to kindle fires and make a noise to deceive us."

"Hardly," said Major-General Bagration. "I saw them this evening on that knoll; if they had retreated they would have withdrawn from that too... Officer!" said Major-General Bagration to Nicholas, "are the enemy's skirmishers still there?"

"They were there this evening, but now I don't know, your excellency. Shall I go with some of my hussars to see?" replied Nicholas.

Major-General Bagration stopped and, before replying, tried to see Nicholas's face in the mist.

"Well, go and see," he said, after a pause.

"Yes, sir."

Nicholas spurred his horse, called to Sergeant Fédchenko and two other hussars, told them to follow him, and trotted downhill in the direction from which the shouting came. He felt both frightened and pleased to be riding alone with three hussars into that mysterious and dangerous misty distance

where no one had been before him. Major-General Bagration called to him from the hill not to go beyond the stream, but Nicholas pretended not to hear him and did not stop but rode on and on, continually mistaking bushes for trees and gullies for men and continually discovering his mistakes. Having descended the hill at a trot, he no longer saw either our own or the enemy's fires but heard the shouting of the French more loudly and distinctly. In the valley, he saw before him something like a river, but when he reached it he found it was a road. Having come out onto the road he reined in his horse, hesitating whether to ride along it or cross it and ride over the black field up the hillside. To keep to the road which gleamed white in the mist would have been safer because it would be easier to see people coming along it. "Follow me!" said he, crossed the road, and began riding up the hill at a gallop toward the point where the French pickets had been standing that evening.

"Nicholas, there is the enemy!" cried one of the hussars behind him. And before Nicholas had time to make out what the black thing was that had suddenly appeared in the fog, there was a flash, followed by a report, and a bullet whizzing high up in the mist with a plaintive sound passed out of hearing. Another musket missed fire but flashed in the pan. Nicholas turned his horse and galloped back. Four more reports followed at intervals, and the bullets passed somewhere in the fog singing in different tones. Nicholas reined in his horse, whose spirits had risen, like his own, at the firing, and went back at a footpace. "Well, some more! Some more!" a merry voice was saying in his soul. But no more shots came.

Only when approaching Major-General Bagration did Nicholas let his horse gallop again, and with his hand at the salute rode up to the general.

General Dolgorúkov was still insisting that the French had retreated and had only lit fires to deceive us.

"What does that prove?" he was saying as Nicholas rode up. "They might retreat and leave the pickets."

“It’s plain that they have not all gone yet, Nicholas,” said Major-General Bagration. “Wait till tomorrow morning, we’ll find out everything tomorrow.”

“The picket is still on the hill, your excellency, just where it was in the evening,” reported Nicholas, stooping forward with his hand at the salute and unable to repress the smile of delight induced by his ride and especially by the sound of the bullets.

“Very good, very good,” said Major-General Bagration. “Thank you, officer.”

“Your excellency,” said Nicholas, “may I ask a favor?”

“What is it?”

“Tomorrow our squadron is to be in reserve. May I ask to be attached to the first squadron?”

“What’s your name?”

“Nicholas Rostov.”

“Oh, very well, you may stay in attendance on me.”

“Count Rostov’s son?” asked General Dolgorúkov.

But Nicholas did not reply.

“Then I may reckon on it, your excellency?”

“I will give the order.”

“Tomorrow very likely I may be sent with some message to the Tzar,” thought Nicholas.

“Thank God!”

The fires and shouting in the enemy’s army were occasioned by the fact that while Napoleon’s proclamation was being read to the troops Napoleon himself rode around his bivouacs. The soldiers, on seeing him, lit wisps of straw and ran after him, shouting, “*Long live Napoleon!*”

Napoleon’s proclamation was as follows:

Soldiers! The Russian army is advancing against you to avenge the Austrian army of Ulm. They are the same battalions you broke at

Hollabrunn and have pursued ever since to this place. The position we occupy is a strong one, and while they are marching to go around me on the right they will expose a flank to me. Soldiers! I will myself direct your battalions. I will keep out of fire if you with your habitual valor carry disorder and confusion into the enemy's ranks but should victory be in doubt, even for a moment, you will see your Tzar exposing himself to the first blows of the enemy, for there must be no doubt of victory, especially on this day when what is at stake is the honor of the French infantry, so necessary to the honor of our nation.

Do not break your ranks on the plea of removing the wounded! Let every man be fully imbued with the thought that we must defeat these hirelings of England, inspired by such hatred of our nation! This victory will conclude our campaign and we can return to winter quarters, where fresh French troops who are being raised in France will join us, and the peace I shall conclude will be worthy of my people, of you, and of myself.

NAPOLEON

At five in the morning, it was still quite dark. The troops of the center, the reserves, and Major-General Bagration's right flank had not yet moved, but on the left flank the columns of infantry, cavalry, and artillery, which were to be the first to descend the heights to attack the French right flank and drive it into the Bohemian mountains according to plan, were already up and astir. The smoke of the campfires, into which they were throwing everything superfluous, made the eyes smart. It was cold and dark. The officers were hurriedly drinking tea and breakfasting, the soldiers, munching biscuits and beating a tattoo with their feet to warm themselves, gathering around the fires throwing into the flames the remains of sheds, chairs, tables, wheels, tubs, and everything that they did not want or could not carry away with them. Austrian column guides were moving in and out among the Russian troops and served as heralds of the advance. As soon as an Austrian officer showed himself near a commanding officer's quarters,

the regiment began to move: the soldiers ran from the fires, thrust their pipes into their boots, their bags into the carts, got their muskets ready, and formed rank. The officers buttoned up their coats, buckled on their swords and pouches, and moved along the ranks shouting. The train drivers and orderlies harnessed and packed the wagons and tied on the loads. The adjutants and battalion and regimental commanders mounted, crossed themselves, gave final instructions, orders, and commissions to the baggage men who remained behind, and the monotonous tramp of thousands of feet resounded. The column moved forward without knowing where and was unable, from the masses around them, the smoke, and the increasing fog, to see either the place they were leaving or that to which they were going.

A soldier on the march is hemmed in and borne along by his regiment as much as a sailor is by his ship. However far he has walked, whatever strange, unknown, and dangerous places he reaches, just as a sailor is always surrounded by the same decks, masts, and rigging of his ship, so the soldier always has around him the same comrades, the same ranks, the same sergeant major Iván Mítrich, the same company dog Jack, and the same commanders. The sailor rarely cares to know the latitude in which his ship is sailing, but on the day of battle—heaven knows how and whence—a stern note of which all are conscious sounds in the moral atmosphere of an army, announcing the approach of something decisive and solemn, and awakening in the men an unusual curiosity. On the day of battle the soldiers excitedly try to get beyond the interests of their regiment, they listen intently, look about, and eagerly ask about what is going on around them.

The fog had grown so dense that though it was growing light they could not see ten paces ahead. Bushes looked like gigantic trees and level ground like cliffs and slopes. Anywhere, on any side, one might encounter an enemy invisible ten paces off. But the columns advanced for a long time, always in the same fog, descending and ascending hills, avoiding gardens and enclosures, going over new and unknown ground, and nowhere

encountering the enemy. On the contrary, the soldiers became aware that in front, behind, and on all sides, other Russian columns were moving in the same direction. Every soldier felt glad to know that to the unknown place where he was going, many more of our men were going too.

“There now, the Kúrsbies have also gone past,” was being said in the ranks.

“It’s wonderful what a lot of our troops have gathered, lads! Last night I looked at the campfires and there was no end of them. A regular Moscow!”

Though none of the column commanders rode up to the ranks or talked to the men (the commanders, as we saw at the council of war, were out of humor and dissatisfied with the affair, and so did not exert themselves to cheer the men but merely carried out the orders), yet the troops marched gaily, as they always do when going into action, especially to an attack. But when they had marched for about an hour in the dense fog, the greater part of the men had to halt and an unpleasant consciousness of some dislocation and blunder spread through the ranks. How such a consciousness is communicated is very difficult to define, but it certainly is communicated very surely, and flows rapidly, imperceptibly, and irrepressibly, as water does in a creek. Had the Russian army been alone without any allies, it might perhaps have been a long time before this consciousness of mismanagement became a general conviction, but as it was, the disorder was readily and naturally attributed to the stupid Germans, and everyone was convinced that a dangerous muddle had been occasioned by the sausage eater Germans.

The Russian soldiers talked to each other.

“Why have we stopped? Is the way blocked? Or have we already come up against the French?”

“No, one can’t hear them. They’d be firing if we had.”

“They were in a hurry enough to start us, and now here we stand in the middle of a field without rhyme or reason. It’s all those damned Germans’

muddling! What stupid devils!”

“Yes, I’d send them on in front, but no fear, they’re crowding up behind. And now here we stand hungry.”

“I say, shall we soon be clear? They say the cavalry are blocking the way,” said an officer.

“Ah, those damned Germans! They don’t know their own country!” said another.

“What division are you?” shouted an adjutant, riding up.

“The Eighteenth.”

“Then why are you here? You should have gone on long ago, now you won’t get there till evening.”

“What stupid orders! They don’t themselves know what they are doing!” said the officer and rode off.

Then a general rode past shouting something angrily, not in Russian.

“Tafa-lafa! But what he’s jabbering no one can make out,” said a soldier, mimicking the general who had ridden away. “I’d shoot them, the scoundrels!”

“We were ordered to be at the place before nine, but we haven’t got halfway. Fine orders!” was being repeated on different sides.

And the feeling of energy with which the troops had started began to turn into vexation and anger at the stupid arrangements and at the Germans.

The cause of the confusion was that while the Austrian cavalry was moving toward our left flank, the higher command found that our center was too far separated from our right flank and the cavalry were all ordered to turn back to the right. Several thousand cavalry crossed in front of the infantry, who had to wait.

At the front, an altercation occurred between an Austrian guide and a Russian general. The Russian general shouted a demand that the cavalry should be halted, the Austrian guide argued that not he, but the higher command, was to blame. The troops meanwhile stood growing listless and

dispirited. After an hour's delay, they, at last, moved on, descending the hill. The fog that was dispersing on the hill lay still more densely below, where they were descending. In front in the fog, a shot was heard and then another, at first irregularly at varying intervals—trata...tat—and then more and more regularly and rapidly, and the action at the Goldbach Stream began.

Not expecting to come on the enemy down by the stream, and having stumbled on him in the fog, hearing no encouraging word from their commanders, and with a consciousness of being too late spreading through the ranks, and above all being unable to see anything in front or around them in the thick fog, the Russians exchanged shots with the enemy lazily and advanced and again halted, receiving no timely orders from the officers or adjutants who wandered about in the fog in those unknown surroundings unable to find their own regiments. In this way, the action began for the first, second, and third columns, which had gone down into the valley. The fourth column, with which General Kutuzov was, stood on Pratzen Heights.

Below, where the fight was beginning, there was still thick fog; on the higher ground it was clearing, but nothing could be seen of what was going on in front. Whether all the enemy forces were, as we supposed, six miles away, or whether they were near by in that sea of mist, no one knew till after eight o'clock.

It was nine o'clock in the morning. The fog lay unbroken like a sea down below, but higher up at the village of Schlappanitz where Napoleon stood with his generals around him, it was quite light. Above him was a clear blue sky, and the sun's vast orb quivered like a huge hollow, crimson float on the surface of that milky sea of mist. The whole French army, and even Napoleon himself with his staff, were not on the far side of the streams and hollows of Sokolnitz and Schlappanitz beyond which we intended to take up our position and begin the action, but were on this side, so close to our own forces that Napoleon with the naked eye could distinguish a

mounted man from one on foot. Napoleon, in the blue cloak which he had worn on his Italian campaign, sat on his small gray Arab horse a little in front of his generals. He gazed silently at the hills which seemed to rise out of the sea of mist and on which the Russian troops were moving in the distance, and he listened to the sounds of firing in the valley. Not a single muscle of his face—which in those days was still thin—moved. His gleaming eyes were fixed intently on one spot. Napoleon's predictions were justified. Part of the Russian force had already descended into the valley toward the ponds and lakes and part was leaving these Pratzen Heights which he intended to attack and regarded as the key to the position. He saw over the mist that in a hollow between two hills near the village of Pratzen, the Russian columns, their bayonets glittering, were moving continuously in one direction toward the valley and disappearing one after another into the mist. From information he had received the evening before, from the sound of wheels and footsteps heard by the outposts during the night, by the disorderly movement of the Russian columns, and from all indications, he saw clearly that the allies believed him to be far away in front of them, and that the columns moving near Pratzen constituted the center of the Russian army, and that that center was already sufficiently weakened to be successfully attacked. But still, Napoleon did not begin the engagement.

Today was a great day for Napoleon—the anniversary of his coronation. Before dawn, he had slept for a few hours, and refreshed, vigorous, and in good spirits, he mounted his horse and rode out into the field in that happy mood in which everything seems possible and everything succeeds. He sat motionless, looking at the heights visible above the mist, and his cold face wore that special look of confident, self-complacent happiness that one sees on the face of a boy happily in love. The generals stood behind him not venturing to distract his attention. Napoleon looked now at the Pratzen Heights, now at the sun floating up out of the mist.

When the sun had entirely emerged from the fog, and fields and mist were aglow with dazzling light—as if Napoleon had only awaited this to begin the action—he drew the glove from his shapely white hand, made a sign with it to the generals, and ordered the action to begin. The generals, accompanied by adjutants, galloped off in different directions, and a few minutes later the chief forces of the French army moved rapidly toward those Pratzen Heights which was being more and more denuded by Russian troops moving down the valley to their left.

At eight o'clock General Kutuzov rode to Pratzen at the head of the fourth column, General Milorádovich's, the one that was to take the place of Przebyszéwski's and Commander Langeron's columns which had already gone down into the valley. He greeted the men of the foremost regiment and gave them the order to march, thereby indicating that he intended to lead that column himself. When General Kutuzov had reached the village of Pratzen he halted. Andrei was behind, among the immense number forming General Kutuzov's suite. Andrei was in a state of suppressed excitement and irritation, though controlled calm as a man is at the approach of a long-awaited moment. He was firmly convinced that this was the day of his Toulon, or his bridge of Arcola. How it would come about he did not know, but he felt sure it would do so. The locality and the position of our troops were known to him as far as they could be known to anyone in our army. His own strategic plan, which obviously could not now be carried out, was forgotten. Now, entering into General Weyrother's plan, Andrei considered possible contingencies and formed new projects such as might call for his rapidity of perception and decision.

To the left down below in the mist, the musketry fire of unseen forces could be heard. It was there Andrei thought the fight would concentrate. "There we shall encounter difficulties, and there," thought Andrei, "I shall be sent with a brigade or division, and there, standard in hand, I shall go forward and break whatever is in front of me."

Andrei could not look calmly at the standards of the passing battalions. Seeing them he kept thinking, "That may be the very standard with which I shall lead the army."

In the morning all that was left of the night mist on the heights was a hoar frost now turning to dew, but in the valleys, it still lay like a milk-white sea. Nothing was visible in the valley to the left into which our troops had descended and from whence came the sounds of firing. Above the heights was the dark clear sky and to the right the vast orb of the sun. In front, far off on the farther shore of that sea of mist, some wooded hills were discernible, and it was there the enemy probably was, for something could be descried. On the right, the Guards were entering the misty region with a sound of hoofs and wheels and now and then a gleam of bayonets; to the left beyond the village similar masses of cavalry came up and disappeared in the sea of mist. In front and behind moved infantry. General Kutuzov was standing at the end of the village letting the troops pass by him. That morning he seemed worn and irritable. The infantry passing before him came to a halt without any command being given, apparently obstructed by something in front.

"Do order them to form into battalion columns and go round the village!" General Kutuzov said angrily to a general who had ridden up. "Don't you understand, your excellency, my dear sir, that you must not defile through narrow village streets when we are marching against the enemy?"

"I intended to re-form them beyond the village," answered the general.

General Kutuzov laughed bitterly.

"You'll make a fine thing of it, deploying in sight of the enemy! Very fine!"

"The enemy is still far away, your excellency. According to the dispositions..."

“The dispositions!” exclaimed General Kutuzov bitterly. “Who told you that?... Kindly do as you are ordered.”

“Yes, sir.”

“My dear fellow,” Sergeant Nesvitski whispered to Andrei, “General Kutuzov is as surly as a dog.”

An Austrian officer in a white uniform with green plumes in his hat galloped up to General Kutuzov and asked in the Tzar’s name had the fourth column advanced into action.

General Kutuzov turned round without answering and his eye happened to fall upon Andrei, who was beside him. Seeing him, Kutuzov’s malevolent and caustic expression softened, as if admitting that what was being done was not his adjutant’s fault, and still not answering the Austrian officer, he addressed Andrei.

“Go, Andrei, and see whether the third division has passed the village. Tell it to stop and await my orders.”

Hardly had Andrei started than General Kutuzov stopped him.

“And ask whether sharpshooters have been posted,” Kutuzov added. “What are they doing? What are they doing?” he murmured to himself, still not replying to the Austrian.

Andrei galloped off to execute the order.

Overtaking the battalions that continued to advance, Andrei stopped the third division and convinced himself that there really were no sharpshooters in front of our columns. The colonel at the head of the regiment was much surprised at General Kutuzov’s order to throw out skirmishers. He had felt perfectly sure that there were other troops in front of him and that the enemy must be at least six miles away. There was really nothing to be seen in front except a barren descent hidden by dense mist. Having given orders in General Kutuzov’s name to rectify this omission, Andrei galloped back. General Kutuzov still in the same place, his stout body resting heavily in the saddle with the lassitude of age, sat yawning wearily with closed eyes.

The troops were no longer moving but stood with the butts of their muskets on the ground.

“All right, all right!” General Kutuzov said to Andrei and turned to a general who, watch in hand, was saying it was time they started as all the left-flank columns had already descended.

“Plenty of time,” muttered Kutuzov in the midst of a yawn, as if talking to the Tzar. “Plenty of time,” he repeated.

Just then at a distance behind General Kutuzov was heard the sound of regiments saluting, and this sound rapidly came nearer along the whole extended line of the advancing Russian columns. Evidently, the persons they were greeting were riding quickly. When the soldiers of the regiment in front of which General Kutuzov was standing began to shout, Kutuzov rode a little to one side and looked around with a frown. Along the road from Pratzen galloped what looked like a squadron of horsemen in various uniforms. Two of the horsemen rode side by side in front, at full gallop. One horseman, who wore a black uniform with white plumes in his hat, rode a bobtailed chestnut horse, the other horseman was in a white uniform and he rode a black horse.

These horsemen were the Tzar’s and the Austrian Emperor’s, followed by their suites of attendants. General Kutuzov, affecting the manners of an old soldier at the front, gave the command “Attention!” and rode up to the sovereigns with a salute. Kutuzov’s whole appearance and manner were suddenly transformed. He put on the air of a subordinate who obeys without reasoning. With an affectation of respect which evidently struck Tzar unpleasantly, Kutuzov rode up and saluted.

This unpleasant impression merely flitted over the young and happy face of the Tzar like a cloud of haze across a clear sky and vanished. After his illness, he looked rather thinner that day than on the field of Olmütz where Andrei had seen him for the first time abroad, but there was still the same bewitching combination of majesty and mildness in his fine gray eyes

and on his delicate lips the same capacity for varying expression and the same prevalent appearance of goodhearted innocent youth.

Previously, at the Olmütz review, the Tzar had seemed more majestic; here he seemed brighter and more energetic. He was slightly flushed after galloping two miles, and reining in his horse he sighed restfully and looked round at the faces of his suite, young and animated as his own. All the richly dressed gay young men on splendid, well-groomed, fresh, only slightly heated horses, exchanging remarks and smiling, had stopped behind the Tzar. The Austrian Emperor, a rosy, long-faced young man, sat very erect on his handsome black horse, looking about him in a leisurely and preoccupied manner. He beckoned to one of his white adjutants and asked some questions—"Most likely the Austrian Emperor is asking at what o'clock they started," thought Andrei, watching his old acquaintance with a smile he could not repress as he recalled his reception at Brünn. In the suites of the Tzar and the Austrian Emperor were the picked young orderly officers of the Guard and line regiments, Russian and Austrian. Among them were grooms leading the beautiful relay horses covered with embroidered cloths.

As when a window is opened a whiff of fresh air from the fields enters a stuffy room, so a whiff of youthfulness, energy, and confidence of success reached General Kutuzov's cheerless staff with the galloping advent of all these brilliant young men.

"Why aren't you beginning, General Kutuzov?" said the Tzar hurriedly to Kutuzov, glancing courteously at the same time at the Austrian Emperor.

"I am waiting, Your Majesty," answered General Kutuzov, bending forward respectfully.

The Tzar, frowning slightly, bent his ear forward as if he had not quite heard.

"Waiting, Your Majesty," repeated General Kutuzov. (Andrei noted that Kutuzov's upper lip twitched unnaturally as he said the word "waiting.")

“Not all the columns have formed up yet, Your Majesty.”

The Tzar heard but obviously did not like the reply; he shrugged his rather round shoulders and glanced at Novosíltsev who was near him as if complaining of General Kutuzov.

“You know, Kutuzov, we are not on the Empress’ Field where a parade does not begin till all the troops are assembled,” said the Tzar with another glance at the Emperor of Austria, as if inviting him if not to join in at least to listen to what he was saying. But the Emperor of Austria continued to look about him and did not listen.

“That is just why I do not begin, sire,” said General Kutuzov in a resounding voice, apparently to preclude the possibility of not being heard, and again something in his face twitched—“That is just why I do not begin, sire, because we are not on parade and not on the Empress’ Field,” said he clearly and distinctly.

In the sovereigns’ suite, all exchanged rapid looks that expressed dissatisfaction and reproach. “Old though he may be, he should not, he certainly should not speak like that,” their glances seemed to say.

The Tzar looked intently and observantly into General Kutuzov’s eye waiting to hear whether he would say anything more. But Kutuzov, with respectfully bowed head, seemed also to be waiting. The silence lasted for about a minute.

“However, if you command it, Your Majesty,” said General Kutuzov, lifting his head and again assuming his former tone of a dull, unreasoning, but submissive general. He touched his horse and having called General Milorádovich, the commander of the column, gave him the order to advance.

The troops again began to move, and two battalions of the Nóvgorod and one of the Ápsheron battalions went forward past the Tzar.

As this Ápsheron battalion marched by, the red-faced General Milorádovich, without his greatcoat, with his Orders on his breast and an

enormous tuft of plumes in his cocked hat worn on one side with its corners front and back, galloped strenuously forward, and with a dashing salute reined in his horse before the Tzar.

“God be with you, general!” said the Tzar.

“Indeed, Sire, we shall do everything it is possible to do, Sire,” General Milorádovich answered gaily, raising nevertheless ironic smiles among the gentlemen of the Tzar’s suite by his poor French.

General Milorádovich wheeled his horse sharply and stationed himself a little behind the Tzar. The men of the Ápsheon battalion, excited by the Tzar’s presence, passed in step before the Tzar and the Austrian Emperor and their suites of attendants at a bold, brisk pace.

“Lads!” shouted General Milorádovich in a loud, self-confident, and cheery voice, obviously so elated by the sound of firing, by the prospect of battle, and by the sight of the gallant Ápsheons, his comrades in Suvórov’s time, now passing so gallantly before the Tzar and the Austrian Emperor, that he forgot the sovereigns’ presence. “Lads, it’s not the first village you’ve had to take,” cried he.

“Glad to do our best!” shouted the soldiers.

The Tzar’s horse started at the sudden cry. This horse that had carried the sovereign at reviews in Russia bore him also here on the field of Austerlitz, enduring the heedless blows of his left foot and pricking its ears at the sound of shots just as it had done on the Empress’ Field, not understanding the significance of the firing, nor of the nearness of the Austrian Emperor’s black horse, nor of all that was being said, thought, and felt that day by its rider.

The Tzar turned with a smile to one of his followers and made a remark, pointing to the men of the gallant Ápsheon battalion.

General Kutuzov accompanied by his adjutants rode at a walking pace behind the carabineers.

When he had gone less than half a mile in the rear of the column he stopped at a solitary, deserted house that had probably once been an inn, where two roads parted. Both of them led downhill and troops were marching along both.

The fog had begun to clear and enemy troops were already dimly visible about a mile and a half off on the opposite heights. Down below, on the left, the firing became more distinct. General Kutuzov had stopped and was speaking to an Austrian general. Andrei, who was a little behind looking at them, turned to an adjutant to ask him for a field glass.

“Look, look!” said this adjutant, looking not at the troops in the distance, but down the hill before him. “It’s the French!”

The two generals and the adjutant took hold of the field glass, trying to snatch it from one another. The expression on all their faces suddenly changed to one of horror. The French were supposed to be a mile and a half away but had suddenly and unexpectedly appeared just in front of us.

“It’s the enemy?... No!... Yes, see it is!... for certain... But how is that?” said different voices.

With the naked eye, Andrei saw below them to the right, not more than five hundred paces from where General Kutuzov was standing, a dense French column coming up to meet the Ápsheon battalion.

“Here it is! The decisive moment has arrived. My turn has come,” thought Andrei, and striking his horse he rode up to General Kutuzov.

“Our Ápsheon battalion must be stopped, your excellency,” cried Andrei. But at that very instant a cloud of smoke spread all around, firing was heard quite close at hand, and a voice of naive terror barely two steps from Andrei shouted, “Brothers! All’s lost!” And at this as if at a command, everyone began to run.

Confused and ever-increasing crowds were running back to where five minutes before the troops had passed the Tzar and the Austrian Emperor. Not only would it have been difficult to stop that crowd, but it was also

impossible not to be carried back with it oneself. Andrei only tried not to lose touch with it and looked around bewildered and unable to grasp what was happening in front of him. Sergeant Nesvitski with an angry face, red and unlike himself, was shouting to General Kutuzov that if he did not ride away at once he would certainly be taken prisoner. Kutuzov remained in the same place and without answering drew out a handkerchief. Blood was flowing from his cheek. Andrei forced his way to him.

“You are wounded?” Andrei asked, hardly able to master the trembling of his lower jaw.

“The wound is not here, it is there!” said General Kutuzov, pressing the handkerchief to his wounded cheek and pointing to the fleeing soldiers. “Stop them!” Kutuzov shouted, and at the same moment, probably realizing that it was impossible to stop them, spurred his horse and rode to the right.

A fresh wave of the flying mob caught him and bore him back with it.

The Russian troops were running away in such a dense mass that once surrounded by them it was difficult to get out again. One was shouting, “Get on! Why are you hindering us?” Another in the same place turned round and fired in the air; a third was striking the horse General Kutuzov himself rode. Having by a great effort got away to the left from that flood of men, Kutuzov, with his suite diminished by more than half, rode toward a sound of artillery fire nearby. Having forced his way out of the crowd of fugitives, Andrei, trying to keep near General Kutuzov, saw on the slope of the hill amid the smoke a Russian battery that was still firing and Frenchmen running towards it. Higher up stood some Russian infantry, neither moving forward to protect the battery nor backward with the fleeing crowd. A mounted general separated himself from the infantry and approached General Kutuzov. Of General Kutuzov’s suite, only four remained. They were all pale and exchanged looks in silence.

“Stop those wretches!” gasped General Kutuzov to the regimental commander, pointing to the flying soldiers; but at that instant, as if to

punish him for those words, bullets flew hissing across the regiment and across General Kutuzov's suite like a flock of little birds.

The French had attacked the battery and when they saw General Kutuzov they started firing at him. After this volley the regimental commander clutched at his leg; several soldiers fell, and a second lieutenant who was holding the flag let it fall from his hands. It swayed and fell, but caught on the muskets of the nearest soldiers. The soldiers started firing without orders.

"Oh! Oh! Oh!" groaned General Kutuzov despairingly and looked around... "Andrei!" he whispered, his voice trembling from a consciousness of the feebleness of age, "Andrei!" he whispered, pointing to the disordered battalion and at the enemy, "what's that?"

But before Kutuzov had finished speaking, Andrei, feeling tears of shame and anger choking him, had already leaped from his horse and run to the standard.

"Forward, lads!" Andrei shouted in a voice as piercing as a child's.

"Here it is!" he thought, seizing the staff of the standard and hearing with pleasure the whistle of bullets evidently aimed at him. Several soldiers fell.

"Hurrah!" shouted Andrei, and, scarcely able to hold up the heavy standard, he ran forward with full confidence that the whole battalion would follow him.

And really he only ran a few steps alone. One soldier moved and then another and soon the whole battalion ran forward shouting "Hurrah!" and overtook him. A sergeant of the battalion ran up and took the flag that was swaying from its weight in Andrei's hands, but he was immediately killed. Andrei again seized the standard and, dragging it by the staff, ran on with the battalion. In front, he saw our artillerymen, some of whom were fighting, while others, having abandoned their guns, were running toward him. He also saw French infantry soldiers who were seizing the artillery

horses and turning the guns around. Andrei and the battalion were already within twenty paces of the cannon. He heard the whistle of bullets above him unceasingly and to right and left of him soldiers continually groaned and dropped. But he did not look at them: he looked only at what was going on in front of him—at the battery. He now saw clearly the figure of a red-haired gunner with his shako knocked awry, pulling one end of a mop while a French soldier tugged at the other. He could distinctly see the distraught yet angry expression on the faces of these two men, who evidently did not realize what they were doing.

“What are they about?” thought Andrei as he gazed at them. “Why doesn’t the red-haired gunner run away as he is unarmed? Why doesn’t the Frenchman stab him? The gunner will not get away before the Frenchman remembers his bayonet and stabs him...”

Another French soldier, trailing his musket, ran up to the struggling men, and the fate of the red-haired gunner, who had triumphantly secured the mop and still did not realize what awaited him, was about to be decided. But Andrei did not see how it ended. It seemed to him as though one of the soldiers near him hit him on the head with the full swing of a bludgeon. It hurt a little, but the worst of it was that the pain distracted him and prevented him from seeing what he had been looking at.

“What’s this? Am I falling? My legs are giving way,” thought Andrei, and fell on his back. He opened his eyes, hoping to see how the struggle of the Frenchmen with the gunners ended, whether the red-haired gunner had been killed or not, and whether the cannon had been captured or saved. But he saw nothing. Above him there was now nothing but the sky—the lofty sky, not clear yet still immeasurably lofty, with gray clouds gliding slowly across it. “How quiet, peaceful, and solemn; not at all as I ran,” thought Andrei—“not as we ran, shouting and fighting, not at all as the gunner and the Frenchman with frightened and angry faces struggled for the mop: how differently do those clouds glide across that lofty infinite sky! How was it I

did not see that lofty sky before? And how happy I am to have found it at last! Yes! All is vanity, all falsehood, except that infinite sky. There is nothing, nothing, but that. But even if it does not exist, there is nothing but quiet and peace. Thank God!...”

On our right flank commanded by Major-General Bagration, at nine o'clock the battle had not yet begun. Not wishing to agree to General Dolgorúkov's demand to commence the action, and wishing to avert responsibility from himself, Major-General Bagration proposed to General Dolgorúkov to send to inquire of General Kutuzov. Major-General Bagration knew that as the distance between the two flanks was more than six miles, even if the messenger were not killed (which he very likely would be), and found General Kutuzov (which would be very difficult), he would not be able to get back before evening.

Major-General Bagration cast his large, expressionless, sleepy eyes around his suite, and the boyish face of Nicholas, breathless with excitement and hope, was the first to catch his eye. He sent Nicholas.

“And if I should meet the Tzar before I meet General Kutuzov, your excellency?” said Nicholas, with his hand to his cap.

“You can give the message to the Tzar,” said General Dolgorúkov, hurriedly interrupting Major-General Bagration.

Earlier that night, Nicholas had been relieved from picket duty and so he had managed to get a few hours of sleep before morning. As a result, he felt cheerful, bold, and resolute, with an elasticity of movement, faith in his good fortune, and generally in that state of mind which makes everything seem possible, pleasant, and easy.

All Nicholas's wishes were being fulfilled that morning: there was to be a general engagement in which he was taking part, more than that, he was orderly to the bravest general, and still more, he was going with a message to General Kutuzov, perhaps even to the sovereign himself. The morning was bright, he had a good horse under him, and his heart was full of joy and

happiness. On receiving the order Nicholas gave his horse the rein and galloped along the line. At first, he rode along the line of Major-General Bagration's troops, which had not yet advanced into action but were standing motionless; then he came to the region occupied by Uvárov's cavalry, and here he noticed a stir and signs of preparation for battle; having passed Uvárov's cavalry he clearly heard the sound of cannon and musketry ahead of him. The firing grew louder and louder.

In the fresh morning air was now heard, not two or three musket shots at irregular intervals as before, followed by one or two cannon shots, but a roll of volleys of musketry from the slopes of the hill before Pratzen, interrupted by such frequent reports of cannon that sometimes several of them were not separated from one another but merged into a roar.

Nicholas could see puffs of musketry smoke that seemed to chase one another down the hillsides, and clouds of cannon smoke rolling, spreading, and mingling with one another. He could also, by the gleam of bayonets visible through the smoke, make out moving masses of infantry and narrow lines of artillery with green caissons.

Nicholas stopped his horse for a moment on a hillock to see what was going on, but strain his attention as he would he could not understand or make out anything of what was happening: there in the smoke men of some sort were moving about, in front and behind moved lines of troops; but why, whither, and who they were, it was impossible to make out. These sights and sounds had no depressing or intimidating effect on him; on the contrary, they stimulated his energy and determination.

"Go on! Go on! Give it to them!" Nicholas mentally exclaimed at these sounds, and again proceeded to gallop along the line, penetrating farther and farther into the region where the army was already in action.

"How it will be there I don't know, but all will be well!" thought Nicholas.

After passing some Austrian troops he noticed that the next part of the line (the Guards) was already in action.

“So much the better! I shall see it close,” he thought.

Nicholas was riding almost along the front line. A handful of men came galloping toward him. They were our light cavalry who with disordered ranks were returning from the attack. Nicholas got out of their way, involuntarily noticed that one of them was bleeding, and galloped on.

“That is no business of mine,” Nicholas thought. He had not ridden many hundred yards after that before he saw to his left, across the whole width of the field, an enormous mass of cavalry in brilliant white uniforms, mounted on black horses, trotting straight toward him and across his path. Nicholas put his horse to full gallop to get out of the way of these men, and he would have got clear had they continued at the same speed, but they kept increasing their pace, so that some of the horses were already galloping. Nicholas heard the thud of their hoofs and the jingle of their weapons and saw their horses, their figures, and even their faces, more and more distinctly. They were our Horse Guards, advancing to attack the French cavalry that was coming to meet them.

The Horse Guards were galloping, but still holding in their horses. Nicholas could already see their faces and heard the command: “Charge!” shouted by an officer who was urging his thoroughbred to full speed. Nicholas, fearing to be crushed or swept into the attack on the French, galloped along the front as hard as his horse could go, but still was not in time to avoid them.

The last of the Horse Guards, a huge pockmarked fellow, frowned angrily on seeing Nicholas before him, with whom he would inevitably collide. This Guardsman would certainly have bowled over Nicholas and his horse, Bedouin (Nicholas felt himself quite tiny and weak compared to these gigantic men and horses) had it not occurred to Nicholas to flourish his whip before the eyes of the Guardsman’s horse. The heavy black horse,

sixteen hands high, shied, throwing back its ears; but the pockmarked Guardsman drove his huge spurs in violently, and the horse, flourishing its tail and extending its neck, galloped on yet faster. Hardly had the Horse Guards passed Nicholas before he heard them shout, “Hurrah!” and looking back saw that their foremost ranks were mixed up with some foreign cavalry with red epaulets, probably French. He could see nothing more, for immediately afterward cannon began firing from somewhere and smoke enveloped everything.

At that moment, as the Horse Guards, having passed him, disappeared in the smoke, Nicholas hesitated whether to gallop after them or to go where he was sent. This was the brilliant charge of the Horse Guards that amazed the French themselves. Nicholas was horrified to hear later that of all that mass of huge and handsome men, of all those brilliant, rich youths, officers, and cadets, who had galloped past him on their thousand-ruble horses, only eighteen men were left after the charge.

“Why should I envy them? My chance is not lost, and maybe I shall see the Tzar immediately!” thought Nicholas and galloped on.

When he came level with the Foot Guards he noticed that about them and around them cannon balls were flying, of which he was aware not so much because he heard their sound as because he saw uneasiness on the soldiers’ faces and unnatural warlike solemnity on those of the officers.

Passing behind one of the lines of a regiment of Foot Guards he heard a voice calling him by name.

“Nicholas!”

“What?” he answered, not recognizing Boris.

“I say, we’ve been in the front line! Our regiment attacked!” said Boris with the happy smile seen on the faces of young men who have been under fire for the first time.

Nicholas stopped.

“Have you?” he said. “Well, how did it go?”

“We drove them back!” said Boris with animation, growing talkative. “Can you imagine it?” and Boris began describing how the Guards, having taken up their position and seeing troops before them, thought they were Austrians, and all at once discovered from the cannon balls discharged by those troops that they were themselves in the front line and had unexpectedly to go into action. Nicholas without hearing Boris to the end spurred his horse.

“Where are you off to?” asked Boris.

“With a message to His Majesty.”

“There he is!” said Boris, thinking Nicholas had said “His Highness,” and pointing to the Grand Duke who with his high shoulders and frowning brows stood a hundred paces away from them in his helmet and Horse Guards’ jacket, shouting something to a pale, white uniformed Austrian officer.

“But that’s the Grand Duke, and I want General Kutuzov or the Tzar,” said Nicholas, and was about to spur his horse.

“Nicholas! Nicholas!” shouted Berg who ran up from the other side as eager as Boris. “Nicholas! I am wounded in my right hand” (and he showed his bleeding hand with a handkerchief tied round it) “and I remained at the front. I held my sword in my left hand, Nicholas. All our family—the von Bergs—have been knights!”

Berg said something more, but Nicholas did not wait to hear it and rode away.

Having passed the Guards and traversed an empty space, Nicholas, to avoid again getting in front of the first line as he had done when the Horse Guards charged, followed the line of reserves, going far around the place where the hottest musket fire and cannonade were heard. Suddenly he heard musket fire quite close in front of him and behind our troops, where he could never have expected the enemy to be.

“What can it be?” Nicholas thought. “The enemy in the rear of our army? Impossible!” And suddenly he was seized by a panic of fear for himself and for the issue of the whole battle. “But be that what it may,” he reflected, “there is no riding around it now. I must look for General Kutuzov here, and if all is lost it is for me to perish with the rest.”

The foreboding of evil that had suddenly come over Nicholas was more and more confirmed the farther he rode into the region behind the village of Pratzen, which was full of troops of all kinds.

“What does it mean? What is it? Whom are they firing at? Who is firing?” Nicholas kept asking as he came up to Russian and Austrian soldiers running in confused crowds across his path.

“The devil knows! They’ve killed everybody! It’s all up now!” he was told in Russian, German, and Czech by the crowd of fugitives who understood what was happening as little as he did.

“Kill the Germans!” shouted one.

“May the devil take them—the traitors!”

“*Hang these Russians!*” muttered a German.

Several wounded men passed along the road, and words of abuse, screams, and groans mingled in a hubbub, then the firing died down. Nicholas learned later that Russian and Austrian soldiers had been firing at one another.

“My God! What does it all mean?” thought Nicholas. “And here, where at any moment the Tzar may see them... But no, these must be only a handful of scoundrels. It will soon be over, it can’t be *that*, it can’t be! Only to get past them quicker, quicker!”

The idea of defeat and flight could not enter Nicholas’s head. Though he saw French cannon and French troops on the Pratzen Heights just where he had been ordered to look for General Kutuzov, he could not, did not wish to, believe *that*.

Nicholas had been ordered to look for General Kutuzov and the Tzar near the village of Pratzen. But neither they nor a single commanding officer were there, only disorganized crowds of troops of various kinds. Nicholas urged on his already weary horse to get quickly past these crowds, but the farther he went the more disorganized they were. The high road on which he had come out was thronged with *carriages*, carriages of all sorts, and Russian and Austrian soldiers of all arms, some wounded and some not. This whole mass droned and jostled in confusion under the dismal influence of cannon balls flying from the French batteries stationed on the Pratzen Heights.

“Where is the Tzar? Where is General Kutuzov?” Nicholas kept asking everyone he could stop but got no answer from anyone.

At last, seizing a soldier by his collar he forced him to answer.

“Eh, brother! They’ve all bolted long ago!” said the soldier, laughing for some reason and shaking himself free.

Having left that soldier who was evidently drunk, Nicholas stopped the horse of a batman or groom of some important personage and began to question him. The man announced that the Tzar had been driven in a carriage at full speed about an hour before along that very road and that he was dangerously wounded.

“It can’t be!” said Nicholas. “It must have been someone else.”

“I saw him myself,” replied the man with a self-confident smile of derision. “I ought to know the Tzar by now, after the times I’ve seen him in St. Petersburg. I saw him just as I see you... There he sat in the carriage as pale as anything. How they made the four black horses fly! Gracious me, they did rattle past! It’s time I knew the Imperial horses and Ilyá Iványch. I don’t think Ilyá drives anyone except the Tzar!”

Nicholas let go of the horse and was about to ride on when a wounded officer passing by addressed him:

“Who is it you want?” he asked. “General Kutuzov? He was killed by a cannonball—struck in the breast before our regiment.”

“Not killed—wounded!” another officer corrected him.

“Who? General Kutuzov?” asked Nicholas.

“Not General Kutuzov, but what’s his name—well, never mind... there are not many left alive. Go that way, to that village, all the commanders are there,” said the officer, pointing to the village of Hosjeradek, and he walked on.

Nicholas rode on at a footpace not knowing why or to whom he was now going. The Tzar was wounded, and the battle was lost. It was impossible to doubt it now. Nicholas rode in the direction pointed out to him, in which he saw turrets and a church. What need to hurry? What was he now to say to the Tzar or to General Kutuzov, even if they were alive and unwounded?

“Take this road, your honor, that way you will be killed at once!” a soldier shouted to him. “They’d kill you there!”

“Oh, what are you talking about?” said another. “Where is he to go? That way is nearer.”

Nicholas considered, and then went in the direction where they said he would be killed.

“It’s all the same now. If the Tzar is wounded, am I to try to save myself?” Nicholas thought. He rode on to the region where the greatest number of men had perished in fleeing from Pratzen. The French had not yet occupied that region, and the Russians—the uninjured and slightly wounded—had left it long ago. All about the field, like heaps of manure on well-kept plowland, lay from ten to fifteen dead and wounded to each couple of acres. The wounded crept together in twos and threes and one could hear their distressing screams and groans, sometimes feigned—or so it seemed to Nicholas. He put his horse to a trot to avoid seeing all these suffering men, and he felt afraid—afraid not for his life, but for the courage

he needed and which he knew would not stand the sight of these unfortunates.

The French, who had ceased firing at this field strewn with dead and wounded where there was no one left to fire at, on seeing an adjutant riding over it trained a gun on him and fired several shots. The sensation of those terrible whistling sounds and of the corpses around him merged in Nicholas's mind into a single feeling of terror and pity for himself. He remembered his mother's last letter. "What would she feel," thought he, "if she saw me here now on this field with the cannon aimed at me?"

In the village of Hosjeradek, there were Russian troops retiring from the field of battle, who though still in some confusion were less disordered. The French cannon did not reach there and the musketry fire sounded far away. Here everyone clearly saw and said that the battle was lost. No one whom Nicholas asked could tell him where the Tzar or General Kutuzov was. Some said the report that the Tzar was wounded was correct, others that it was not, and explained the false rumor that had spread by the fact that the Tzar's carriage had really galloped from the field of battle with the pale and terrified Grand Marshal of the Court Tolstóy, who had ridden out to the battlefield with others in the Tzar's suite. One officer told Nicholas that he had seen someone from headquarters behind the village to the left, and thither Nicholas rode, not hoping to find anyone but merely to ease his conscience. When he had ridden about two miles and had passed the last of the Russian troops, he saw, near a kitchen garden with a ditch around it, two men on horseback facing the ditch. One with a white plume in his hat seemed familiar to Nicholas; the other on a beautiful chestnut horse (which Nicholas fancied he had seen before) rode up to the ditch, struck his horse with his spurs, and giving it the rein leaped lightly over. Only a little earth crumbled from the bank under the horse's hind hoofs. Turning the horse sharply, he again jumped the ditch, and deferentially addressed the horseman with the white plumes, evidently suggesting that he should do the

same. The rider, whose figure seemed familiar to Nicholas and involuntarily riveted his attention, made a gesture of refusal with his head and hand, and by that gesture, Nicholas instantly recognized his lamented and adored Tzar.

“But it can’t be he, alone in the midst of this empty field!” thought Nicholas. At that moment the Tzar turned his head and Nicholas saw the beloved features that were so deeply engraved on his memory. The Tzar was pale, his cheeks sunken and his eyes hollow, but the charm, the mildness of his features, was all the greater. Nicholas was happy in the assurance that the rumors about the Tzar being wounded were false. He was happy to be seeing him. He knew that he might and even ought to go straight to him and give the message General Dolgorúkov had ordered him to deliver.

But as a youth in love trembles, is unnerved, and dares not utter the thoughts he has dreamed of for nights, but looks around for help or a chance of delay and flight when the longed-for moment comes and he is alone with *her*, so Nicholas, now that he had attained what he had longed for more than anything else in the world, did not know how to approach the Tzar, and a thousand reasons occurred to him why it would be inconvenient, unseemly, and impossible to do so.

“What! It is as if I were glad of a chance to take advantage of his being alone and despondent! A strange face may seem unpleasant or painful to him at this moment of sorrow; besides, what can I say to him now, when my heart fails me and my mouth feels dry at the mere sight of him?” Not one of the innumerable speeches addressed to the Tzar that he had composed in his imagination could he now recall. Those speeches were intended for quite other conditions, they were, for the most part, to be spoken at a moment of victory and triumph, generally when he was dying of wounds and the sovereign had thanked him for heroic deeds, and while dying he expressed the love his actions had proved.

“Besides how can I ask the Tzar for his instructions for the right flank now that it is nearly four o’clock and the battle is lost? No, certainly I must not approach him, I must not intrude on his reflections. Better die a thousand times than risk receiving an unkind look or bad opinion from him,” Nicholas decided; and sorrowfully and with a heart full of despair he rode away, continually looking back at the Tzar, who still remained in the same attitude of indecision.

While Nicholas was thus arguing with himself and riding sadly away, Captain von Toll chanced to ride to the same spot, and seeing the Tzar at once rode up to him, offered his services, and assisted him to cross the ditch on foot. The Tzar, wishing to rest and feeling unwell, sat down under an apple tree and von Toll remained beside him. Nicholas from a distance saw with envy and remorse how von Toll spoke long and warmly to the Tzar and how the Tzar, evidently weeping, covered his eyes with his hand and pressed von Toll’s hand.

“And I might have been in his place!” thought Nicholas, and hardly restraining his tears of pity for the Tzar, he rode on in utter despair, not knowing where to or why he was now riding.

Nicholas’s despair was all the greater from feeling that his own weakness was the cause of his grief.

Nicholas might... not only might but should, have gone up to the Tzar. It was a unique chance to show his devotion to the Tzar and he had not made use of it... “What have I done?” thought he. And he turned round and galloped back to the place where he had seen the Tzar, but there was no one beyond the ditch now. Only some carts and carriages were passing by. From one of the drivers, he learned that General Kutuzov’s staff were not far off, in the village the vehicles were going to. Nicholas followed them. In front of him walked General Kutuzov’s groom leading horses in horsecloths. Then came a cart, and behind that walked an old, bandy-legged domestic serf in a peaked cap and sheepskin coat.

“Tit! I say, Tit!” said the groom.

“What?” answered the old man absent-mindedly.

“Go, Tit! Thresh a bit!”

“Oh, you fool!” said the old man, spitting angrily. Some time passed in silence, and then the same joke was repeated.

Before five in the evening, the battle had been lost at all points. More than a hundred cannon were already in the hands of the French.

Przebyszewski and his corps had laid down their arms. Other columns after losing half their men were retreating in disorderly confused masses.

The remains of Commander Langeron’s and General Dokhtúrov’s mingled forces were crowding around the dams and banks of the ponds near the village of Augesd.

After five o’clock it was only at the Augesd Dam that a hot cannonade (delivered by the French alone) was still to be heard from numerous batteries ranged on the slopes of the Pratzen Heights, directed at our retreating forces.

In the rearguard, General Dokhtúrov and others rallying some battalions kept up a musketry fire at the French cavalry that was pursuing our troops. It was growing dusk. On the narrow Augesd Dam where for so many years the old miller had been accustomed to sit in his tasseled cap peacefully angling, while his grandson, with shirt sleeves rolled up, handled the floundering silvery fish in the watering can, on that dam over which for so many years Moravians in shaggy caps and blue jackets had peacefully driven their two-horse carts loaded with wheat and had returned dusty with flour whitening their carts—on that narrow dam amid the wagons and the cannon, under the horses’ hoofs and between the wagon wheels, men disfigured by fear of death now crowded together, crushing one another, dying, stepping over the dying and killing one another, only to move on a few steps and be killed themselves in the same way.

Every ten seconds a cannon ball flew compressing the air around, or a shell burst in the midst of that dense throng, killing some and splashing with blood those near them.

Private Dolokhov—now promoted to officer—wounded in the arm, and on foot, with the regimental commander on horseback and some ten men of his company, represented all that was left of that whole regiment. Impelled by the crowd, they had got wedged in at the approach to the dam and, jammed in on all sides, had stopped because a horse in front had fallen under a cannon and the crowd was dragging it out. A cannonball killed someone behind them, and another fell in front and splashed Dolokhov with blood. The crowd, pushing forward desperately, squeezed together, moved a few steps, and again stopped.

“Move on a hundred yards and we are certainly saved, remain here another two minutes and it is certain death,” thought each one.

Dolokhov who was in the midst of the crowd forced his way to the edge of the dam, throwing two soldiers off their feet, and ran onto the slippery ice that covered the mill pool.

“Turn this way!” he shouted, jumping over the ice which creaked under him; “turn this way!” he shouted to those with the gun. “It bears!...”

The ice bore him but it swayed and creaked, and it was plain that it would give way not only under a cannon or a crowd but very soon even under his weight alone. The men looked at him and pressed to the bank, hesitating to step onto the ice. A general on horseback at the entrance to the dam raised his hand and opened his mouth to address Dolokhov. Suddenly a cannonball hissed so low above the crowd that everyone ducked. It flopped into something moist, and the general fell from his horse in a pool of blood. Nobody gave him a look or thought of raising him.

“Get onto the ice, over the ice! Go on! Turn! Don’t you hear? Go on!” innumerable voices suddenly shouted after the ball had struck the general, the men themselves not knowing what, or why, they were shouting.

One of the hindmost guns that was going onto the dam turned off onto the ice. Crowds of soldiers from the dam began running onto the frozen pond. The ice gave way under one of the foremost soldiers, and one leg slipped into the water. He tried to right himself but fell in up to his waist. The nearest soldiers shrank back, and the gun driver stopped his horse, but from behind still came the shouts: "Onto the ice, why do you stop? Go on! Go on!" And cries of horror were heard in the crowd. The soldiers near the gun waved their arms and beat the horses to make them turn and move on. The horses moved off the bank. The ice, that had held under those on foot, collapsed in a great mass, and some forty men who were on it dashed, some forward and some back, drowning one another.

Still, the cannon balls continued regularly to whistle and flop onto the ice and into the water and oftenest of all among the crowd that covered the dam, the pond, and the bank.

On the Pratzen Heights, where he had fallen with the flagstaff in his hand, lay Andrei bleeding profusely and unconsciously uttering a gentle, piteous, and childlike moan.

Toward evening he ceased moaning and became quite still. He did not know how long his unconsciousness lasted. Suddenly he again felt that he was alive and suffering from a burning, lacerating pain in his head.

"Where is it, that lofty sky that I did not know till now, but saw today?" was Andrei's first thought. "And I did not know this suffering either," he thought. "Yes, I did not know anything, anything at all till now. But where am I?"

Andrei listened and heard the sound of approaching horses, and voices speaking French. He opened his eyes. Above him again was the same lofty sky with clouds that had risen and were floating still higher, and between them gleamed blue infinity. He did not turn his head and did not see those who, judging by the sound of hoofs and voices, had ridden up and stopped near him.

It was Napoleon accompanied by two aides-de-camp. Napoleon riding over the battlefield had given final orders to strengthen the batteries firing at the Augesd Dam and was looking at the killed and wounded left on the field.

“Fine men!” remarked Napoleon, looking at a dead Russian grenadier, who, with his face buried in the ground and a blackened nape, lay on his stomach with an already stiffened arm flung wide.

“The ammunition for the guns in position is exhausted, Sire,” said an adjutant who had come from the batteries that were firing at Augesd.

“Have some brought from the reserve,” said Napoleon, and having gone on a few steps he stopped before Andrei, who lay on his back with the flagstaff that had been dropped beside him. (The flag had already been taken by the French as a trophy.)

“That’s a fine death!” said Napoleon as he gazed at Andrei.

Andrei understood that this was said of him and that it was Napoleon who said it. He heard the speaker addressed as *Sire*. But he heard the words as he might have heard the buzzing of a fly. Not only did they not interest him, but he took no notice of them and at once forgot them. His head was burning, he felt himself bleeding to death, and he saw above him the remote, lofty, and everlasting sky. He knew it was Napoleon—his hero—but at that moment Napoleon seemed to him such a small, insignificant creature compared with what was passing now between himself and that lofty infinite sky with the clouds flying over it. At that moment it meant nothing to him who might be standing over him, or what was said of him; he was only glad that people were standing near him and only wished that they would help him and bring him back to life, which seemed to him so beautiful now that he had today learned to understand it so differently. He collected all his strength, to stir and utter a sound. He feebly moved his leg and uttered a weak, sickly groan which aroused his own pity.

“Ah! He is alive,” said Napoleon. “Lift this young man up and carry him to the dressing station.”

Having said this, Napoleon rode on to meet Général Lannes, who, hat in hand, rode up smiling to the Tzar to congratulate him on the victory.

Andrei remembered nothing more: he lost consciousness from the terrible pain of being lifted onto the stretcher, the jolting while being moved, and the probing of his wound at the dressing station. He did not regain consciousness till late in the day when with other wounded and captured Russian officers he was carried to the hospital. During this transfer, he felt a little stronger and was able to look around and even speak.

The first words Andrei heard on coming to his senses were those of a French convoy officer, who said rapidly: “We must halt here: the Tzar will pass here immediately; it will please him to see these gentlemen prisoners.”

“There are so many prisoners today, nearly the whole Russian army, that he is probably tired of them,” said another officer.

“All the same! They say this one is the commander of all the Tzar’s Guards,” said the first one, indicating a Russian officer in the white uniform of the Horse Guards.

Andrei recognized Baron Repnín whom he had met in St. Petersburg society. Beside him stood a lad of nineteen, also a wounded officer of the Horse Guards.

Napoleon, having come up at a gallop, stopped his horse.

“Which is the senior?” he asked, on seeing the prisoners.

They named Colonel Repnín.

“You are the commander of the Tzar’s regiment of Horse Guards?” asked Napoleon.

“I commanded a squadron,” replied Colonel Repnín.

“Your regiment fulfilled its duty honorably,” said Napoleon.

“The praise of a great commander is a soldier’s highest reward,” said Repnín.

“I bestow it with pleasure,” said Napoleon. “And who is that young man beside you?”

Colonel Repnin named Lieutenant Sukhtelen.

After looking at him Napoleon smiled.

“He’s very young to come to meddle with us.”

“Youth is no hindrance to courage,” muttered Lieutenant Sukhtelen in a failing voice.

“A splendid reply!” said Napoleon. “Young man, you will go far!”

Andrei, who had also been brought forward before the Tzar’s eyes to complete the show of prisoners, could not fail to attract his attention. Napoleon apparently remembered seeing him on the battlefield and, addressing him, again used the epithet “young man” that was connected in his memory with Andrei.

“Well, and you, young man,” said he. “How do you feel, *my brave man?*”

Though five minutes before, Andrei had been able to say a few words to the soldiers who were carrying him, now with his eyes fixed straight on Napoleon, he was silent... So insignificant at that moment seemed to him all the interests that engrossed Napoleon, so mean did his hero himself with his paltry vanity and joy in victory appear, compared to the lofty, equitable, and kindly sky which he had seen and understood, that he could not answer him.

Everything seemed so futile and insignificant in comparison with the stern and solemn train of thought that weakness from loss of blood, suffering, and the nearness of death aroused in him. Looking into Napoleon’s eyes Andrei thought of the insignificance of greatness, the unimportance of life which no one could understand, and the still greater unimportance of death, the meaning of which no one alive could understand or explain.

Napoleon, without waiting for an answer, turned away and said to one of the officers as he went: “Have these gentlemen attended to and taken to

my bivouac; let my doctor, Larrey, examine their wounds. *Goodbye, Colonel Repnín!*” and he spurred his horse and galloped away.

Napoleon's face shone with self-satisfaction and pleasure.

The soldiers who had carried Andrei had noticed and taken the little gold icon Marya had hung around her brother's neck, but seeing the favor Napoleon showed the prisoners, they now hastened to return the holy image.

Andrei did not see how and by whom it was replaced, but the little icon with its thin gold chain suddenly appeared upon his chest outside his uniform.

“It would be good,” thought Andrei, glancing at the icon his sister had hung round his neck with such emotion and reverence, “it would be good if everything were as clear and simple as it seems to Marya. How good it would be to know where to seek help in this life, and what to expect after it beyond the grave! How happy and calm I should be if I could now say: ‘Lord, have mercy on me!’... But to whom should I say that? Either to a Power indefinable, incomprehensible, which I not only cannot address but which I cannot even express in words—the Great All or Nothing-” said he to himself, “or to that God who has been sewn into this amulet by Marya! There is nothing certain, nothing at all except the unimportance of everything I understand, and the greatness of something incomprehensible but all-important.”

The stretchers moved on. At every jolt he again felt unendurable pain; his feverishness increased and he grew delirious. Visions of his father, wife, sister, and future son, and the tenderness he had felt the night before the battle, the figure of the insignificant little Napoleon, and above all this the lofty sky, formed the chief subjects of his delirious fancies.

The quiet home life and peaceful happiness of Bald Hills presented themselves to him. He was already enjoying that happiness when that little Napoleon had suddenly appeared with his unsympathizing look of

shortsighted delight at the misery of others, and doubts and torments had followed, and only the heavens promised peace. Toward morning all these dreams melted and merged into the chaos and darkness of unconsciousness and oblivion which in the opinion of Napoleon's doctor, Dr. Larrey, was much more likely to end in death than in convalescence.

“This patient is a nervous, bilious subject,” said Dr. Larrey, “and will not recover.”

And Andrei, with others fatally wounded, was left to the care of the inhabitants of the district.

BOOK 4: 1806



Early in the year 1806, Nicholas returned home on leave. Denisov was going home to Vorónezh and Nicholas persuaded him to travel with him as far as Moscow and to stay with him there. Meeting a comrade at the last post station but one before Moscow, Denisov had drunk three bottles of wine with him and, despite the jolting ruts across the snow-covered road, did not once wake up on the way to Moscow, but lay at the bottom of the sleigh beside Nicholas, who grew more and more impatient the nearer they got to Moscow.

“How much longer? How much longer? Oh, these insufferable streets, shops, bakers’ signboards, street lamps, and sleighs!” thought Nicholas, when their leave permits had been passed at the town gate and they had entered Moscow.

“Denisov! We’re here! Oh, he’s asleep,” Nicholas added, leaning forward with his whole body as if in that position he hoped to hasten the speed of the sleigh.

Denisov gave no answer.

“There’s the corner at the crossroads, where the cabman, Zakhár, has his stand, and there’s Zakhár himself and still the same horse! And here’s the little shop where we used to buy gingerbread! Can’t you hurry up? Now then!”

“Which house is it?” asked the driver.

“Why, that one, right at the end, the big one. Don’t you see? That’s our house,” said Nicholas. “Of course, it’s our house! Denisov, Denisov! We’re almost there!”

Denisov raised his head, coughed, and made no answer.

“Dmítri,” said Nicholas to his valet on the box, “those lights are in our house, aren’t they?”

“Yes, sir, and there’s a light in your father’s study.”

“Then they’ve not gone to bed yet? What do you think? Mind now, don’t forget to put out my new coat,” added Nicholas, fingering his new mustache. “Now then, get on,” he shouted to the driver. “Do wake up, Denisov!” he went on, turning to Denisov, whose head was again nodding. “Come, get on! You shall have three rubles for vodka—get on!” Nicholas shouted when the sleigh was only three houses from his door. It seemed to him the horses were not moving at all. At last, the sleigh bore to the right, drew up at an entrance, and Nicholas saw overhead the old familiar cornice with a bit of plaster broken off, the porch, and the post by the side of the pavement. He sprang out before the sleigh stopped, and ran into the hall. The house stood cold and silent as if quite regardless of who had come to it. There was no one in the hall. “Oh, God! Is everyone all right?” he thought, stopping for a moment with a sinking heart, and then immediately starting to run along the hall and up the warped steps of the familiar staircase. The well-known old door handle, which always angered Countess Rostov when it was not properly cleaned, turned as loosely as ever. A solitary tallow candle burned in the anteroom.

Old Michael was asleep on the chest. Prokófý, the footman, who was so strong that he could lift the back of the carriage from behind, sat plaiting slippers out of cloth selvages. Prokófý looked up at the opening door and his expression of sleepy indifference suddenly changed to one of delighted amazement.

“Gracious heavens! Nicholas!” cried Prokófý, recognizing his young master. “Can it be? My treasure!” and Prokófý, trembling with excitement, rushed toward the drawing-room door, probably in order to announce him, but, changing his mind, came back and stooped to kiss the young man’s shoulder.

“All well?” asked Nicholas, drawing away his arm.

“Yes, God be thanked! Yes! They’ve just finished supper. Let me have a look at you, your excellency.”

“Is everything quite all right?”

“The Lord be thanked, yes!”

Nicholas, who had completely forgotten Denisov, not wishing anyone to forestall him, threw off his fur coat and ran on tiptoe through the large dark ballroom. All was the same: there were the same old card tables and the same chandelier with a cover over it; but someone had already seen the young master, and, before he had reached the drawing room, something flew out from a side door like a tornado and began hugging and kissing him. Another and yet another creature of the same kind sprang from a second door and a third; more hugging, more kissing, more outcries, and tears of joy. He could not distinguish which was Count Rostov, which Natasha, and which little Petya. Everyone shouted, talked, and kissed him at the same time. Only his mother was not there, he noticed that.

“And I did not know... Nicholas... My darling!...”

“Here he is... our own... Nicholas, dear fellow... How he has changed!... Where are the candles?... Tea!...”

“And me, kiss me!”

“Dearest... and me!”

Sonya, Natasha, Petya, Widow Drubetskoy, Vera, and Count Rostov were all hugging him, and the serfs, men, and maids flocked into the room, exclaiming and oh-ing and ah-ing.

Petya, clinging to his legs, kept shouting, “And me too!”

Natasha, after she had pulled him down toward her and covered his face with kisses, holding him tight by the skirt of his coat, sprang away and pranced up and down in one place like a goat and shrieked piercingly.

All around were loving eyes glistening with tears of joy, and all around were lips seeking a kiss.

Orphan niece Sonya too, all rosy red, clung to his arm and, radiant with bliss, looked eagerly toward his eyes, waiting for the look for which she longed. Sonya now was sixteen and she was very pretty, especially at this moment of happy, rapturous excitement. She gazed at Nicholas, not taking her eyes off him, and smiling and holding her breath. He gave her a grateful look, but was still expectant and looking for someone. Count Rostov had not yet come. But now steps were heard at the door, steps so rapid that they could hardly be his mother's.

Yet it was her, Countess Rostov, dressed in a new gown which he did not know, made since he had left. All the others let him go, and he ran to her. When they met, she fell on his breast, sobbing. She could not lift her face but only pressed it to the cold braiding of his hussar's jacket. Denisov, who had come into the room unnoticed by anyone, stood there and wiped his eyes at the sight.

"Denisov, your son's friend," he said, introducing himself to Count Rostov, who was looking inquiringly at him.

"You are most welcome! I know, I know," said Count Rostov, kissing and embracing Denisov. "Nicholas wrote us... Natasha, Vera, look! Here is Denisov!"

The same happy, rapturous faces turned to the shaggy figure of Denisov.

"Darling Denisov!" screamed Natasha, beside herself with rapture, springing to him, putting her arms around him, and kissing him. This escapade made everybody feel confused. Denisov blushed too, but smiled and, taking Natasha's hand, kissed it.

Denisov was shown to the room prepared for him, and the Rostovs all gathered around Nicholas in the sitting room.

Countess Rostov, not letting go of Nicholas's hand and kissing it every moment, sat beside him: the rest, crowding around him, watched every movement, word, or look of his, never taking their blissfully adoring eyes off him. His brother and sisters struggled for the places nearest to him and disputed with one another about who should bring him his tea, handkerchief, and pipe.

Nicholas was very happy in the love they showed him; but the first moment of meeting had been so beatific that his present joy seemed insufficient, and he kept expecting something more, more and yet more.

The next morning, after the fatigues of their journey, the travelers slept till ten o'clock.

In the room next to their bedroom there was a confusion of sabers, satchels, sabretaches, open portmanteaus, and dirty boots. Two freshly cleaned pairs with spurs had just been placed by the wall. The servants were bringing in jugs and basins, hot water for shaving, and their well-brushed clothes. There was a masculine odor and a smell of tobacco.

"Hallo, Gwíska—my pipe!" came Denisov's husky voice. "Nicholas, get up!"

Nicholas, rubbing his eyes that seemed glued together, raised his disheveled head from the hot pillow.

"Why, is it late?"

"Late! It's nearly ten o'clock," answered Natasha's voice. A rustle of starched petticoats and the whispering and laughter of girls' voices came from the adjoining room. The door was opened a crack and there was a glimpse of something blue, of ribbons, black hair, and merry faces. It was Natasha, Sonya, and Petya, who had come to see whether they were getting up.

“Nicholas! Get up!” Natasha’s voice was again heard at the door.

“Directly!”

Meanwhile, Petya, having found and seized the sabers in the outer room, with the delight boys feel at the sight of a military elder brother, and forgetting that it was unbecoming for the girls to see men undressed, opened the bedroom door.

“Is this your saber?” Petya shouted.

The girls sprang aside. Denisov hid his hairy legs under the blanket, looking with a scared face at his comrade for help. The door, having let Petya in, closed again. A sound of laughter came from behind it.

“Nicholas! Come out in your dressing gown!” said Natasha’s voice.

“Is this your saber?” asked Petya. “Or is it yours?” he said, addressing the black-mustached Denisov with servile deference.

Nicholas hurriedly put something on his feet, drew on his dressing gown, and went out. Natasha had put on one spurred boot and was just getting her foot into the other. Orphan niece Sonya, when he came in, was twirling around and was about to expand her dress into a balloon and sit down. They were dressed alike, in new pale-blue frocks, and were both fresh, rosy, and bright. Sonya ran away, but Natasha, taking her brother’s arm, led him into the sitting room, where they began talking. They hardly gave one another time to ask questions and give replies concerning a thousand little matters which could not interest anyone but themselves. Natasha laughed at every word he said or that she said herself, not because what they were saying was amusing, but because she felt happy and was unable to control her joy which expressed itself by laughter.

“Oh, how nice, how splendid!” Natasha said to everything.

Nicholas felt that under the influence of the warm rays of love, that childlike smile that had not once appeared on his face since he left home now for the first time after eighteen months again brightened his soul and his face.

“No, but listen,” Natasha said, “now you are quite a man, aren’t you? I’m awfully glad you’re my brother.” She touched his mustache. “I want to know what you men are like. Are you the same as us? No?”

“Why did Sonya run away?” asked Nicholas.

“Ah, yes! That’s a whole long story! How are you going to speak to her—the informal *thou* or the formal *you*?”

“As may happen,” said Nicholas.

“No, call her *you*, please! I’ll tell you all about it some other time. No, I’ll tell you now. You know Sonya’s my dearest friend. Such a friend that I burned my arm for her sake. Look here!”

Natasha pulled up her muslin sleeve and showed him a red scar on her long, slender, delicate arm, high above the elbow on that part that is covered even by a ball dress.

“I burned this to prove my love for her. I just heated a ruler in the fire and pressed it there!”

Sitting on the sofa with the little cushions on its arms, in what used to be his old schoolroom, and looking into Natasha’s wildly bright eyes, Nicholas re-entered that world of home and childhood which had no meaning for anyone else, but gave him some of the best joys of his life; and the burning of an arm with a ruler as a proof of love did not seem to him senseless, he understood and was not surprised at it.

“Well, and is that all?” Nicholas asked.

“We are such friends, such friends! All that ruler business was just nonsense, but we are friends forever. Sonya, if she loves anyone, does it for life, but I don’t understand that, I forget quickly.”

“Well, what then?”

“Well, Sonya loves me and you like that.”

Natasha suddenly flushed.

“Why, you remember before you went away?... Well, Sonya says you are to forget all that... She says: ‘I shall love him always, but let him be

free.' Isn't that lovely and noble? Yes, very noble. Isn't it?" asked Natasha, so seriously and excitedly that it was evident that what she was now saying she had talked of before, with tears.

Nicholas became thoughtful.

"I never go back on my word," Nicholas said. "Besides, Sonya is so charming that only a fool would renounce such happiness."

"No, no!" cried Natasha, "she and I have already talked it over. We knew you'd say so. But it won't do, because you see, if you say that—if you consider yourself bound by your promise—it will seem as if she had not meant it seriously. It makes it as if you were marrying her because you must, and that wouldn't do at all."

Nicholas saw that it had been well considered by them. Sonya had already struck him with her beauty on the preceding day. Today, when he had caught a glimpse of her, she seemed still more lovely. She was a charming girl of sixteen, evidently passionately in love with him (he did not doubt that for an instant). Why should he not love her now, and even marry her, Nicholas thought, but just now there were so many other pleasures and interests before him! "Yes, they have taken a wise decision," he thought, "I must remain free."

"Well then, that's excellent," said Nicholas. "We'll talk it over later on. Oh, how glad I am to have you!"

"Well, and are you still true to Boris?" Nicholas continued.

"Oh, what nonsense!" cried Natasha, laughing. "I don't think about him or anyone else, and I don't want anything of the kind."

"Dear me! Then what are you up to now?"

"Now?" repeated Natasha, and a happy smile lit up her face. "Have you seen Duport?"

"No."

"Not seen Duport—the famous dancer? Well then, you won't understand. That's what I'm up to."

Curving her arms, Natasha held out her skirts as dancers do, ran back a few steps, turned, cut a caper, brought her little feet sharply together, and made some steps on the very tips of her toes.

“See, I’m standing! See!” she said, but could not maintain herself on her toes any longer. “So that’s what I’m up to! I’ll never marry anyone, but will be a dancer. Only don’t tell anyone.”

Nicholas laughed so loud and merrily that Denisov, in his bedroom, felt envious and Natasha could not help joining in.

“No, but don’t you think it’s nice?” Natasha kept repeating.

“Nice! And so you no longer wish to marry Boris?”

Natasha flared up. “I don’t want to marry anyone. And I’ll tell him so when I see him!”

“Dear me!” said Nicholas.

“But that’s all rubbish,” Natasha chattered on. “And is Denisov nice?” she asked.

“Yes, indeed!”

“Oh, well then, good-by: go and dress. Is he very terrible, Denisov?”

“Why terrible?” asked Nicholas. “No, Váška is a splendid fellow.”

“You call him Váška? That’s funny! And is he very nice?”

“Very.”

“Well then, be quick. We’ll all have breakfast together.”

And Natasha rose and went out of the room on tiptoe, like a ballet dancer, but smiling as only happy girls of fifteen can smile. When Nicholas met Sonya in the drawing room, he reddened. He did not know how to behave with her. The evening before, in the first happy moment of meeting, they had kissed each other, but today they felt it could not be done; he felt that everybody, including his mother and sisters, was looking inquiringly at him and watching to see how he would behave with her. He kissed her hand and addressed her not as *thou* but as *you*—*Sonya*. But their eyes met and said *thou*, and exchanged tender kisses. Her looks asked him to forgive her

for having dared, by Natasha's intermediacy, to remind him of his promise, and then thanked him for his love. His looks thanked her for offering him his freedom and told her that one way or another he would never cease to love her, for that would be impossible.

"How strange it is," said Vera, selecting a moment when all were silent, "that Sonya and Nicholas now say *you* to one another and meet like strangers."

Vera's remark was correct, as her remarks always were, but, like most of her observations, it made everyone feel uncomfortable, not only Sonya, Nicholas, and Natasha, but even Count Rostov, who—dreading this love affair which might hinder Nicholas from making a brilliant match—blushed like a girl.

Denisov, to Nicholas's surprise, appeared in the drawing room with pomaded hair, perfumed, and in a new uniform, looking just as smart as he made himself when going into battle, and he was more amiable to the ladies and gentlemen than Nicholas had ever expected to see him.

On his return to Moscow from the army, Nicholas was welcomed by his home circle as the best of sons, a hero, and their darling Nicholas; by his relations as a charming, attractive, and polite young man; by his acquaintances as a handsome lieutenant of hussars, a good dancer, and one of the best matches in the city.

The Rostovs knew everybody in Moscow. Count Rostov had money enough that year, as all his estates had been remortgaged, and so Nicholas, acquiring a trotter of his own, very stylish riding breeches of the latest cut, such as no one else yet had in Moscow, and boots of the latest fashion, with extremely pointed toes and small silver spurs, passed his time very gaily. After a short period of adapting himself to the old conditions of life, Nicholas found it very pleasant to be at home again. He felt that he had grown up and matured very much. His despair at failing in a Scripture examination, his borrowing money from Gavril to pay a sleigh driver, his

kissing Sonya on the sly—he now recalled all this as childishness he had left immeasurably behind. Now he was a lieutenant of hussars, in a jacket laced with silver, and wearing the Cross of St. George, awarded to soldiers for bravery in action, and in the company of well-known, elderly, and respected racing men was training a trotter of his own for a race. Nicholas knew a lady on one of the boulevards whom he visited some evenings. He led the mazurka at the Arkhárovs' ball, talked about the war with General Kámenski, visited the English Club, and was on intimate terms with a colonel of forty to whom Denisov had introduced him.

Nicholas's passion for the Tzar had cooled somewhat in Moscow. But still, as he did not see him and had no opportunity of seeing him, he often spoke about him and about his love for him, letting it be understood that he had not told all and that there was something in his feelings for the Tzar not everyone could understand, and with his whole soul he shared the adoration then common in Moscow for the Tzar, who was spoken of as the "angel incarnate."

During Nicholas's short stay in Moscow, before rejoining the army, he did not draw closer to Sonya but rather drifted away from her. She was very pretty and sweet, and evidently deeply in love with him, but he was at the period of youth when there seems so much to do that there is *no time* for that sort of thing and a young man fears to bind himself and prizes his freedom which he needs for so many other things. When he thought of Sonya, during this stay in Moscow, Nicholas said to himself, "Ah, there will be, and there are, many more such girls somewhere whom I do not yet know. There will be time enough to think about love when I want to, but now I have no time." Besides, it seemed to him that the society of women was rather derogatory to his manhood. He went to balls and into ladies' society with an affectation of doing so against his will. The races, the English Club, sprees with Denisov, and visits to a certain house—that was another matter and quite the thing for a dashing young hussar!

At the beginning of March, Count Rostov was very busy arranging a dinner in honor of Major-General Bagration at the English Club.

Count Rostov walked up and down the hall in his dressing gown, giving orders to the club steward and to the famous Feoktíst, the club's head cook, about asparagus, fresh cucumbers, strawberries, veal, and fish for this dinner. Count Rostov had been a member and on the committee of the club from the day it was founded. To him, the club entrusted the arrangement of the festival in honor of Major-General Bagration, for few men knew so well how to arrange a feast on an open-handed, hospitable scale, and still fewer men would be so well able and willing to make up out of their own resources what might be needed for the success of the fete. The club cook and the steward listened to Count Rostov's orders with pleased faces, for they knew that under no other management could they so easily extract a good profit for themselves from a dinner costing several thousand rubles.

"Well then, mind and have cocks' comb in the turtle soup, you know!"

"Shall we have three cold dishes then?" asked the cook.

Count Rostov considered.

"We can't have less—yes, three... the mayonnaise, that's one," said he, bending down a finger.

"Then am I to order those large sterlets?" asked the steward.

"Yes, it can't be helped if they won't take less. Ah, dear me! I was forgetting. We must have another entrée. Ah, goodness gracious!" Count Rostov clutched at his head. "Who is going to get me the flowers? Dmítri! Eh, Dmítri! Gallop off to our Moscow estate," he said to the factotum who appeared at his call. "Hurry off and tell Maksím, the gardener, to set the serfs to work. Say that everything out of the hothouses must be brought here well wrapped up in felt. I must have two hundred pots here on Friday."

Having given several more orders, Count Rostov was about to go to his wife to have a rest, but remembering something else of importance, he returned again, called back the cook and the club steward, and again began

giving orders. A light footstep and the clinking of spurs were heard at the door, and Nicholas, handsome, rosy, with a dark little mustache, evidently rested and made sleeker by his easy life in Moscow, entered the room.

“Ah, Nicholas, my boy, my head’s in a whirl!” said Count Rostov with a smile, as if he felt a little confused before his son. “Now, if you would only help a bit! I must have singers too. I shall have my own orchestra, but shouldn’t we get the Bohemian singers as well? You military men like that sort of thing.”

“Really, Papa, I believe Major-General Bagration worried himself less before the battle of Schön Grabern than you do now,” said Nicholas with a smile.

Count Rostov pretended to be angry.

“Yes, you talk, but try it yourself!”

And Count Rostov turned to the cook, who, with a shrewd and respectful expression, looked observantly and sympathetically at the father and son.

“What have the young people come to nowadays, eh, Feoktíst?” said Count Rostov. “Laughing at us old fellows!”

“That’s so, your excellency, all they have to do is to eat a good dinner, but providing it and serving it all up, that’s not their business!”

“That’s it, that’s it!” exclaimed Count Rostov, and gaily seizing his son by both hands, he cried, “Now I’ve got you, so take the sleigh and pair at once, and go to Pierre’s, and tell him ‘Count Rostov has sent you to ask for strawberries and fresh pineapples.’ We can’t get them from anyone else. He’s not there himself, so you’ll have to go in and ask Katerina and her sisters, and from there go on to the Rasgulyáy—the coachman Ipátka knows—and look up the Bohemian Ilyúshka, the one who danced at Count Orlóv’s, you remember, in a white Cossack coat, and bring him along to me.”

“And am I to bring the Bohemian girls along with him?” asked Nicholas, laughing. “Dear, dear!...”

At that moment, with noiseless footsteps and with the businesslike, preoccupied, yet meekly Christian look which never left her face, Widow Drubetskoy entered the hall. Though she came upon Count Rostov in his dressing gown every day, he invariably became confused and begged her to excuse his costume.

“No matter at all, my dear Count Rostov,” Widow Drubetskoy said, meekly closing her eyes. “But I’ll go to Pierre’s estate myself. Now that Pierre himself has arrived, now we shall get anything we want from his hothouses. I have to see him in any case. Pierre has forwarded me a letter from Boris. Thank God, Boris is now on the staff.”

Count Rostov was delighted at Widow Drubetskoy’s taking upon herself one of his commissions and ordered the small closed carriage for her.

“Tell Pierre to come. I’ll put his name down. Is Helene with him?” he asked.

Widow Drubetskoy turned up her eyes, and profound sadness was depicted on her face.

“Ah, my dear friend, Pierre is very unfortunate,” she said. “If what we hear is true, it is dreadful. How little we dreamed of such a thing when we were rejoicing at his happiness! And such a lofty angelic soul as young Pierre! Yes, I pity him from my heart, and shall try to give him what consolation I can.”

“Wh-what is the matter?” asked both the young and Count Rostov.

Widow Drubetskoy sighed deeply.

“Dolokhov, Marya Ivánovna’s son,” she said in a mysterious whisper, “has compromised Helene completely, they say. Pierre took Dolokhov up, invited him to his house in St. Petersburg, and now... Helene has come here and that daredevil after her!” said Widow Drubetskoy, wishing to show her sympathy for Pierre, but by involuntary intonations and a half smile

betraying her sympathy for the “daredevil,” as she called Dolokhov. “They say Pierre is quite broken by his misfortune.”

“Dear, dear! But still, tell Pierre to come to the club—it will all blow over. It will be a tremendous banquet.”

The next day, the third of March, soon after one o’clock, two hundred and fifty members of the English Club and fifty guests were awaiting the guest of honor and hero of the Austrian campaign, Major-General Bagration, for dinner.

On the first arrival of the news of the battle of Austerlitz, Moscow had been bewildered. At that time, the Russians were so used to victories that on receiving news of the defeat some would simply not believe it, while others sought some extraordinary explanation of so strange an event. In the English Club, where all who were distinguished, important, and well-informed foregathered when the news began to arrive in December, nothing was said about the war and the last battle, as though all were in a conspiracy of silence. The men who set the tone in conversation—Mayor Rostopchin, Baron Yúri General Dolgorúkov, Valúev, Count Markóv, and Baron Vyázemski—did not show themselves at the club, but met in private houses in intimate circles, and the Moscovites who took their opinions from others—Count Rostov among them—remained for a while without any definite opinion on the subject of the war and without leaders. The Moscovites felt that something was wrong and that discussing the bad news was difficult, so it was best to be silent. But after a while, just as a jury comes out of its room, the bigwigs who guided the club’s opinion reappeared, and everybody began speaking clearly and definitely. Reasons were found for the incredible, unheard-of, and impossible event of a Russian defeat, everything became clear, and in all corners of Moscow, the same things began to be said. These reasons were the treachery of the Austrians, a defective commissariat, the treachery of the Pole Przebyszéwski and of the

Frenchman Commander Langeron, General Kutuzov's incapacity, and (it was whispered) the youth and inexperience of the sovereign, who had trusted worthless and insignificant people. But the army, the Russian army, everyone declared, was extraordinary and had achieved miracles of valor. The soldiers, officers, and generals were heroes. But the hero of heroes was Major-General Bagration, distinguished by his Schön Grabern affair and by the retreat from Austerlitz, where he alone had withdrawn his column unbroken and had all day beaten back an enemy force twice as numerous as his own. What also conduced to Major-General Bagration's being selected as Moscow's hero was the fact that he had no connections in the city and was a stranger there. In his person, honor was shown to a simple fighting Russian soldier without connections and intrigues, and to one who was associated by memories of the Italian campaign with the name of Suvórov. Moreover, paying such honor to Major-General Bagration was the best way of expressing disapproval and dislike of General Kutuzov.

"Had there been no Major-General Bagration, it would have been necessary to invent him," said Cousin Sinchin, parodying the words of Voltaire. General Kutuzov no one spoke of, except some who abused him in whispers, calling him a court weathercock and an old satyr.

All Moscow repeated General Dolgorúkov's saying: "If you go on modeling and modeling you must get smeared with clay," suggesting consolation for our defeat by the memory of former victories; and the words of Mayor Rostopchin, that French soldiers have to be incited to battle by highfalutin words, and Germans by logical arguments to show them that it is more dangerous to run away than to advance, but that Russian soldiers only need to be restrained and held back! On all sides, new and fresh anecdotes were heard of individual examples of heroism shown by our officers and men at Austerlitz. One had saved a standard, another had killed five Frenchmen, and a third had loaded five cannons singlehanded. Berg was mentioned, by those who did not know him, as having, when wounded

in the right hand, taken his sword in the left, and gone forward. Of Andrei, nothing was said, and only those who knew him intimately regretted that he had died so young, leaving a pregnant wife, Lise, with his eccentric father, Baron Bolkonski.

On that third of March, all the rooms in the English Club were filled with a hum of conversation, like the hum of bees swarming in springtime. The members and guests of the club wandered hither and thither, sat, stood, met, and separated, some in uniform and some in evening dress, and a few here and there with powdered hair and in Russian *kaftáns*. Powdered footmen, in livery with buckled shoes and smart stockings, stood at every door anxiously noting visitors' every movement in order to offer their services. Most of those present were elderly, respected men with broad, self-confident faces, fat fingers, and resolute gestures and voices. This class of guests and members sat in certain habitual places and met in certain habitual groups. A minority of those present were casual guests—chiefly young men, among whom were Denisov, Nicholas, and Dolokhov—who was now again an officer in the Semënov regiment. The faces of these young people, especially those who were military men, bore that expression of condescending respect for their elders which seems to say to the older generation, "We are prepared to respect and honor you, but all the same remember that the future belongs to us."

Sergeant Nesvitski was there as an old member of the club. Pierre, who at his wife Helene's command had let his hair grow and abandoned his spectacles, went about the rooms fashionably dressed but looking sad and dull. Here, as elsewhere, Pierre was surrounded by an atmosphere of subservience to his wealth, and being in the habit of lording it over these people, he treated them with absent-minded contempt.

By Pierre's age, he should have belonged to the younger men, but by his wealth and connections he belonged to the groups of old and honored guests, and so he went from one group to another. Some of the most

important old men were the center of groups which even strangers approached respectfully to hear the voices of well-known men. The largest circles formed around Mayor Rostopchin, Valúev, and Narýshkin. Mayor Rostopchin was describing how the Russians had been overwhelmed by flying Austrians and had had to force their way through them with bayonets.

Valúev was confidentially telling that Uvárov had been sent from St. Petersburg to ascertain what Moscow was thinking about Austerlitz.

In the third circle, Narýshkin was speaking of the meeting of the Austrian Council of War at which Suvórov crowed like a cock in reply to the nonsense talked by the Austrian Generals. Cousin Sinchin, standing close by, tried to make a joke, saying that General Kutuzov had evidently failed to learn from Suvórov even so simple a thing as the art of crowing like a cock, but the elder members glanced severely at the wit, making him feel that in that place and on that day, it was improper to speak so of General Kutuzov.

Count Rostov, hurried and preoccupied, went about in his soft boots between the dining and drawing rooms, hastily greeting the important and unimportant, all of whom he knew, as if they were all equals, while his eyes occasionally sought out his fine well-set-up young son, resting on him and winking joyfully at him. Nicholas stood at a window with Dolokhov, whose acquaintance he had lately made and highly valued. Count Rostov came up to them and pressed Dolokhov's hand.

"Please come and visit us... you know my brave boy... been together out there... both playing the hero... Ah, how d'ye do, old fellow?" Count Rostov said, turning to an old man who was passing, but before he had finished his greeting there was a stir, and a footman who had run in announced, with a frightened face: "Major-General Bagration has arrived!"

Bells rang, the stewards rushed forward, and—as rye shook together in a shovel—the guests who had been scattered about in different rooms came

together and crowded in the large drawing room by the door of the ballroom.

Major-General Bagration appeared in the doorway of the anteroom without a hat or sword, which, in accord with the club custom, he had given up to the hall porter. He had no lambskin cap on his head, nor had he a loaded whip over his shoulder, as when Nicholas had seen him on the eve of the battle of Austerlitz, but wore a tight new uniform with Russian and foreign Orders, and the Star of St. George on his left breast. Evidently, just before coming to the dinner, he had had his hair and whiskers trimmed, which changed his appearance for the worse. There was something naively festive in his air, which, in conjunction with his firm and virile features, gave him a rather comical expression. Bekleshëv and Theodore Uvárov, who had arrived with him, paused at the doorway to allow him, as the guest of honor, to enter first. Major-General Bagration was embarrassed, not wishing to avail himself of their courtesy, and this caused some delay at the doors, but after all, he did at last enter first. He walked shyly and awkwardly over the parquet floor of the reception room, not knowing what to do with his hands; he was more accustomed to walking over a plowed field under fire, as he had done at the head of the Kursk regiment at Schön Grabern—and he would have found that easier. The committeemen met him at the first door and, expressing their delight at seeing such a highly honored guest, took possession of him as it were, without waiting for his reply, surrounded him, and led him to the drawing room. It was at first impossible to enter the drawing-room door for the crowd of members and guests jostling one another and trying to get a good look at Major-General Bagration over each other's shoulders as if he were some rare animal. Count Rostov, laughing and repeating the words, "Make way, dear boy! Make way, make way!" pushed through the crowd more energetically than anyone, led the guests into the drawing room, and seated them on the center sofa. The bigwigs, the most respected members of the club, beset the new

arrivals. Count Rostov, again thrusting his way through the crowd, went out of the drawing room and reappeared a minute later with another committeeman, carrying a large silver salver which he presented to Major-General Bagration. On the salver lay some verses composed and printed in the hero's honor. Major-General Bagration, on seeing the salver, glanced around in dismay, as though seeking help. But all eyes demanded that he should submit. Feeling himself in their power, he resolutely took the salver with both hands and looked sternly and reproachfully at Count Rostov who had presented it to him. Someone obligingly took the dish from Major-General Bagration (or he would, it seemed, have held it till evening and have gone in to dinner with it) and drew his attention to the verses.

"Well, I will read them, then!" Major-General Bagration seemed to say, and, fixing his weary eyes on the paper, began to read them with a fixed and serious expression. But the author himself took the verses and began reading them aloud. Major-General Bagration bowed his head and listened:

"Bring glory then to The Tzar's reign
And on the throne our Titus shield.
A dreaded foe be thou, kindhearted as a man,
A Rhipheus at home, a Caesar in the field!
E'en fortunate Napoleon
Knows by experience, now, Major-General Bagration,
And dare not Herculean Russians trouble..."

But before Major-General Bagration had finished reading, a stentorian majordomo announced that dinner was ready! The door opened, and from the dining room came the resounding strains of the polonaise:

"Conquest's joyful thunder waken,
Triumph, valiant Russians, now!..."

...and Count Rostov, glancing angrily at the author who went on reading his verses, bowed to Major-General Bagration. Everyone rose, feeling that dinner was more important than verses, and Major-General

Bagration, again preceding all the rest, went in to dinner. He was seated in the place of honor between two guests of honor—Bekleshëv and Narýshkin—which was a significant allusion to the name of the sovereign. Three hundred persons took their seats in the dining room, according to their rank and importance: the more important nearer to the honored guest, as naturally as water flows deepest where the land lies lowest.

Just before dinner, Count Rostov presented his Nicholas to Major-General Bagration, who recognized him and said a few words to him, disjointed and awkward, as were all the words he spoke that day, and Count Rostov looked joyfully and proudly around while Major-General Bagration spoke to Nicholas.

Nicholas, with Denisov and his new acquaintance, Dolokhov, sat almost at the middle of the table. Facing them sat Pierre, beside Baron Sergeant Nesvitski. Count Rostov with the other members of the committee sat facing Major-General Bagration and, as the very personification of Moscow hospitality, did the honors to the Baron.

Count Rostov's efforts had not been in vain. The dinner, both the Lenten and the other fare, was splendid, yet he could not feel quite at ease till the end of the meal. He winked at the butler, whispered directions to the footmen, and awaited each expected dish with some anxiety. Everything was excellent. With the second course, a gigantic sterlet (at the sight of which Count Rostov blushed with self-conscious pleasure), the footmen began popping corks and filling the champagne glasses. After the fish, which made a certain sensation, Count Rostov exchanged glances with the other committeemen. "There will be many toasts, it's time to begin," he whispered, and taking up his glass, he rose. All were silent, waiting for what he would say.

"To the health of our Sovereign, the Tzar!" Count Rostov cried, and at the same moment, his kindly eyes grew moist with tears of joy and enthusiasm. The band immediately struck up "Conquest's joyful thunder

waken..." All rose and cried "Hurrah!" Major-General Bagration also rose and shouted "Hurrah!" in exactly the same voice in which he had shouted it on the field at Schön Grabern. Nicholas's ecstatic voice could be heard above the three hundred others. He nearly wept. "To the health of our Sovereign, the Tzar!" he roared, "Hurrah!" and emptying his glass in one gulp he dashed it to the floor. Many followed his example, and the loud shouting continued for a long time. When the voices subsided, the footmen cleared away the broken glass and everybody sat down again, smiling at the noise they had made and exchanging remarks. Count Rostov rose once more, glanced at a note lying beside his plate, and proposed a toast, "To the health of the hero of our last campaign, Major-General Bagration!" and again his blue eyes grew moist. "Hurrah!" cried the three hundred voices again, but instead of the band a choir began singing a cantata composed by General Kutuzov:

"Russians! O'er all barriers on!
Courage conquest guarantees;
Have we not Major-General Bagration?
He brings foemen to their knees,..." etc.

As soon as the singing was over, another and another toast was proposed and Count Rostov became more and more moved, more glass was smashed, and the shouting grew louder. They drank to Bekleshëv, Narýshkin, Uvárov, General Dolgorúkov, Apráksin, Valúev, to the committee, to all the club members and to all the club guests, and finally to Count Rostov separately, as the organizer of the banquet. At that toast, Count Rostov took out his handkerchief and, covering his face, wept outright.

Pierre sat opposite Dolokhov and Nicholas. As usual, Pierre ate and drank much, and eagerly. But those who knew him intimately noticed that some great change had come over him that day. He was silent all through dinner and looked about, blinking and scowling, or, with fixed eyes and a

look of complete absent-mindedness, kept rubbing the bridge of his nose. His face was depressed and gloomy. He seemed to see and hear nothing of what was going on around him and to be absorbed by some depressing and unsolved problem.

The unsolved problem that tormented Pierre was caused by hints given by Katerina, at Moscow, concerning Dolokhov's intimacy with his wife Helene, and by an anonymous letter he had received that morning, which in the mean jocular way common to anonymous letters said that he saw badly through his spectacles, but that Helene's connection with Dolokhov was a secret to no one but himself. Pierre absolutely disbelieved both Katerina's hints and the letter, but he feared now to look at Dolokhov, who was sitting opposite him. Every time he chanced to meet Dolokhov's handsome insolent eyes, Pierre felt something terrible and monstrous rising in his soul and turned quickly away. Involuntarily recalling Helene's past and her relations with Dolokhov, Pierre saw clearly that what was said in the letter might be true, or might at least seem to be true had it not referred to *his wife*. Pierre involuntarily remembered how Dolokhov, who had fully recovered his former position after the campaign, had returned to St. Petersburg and come to him. Availing himself of his friendly relations with Pierre as a boon companion, Dolokhov had come straight to his house, and Pierre had put him up and lent him money. Pierre recalled how Helene had smilingly expressed disapproval of Dolokhov's living at their house, and how cynically Dolokhov had praised his wife's beauty to him and from that time till they came to Moscow had not left them for a day.

"Yes, Dolokhov is very handsome," thought Pierre, "and I know him. It would be particularly pleasant for him to dishonor my name and ridicule me, just because I have exerted myself on his behalf, befriended him, and helped him. I know and understand what a spice that would add to the pleasure of deceiving me if it really were true. Yes, if it were true, but I do not believe it. I have no right to, and can't, believe it." Pierre remembered

the expression Dolokhov's face assumed in his moments of cruelty, as when tying the policeman to the bear and dropping them into the water, or when he challenged a man to a duel without any reason, or shot a post-boy's horse with a pistol. That expression was often on Dolokhov's face when looking at him. "Yes, he is a bully," thought Pierre, "to kill a man means nothing to him. It must seem to him that everyone is afraid of him, and that must please him. He must think that I, too, am afraid of him—and in fact, I am afraid of him," he thought, and again he felt something terrible and monstrous rising in his soul. Dolokhov, Denisov, and Nicholas were now sitting opposite Pierre and seemed very gay. Nicholas was talking merrily to his two friends, one of whom was a dashing hussar and the other a notorious duelist and rake, and every now and then he glanced ironically at Pierre, whose preoccupied, absent-minded, and massive figure was a very noticeable one at the dinner. Nicholas looked inimically at Pierre, first because Pierre appeared to his hussar's eyes as a rich civilian, the husband of a beauty, and in a word—an old woman; and secondly, because Pierre in his preoccupation and absent-mindedness had not recognized Nicholas and had not responded to his greeting. When the Tzar's health was drunk, Pierre, lost in thought, did not rise or lift his glass.

"What are you about?" shouted Nicholas, looking at him in an ecstasy of exasperation. "Don't you hear it's His Majesty the Tzar's health?"

Pierre sighed, rose submissively, emptied his glass, and, waiting till all were seated again, turned with his kindly smile to Nicholas.

"Why, I didn't recognize you!" Pierre said. But Nicholas was otherwise engaged; he was shouting "Hurrah!"

"Why don't you renew the acquaintance?" said Dolokhov to Nicholas.

"Confound him, Pierre is a fool!" said Nicholas.

"One should make up to the husbands of pretty women," said Denisov.

Pierre did not catch what they were saying but knew they were talking about him. He reddened and turned away.

“Well, now to the health of handsome women!” said Dolokhov, and with a serious expression, but with a smile lurking at the corners of his mouth, he turned with his glass to Pierre.

“Here’s to the health of lovely women, Pierre—and their lovers!” he added.

Pierre, with downcast eyes, drank out of his glass without looking at Dolokhov or answering him. The footman, who was distributing leaflets with General Kutuzov’s cantata, laid one before Pierre as one of the principal guests. Pierre was just going to take it when Dolokhov, leaning across, snatched it from his hand and began reading it. Pierre looked at Dolokhov and his eyes dropped, the something terrible and monstrous that had tormented him all dinnertime rose and took possession of him. He leaned his whole massive body across the table.

“How dare you take it?” Pierre shouted.

Hearing that cry and seeing to whom it was addressed, Sergeant Nesvitski and the neighbor on his right quickly turned in alarm to Pierre.

“Don’t! Don’t! What are you about?” whispered their frightened voices.

Dolokhov looked at Pierre with clear, mirthful, cruel eyes, and that smile of his which seemed to say, “Ah! This is what I like!”

“You shan’t have it!” Dolokhov said distinctly.

Pale, with quivering lips, Pierre snatched the copy.

“You...! you... scoundrel! I challenge you!” Pierre ejaculated, and, pushing back his chair, he rose from the table.

At the very instant Pierre did this and uttered those words, he felt that the question of his wife’s guilt which had been tormenting him the whole day was finally and indubitably answered in the affirmative. He hated Helene and was forever sundered from her.

Despite Denisov’s request that Nicholas would take no part in the duel, Nicholas agreed to be Dolokhov’s second, and after dinner, Nicholas

discussed the arrangements for the duel with Sergeant Nesvitski, Pierre's second. Pierre went home, but Nicholas, Dolokhov, and Denisov stayed on at the club till late, listening to the Bohemians and other singers.

"Well then, till tomorrow at Sokólniki," said Dolokhov, as he took leave of Nicholas on the club porch.

"And do you feel quite calm?" Nicholas asked.

Dolokhov paused.

"Well, you see, I'll tell you the whole secret of dueling in two words. If you are going to fight a duel, and you make a will and write affectionate letters to your parents, and if you think you may be killed, you are a fool and are lost for certain. But go with the firm intention of killing your man as quickly and surely as possible, and then all will be right, as our bear huntsman at Kostromá used to tell me. 'Everyone fears a bear,' he says, 'but when you see one your fear's all gone, and your only thought is not to let him get away!' And that's how it is with me. *Till tomorrow, my dear fellow.*"

The next day, at eight in the morning, Pierre and Sergeant Nesvitski drove to the Sokólniki forest and found Dolokhov, Denisov, and Nicholas already there.

Pierre had the air of a man preoccupied with considerations that had no connection with the matter at hand. His haggard face was yellow. He had evidently not slept that night. He looked about distractedly and screwed up his eyes as if dazzled by the sun. He was entirely absorbed by two considerations: his wife's guilt, of which after his sleepless night he had not the slightest doubt, and the guiltlessness of Dolokhov, who had no reason to preserve the honor of a man who was nothing to him... "I should perhaps have done the same thing in his place," thought Pierre. "It's even certain that I should have done the same, then why this duel, this murder? Either I shall kill him, or he will hit me in the head, or elbow, or knee. Can't I go

away from here, run away, bury myself somewhere?" passed through his mind. But just at moments when such thoughts occurred to him, he would ask in a particularly calm and absent-minded way, which inspired the respect of the onlookers, "Will it be long? Are things ready?"

When all was ready, the sabers stuck in the snow to mark the barriers, and the pistols loaded, Sergeant Nesvitski went up to Pierre.

"I should not be doing my duty, Pierre," he said in timid tones, "and should not justify your confidence and the honor you have done me in choosing me for your second, if at this grave, this very grave, moment I did not tell you the whole truth. I think there is no sufficient ground for this affair, or for blood to be shed over it... You were not right, not quite in the right, you were impetuous..."

"Oh yes, it is horribly stupid," said Pierre.

"Then allow me to express your regrets, and I am sure your opponent will accept them," said Sergeant Nesvitski (who like the others concerned in the affair, and like everyone in similar cases, did not yet believe that the affair had come to an actual duel). "You know, Pierre, it is much more honorable to admit one's mistake than to let matters become irreparable. There was no insult on either side. Allow me to convey..."

"No! What is there to talk about?" said Pierre. "It's all the same... Is everything ready?" he added. "Only tell me where to go and where to shoot," he said with an unnaturally gentle smile.

Pierre took the pistol in his hand and began asking about the working of the trigger, as he had not before held a pistol in his hand—a fact that he did not wish to confess.

"Oh yes, like that, I know, I only forgot," said Pierre.

"No apologies, none whatever," said Dolokhov to Denisov (who on his side had been attempting a reconciliation), and Dolokhov also went up to the appointed place.

The spot chosen for the duel was some eighty paces from the road, where the sleighs had been left, in a small clearing in the pine forest covered with melting snow, the frost having begun to break up during the last few days. The antagonists stood forty paces apart at the farther edge of the clearing. The seconds, measuring the paces, left tracks in the deep wet snow between the place where they had been standing and Sergeant Nesvitski's and Dolokhov's sabers, which were stuck into the ground ten paces apart to mark the barrier. It was thawing and misty; at forty paces distance, nothing could be seen. For three minutes all had been ready, but they were still delayed and all were silent.

"Well, begin!" said Dolokhov.

"All right," said Pierre, still smiling in the same way. A feeling of dread was in the air. It was evident that the affair so lightly begun could no longer be averted but was taking its course independently of men's will.

Denisov first went to the barrier and announced: "As the adve'sawies have wefused a weconciliation, please pwoceed. Take your pistols, and at the word *thwee* begin to advance.

"One! Two! Thwee!" he shouted angrily and stepped aside.

The combatants advanced along the trodden tracks, nearer and nearer to one another, beginning to see one another through the mist. They had the right to fire when they liked as they approached the barrier. Dolokhov walked slowly without raising his pistol, looking intently with his bright, sparkling blue eyes into his antagonist's face. His mouth wore its usual semblance of a smile.

"So I can fire when I like!" said Pierre, and at the word "three," he went quickly forward, missing the trodden path and stepping into the deep snow. He held the pistol in his right hand at arm's length, apparently afraid of shooting himself with it. His left hand he held carefully back because he wished to support his right hand with it and knew he must not do so.

Having advanced six paces and strayed off the track into the snow, Pierre looked down at his feet, then quickly glanced at Dolokhov and, bending his finger as he had been shown, fired. Not at all expecting so loud a report, Pierre shuddered at the sound and then, smiling at his own sensations, stood still. The smoke, rendered denser by the mist, prevented him from seeing anything for an instant, but there was no second report as he had expected. Pierre only heard Dolokhov's hurried steps, and his figure came into view through the smoke. Dolokhov was pressing one hand to his left side, while the other clutched his drooping pistol. His face was pale. Nicholas ran toward him and said something.

"No-o-o!" muttered Dolokhov through his teeth, "no, it's not over." And after stumbling a few staggering steps right up to the saber, he sank on the snow beside it. Dolokhov's left hand was bloody; he wiped it on his coat and supported himself with it. His frowning face was pallid and quivered.

"Plea..." began Dolokhov, but could not at first pronounce the word. "Please," he uttered with an effort.

Pierre, hardly restraining his sobs, began running toward Dolokhov and was about to cross the space between the barriers, when Dolokhov cried:

"To your barrier!"

Pierre, grasping what was meant, stopped by his saber. A mere ten paces divided them. Dolokhov lowered his head to the snow, greedily bit at it, again raised his head, adjusted himself, drew in his legs, and sat up, seeking a firm center of gravity. He sucked and swallowed the cold snow, his lips quivered but his eyes, still smiling, glittered with effort and exasperation as he mustered his remaining strength. He raised his pistol and aimed.

"Pierre! Stand sideways! Cover yourself with your pistol!" cried Sergeant Nesvitski.

"Cover yourself!" even Denisov cried to his adversary, Pierre.

Instead, Pierre, with a gentle smile of pity and remorse, his arms and legs helplessly spread out, stood with his broad chest directly facing

Dolokhov and looked sorrowfully at him.

Denisov, Nicholas, and Sergeant Nesvitski closed their eyes. At the same instant, they heard a report and Dolokhov's angry cry.

"Missed!" shouted Dolokhov, and he lay helplessly, face downwards on the snow.

Pierre clutched his temples, and turning around, he ran into the forest, trampling through the deep snow, and muttering incoherent words:

"Folly... folly! Death... lies..." Pierre repeated to himself, puckering his face.

Sergeant Nesvitski ran up to Pierre, stopped him, and took him home.

Nicholas and Denisov drove away with the wounded Dolokhov.

Dolokhov lay silent in the sleigh with closed eyes and did not answer a word to the questions addressed to him. But on entering Moscow he suddenly came to and, lifting his head with an effort, took Nicholas, who was sitting beside him, by the hand. Nicholas was struck by the totally altered and unexpectedly rapturous and tender expression on Dolokhov's face.

"Well? How do you feel?" Nicholas asked.

"Bad! But it's not that, my friend—" said Dolokhov with a gasping voice. "Where are we? In Moscow, I know. I don't matter, but I have killed her, killed... She won't get over it! She won't survive..."

"Who?" asked Nicholas.

"My mother! My mother, my angel, my adored angel mother," and Dolokhov pressed Nicholas's hand and burst into tears.

When he had become a little quieter, he explained to Nicholas that he was living with his mother, who, if she saw him hurt so badly, would not survive it. He implored Nicholas to go on and prepare her.

Nicholas went on ahead to do what was asked, and to his great surprise learned that Dolokhov the brawler, Dolokhov the bully, lived in Moscow

with an old mother and a hunchback sister, and was the most affectionate of sons and brothers.

Pierre had of late rarely seen his wife alone. Both in St. Petersburg and in Moscow their house was always full of visitors. The night after the duel he did not go to his bedroom but, as he often did, remained in his father's room, that huge room in which Pierre had died.

Pierre lay down on the sofa meaning to fall asleep and forget all that had happened to him but could not do so. Such a storm of feelings, thoughts, and memories suddenly arose within him that he could not fall asleep, nor even remain in one place, but had to jump up and pace the room with rapid steps. Now he seemed to see Helene in the early days of their marriage, with bare shoulders and a languid, passionate look on her face, and then immediately he saw beside her Dolokhov's handsome, insolent, hard, and mocking face as he had seen it at the banquet, and then that same face pale, quivering, and suffering, as it had been when he reeled and sank on the snow.

"What has happened?" Pierre asked himself. "I have killed her *lover*, yes, killed my wife's lover. Yes, that was it! And why? How did I come to do it?"—

"Because you married her," answered an inner voice.

"But in what was I to blame?" Pierre asked. "In marrying Helene without loving her; in deceiving yourself and her." And Pierre vividly recalled that moment after supper at Baron Vasili's, when he spoke those words he had found so difficult to utter: "I love you."

"It all comes from that! Even then I felt it," he thought. "I felt then that it was not so, that I had no right to do it. And so it turns out."

Pierre remembered his honeymoon and blushed at the recollection. Particularly vivid, humiliating, and shameful was the recollection of how one day soon after his marriage Pierre came out of the bedroom into his study a little before noon in his silk dressing gown and found his head

steward there, who, bowing respectfully, looked into his face and at his dressing gown and smiled slightly as if expressing respectful understanding of his employer's happiness.

"But how often I have felt proud of Helene, proud of her majestic beauty and social tact," thought Pierre; "been proud of my house, in which she received all St. Petersburg, proud of her unapproachability and beauty. So this is what I was proud of! I then thought that I did not understand her. How often when considering her character I have told myself that I was to blame for not understanding her, for not understanding that constant composure and complacency and lack of all interests or desires, and the whole secret lies in the terrible truth that she is a depraved woman. Now I have spoken that terrible word to myself all has become clear.

"Anatole used to come to borrow money from Helene and used to kiss her naked shoulders. She did not give him the money, but let herself be kissed. Her father, Baron Vasili, in jest tried to rouse her jealousy, and she replied with a calm smile that she was not so stupid as to be jealous: 'Let Pierre do what he pleases,' Helene used to say of me."

Pierre continued his thoughts. "One day I asked her if she felt any symptoms of pregnancy. She laughed contemptuously and said she was not a fool to want to have children, and that she was not going to have any children by *me*."

Then Pierre recalled the coarseness and bluntness of Helene's thoughts and the vulgarity of the expressions that were natural to her, though she had been brought up in the most aristocratic circles.

"I'm not such a fool... Just you try it on... *You clear out of this*," she used to say. Often seeing the success Helene had with young and old men and women, Pierre could not understand why he did not love her.

"Yes, I never loved her," said Pierre to himself; "I knew she was a depraved woman," he repeated, "but dared not admit it to myself. And now

there's Dolokhov sitting in the snow with a forced smile and perhaps dying, while meeting my remorse with some forced bravado!"

Pierre was one of those people who, in spite of an appearance of what is called weak character, do not seek a confidant in their troubles. He digested his sufferings alone.

"It is all, all her fault," he said to himself; "but what of that? Why did I bind myself to her? Why did I say '*I love you*' to her, which was a lie, and worse than a lie? I am guilty and must endure... what? A slur on my name? A misfortune for life? Oh, that's nonsense," he thought. "The slur on my name and honor—that's all apart from myself."

"Louis XVI was executed because they said he was dishonorable and a criminal," came into Pierre's head, "and from their point of view, they were right, as were those too who canonized him and died a martyr's death for his sake. Then Robespierre was beheaded for being a despot. Who is right and who is wrong? No one! But if you are alive—live: tomorrow you'll die as I might have died an hour ago. And is it worth tormenting oneself, when one has only a moment of life in comparison with eternity?"

But at the moment when Pierre imagined himself calmed by such reflections, *she* suddenly came into his mind as she was at the moments when he had most strongly expressed his insincere love for her, and he felt the blood rush to his heart and had again to get up and move about and break and tear whatever came to his hand. "Why did I tell her that '*I love you*'?" he kept repeating to himself. And when he had said it for the tenth time, Molière's words: "*But what the devil was he doing in that galley?*" occurred to him, and he began to laugh at himself.

That night Pierre called his valet and told him to pack up to go to St. Petersburg. He could not imagine how he could speak to Helene now. He resolved to go away the next day and leave a letter informing her of his intention to part from her forever.

The next morning when the valet came into the room with his coffee, Pierre was lying asleep on the ottoman with an open book in his hand.

Pierre woke up and looked around for a while with a startled expression, unable to realize where he was.

“Helene told me to inquire whether your excellency was at home,” said the valet.

But before Pierre could decide what answer he would send, Helene herself in a white satin dressing gown embroidered with silver and with simply dressed hair (two immense plaits twice round her lovely head like a coronet) entered the room, calm and majestic, except that there was a wrathful wrinkle on her rather prominent marble brow. With her imperturbable calm, she did not begin to speak in front of the valet. She knew of the duel and had come to speak about it. She waited till the valet had set down the coffee things and left the room. Pierre looked at her timidly over his spectacles, and like a hare surrounded by hounds who lays back her ears and continues to crouch motionless before her enemies, he tried to continue reading. But feeling this to be senseless and impossible, he again glanced timidly at her. She did not sit down but looked at him with a contemptuous smile, waiting for the valet to go.

“Well, what’s this now? What have you been up to now, I should like to know?” Helene asked sternly.

“I? What have I...?” stammered Pierre.

“So it seems you’re a hero, eh? Come now, what was this duel about? What is it meant to prove? What? I ask you.”

Pierre turned over heavily on the ottoman and opened his mouth, but could not reply.

“If you won’t answer, I’ll tell you...” Helene went on. “You believe everything you’re told. You were told...” Helene laughed, “that Dolokhov was my lover,” she said in French with her coarse plainness of speech, uttering the word *lover* as casually as any other word, “and you believed it!

Well, what have you proved? What does this duel prove? That you're a fool, *that you are a fool*, but everybody knew that. What will be the result? That I shall be the laughingstock of all Moscow, that everyone will say that you, drunk and not knowing what you were about, challenged a man you are jealous of without cause."

Helene raised her voice and became more and more excited, "A man who's a better man than you in every way..."

"Hm... Hm...!" growled Pierre, frowning without looking at her, and not moving a muscle.

"And how could you believe he was my lover? Why? Because I like his company? If you were cleverer and more agreeable, I should prefer yours."

"Don't speak to me... I beg you," muttered Pierre hoarsely.

"Why shouldn't I speak? I can speak as I like, and I tell you plainly that there are not many wives with husbands such as you who would not have taken lovers (*des amants*), but I have not done so," said Helene.

Pierre wished to say something, looked at her with eyes whose strange expression she did not understand, and lay down again. He was suffering physically at that moment, there was a weight on his chest and he could not breathe. He knew that he must do something to put an end to this suffering, but what he wanted to do was too terrible.

"We had better separate," Pierre muttered in a broken voice.

"Separate? Very well, but only if you give me a fortune," said Helene. "Separate! That's a thing to frighten me with!"

Pierre leaped up from the sofa and rushed staggering toward her.

"I'll kill you!" he shouted, and seizing the marble top of a table with a strength he had never before felt, he made a step toward her brandishing the slab.

Helene's face became terrible, she shrieked and sprang aside.

His father's powerful nature showed itself in Pierre. He felt the fascination and delight of frenzy. He flung down the slab, broke it, and

swooping down on her with outstretched hands shouted, “Get out!” in such a terrible voice that the whole house heard it with horror. God knows what he would have done at that moment had Helene not fled from the room.

A week later Pierre gave Helene full power to control all his estates in Great Russia, which formed the larger part of his property and left for St. Petersburg alone.

Two months had elapsed since the news of the battle of Austerlitz and the loss of Andrei had reached Bald Hills, and in spite of the letters sent through the embassy and all the searches made, his body had not been found nor was he on the list of prisoners. What was worst of all for his relations was the fact that there was still a possibility of his having been picked up on the battlefield by the people of the place and that he might now be lying, recovering or dying, alone among strangers and unable to send news of himself. The gazettes from which Baron Bolkonski first heard of the defeat at Austerlitz stated, as usual very briefly and vaguely, that after brilliant engagements the Russians had had to retreat and had made their withdrawal in perfect order. Baron Bolkonski understood from this official report that our army had been defeated. A week after the gazette report of the battle of Austerlitz came a letter from General Kutuzov informing the Baron of the fate that had befallen his son.

“Your son Andrei,” wrote General Kutuzov, “fell before my eyes, a standard in his hand and at the head of a regiment—he fell as a hero, worthy of his father and his fatherland. To the great regret of myself and of the whole army, it is still uncertain whether he is alive or not. I comfort myself and you with the hope that your son is alive, for otherwise he would have been mentioned among the officers found on the field of battle, a list of whom has been sent me under a flag of truce.”

After receiving this news late in the evening, when he was alone in his study, Baron Bolkonski went for his walk, as usual, the next morning, but

he was silent with his steward, the gardener, and the architect, and though he looked very grim he said nothing to anyone.

When Marya went to him at the usual hour he was working at his lathe and, as usual, did not look around at her.

“Ah, Marya!” he said suddenly in an unnatural voice, throwing down his chisel. (The wheel continued to revolve by its own impetus, and Marya long remembered the dying creak of that wheel, which merged in her memory with what followed.)

Marya approached him, saw his face, and something gave way within her. Her eyes grew dim. By the expression on her father’s face, not sad, not crushed, but angry and working unnaturally, she saw that hanging over her and about to crush her was some terrible misfortune, the worst in life, one she had not yet experienced, irreparable and incomprehensible—the death of one she loved.

“Father! Andrei!”—said the ungraceful, awkward Marya with such an indescribable charm of sorrow and self-forgetfulness that her father could not bear her look but turned away with a sob.

“Bad news! He’s not among the prisoners nor among the killed! General Kutuzov writes...” Baron Bolkonski screamed as piercingly as if he wished to drive Marya away by that scream... “Killed!”

Marya did not fall down or faint. She was already pale, but on hearing these words her face changed and something brightened in her beautiful, radiant eyes. It was as if joy—a supreme joy apart from the joys and sorrows of this world—overflowed the great grief within her. She forgot all fear of her father, went up to him, took his hand, and drawing him down put her arm around his thin, scraggy neck.

“Father,” Marya said, “do not turn away from me, let us weep together.”

“Scoundrels! Blackguards!” shrieked Baron Bolkonski, turning his face away from her. “Destroying the army, destroying the men! And why? Go, go and tell Lise.”

Marya sank helplessly into an armchair beside her father and wept. She saw her brother Andrei now as he had been at the moment when he took leave of her and of Lise, his look tender yet proud. She saw him as tender and amused as he was when he put on the little icon. "Did he believe? Had he repented of his unbelief? Was he now there? There in the realms of eternal peace and blessedness?" she thought.

"Father, tell me how it happened," Marya asked through her tears.

"Go! Go! Killed in battle, where the best of Russian men and Russia's glory were led to destruction. Go, Marya. Go and tell Lise. I will follow."

When Marya returned from Baron Bolkonski, Lise sat working and looked up with that curious expression of inner, happy calm peculiar to pregnant women. It was evident that her eyes did not see Marya but were looking within... into herself... at something joyful and mysterious taking place within her.

"Marya," Lise said, moving away from the embroidery frame and lying back, "give me your hand." Lise took her sister-in-law's hand and held it below her waist.

Lise's eyes were smiling expectantly, her downy lip rose and remained lifted in childlike happiness.

Marya knelt down before her and hid her face in the folds of her sister-in-law's dress.

"There, there! Do you feel it? I feel so strange. And do you know, Marya, I am going to love him very much," said Lise, looking with bright and happy eyes at her sister-in-law.

Marya could not lift her head, she was weeping.

"What is the matter, Marya?"

"Nothing... only I feel sad... sad about Andrei," Marya said, wiping away her tears on her sister-in-law's knee.

Several times in the course of the morning Marya began trying to prepare her sister-in-law, and every time began to cry. Unobservant as was Lise, these tears, the cause of which she did not understand, agitated her. She said nothing but looked about uneasily as if in search of something. Before dinner, Baron Bolkonski, of whom Lise was always afraid, came into her room with a peculiarly restless and malign expression and went out again without saying a word. She looked at Marya, then sat thinking for a while with that expression of attention to something within her that is only seen in pregnant women, and suddenly began to cry.

“Has anything come from Andrei?” Lise asked.

“No, you know it’s too soon for news. But Baron Bolkonski is anxious and I feel afraid.”

“So there’s nothing?”

“Nothing,” answered Marya, looking firmly with her radiant eyes at her sister-in-law.

Marya had determined not to tell her and persuaded her father to hide the terrible news from her till after her confinement, which was expected within a few days. Marya and Baron Bolkonski each bore and hid their grief in their own way. Baron Bolkonski would not cherish any hope: he made up his mind that Andrei had been killed, and though he sent an official to Austria to seek for traces of his son, he ordered a monument from Moscow which he intended to erect in his own garden to his memory, and he told everybody that his son had been killed. Baron Bolkonski tried not to change his former way of life, but his strength failed him. He walked less, ate less, slept less, and became weaker every day. Marya hoped. She prayed for Andrei as living and was always awaiting news of his return.

“Dearest,” said Lise after breakfast on the morning of the nineteenth March, and her downy little lip rose from old habit, but as sorrow was manifest in every smile, the sound of every word, and even every footstep in that house since the terrible news had come, so now the smile of Lise—

influenced by the general mood though without knowing its cause—was such as to remind one still more of the general sorrow.

“Dearest, I’m afraid this morning’s *breakfast*—“ “frühstück” Fóka the cook calls it—has disagreed with me.”

“What is the matter with you, my darling? You look pale. Oh, you are very pale!” said Marya in alarm, running with her soft, ponderous steps up to Lise.

“Your excellency, should not the midwife be sent for?” said one of the maids who was present. (The midwife was from the neighboring town, and had been at Bald Hills for the last fortnight.)

“Oh yes,” assented Marya, “perhaps that’s it. I’ll go. Courage, my angel.” She kissed Lise and was about to leave the room.

“Oh, no, no!” And besides the pallor and the physical suffering on Lise’s face, an expression of childish fear of inevitable pain showed itself.

“No, it’s only indigestion?... Say it’s only indigestion, say so, Marya! Say...” And Lise began to cry capriciously like a suffering child and to wring her little hands even with some affectation. Marya ran out of the room to fetch the midwife.

“*Mon Dieu! Mon Dieu!* Oh!” Marya heard as she left the room.

The midwife was already on her way to meet Marya, rubbing her small, plump white hands with an air of calm importance.

“I think it’s beginning!” said Marya looking at the midwife with wide-open eyes of alarm.

“Well, the Lord be thanked, Marya,” said the midwife, not hastening her steps. “You young ladies should not know anything about it.”

“But how is it the doctor from Moscow is not here yet?” said Marya. (In accordance with Lise’s and Andrei’s wishes they had sent in good time to Moscow for a doctor and were expecting him at any moment.)

“No matter, Marya, don’t be alarmed,” said the midwife. “We’ll manage very well without a doctor.”

Five minutes later Marya from her room heard something heavy being carried by. She looked out. The men servants were carrying the large leather sofa from Andrei's study into the bedroom. On their faces was a quiet and solemn look.

Marya sat alone in her room listening to the sounds in the house, now and then opening her door when someone passed and watching what was going on in the passage. Some women passing with quiet steps in and out of the bedroom glanced at Marya and turned away. She did not venture to ask any questions, and shut the door again, now sitting down in her easy chair, now taking her prayer book, now kneeling before the icon stand. To her surprise and distress, she found that her prayers did not calm her excitement. Suddenly her door opened softly and her old nurse, Praskóvya Sávishna, who hardly ever came to that room as Baron Bolkonski had forbidden it, appeared on the threshold with a shawl round her head.

"I've come to sit with you a bit, Marya," said the nurse, "and here I've brought Baron Bolkonski's wedding candles to light before his saint, my angel," she said with a sigh.

"Oh, nurse, I'm so glad!"

"God is merciful, birdie."

The nurse lit the gilt candles before the icons and sat down by the door with her knitting. Marya took a book and began reading. Only when footsteps or voices were heard did they look at one another, Marya anxious and inquiring, the nurse encouraging. Everyone in the house was dominated by the same feeling that Marya experienced as she sat in her room. But owing to the superstition that the fewer the people who know of it the less a woman in travail suffers, everyone tried to pretend not to know; no one spoke of it, but apart from the ordinary staid and respectful good manners habitual in the Baron's household, a common anxiety, a softening of the heart, and a consciousness that something great and mysterious was being accomplished at that moment made itself felt.

There was no laughter in the maids' large hall. In the men servants' hall, all sat waiting, silently and alert. In the outlying serfs' quarters, torches and candles were burning and no one slept. Baron Bolkonski, stepping on his heels, paced up and down his study and sent Butler Tikhon to ask the midwife what news.—“Say only that ‘the Baron told me to ask,’ and come and tell me her answer.”

“Inform the Baron that labor has begun,” said the midwife, giving the messenger a significant look.

Butler Tikhon went and told the Baron.

“Very good!” said Baron Bolkonski closing the door behind him, and Butler Tikhon did not hear the slightest sound from the study after that.

After a while Tikhon re-entered it as if to snuff the candles, and, seeing Baron Bolkonski was lying on the sofa, looked at him, noticed his perturbed face, shook his head, and going up to him silently kissed him on the shoulder and left the room without snuffing the candles or saying why he had entered. The most solemn mystery in the world continued its course. The evening passed, night came, and the feeling of suspense and softening of heart in the presence of the unfathomable did not lessen but increased. No one slept.

It was one of those March nights when winter seems to wish to resume its sway and scatters its last snows and storms with desperate fury. A relay of horses had been sent up the highroad to meet the German doctor from Moscow who was expected every moment, and men on horseback with lanterns were sent to the crossroads to guide him over the country road with its hollows and snow-covered pools of water.

Marya had long since put aside her book: she sat silent, her luminous eyes fixed on her nurse's wrinkled face (every line of which she knew so well), on the lock of gray hair that escaped from under the kerchief, and the loose skin that hung under her chin.

Nurse Sávishna, knitting in hand, was telling in low tones, scarcely hearing or understanding her own words, what she had told hundreds of times before: how the late mother of Marya had given birth to her in Kishenëv with only a Moldavian peasant woman to help instead of a midwife.

“God is merciful, doctors are never needed,” the nurse said.

Suddenly a gust of wind beat violently against the casement of the window, from which the double frame had been removed (by order of the Baron, one window frame was removed in each room as soon as the larks returned), and, forcing open a loosely closed latch, set the damask curtain flapping and blew out the candle with its chill, snowy draft. Marya shuddered; her nurse, putting down the stocking she was knitting, went to the window and leaning out tried to catch the open casement. The cold wind flapped the ends of her kerchief and her loose locks of gray hair.

“Marya, my dear, there’s someone driving up the avenue!” the nurse said, holding the casement and not closing it. “With lanterns. Most likely the doctor.”

“Oh, my God! thank God!” said Marya. “I must go and meet him, he does not know Russian.”

Marya threw a shawl over her head and ran to meet the newcomer. As she was crossing the anteroom she saw through the window a carriage with lanterns, standing at the entrance. She went out on the stairs. On a banister post stood a tallow candle which guttered in the draft. On the landing below, Philip, the footman, stood looking scared and holding another candle. Still lower, beyond the turn of the staircase, one could hear the footstep of someone in thick felt boots, and a voice that seemed familiar to Marya was saying something.

“Thank God!” said the voice. “And Father?”

“Gone to bed,” replied the voice of Demyán the house steward, who was downstairs.

Then the voice said something more, Demyán replied, and the steps in the felt boots approached the unseen bend of the staircase more rapidly.

“It’s Andrei!” thought Marya. “No it can’t be, that would be too extraordinary,” and at the very moment she thought this, the face and figure of Andrei, in a fur cloak the deep collar of which covered with snow, appeared on the landing where the footman stood with the candle. Yes, it was he, pale, thin, with a changed and strangely softened but agitated expression on his face. Andrei came up the stairs and embraced his sister.

“You did not get my letter?” Andrei asked, and not waiting for a reply—which he would not have received, for Marya was unable to speak—he turned back, rapidly mounted the stairs again with the doctor who had entered the hall after him (they had met at the last post station), and again embraced Marya.

“What a strange fate, Marya darling!” And having taken off his cloak and felt boots, Andrei went to Lise’s apartment.

Lise lay supported by pillows, with a white cap on her head (the pains had just left her). Strands of her black hair lay around her inflamed and perspiring cheeks, her charming rosy mouth with its downy lip was open and she was smiling joyfully. Andrei entered and paused facing her at the foot of the sofa on which she was lying. Her glittering eyes, filled with childlike fear and excitement, rested on him without changing their expression. “I love you all and have done no harm to anyone; why must I suffer so? Help me!” her look seemed to say. Lise saw her husband but did not realize the significance of his appearance before her now. Andrei went round the sofa and kissed her forehead.

“My darling!” Andrei said—a word he had never used with her before. “God is merciful...”

Lise looked at him inquiringly and with childlike reproach.

“I expected help from you and I get none, none from you either!” said her eyes. Lise was not surprised at Andrei having come; she did not realize

that he had come. His coming had nothing to do with her sufferings or with their relief. The pangs began again and The midwife advised Andrei to leave the room.

The doctor entered. Andrei went out and, meeting Marya, again joined her. They began talking in whispers, but their talk broke off at every moment. They waited and listened.

“Go, Andrei,” said Marya.

Andrei went again to his wife and sat waiting in the room next to hers. A woman came from the bedroom with a frightened face and became confused when she saw Andrei. Andrei covered his face with his hands and remained so for some minutes. Piteous, helpless, animal moans came through the door. Andrei got up, went to the door, and tried to open it. Someone was holding it shut.

“You can’t come in! You can’t!” said a terrified voice from within.

Andrei began pacing the room. The screaming ceased, and a few more seconds went by. Then suddenly a terrible shriek—it could not be hers, she could not scream like that—came from the bedroom. Andrei ran to the door; the scream ceased and he heard the wail of an infant.

“What have they taken a baby in there for?” thought Andrei in the first second. “A baby? What baby...? Why is there a baby there? Or is the baby born?”

Then suddenly Andrei realized the joyful significance of that wail; tears choked him, and leaning his elbows on the window sill he began to cry, sobbing like a child. The door opened. The doctor with his shirt sleeves tucked up, without a coat, pale and with a trembling jaw, came out of the room. Andrei turned to him, but the doctor gave him a bewildered look and passed by without a word. A woman rushed out and seeing Andrei stopped, hesitating on the threshold. Andrei went into his wife’s room. Lise was lying dead, in the same position he had seen her in five minutes before, and, despite the fixed eyes and the pallor of the cheeks, the same expression was

on her charming childlike face with its upper lip covered with tiny black hair.

“I love you all, and have done no harm to anyone; and what have you done to me?”—said Lise’s charming, pathetic, dead face.

In a corner of the room, something red and tiny gave a grunt and squealed in the midwife’s trembling white hands.

Two hours later Andrei, stepping softly, went into his father’s room. Baron Bolkonski already knew everything. He was standing close to the door and as soon as it opened his rough old arms closed like a vise around Andrei’s neck, and without a word, he began to sob like a child.

Three days later Lise was buried, and Andrei went up the steps to where the coffin stood, to give her the farewell kiss. And there in the coffin was the same face, though with closed eyes. “Ah, what have you done to me?” Lise’s face still seemed to say, and Andrei felt that something gave way in his soul and that he was guilty of a sin he could neither remedy nor forget. He could not weep.

Baron Bolkonski too came up and kissed the waxen little hands that lay quietly crossed one on the other on her breast, and to him, too, Lise’s face seemed to say: “Ah, what have you done to me, and why?” And at the sight, Baron Bolkonski turned angrily away.

Another five days passed, and then the young Nikolenka was baptized. The wet nurse supported the coverlet with her chin, while the priest with a goose feather anointed the boy’s little red and wrinkled soles and palms.

Baron Bolkonski, who was Nikolenka’s godfather, trembling and afraid of dropping him, carried the infant around the battered tin font and handed him over to the godmother, Marya.

Andrei sat in another room, faint with fear lest the baby should be drowned in the font, and awaited the termination of the ceremony. He looked up joyfully at Nikolenka when the nurse brought him in and nodded approval when she told him that the wax with the baby's hair had not sunk in the font but had floated.

Nicholas's share in Dolokhov's duel with Pierre was hushed up by the efforts of Count Rostov, and instead of being degraded to the ranks as he expected he was appointed an adjutant to the governor-general of Moscow. As a result, Nicholas could not go to the country with the rest of the family but was kept all summer in Moscow by his new duties. Dolokhov recovered, and Nicholas became very friendly with him during his convalescence. Dolokhov lay ill at his mother's who loved him passionately and tenderly, and Dolokhov's mother, who had grown fond of Nicholas for his friendship with her son, often talked to Nicholas about him.

"Yes, Nicholas," Dolokov's mother would say, "my son is too noble and pure-souled for our present, depraved world. No one now loves virtue; it seems like a reproach to everyone. Now tell me, Nicholas, was it right, was it honorable, of Pierre? And my son, with his noble spirit, loved him and even now never says a word against him. Those pranks in St. Petersburg when they played some tricks on a policeman, didn't they do it together? And there! Pierre got off scot-free, while my son had to bear the whole burden on his shoulders. Fancy what he had to go through! It's true he has been reinstated, but how could they fail to do that? I think there were not many such gallant sons of the fatherland out there as he. And now—this duel! Have these people no feeling, or honor? Knowing him to be an only son, to challenge him and shoot so straight! It's well God had mercy on us. And what was it for? Who doesn't have intrigues nowadays? Why, if he was so jealous, as I see things he should have shown it sooner, but he lets it go on for months. And then to call him out, reckoning on my son's not fighting because he owed him money! What baseness! What meanness! I

know you understand my son, my dear Nicholas; that, believe me, is why I am so fond of you. Few people do understand him. He is such a lofty, heavenly soul!”

Dolokhov himself during his convalescence spoke to Nicholas in a way no one would have expected of him.

“I know people consider me a bad man!” Dolokhov said. “Let them! I don’t care a straw about anyone but those I love; but those I love, I love so that I would give my life for them, and the others I’d throttle if they stood in my way. I have an adored, priceless mother, and two or three friends—you among them—and as for the rest I only care about them in so far as they are harmful or useful. And most of them are harmful, especially the women. Yes, Nicholas,” he continued, “I have met loving, noble, high-minded men, but I have not yet met any women—countesses or cooks—who were not venal. I have not yet met that divine purity and devotion I look for in women. If I found such a one I’d give my life for her! But those!...” and he made a gesture of contempt. “And believe me, if I still value my life it is only because I still hope to meet such a divine creature, who will regenerate, purify, and elevate me. But you don’t understand it.”

“Oh, yes, I quite understand,” answered Nicholas, who was under his new friend’s influence.

In the autumn the Rostovs returned to Moscow. Early in the winter Denisov also came back and stayed with them. The first half of the winter of 1806, which Nicholas spent in Moscow, was one of the happiest, merriest times for him and the whole family. Nicholas brought many young men to his parents’ house. Vera was a handsome girl of twenty; orphan niece Sonya a girl of sixteen with all the charm of an opening flower; Natasha, half grown up and half child, was now childishly amusing, now girlishly enchanting.

At that time in the Rostovs' house there prevailed an amorous atmosphere characteristic of homes where there are very young and very charming girls. Every young man who came to the house—seeing those impressionable, smiling young faces (smiling probably at their own happiness), feeling the eager bustle around him, and hearing the fitful bursts of song and music and the inconsequent but friendly prattle of young girls ready for anything and full of hope—experienced the same feeling; sharing with the young folk of the Rostovs' household a readiness to fall in love and an expectation of happiness.

Among the young men introduced by Nicholas one of the first was Dolokhov, whom everyone in the house liked except Natasha. She almost quarreled with her brother about him. Natasha insisted that he was a bad man and that in the duel with Pierre, it was Pierre who was right and Dolokhov who was wrong, and further that Dolokhov was disagreeable and unnatural.

“There’s nothing for me to understand,” Natasha cried out with resolute self-will, “he is wicked and heartless. There now, I like your Denisov though he is a rake and all that, still I like him; so you see I do understand. I don’t know how to put it... with this one, everything is calculated, and I don’t like that. But Denisov...”

“Oh, Denisov is quite different,” replied Nicholas, implying that even Denisov was nothing compared to Dolokhov—“you must understand what a soul there is in Dolokhov, you should see him with his mother. What a heart!”

“Well, I don’t know about that, but I am uncomfortable with him. And do you know Dolokhov has fallen in love with Sonya?”

“What nonsense...”

“I’m certain of it; you’ll see.”

Natasha’s prediction proved true. Dolokhov, who did not usually care for the society of ladies, began to come often to the house, and the question

for whose sake he came (though no one spoke of it) was soon settled. He came because of Sonya. And Sonya, though she would never have dared to say so, knew it and blushed scarlet every time Dolokhov appeared.

Dolokhov often dined at the Rostovs', never missed a performance at which they were present, and went to Dancing Master Iogel's balls for young people which the Rostovs always attended. Dolokhov was pointedly attentive to Sonya and looked at her in such a way that not only could she not bear his glances without coloring, but even Countess Rostov and Natasha blushed when they saw his looks.

It was evident that this strange, strong man, Dolokhov, was under the irresistible influence of the dark, graceful girl, Sonya, who loved another (Nicholas).

Nicholas noticed something new in Dolokhov's relations with Sonya, but he did not explain to himself what these new relations were. "They're always in love with someone," Nicholas thought of Sonya and Natasha. But he was not as much at ease with Sonya and Dolokhov as before and was less frequently at home.

In the autumn of 1806, everybody had again begun talking of the war with Napoleon with even greater warmth than the year before. Orders were given to raise recruits, ten men in every thousand for the regular army, and besides this, nine men in every thousand for the militia. Everywhere Napoleon was anathematized and in Moscow, nothing but the coming war was talked of. For the Rostov family, the whole interest of these preparations for war lay in the fact that Nicholas would not hear of remaining in Moscow, and only awaited the termination of Denisov's furlough after Christmas to return with him to their regiment. His approaching departure did not prevent his amusing himself but rather gave zest to his pleasures. He spent the greater part of his time away from home, at dinners, parties, and balls.

On the third day after Christmas Nicholas dined at home, a thing he had rarely done of late. It was a grand farewell dinner, as he and Denisov were leaving to join their regiment after Epiphany. About twenty people were present, including Dolokhov and Denisov.

Never had love been so much in the air, and never had the amorous atmosphere made itself so strongly felt in the Rostovs' house as at this holiday time. "Seize the moments of happiness, love and be loved! That is the only reality in the world, all else is folly. It is the one thing we are interested in here," said the spirit of the place.

Nicholas, having as usual exhausted two pairs of horses, without visiting all the places he meant to go to and where he had been invited, returned home just before dinner. As soon as he entered he noticed and felt the tension of the amorous air in the house, and also noticed a curious embarrassment among some of those present. Sonya, Dolokhov, and Count Rostov were especially disturbed, and to a lesser degree Natasha. Nicholas understood that something must have happened between Sonya and Dolokhov before dinner, and with the kindly sensitiveness natural to him was very gentle and wary with them both at dinner. On that same evening, there was to be one of the balls that Iogel (the dancing master) gave for his pupils during the holidays.

"Nicholas, will you come to Dancing Master Iogel's party? Please do!" said Natasha. "He asked you, and Denisov is also going."

"Where would I not go at Countess Rostov's command!" said Denisov, who at the Rostovs' had jocularly assumed the role of Natasha's knight. "I'm even weady to dance the *dance of the shawl*."

"If I have time," answered Nicholas. "But I promised the Arkhárovs; they have a party."

"And you?" Nicholas asked Dolokhov, but as soon as he had asked the question he noticed that it should not have been put.

“Perhaps,” coldly and angrily replied Dolokhov, glancing at Sonya, and, scowling, he gave Nicholas just such a look as he had given Pierre at the club dinner.

“There is something up,” thought Nicholas, and he was further confirmed in this conclusion by the fact that Dolokhov left immediately after dinner. Nicholas called Natasha and asked her what was the matter.

“And I was looking for you,” said Natasha running out to Nicholas. “I told you, but you would not believe it,” she said triumphantly. “Dolokhov has proposed to Sonya!”

Little as Nicholas had occupied himself with Sonya of late, something seemed to give way within him at this news. Dolokhov was a suitable and in some respects a brilliant match for the dowerless, orphan girl. From the point of view of Count Rostov and of society it was out of the question for her to refuse him. And therefore Nicholas’ first feeling on hearing the news was one of anger with Sonya... He tried to say, “That’s capital; of course, she’ll forget her childish promises and accept the offer,” but before he had time to say it Natasha began again.

“And fancy! Sonya refused him quite definitely!” adding, after a pause, “Sonya told him she loved another.”

“Yes, my Sonya could not have done otherwise!” thought Nicholas.

“Much as Mamma pressed her, Sonya refused, and I know she won’t change once she has said...”

“And Mamma pressed her!” said Nicholas reproachfully.

“Yes,” said Natasha. “Do you know, Nicholas—don’t be angry—but I know you will not marry her. I know, heaven knows how, but I know for certain that you won’t marry her.”

“Now you don’t know that at all!” said Nicholas. “But I must talk to her. What a darling Sonya is!” he added with a smile.

“Ah, she is indeed a darling! I’ll send her to you.”

And Natasha kissed her brother and ran away.

A minute later Sonya came in with a frightened, guilty, and scared look. Nicholas went up to her and kissed her hand. This was the first time since his return that they had talked alone and about their love.

“Sonya,” he began, timidly at first and then more and more boldly, “if you wish to refuse one who is not only a brilliant and advantageous match but a splendid, noble fellow... he is my friend...”

Sonya interrupted him.

“I have already refused,” she said hurriedly.

“If you are refusing for my sake, I am afraid that I...”

Sonya again interrupted. She gave him an imploring, frightened look.

“Nicholas, don’t tell me that!” she said.

“No, but I must. It may be arrogant of me, but still, it is best to say it. If you refuse him on my account, I must tell you the whole truth. I love you, and I think I love you more than anyone else...”

“That is enough for me,” said Sonya, blushing.

“No, but I have been in love a thousand times and shall fall in love again, though for no one have I such a feeling of friendship, confidence, and love as I have for you. Then, too, I am young. Mamma does not wish it. In a word, I make no promise. And I beg you to consider Dolokhov’s offer,” Nicholas said, articulating his friend’s name with difficulty.

“Don’t say that to me! I want nothing. I love you as a brother and always shall, and I want nothing more.”

“You are an angel: I am not worthy of you, but I am afraid of misleading you.”

And Nicholas again kissed Sonya’s hand.

Dancing Master Iogel’s parties were the most enjoyable balls in Moscow. So said the mothers as they watched their young people executing their newly learned steps, and so said the youths and maidens themselves as they danced till they were ready to drop, and so said the grown-up young men and women who came to these balls with an air of condescension and

found them most enjoyable. That year two marriages had come of these balls. The two pretty young Baronesses Gorchakov met suitors there and were married, which further increased the fame of these dances. What distinguished them from others was the absence of a host or hostess and the presence of the good-natured Iogel, flying about like a feather and bowing according to the rules of his art, as he collected the tickets from all his visitors. There was the fact that only those came who wished to dance and amuse themselves as girls of thirteen and fourteen do who are wearing long dresses for the first time. With scarcely any exceptions they all were or seemed to be, pretty—so rapturous were their smiles and so sparkling their eyes. Sometimes the best of the pupils, of whom Natasha, who was exceptionally graceful, was first, even danced the *dance of the shawl*, but at this last ball only the *Scottish dance*, the *English dance*, and the mazurka, which was just coming into fashion, were danced. Iogel had taken a ballroom in Pierre's house, and the ball, as everyone said, was a great success. There were many pretty girls and the Nicholas girls were among the prettiest. They were both particularly happy and gay. That evening, proud of Dolokhov's proposal, her refusal, and her explanation with Nicholas, Sonya twirled about before she left home so that the maid could hardly get her hair plaited, and she was transparently radiant with impulsive joy.

Natasha no less proud of her first long dress and of being at a real ball was even happier. They were both dressed in white muslin with pink ribbons.

Natasha fell in love the very moment she entered the ballroom. She was not in love with anyone in particular, but with everyone. Whatever person she happened to look at she was in love with for that moment.

"Oh, how delightful it is!" she kept saying, running up to Sonya.

Nicholas and Denisov were walking up and down, looking with kindly patronage at the dancers.

“How sweet she is—she will be a weal beauty!” said Denisov.

“Who?”

“Natasha,” answered Denisov.

“And how she dances! What gwace!” he said again after a pause.

“Who are you talking about?”

“About your sister,” ejaculated Denisov testily.

Nicholas smiled.

“Nicholas, you were one of my best pupils—you must dance,” said little Dancing Master Iogel coming up to Nicholas. “Look how many charming young ladies—” He turned with the same request to Denisov who was also a former pupil of his.

“No, my dear fellow, I’ll be a wallflower,” said Denisov. “Don’t you wecollect what bad use I made of your lessons?”

“Oh no!” said Iogel, hastening to reassure him. “You were only inattentive, but you had talent—oh yes, you had talent!”

The band struck up the newly introduced mazurka. Nicholas could not refuse Iogel and asked Sonya to dance. Denisov sat down by the old ladies and, leaning on his saber and beating time with his foot, told them something funny and kept them amused, while he watched the young people dancing, Iogel with Natasha, his pride and his best pupil, were the first couple. Noiselessly, skillfully stepping with his little feet in low shoes, Iogel flew first across the hall with Natasha, who, though shy, went on carefully executing her steps. Denisov did not take his eyes off her and beat time with his saber in a way that clearly indicated that if he was not dancing it was because he would not and not because he could not. In the middle of a figure he beckoned to Nicholas who was passing:

“This is not at all the thing,” he said. “What sort of Polish mazuwka is this? But she does dance splendidly.”

Knowing that Denisov had a reputation even in Poland for the masterly way in which he danced the mazurka, Nicholas ran up to Natasha:

“Go and choose Denisov. He is a real dancer, a wonder!” Nicholas said.

When it came to Natasha’s turn to choose a partner, she rose and, tripping rapidly across in her little shoes trimmed with bows, ran timidly to the corner where Denisov sat. She saw that everybody was looking at her and waiting. Nicholas saw that Denisov was refusing though he smiled delightedly. He ran up to them.

“Please, Denisov,” Natasha was saying, “do come!”

“Oh no, let me off, Natasha,” Denisov replied.

“Now then, Denisov,” said Nicholas.

“They coax me as if I were Denisov the cat!” said Denisov jokingly.

“I’ll sing for you a whole evening,” said Natasha.

“Oh, the faiwy! She can do anything with me!” said Denisov, and he unhooked his saber. He came out from behind the chairs, clasped his partner’s hand firmly, threw back his head, and advanced his foot, waiting for the beat. Only on horseback and in the mazurka was Denisov’s short stature not noticeable and he looked the fine fellow he felt himself to be. At the right beat of the music, he looked sideways at his partner with a merry and triumphant air, suddenly stamped with one foot, bounded from the floor like a ball, and flew around the room taking his partner with him. He glided silently on one foot half across the room, and seeming not to notice the chairs was dashing straight at them when suddenly, clinking his spurs and spreading out his legs, he stopped short on his heels, stood so a second, stamped on the spot clanking his spurs, whirled rapidly round, and, striking his left heel against his right, flew round again in a circle. Natasha guessed what Denisov meant to do, and abandoning herself to him followed his lead hardly knowing how. First, he spun her round, holding her now with his left, now with his right hand, then falling on one knee he twirled her around him, and again jumping up, dashed so impetuously forward that it seemed

as if he would rush through the whole suite of rooms without drawing breath, and then he suddenly stopped and performed some new and unexpected steps. When at last, smartly whirling his partner round in front of her chair, he drew up with a click of his spurs and bowed to her, Natasha did not even make him a curtsy. She fixed her eyes on him in amazement, smiling as if she did not recognize him.

“What does this mean?” Natasha thought.

Although Dancing Master Iogel did not acknowledge this to be the real mazurka, everyone was delighted with Denisov’s skill, he was asked again and again as a partner, and the old men began smilingly to talk about Poland and the good old days.

Denisov, flushed after the mazurka and mopping himself with his handkerchief, sat down by Natasha and did not leave her for the rest of the evening.

For two days after that Nicholas did not see Dolokhov at his own home or at Dolokhov’s home: on the third day Nicholas received a note from him:

Nicholas - As I do not intend to be at your house again for reasons you know of, and am going to rejoin my regiment, I am giving a farewell supper tonight to my friends—come to the English Hotel. - Dolokhov

At about ten o’clock Nicholas went to the English Hotel straight from the theater, where he had been with his family and Denisov. He was at once shown to the best room, which Dolokhov had taken for that evening. Some twenty men were gathered round a table at which Dolokhov sat between two candles. On the table was a pile of gold and paper money, and he was keeping the bank. Nicholas had not seen him since his proposal and Sonya’s refusal and felt uncomfortable at the thought of how they would meet.

Dolokhov’s clear, cold glance met Nicholas as soon as he entered the door, as though he had long expected him.

“It’s a long time since we met,” Dolokhov said. “Thanks for coming. I’ll just finish dealing, and then Ilyúshka will come with his chorus.”

“I called once or twice at your house,” said Nicholas, reddening.

Dolokhov made no reply.

“You may play cards with me,” Dolokhov then said.

Nicholas recalled at that moment a strange conversation he had once had with Dolokhov. “None but fools trust to luck in play,” Dolokhov had said.

“Or are you afraid to play with me?” Dolokhov now asked as if guessing Nicholas thought.

Beneath his smile, Nicholas saw in Dolokhov the mood he had shown at the club dinner and at other times when as if tired of everyday life he had felt a need to escape from it by some strange, and usually cruel, action.

Nicholas felt ill at ease. He tried but failed, to find some joke with which to reply to Dolokhov’s words. But before Nicholas had thought of anything, Dolokhov, looking straight into his face, said slowly and deliberately so that everyone could hear:

“Do you remember we had a talk about cards... ‘He’s a fool who trusts to luck, one should make certain,’ and I want to try.”

“To try his luck or the certainty?” Nicholas asked himself.

“Well, you’d better not play,” Dolokhov added, and springing a new pack of cards said: “Bank, gentlemen!”

Moving the money forward he prepared to deal. Nicholas sat down by his side and at first did not play. Dolokhov kept glancing at him.

“Why don’t you play?” Dolokhov asked.

And strange to say Nicholas felt that he could not help taking up a card, putting a small stake on it, and beginning to play.

“I have no money with me,” Nicholas said.

“I’ll trust you.”

Nicholas staked five rubles on a card and lost, staked again, and again lost. Dolokhov “killed,” that is, beat, ten cards of Nicholas’s running.

“Gentlemen,” said Dolokhov after he had dealt for some time. “Please place your money on the cards or I may get muddled in the reckoning.”

One of the players said he hoped Dolokhov might be trusted.

“Yes, you might, but I am afraid of getting the accounts mixed. So I ask you to put the money on your cards,” replied Dolokhov. “Don’t stint yourself, we’ll settle afterward,” he added, turning to Nicholas.

The game continued; a waiter kept handing round champagne.

All Nicholas’s cards were beaten and he had eight hundred rubles scored up against him. Nicholas wrote “800 rubles” on a card, but while the waiter filled his glass he changed his mind and altered it to his usual stake of twenty rubles.

“Leave it,” said Dolokhov, though he did not seem to be even looking at Nicholas, “you’ll win it back all the sooner. I lose to the others but win from you. Or are you afraid of me?” Dolokhov asked again.

Nicholas submitted. He let the eight hundred remain and laid down a seven of hearts with a torn corner, which he had picked up from the floor. He well remembered that seven afterward. He laid down the seven of hearts, on which with a broken bit of chalk he had written “800 rubles” in clear upright figures; he emptied the glass of warm champagne that was handed him, smiled at Dolokhov’s words, and with a sinking heart, waiting for a seven to turn up, gazed at Dolokhov’s hands which held the pack. Much depended on Nicholas’s winning or losing on that seven of hearts. On the previous Sunday Count Rostov had given his son two thousand rubles, and though he always disliked speaking of money difficulties, Count Rostov had told Nicholas that this was all he could let him have till May and asked Nicholas to be more economical this time. Nicholas had replied that it would be more than enough for him and that he gave his word of honor not to take anything more till the spring. Now only twelve hundred

rubles was left of that money so this seven of hearts meant for him not only the loss of sixteen hundred rubles but the necessity of going back on his word. With a sinking heart, Nicholas watched Dolokhov's hands and thought, "Now then, make haste and let me have this card and I'll take my cap and drive home to supper with Denisov, Natasha, and Sonya, and will certainly never touch a card again." At that moment Nicholas's home life, jokes with Petya, talks with Sonya, duets with Natasha, piquet with his father, and even his comfortable bed in the house on the Povarskáya rose before him with such vividness, clearness, and charm that it seemed as if it were all a lost and unappreciated bliss, long past. Nicholas could not conceive that a stupid chance, letting the seven be dealt to the right rather than to the left, might deprive him of all this happiness, newly appreciated and newly illumined, and plunge him into the depths of unknown and undefined misery. That could not be, yet he awaited with a sinking heart the movement of Dolokhov's hands. Those broad, reddish hands, with hairy wrists visible from under the shirt cuffs, laid down the pack and took up a glass and a pipe that were handed him.

"So you are not afraid to play with me?" repeated Dolokhov, and as if about to tell a good story he put down the cards, leaned back in his chair, and began deliberately with a smile:

"Yes, gentlemen, I've been told there's a rumor going about Moscow that I'm a card sharp, so I advise you to be careful."

"Come now, deal!" exclaimed Nicholas.

"Oh, those Moscow gossips!" said Dolokhov, and he took up the cards with a smile.

"Aah!" Nicholas almost screamed lifting both hands to his head. The seven he needed was lying uppermost, the first card in the pack. He had lost more than he could pay.

"Still, don't quit yet!" said Dolokhov with a side glance at Nicholas as he continued to deal.

An hour and a half later most of the players were but little interested in their own play.

The whole interest was concentrated on Nicholas. Instead of sixteen hundred rubles, he had a long column of figures scored against him, which he had reckoned up to ten thousand, but that now, as he vaguely supposed, must have risen to fifteen thousand. In reality, it already exceeded twenty thousand rubles. Dolokhov was no longer listening to stories or telling them, but followed every movement of Nicholas's hands and occasionally ran his eyes over the score against him. He had decided to play until that score reached forty-three thousand. He had fixed on that number because forty-three was the sum of his and Sonya's joint ages. Nicholas, leaning his head on both hands, sat at the table which was scrawled over with figures, wet with spilled wine, and littered with cards. One tormenting impression did not leave him: that those broad-boned reddish hands with hairy wrists visible from under the shirt sleeves, those hands which he loved and hated, held him in their power.

"Six hundred rubles, ace, a corner, a nine... winning it back's impossible... Oh, how pleasant it was at home!... The knave, double or quits... it can't be!... And why is he doing this to me?" Nicholas pondered. Sometimes he staked a large sum, but Dolokhov refused to accept it and fixed the stake himself. Nicholas submitted to him, and at one moment prayed to God as he had done on the battlefield at the bridge over the Enns, and then guessed that the card that came first to hand from the crumpled heap under the table would save him, now counted the cords on his coat and took a card with that number and tried staking the total of his losses on it, then he looked round for aid from the other players, or peered at the now cold face of Dolokhov and tried to read what was passing in his mind.

"Dolokhov knows of course what this loss means to me. He can't want my ruin. Wasn't Dolokhov my friend? Wasn't I fond of him? But it's not his fault. What's he to do if he has such luck?... And it's not my fault either,"

Nicholas thought to himself, "I have done nothing wrong. Have I killed anyone, or insulted or wished harm to anyone? Why such a terrible misfortune? And when did it begin? Such a little while ago I came to this table with the thought of winning a hundred rubles to buy that casket for Mamma's name day and then going home. I was so happy, so free, and so lighthearted! And I did not realize how happy I was! When did that end and when did this new, terrible state of things begin? What marked the change? I sat all the time in this same place at this table, chose and placed cards, and watched those broad-boned agile hands in the same way. When did it happen and what has happened? I am well and strong and still the same and in the same place. No, it can't be! Surely it will all end in nothing!"

Nicholas was flushed and bathed in perspiration, though the room was not hot. His face was terrible and piteous to see, especially from its helpless efforts to seem calm.

The score against Nicholas reached the fateful sum of forty-three thousand. Nicholas had just prepared a card by bending the corner of which he meant to double the three thousand just put down to his score, when Dolokhov, slamming down the pack of cards, put it aside and began rapidly adding up the total of Nicholas's debt, breaking the chalk as he marked the figures in his clear, bold hand.

"Supper, it's time for supper! And here are the Bohemians!"

Some swarthy men and women were really entering from the cold outside and saying something in their Bohemian accents. Nicholas understood that it was all over, but he said in an indifferent tone:

"Well, won't you go on? I had a splendid card all ready," as if it were the fun of the game which interested him most.

"It's all up! I'm lost!" thought Nicholas. "Now a bullet through my brain—that's all that's left me!" And at the same time Nicholas said in a cheerful voice:

"Come now, just this one more little card!"

“All right!” said Dolokhov, having finished the addition. “All right! Twenty-one rubles,” he said, pointing to the figure twenty-one by which the total exceeded the round sum of forty-three thousand; and taking up a pack he prepared to deal. Nicholas submissively unbent the corner of his card and, instead of the six thousand he had intended, carefully wrote twenty-one.

“It’s all the same to me,” Nicholas said. “I only want to see whether you will let me win this ten, or beat it.”

Dolokhov began to deal seriously. Oh, how Nicholas detested at that moment those hands with their short reddish fingers and hairy wrists, which held him in their power... The ten fell to him.

“You owe forty-three thousand, Nicholas,” said Dolokhov, and stretching himself he rose from the table. “One does get tired sitting so long,” he added.

“Yes, I’m tired too,” said Nicholas.

Dolokhov cut him short as if to remind him that it was not for him to jest.

“When am I to receive the money, Nicholas?”

Nicholas, flushing, drew Dolokhov into the next room.

“I cannot pay it all immediately. Will you take an I.O.U.?” he said.

“I say, Nicholas,” said Dolokhov clearly, smiling and looking Nicholas straight in the eyes, “you know the saying, ‘Lucky in love, unlucky at cards.’ Sonya is in love with you, I know.”

“Oh, it’s terrible to feel oneself so in this man’s power,” thought Nicholas. He knew what a shock he would inflict on his father and mother by the news of this loss, he knew what a relief it would be to escape it all, and felt that Dolokhov knew that he could save him from all this shame and sorrow, but wanted now to play with him as a cat does with a mouse.

“Your cousin, Sonya...” Dolokhov started to say, but Nicholas interrupted him.

“Sonya has nothing to do with this and it’s not necessary to mention her!” Nicholas exclaimed fiercely.

“Then when am I to have my money?”

“Tomorrow,” replied Nicholas and left the room.

To say “tomorrow” and keep up a dignified tone was not difficult, but to go home alone, see his sisters, brother, mother, and father, confess and ask for money that Nicholas had no right to after giving his word of honor, was terrible.

At home, the Rostovs had not yet gone to bed. The young people, after returning from the theater, had had supper and were grouped around the clavichord. As soon as Nicholas entered, he was enfolded in that poetic atmosphere of love that pervaded the Nicholas household that winter and, now after Dolokhov’s proposal and Iogel’s ball, seemed to have grown thicker around Sonya and Natasha as the air does before a thunderstorm. Sonya and Natasha, in the light-blue dresses they had worn at the theater, looking pretty and conscious of it, were standing by the clavichord, happy and smiling. Vera was playing chess with Cousin Sinchin in the drawing room. Countess Rostov, waiting for the return of her husband and son, sat playing patience with the old gentlewoman who lived in their house. Denisov, with sparkling eyes and ruffled hair, sat at the clavichord striking chords with his short fingers, his legs thrown back and his eyes rolling as he sang, with his small, husky, but true voice, some verses called “Enchantress,” which he had composed, and to which he was trying to fit music:

Enchantress, say, to my forsaken lyre

What magic power is this recalls me still?

What spark has set my inmost soul on fire,

What is this bliss that makes my fingers thrill?

Denisov was singing in passionate tones, gazing with his sparkling black-agate eyes at the frightened and happy Natasha.

“Splendid! Excellent!” exclaimed Natasha. “Another verse,” she said, without noticing Nicholas.

“Everything’s still the same with them,” thought Nicholas, glancing into the drawing-room, where he saw Vera and Countess Rostov with Widow Drubetskoy.

“Ah, and here’s Nicholas!” cried Natasha, running up to him.

“Is Papa at home?” he asked.

“I am so glad you’ve come!” said Natasha, without answering him. “We are enjoying ourselves! Denisov is staying a day longer for my sake! Did you know?”

“No, Papa is not back yet,” said Sonya.

“Nicholas, have you come? Come here, dear!” called Countess Rostov from the drawing room.

Nicholas went to her, kissed her hand, and sitting down silently at her table began to watch her hands arranging the cards. From the dancing room, they still heard the laughter and merry voices trying to persuade Natasha to sing.

“All wight! All wight!” shouted Denisov. “It’s no good making excuses now! It’s your turn to sing the ba’cawolla—I entweat you!”

Countess Rostov glanced at her silent Nicholas.

“What is the matter?” she asked.

“Oh, nothing,” said Nicholas, as if weary of being continually asked the same question. “Will Papa be back soon?”

“I expect so.”

“Everything’s the same with them. They know nothing about it! Where am I to go?” thought Nicholas, and went again into the dancing room where the clavichord stood.

Sonya was sitting at the clavichord, playing the prelude to Denisov’s favorite barcarolle. Natasha was preparing to sing. Denisov was looking at her with enraptured eyes.

Nicholas began pacing up and down the room.

“Why do they want to make her sing? How can she sing? There’s nothing to be happy about!” thought he.

Sonya struck the first chord of the prelude.

“My God, I’m a ruined and dishonored man! A bullet through my brain is the only thing left me—not singing!” Nicholas’s thoughts ran on. “Go away? But where to? It’s one—let them sing!”

He continued to pace the room, looking gloomily at Denisov and the girls and avoiding their eyes.

“Nicholas, what is the matter?” Sonya’s eyes fixed on him seemed to ask. She noticed at once that something had happened to him.

Nicholas turned away from her. Natasha too, with her quick instinct, had instantly noticed her brother’s condition. But, though Natasha noticed it, she was herself in such high spirits at that moment, so far from sorrow, sadness, or self-reproach, that she purposely deceived herself as young people often do. “No, I am too happy now to spoil my enjoyment by sympathy with anyone’s sorrow,” she felt, and she said to herself: “No, I must be mistaken, he must be feeling happy, just as I am.”

“Now, Sonya!” Natasha said, going to the very middle of the room, where she considered the resonance was best. Having lifted her head and let her arms droop lifelessly, as ballet dancers do, Natasha, rising energetically from her heels to her toes, stepped to the middle of the room and stood still.

“Yes, that’s me!” she seemed to say, answering the rapt gaze with which Denisov followed her.

“And what is she so pleased about?” thought Nicholas, looking at his sister. “Why isn’t she dull and ashamed?”

As Natasha sang the first note of the song, her throat swelled, her chest rose, and her eyes became serious. At that moment she was oblivious of her surroundings, and from her smiling lips flowed sounds which anyone may produce at the same intervals and hold for the same time, but which leave

you could a thousand times and the thousand and first time thrill you and make you weep.

Natasha, that winter, had for the first time begun to sing seriously, mainly because Denisov was so delighted in her singing. She no longer sang as a child, there was no longer in her singing that comical, childish, painstaking effect that had been in it before; but she did not yet sing well, as all the connoisseurs who heard her said: "It is not trained, but it is a beautiful voice that must be trained." Only they generally said this some time after she had finished singing. While that untrained voice, with its incorrect breathing and labored transitions, was sounding, even the connoisseurs said nothing, but only delighted in it and wished to hear it again. In Natasha's voice, there was a virginal freshness, an unconsciousness of her own powers, and an as yet untrained velvety softness, which so mingled with her lack of art in singing that it seemed as if nothing in that voice could be altered without spoiling it.

"What is this?" thought Nicholas, listening to her with widely opened eyes. "What has happened to Natasha? How she is singing today!" And suddenly the whole world centered for him on anticipation of the next note, the next phrase, and everything in the world was divided into three beats: "*Oh, my cruel affliction.*" One, two, three... One, two, three... One... "*Oh, my cruel affliction.*" One, two, three... One. "Oh, this senseless life of ours!" thought Nicholas. "All this misery, and money, and Dolokhov, and anger, and honor—it's all nonsense... but this is real... Now then, Natasha, now then, dearest! Now then, darling! How will she take that *si*? She's taken it! Thank God!" And without noticing that he was singing, to strengthen the *si* he sang a second, a third below the high note. "Ah, God! How fine! Did I really take it? How fortunate!" he thought.

Oh, how that chord vibrated, and how moved was something that was finest in Nicholas's soul! And this something was apart from everything else in the world and above everything in the world. "What were losses, and

Dolokhov, and words of honor?... All nonsense! One might kill and rob and yet be happy...”

It was long since Nicholas had felt such enjoyment from music as he did that day. But no sooner had Natasha finished her barcarolle than reality again presented itself. Nicholas got up without saying a word and went downstairs to his own room. A quarter of an hour later Count Rostov came in from his club, cheerful and contented. Nicholas, hearing him drive up, went to meet him.

“Well—had a good time?” said Count Rostov, smiling gaily and proudly at his son.

Nicholas tried to say “Yes,” but could not: and he nearly burst into sobs. Count Rostov was lighting his pipe and did not notice his son’s condition.

“Ah, it can’t be avoided!” thought Nicholas, for the first and last time. And suddenly, in the most casual tone, which made him feel ashamed of himself, he said, as if merely asking his father to let him have the carriage to drive to town:

“Papa, I have come on a matter of business. I was nearly forgetting. I need some money.”

“Dear me!” said his father, who was in especially good humor. “I told you it would not be enough. How much?”

“Very much,” said Nicholas flushing, and with a stupid careless smile, for which he was long unable to forgive himself, “I have lost a little, I mean a good deal, a great deal—forty-three thousand.”

“What! To whom?... Nonsense!” cried Count Rostov, suddenly reddening with an apoplectic flush over neck and nape as old people do.

“I promised to pay tomorrow,” said Nicholas.

“Well!...” said Count Rostov, spreading out his arms and sinking helplessly on the sofa.

“It can’t be helped! It happens to everyone!” said Nicholas, with a bold, free, and easy tone, while in his soul he regarded himself as a worthless

scoundrel whose whole life could not atone for his crime. He longed to kiss his father's hands and kneel to beg his forgiveness, but said, in a careless and even rude voice, that it happens to everyone!

Count Rostov cast down his eyes on hearing his son's words and began bustlingly searching for something.

"Yes, yes," Count Rostov muttered, "it will be difficult, I fear, difficult to raise... happens to everybody! Yes, who has not done it?"

And with a furtive glance at his son's face, Count Rostov went out of the room... Nicholas had been prepared for resistance but had not at all expected this.

"Papa! Pa-pa!" Nicholas ran after him, sobbing, "forgive me!" And seizing his father's hand, Nicholas pressed it to his lips and burst into tears.

While father and son were having their explanation, the mother and daughter were having one not less important. Natasha came running to Countess Rostov, quite excited.

"Mamma!... Mamma!... Denisov has made me..."

"Made what?"

"Made, made me an offer, Mamma! Mamma!" she exclaimed.

Countess Rostov did not believe her ears. Denisov had proposed. To whom? To this chit of a girl, Natasha, who not so long ago was playing with dolls and who was still having lessons.

"Don't, Natasha! What nonsense!" Countess Rostov said, hoping it was a joke.

"Nonsense, indeed! I am telling you the fact," said Natasha indignantly. "I come to ask you what to do, and you call it 'nonsense!'"

Countess Rostov shrugged her shoulders.

"If it is true that Monsieur Denisov has made you a proposal, tell him he is a fool, that's all!"

"No, he's not a fool!" replied Natasha indignantly and seriously.

“Well then, what do you want? You’re all in love nowadays. Well, if you are in love, marry him!” said Countess Rostov, with a laugh of annoyance. “Good luck to you!”

“No, Mamma, I’m not in love with him, I suppose I’m not in love with him.”

“Well then, tell him so.”

“Mamma, are you cross? Don’t be cross, dear! Is it my fault?”

“No, but what is it, my dear? Do you want me to go and tell him?” said Countess Rostov smiling.

“No, I will do it myself, only tell me what to say. It’s all very well for you,” said Natasha, with a responsive smile. “You should have seen how he said it! I know he did not mean to say it, but it came out accidentally.”

“Well, all the same, you must refuse him.”

“No, I mustn’t. I am so sorry for him! He’s so nice.”

“Well then, accept his offer. It’s high time for you to be married,” answered Countess Rostov sharply and sarcastically.

“No, Mamma, but I’m so sorry for him. I don’t know how I’m to say it.”

“And there’s nothing for you to say. I shall speak to him myself,” said Countess Rostov, indignant that they should have dared to treat this little Natasha as a grown-up.

“No, not on any account! I will tell him myself, and you’ll listen at the door,” and Natasha ran across the drawing room to the dancing hall, where Denisov was sitting on the same chair by the clavichord with his face in his hands.

He jumped up at the sound of her light step.

“Nataly,” he said, moving with rapid steps toward her, “decide my fate. It is in your hands.”

“Denisov, I’m so sorry for you!... No, but you are so nice... but it won’t do...not that... but as a friend, I shall always love you.”

Denisov bent over her hand and she heard strange sounds she did not understand. She kissed his rough curly black head. At this instant, they heard the quick rustle of Countess Rostov's dress. She came up to them.

"Denisov, I thank you for the honor," she said, with an embarrassed voice, though it sounded severe to Denisov—"but my daughter is so young, and I thought that, as my son's friend, you would have addressed yourself first to me. In that case, you would not have obliged me to give this refusal."

"Countess..." said Denisov, with downcast eyes and a guilty face. He tried to say more but faltered.

Natasha could not remain calm, seeing him in such a plight. She began to sob aloud.

"Countess Rostov, I have done wrong," Denisov went on in an unsteady voice, "but believe me, I so adore your daughter and all your family that I would give my life twice over..." He looked at Countess Rostov and seeing her severe face said: "Well, goodbye, Countess," and kissing her hand, Denisov left the room with quick resolute strides, without looking at Natasha.

The next day Nicholas saw Denisov off. Denisov did not wish to stay another day in Moscow. All Denisov's Moscow friends gave him a farewell entertainment at the Romas', with the result that he had no recollection of how he was put in the sleigh or of the first three stages of his journey.

After Denisov's departure, Nicholas spent another fortnight in Moscow, without going out of the house, waiting for the money his father could not at once raise, and he spent most of his time in the girls' room.

Sonya was more tender and devoted to Nicholas than ever. It was as if she wanted to show him that his losses were an achievement that made her love him all the more, but Nicholas now considered himself unworthy of her.

Nicholas filled the girls' albums with verses and music, and having, at last, sent Dolokhov the whole forty-three thousand rubles and received his receipt, he left at the end of November, without taking leave of any of his acquaintances, to overtake his regiment which was already in Poland.

BOOK 5: 1806 – 07



*A*fter Pierre's meeting with his wife, he left for St. Petersburg. At the Torzhók post station, either there were no horses or perhaps the truth was that the postmaster would not supply them. Pierre was obliged to wait. Without undressing, he lay down on the leather sofa in front of a round table, put his big feet in their overboots on the table, and began to reflect.

"Will you have the portmanteaus brought in? And a bed got ready, and tea?" asked Pierre's valet.

Pierre gave no answer, for he neither heard nor saw anything. He had begun to think of the last station and was still pondering on the same question—one so important that he took no notice of what went on around him. Not only was he indifferent as to whether he got to St. Petersburg earlier or later, or whether he secured accommodation at this station, but compared to the thoughts that now occupied him it was a matter of indifference whether he remained there for a few hours or for the rest of his life.

The postmaster, his wife, the valet, and a peasant woman selling Torzhók embroidery came into Pierre's room offering their services. Without changing his careless attitude, Pierre looked at them over his spectacles unable to understand what they wanted or how they could go on living without having solved the problems that so absorbed him. He had

been engrossed by the same thoughts ever since the day he returned from Sokólniki after the duel and had spent that first agonizing, sleepless night. But now, in the solitude of the journey, they seized him with special force. No matter what he thought about, he always returned to these same questions that he could not solve and yet could not cease to ask himself. It was as if the thread of the chief screw which held his life together was stripped, so that the screw could not get in or out, but went on turning uselessly in the same place.

The postmaster came in and began obsequiously to beg Pierre to wait only two hours, when, come what might, he would let his excellency have the courier horses. It was plain that he was lying and only wanted to get more money from the traveler.

“Is this good or bad?” Pierre asked himself. “It is good for me, bad for another traveler, and for himself, it’s unavoidable because he needs money for food; this postmaster said that he didn’t want to give me the horses immediately because an officer had once given him a thrashing for letting a private traveler have the courier horses. But the officer thrashed the postmaster because he had to get on as quickly as possible. And I,” continued Pierre, “shot Dolokhov because I considered myself injured, and Louis XVI was executed because they considered him a criminal, and a year later they executed those who executed him—also for some reason. What is bad? What is good? What should one love and what hate? What does one live for? And what am I? What is life, and what is death? What power governs all?”

There was no answer to any of these questions, except one, and that was not a logical answer and not at all a reply to them. The answer was: “You’ll die and all will end. You’ll die and know all, or cease asking.” But dying was also dreadful.

The Torzhók peddler woman, in a whining voice, went on offering her wares, especially a pair of goatskin slippers.

“I have hundreds of rubles I don’t know what to do with, and she stands in her tattered cloak looking timidly at me,” Pierre thought. “And what does she want the money for? As if that money could add a hair’s breadth to happiness or peace of mind. Can anything in the world make her or me less a prey to evil and death?—death which ends all and must come today or tomorrow—at any rate, in an instant as compared with eternity.” And again he twisted the screw with the stripped thread, and again it turned uselessly in the same place.

Pierre’s servant handed him a half-cut novel, in the form of letters, by Madame de Souza. He began reading about the sufferings and virtuous struggles of a certain Emilie de Mansfeld. “And why did she resist her seducer when she loved him?” he thought. “God could not have put into her heart an impulse that was against His will. My wife—as she once was—did not struggle, and perhaps she was right. Nothing has been found out, nothing discovered,” Pierre again said to himself. “All we can know is that we know nothing. And that’s the height of human wisdom.”

Everything within and around him seemed confused, senseless, and repellent. Yet in this very repugnance to all his circumstances Pierre found a kind of tantalizing satisfaction.

“I make bold to ask your excellency to move a little for this gentleman,” said the postmaster, entering the room followed by another traveler, also detained for lack of horses.

The newcomer was a short, large-boned, yellow-faced, wrinkled old man, with gray bushy eyebrows overhanging bright eyes of an indefinite grayish color.

Pierre took his feet off the table, stood up, and lay down on a bed that had been got ready for him, glancing now and then at the newcomer, who, with a gloomy and tired face, was wearily taking off his wraps with the aid of his servant, and not looking at Pierre. With a pair of felt boots on his thin bony legs, and keeping on a worn, nankeen-covered, sheepskin coat, the

traveler sat down on the sofa, leaned back his big head with its broad temples and close-cropped hair, and looked at Pierre. The stern, shrewd, and penetrating expression of that look struck Pierre. He felt the wish to speak to the stranger, but by the time he had made up his mind to ask him a question about the roads, the traveler had closed his eyes. His shriveled old hands were folded and on the finger of one of them, Pierre noticed a large cast iron ring with a seal representing a death's head. The stranger sat without stirring, either resting or, as it seemed to Pierre, sinking in profound and calm meditation. His servant was also a yellow, wrinkled old man, without a beard or mustache, evidently not because he was shaven but because they had never grown. This active old servant was unpacking the traveler's canteen and preparing tea. He brought in a boiling samovar. When everything was ready, the stranger opened his eyes, moved to the table, and filled a tumbler with tea for himself and one for the beardless old man to whom he passed it. Pierre began to feel a sense of uneasiness, and the need, even the inevitability, of entering into conversation with this stranger.

The servant brought back his tumbler turned upside down to indicate that he did not want more tea, with an unfinished bit of nibbled sugar. The servant asked if anything more would be wanted.

"No. Give me the book," said the stranger.

The servant handed him a book which Pierre took to be a devotional work, and the traveler became absorbed in it. Pierre looked at him. All at once the stranger closed the book, putting in a marker, and again, leaning with his arms on the back of the sofa, sat in his former position with his eyes shut. Pierre looked at him and had not time to turn away when the old man, opening his eyes, fixed his steady and severe gaze straight on Pierre's face.

Pierre felt confused and wished to avoid that look, but the bright old eyes attracted him irresistibly.

“I have the pleasure of addressing Pierre if I am not mistaken,” said the stranger in a deliberate and loud voice.

Pierre looked silently and inquiringly at him over his spectacles.

“I have heard of you, my dear sir,” continued the stranger, “and of your misfortune.” He seemed to emphasize the last word as if to say—“Yes, misfortune! Call it what you please, I know that what happened to you in Moscow was a misfortune.”—“I regret it very much, my dear sir.”

Pierre flushed and, hurriedly putting his legs down from the bed, bent forward toward the old man with a forced and timid smile.

“I have not referred to this out of curiosity, my dear sir, but for greater reasons.”

He paused, his gaze still on Pierre, and moved aside on the sofa by way of inviting the other to take a seat beside him. Pierre felt reluctant to enter into conversation with this old man, but, submitting to him involuntarily, came up and sat down beside him.

“You are unhappy, my dear sir,” the stranger continued. “You are young and I am old. I should like to help you as far as lies in my power.”

“Oh, yes!” said Pierre, with a forced smile. “I am very grateful to you. Where are you traveling from?”

The stranger’s face was not genial, it was even cold and severe, but in spite of this, both the face and words of his new acquaintance were irresistibly attractive to Pierre.

“But if for any reason you don’t feel inclined to talk to me,” said the old man, “say so, my dear sir.” And he suddenly smiled, in an unexpected and tenderly paternal way.

“Oh no, not at all! On the contrary, I am very glad to make your acquaintance,” said Pierre. And again, glancing at the stranger’s hands, he looked more closely at the ring, with its skull—a Masonic sign.

“Allow me to ask,” he said, “are you a Mason?”

“Yes, I belong to the Brotherhood of the Freemasons,” said the stranger, looking deeper and deeper into Pierre’s eyes. “And in their name and my own, I hold out a brotherly hand to you.”

“I am afraid,” said Pierre, smiling, and wavering between the confidence the personality of the Freemason inspired in him and his own habit of ridiculing the Masonic beliefs—“I am afraid I am very far from understanding—how am I to put it?—I am afraid my way of looking at the world is so opposed to yours that we shall not understand one another.”

“I know your outlook,” said the Mason, “and the view of life you mention, and which you think is the result of your own mental efforts, is the one held by the majority of people, and is the invariable fruit of pride, indolence, and ignorance. Forgive me, my dear sir, but if I had not known it I should not have addressed you. Your view of life is a regrettable delusion.”

“Just as I may suppose you to be deluded,” said Pierre, with a faint smile.

“I should never dare to say that I know the truth,” said the Mason, whose words struck Pierre more and more by their precision and firmness. “No one can attain the truth by himself. Only by laying stone on stone with the cooperation of all, by the millions of generations from our forefather Adam to our own times, is that temple reared which is to be a worthy dwelling place of the Great God,” he added and closed his eyes.

“I ought to tell you that I do not believe... do not believe in God,” said Pierre, regretfully and with an effort, feeling it essential to speak the whole truth.

The Mason looked intently at Pierre and smiled as a rich man with millions in hand might smile at a poor fellow who told him that he, poor man, had not the five rubles that would make him happy.

“Yes, you do not know God, my dear sir,” said the Mason. “You cannot know God. You do not know Him and that is why you are unhappy.”

“Yes, yes, I am unhappy,” assented Pierre. “But what am I to do?”

“You know God not, my dear sir, and so you are very unhappy. You do not know God, but He is here, He is in me, He is in my words, He is in thee, and even in those blasphemous words thou hast just uttered!” pronounced the Mason in a stern and tremulous voice.

He paused and sighed, evidently trying to calm himself.

“If God were not,” the Mason said quietly, “you and I would not be speaking of Him, my dear sir. Of what, of whom, are we speaking? Whom hast thou denied?” he suddenly asked with exulting austerity and authority in his voice. “Who invented God, if He did not exist? Whence came to thy conception of the existence of such an incomprehensible Being? Didst thou, and why did the whole world, conceive the idea of the existence of such an incomprehensible God, a God all-powerful, eternal, and infinite in all His attributes?...”

The Mason stopped and remained silent for a long time.

Pierre could not and did not wish to break this silence.

“God exists, but to understand Him is hard,” the Mason began again, looking not at Pierre but straight before him, and turning the leaves of his book with his old hands which from excitement he could not keep still. “If it were a man whose existence thou didst doubt I could bring him to thee, could take him by the hand and show him to thee. But how can I, an insignificant mortal, show God’s omnipotence, His infinity, and all His mercy to one who is blind, or who shuts his eyes that he may not see or understand Him and may not see or understand his own vileness and sinfulness?” He paused again. “Who art thou? Thou dreamest that thou art wise because thou couldst utter those blasphemous words,” he went on, with a somber and scornful smile. “And thou art more foolish and unreasonable than a little child, who, playing with the parts of a skillfully made watch, dares to say that, as he does not understand its use, he does not believe in the master who made it. To know God is hard... For ages, from

our forefather Adam to our own day, we labor to attain that knowledge and are still infinitely far from our aim; but in our lack of understanding we see only our weakness and His greatness...”

Pierre listened with swelling heart, gazing into the Mason’s face with shining eyes, not interrupting or questioning him, but believing with his whole soul what the stranger said. Whether Pierre accepted the wise reasoning contained in the Mason’s words or believed as a child believes, in the speaker’s tone of conviction and earnestness, or the tremor of the speaker’s voice—which sometimes almost broke—or those brilliant aged eyes grown old in this conviction, or the calm firmness and certainty of his vocation, which radiated from his whole being (and which struck Pierre, especially by contrast with his own dejection and hopelessness)—at any rate, Pierre longed with his whole soul to believe and he did believe, and felt a joyful sense of comfort, regeneration, and return to life.

“God is not to be apprehended by reason, but by life,” said the Mason.

“I do not understand,” said Pierre, feeling with dismay doubts reawakening. He was afraid of any want of clearness, any weakness, in the Mason’s arguments; he dreaded not being able to believe in him. “I don’t understand,” he said, “how it is that the mind of man cannot attain the knowledge of which you speak.”

The Mason smiled with his gentle fatherly smile.

“The highest wisdom and truth are like the purest liquid we may wish to imbibe,” the Mason said. “Can I receive that pure liquid into an impure vessel and judge its purity? Only by the inner purification of myself can I retain in some degree of purity the liquid I receive.”

“Yes, yes, that is so,” said Pierre joyfully.

“The highest wisdom is not founded on reason alone, not on those worldly sciences of physics, history, chemistry, and the like, into which intellectual knowledge is divided. The highest wisdom is one. The highest wisdom has but one science—the science of the whole—the science

explaining the whole creation and man's place in it. To receive that science it is necessary to purify and renew one's inner self, and so before one can know, it is necessary to believe and to perfect one's self. And to attain this end, we have the light called conscience that God has implanted in our souls."

"Yes, yes," assented Pierre.

"Look then at thy inner self with the eyes of the spirit, and ask thyself whether thou art content with thyself. What hast thou attained relying on reason only? What art thou? You are young, you are rich, you are clever, and you are well-educated. And what have you done with all these good gifts? Are you content with yourself and with your life?"

"No, I hate my life," Pierre muttered, wincing.

"Thou hatest it. Then change it, purify thyself; and as thou art purified, thou wilt gain wisdom. Look at your life, my dear sir. How have you spent it? In riotous orgies and debauchery, receiving everything from society and giving nothing in return. You have become the possessor of wealth. How have you used it? What have you done for your neighbor? Have you ever thought of your tens of thousands of slaves? Have you helped them physically and morally? No! You have profited by their toil to lead a profligate life. That is what you have done. Have you chosen a post in which you might be of service to your neighbor? No! You have spent your life in idleness. Then you married, my dear sir—took on yourself responsibility for the guidance of a young woman; and what have you done? You have not helped her to find the way of truth, my dear sir, but have thrust her into an abyss of deceit and misery. A man offended you and you shot him, and you say you do not know God and hate your life. There is nothing strange in that, my dear sir!"

After these words, the Mason, as if tired by his long discourse, again leaned his arms on the back of the sofa and closed his eyes. Pierre looked at that aged, stern, motionless, almost lifeless face and moved his lips without

uttering a sound. He wished to say, "Yes, a vile, idle, vicious life!" but dared not break the silence.

The Mason cleared his throat huskily, as old men do, and called his servant.

"How about the horses?" the Mason asked, without looking at Pierre.

"The exchange horses have just come," answered the servant. "Will you not rest here?"

"No, tell them to harness."

"Can he really be going away leaving me alone without having told me all, and without promising to help me?" thought Pierre, rising with a downcast head; and he began to pace the room, glancing occasionally at the Mason. "Yes, I never thought of it, but I have led a contemptible and profligate life, though I did not like it and did not want to," thought Pierre. "But this man knows the truth and, if he wished to, could disclose it to me."

Pierre wished to say this to the Mason but did not dare to. The traveler, having packed his things with his practiced hands, began fastening his coat. When he had finished, he turned to Pierre, and said in a tone of indifferent politeness:

"Where are you going to now, my dear sir?"

"I?... I'm going to St. Petersburg," answered Pierre, in a childlike, hesitating voice. "I thank you. I agree with all you have said. But do not suppose me to be so bad. With my whole soul, I wish to be what you would have me be, but I have never had help from anyone... But it is I, above all, who am to blame for everything. Help me, teach me, and perhaps I may..."

Pierre could not go on. He gulped and turned away.

The Mason remained silent for a long time, evidently considering.

"Help comes from God alone," he said, "but such measure of help as our Order can bestow it will render you, my dear sir. You are going to St. Petersburg. Hand this to Willarski" (he took out his notebook and wrote a few words on a large sheet of paper folded in four). "Allow me to give you

a piece of advice. When you reach the capital, first of all, devote some time to solitude and self-examination, and do not resume your former way of life. And now I wish you a good journey, my dear sir," he added, seeing that his servant had entered... "and success."

The traveler was the Mason Bazdév, as Pierre saw from the postmaster's book. The Mason Bazdév had been one of the best-known Freemasons. For a long while after he had gone, Pierre did not go to bed or order horses but paced up and down the room, pondering over his vicious past, and with a rapturous sense of beginning anew pictured to himself the blissful, irreproachable, virtuous future that seemed to him so easy. It seemed to him that he had been vicious only because he had somehow forgotten how good it is to be virtuous. Not a trace of his former doubts remained in his soul. Pierre firmly believed in the possibility of the brotherhood of men united with the aim of supporting one another in the path of virtue, and that is how Freemasonry presented itself to him.

On reaching St. Petersburg Pierre did not let anyone know of his arrival, he went nowhere and spent whole days reading Thomas à Kempis, whose book had been sent to him by someone unknown. One thing he continually realized as he read that book: the joy, hitherto unknown to him, of believing in the possibility of attaining perfection, and in the possibility of active brotherly love among men, which the Mason Bazdév had revealed to him.

A week after his arrival, the young Polish count, Willarski, whom Pierre had known slightly in St. Petersburg society, came into his room one evening in the official and ceremonious manner in which Dolokhov's second had called on him, and, having closed the door behind him and satisfied himself that there was nobody else in the room, addressed Pierre.

"I have come to you with a message and an offer, Pierre," Willarski said without sitting down. "A person of very high standing in our Brotherhood has made an application for you to be received into our Order before the usual term and has proposed to me to be your sponsor. I consider it a sacred

duty to fulfill that person's wishes. Do you wish to enter the Brotherhood of Freemasons under my sponsorship?"

The cold, austere tone of Willarski, whom he had almost always before met at balls, amiably smiling in the society of the most brilliant women, surprised Pierre.

"Yes, I do wish it," said Pierre.

Willarski bowed his head.

"One more question, Pierre," he said, "which I beg you to answer in all sincerity—not as a future Mason but as an honest man: have you renounced your former convictions—do you believe in God?"

Pierre considered.

"Yes... yes, I believe in God," Pierre said.

"In that case..." began Willarski, but Pierre interrupted him.

"Yes, I do believe in God," he repeated.

"In that case, we can go," said Willarski. "My carriage is at your service."

Willarski was silent throughout the drive. To Pierre's inquiries as to what he must do and how he should answer, Willarski only replied that brothers are more worthy than he would test him and that Pierre had only to tell the truth.

Having entered the courtyard of a large house where the Lodge had its headquarters, and having ascended a dark staircase, they entered a small well-lit anteroom where they took off their cloaks without the aid of a servant. From there they passed into another room. A man in strange attire appeared at the door. Willarski, stepping toward him, said something to him in French in an undertone and then went up to a small wardrobe in which Pierre noticed garments such as he had never seen before. Having taken a kerchief from the cupboard, Willarski bound Pierre's eyes with it and tied it in a knot behind, catching some hairs painfully in the knot. Then he drew his face down, kissed him, and taking him by the hand led him forward. The

hairs tied in the knot hurt Pierre and there were lines of pain on his face and a shamefaced smile. His huge figure, with arms hanging down and with a puckered, though smiling face, moved after Willarski with uncertain, timid steps.

Having led him about ten paces, Willarski stopped.

“Whatever happens to you,” Willarski said, “you must bear it all manfully if you have firmly resolved to join our Brotherhood.” (Pierre nodded affirmatively.) “When you hear a knock at the door, you will uncover your eyes,” added Willarski. “I wish you courage and success,” and, pressing Pierre’s hand, he went out.

Left alone, Pierre went on smiling in the same way. Once or twice he shrugged his shoulders and raised his hand to the kerchief as if wishing to take it off but let it drop again. The five minutes spent with his eyes bandaged seemed to him an hour. His arms felt numb, his legs almost gave way, and it seemed to him that he was tired out. He experienced a variety of the most complex sensations. He felt afraid of what would happen to him and still more afraid of showing his fear. He felt curious to know what was going to happen and what would be revealed to him; but most of all, he felt joyful that the moment had come when he would at last start on that path of regeneration and on the actively virtuous life of which he had been dreaming since he met the Mason Bazdéev. Loud knocks were heard at the door. Pierre took the bandage off his eyes and glanced around him. The room was in black darkness, only a small lamp was burning inside something white. Pierre went nearer and saw that the lamp stood on a black table on which lay an open book. The book was the Gospel, and the white thing with the lamp inside was a human skull with cavities and teeth. After reading the first words of the Gospel: “In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God,” Pierre went round the table and saw a large open box filled with something. It was a coffin with bones inside. He was not at all surprised by what he saw. Hoping to enter an entirely new life quite

unlike the old one, he expected everything to be unusual, even more unusual than what he was seeing. A skull, a coffin, the Gospel—it seemed to him that he had expected all this and even more. Trying to stimulate his emotions he looked around. “God, death, love, the brotherhood of man,” he kept saying to himself, associating these words with vague yet joyful ideas. The door opened and someone came in.

By the dim light, to which Pierre had already become accustomed, he saw a rather short man. Having evidently come from the light into the darkness, the man paused, then moved with cautious steps toward the table and placed on it his small leather-gloved hands.

This short man had on a white leather apron that covered his chest and part of his legs; he had on a kind of necklace above which rose a high white ruffle, outlining his rather long face which was lit up from below.

“For what have you come hither?” asked the newcomer, turning in Pierre’s direction at a slight rustle made by the latter. “Why have you, who do not believe in the truth of the light and who have not seen the light, come here? What do you seek from us? Wisdom, virtue, enlightenment?”

At the moment the door opened and the stranger came in, Pierre felt a sense of awe and veneration such as he had experienced in his boyhood at confession; he felt in the presence of one socially a complete stranger, yet nearer to him through the brotherhood of man. With bated breath and beating heart, he moved toward the Rhetor (by which name the brother who prepared a seeker for entrance into the Brotherhood was known). Drawing nearer, he recognized in the Rhetor a man he knew, Smolyanínov, and it mortified him to think that the newcomer was an acquaintance—he wished him simply a brother and a virtuous instructor. For a long time, he could not utter a word, so the Rhetor had to repeat his question.

“Yes... I... I... desire regeneration,” Pierre uttered with difficulty.

“Very well,” said the Rhetor, and went on at once: “Have you any idea of the means by which our holy Order will help you to reach your aim?”

said he quietly and quickly.

“I... hope... for guidance... help... in regeneration,” said Pierre, with a trembling voice and some difficulty in utterance due to his excitement and being unaccustomed to speaking of abstract matters in Russian.

“What is your conception of Freemasonry?”

“I imagine that Freemasonry is the fraternity and equality of men who have virtuous aims,” said Pierre, feeling ashamed of the inadequacy of his words for the solemnity of the moment, as he spoke. “I imagine...”

“Good!” said the Rhetor quickly, apparently satisfied with this answer. “Have you sought for means of attaining your aim in religion?”

“No, I considered it erroneous and did not follow it,” said Pierre, so softly that the Rhetor did not hear him and asked him what he was saying. “I have been an atheist,” answered Pierre.

“You are seeking truth in order to follow its laws in your life, therefore you seek wisdom and virtue. Is that not so?” said the Rhetor, after a moment’s pause.

“Yes, yes,” assented Pierre.

The Rhetor cleared his throat, crossed his gloved hands on his breast, and began to speak.

“Now I must disclose to you the chief aim of our Order,” the Rhetor said, “and if this aim coincides with yours, you may enter our Brotherhood with profit. The first and chief object of our Order, the foundation on which it rests and which no human power can destroy, is the preservation and handing on to posterity of a certain important mystery... which has come down to us from the remotest ages, even from the first man—a mystery on which perhaps the fate of mankind depends. But since this mystery is of such a nature that nobody can know or use it unless he is prepared by long and diligent self-purification, not everyone can hope to attain it quickly. Hence we have a secondary aim, that of preparing our members as much as possible to reform their hearts, to purify and enlighten their minds, by

means handed on to us by tradition from those who have striven to attain this mystery, and thereby to render them capable of receiving it.

“By purifying and regenerating our members we try, thirdly, to improve the whole human race, offering it in our members an example of piety and virtue, and thereby try with all our might to combat the evil which sways the world. Think this over and I will come to you again.”

“To combat the evil which sways the world...” Pierre repeated, and a mental image of his future activity in this direction rose in his mind. He imagined men such as he had himself been a fortnight ago, and he addressed an edifying exhortation to them. He imagined to himself vicious and unfortunate people whom he would assist by word and deed, imagined oppressors whose victims he would rescue. Of the three objects mentioned by the Rhetor, this last, that of improving mankind, especially appealed to Pierre. The important mystery mentioned by the Rhetor, though it aroused his curiosity, did not seem to him essential, and the second aim, that of purifying and regenerating himself, did not much interest him because at that moment he felt with delight that he was already perfectly cured of his former faults and was ready for all that was good.

Half an hour later, the Rhetor returned to inform the seeker of the seven virtues, corresponding to the seven steps of Solomon’s temple, which every Freemason should cultivate in himself. These virtues were: 1. *Discretion*, the keeping of the secrets of the Order. 2. *Obedience* to those of higher ranks in the Order. 3. *Morality*. 4. *Love of mankind*. 5. *Courage*. 6. *Generosity*. 7. *The love of death*.

“In the seventh place, try, by the frequent thought of death,” the Rhetor said, “to bring yourself to regard it not as a dreaded foe, but as a friend that frees the soul grown weary in the labors of virtue from this distressful life, and leads it to its place of recompense and peace.”

“Yes, that must be so,” thought Pierre, when after these words the Rhetor went away, leaving him to solitary meditation. “It must be so, but I

am still so weak that I love my life, the meaning of which is only now gradually opening before me.” But five of the other virtues which Pierre recalled, counting them on his fingers, he felt already in his soul: *courage*, *generosity*, *morality*, *love of mankind*, and especially *obedience*—which did not even seem to him a virtue, but a joy. (Pierre now felt so glad to be free from his own lawlessness and to submit his will to those who knew the indubitable truth.) He forgot what the seventh virtue was and could not recall it.

The third time the Rhetor came back more quickly and asked Pierre whether he was still firm in his intention and determined to submit to all that would be required of him.

“I am ready for everything,” said Pierre.

“I must also inform you,” said the Rhetor, “that our Order delivers its teaching not in words only but also by other means, which may perhaps have a stronger effect on the sincere seeker after wisdom and virtue than mere words. This chamber with what you see therein should already have suggested to your heart, if it is sincere, more than words could do. You will perhaps also see in your further initiation a like method of enlightenment. Our Order imitates the ancient societies that explained their teaching by hieroglyphics. A hieroglyph,” said the Rhetor, “is an emblem of something not cognizable by the senses but which possesses qualities resembling those of the symbol.”

Pierre knew very well what a hieroglyph was, but dared not speak. He listened to the Rhetor in silence, feeling from all he said that his ordeal was about to begin.

“If you are resolved, I must begin your initiation,” said the Rhetor coming closer to Pierre. “In token of generosity, I ask you to give me all your valuables.”

“But I have nothing here,” replied Pierre, supposing that he was asked to give up all he possessed.

“What you have with you: watch, money, rings...”

Pierre quickly took out his purse and watch, but could not manage for some time to get the wedding ring off his fat finger. When that had been done, the Rhetor said:

“In token of obedience, I ask you to undress.”

Pierre took off his coat, waistcoat, and left boot according to the Rhetor’s instructions. The Rhetor drew the shirt back from Pierre’s left breast and stooping down pulled up the left leg of his trousers to above the knee. Pierre hurriedly began taking off his right boot also and was going to tuck up the other trouser leg to save him the trouble, but the Rhetor told him that was not necessary and gave him a slipper for his left foot. With a childlike smile of embarrassment, doubt, and self-derision, which appeared on his face against his will, Pierre stood with his arms hanging down and legs apart, before his brother Rhetor, and awaited his further commands.

“And now, in token of candor, I ask you to reveal to me your chief passion,” said the Rhetor.

“My passion! I have had so many,” replied Pierre.

“That passion which more than all others caused you to waver on the path of virtue,” said the Rhetor.

Pierre paused, seeking a reply.

“Wine? Gluttony? Idleness? Laziness? Irritability? Anger? Women?” He went over his vices in his mind, not knowing to which of them to give the pre-eminence.

“Women,” Pierre said in a low, scarcely audible voice.

The Rhetor did not move and for a long time said nothing after this answer. At last, he moved up to Pierre and, taking the kerchief that lay on the table, again bound his eyes.

“For the last time I say to you—turn all your attention upon yourself, put a bridle on your senses, and seek blessedness, not in passion but in your own heart. The source of blessedness is not without us but within...”

Pierre had already long been feeling in himself that refreshing source of blessedness which now flooded his heart with glad emotion.

Soon after this, there came into the dark chamber to fetch Pierre, not the Rhetor but Pierre's sponsor, Willarski, whom he recognized by his voice. To fresh questions as to the firmness of his resolution Pierre replied: "Yes, yes, I agree," and with a beaming, childlike smile, his fat chest uncovered, stepping unevenly and timidly in one slippered and one booted foot, he advanced, while Willarski held a sword to his bare chest. He was conducted from that room along passages that turned backward and forwards and was at last brought to the doors of the Lodge. Willarski coughed, he was answered by the Masonic knock with mallets, and the doors opened before them. A bass voice (Pierre was still blindfolded) questioned him as to who he was, when and where he was born, and so on. Then he was again led somewhere still blindfolded, and as they went along he was told allegories of the toils of his pilgrimage, of holy friendship, of the Eternal Architect of the universe, and of the courage with which he should endure toils and dangers. During these wanderings, Pierre noticed that he was spoken of now as the "Seeker," now as the "Sufferer," and now as the "Postulant," to the accompaniment of various knockings with mallets and swords. As he was being led up to some object he noticed a hesitation and uncertainty among his conductors. He heard those around him disputing in whispers and one of them insisting that he should be led along a certain carpet. After that, they took his right hand, placed it on something, and told him to hold a pair of compasses to his left breast with the other hand and to repeat after someone who read aloud an oath of fidelity to the laws of the Order. The candles were then extinguished and some spirit lighted, as Pierre knew by the smell, and he was told that he would now see the lesser light. The bandage was taken off his eyes and, by the faint light of the burning spirit, Pierre, as in a dream, saw several men standing before him, wearing aprons like the Rhetor's and holding swords in their hands pointed at his breast.

Among them stood a man whose white shirt was stained with blood. On seeing this, Pierre moved forward with his breast toward the swords, meaning them to pierce it. But the swords were drawn back from him and he was at once blindfolded again.

“Now thou hast seen the lesser light,” uttered a voice. Then the candles were relit and he was told that he would see the full light; the bandage was again removed and more than ten voices said together: “*Thus passes the glory of the world.*”

Pierre gradually began to recover himself and looked about at the room and at the people in it. Round a long table covered with black sat some twelve men in garments like those he had already seen. Some of them Pierre had met in St. Petersburg society. In the President’s chair sat a young man he did not know, with a peculiar cross hanging from his neck. On his right sat the Italian abbot whom Pierre had met at Anna Pavlovna’s two years before. There were also present a very distinguished dignitary and a Swiss who had formerly been a tutor at Baron Vasili’s. All maintained a solemn silence, listening to the words of the President, who held a mallet in his hand. Let into the wall was a star-shaped light. At one side of the table was a small carpet with various figures worked upon it, at the other was something resembling an altar on which lay a Testament and a skull. Round it stood seven large candlesticks like those used in churches. Two of the brothers led Pierre up to the altar, placed his feet at right angles, and bade him lie down, saying that he must prostrate himself at the Gates of the Temple.

“He must first receive the trowel,” whispered one of the brothers.

“Oh, hush, please!” said another.

Pierre, perplexed, looked round with his shortsighted eyes without obeying, and suddenly doubts arose in his mind. “Where am I? What am I doing? Aren’t they laughing at me? Shan’t I be ashamed to remember this?” But these doubts only lasted a moment. Pierre glanced at the serious faces

of those around, remembered all he had already gone through, and realized that he could not stop halfway. He was aghast at his hesitation and, trying to arouse his former devotional feeling, prostrated himself before the Gates of the Temple. And really, the feeling of devotion returned to him even more strongly than before. When he had lain there some time, he was told to get up, and a white leather apron, such as the others wore, was put on him: he was given a trowel and three pairs of gloves, and then the Grand Master addressed him. He told Pierre that he should try to do nothing to stain the whiteness of that apron, which symbolized strength and purity; then of the unexplained trowel, he told him to toil with it to cleanse his own heart from vice, and indulgently to smooth with it the heart of his neighbor. As to the first pair of gloves, a man's, he said that Pierre could not know their meaning but must keep them. The second pair of man's gloves he was to wear at the meetings, and finally of the third, a pair of women's gloves, he said: "Dear brother, these woman's gloves are intended for you too. Give them to the woman whom you shall honor most of all. This gift will be a pledge of your purity of heart to her whom you select to be your worthy helpmeet in Masonry." And after a pause, he added: "But beware, dear brother, that these gloves do not deck hands that are unclean." While the Grand Master said these last words it seemed to Pierre that he grew embarrassed. Pierre himself grew still more confused, blushed like a child till tears came to his eyes, began looking about him uneasily, and an awkward pause followed.

This silence was broken by one of the brethren, who led Pierre up to the rug and began reading to him from a manuscript book an explanation of all the figures on it: the sun, the moon, a hammer, a plumb line, a trowel, a rough stone, and a squared stone, a pillar, three windows, and so on. Then a place was assigned to Pierre, he was shown the signs of the Lodge, told the password, and at last, was permitted to sit down. The Grand Master began reading the statutes. They were very long, and Pierre, from joy, agitation,

and embarrassment, was not in a state to understand what was being read. He managed to follow only the last words of the statutes and these remained in his mind.

“In our temples, we recognize no other distinctions,” read the Grand Master, “but those between virtue and vice. Beware of making any distinctions that may infringe on equality. Fly to a brother’s aid whoever he may be, exhort him who goeth astray, raise him that falleth, never bear malice or enmity toward thy brother. Be kind and courteous. Kindle in all hearts the flame of virtue. Share thy happiness with thy neighbor, and may envy never dim the purity of that bliss. Forgive thy enemy, do not avenge thyself except by doing him good. Thus fulfilling the highest law thou shalt regain traces of the ancient dignity which thou hast lost.”

The Grand Master finished and, getting up, embraced and kissed Pierre, who, with tears of joy in his eyes, looked around him, not knowing how to answer the congratulations and greetings from acquaintances that met him on all sides. He acknowledged no acquaintances but saw in all these men only brothers, and burned with impatience to set to work with them.

The Grand Master rapped with his mallet. All the Masons sat down in their places, and one of them read an exhortation on the necessity of humility.

The Grand Master proposed that the last duty should be performed, and the distinguished dignitary who bore the title of “Collector of Alms” went round to all the brothers. Pierre would have liked to subscribe all he had, but fearing that it might look like pride subscribed the same amount as the others.

The meeting was at an end, and on reaching home Pierre felt as if he had returned from a long journey on which he had spent dozens of years, had become completely changed, and had quite left behind his former habits and way of life.

The day after Pierre had been received into the Lodge, he was sitting at home reading a book and trying to fathom the significance of the Square, one side of which symbolized God, another moral things, a third physical things, and the fourth a combination of these. Now and then his attention wandered from the book and the Square and he formed in imagination a new plan of life. On the previous evening at the Lodge, he had heard that a rumor of his duel had reached the Tzar and that it would be wiser for him to leave St. Petersburg. Pierre proposed going to his estates in the south and there attending to the welfare of his serfs.

He was joyfully planning this new life when Baron Vasili suddenly entered the room.

“My dear Pierre, what have you been up to in Moscow? Why have you quarreled with Helene, *my dear*? You are under a delusion,” said Baron Vasili, as he entered. “I know all about it, and I can tell you positively that Helene is as innocent before you as Christ was before the Jews.”

Pierre was about to reply, but Baron Vasili interrupted him.

“And why didn’t you simply come straight to me as to a friend? I know all about it and understand it all,” Baron Vasili said. “You behaved as becomes a man who values his honor, perhaps too hastily, but we won’t go into that. But consider the position in which you are placing her and me in the eyes of society, and even of the court,” he added, lowering his voice. “She is living in Moscow and you are here. Remember, dear boy,” and he drew Pierre’s arm downwards, “it is simply a misunderstanding. I expect you feel it so yourself. Let us write her a letter at once, and she’ll come here and all will be explained, or else, my dear boy, let me tell you it’s quite likely you’ll have to suffer for it.”

Baron Vasili gave Pierre a significant look.

“I know from reliable sources that the Mother of the Tzar is taking a keen interest in the whole affair. You know she is very gracious to Helene.”

Pierre tried several times to speak, but, on one hand, Baron Vasili did not let him and, on the other, Pierre himself feared to begin to speak in the tone of decided refusal and disagreement in which he had firmly resolved to answer his father-in-law. Moreover, the words of the Masonic statutes, “be kindly and courteous,” recurred to him. Pierre blinked, went red, got up, and sat down again, struggling with himself to do what was for him the most difficult thing in life—to say an unpleasant thing to a man’s face, to say what the other, whoever he might be, did not expect. He was so used to submitting to Baron Vasili’s tone of careless self-assurance that he felt he would be unable to withstand it now, but he also felt that on what he said now his future depended—whether he would follow the same old road, or that new path so attractively shown him by the Masons, on which he firmly believed he would be reborn to a new life.

“Now, dear Pierre,” said Baron Vasili playfully, “say ‘yes,’ and I’ll write to her myself, and we will kill the fatted calf.”

But before Baron Vasili had finished his playful speech, Pierre, without looking at him, and with a kind of fury that made him like his father, muttered in a whisper:

“Baron Vasili, I did not ask you here. Go, please go!” And Pierre jumped up and opened the door for him.

“Go!” Pierre repeated, amazed at himself and glad to see the look of confusion and fear that showed itself on Baron Vasili’s face.

“What’s the matter with you? Are you ill?”

“Go!” Pierre repeated in a quivering voice. And Baron Vasili had to go without receiving any explanation.

A week later, Pierre, having taken leave of his new friends, the Masons, and leaving large sums of money with them for alms, went away to his estates. Pierre’s new brethren gave him letters to the Kiev and Odessa Masons and promised to write to him and guide him in his new activity.

The duel between Pierre and Dolokhov was hushed up and, in spite of the Tzar's severity regarding duels at that time, neither the principals nor their seconds suffered for it. But the story of the duel, confirmed by Pierre's rupture with Helene, was the talk of society. Pierre who had been regarded with patronizing condescension when he was an illegitimate son, and petted and extolled when he was the best match in Russia, had sunk greatly in the esteem of society after his marriage—when the marriageable daughters and their mothers had nothing to hope from him—especially as he did not know how, and did not wish, to court society's favor. Now Pierre alone was blamed for what had happened, he was said to be insanely jealous and subject like his father to fits of bloodthirsty rage. And when, after Pierre's departure, Helene returned to St. Petersburg, she was received by all her acquaintances not only cordially, but even with a shade of deference due to her misfortune. When the conversation turned on her husband Helene assumed a dignified expression, which with characteristic tact she had acquired though she did not understand its significance. This expression suggested that she had resolved to endure her troubles uncomplainingly and that her husband was a cross laid upon her by God.

Baron Vasili expressed his opinion more openly. He shrugged his shoulders when Pierre was mentioned and, pointing to his forehead, remarked:

“A bit touched—I always said so.”

“I said from the first,” declared Anna Pavlovna referring to Pierre, “I said at the time and before anyone else” (she insisted on her priority) “that that senseless young man was spoiled by the depraved ideas of these days. I said so even at the time when everybody was in raptures about him, when he had just returned from abroad, and when, if you remember, he posed as a sort of Marat at one of my soirees. And how has it ended? I was against this marriage even then and foretold all that has happened.”

Anna Pavlovna continued to give on free evenings the same kind of soirees as before—such as she alone had the gift of arranging—at which was to be found “the cream of really good society, the bloom of the intellectual essence of St. Petersburg,” as she herself put it. Besides this refined selection of society, Anna Pavlovna’s receptions were also distinguished by the fact that she always presented some new and interesting person to the visitors and that nowhere else was the state of the political thermometer of legitimate St. Petersburg court society so dearly and distinctly indicated.

Toward the end of 1806, when all the sad details of Napoleon’s destruction of the Prussian army at Jena and Auerstädt and the surrender of most of the Prussian fortresses had been received, when our troops had already entered Prussia and our second war with Napoleon was beginning, Anna Pavlovna gave one of her soirees. The “cream of really good society” consisted of the fascinating Helene, forsaken by Pierre, Mortemart, the delightful Hippolyte who had just returned from Vienna, two diplomatists, the old aunt, a young man referred to in that drawing room as “a man of great merit” (*un homme de beaucoup de mérite*), a newly appointed maid of honor and her mother, and several other less noteworthy persons.

The novelty Anna Pavlovna was setting before her guests that evening was Boris, who had just arrived as a special messenger from the Prussian army and was aide-de-camp to a very important personage.

The temperature shown by the political thermometer to the company that evening was this:

“Whatever the European sovereigns and commanders may do to countenance Napoleon and to cause *me*, and *us* in general, annoyance and mortification, our opinion of Napoleon cannot alter. We shall not cease to express our sincere views on that subject and can only say to the King of Prussia and others: ‘So much the worse for you. *Tis your own fault, George Dandin,*’ that’s all we have to say about it!”

When Boris, who was to be served up to the guests, entered the drawing room, almost all the company had assembled, and the conversation, guided by Anna Pavlovna, was about our diplomatic relations with Austria and the hope of an alliance with her.

Boris, grown more manly and looking fresh, rosy, and self-possessed, entered the drawing room elegantly dressed in the uniform of an aide-de-camp and was duly conducted to pay his respects to the aunt and then brought back to the general circle.

Anna Pavlovna gave Boris her shriveled hand to kiss and introduced him to several persons whom he did not know, giving him a whispered description of each.

“Hippolyte—charming young fellow; M. Kronq,—chargé d’affaires from Copenhagen—a profound intellect,” and simply, “Mr. Shítov—a man of great merit”—this of the man usually so described.

Thanks to Widow Drubetskoy’s efforts, his own tastes, and the peculiarities of his reserved nature, Boris had managed during his service to place himself very advantageously. Boris was aide-de-camp to a very important personage, had been sent on a very important mission to Prussia, and had just returned from there as a special messenger. He had become thoroughly conversant with that unwritten code with which he had been so pleased at Olmütz and according to which an ensign might rank incomparably higher than a general, and according to which what was needed for success in the service was not effort or work, or courage, or perseverance, but only the knowledge of how to get on with those who can grant rewards, and he was himself often surprised at the rapidity of his success and at the inability of others to understand these things. As a consequence of this discovery his whole manner of life, all of Boris’s relations with old friends, and all his plans for his future, were completely altered. He was not rich, but would spend his last groat to be better dressed than others, and would rather deprive himself of many pleasures than allow

himself to be seen in a shabby equipage or appear in the streets of St. Petersburg in an old uniform. Boris made friends with and sought the acquaintance of only those above him in position and who could therefore be of use to him. He liked St. Petersburg and despised Moscow. The remembrance of the Rostovs' house and of his childish love for Natasha was unpleasant to him and he had not once been to see the Rostovs since the day of his departure for the army. To be in Anna Pavlovna's drawing room he considered an important step up in the service, and he at once understood his role, letting his hostess make use of whatever interest he had to offer. Boris himself carefully scanned each face, appraising the possibilities of establishing intimacy with each of those present, and the advantages that might accrue. He took the seat indicated to him beside the fair Helene and listened to the general conversation.

"Vienna considers the bases of the proposed treaty so unattainable that not even a continuity of most brilliant successes would secure them, and she doubts the means we have of gaining them. That is the actual phrase used by the Vienna cabinet," said the Danish chargé d'affaires.

"The doubt is flattering," said "the man of profound intellect," with a subtle smile.

"We must distinguish between the Vienna cabinet and the Emperor of Austria," said Mortemart. "The Emperor of Austria can never have thought of such a thing, it is only the cabinet that says it."

"Ah, my dear viscount," put in Anna Pavlovna, "*L'Urope*" (for some reason she called it *Urope* as if that were a specially refined French pronunciation which she could allow herself when conversing with a Frenchman), "*L'Urope will never be our sincere ally.*"

After that Anna Pavlovna led up to the courage and firmness of the King of Prussia, in order to draw Boris into the conversation.

Boris listened attentively to each of the speakers, awaiting his turn, but managed meanwhile to look round repeatedly at his neighbor, the beautiful

Helene, whose eyes several times met those of the handsome young aide-de-camp with a smile.

Speaking of the position of Prussia, Anna Pavlovna very naturally asked Boris to tell them about his journey to Glogau and in what state he found the Prussian army. Boris, speaking with deliberation, told them in pure, correct French many interesting details about the armies and the court, carefully abstaining from expressing an opinion of his own about the facts he was recounting. For some time he engrossed the general attention, and Anna Pavlovna felt that the novelty she had served up was received with pleasure by all her visitors.

The greatest attention of all to Boris' narrative was shown by Helene. She asked him several questions about his journey and seemed greatly interested in the state of the Prussian army. As soon as Boris had finished she turned to him with her usual smile.

"You absolutely must come and see me," Helene said in a tone that implied that, for certain considerations he could not know of, this was absolutely necessary.

"On Tuesday between eight and nine. It will give me great pleasure."

Boris promised to fulfill her wish and was about to begin a conversation with her when Anna Pavlovna called him away on the pretext that her aunt wished to hear him.

"You know Helene's husband, of course?" said Anna Pavlovna, closing her eyes and indicating Helene with a sorrowful gesture. "Ah, Helene is such an unfortunate and charming woman! Don't mention Pierre before her—please don't! It is too painful for her!"

When Boris and Anna Pavlovna returned to the others Hippolyte had the ear of the company.

Bending forward in his armchair he said: "*Le Roi de Prusse!*" and having said this laughed. Everyone turned toward him.

“*Le Roi de Prusse?*” Hippolyte said interrogatively, again laughing, and then calmly and seriously sat back in his chair. Anna Pavlovna waited for him to go on, but as he seemed quite decided to say no more she began to tell of how at Potsdam the impious Napoleon had stolen the sword of Frederick the Great.

“It is the sword of Frederick the Great which I...” she began, but Hippolyte interrupted her with the words: “*Le Roi de Prusse...*” and again, as soon as all turned toward him, excused himself and said no more.

Anna Pavlovna frowned. Mortemart, Hippolyte’s friend, addressed him firmly.

“Come now, what about your *Roi de Prusse?*”

Hippolyte laughed as if ashamed of laughing.

“Oh, it’s nothing. I only wished to say...” (he wanted to repeat a joke he had heard in Vienna and which he had been trying all that evening to get in) “I only wished to say that we are wrong to fight *pour le Roi de Prusse!*”

Boris smiled circumspectly so that it might be taken as ironical or appreciative according to the way the joke was received. Everybody laughed.

“Your joke is too bad, it’s witty but unjust,” said Anna Pavlovna, shaking her little shriveled finger at him.

“We are not fighting *pour le Roi de Prusse*, but for right principles. Oh, that wicked Hippolyte!” she said.

The conversation did not flag all evening and turned chiefly on the political news. It became particularly animated toward the end of the evening when the rewards bestowed by the Tzar were mentioned.

“You know N— N— received a snuffbox with the portrait last year?” said “the man of profound intellect.” “Why shouldn’t S— S— get the same distinction?”

“Pardon me! A snuffbox with the Tzar’s portrait is a reward but not a distinction,” said the diplomatist—“a gift, rather.”

“There are precedents, I may mention Schwarzenberg.”

“It’s impossible,” replied another.

“Will you bet? The ribbon of the order is a different matter...”

When everybody rose to go, Helene who had spoken very little all the evening again turned to Boris, asking him in a tone of caressing significant command to come to her on Tuesday.

“It is of great importance to me,” Helene said, turning with a smile toward Anna Pavlovna, and Anna Pavlovna, with the same sad smile with which she spoke of her exalted patroness, supported Helene’s wish.

It seemed as if from some words Boris had spoken that evening about the Prussian army, Helene had suddenly found it necessary to see him. She seemed to promise to explain that necessity to him when he came on Tuesday.

But on Tuesday evening, having come to Helene’s splendid salon, Boris received no clear explanation of why it had been necessary for him to come. There were other guests and Helene talked little to him, and only as he kissed her hand on taking leave said unexpectedly and in a whisper, with a strangely unsmiling face: “Come to dinner tomorrow... in the evening. You must come... Come!”

During that stay in St. Petersburg, Boris became an intimate in Helene’s house.

The war was flaming up and nearing the Russian frontier. Everywhere one heard curses on Napoleon, “the enemy of mankind.” Militiamen and recruits were being enrolled in the villages, and from the seat of war came contradictory news, false as usual and therefore variously interpreted. The life of Baron Bolkonski, Andrei, and Marya had greatly changed since 1805.

In 1806 Baron Bolkonski was made one of the eight commanders in chief then appointed to supervise the enrollment decreed throughout Russia. Despite the weakness of age, which had become particularly noticeable

since the time when he thought his son had been killed, he did not think it right to refuse a duty to which he had been appointed by the Tzar himself, and this fresh opportunity for action gave him new energy and strength. Baron Bolkonski was continually traveling through the three provinces entrusted to him, was pedantic in the fulfillment of his duties, severe to cruel with his subordinates, and went into everything down to the minutest details himself. Marya had ceased taking lessons in mathematics from her father, and when Baron Bolkonski was at home went to his study with the wet nurse and little Baron Nicholas (as his grandfather called him). The baby Nikolenka lived with his wet nurse and nurse Sávishna and Marya spent most of the day in the nursery, taking a mother's place for her little nephew as best she could. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, too, seemed passionately fond of the boy, and Marya often deprived herself to give her friend the pleasure of dandling the little *angel*—as she called her nephew—and playing with him.

Near the altar of the church at Bald Hills there was a chapel over the tomb of Lise, and in this chapel was a marble monument brought from Italy, representing an angel with outspread wings ready to fly upwards. The angel's upper lip was slightly raised as though about to smile, and once on coming out of the chapel Andrei and Marya admitted to one another that the angel's face reminded them strangely of Lise. But what was still stranger, though of this Andrei said nothing to his sister, was that in the expression the sculptor had happened to give the angel's face, Andrei read the same mild reproach he had read on the face of his dead wife: "Ah, why have you done this to me?"

Soon after Andrei's return Baron Bolkonski gave Andrei a large estate, Boguchárovo, about twenty-five miles from Bald Hills. Partly because of the depressing memories associated with Bald Hills, partly because Andrei did not always feel equal to bearing with his father's peculiarities, and

partly because he needed solitude, Andrei made use of Boguchárovo, began building and spent most of his time there.

After the Austerlitz campaign, Andrei firmly resolved not to continue his military service, and when the war recommenced and everybody had to serve, he took a post under his father in the recruitment so as to avoid active service. Baron Bolkonski and Andrei seemed to have changed roles since the campaign of 1805. Baron Bolkonski, roused by activity, expected the best results from the new campaign, while Andrei on the contrary, taking no part in the war and secretly regretting this, saw only the dark side.

On February 26, 1807, Baron Bolkonski set off on one of his circuits. Andrei remained at Bald Hills as usual during his father's absence. Andrei's young soon Nikolenka had been unwell for four days. The coachman who had driven Baron Bolkonski to town returned bringing papers and letters for Andrei.

Not finding Andrei in his study the valet went with the letters to Marya's apartments but did not find him there. He was told that Andrei had gone to the nursery.

"If you please, your excellency, the coachman has brought some papers," said one of the nursemaids to Andrei who was sitting on a child's little chair while, frowning and with trembling hands, he poured drops from a medicine bottle into a wineglass half full of water.

"What is it?" Andrei said crossly, and, his hand shaking unintentionally, he poured too many drops into the glass. He threw the mixture onto the floor and asked for some more water. The maid brought it.

There were in the room a child's cot, two boxes, two armchairs, a table, a child's table, and the little chair on which Andrei was sitting. The curtains were drawn, and a single candle was burning on the table, screened by a bound music book so that the light did not fall on the cot.

"My dear," said Marya, addressing Andrei from beside the cot where she was standing, "better wait a bit... later..."

“Oh, leave off, you always talk nonsense and keep putting things off—and this is what comes of it!” said Andrei in an exasperated whisper, evidently meaning to wound his sister.

“My dear, really... it’s better not to wake him... he’s asleep,” said Marya in a tone of entreaty.

Andrei got up and went on tiptoe up to the little bed, wineglass in hand.

“Perhaps we’d really better not wake him,” Andrei said hesitating.

“As you please... really... I think so... but as you please,” said Marya, evidently intimidated and confused that her opinion had prevailed. She drew her brother’s attention to the maid who was calling him in a whisper.

It was the second night that neither of them had slept, watching Nikolenka who was in a high fever. These last days, mistrusting their household doctor and expecting another for whom they had sent to town, they had been trying first one remedy and then another. Worn out by sleeplessness and anxiety they threw their burden of sorrow on one another and reproached and disputed with each other.

“The coachman has come with papers from your father,” whispered the maid.

Andrei went out.

“Devil take them!” he muttered, and after listening to the verbal instructions his father had sent and taking the correspondence and his father’s letter, he returned to the nursery.

“Well?” Andrei asked.

“Still the same. Wait, for heaven’s sake. The doctor always says that sleep is more important than anything,” whispered Marya with a sigh.

Andrei went up to the child and felt him. He was burning hot.

“Confound you and your doctor!” He took the glass with the drops and again went up to the cot.

“Andrei, don’t!” said Marya.

But Andrei scowled at her angrily though also with suffering in his eyes and stooped glass in hand over the infant Nikolenka.

“But I wish it,” Andrei said. “I beg you—give it to him!”

Marya shrugged her shoulders but took the glass submissively and calling the nurse began giving the medicine. The child screamed hoarsely. Andrei winced and, clutching his head, went out and sat down on a sofa in the next room.

Andrei still had all the letters in his hand. Opening them mechanically he began reading. Baron Bolkonski, now and then using abbreviations, wrote in his large elongated hand on blue paper as follows:

Have just this moment received by special messenger very joyful news—if it’s not false. General Bennigsen seems to have obtained a complete victory over Napoleon at Eylau. In St. Petersburg everyone is rejoicing, and the rewards sent to the army are innumerable. Though he is a German—I congratulate him! I can’t make out what the commander at Kórchevo—a certain Khandrikóv—is up to; till now the additional men and provisions have not arrived. Gallop off to him at once and say I’ll have his head off if everything is not here in a week. Have received another letter about the Preussisch-Eylau battle from Pétenka—he took part in it—and it’s all true. When mischief-makers don’t meddle, then even a German beats Napoleon. He is said to be fleeing in great disorder. Mind you gallop off to Kórchevo without delay and carry out instructions!

Andrei sighed and broke the seal of another envelope. It was a closely written letter of two sheets from Adjutant Bilibin. Andrei folded it up without reading it and reread his father’s letter, ending with the words: “Gallop off to Kórchevo and carry out instructions!”

“No, pardon me, I won’t go now till the child is better,” thought Andrei, going to the door and looking into the nursery.

Marya was still standing by the cot, gently rocking the baby.

“Ah yes, and what else did he say that’s unpleasant?” thought Andrei, recalling his father’s letter. “Yes, we have gained a victory over Napoleon, just when I’m not serving. Yes, yes, he’s always poking fun at me... Ah, well! Let him!” And Andrei began reading Adjutant Bilibin’s letter which was written in French. He read without understanding half of it, read only to forget, if but for a moment, what he had too long been thinking of so painfully to the exclusion of all else.

Adjutant Bilibin was now at army headquarters in a diplomatic capacity, and though he wrote in French and used French jests and French idioms, he described the whole campaign with a fearless self-censure and self-derision genuinely Russian. Bilibin wrote that the obligation of diplomatic discretion tormented him, and he was happy to have in Andrei a reliable correspondent to whom he could pour out the bile he had accumulated at the sight of all that was being done in the army. The letter was old, having been written before the battle at Preussisch-Eylau.

“Since the day of our brilliant success at Austerlitz,” wrote Adjutant Bilibin, “as you know, my dear Andrei, I never leave headquarters. I have certainly acquired a taste for war, and it is just as well for me; what I have seen during these last three months is incredible.

“I begin *at the beginning*. Napoleon, ‘the enemy of the human race,’ as you know, attacks the Prussians. The Prussians are our faithful allies who have only betrayed us three times in three years. We take up their cause, but it turns out that ‘the enemy of the human race’ pays no heed to our fine speeches and in his rude and savage way throws himself on the Prussians without giving them time to finish the parade they had begun, and in two twists of the hand he breaks them to smithereens and installs himself in the palace at Potsdam.

“‘I most ardently desire,’ writes the King of Prussia to Napoleon, ‘that you should be received and treated in my palace in a manner agreeable to yourself, and in so far as circumstances allowed, I have hastened to take all

steps to that end. May I have succeeded!’ The Prussian generals pride themselves on being polite to the French and lay down their arms at the first demand.

“The head of the garrison at Glogau, with ten thousand men, asks the King of Prussia what he is to do if he is summoned to surrender... All this is absolutely true.

“In short, hoping to settle matters by taking up a warlike attitude, it turns out that we have landed ourselves in war, and what is more, in war on our own frontiers, *with* and *for* the King of Prussia. We have everything in perfect order, only one little thing is lacking, namely, a Marshal. As it was considered that the Austerlitz success might have been more decisive had General Kutuzov not been so young, all our octogenarians were reviewed, and of Prozoróvski and Kámenski the latter was preferred. So General Kamenski comes to us, Suvórov-like, in a *covered sleigh*, and is received with acclamations of joy and triumph.

“On the 4th, the first courier arrives from St. Petersburg. The mails are taken to the general’s room, for General Kamenski likes to do everything himself. I am called in to help sort the letters and take those meant for us. General Kamenski looks on and waits for letters addressed to him. We search, but none are to be found. General Kamenski grows impatient and sets to work himself and finds letters from the Tzar to Count T., Baron V., and others. Then he bursts into one of his wild furies and rages at everyone and everything, seizes the letters, opens them, and reads those from the Tzar addressed to others. ‘Ah! So that’s the way they treat me! No confidence in me! Ah, ordered to keep an eye on me! Very well then! Get along with you!’ So General Kamenski writes the famous order of the day to General Bennigsen:

“‘I am wounded and cannot ride and consequently cannot command the army. You have brought your army corps to Pultúsk, routed: here it is exposed, and without fuel or forage, so something must be done, and, as

you yourself reported to Count Buxhöwden yesterday, you must think of retreating to our frontier.’

“‘From all my riding,’ General Kamenski writes to the Tzar, ‘I have got a saddle sore which, coming after all my previous journeys, quite prevents my riding and commanding so vast an army, so I have passed on the command to the general next in seniority, Count Buxhöwden, having sent him my whole staff and all that belongs to it, advising him if there is a lack of bread, to move farther into the interior of Prussia, for only one day’s ration of bread remains, and in some regiments none at all, as reported by the division commanders, General Ostermann and Sedmorétzki, and all that the peasants had has been eaten up. I myself will remain in hospital at Ostrolenka till I recover. In regard to which I humbly submit my report, with the information that if the army remains in its present bivouac another fortnight there will not be a healthy man left in it by spring.

“‘Grant leave to retire to his country seat to an old man who is already in any case dishonored by being unable to fulfill the great and glorious task for which he was chosen. I shall await your most gracious permission here in hospital, that I may not have to play the part of a *secretary* rather than *commander* in the army. My removal from the army does not produce the slightest stir—a blind man has left it. There are thousands such as I in Russia.’

“General Kamenski is angry with the Tzar and he punishes us all, isn’t it logical?

“This is the first act. Those that follow are naturally increasingly interesting and entertaining. After General Kamenski’s departure it appears that we are within sight of the enemy and must give battle. Buxhöwden is Marshal by seniority, but General Bennigsen does not quite see it; more particularly as it is he and his corps who are within sight of the enemy and he wishes to profit by the opportunity to fight a battle ‘on his own hand’ as the Germans say. General Bennigsen does so. This is the battle of Pultúsk,

which is considered a great victory but in my opinion was nothing of the kind. We civilians, as you know, have a very bad way of deciding whether a battle was won or lost. Those who retreat after a battle have lost it is what we say; and according to that it is we who lost the battle of Pultusk. In short, we retreat after the battle but send a courier to St. Petersburg with news of a victory, and General Bennigsen, hoping to receive from St. Petersburg the post of Marshal as a reward for his victory, does not give up the command of the army to General Buxhöwden. During this interregnum we begin a very original and interesting series of maneuvers. General Bennigsen's aim is no longer, as it should be, to avoid or attack the enemy, but solely to avoid Buxhöwden who by right of seniority should be our chief. So energetically do we pursue this aim that after crossing an unfordable river we burn the bridges to separate ourselves from our enemy, who at the moment is not Napoleon, but instead, Buxhöwden. Buxhöwden was all but attacked and captured by a superior enemy force as a result of one of these maneuvers that enabled us to escape him. Buxhöwden pursues us—we scuttle. Buxhöwden hardly crosses the river to our side before we recross to the other. At last our enemy, Buxhöwden, catches us and attacks. Both generals are angry, and the result is a challenge on Buxhöwden's part and an epileptic fit on General Bennigsen's. But at the critical moment the courier who carried the news of our victory at Pultusk to St. Petersburg returns bringing General Bennigsen's appointment as Marshal, and our first foe, Buxhöwden, is vanquished; we can now turn our thoughts to the second, Napoleon. But as it turns out, just at that moment a third enemy rises before us—namely the *Russian soldiers*, loudly demanding bread, meat, biscuits, fodder, and whatnot! The stores are empty, the roads impassable. The Russian soldiers begin looting, and in a way of which our last campaign can give you no idea. Half the Russian regiments form bands and scour the countryside and put everything to fire and sword. The countryside inhabitants are totally ruined, the hospitals overflow with sick,

and famine is everywhere. Twice the marauders (our Russian soldiers) even attack our headquarters, and General Kutuzov has to ask for a battalion to disperse them. During one of these attacks they carried off my empty portmanteau and my dressing gown. The Tzar proposes to give all commanders of divisions the right to shoot marauders, but I much fear this will oblige one half the army to shoot the other.”

At first Andrei read with his eyes only, but after a while, in spite of himself (although he knew how far it was safe to trust Adjutant Bilibin), what Andrei had read began to interest him more and more. When he had read thus far, he crumpled the letter up and threw it away. It was not what Andrei had read that vexed him, but the fact that the life out there in which he had now no part could perturb him. He shut his eyes, rubbed his forehead as if to rid himself of all interest in what he had read, and listened to what was passing in the nursery. Suddenly he thought he heard a strange noise through the door. He was seized with alarm lest something should have happened to the child while he was reading the letter. He went on tiptoe to the nursery door and opened it.

Just as Andrei went in he saw that the nurse was hiding something from him with a scared look and that Marya was no longer by the cot.

“My dear,” Andrei heard what seemed to him the nurse’s despairing whisper behind him.

As often happens after long sleeplessness and long anxiety, Andrei was seized by an unreasoning panic—it occurred to him that the child was dead. All that he saw and heard seemed to confirm this terror.

“All is over,” he thought, and a cold sweat broke out on his forehead. Andrei went to the cot in confusion, sure that he would find it empty and that the nurse had been hiding the dead baby Nikolenka. He drew the curtain aside and for some time his frightened, restless eyes could not find the baby. At last he saw him: the rosy boy Nikolenka had tossed about till

he lay across the bed with his head lower than the pillow, and was smacking his lips in his sleep and breathing evenly.

Andrei was as glad to find Nikolenka like that, as if he had already lost him. He bent over him and, as his sister had taught him, tried with his lips whether the child was still feverish. Nikolenka's soft forehead was moist. Andrei touched the baby's head with his hand; even the hair was wet, so profusely had the child perspired. He was not dead, but evidently the crisis was over and he was convalescent. Andrei longed to snatch up, to squeeze, to hold to his heart, this helpless little creature, but dared not do so. He stood over him, gazing at his head and at the little arms and legs which showed under the blanket. He heard a rustle behind him and a shadow appeared under the curtain of the cot. He did not look round, but still gazing at the infant's face listened to his regular breathing. The dark shadow was Marya, who had come up to the cot with noiseless steps, lifted the curtain, and dropped it again behind her. Andrei recognized her without looking and held out his hand to her. She pressed it.

"He has perspired," said Andrei.

"I was coming to tell you so."

Nikolenka moved slightly in his sleep, smiled, and rubbed his forehead against the pillow.

Andrei looked at Marya. In the dim shadow of the curtain her luminous eyes shone more brightly than usual from the tears of joy that were in them. She leaned over to her brother and kissed him, slightly catching the curtain of the cot. Each made the other a warning gesture and stood still in the dim light beneath the curtain as if not wishing to leave that seclusion where they three were shut off from all the world. Andrei was the first to move away, ruffling his hair against the muslin of the curtain.

"Yes, this is the one thing left me now," Andrei said with a sigh.

Soon after his admission to the Masonic Brotherhood, Pierre went to the Kiev province, where he had the greatest number of serfs, taking with him

full directions which he had written down for his own guidance as to what he should do on his estates.

When he reached Kiev, Pierre sent for all his stewards to the head office and explained to them his intentions and wishes. He told them that steps would be taken immediately to free his serfs—and that till then they were not to be overburdened with labor, women while nursing their babies were not to be sent to work, assistance was to be given to the serfs, punishments were to be admonitory and not corporal, and hospitals, asylums, and schools were to be established on all the estates. Some of the stewards (there were semiliterate foremen among them) listened with alarm, supposing these words to mean that Pierre was displeased with their management and embezzlement of money, some after their first fright were amused by Pierre's lisp and the new words they had not heard before, others simply enjoyed hearing how the master talked, while the cleverest among them, including the chief steward, understood from this speech how they could best handle the master for their own ends.

The chief steward expressed great sympathy with Pierre's intentions, but remarked that besides these changes it would be necessary to go into the general state of affairs which was far from satisfactory.

Despite Pierre's enormous wealth, since he had come into an income which was said to amount to five hundred thousand rubles a year, Pierre felt himself far poorer than when his father had made him an allowance of ten thousand rubles. Pierre had a dim perception of the following budget:

About 80,000 went in payments on all the estates to the Land Bank, about 30,000 went for the upkeep of the estate near Moscow, the town house, and the allowance to Katerina and her sisters; about 15,000 was given in pensions and the same amount for asylums; 150,000 alimony was sent to Countess Rostov; about 70,000 went for interest on debts. The building of a new church, previously begun, had cost about 10,000 in each of the last two years, and he did not know how the rest, about 100,000

rubles, was spent, and almost every year he was obliged to borrow. Besides this, the chief steward wrote every year telling him of fires and bad harvests, or of the necessity of rebuilding factories and workshops. So the first task Pierre had to face was one for which he had very little aptitude or inclination—practical business.

Pierre discussed estate affairs every day with his chief steward. But he felt that this did not forward matters at all. He felt that these consultations were detached from real affairs and did not link up with them or make them move. On the one hand, the chief steward put the state of things to him in the very worst light, pointing out the necessity of paying off the debts and undertaking new activities with serf labor, to which Pierre did not agree. On the other hand, Pierre demanded that steps should be taken to liberate the serfs, which the steward met by showing the necessity of first paying off the loans from the Land Bank, and the consequent impossibility of a speedy emancipation.

The chief steward did not say it was quite impossible, but suggested selling the forests in the province of Kostromá, the land lower down the river, and the Crimean estate, in order to make it possible: all of which operations according to him were connected with such complicated measures—the removal of injunctions, petitions, permits, and so on—that Pierre became quite bewildered and only replied:

“Yes, yes, do so.”

Pierre had none of the practical persistence that would have enabled him to attend to the business himself and so he disliked it and only tried to pretend to the steward that he was attending to it. The chief steward for his part tried to pretend to Pierre that he considered these consultations very valuable for Pierre and troublesome to himself.

In Kiev, Pierre found some people he knew, and strangers hastened to make his acquaintance and joyfully welcomed the rich newcomer, the

largest landowner of the province. Temptations to Pierre's greatest weakness—the one to which he had confessed when admitted to the Lodge—were so strong that he could not resist them. Again whole days, weeks, and months of his life passed in as great a rush and were as much occupied with evening parties, dinners, lunches, and balls, giving him no time for reflection, as in St. Petersburg. Instead of the new life he had hoped to lead, Pierre still lived the old life, only in new surroundings.

Of the three precepts of Freemasonry, Pierre realized that he did not fulfill the one which enjoined every Mason to set an example of moral life, and that of the seven virtues he lacked two—morality and the love of death. He consoled himself with the thought that he fulfilled another of the precepts—that of reforming the human race—and had other virtues—love of his neighbor, and especially generosity.

In the spring of 1807 Pierre decided to return to St. Petersburg. On the way he intended to visit all his estates and see for himself how far his orders had been carried out and in what state were the serfs whom God had entrusted to his care and whom he intended to benefit.

The chief steward, who considered Pierre's attempts almost insane—unprofitable to himself, to Pierre, and to the serfs—made some concessions. Continuing to insist that the liberation of the serfs as impracticable, the chief steward arranged for the erection of large buildings—schools, hospitals, and asylums—on all the estates before the master arrived. Everywhere preparations were made not for ceremonious welcomes (which he knew Pierre would not like), but for just such gratefully religious ones, with offerings of icons and the bread and salt of hospitality, as, according to his understanding of Pierre, would touch and delude him.

The southern spring, the comfortable rapid traveling in a Vienna carriage, and the solitude of the road, all had a gladdening effect on Pierre. The estates he had not before visited were each more picturesque than the

other; the serfs everywhere seemed thriving and touchingly grateful for the benefits conferred on them. Everywhere were receptions, which though they embarrassed Pierre awakened a joyful feeling in the depth of his heart. In one place the peasants presented him with bread and salt and an icon of Saint Peter and Saint Paul, asking permission, as a mark of their gratitude for the benefits he had conferred on them, to build a new chantry to the church at their own expense in honor of Peter and Paul, his patron saints. In another place the women with infants in arms met him to thank him for releasing them from hard work. On a third estate the priest, bearing a cross, came to meet him surrounded by children whom, by Pierre's generosity, he was instructing in reading, writing, and religion. On all his estates Pierre saw with his own eyes brick buildings erected or in course of erection, all on one plan, for hospitals, schools, and almshouses, which were soon to be opened. Everywhere he saw the chief stewards' accounts, according to which the serfs' manorial labor had been diminished, and heard the touching thanks of deputations of serfs in their full-skirted blue coats.

What Pierre did not know was that the place where they presented him with bread and salt and wished to build a chantry in honor of Peter and Paul was a market village where a fair was held on St. Peter's day, and that the richest peasants (who formed the deputation) had begun the chantry long before, but that nine tenths of the peasants in that villages were in a state of the greatest poverty. Pierre did not know that since the nursing mothers were no longer sent to work on his land, they did still harder work on their own land. He did not know that the priest who met him with the cross oppressed the peasants by his exactions, and that the pupils' parents wept at having to let him take their children and secured their release by heavy payments. He did not know that the brick buildings, built to plan, were being built by serfs whose manorial labor was thus increased, though lessened on paper. He did not know that where the chief steward had shown him in the accounts that the serfs' payments had been diminished by a third,

their obligatory manorial work had been increased by a half. And so Pierre was delighted with his visit to his estates and quite recovered the philanthropic mood in which he had left St. Petersburg, and wrote enthusiastic letters to his “brother-instructor” as he called the Grand Master.

“How easy it is, how little effort it needs, to do so much good,” thought Pierre, “and how little attention we pay to it!”

Pierre was pleased at the gratitude he received, but felt abashed at receiving it. This gratitude reminded him of how much more he might do for these simple, kindly people.

The chief steward, a very stupid but cunning man who saw perfectly through the naive and intelligent Pierre and played with him as with a toy, seeing the effect these prearranged receptions had on Pierre, pressed him still harder with proofs of the impossibility and above all the uselessness of freeing the serfs, who were quite happy as it was.

Pierre in his secret soul agreed with the steward that it would be difficult to imagine happier people, and that God only knew what would happen to them when they were free, but he insisted, though reluctantly, on what he thought right. The chief steward promised to do all in his power to carry out Pierre’s wishes, seeing clearly that not only would Pierre never be able to find out whether all measures had been taken for the sale of the land and forests and to release them from the Land Bank, but would probably never even inquire and would never know that the newly erected buildings were standing empty and that the serfs continued to give in money and work all that other people’s serfs gave—that is to say, all that could be got out of them.

Returning from his journey through South Russia in the happiest state of mind, Pierre carried out an intention he had long had of visiting his friend Andrei, whom he had not seen for two years.

Boguchárovo lay in a flat uninteresting part of the country among fields and forests of fir and birch, which were partly cut down. The house lay

behind a newly dug pond filled with water to the brink and with banks still bare of grass. It was at the end of a village that stretched along the high road in the midst of a young grove in which were a few fir trees.

Andrei's new homestead consisted of a threshing floor, outhouses, stables, a bathhouse, a lodge, and a large brick house with a semicircular façade still in course of construction. Round the house was a garden newly laid out. The fences and gates were new and solid; two fire pumps and a water cart, painted green, stood in a shed; the paths were straight, and the bridges were strong and had handrails. Everything bore an impress of tidiness and good management. Some domestic serfs Pierre met, in reply to inquiries as to where Andrei lived, pointed out a small newly built lodge close to the pond. Antón, a man who had looked after Andrei in his boyhood, helped Pierre out of his carriage, said that the Baron was at home, and showed him into a clean little anteroom.

Pierre was struck by the modesty of the small though clean house after the brilliant surroundings in which he had last met Andrei in St. Petersburg.

Pierre quickly entered the small reception room with its still unplastered wooden walls redolent of pine and would have gone farther, but Antón ran ahead on tiptoe and knocked at a door.

"Well, what is it?" came a sharp, unpleasant voice.

"A visitor," answered Antón.

"Ask him to wait," and the sound was heard of a chair being pushed back.

Pierre went with rapid steps to the door and suddenly came face to face with Andrei, who came out frowning and looking old. Pierre embraced him and lifting his spectacles kissed Pierre on the cheek and looked at him closely.

"Well, I did not expect you, I am very glad," said Andrei.

Pierre said nothing; he looked fixedly at Andrei with surprise. Pierre was struck by the change in Andrei. His words were kind and there was a

smile on his lips and face, but his eyes were dull and lifeless, and in spite of his evident wish to do so he could not give them a joyous and glad sparkle. Andrei had grown thinner, paler, and more manly-looking, but what amazed and estranged Pierre till he got used to it were his inertia and a wrinkle on his brow indicating prolonged concentration on some one thought.

As is usually the case with people meeting after a prolonged separation, it was long before their conversation could settle on anything. They put questions and gave brief replies about things they knew ought to be talked over at length. At last, the conversation gradually settled on some of the topics at first lightly touched on: their past life, plans for the future, Pierre's journeys and occupations, the war, and so on. The preoccupation and despondency which Pierre had noticed in Andrei's look were now still more clearly expressed in the smile with which he listened to Pierre, especially when he spoke with joyful animation of the past or the future. It was as if Andrei would have liked to sympathize with what Pierre was saying, but could not. Pierre began to feel that it was in bad taste to speak of his enthusiasms, dreams, and hopes of happiness or goodness, in Andrei's presence. Pierre was ashamed to express his new Masonic views, which had been particularly revived and strengthened by his late tour. He checked himself, fearing to seem naive, yet he felt an irresistible desire to show his friend as soon as possible that he was now a quite different, and better, Pierre than he had been in St. Petersburg.

"I can't tell you how much I have lived through since then. I hardly know myself again."

"Yes, we have altered much, very much, since then," said Andrei.

"Well, and you? What are your plans?"

"Plans!" repeated Andrei ironically. "My plans?" he said as if astonished at the word. "Well, you see, I'm building. I mean to settle here altogether next year..."

Pierre looked silently and searchingly into Andrei's face, which had grown much older.

"No, I meant to ask..." Pierre began, but Andrei interrupted him.

"But why talk of me?... Talk to me, yes, tell me about your travels and all you have been doing on your estates."

Pierre began describing what he had done on his estates, trying as far as possible to conceal his own part in the improvements that had been made. Andrei several times prompted Pierre's story of what he had been doing, as though it were all an old-time story, and he listened not only without interest but even as if ashamed of what Pierre was telling him.

Pierre felt uncomfortable and even depressed in Andrei's company and at last, became silent.

"I'll tell you what, my dear Pierre," said Andrei, who evidently also felt depressed and constrained with his visitor, "I am only bivouacking here and have just come to look round. I am going back to my sister, Marya, today. I will introduce you to her. But of course, you know Marya already," Andrei said, evidently trying to entertain a visitor with whom he now found nothing in common. "We will go after dinner. And would you now like to look round my place?"

Andrei and Pierre went out and walked about till dinnertime, talking of the political news and common acquaintances like people who do not know each other intimately. Andrei spoke with some animation and interest only of the new homestead he was constructing and its buildings, but even here, while on the scaffolding, in the midst of a talk explaining the future arrangements of the house, he interrupted himself:

"However, this is not at all interesting. Let us have dinner, and then we'll set off."

At dinner, the conversation turned to Pierre's marriage to Helene.

"I was very much surprised when I heard of it," said Andrei.

Pierre blushed, as he always did when it was mentioned, and said hurriedly: "I will tell you sometime how it all happened. But you know it is all over, and forever."

"Forever?" said Andrei. "Nothing's forever."

"But you know how it all ended, don't you? You heard of the duel?"

"And so you had to go through that too!"

"One thing I thank God for is that I did not kill Dolokhov," said Pierre.

"Why so?" asked Andrei. "To kill a vicious dog is a very good thing really."

"No, to kill a man is bad—wrong."

"Why is it wrong?" urged Andrei. "It is not given to man to know what is right and what is wrong. Men always did and always will err, and in nothing more than in what they consider right and wrong."

"What does harm to another is wrong," said Pierre, feeling with pleasure that for the first time since his arrival Andrei was roused, had begun to talk, and wanted to express what had brought him to his present state.

"And who has told you what is bad for another man?" Andrei asked.

"Bad! Bad!" exclaimed Pierre. "We all know what is bad for ourselves."

"Yes, we know that, but the harm I am conscious of in myself is something I cannot inflict on others," said Andrei, growing more and more animated and evidently wishing to express his new outlook to Pierre. Andrei spoke in French. "I only know two very real evils in life: remorse and illness. The only good is the absence of those evils. To live for myself avoiding those two evils is my whole philosophy now."

"And for love of one's neighbor, and for self-sacrifice?" began Pierre. "No, I can't agree with you! To live only so as not to do evil and not to have to repent is not enough. I lived like that, I lived for myself and ruined my life. And only now when I am living, or at least trying" (Pierre's modesty made him correct himself) "to live for others, only now have I understood

all the happiness of life. No, I shall not agree with you, and you do not really believe what you are saying.”

Andrei looked silently at Pierre with an ironic smile.

“When you see my sister, Marya, you’ll get on with her,” Andrei said. “Perhaps you are right for yourself,” he added after a short pause, “but everyone lives in his own way. You lived for yourself and say you nearly ruined your life and only found happiness when you began living for others. I experienced just the reverse. I lived for glory.—And after all what is glory? The same love of others, a desire to do something for them, a desire for their approval.—So I lived for others, and not almost, but quite, ruined my life. And I have become calmer since I began to live only for myself.”

“But what do you mean by living only for yourself?” asked Pierre, growing excited. “What about your son, your sister, and your father?”

“But that’s just the same as myself—they are not *others*,” explained Andrei. “The others, one’s neighbors, *the next*, as you and Marya call it, are the chief source of all error and evil. *The next*—your Kiev peasants to whom you want to do good.”

And Andrei looked at Pierre with a mocking, challenging expression. He evidently wished to draw him on.

“You are joking,” replied Pierre, growing more and more excited. “What error or evil can there be in my wishing to do good, and even doing a little—though I did very little and did it very badly? What evil can there be in it if unfortunate people, our serfs, people like ourselves, were growing up and dying with no idea of God and truth beyond ceremonies and meaningless prayers and are now instructed in a comforting belief in a future life, retribution, recompense, and consolation? What evil and error are there in it, if people were dying of disease without help while material assistance could so easily be rendered, and I supplied them with a doctor, a hospital, and an asylum for the aged? And is it not a palpable, unquestionable good if a peasant, or a woman with a baby, has no rest day

or night and I give them rest and leisure?” said Pierre, hurrying and lisping. “And I have done that though badly and to a small extent; but I have done something toward it and you cannot persuade me that it was not a good action, and more than that, you can’t make me believe that you do not think so yourself. And the main thing is,” he continued, “that I know, and know for certain, that the enjoyment of doing this good is the only sure happiness in life.”

“Yes, if you put it like that it’s quite a different matter,” said Andrei. “I build a house and lay out a garden, and you build hospitals. The one and the other may serve as a pastime. But what’s right and what’s good must be judged by one who knows all, but not by us. Well, you want an argument,” he added, “come on then.”

They rose from the table and sat down on the entrance porch which served as a veranda.

“Come, let’s argue then,” said Andrei, “You talk of schools,” he went on, crooking a finger, “education and so forth; that is, you want to raise him” (pointing to a peasant who passed by them taking off his cap) “from his animal condition and awaken in him spiritual needs, while it seems to me that animal happiness is the only happiness possible, and that is just what you want to deprive him of. I envy the peasant, but you want to make him what I am, without giving him my means. Then you say, ‘lighten his toil.’ But as I see it, physical labor is as essential to a peasant, as much a condition of his existence, as mental activity is to you or me. You can’t help thinking. I go to bed after two in the morning, thoughts come and I can’t sleep but toss about till dawn, because I think and can’t help thinking, just as he can’t help plowing and mowing; if he didn’t, he would go to the drink shop or fall ill. Just as I could not stand a peasant’s terrible physical labor but should die of it in a week, so he could not stand my physical idleness but would grow fat and die. The third thing—what else was it you talked about?” Andrei crooked a third finger. “Ah, yes, hospitals, medicine. When

a peasant has a fit, he is dying, and you come and bleed him and patch him up. Then the peasant will drag about as a cripple, a burden to everybody, for another ten years. It would have been far easier and simpler for him to die. Others are being born and there are plenty of peasants as it is. It would be different if you grudged losing a laborer—that's how I regard him—but you want to cure him because of your love of him. And a peasant does not want that. And besides, what a notion that medicine ever cured anyone! Killed them, yes!" said Andrei, frowning angrily and turning away from Pierre.

Andrei expressed his ideas so clearly and distinctly that it was evident he had reflected on this subject more than once, and he spoke readily and rapidly like a man who has not talked for a long time. Andrei's looks became more animated as his conclusions became more hopeless.

"Oh, that is dreadful, dreadful!" said Pierre. "I don't understand how one can live with such ideas. I had such moments myself not long ago, in Moscow and when traveling, but at such times I collapsed so that I don't live at all—everything seems hateful to me... myself most of all. Then I don't eat, don't wash... and how is it with you?..."

"Why not wash? That is not clean," said Andrei; "on the contrary, one must try to make one's life as pleasant as possible. I'm alive, that is not my fault, so I must live out my life as best I can without hurting others."

"But with such ideas what motive have you for living? One would sit without moving, undertaking nothing..."

"Life, as it is, leaves one no peace. I should be thankful to do nothing, but here on the one hand the local nobility have done me the honor to choose me to be their general; it was all I could do to get out of it. They could not understand that I did not have the necessary qualifications for it—the kind of good-natured, fussy shallowness necessary for the position. Then there's this house, which must be built in order to have a nook of one's own in which to be quiet. And now there's this recruiting."

"Why aren't you serving in the army?"

“After Austerlitz!” said Andrei gloomily. “No, thank you very much! I have promised myself not to serve again in the active Russian army. And I won’t—not even if Napoleon were here at Smolénsk threatening Bald Hills—even then I wouldn’t serve in the Russian army! Well, as I was saying,” Andrei continued, recovering his composure, “now there’s this recruiting. My father is chief in command of the Third District, and my only way of avoiding active service is to serve under him.”

“Then you are serving?”

“I am.”

He paused a little while.

“And why do you serve?”

“Why, for this reason! My father, Baron Bolkonski, is one of the most remarkable men of his time. But he is growing old, and though not exactly cruel he has too energetic a character. He is so accustomed to unlimited power that he is terrible, and now he has the authority of a Marshal of the recruiting, granted by the Tzar. If I had been two hours late a fortnight ago, Baron Bolkonski would have had a paymaster’s clerk at Yúkhnovna hanged,” said Andrei with a smile. “So I am serving because I alone have any influence with my father, and now and then can save him from actions which would torment him afterward.”

“Well, there you see!”

“Yes, but it is not as you imagine,” Andrei continued. “I did not, and do not, in the least care about that scoundrel of a paymaster who had stolen some boots from the recruits; I should even have been very glad to see him hanged, but I was sorry for my father—that again is for myself.”

Andrei grew more and more animated. His eyes glittered feverishly while he tried to prove to Pierre that in his actions there was no desire to do good to his neighbor.

“There now, you wish to liberate your serfs,” Andrei continued; “that is a very good thing, but not for you—I don’t suppose you ever had anyone

flogged or sent to Siberia—and still less for your serfs. If they are beaten, flogged, or sent to Siberia, I don't suppose they are any the worse off. In Siberia, they lead the same animal life, and the stripes on their bodies heal, and they are happy as before. But it is a good thing for the owners of the serfs who perish morally, bring remorse upon themselves, stifle this remorse and grow callous, as a result of being able to inflict punishments justly and unjustly. It is those owners I pity, and for their sake, I should like to liberate the serfs. You may not have seen, but I have seen, how good men brought up in those traditions of unlimited power, in time when they grow more irritable, become cruel and harsh, are conscious of it, but these owners cannot restrain themselves and grow more and more miserable.”

Andrei spoke so earnestly that Pierre could not help thinking that these thoughts had been suggested to Andrei by his father's case.

Pierre did not reply.

“So that's what I'm sorry for—human dignity, peace of mind, purity, and not the serfs' backs and foreheads, which, beat and shave as you may, always remain the same backs and foreheads.”

“No, no! A thousand times no! I shall never agree with you,” said Pierre.

In the evening Andrei and Pierre got into the open carriage and drove to the Bald Hills estate. Andrei, glancing at Pierre, broke the silence now and then with remarks which showed that he was in a good temper.

Pointing to the fields, Andrei spoke of the improvements he was making in his husbandry.

Pierre remained gloomily silent, answering in monosyllables and apparently immersed in his own thoughts.

Pierre was thinking that Andrei was unhappy, had gone astray, did not see the true light, and that he, Pierre, ought to aid, enlighten, and raise him. But as soon as he thought of what he should say, he felt that Andrei with one word, one argument, would upset all his teaching, and he shrank from

beginning, afraid of exposing to possible ridicule what to him was precious and sacred.

“No, but why do you think so?” Pierre suddenly began, lowering his head and looking like a bull about to charge, “why do you think so? You should not think so.”

“Think? What about?” asked Andrei with surprise.

“About life, about man’s destiny. It can’t be so. I myself thought like that, and do you know what saved me? Freemasonry! No, don’t smile. Freemasonry is not a religious ceremonial sect, as I thought it was: Freemasonry is the best expression of the best, the eternal, aspects of humanity.”

And Pierre began to explain Freemasonry as he understood it to Andrei. He said that Freemasonry is the teaching of Christianity freed from the bonds of State and Church, a teaching of equality, brotherhood, and love.

“Only our holy brotherhood has the real meaning of life, all the rest is a dream,” said Pierre. “Understand, my dear Andrei, that outside this union all is filled with deceit and falsehood and I agree with you that nothing is left for an intelligent and good man but to live out his life, like you, merely trying not to harm others. But make our fundamental convictions your own, join our brotherhood, give yourself up to us, let yourself be guided, and you will at once feel yourself, as I have felt myself, a part of that vast invisible chain the beginning of which is hidden in heaven,” said Pierre.

Andrei, looking straight in front of him, listened in silence to Pierre’s words. More than once, when the noise of the wheels prevented his catching what Pierre said, he asked him to repeat it, and by the peculiar glow that came into Andrei’s eyes and by his silence, Pierre saw that his words were not in vain and that Andrei would not interrupt him or laugh at what he said.

They reached a river that had overflowed its banks and which they had to cross by ferry. While the carriage and horses were being placed on it,

they also stepped on the raft.

Andrei, leaning his arms on the raft railing, gazed silently at the flooding waters glittering in the setting sun.

“Well, what do you think about it?” Pierre asked. “Why are you silent?”

“What do I think about it? I am listening to you. It’s all very well... You say: join our brotherhood and we will show you the aim of life, the destiny of man, and the laws which govern the world. But who are *we*? Men. How is it you know everything? Why do I alone not see what you see? You see a reign of goodness and truth on earth, but I don’t see it.”

Pierre interrupted him.

“Do you believe in a future life?” he asked.

“A future life?” Andrei repeated, but Pierre, giving him no time to reply, took the repetition for a denial, the more readily as he knew Andrei’s former atheistic convictions.

“You say you can’t see a reign of goodness and truth on earth. Nor could I, and it cannot be seen if one looks on our life here as the end of everything. On *earth*, here on this earth” (Pierre pointed to the fields), “there is no truth, all is false and evil; but in the universe, in the whole universe there is a kingdom of truth, and we who are now the children of earth are—eternally—children of the whole universe. Don’t I feel in my soul that I am part of this vast harmonious whole? Don’t I feel that I form one link, one step, between the lower and higher beings, in this vast harmonious multitude of beings in whom God—the Supreme Power if you prefer the term—is manifest? If I see, clearly see, that ladder leading from plant to man, why should I suppose it breaks off at me and does not go farther and farther? I feel that I cannot vanish since nothing vanishes in this world, but that I shall always exist and always have existed. I feel that beyond me and above me there are spirits and that in this world there is truth.”

“Yes, that is Herder’s theory,” said Andrei, “but it is not that which can convince me, dear friend—life and death are what convince. What convinces is when one sees a being dear to one, bound up with one’s own life, before whom one was to blame and had hoped to make it right” (Andrei’s voice trembled and he turned away), “and suddenly that being is seized with pain, suffers, and ceases to exist... Why? It cannot be that there is no answer. And I believe there is... That’s what convinces me, that is what has convinced me,” said Andrei.

“Yes, yes, of course,” said Pierre, “isn’t that what I’m saying?”

“No. All I say is that it is not an argument that convinces me of the necessity of a future life, but this: when you go hand in hand with someone and all at once that person vanishes *there, into nowhere*, and you yourself are left facing that abyss, and look in. And I have looked in...”

“Well, that’s it then! You know that there is a *there* and there is a *Someone*? *There* is the future life. The *Someone* is—God.”

Andrei did not reply. The carriage and horses had long since been taken off, onto the farther bank, and unharnessed. The sun had sunk half below the horizon and an evening frost was starring the puddles near the ferry, but Pierre and Andrei, to the astonishment of the footmen, coachmen, and ferrymen, still stood on the raft and talked.

“If there is a God and future life, there is truth and good, and man’s highest happiness consists in striving to attain them. We must live, we must love, and we must believe that we live not only today on this scrap of earth, but have lived and shall live forever, there, in the Whole,” said Pierre, and he pointed to the sky.

Andrei stood leaning on the railing of the raft listening to Pierre, and he gazed with his eyes fixed on the red reflection of the sun gleaming on the blue waters. There was perfect stillness. Pierre became silent. The raft had long since stopped and only the waves of the current beat softly against it

below. Andrei felt as if the sound of the waves kept up a refrain to Pierre's words, whispering:

"It is true, believe it."

He sighed and glanced with a radiant, childlike, tender look at Pierre's face, flushed and rapturous, but yet shy before his superior friend.

"Yes, if it only were so!" said Andrei. "However, it is time to get on," he added, and, stepping off the raft, he looked up at the sky to which Pierre had pointed, and for the first time since Austerlitz, Andrei saw that high, everlasting sky he had seen while lying on that battlefield; and something that had long been slumbering, something that was best within him, suddenly awoke, joyful and youthful, in his soul. It vanished as soon as Andrei returned to the customary conditions of his life, but he knew that this feeling which he did not know how to develop existed within him. His meeting with Pierre formed an epoch in Andrei's life. Though outwardly he continued to live in the same old way, inwardly he began a new life.

It was getting dusk when Andrei and Pierre drove up to the front entrance of the house at Bald Hills. As they approached the house, Andrei with a smile drew Pierre's attention to a commotion going on at the back porch. A woman, bent with age, with a wallet on her back, and a short, long-haired, young man in a black garment had rushed back to the gate on seeing the carriage driving up. Two women ran out after them, and all four, looking round at the carriage, ran in dismay up the steps of the back porch.

"Those are Marya's 'God's folk,'" said Andrei. "They have mistaken us for my father. This is the one matter in which she disobeys him. He orders these pilgrims to be driven away, but she receives them."

"But what are 'God's folk'?" asked Pierre.

Andrei had no time to answer. The servants came out to meet them, and he asked where Baron Bolkonski was and whether he was expected back soon.

Baron Bolkonski had gone to the town and was expected back any minute.

Andrei led Pierre to his own apartments, which were always kept in perfect order and readiness for him in his father's house; he himself went to the nursery.

"Let us go and see my sister, Marya," Andrei said to Pierre when he returned. "I have not found her yet, she is hiding now, sitting with her 'God's folk.' It will serve her right, she will be confused, but you will see her 'God's folk.' It's really very curious."

"What are 'God's folk'?" asked Pierre.

"Come, and you'll see for yourself."

Marya really was disconcerted and red patches came on her face when they went in. In her snug room, with lamps burning before the icon stand, a young lad with a long nose and long hair, wearing a monk's cassock, sat on the sofa beside her, behind a samovar. Near them, in an armchair, sat a thin, shriveled, old woman, with a meek expression on her childlike face.

"Andrei, why didn't you warn me?" said Marya, with mild reproach, as she stood before her pilgrims like a hen before her chickens.

"*Delighted to see you. I am very glad to see you,*" Marya said to Pierre as he kissed her hand. She had known him as a child, and now his friendship with Andrei, his misfortune with his wife, and above all his kindly, simple face disposed her favorably toward him. She looked at him with her beautiful radiant eyes and seemed to say, "I like you very much, but please don't laugh at my people." After exchanging the first greetings, they sat down.

"Ah, and Iván is here too!" said Andrei, glancing with a smile at the young pilgrim.

"Andrei!" said Marya, imploringly. "*You must know that this is a woman.*", said Andrei to Pierre.

"Andrei, *for heaven's sake!*", Marya repeated.

It was evident that Andrei's ironical tone toward the pilgrims and Marya's helpless attempts to protect them were their customary long-established relations on the matter.

"But, my dear, you ought on the contrary to be grateful to me for explaining to Pierre your intimacy with this young man."

"Really?" said Pierre, gazing over his spectacles with curiosity and seriousness (for which Marya was especially grateful to him) into "Iván's" face, who, seeing that she was being spoken about, looked round at them all with crafty eyes.

Marya's embarrassment on *her people's* account was quite unnecessary. They were not in the least abashed. The old woman, lowering her eyes but casting side glances at the newcomers, had turned her cup upside down and placed a nibbled bit of sugar beside it, and sat quietly in her armchair, hoping to be offered another cup of tea. "Ivan", sipping out of her saucer, looked with sly womanish eyes from under her brows at the young men.

"Where have you been? To Kiev?" Andrei asked the old woman.

"I have, good sir," she answered garrulously. "Just at Christmastime, I was deemed worthy to partake of the holy and heavenly sacrament at the shrine of the saint. And now I'm from Kolyázin, master, where a great and wonderful blessing has been revealed."

"And was "Ivan" with you?"

"I go by myself, benefactor," said "Ivan", trying to speak in a bass voice. "I only came across Pelagéya in Yúkhново..."

Pelagéya interrupted her companion; she evidently wished to tell what she had seen.

"In Kolyázin, master, a wonderful blessing has been revealed."

"What is it? Some new relics?" asked Andrei.

"Andrei, do leave off," said Marya. "Don't tell him, Pelagéya."

"No... why not, my dear, why shouldn't I? I like master Andrei. He is kind, he is one of God's chosen, he's a benefactor, he once gave me ten

rubles, I remember. When I was in Kiev, Crazy Cyril says to me (he's one of God's own and goes barefoot summer and winter), he says, 'Why are you not going to the right place? Go to Kolyázin where a wonder-working icon of the Holy Mother of God has been revealed.' On hearing those words I said good-bye to the holy folk and went."

All were silent, only Pelagéya went on in measured tones, drawing in her breath.

"So I come, master Andrei, and the people say to me: 'A great blessing has been revealed, holy oil trickles from the cheeks of our blessed Mother, the Holy Virgin Mother of God.'..."

"All right, all right, you can tell us afterward," said Marya, flushing.

"Let me ask her," said Pierre. "Did you see it yourselves?" he inquired.

"Oh, yes, master, I was found worthy. Such a brightness on the face like the light of heaven, and from the blessed Mother's cheek it drops and drops..."

"But, dear me, that must be a fraud!" said Pierre, naively, who had listened attentively to Pelagéya.

"Oh, master, what are you saying?" exclaimed the horrified Pelagéya, turning to Marya for support.

"They impose on the people," Pierre repeated.

"Lord Jesus Christ!" exclaimed Pelagéya, crossing herself. "Oh, don't speak so, master! There was a general who did not believe, and said, 'The monks cheat,' and as soon as he'd said it he went blind. And the general dreamed that the Holy Virgin Mother of the Kiev catacombs came to him and said, 'Believe in me and I will make you whole.' So the general begged: 'Take me to Holy Virgin Mother, take me to her.' It's the real truth I'm telling you, I saw it myself. So the general was brought, quite blind, straight to her, and he goes up to the Holy Virgin Mother and falls down and says, 'Make me whole,' says he, 'and I'll give thee what the Tzar bestowed on me.' I saw it myself, master, the star is fixed into the icon.

Well, what do you think? The general received his sight! It's a sin to speak so. God will punish you," Pelagéya said admonishingly, turning to Pierre.

"How did the star get into the icon?" Pierre asked.

"And was the Holy Virgin Mother promoted to the rank of general?" said Andrei, with a smile.

Pelagéya suddenly grew quite pale and clasped her hands.

"Oh, master, master, what a sin! And you who have a son!" Pelagéya began, her pallor suddenly turning to a vivid red. "Masters, what have you said? God forgive you!" And she crossed herself. "Lord forgive them! My dear Marya, what does it mean?..." she asked, turning to Marya. She got up and, almost crying, began to arrange her wallet. She evidently felt frightened and ashamed to have accepted charity in a house where such things could be said, and was at the same time sorry to have now to forgo the charity of this house.

"Now, why need you do it, Pierre?" said Marya. "Why did you come to me?..."

"Come, Marya, I was joking," said Pierre. "*On my word, I didn't wish to offend her.* I did not mean anything, I was only joking," he said, smiling shyly and trying to efface his offense.

"It was all my fault, and Andrei, too, was only joking."

Marya stopped doubtfully, but in Pierre's face there was such a look of sincere penitence, and Andrei glanced so meekly now at her and now at Pierre, that Marya was gradually reassured.

Pelagéya was appeased and, being encouraged to talk, gave a long account of Father Amphilochus, who led so holy a life that his hands smelled of incense, and how on her last visit to Kiev some monks she knew let her have the keys of the catacombs, and how she, taking some dried bread with her, had spent two days in the catacombs with the saints. "I'd pray awhile to one, ponder awhile, then go on to another. I'd sleep a bit and then again go and kiss the relics, and there was such peace all around, such

blessedness, that one doesn't want to come out, even into the light of heaven again."

Pierre listened to her attentively and seriously. Andrei went out of the room, and then, leaving "God's folk" to finish their tea, Marya took Pierre into the drawing room.

"You are very kind," Marya said to Pierre.

"Oh, I really did not mean to hurt her feelings. I understand them so well and have the greatest respect for them."

Marya looked at him silently and smiled affectionately.

"I have known you a long time, you see, and am as fond of you as of a brother," Marya said. "How do you find Andrei?" she added hurriedly, not giving him time to reply to her affectionate words. "I am very anxious about him. His health was better in the winter, but last spring his wound reopened and the doctor said he ought to go away for a cure. And I am also very much afraid for him spiritually. He has not a character like us women who, when we suffer, can weep away our sorrows. Andrei keeps it all within him. Today he is cheerful and in good spirits, but that is the effect of your visit—he is not often like that. If you could persuade him to go abroad. He needs activity, and this quiet regular life is very bad for him. Others don't notice it, but I see it."

Toward ten o'clock the men servants rushed to the front door, hearing the bells of Baron Bolkonski's carriage approaching. Andrei and Pierre also went out into the porch.

"Who's that?" asked Baron Bolkonski, noticing Pierre as he got out of the carriage.

"Ah! Very glad! Kiss me," he said, having learned who Pierre was.

Baron Bolkonski was in a good temper and very gracious to Pierre.

Before supper, Andrei, coming back to his father's study, found him disputing hotly with Pierre. Pierre was maintaining that a time would come when there would be no more wars. Baron Bolkonski disputed it lightheartedly, but without getting angry.

"Drain the blood from men's veins and put in water instead, then there will be no more war! Old women's nonsense—old women's nonsense!" Baron Bolkonski repeated, but still, he patted Pierre affectionately on the shoulder, and then went up to the table where Andrei, evidently not wishing to join in the conversation, was looking over the papers his father had brought from town. Baron Bolkonski went up to him and began to talk business.

"Count Rostov hasn't sent half his contingent. He came to town and wanted to invite me to dinner—I gave him a pretty dinner!... And there, look at this... Well, my boy," Baron Bolkonski went on, addressing Andrei and patting Pierre on the shoulder. "A fine fellow—your friend—I like him! He stirs me up. Another says clever things and one doesn't care to listen, but Pierre talks rubbish yet stirs an old fellow up. Well, go! Get along! Perhaps I'll come and sit with you at supper. We'll have another dispute."

"Make friends with my little fool, Marya," Baron Bolkonski shouted after Pierre, as he left through the door.

Only now, on his visit to Bald Hills, did Pierre fully realize the strength and charm of his friendship with Andrei. That charm was not expressed so much in his relations with him as with all his family and with the household. With the stern Baron Bolkonski and the gentle, timid Marya, though he had scarcely known them, Pierre at once felt like an old friend. They were all fond of him already. Not only Marya, who had been won by his gentleness with the pilgrims, gave him her most radiant looks, but even the one-year-old "Baron Nikolenka" (as his grandfather called him) smiled at Pierre and let himself be taken in his arms, and the architect Michael

Ivanovich and Lady-in-waiting Bourienne looked at him with pleasant smiles when he talked to Baron Bolkonski.

Baron Bolkonski came in to supper; this was evidently on Pierre's account. And during the two days of Pierre's visit, he was extremely kind to him and told him to visit them again.

When Pierre left and the members of the household met together, they began to express their opinions of Pierre as people always do after a new acquaintance has left, but as seldom happens, no one said anything but what was good of him.

When returning from his leave, Nicholas felt, for the first time, how close was the bond that united him to Denisov and the whole regiment.

On approaching it, Nicholas felt as he had done when approaching his home in Moscow. When he saw the first hussar with the unbuttoned uniform of his regiment, when he recognized red-haired Deméntyev and saw the picket ropes of the roan horses, when Lavrushka gleefully shouted to Denisov, "Nicholas has come!" and Denisov, who had been asleep on his bed, ran all disheveled out of the mud hut to embrace him, and the officers collected round to greet the new arrival, Nicholas experienced the same feeling as when his mother, his father, and his sister had embraced him, and tears of joy choked him so that he could not speak. The regiment was also a home, and as unalterably dear and precious as his parents' house.

When Nicholas had reported himself to the commander of the regiment and had been reassigned to his former squadron, had been on duty, and had gone out foraging when he had again entered into all the little interests of the regiment and felt deprived of liberty and bound in one narrow, unchanging frame, he experienced the same sense of peace, of moral support, and the same sense of being at home here in his own place, as he had felt under the parental roof. But here was none of all that turmoil of the world at large, where Nicholas did not know his right place and took mistaken decisions; here was no Sonya with whom he ought, or ought not,

to have an explanation; here was no possibility of going there or not going there; here there were not twenty-four hours in the day which could be spent in such a variety of ways; there was not that innumerable crowd of people of whom not one was nearer to him or farther from him than another; there were none of those uncertain and undefined money relations with his father and nothing to recall that terrible loss to Dolokhov. Here, in the regiment, all was clear and simple. The whole world was divided into two unequal parts: one, our Pávlograd regiment; the other, all the rest. And the rest was no concern of his. In the regiment, everything was definite: who was lieutenant, who captain, who was a good fellow, who was a bad one, and most of all, who was a comrade. The canteen keeper gave one credit, one's pay came every four months, there was nothing to think out or decide, you had only to do nothing that was considered bad in the Pávlograd regiment and, when given an order, to do what was clearly, distinctly, and definitely ordered—and all would be well.

Having once more entered into the definite conditions of this regimental life, Nicholas felt the joy and relief a tired man feels on lying down to rest. Life in the regiment, during this campaign, was all the pleasanter for him, because, after his financial loss to Dolokhov (for which, in spite of all his family's efforts to console him, he could not forgive himself), he had made up his mind to atone for his fault by serving, not as he had done before, but really well, and by being a perfectly first-rate comrade and officer—in a word, a splendid man altogether, a thing which seemed so difficult out *in the world*, but so possible in the regiment.

After Nicholas's losses, he had determined to pay back his debt to his parents in five years. He received ten thousand rubles a year but now resolved to take only two thousand and leave the rest to repay the debt to his parents.

Our army, after repeated retreats and advances and battles, was concentrated near Bartenstein. The army was awaiting the Tzar's arrival and the beginning of a new campaign.

The Pávlograd regiment, belonging to that part of the army that had served in the 1805 campaign, had been recruiting up to strength in Russia and arrived too late to take part in the first actions of the campaign, so, when it joined the army in the field in the second half of the campaign, it was attached to General Platov's division.

Platov's division was acting independently of the main army. Several times parts of the division had exchanged shots with the enemy, had taken prisoners, and once had even captured the carriage of a French général. In April, they were stationed immovably for some weeks near a totally ruined and deserted German village.

A thaw had set in, it was muddy and cold, the ice on the river broke, and the roads became impassable. For days neither provisions for the men nor fodder for the horses had been issued. As no transports could arrive, the men dispersed about the abandoned and deserted villages, searching for potatoes, but found few even of these.

Everything had been eaten up and the inhabitants had all fled—if any remained, they were worse than beggars and nothing more could be taken from them; even the soldiers, usually pitiless enough, instead of taking anything from them, often gave them the last of their rations.

The regiment had had only two men wounded in action but had lost nearly half its men from hunger and sickness. In the hospitals, death was so certain that soldiers suffering from fever, or the swelling that came from bad food, preferred to remain on duty, and were hardly able to drag their legs went to the front rather than to the hospitals. When spring came on, the soldiers found a plant just showing out of the ground that looked like asparagus, which, for some reason, they called "Máshka's sweet root." It was very bitter, but they wandered about the fields seeking it and dug it out

with their sabers and ate it, though they were ordered not to do so, as it was a noxious plant. That spring a new disease broke out among the soldiers, a swelling of the arms, legs, and face, which the doctors attributed to eating this root. But in spite of all this, the soldiers of Denisov's squadron fed chiefly on "Máshka's sweet root," because they didn't have enough food. It was the second week that biscuits were being doled out at the rate of only half a pound a man and the last potatoes they had received had sprouted and frozen.

The horses also had been fed for a fortnight on straw from the thatched roofs and had become terribly thin, though still covered with tufts of felty winter hair.

Despite this destitution, the soldiers and officers went on living just as usual. Despite their pale swollen faces and tattered uniforms, the hussars formed a line for roll call, kept things in order, groomed their horses, polished their arms, brought in straw from the thatched roofs in place of fodder, and sat down to dine round the caldrons from which they rose up hungry, joking about their nasty food and their hunger. As usual, in their spare time, they lit bonfires, steamed themselves before them naked; smoked, picked out, and baked sprouting rotten potatoes, told and listened to stories of Potëmkin's and Suvórov's campaigns, or to legends of Alësha the Sly, or the priest's laborer Mikólka.

The officers, as usual, lived in twos and threes in the roofless, half-ruined houses. The seniors tried to collect straw and potatoes and, in general, food for the men. The younger ones occupied themselves as before, some playing cards (there was plenty of money, though there was no food), some with more innocent games, such as quoits and skittles. The general trend of the campaign was rarely spoken of, partly because nothing certain was known about it, partly because there was a vague feeling that in the main it was going badly.

Nicholas lived, as before, with Denisov, and since their furlough, they had become more friendly than ever. Denisov never spoke of Nicholas's family, but by the tender friendship his commander showed him, Nicholas felt that the elder hussar's luckless love for Natasha played a part in strengthening their friendship. Denisov evidently tried to expose Nicholas to danger as seldom as possible, and after an action greeted his safe return with evident joy. On one of Nicholas's foraging expeditions, in a deserted and ruined village to which he had come in search of provisions, Nicholas found a family consisting of an old Pole and his daughter with an infant in his arms. They were half-clad, hungry, too weak to get away on foot, and had no means of obtaining a conveyance. Nicholas brought them to his quarters, placed them in his own lodging, and kept them for some weeks while the old man was recovering. One of his officers, talking of women, began teasing Nicholas, saying that he was more wily than any of them and that it would not be a bad thing if he introduced to them the pretty Polish girl he had saved. Nicholas took the joke as an insult, flared up, and said such unpleasant things to the officer that it was all Denisov could do to prevent a duel. When the officer had gone away, Denisov, who did not himself know what Nicholas's relations with the Polish girl might be, began to upbraid him for his quickness of temper, and Nicholas replied:

"Say what you like... She is like a sister to me, and I can't tell you how it offended me... because... well, for that reason..."

Denisov patted Nicholas on the shoulder and began rapidly pacing the room without looking at him, as was his way at moments of deep feeling.

"Ah, what a mad breed you Wostóvs are!" Denisov muttered, and Nicholas noticed tears in his eyes.

In April the troops were enlivened by news of the Tzar's arrival, but Nicholas had no chance of being present at the review he held at Bartenstein, as his division was at the outposts far beyond there.

Nicholas's division was bivouacking. Both Denisov and Nicholas were living in an earth hut, dug out for them by the soldiers and roofed with branches and turf. The hut was made in the following manner, which had then come into vogue. A trench was dug three and a half feet wide, four feet eight inches deep, and eight feet long. At one end of the trench, steps were cut out and these formed the entrance and vestibule. The trench itself was the room, in which the lucky ones, such as the squadron commander, had a board, lying on piles at the end opposite the entrance, to serve as a table. On each side of the trench, the earth was cut out to a breadth of about two and a half feet, and this did duty for bedsteads and couches. The roof was so constructed that one could stand up in the middle of the trench and could even sit up on the beds if one drew close to the table. Denisov, who was living luxuriously because the soldiers of his squadron liked him, had also a board in the roof at the farther end, with a piece of (broken but mended) glass in it for a window. When it was very cold, embers from the soldiers' campfire were placed on a bent sheet of iron on the steps in the "reception room"—as Denisov called that part of the hut—and it was then so warm that the officers, of whom there were always some with Denisov and Nicholas, sat in their shirt sleeves.

In April, Nicholas was on orderly duty. One morning, between seven and eight, returning after a sleepless night, he sent for embers, changed his rain-soaked underclothes, said his prayers, drank tea, got warm, then tidied up the things on the table and in his own corner, and, his face glowing from exposure to the wind and with nothing on but his shirt, lay down on his back, putting his arms under his head. Nicholas was pleasantly considering the probability of being promoted in a few days for his last reconnoitering expedition and was awaiting Denisov, who had gone out somewhere and with whom he wanted a talk.

Suddenly Nicholas heard Denisov shouting in a vibrating voice behind the hut, evidently much excited. Nicholas moved to the window to see whom he was speaking to and saw the quartermaster.

“I ordered you not to let them eat that Máshka woot stuff!” Denisov was shouting. “And I saw with my own eyes how Lazarchúk bwrought some fwom the fields.”

“I have given the order, again and again, your honor, but they don’t obey,” answered the quartermaster.

Nicholas lay down again on his bed and thought complacently: “Let him fuss and bustle now, my job’s done and I’m lying down—capitally!” He could hear that Lavrúshka—that sly, bold orderly of Denisov’s—was talking, as well as the quartermaster. Lavrúshka was saying something about loaded wagons, biscuits, and oxen he had seen when he had gone out for provisions.

Then Denisov’s voice was heard shouting farther and farther away. “Saddle! Second platoon!”

“Where are they off to now?” thought Nicholas.

Five minutes later, Denisov came into the hut, climbed with muddy boots on the bed, lit his pipe, furiously scattered his things about, took his leaded whip, buckled on his saber, and went out again. In answer to Nicholas’s inquiry about where he was going, he answered vaguely and crossly that he had some business.

“Let God and the Tzar judge me afterward!” said Denisov going out, and Nicholas heard the hoofs of several horses splashing through the mud. Nicholas did not even trouble to find out where Denisov had gone. Having got warm in his corner, he fell asleep and did not leave the hut till toward evening. Denisov had not yet returned. The weather had cleared up, and near the next hut, two officers and a cadet were playing *sváyka*, a game in which a marlinspike-like spear is thrown to land in the middle of a metal ring lying on the ground some distance away. The officers laughed as they

threw their missiles which buried themselves in the soft mud. Nicholas joined them. In the middle of the game, the officers saw some wagons approaching with fifteen hussars on their skinny horses behind them. The wagons escorted by the hussars drew up to the picket ropes and a crowd of hussars surrounded them.

“There now, Denisov has been worrying,” said Nicholas, “and here are the provisions.”

“So they are!” said the officers. “Won’t the soldiers be glad!”

A little behind the hussars came Denisov, accompanied by two infantry officers with whom he was talking.

Nicholas went to meet them.

“I warn you, Denisov,” one of the officers, a short thin man, evidently very angry, was saying.

“Haven’t I told you I won’t give them up?” replied Denisov.

“You will answer for it, Captain. It is mutiny—seizing the transport of one’s own army. Our men have had nothing to eat for two days.”

“And mine have had nothing for two weeks,” said Denisov.

“It is a robbery! You’ll answer for it, sir!” said the infantry officer, raising his voice.

“Now, what are you pestewing me for?” cried Denisov, suddenly losing his temper. “I shall answer for it and not you, and you’d better not buzz about here till you get hurt. Be off! Go!” he shouted at the officers.

“Very well, then!” shouted the little officer, undaunted and not riding away. “If you are determined to rob, I’ll...”

“Go to the devil! quick ma’ch, while you’re safe and sound!” and Denisov turned his horse on the officer.

“Very well, very well!” muttered the officer, threateningly, and turning his horse he trotted away, jolting in his saddle.

“A dog astwide a fence! A weal dog astwide a fence!” shouted Denisov after him (the most insulting expression a cavalryman can address to a

mounted infantryman) and riding up to Nicholas, he burst out laughing.

“I’ve taken twansports from the infantwy by force!” Denisov said. “After all, can’t let our men starve.”

The wagons that had reached the hussars had been consigned to an infantry regiment, but after learning from Lavrúshka that the transport was unescorted, Denisov with his hussars had seized it by force. Denisov’s soldiers had biscuits dealt out to them freely, and they even shared them with the other squadrons.

The next day the regimental commander sent for Denisov, and holding his fingers spread out before his eyes said:

“This is how I look at this affair: I know nothing about it and won’t begin proceedings, but I advise you to ride over to the staff and settle the business there in the commissariat department and if possible sign a receipt for such and such stores received. If you don’t, as the demand was booked against an infantry regiment, there will be a row and the affair may end badly.”

From the regimental commander’s headquarters, Denisov rode straight to the staff with a sincere desire to act on this advice. In the evening Denisov came back to his dugout in a state such as Nicholas had never yet seen him in. Denisov could not speak and gasped for breath. When Nicholas asked what was the matter, he only uttered some incoherent oaths and threats in a hoarse, feeble voice.

Alarmed at Denisov’s condition, Nicholas suggested that he should undress, drink some water, and send for the doctor.

“Twy me for wobbewy... oh! Some more water... Let them twy me, but I’ll always thwash scoundwels... and I’ll tell the Tzaw... Ice...” he muttered.

The regimental doctor, when he came, said it was absolutely necessary to bleed Denisov. A deep saucer of black blood was taken from his hairy arm and only then was he able to relate what had happened to him.

“I get there,” began Denisov. “‘Now then, where’s your chief’s quarters?’ They were pointed out. ‘Please wait.’ ‘I’ve widden twenty miles and have duties to attend to and no time to wait. Announce me.’ Vewy well, so out comes their head chief—also took it into his head to lecture me: ‘It’s wobbewy!’—‘Wobbewy,’ I say, ‘is not done by a man who seizes pwovisions to feed his soldiers, but by him who takes them to fill his own pockets!’ ‘Will you please be silent?’ ‘Vewy good!’ Then he says: ‘Go and give a weceipt to the commissioner, but your affair will be passed on to headquarters.’ I go to the commissioner. I enter, and at the table... who do you think? No, but wait a bit!... Who is it that’s starving us?” shouted Denisov, hitting the table with the fist of his newly bled arm so violently that the table nearly broke down and the tumblers on it jumped about.

“Lieutenant Telyánin! ‘What? So it’s you who’s starving us to death! Is it? Take this and this!’ and I hit him so pat, stwaight on his snout... ‘Ah, what a... what a...!’ and I sta’ted fwashing him... Well, I’ve had a bit of fun I can tell you!” cried Denisov, gleeful and yet angry, his white teeth showing under his black mustache. “I’d have killed him if they hadn’t taken him away!”

“But what are you shouting for? Calm yourself,” said Nicholas. “You’ve set your arm bleeding afresh. Wait, we must tie it up again.”

Denisov was bandaged up again and put to bed. The next day, he woke calm and cheerful.

But at noon the adjutant of the regiment came into Nicholas’s and Denisov’s dugout with a grave and serious face and regretfully showed them a paper addressed to Denisov from the regimental commander in which inquiries were made about yesterday’s occurrence. The adjutant told them that the affair was likely to take a very bad turn: that a court-martial had been appointed, and that in view of the severity with which marauding and insubordination were now regarded, degradation to the ranks would be the best that could be hoped for.

The case, as represented by the offended parties, was that, after seizing the transports, Denisov, being drunk, went to Lieutenant Telyánin and without any provocation called him a thief, threatened to strike him, and on being led out rushed into the office and given two officials a thrashing, and dislocated the arm of one of them.

In answer to Nicholas's renewed questions, Denisov said, laughing, that he thought he remembered that some other fellow had got mixed up in it, but that it was all nonsense and rubbish, and he did not in the least fear any kind of trial, and that if those scoundrels dared attack him he would give them an answer that they would not easily forget.

Denisov spoke contemptuously of the whole matter, but Nicholas knew him too well not to detect that (while hiding it from others) at heart Denisov feared a court-martial and was worried over the affair, which was evidently taking a bad turn. Every day, letters of inquiry and notices from the court arrived, and on the first of May, Denisov was ordered to hand the squadron over to the next in seniority and appear before the staff of his division to explain his violence at the commissariat office. On the previous day, their regiment reconnoitered with two Cossack regiments and two squadrons of hussars. Denisov, as was his wont, rode out in front of the outposts, parading his courage. A bullet fired by a French sharpshooter hit him in the fleshy part of his leg. Perhaps at another time, Denisov would not have left the regiment for so slight a wound, but now he took advantage of it to excuse himself from appearing at the staff and went into the hospital.

In June the battle of Friedland was fought, in which Nicholas's regiment did not take part, and after that, an armistice was proclaimed. Nicholas, who felt his friend's absence very much, having no news of him since he left and feeling very anxious about his wound and the progress of his affairs, took advantage of the armistice to get leave to visit Denisov in the hospital.

The hospital was in a small Prussian town that had been twice devastated by Russian and French troops. Because it was summer, when it

is so beautiful out in the fields, the little town presented a particularly dismal appearance with its broken roofs and fences, its foul streets, tattered inhabitants, and the sick and drunken soldiers wandering about.

The hospital was in a brick building with some of the window frames and panes broken and a courtyard surrounded by the remains of a wooden fence that had been pulled to pieces. Several bandaged soldiers, with pale swollen faces, were sitting or walking about in the sunshine in the yard.

When Nicholas entered the hospital door he was enveloped by a smell of putrefaction and hospital air. On the stairs, he met a Russian army doctor smoking a cigar. The doctor was followed by a Russian assistant.

"I can't tear myself to pieces," the doctor was saying. "Come to Makár Alexéevich in the evening. I shall be there."

The assistant asked some further questions.

"Oh, do the best you can! Isn't it all the same?" The doctor noticed Nicholas coming upstairs.

"What do you want, sir?" said the doctor. "What do you want? The bullets having spared you, do you want to try typhus? This is a pesthouse, sir."

"How so?" asked Nicholas.

"Typhus, sir. It's death to go in. Only we two, my assistant and I, keep on here. Some five of us doctors have died in this place... When a new one comes he is done for in a week," said the doctor with evident satisfaction. "Prussian doctors have been invited here, but our allies don't like it at all."

Nicholas explained that he wanted to see Major Denisov of the hussars, who was wounded.

"I don't know. I can't tell you, sir. Only think! I am alone in charge of three hospitals with more than four hundred patients! It's well that the charitable Prussian ladies send us two pounds of coffee and some lint each month or we should be lost!" he laughed. "Four hundred, sir, and they're

always sending me fresh ones. There *are* four hundred? Eh?” he asked, turning to the assistant.

The assistant looked exhausted. He was evidently vexed and impatient for the talkative doctor to go.

“Major Denisov,” Nicholas said again. “He was wounded at Molliten.”

“Dead, I fancy. Eh, assistant?” queried the doctor, in a tone of indifference.

The assistant, however, did not confirm the doctor’s words.

“Is he tall and with reddish hair?” asked the doctor.

Nicholas described Denisov’s appearance.

“There was one like that,” said the doctor, as if pleased. “That one is dead, I fancy. However, I’ll look up our list. We had a list. Have you got it, assistant?”

“Makár Alexéevich has the list,” answered the assistant. “But if you’ll step into the officers’ wards you’ll see for yourself,” he added, turning to Nicholas.

“Ah, you’d better not go, sir,” said the doctor, “or you may have to stay here yourself.”

But Nicholas bowed himself away from the doctor and asked the assistant to show him the way.

“Only don’t blame me!” the doctor shouted up after him.

Nicholas and the assistant went into the dark corridor. The smell was so strong there that Nicholas held his nose and had to pause and collect his strength before he could go on. A door opened to the right, and an emaciated sallow man on crutches, barefoot and in underclothing, limped out and, leaning against the doorpost, looked with glittering envious eyes at those who were passing. Glancing in at the door, Nicholas saw that the sick and wounded were lying on the floor on straw and overcoats.

“May I go in and look?”

“What is there to see?” said the assistant.

But, just because the assistant evidently did not want him to go in, Nicholas entered the soldiers' ward. The foul air, to which he had already begun to get used in the corridor, was still stronger here. It was a little different, more pungent, and one felt that this was where it originated.

In the long room, brightly lit up by the sun through the large windows, the sick and wounded lay in two rows with their heads to the walls, leaving a passage in the middle. Most of them were unconscious and paid no attention to the newcomers. Those who were conscious raised themselves or lifted their thin yellow faces, and all looked intently at Nicholas with the same expression of hope, relief, reproach, and envy of another's health. Nicholas went to the middle of the room and looking through the open doors into the two adjoining rooms saw the same thing there. He stood still, looking silently around. He had not at all expected such a sight. Just before him, almost across the middle of the passage on the bare floor, lay a sick man, probably a Cossack to judge by the cut of his hair. The man lay on his back, his huge arms and legs outstretched. His face was purple, his eyes were rolled back so that only the whites were seen, and on his bare legs and arms which were still red, the veins stood out like cords. He was knocking the back of his head against the floor, hoarsely uttering some word that he kept repeating. Nicholas listened and made out the word. It was "drink, drink, a drink!" Nicholas glanced around, looking for someone who would put this man back in his place and bring him water.

"Who looks after the sick here?" Nicholas asked the assistant.

Just then a hospital orderly, came in from the next room, marching stiffly, and drew up in front of Nicholas.

"Good day, your honor!" the orderly shouted, rolling his eyes at Nicholas and evidently mistaking him for one of the hospital authorities.

"Get him to his place and give him some water," said Nicholas, pointing to the Cossack.

“Yes, your honor,” the orderly replied complacently, and rolling his eyes more than ever he drew himself up still straighter, but did not move.

“No, it’s impossible to do anything here,” thought Nicholas, lowering his eyes, and he was going out but became aware of an intense look fixed on him on his right, and he turned. Close to the corner, on an overcoat, sat an old, unshaven, gray-bearded soldier as thin as a skeleton, with a stern sallow face and eyes intently fixed on Nicholas. The man’s neighbor on one side whispered something to him, pointing at Nicholas, who noticed that the old man wanted to speak to him. He drew nearer and saw that the old man had only one leg bent under him, the other had been amputated above the knee. His neighbor on the other side, who lay motionless some distance from him with his head thrown back, was a young soldier with a snub nose. His pale waxen face was still freckled and his eyes were rolled back. Nicholas looked at the young soldier and a cold chill ran down his back.

“Why, this one seems...” Nicholas began, turning to the assistant.

“And how we’ve been begging, your honor,” said the old soldier, his jaw quivering. “He’s been dead since morning. After all, we’re men, not dogs.”

“I’ll send someone at once. He shall be taken away—taken away at once,” said the assistant hurriedly. “Let us go, your honor.”

“Yes, yes, let us go,” said Nicholas hastily, and lowering his eyes and shrinking, he tried to pass unnoticed between the rows of reproachful envious eyes that were fixed upon him, and went out of the room.

Going along the corridor, the assistant led Nicholas to the officers’ wards, consisting of three rooms, the doors of which stood open. There were beds in these rooms and the sick and wounded officers were lying or sitting on them. Some were walking about the rooms in hospital dressing gowns. The first person Nicholas met in the officers’ ward was a thin little man with one arm, who was walking about the first room in a nightcap and

hospital dressing gown, with a pipe between his teeth. Nicholas looked at him, trying to remember where he had seen him before.

“See where we’ve met again!” said the little man. “I’m Artillery Captain Tushin, don’t you remember, who gave you a lift at the village of Schön Grabern? And I’ve had a bit cut off, you see...” he went on with a smile, pointing to the empty sleeve of his dressing gown. “Looking for Denisov? My neighbor,” he added when he heard who Nicholas wanted. “Here, here,” and Artillery Captain Tushin led him into the next room, from whence came sounds of several laughing voices.

“How can they laugh, or even live at all here?” thought Nicholas, still aware of that smell of decomposing flesh that had been so strong in the soldiers’ ward, and still seeming to see fixed on him those envious looks which had followed him out from both sides, and the face of that young soldier with eyes rolled back.

Denisov lay asleep on his bed with his head under the blanket, though it was nearly noon.

“Ah, Nicholas? How are you, how are you?” Denisov called out, still in the same voice as in the regiment, but Nicholas noticed sadly that under this habitual ease and animation some new, sinister, hidden feeling showed itself in the expression of Denisov’s face and the intonations of his voice.

Denisov

s wound, though a slight one, had not yet healed even now, six weeks after he had been hit. His face had the same swollen pallor as the faces of the other hospital patients, but it was not this that struck Nicholas. What struck him was that Denisov did not seem glad to see him, and smiled at him unnaturally. He did not ask about the regiment, nor about the general state of affairs, and when Nicholas spoke of these matters did not listen.

Nicholas even noticed that Denisov did not like to be reminded of the regiment, or in general of that other free life which was going on outside the hospital. He seemed to try to forget that old life and was only interested in

the affair with the commissariat officers. On Nicholas's inquiry as to how the matter stood, he at once produced from under his pillow a paper he had received from the commission and the rough draft of his answer to it. He became animated when he began reading his paper and specially drew Nicholas's attention to the stinging rejoinders he made to his enemies. His hospital companions, who had gathered around Nicholas—a fresh arrival from the world outside—gradually began to disperse as soon as Denisov began reading his answer. Nicholas noticed by their faces that all those gentlemen had already heard that story more than once and were tired of it. Only the man who had the next bed, a stout cavalryman, continued to sit on his bed, gloomily frowning and smoking a pipe, and little one-armed Artillery Captain Tushin still listened, shaking his head disapprovingly. In the middle of the reading, the cavalryman interrupted Denisov.

“But what I say is,” he said, turning to Nicholas, “it would be best simply to petition the Tzar for pardon. They say great rewards will now be distributed, and surely a pardon would be granted...”

“Me petition the Tzaw!” exclaimed Denisov, in a voice to which he tried hard to give the old energy and fire, but which sounded like an expression of irritable impotence. “What for? If I were a wobbler I would ask mercy, but I’m being court-martialed for bwinging wobblers to book. Let them twy me, I’m not afwaid of anyone. I’ve served the Tzar and my countwy honowably and have not stolen! And am I to be degwaded?... Listen, I’m w’iting to them stwaight. This is what I say: ‘If I had wobbled the Tweasuwy...’”

“It’s certainly well written,” said Artillery Captain Tushin, “but that’s not the point, Denisov,” and he also turned to Nicholas. “One has to submit, and Denisov doesn’t want to. You know the auditor told you it was a bad business.”

“Well, let it be bad,” said Denisov.

“The auditor wrote out a petition for you,” continued Artillery Captain Tushin, “and you ought to sign it and ask this gentleman to take it. No doubt he” (indicating Nicholas) “has connections on the staff. You won’t find a better opportunity.”

“Haven’t I said I’m not going to gwovel?” Denisov interrupted him and went on reading his paper.

Nicholas had not the courage to persuade Denisov, though he instinctively felt that the way advised by Artillery Captain Tushin and the other officers was the safest and though he would have been glad to be of service to Denisov. He knew his stubborn will and straightforward hasty temper.

When the reading of Denisov’s virulent reply, which took more than an hour, was over, Nicholas said nothing, and he spent the rest of the day in a most dejected state of mind amid Denisov’s hospital comrades, who had gathered round him, telling them what he knew and listening to their stories. Denisov was moodily silent all evening.

Late in the evening, when Nicholas was about to leave, he asked Denisov whether he had no commission for him.

“Yes, wait a bit,” said Denisov, glancing round at the officers, and taking his papers from under his pillow he went to the window, where he had an inkpot, and sat down to write.

“It seems it’s no use knocking one’s head against a wall!” Denisov said, coming from the window and giving Nicholas a large envelope. In it was the petition to the Tzar drawn up by the auditor, in which Denisov, without alluding to the offenses of the commissariat officials, simply asked for pardon.

“Hand it in. It seems...”

Denisov did not finish but gave a painfully unnatural smile.

Having returned to the regiment and told the commander the state of Denisov’s affairs, Nicholas rode to Tilsit with the letter to the Tzar.

On the thirteenth of June, Napoleon and the Tzar arrived in Tilsit to arrange a peace between the two nations. Boris had asked the important personage on whom he was in attendance, to include him in the suite appointed for the stay at Tilsit.

“I should like to see the great man,” Boris said, alluding to Napoleon, whom hitherto he, like everyone else, had always called Buonaparte.

“You are speaking of Buonaparte?” asked the general, smiling.

Boris looked at his general inquiringly and immediately saw that he was being tested.

“I am speaking, general, of the Tzar Napoleon,” he replied. The general patted him on the shoulder, with a smile.

“You will go far,” the general said and took him to Tilsit with him.

Boris was among the few present at the Niemen on the day the Tzar and Napoleon met to arrange a peace treaty. Boris saw the raft, decorated with monograms, saw Napoleon pass before the French Guards on the farther bank of the river, saw the pensive face of the Tzar as he sat in silence in a tavern on the bank of the Niemen awaiting Napoleon’s arrival, saw both leaders get into boats, and saw how Napoleon—reaching the raft first—stepped quickly forward to meet the Tzar and held out his hand to him, and how they both retired into the pavilion. Since he had begun to move in the highest circles Boris had made it his habit to watch attentively all that went on around him and to note it down. At the time of the meeting at Tilsit, he asked the names of those who had come with Napoleon and about the uniforms they wore, and listened attentively to words spoken by important personages. At the moment the leaders went into the pavilion he looked at his watch, and did not forget to look at it again when the Tzar came out. The interview lasted an hour and fifty-three minutes. Boris noted this down that same evening, among other facts he felt to be of historic importance. As the Tzar’s suite was a very small one, it was a matter of great importance, for a man who valued his success in the service, to be at Tilsit

on the occasion of this interview between the two leaders and having succeeded in this, Boris felt that henceforth his position was fully assured. He had not only become known, but people had grown accustomed to him and accepted him. Twice he had executed commissions to the Tzar himself so that the latter knew his face, and all those at court, far from cold-shouldering him as at first when they considered him a newcomer, would now have been surprised had he been absent.

Boris lodged with another adjutant, the Polish Count Zhilinski. Zhilinski, a Pole brought up in Paris, was rich, and passionately fond of the French, and almost every day of the stay at Tilsit, French officers of the Guard and from French headquarters were dining and lunching with him and Boris.

On the evening of the twenty-fourth of June, the Polish Count Zhilinski arranged a supper for his French friends. The guest of honor was an aide-de-camp of Napoleon's, there were also several French officers of the Guard, and a page of Napoleon's, a young lad of an old aristocratic French family. That same day, Nicholas, profiting by the darkness to avoid being recognized in civilian dress, came to Tilsit and went to the lodging occupied by Boris and the Polish Count Zhilinski.

Nicholas, in common with the whole army from which he came, was far from having experienced the change of feeling toward Napoleon and the French—who from being foes had suddenly become friends—that had taken place at headquarters and in Boris. In the army, Napoleon and the French were still regarded with mingled feelings of anger, contempt, and fear. Only recently, talking with one of General Platov's Cossack officers, Nicholas had argued that if Napoleon were taken prisoner he would be treated not as a sovereign, but as a criminal. Quite lately, happening to meet a wounded French colonel on the road, Nicholas had maintained with heat that peace was impossible between a legitimate sovereign and the criminal Napoleon. Nicholas was therefore unpleasantly struck by the presence of

French officers in Boris' lodging, dressed in uniforms he had been accustomed to seeing from quite a different point of view from the outposts of the flank. As soon as he noticed a French officer, who thrust his head out of the door, that warlike feeling of hostility that he always experienced at the sight of the enemy suddenly seized him. Nicholas stopped at the threshold and asked in Russian whether Boris lived there. Boris, hearing a strange voice in the anteroom, came out to meet him. An expression of annoyance showed itself for a moment on his face on first recognizing Nicholas.

"Ah, it's you? Very glad, very glad to see you," Boris said, however, coming toward him with a smile. But Nicholas had noticed his first impulse.

"I've come at a bad time I think. I should not have come, but I have business," he said coldly.

"No, I only wonder how you managed to get away from your regiment. *In a minute I shall be at your disposal.*", he said, answering someone who called him.

"I see I'm intruding," Nicholas repeated.

The look of annoyance had already disappeared from Boris' face: having evidently reflected and decided how to act, he very quietly took both Nicholas's hands and led him into the next room. His eyes, looking serenely and steadily at Nicholas, seemed to be veiled by something, as if screened by blue spectacles of conventionality. So it seemed to Nicholas.

"Oh, come now! As if you could come at a wrong time!" said Boris, and he led him into the room where the supper table was laid and introduced him to his guests, explaining that Nicholas was not a civilian, but a hussar officer, and an old friend of his.

"Count Zhilinski—*le Comte* N. N.—*le Capitaine* S. S.," said he, naming his guests. Nicholas looked frowningly at the Frenchmen, bowed reluctantly, and remained silent.

The Polish Count Zhiłinski evidently did not receive this new Russian person very willingly into his circle and did not speak to Nicholas. Boris did not appear to notice the constraint Nicholas produced and, with the same pleasant composure and the same veiled look in his eyes with which he had met Nicholas, tried to enliven the conversation. One of the Frenchmen, with the politeness characteristic of his countrymen, addressed the obstinately taciturn Nicholas, saying that the latter had probably come to Tilsit to see Napoleon.

“No, I came on business,” replied Nicholas, briefly.

Nicholas had been out of humor from the moment he noticed the look of dissatisfaction on Boris’ face, and as always happens to those in a bad humor, it seemed to Nicholas that everyone regarded him with aversion and that he was in everybody’s way. He really was in their way, for he alone took no part in the conversation which again became general. The looks the visitors cast on him seemed to say: “And what is he sitting here for?” He rose and went up to Boris.

“Anyhow, I’m in your way,” Nicholas said in a low tone. “Come and talk over my business and I’ll go away.”

“Oh, no, not at all,” said Boris. “But if you are tired, come and lie down in my room and have a rest.”

“Yes, really...”

They went into the little room where Boris slept. Nicholas, without sitting down, began at once, irritably (as if Boris were to blame in some way) telling him about Denisov’s affair, asking him whether, through his general, Boris could and would intercede with the Tzar on Denisov’s behalf and get Denisov’s petition handed in.

When he and Boris were alone, Nicholas felt for the first time that he could not look Boris in the face without a sense of awkwardness. Boris, with one leg, crossed over the other and stroking his left hand with the slender fingers of his right, listened to Nicholas as a general listens to the

report of a subordinate, now looking aside and now gazing straight into Nicholas's eyes with the same veiled look. Each time this happened Nicholas felt uncomfortable and cast down his eyes.

"I have heard of such cases and know that my general is very severe in such affairs. I think it would be best not to bring it before the Tzar, but to apply to the commander of the corps... But in general, I think..."

"So you don't want to do anything? Well then, say so!" Nicholas almost shouted, not looking Boris in the face.

Boris smiled.

"On the contrary, I will do what I can. Only I thought..."

At that moment Polish Count Zhiłinski's voice was heard calling Boris.

"Well then, go, go, go..." said Nicholas, and refusing supper and remaining alone in the little room, he walked up and down for a long time, hearing the lighthearted French conversation from the next room.

Nicholas had come to Tilsit the day least suitable for a petition on Denisov's behalf. He could not himself go to the general in attendance as he was in civilian clothes and had come to Tilsit without permission to do so, and Boris, even had he wished to, could not have done so on the following day. On that day, June 27, the preliminaries of the peace treaty were signed. The Tzar and Napoleon exchanged decorations: The Tzar received the Cross of the Legion of Honor and Napoleon received the Order of St. Andrei of the First Degree, and a dinner had been arranged for the evening, given by a battalion of the French Guards to the Preobrazhénsk battalion. Both sovereigns were to be present at that banquet.

Nicholas felt so ill at ease and uncomfortable with Boris that, when Boris looked in after supper, Nicholas pretended to be asleep, and early next morning went away, avoiding Boris. In his civilian clothes and a round hat, Nicholas wandered about the town, staring at the French and their uniforms and at the streets and houses where the Tzar and Napoleon were staying. In a square Nicholas saw tables being set up and preparations made for the

dinner; he saw the Russian and French colors draped from side to side of the streets, with huge monograms A and N. In the windows of the houses also flags and bunting were displayed.

“Boris doesn’t want to help me and I don’t want to ask him. That’s settled,” thought Nicholas. “All is over between us, but I won’t leave here without having done all I can for Denisov and certainly not without getting his letter to the Tzar. The Tzar!... He is here!” thought Nicholas, who had unconsciously returned to the house where the Tzar lodged.

Saddled horses were standing before the house and the suite was assembling, evidently preparing for the Tzar to come out.

“I may see him at any moment,” thought Nicholas. “If only I were to hand the letter direct to him and tell him all... could they really arrest me for my civilian clothes? Surely not! He would understand on whose side justice lies. The Tzar understands everything and knows everything. Who can be more just, more magnanimous than he? And even if they did arrest me for being here, what would it matter?” thought Nicholas, looking at an officer who was entering the house the Tzar occupied. “After all, people do go in... It’s all nonsense! I’ll go in and hand the letter to the Tzar myself so much the worse for Boris who drives me to it!” And suddenly with a determination he himself did not expect, Nicholas felt for the letter in his pocket and went straight to the house.

“No, I won’t miss my opportunity now, as I did after Austerlitz,” Nicholas thought, expecting every moment to meet the monarch, and conscious of the blood that rushed to his heart at the thought. “I will fall at the Tzar’s feet and beseech him. He will lift me up, will listen, and will even thank me. ‘I am happy when I can do good, but to remedy injustice is the greatest happiness,’” Nicholas fancied the Tzar saying. And passing people who looked after him with curiosity, Nicholas entered the porch of the Tzar’s house.

A broad staircase led straight up from the entry, and to the right, Nicholas saw a closed door. Below, under the staircase, was a door leading to the lower floor.

“Whom do you want?” someone inquired.

“To hand in a letter, a petition, to the Tzar,” said Nicholas, with a tremor in his voice.

“A petition? This way, to the officer on duty” (Nicholas was shown the door leading downstairs), “only it won’t be accepted.”

On hearing this indifferent voice, Nicholas grew frightened at what he was doing; the thought of meeting the Tzar at any moment was so fascinating and consequently so alarming that he was ready to run away, but the official who had questioned him opened the door, and Nicholas entered.

A man in braces, short and stout and about thirty years old, in white breeches and high boots and a batiste shirt that he had evidently only just put on, was standing in that room. His valet was buttoning on to the back of his breeches this new pair of handsome silk-embroidered braces that, for some reason, attracted Nicholas’s attention. This man was speaking to someone in the adjoining room.

“A good figure and in her first bloom,” the man in braces was saying, but on seeing Nicholas, he stopped short and frowned.

“What is it? A petition?”

“What is it?” asked the person in the other room.

“Another petitioner,” answered the man with the braces.

“Tell him to come later. He’ll be coming out directly, we must go.”

“Later... later! Tomorrow. It’s too late...”

Nicholas turned and was about to go, but the man in the braces stopped him.

“Whom have you come from? Who are you?”

“I come from Denisov,” answered Nicholas.

“Are you an officer?”

“Lieutenant Nicholas Rostov.”

“What audacity! Hand it in through your commander. And go along with you... go,” and the man in braces continued to put on the uniform the valet handed him.

Nicholas went back into the hall and noticed that on the porch there were many officers and generals in full parade uniform, whom he had to pass.

Cursing his temerity, his heart sinking at the thought of finding himself at any moment face to face with the Tzar and being put to shame and arrested in his presence, fully alive now to the impropriety of his conduct and repenting of it, Nicholas, with downcast eyes, was making his way out of the house through the brilliant suite when a familiar voice called him and a hand detained him.

“What are you doing here, sir, in civilian dress?” asked a deep voice.

It was a cavalry general who had obtained the Tzar’s special favor during this campaign, and who had formerly commanded the division in which Nicholas was serving.

Nicholas, in dismay, began justifying himself, but seeing the kindly, jocular face of the general, he took him aside and in an excited voice told him the whole affair, asking him to intercede for Denisov, whom the general knew. Having heard Nicholas to the end, the general shook his head gravely.

“I’m sorry, sorry for that fine fellow. Give me the letter.”

Hardly had Nicholas handed him the letter and finished explaining Denisov’s case, when hasty steps and the jingling of spurs were heard on the stairs, and the general, leaving him, went to the porch. The gentlemen of the Tzar’s suite ran down the stairs and went to their horses. Hayne, the same groom who had been at Austerlitz, led up the Tzar’s horse, and the faint creak of a footstep Nicholas knew at once was heard on the stairs. Forgetting the danger of being recognized, Nicholas went close to the

porch, together with some inquisitive civilians, and again, after two years, saw those features he adored: that same face and same look and step, and the same union of majesty and mildness... And the feeling of enthusiasm and love for the Tzar rose again in Nicholas's soul in all its old force. In the uniform of the Preobrazhensk regiment—white chamois-leather breeches and high boots—and wearing a star Nicholas did not know (it was that of the *Légion d'honneur*), the Tzar came out into the porch, putting on his gloves and carrying his hat under his arm. He stopped and looked about him, brightening everything around with his glance. He spoke a few words to some of the generals, and, recognizing the former commander of Nicholas's division, smiled and beckoned to him.

All the suite drew back and Nicholas saw the general talking for some time to the Tzar.

The Tzar said a few words to him and took a step toward his horse. Again the crowd of members of the suite and street gazers (among whom was Nicholas) moved nearer to the Tzar. Stopping beside his horse, with his hand on the saddle, the Tzar turned to the cavalry general and said in a loud voice, evidently wishing to be heard by all:

"I cannot do it, general. I cannot, because the law is stronger than I," and the Tzar raised his foot to the stirrup.

The general bowed his head respectfully, and the monarch mounted and rode down the street at a gallop. Beside himself with enthusiasm, Nicholas ran after him with the crowd.

The Tzar rode to the square where facing one another, Nicholas's battalion stood on the right and a battalion of the French Guards in their bearskin caps on the left.

As the Tzar rode up to one flank of the battalions, which presented arms, another group of horsemen galloped up to the opposite flank, and at the head of them, Nicholas recognized Napoleon. It could be no one else. Napoleon came at a gallop, wearing a small hat, a blue uniform open over a

white vest, and the St. Andrei ribbon over his shoulder. He was riding a very fine thoroughbred gray Arab horse with a crimson gold-embroidered saddlecloth. On approaching the Tzar he raised his hat, and as he did so, Nicholas, with his cavalryman's eye, could not help noticing that Napoleon did not sit well or firmly in the saddle. The battalions shouted "Hurrah!" and "*Long live Napoleon!*" Napoleon said something to the Tzar, and both sovereigns dismounted and took each other's hands. Napoleon's face wore an unpleasant and artificial smile. The Tzar was saying something affable to him.

In spite of the trampling of the French gendarmes' horses, which were pushing back the crowd, Nicholas kept his eyes on every movement of the Tzar and Napoleon. It struck him as a surprise that the Tzar treated Napoleon as an equal and that Napoleon was quite at ease with the Tzar as if such relations with a Tzar were an everyday matter to him.

The Tzar and Napoleon, with the long train of their suites, approached the right flank of Nicholas's battalion and came straight up to the crowd standing there. The crowd unexpectedly found itself so close to the leaders that Nicholas, standing in the front row, was afraid he might be recognized.

"Tzar, I ask your permission to present the Legion of Honor to the bravest of your soldiers," said a sharp, precise voice, articulating every letter.

This was said by the undersized Napoleon, looking up straight into Napoleon's eyes. Napoleon listened attentively to what was said to him and, bending his head, smiled pleasantly.

"To him who has borne himself most bravely in this last war," added Napoleon, accentuating each syllable, as with a composure and assurance exasperating to Nicholas, he ran his eyes over the Russian ranks drawn up before him, who all presented arms with their eyes fixed on the Tzar.

"Will Your Majesty allow me to consult the colonel?" said the Tzar and took a few hasty steps toward Colonel Kozlovski, the commander of the

battalion.

Napoleon meanwhile began taking the glove off his small white hand, tore it in doing so, and threw it away. An aide-de-camp behind him rushed forward and picked it up.

“To whom shall it be given?” the Tzar asked Colonel Kozlovski, in Russian in a low voice.

“To whomever Your Majesty commands.”

The Tzar knit his brows with dissatisfaction and, glancing back, remarked:

“But we must give Napoleon an answer.”

Aide-de-camp Kozlovski scanned the ranks resolutely and included Nicholas in his scrutiny.

“Can it be me?” thought Nicholas.

“Lázarev!” the colonel called, with a frown, and Lázarev, the first soldier in the rank, stepped briskly forward.

“Where are you off to? Stop here!” voices whispered to Lázarev who did not know where to go. Lázarev stopped, casting a sidelong look at his colonel in alarm. His face twitched, as often happens to soldiers called before the ranks.

Napoleon slightly turned his head and put his plump little hand out behind him as if to take something. The members of his suite, guessing at once what he wanted, moved about and whispered as they passed something from one to another, and a page—the same one Nicholas had seen the previous evening at Boris’—ran forward and, bowing respectfully over the outstretched hand and not keeping it waiting a moment, laid in it an Order on a red ribbon. Napoleon, without looking, pressed two fingers together and the badge was between them. Then Napoleon approached Lázarev (who rolled his eyes and persistently gazed at his own monarch), looked round at the Tzar to imply that what he was now doing was done for the sake of his new ally, and the small white hand holding the Order

touched one of Lázarev's buttons. It was as if Napoleon knew that it was only necessary for his hand to deign to touch that soldier's breast for the soldier to be forever happy, rewarded, and distinguished from everyone else in the world. Napoleon merely laid the cross on Lázarev's breast and, dropping his hand, turned toward the Tzar as though sure that the cross would adhere there. And it really did.

Officious hands, Russian and French, immediately seized the cross and fastened it to Lázarev's uniform. Lázarev glanced morosely at the little man with white hands who was doing something to him and, still standing motionless presenting arms, looked again straight into the Tzar's eyes as if asking whether he should stand there, or go away, or do something else. But receiving no orders, Lázarev remained for some time in that rigid position.

The Tzar and Napoleon remounted and rode away. Nicholas's battalion, breaking rank, mingled with the French Guards and sat down at the tables prepared for them.

Lázarev sat in the place of honor. Both Russian and French officers embraced him, congratulated him, and pressed his hands. Crowds of officers and civilians drew near merely to see him. A rumble of Russian and French voices and laughter filled the air around the tables in the square. Two officers with flushed faces, looking cheerful and happy, passed by Nicholas.

"What d'you think of the treat? All on a silver plate," one of them was saying. "Have you seen Lázarev?"

"I have."

"Tomorrow, I hear, the Russian regiment will give them a dinner."

"Yes, but what luck for Lázarev! Twelve hundred francs' pension for life."

"Here's a cap, lads!" shouted a Russian soldier, donning a shaggy French cap.

"It's a fine thing! First-rate!"

“Have you heard the password?” asked one Russian officer of another. “The day before yesterday it was ‘*Napoleon, France, bravery*’; yesterday, ‘*The Tzar, Russia, grandeur*.’ One day our Tzar gives it and the next day Napoleon. Tomorrow our Tzar will send a St. George’s Cross to the bravest of the French Guards. It has to be done. The Tzar must respond in kind.”

Boris, too, with his friend Zhilínski, came to see the regimental banquet. On his way back, Boris noticed Nicholas standing by the corner of a house.

“Nicholas! How d’you do? We missed one another,” Boris said, and could not refrain from asking what was the matter, so strangely dismal and troubled was Nicholas’s face.

“Nothing, nothing,” replied Nicholas.

“You’ll call round?”

“Yes, I will.”

Nicholas stood at that corner for a long time, watching the feast from a distance. In Nicholas’s mind, a painful process was going on that he could not bring to a conclusion. Terrible doubts rose in his soul. Now he remembered Denisov with his changed expression, his submission, and the whole hospital, with arms and legs torn off and its dirt and disease. So vividly did he recall that hospital stench of dead flesh that he looked around to see where the smell came from. Next, he thought of that self-satisfied Napoleon, with his small white hand, who was now suddenly a respected leader, liked and respected by the Tzar. Then why those severed arms and legs and those dead men?... Then again he thought of Lázarev rewarded and Denisov punished and unpardoned. Nicholas caught himself harboring such strange thoughts that he was frightened.

The smell of the food the Russian regiment was eating and a sense of hunger recalled Nicholas from these reflections; he had to get something to eat before going away. He went to a hotel he had noticed that morning. There he found so many people, among them officers who, like himself,

had come in civilian clothes, that he had difficulty in getting a dinner. Two officers of his own division joined Nicholas. The conversation naturally turned to the peace. The officers, Nicholas's comrades, like most of the army, were outraged with the peace treaty concluded after the battle of Friedland. They said that had we held out a little longer Napoleon would have been done for, as his troops had neither provisions nor ammunition. Nicholas ate and drank (chiefly the latter) in silence. Nicholas finished a couple of bottles of wine by himself. The process in his mind went on tormenting him without reaching a conclusion. He feared giving way to his thoughts, yet could not get rid of them. Suddenly, on one of the officers' saying that it was humiliating to look at the French, Nicholas began shouting with uncalled-for wrath, and therefore much to the surprise of the officers:

"How can you judge what's best?" Nicholas cried, the blood suddenly rushing to his face. "How can you judge the Tzar's actions in making peace with the French? What right have we to argue? We cannot comprehend either the Tzar's aims or his actions!"

"But I never said a word about the Tzar!" said the officer, justifying himself, and unable to understand Nicholas's outburst, except on the supposition that he was drunk.

But Nicholas did not listen to him.

"We are not diplomatic officials, we are soldiers and nothing more," Nicholas went on. "If we are ordered to die, we must die. If we're punished, it means that we have deserved it, it's not for us to judge. If the Tzar pleases to recognize Napoleon as a respected leader and to conclude an alliance with him, it means that that is the right thing to do. If once we begin judging and arguing about everything, nothing sacred will be left! That way we shall be saying there is no God—nothing!" shouted Nicholas, banging the table—very little to the point as it seemed to his listeners, but quite relevantly to the course of his own thoughts.

“Our business is to do our duty, to fight and not to think! That’s all...” said Nicholas.

“And to drink,” said one of the officers, not wishing to quarrel.

“Yes, and to drink,” assented Nicholas. “Hullo there! Another bottle!” he shouted.

In 1808 the Tzar went to Erfurt for a fresh interview with Napoleon, and in the upper circles of St. Petersburg, there was much talk of the grandeur of this important meeting.

In 1809 the intimate peace between “the world’s two arbiters,” as Napoleon and the Tzar were called, was such that when Napoleon declared war on Austria, a Russian corps crossed the frontier to cooperate with our old enemy Napoleon against our old ally the Emperor of Austria, and in court circles, the possibility of marriage between Napoleon and one of the Tzar’s sisters was spoken of. But besides considerations of foreign policy, the attention of Russian society was at that time keenly directed on the internal changes that were being undertaken in all the departments of government.

Life meanwhile—real life, with its essential interests of health and sickness, toil and rest, and its intellectual interests in thought, science, poetry, music, love, friendship, hatred, and passions—went on as usual, independently of and apart from political friendship or enmity with Napoleon and from all the schemes of reconstruction.

BOOK 6: 1808 - 10



*A*ndrei had spent two years continuously in the country.

All the plans Pierre had attempted on his own estates—and constantly changing from one thing to another had never accomplished—were, in contrast, carried out by Andrei without display and without perceptible difficulty.

Andrei had in the highest degree a practical tenacity that Pierre lacked, and without fuss or strain on his part, this set things going.

On one of Andrei's estates, the three hundred serfs were liberated and became free agricultural laborers—this being one of the first examples of this kind in Russia. On other estates, the serfs' compulsory labor was commuted for a quitrent. A trained midwife was engaged for the village of Boguchárovo at Andrei's expense, and a priest was paid to teach reading and writing to the children of the peasants and household serfs.

Andrei spent half his time at Bald Hills with his father, Baron Bolkonski, and his son, Nikolenka, who was still in the care of nurses. The other half he spent in "Boguchárovo Cloister," as his father called Andrei's estate. Despite the indifference to the affairs of the world he had expressed to Pierre, Andrei diligently followed all that went on, received many books, and to his surprise noticed that when he or Baron Bolkonski had visitors from St. Petersburg, the very vortex of life, these people lagged behind

himself—who never left the country—in knowledge of what was happening in home and foreign affairs.

Besides being occupied with his estates and reading a great variety of books, Andrei was at this time busy with a critical survey of our last two unfortunate campaigns, and with drawing up a proposal for a reform of the army rules and regulations.

In the spring of 1809, Andrei went to visit the Ryazán estates which had been inherited by Nikolenka, whose guardian he was.

Warmed by the spring sunshine, Andrei sat in the *carriage* looking at the new grass, the first leaves on the birches, and the first puffs of white spring clouds floating across the clear blue sky. He was not thinking of anything but looked absent-mindedly and cheerfully from side to side.

Andrei and his driver and coachman crossed the ferry where he had talked with Pierre the year before. They went through the muddy village, past threshing floors and green fields of winter rye, downhill where snow still lodged near the bridge, uphill where the clay had been liquefied by the rain, past strips of stubble land and bushes touched with green here and there, and into a birch forest growing on both sides of the road. In the forest it was almost hot, no wind could be felt. The birches with their sticky green leaves were motionless, and lilac-colored flowers and the first blades of green grass were pushing up and lifting last year's leaves. The coarse evergreen color of the small fir trees scattered here and there among the birches was an unpleasant reminder of winter. On entering the forest the horses began to snort and sweated visibly.

Andrei's footman made some remark to the coachman; the footman assented. But apparently, the coachman's sympathy was not enough for the footman, and he turned on the box toward Andrei.

"How pleasant it is, your excellency!" the footman said with a respectful smile.

"What?"

“It’s pleasant, your excellency!”

“What is he talking about?” thought Andrei. “Oh, the spring, I suppose,” he thought as he turned round. “Yes, really everything is green already... How early! The birches and cherry and alders too are coming out... But the oaks show no sign yet. Ah, here is one oak!”

At the edge of the road stood an oak. Probably ten times the age of the birches that formed the forest, it was ten times as thick and twice as tall as they. It was an enormous tree, its girth twice as great as a man could embrace, and evidently long ago some of its branches had been broken off and its bark scarred. With its huge ungainly limbs sprawling unsymmetrically, and its gnarled hands and fingers, it stood an aged, stern, and scornful monster among the smiling birch trees. Only the dead-looking evergreen firs dotted about in the forest, and this oak refused to yield to the charm of spring or notice either the spring or the sunshine.

“Spring, love, happiness!” this oak seemed to say. “Are you not weary of that stupid, meaningless, constantly repeated fraud? Always the same and always a fraud? There is no spring, no sun, and no happiness! Look at those cramped dead firs, ever the same, and at me too, sticking out my broken and barked fingers just where they have grown, whether from my back or my sides: as they have grown so I stand, and I do not believe in your hopes and your lies.”

As Andrei passed through the forest he turned several times to look at that oak, as if expecting something from it. Under the oak, too, were flowers and grass, but it stood among them scowling, rigid, misshapen, and grim as ever.

“Yes, the oak is right, a thousand times right,” thought Andrei. “Let others—the young—yield afresh to that fraud, but we know life, our life is finished!”

A whole sequence of new thoughts, hopeless but mournfully pleasant, rose in Andrei’s soul in connection with that tree. During this journey he, as

it were, considered his life afresh and arrived at his old conclusion, restful in its hopelessness: that it was not for him to begin anything anew—but that he must live out his life, content to do no harm, and not disturbing himself or desiring anything.

Andrei had to see Count Rostov, who was put in charge of the district in connection with the affairs of the Ryazán estate of which he was the trustee. Andrei went to visit him in the middle of May.

It was now hot spring weather. The whole forest was already clothed in green. It was dusty and so hot that on passing near water one longed to bathe.

Andrei, depressed and preoccupied with the business about which he had to speak to Count Rostov, was driving up the avenue on the grounds of the Rostovs' house at Otrádnœ. He heard merry girlish cries behind some trees on the right and saw a group of girls running to cross the path of his *carriage*. Ahead of the rest and nearer to him ran a dark-haired, remarkably slim, pretty girl in a yellow chintz dress, with a white handkerchief on her head from under which loose locks of hair escaped. The girl was shouting something but, seeing that he was a stranger, ran back laughing without looking at him.

Suddenly, Andrei did not know why, he felt a pang. The day was so beautiful, the sun so bright, everything around so gay, but that slim pretty girl did not know, or wish to know, of his existence and was contented and cheerful in her own separate—probably foolish—but bright and happy life. “What is she so glad about? What is she thinking of? Not of the military regulations or of the arrangement of the Ryazán serfs' quitrents. Of what is she thinking? Why is she so happy?” Andrei asked himself with instinctive curiosity.

In 1809 Count Rostov was living at Otrádnœ just as he had done in former years, that is, entertaining almost the whole province with hunts,

theatricals, dinners, and music. Count Rostov was glad to see Andrei, as he was to see any new visitor, and insisted on his staying the night.

During the dull day, in the course of which Andrei was entertained by his elderly hosts and by the more important of the visitors (Count Rostov's house was crowded on account of an approaching name day), Andrei repeatedly glanced at Natasha, gay and laughing among the younger members of the company, and asked himself each time, "What is she thinking about? Why is she so glad?"

That night, alone in new surroundings, Andrei was long unable to sleep. He read awhile and then put out his candle, but relit it. It was hot in the room, the inside shutters of which were closed. He was cross with the stupid old man (as he called Count Rostov), who had made him stay by assuring him that some necessary documents had not yet arrived from town, and he was vexed with himself for having stayed.

Andrei got up and went to the window to open it. As soon as he opened the shutters the moonlight, as if it had long been watching for this, burst into the room. He opened the casement. The night was fresh, bright, and very still. Just before the window was a row of pollard trees, looking black on one side and with a silvery light on the other. Beneath the trees grew some kind of lush, wet, bushy vegetation with silver-lit leaves and stems here and there. Farther back beyond the dark trees a roof glittered with dew, to the right was a leafy tree with a brilliantly white trunk and branches, and above it shone the moon, nearly at its full, in a pale, almost starless, spring sky. Andrei leaned his elbows on the window ledge and his eyes rested on that sky.

Andrei's room was on the first floor. Those in the rooms above were also awake. He heard female voices overhead.

"Just once more," said a girlish voice above him which Andrei recognized at once as Natasha's.

"But when are you coming to bed?" replied another voice.

“I won’t, I can’t sleep, what’s the use? Come now for the last time.”

Two girlish voices sang a musical passage—the end of some song.

“Oh, how lovely! Now go to sleep, and there’s an end to it.”

“You go to sleep, but I can’t,” said Natasha’s voice, coming nearer to the window. She was evidently leaning right out, for the rustle of her dress and even her breathing could be heard. Everything was stone-still, like the moon and its light and the shadows. Andrei, too, dared not stir, for fear of betraying his unintentional presence.

“Sonya! Sonya!” Andrei again heard Natasha. “Oh, how can you sleep? Only look how glorious it is! Ah, how glorious! Do wake up, Sonya!” she said almost with tears in her voice. “There never, never was such a lovely night before!”

Sonya made some reluctant reply.

“Do just come and see what a moon!... Oh, how lovely! Come here... Darling, Sonya, come here! There, you see? I feel like sitting down on my heels, putting my arms around my knees like this, straining tight, as tight as possible, and flying away! Like this...”

“Take care, you’ll fall out.”

Andrei heard the sound of a scuffle and Sonya’s disapproving voice: “It’s past one o’clock.”

“Oh, you only spoil things for me. All right, go, go!”

Again all was silent, but Andrei knew Natasha was still sitting there. From time to time he heard a soft rustle and at times a sigh.

“Oh God, Oh God! What does it mean?” Natasha suddenly exclaimed. “To bed then, if it must be!” and she slammed the casement.

“For Natasha, I might as well not exist!” thought Andrei while he listened to her voice, for some reason expecting yet fearing that she might say something about him. “There she is again! As if it were on purpose,” thought he.

In Andrei's soul there suddenly arose such an unexpected turmoil of youthful thoughts and hopes, contrary to the whole tenor of his life, that unable to explain his condition to himself he lay down and fell asleep at once.

The next morning, having taken leave of no one but Count Rostov, and not waiting for the ladies to appear, Andrei set off for home.

It was already the beginning of June when on Andrei's return journey he drove into the birch forest where the gnarled old oak had made so strange and memorable an impression on him. In the forest, the harness bells sounded yet more muffled than they had done six weeks before, for now, all was thick, shady, and dense, and the young firs dotted about in the forest did not jar on the general beauty but, lending themselves to the mood around, were delicately green with fluffy young shoots.

The whole day had been hot. Somewhere a storm was gathering, but only a small cloud had scattered some raindrops lightly, sprinkling the road and the sappy leaves. The left side of the forest was dark in the shade, and the right side glittered in the sunlight, wet and shiny and scarcely swayed by the breeze. Everything was in blossom, the nightingales trilled, and their voices reverberated now near, now far away.

"Yes, here in this forest was that oak with which I agreed," thought Andrei. "But where is it?" he again wondered, gazing at the left side of the road, and without recognizing it he looked with admiration at the very oak he sought. The old oak, quite transfigured, spreading out a canopy of sappy dark-green foliage, stood rapt and slightly trembling in the rays of the evening sun. Neither gnarled fingers nor old scars nor old doubts and sorrows were any of them in evidence now. Through the hard century-old bark, even where there were no twigs, leaves had sprouted such as one could hardly believe the old veteran could have produced.

"Yes, it is the same oak," thought Andrei, and all at once, he was seized by an unreasoning springtime feeling of joy and renewal. All the best

moments of his life suddenly rose to his memory. Austerlitz with the lofty heavens, his wife's dead reproachful face, Pierre at the ferry, that girl thrilled by the beauty of the night, and that night itself and the moon, and... all this rushed suddenly to his mind.

"No, life is not over at thirty-one!" Andrei suddenly decided finally and decisively. "It is not enough for me to know what I have in me—everyone must know it: Pierre, and that young girl who wanted to fly away into the sky, everyone must know me, so that my life may not be lived for myself alone while others live so apart from it, but so that it may be reflected in them all, and they and I may live in harmony!"

On reaching home Andrei decided to go to St. Petersburg that autumn and found all sorts of reasons for this decision. A whole series of sensible and logical considerations showing it to be essential for him to go to St. Petersburg, and even to re-enter the service, kept springing up in his mind. He could not now understand how he could ever even have doubted the necessity of taking an active share in life, just as a month before he had not understood how the idea of leaving the quiet country could ever enter his head. It now seemed clear to him that all his experience of life must be senselessly wasted unless he applied it to some kind of work and again played an active part in life. Andrei did not even remember how formerly, on the strength of similar wretched logical arguments, it had seemed obvious that he would be degrading himself if he now, after the lessons he had had in life, allowed himself to believe in the possibility of being useful and in the possibility of happiness or love. Now reason suggested quite the opposite. After that journey to Ryazán, he found the country dull; his former pursuits no longer interested him, and often when sitting alone in his study he got up, went to the mirror, and gazed a long time at his own face. Then he would turn away to the portrait of his dead Lise, who with hair curled *in the Greek fashion* looked tenderly and gaily at him out of the gilt

frame. She did not now say those former terrible words to him, but looked simply, merrily, and inquisitively at him. And Andrei, crossing his arms behind him, long paced the room, now frowning, now smiling, as he reflected on those irrational, inexpressible thoughts, secret as a crime, which altered his whole life and were connected with Pierre, with fame, with the girl at the window, the oak, and woman's beauty and love. And if anyone came into his room at such moments he was particularly cold, stern, and above all unpleasantly logical.

"My dear," Marya entering at such a moment would say, "Nikolenka can't go out today, it's very cold."

"If it were hot," Andrei would reply at such times very dryly to Marya, "he could go out in his smock, but as it is cold he must wear warm clothes, which were designed for that purpose. That is what follows from the fact that it is cold; and not that a child who needs fresh air should remain at home," he would add with extreme logic as if punishing someone for those secret illogical emotions that stirred within him.

At such moments Marya would think about how intellectual work dries men up.

Andrei arrived in St. Petersburg in August 1809. It was the time when the youthful Secretary of State Speransky was at the zenith of his fame and his reforms of Russia were being pushed forward with the greatest energy. That same August, the Tzar was thrown from his *carriage*, injured his leg, and remained for three weeks at Peterhof, receiving Secretary of State Speransky every day and no one else. At that time the two famous decrees were being prepared that so agitated society—abolishing court ranks and introducing examinations to qualify for the grades of Collegiate Assessor and State Councilor—and not merely these but a whole state constitution, intended to change the existing order of government in Russia: legal, administrative, and financial, from the Council of State down to the district tribunals. Now those vague liberal dreams with which the Tzar had

ascended the throne, and which he had tried to put into effect with the aid of his associates, Czartorýski, Novosíltsev, Kochubéy, and Strógonov—whom he himself in jest had called his *Public safety committee*—were taking shape and being realized.

Now all these men were replaced by Secretary of State Speransky on the civil side, and War Minister Arakchéev on the military. Soon after his arrival Andrei, as a gentleman of the chamber, presented himself at court and at a levee. The Tzar, though he met him twice, did not favor him with a single word. It had always seemed to Andrei before that he was antipathetic to the Tzar and that the latter disliked his face and personality generally, and in the cold, repellent glance the Tzar gave him, he now found further confirmation of this surmise. The courtiers explained the Tzar's neglect of him by the Tzar's displeasure at Andrei not having served since 1805.

"I know myself that one cannot help one's sympathies and antipathies," thought Andrei, "so it will not do to present my proposal for the reform of the army regulations to the Tzar personally, but the project will speak for itself."

Andrei mentioned what he had written to an old general, a friend of his father's. The general made an appointment to see him, received him graciously, and promised to inform the Tzar. A few days later Andrei received notice that he was to go to see the War Minister Arakchéev.

On the appointed day Andrei entered War Minister Arakchéev's waiting room at nine in the morning.

Andrei did not know War Minister Arakchéev personally, had never seen him, and all he had heard of him inspired him with but little respect for the man.

"He is War Minister, a man trusted by the Tzar, and I need not concern myself about his personal qualities: he has been commissioned to consider my project, so he alone can get it adopted," thought Andrei as he waited

among a number of important and unimportant people in War Minister Arakchéev's waiting room.

During his military service, chiefly as an adjutant, Andrei had seen the anterooms of many important men, and the different types of such rooms were well known to him. War Minister Arakchéev's anteroom had quite a special character. The faces of the unimportant people awaiting their turn for an audience showed embarrassment and servility; the faces of those of higher rank expressed a common feeling of awkwardness, covered by a mask of unconcern and ridicule of themselves, their situation, and the person for whom they were waiting. Some walked thoughtfully up and down, and others whispered and laughed. Andrei heard the nickname "Síla Andréevich" and the words, "*Uncle* will give it to us hot," in reference to War Minister Arakchéev. One general (an important personage), evidently feeling offended at having to wait so long, sat crossing and uncrossing his legs and smiling contemptuously to himself.

But the moment the door opened one feeling alone appeared on all faces—that of fear. Andrei for the second time asked the adjutant on duty to take in his name, but received an ironical look and was told that his turn would come in due course. After some others had been shown in and out of the minister's room by the adjutant on duty, an officer who struck Andrei by his humiliated and frightened air was admitted at that terrible door. This officer's audience lasted a long time. Then suddenly the grating sound of a harsh voice was heard from the other side of the door, and the officer—with pale face and trembling lips—came out and passed through the waiting room, clutching his head.

After this Andrei was conducted to the door and the officer on duty said in a whisper, "To the right, at the window."

Andrei entered a plain tidy room and saw at the table a man of forty with a long waist, a long closely cropped head, deep wrinkles, scowling

brows above dull greenish-hazel eyes, and an overhanging red nose. War Minister Arakchéev turned his head toward him without looking at him.

“What is your petition?” asked War Minister Arakchéev.

“I am not petitioning, your excellency,” returned Andrei quietly.

War Minister Arakchéev’s eyes turned toward him.

“Sit down,” he said.

“I am not petitioning about anything. The Tzar has deigned to send your excellency a project submitted by me...”

“You see, my dear Andrei, I have read your project,” interrupted War Minister Arakchéev, uttering only the first words amiably and then—again without looking at Andrei—relapsing gradually into a tone of grumbling contempt. “You are proposing new military laws? There are many laws but no one to carry out the old ones. Nowadays everybody designs laws, it is easier writing than doing.”

“I came at the Tzar’s wish to learn from your excellency how you propose to deal with the memorandum I have presented,” said Andrei politely.

“I have endorsed a resolution on your memorandum and sent it to the committee. I do not approve of it,” said War Minister Arakchéev, rising and taking a paper from his writing table. “Here!” and he handed it to Andrei.

Across the paper was scrawled in pencil, without capital letters, misspelled, and without punctuation: “Unsoundly constructed because resembles an imitation of the French military code and from the Articles of War needlessly deviating.”

“To what committee has the memorandum been referred?” inquired Andrei.

“To the Committee on Army Regulations, I have recommended that your honor should be appointed a member, but without a salary.”

Andrei smiled.

“I don’t want one.”

“A member without salary,” repeated War Minister Arakchéev. “I have the honor... Eh! Call the next one! Who else is there?” he shouted, after bowing to Andrei.

While waiting for the announcement of his appointment to the committee Andrei looked up his former acquaintances, particularly those he knew to be in power and whose aid he might need. In St. Petersburg Andrei now experienced the same feeling he had had on the eve of a battle when troubled by anxious curiosity and irresistibly attracted to the ruling circles where the future, on which the fate of millions depended, was being shaped. From the irritation of the older men, the curiosity of the uninitiated, the reserve of the initiated, the hurry and preoccupation of everyone, and the innumerable committees and commissions of whose existence he learned every day, he felt that now, in 1809, here in St. Petersburg a vast civil conflict was in preparation, the new Marshal of which was a mysterious person he did not know, but who was supposed to be a man of genius—Secretary of State Speransky. And this movement of reconstruction of which Andrei had a vague idea, and Secretary of State Speransky its chief promoter, began to interest him so keenly that the question of the army regulations quickly receded to a secondary place in his consciousness.

Andrei was most favorably placed to secure good reception in the highest and most diverse St. Petersburg circles of the day. The reforming party cordially welcomed and courted him, in the first place because he was reputed to be clever and very well-read, and secondly because by liberating his serfs he had obtained the reputation of being a liberal. The party of the old and dissatisfied, who censured the innovations, turned to him expecting his sympathy in their disapproval of the reforms, simply because he was the son of his father. The feminine society world welcomed Andrei gladly because he was rich, distinguished, a good match, and almost a newcomer, with a halo of romance on account of his supposed death and the tragic loss of his wife. Besides this, the general opinion of all who had known him

previously was that he had greatly improved during these last five years, having softened and grown more manly, lost his former affectation, pride, and contemptuous irony, and acquired the serenity that comes with years. People talked about him, were interested in him, and wanted to meet him.

The day after his interview with War Minister Arakchéev, Andrei spent the evening at Kochubéy's. Andrei told Kochubéy of his interview with *Síla Andréevich* (Kochubéy spoke of War Minister Arakchéev by that nickname with the same vague irony Andrei had noticed in the War Minister's anteroom).

"My dear, even in this case you can't do without Secretary of State Speransky. He manages everything. I'll speak to him. He has promised to come this evening."

"What has Secretary of State Speransky to do with the army regulations?" asked Andrei.

Kochubéy shook his head smilingly as if surprised at Andrei's simplicity.

"We were talking to him about you a few days ago," Kochubéy continued, "and about your freed plowmen."

"Oh, is it you, Andrei, who have freed your serfs?" said an old man of Katerina's day, turning contemptuously toward Andrei.

"It was a small estate that brought in no profit," replied Andrei, trying to extenuate his action so as not to irritate the old man uselessly.

"Afraid of being late..." said the old man, looking at Kochubéy.

"There's one thing I don't understand," the old man continued. "Who will plow the land if they are set free? It is easy to write laws, but difficult to rule... Just the same as now—I ask you, Count—who will be heads of the departments when everybody has to pass examinations?"

"Those who pass the examinations, I suppose," replied Kochubéy, crossing his legs and glancing around.

“Well, I have Pryánichnikov serving under me, a splendid man, a priceless man, but he’s sixty. Is he to go up for examination?”

“Yes, that’s a difficulty, as education is not at all general, but...”

Count Kochubéy did not finish. He rose, took Andrei by the arm, and went to meet a tall, bald, fair man of about forty with a large open forehead and a long face of unusual and peculiar whiteness, who was just entering. The newcomer wore a blue swallow-tail coat with a cross suspended from his neck and a star on his left breast. It was Secretary of State Speransky. Andrei recognized him at once, and felt a throb within him, as happens at critical moments of life. Whether it was from respect, envy, or anticipation, he did not know. Secretary of State Speransky’s whole figure was of a peculiar type that made him easily recognizable. In the society in which Andrei lived, he had never seen anyone who together with awkward and clumsy gestures possessed such calmness and self-assurance; he had never seen so resolute yet gentle an expression as that in those half-closed, rather humid eyes, or so firm a smile that expressed nothing; nor had he heard such a refined, smooth, soft voice; above all he had never seen such delicate whiteness of face or hands—hands which were broad, but very plump, soft, and white. Such whiteness and softness Andrei had only seen on the faces of soldiers who had been long in hospital. This was Secretary of State Speransky, reporter to the Tzar at Erfurt, where he had more than once met and talked with Napoleon.

Secretary of State Speransky did not shift his eyes from one face to another as people involuntarily do on entering a large company and was in no hurry to speak. He spoke slowly, with an assurance that he would be listened to, and he looked only at the person with whom he was conversing.

Andrei followed Secretary of State Speransky’s every word and movement with particular attention. As happens to some people, especially to men who judge those near to them severely, Andrei always on meeting anyone new—especially anyone whom, like Secretary of State Speransky,

he knew by reputation—expected to discover in him the perfection of human qualities.

Secretary of State Speransky told Kochubéy he was sorry he had been unable to come sooner as he had been detained at the palace. He did not say that the Tzar had kept him, and Andrei noticed this affectation of modesty. When Kochubéy introduced Andrei, Secretary of State Speransky slowly turned his eyes to Andrei with his customary smile and looked at him in silence.

“I am very glad to make your acquaintance. I had heard of you, as everyone has,” he said after a pause.

Kochubéy said a few words about the reception War Minister Arakchéev had given Andrei. Secretary of State Speransky smiled more markedly.

“The chairman of the Committee on Army Regulations is my good friend Monsieur Magnítski,” Secretary of State Speransky said, fully articulating every word and syllable, “and if you like I can put you in touch with him.” He paused at the full stop. “I hope you will find him sympathetic and ready to cooperate in promoting all that is reasonable.”

A circle soon formed around Secretary of State Speransky, and the old man who had talked about his subordinate Pryánichnikov addressed a question to him.

Andrei without joining in the conversation watched every movement of Secretary of State Speransky’s: this man, not long since an insignificant divinity student, who now, Andrei thought, held in his hands—those plump white hands—the fate of Russia. Andrei was struck by the extraordinarily disdainful composure with which Secretary of State Speransky answered the old man. He appeared to address condescending words to him from an immeasurable height. When the old man began to speak too loud, Secretary of State Speransky smiled and said he could not judge the advantages or disadvantage of what pleased the sovereign.

Having talked for a little while in the general circle, Secretary of State Speransky rose and coming up to Andrei took him along to the other end of the room. It was clear that he thought it necessary to interest himself in Andrei.

“I had no chance to talk with you, Andrei, during the animated conversation in which that venerable gentleman involved me,” Secretary of State Speransky said with a mildly contemptuous smile as if intimating by that smile that he and Andrei understood the insignificance of the people with whom he had just been talking. This flattered Andrei. “I have known of you for a long time: first from your activities with regard to your serfs, a first example, of which it is very desirable that there should be more imitators; and secondly because you are one of those gentlemen of the chamber who have not considered themselves offended by the new decree concerning the ranks allotted to courtiers, which is causing so much gossip and tittle-tattle.”

“No,” said Andrei, “my father, Baron Bolkonski, did not wish me to take advantage of the privilege. I began the service from the lower grade.”

“Baron Bolkonski, a man of the last century, evidently stands above our contemporaries who so condemn this measure which merely re-establishes natural justice.”

“I think, however, that these condemnations have some ground,” returned Andrei, trying to resist Secretary of State Speransky’s influence, of which he began to be conscious. He did not like to agree with him on everything and felt the wish to contradict. Though Andrei usually spoke easily and well, he felt difficulty in expressing himself now while talking with Secretary of State Speransky. He was too absorbed in observing the famous man’s personality.

“Grounds of personal ambition maybe,” Secretary of State Speransky put in quietly.

“And of state interest to some extent,” said Andrei.

“What do you mean?” asked Secretary of State Speransky quietly, lowering his eyes.

“I am an admirer of Montesquieu,” replied Andrei, “and his idea that *the principle of monarchies is honor seems to me incontestable. Certain rights and privileges for the aristocracy appear to me a means of maintaining that sentiment.*”

The smile vanished from Secretary of State Speransky’s white face, which was much improved by the change. Probably Andrei’s thought interested him.

“*If you regard the question from that point of view,*” Speranski began, pronouncing French with evident difficulty, and speaking even slower than in Russian but quite calmly.

Secretary of State Speransky went on to say that honor, *l’honneur*, cannot be upheld by privileges harmful to the service; that honor, *l’honneur*, is either a negative concept of not doing what is blameworthy or it is a source of emulation in pursuit of commendation and rewards, which recognize it. His arguments were concise, simple, and clear.

“An institution upholding honor, the source of emulation, is one similar to the *Légion d’honneur* of the great Napoleon, not harmful but helpful to the success of the service, but not a class or court privilege.”

“I do not dispute that, but it cannot be denied that court privileges have attained the same end,” returned Andrei. “Every courtier considers himself bound to maintain his position worthily.”

“Yet you do not care to avail yourself of the privilege, Andrei,” said Secretary of State Speransky, indicating by a smile that he wished to finish amiably an argument that was embarrassing for his companion. “If you will do me the honor of calling on me on Wednesday,” he added, “I will, after talking with Magnítski, let you know what may interest you, and shall also have the pleasure of a more detailed chat with you.”

Closing his eyes, Secretary of State Speransky bowed *in the French way*, without taking leave, and trying to attract as little attention as possible, he left the room.

During the first weeks of his stay in St. Petersburg, Andrei felt the whole trend of thought he had formed during his life of seclusion quite overshadowed by the trifling cares that engrossed him in that city.

On returning home in the evening Andrei would jot down in his notebook four or five necessary calls or appointments for certain hours. The mechanism of life, the arrangement of the day so as to be in time everywhere, absorbed the greater part of his vital energy. He did nothing, did not even think or find time to think, but only talked, and talked successfully, of what he had thought while in the country.

Andrei sometimes noticed with dissatisfaction that he repeated the same remark on the same day in different circles. But he was so busy for whole days together that he had no time to notice that he was thinking of nothing.

As he had done on their first meeting at Kochubéy's, Secretary of State Speransky produced a strong impression on Andrei on Wednesday, when he received him tête-à-tête at his own house and talked to him long and confidentially.

To Andrei, so many people appeared contemptible and insignificant creatures, and he so longed to find in someone the living ideal of that perfection toward which he strove, that he readily believed that in Secretary of State Speransky he had found this ideal of a perfectly rational and virtuous man. Had Speranski sprung from the same class as himself and possessed the same breeding and traditions, Andrei would soon have discovered his weak, human, unheroic sides; but as it was, Secretary of State Speransky's strange and logical turn of mind inspired him with respect all the more because he did not quite understand him. Moreover, Secretary of State Speransky, either because he appreciated the other's capacity or because he considered it necessary to win him to his side, showed off his

dispassionate calm reasonableness before Andrei and flattered him with that subtle flattery which goes hand in hand with self-assurance and consists in a tacit assumption that one's companion is the only man besides oneself capable of understanding the folly of the rest of mankind and the reasonableness and profundity of one's own ideas.

During their long conversation on Wednesday evening, Secretary of State Speransky more than once remarked: "We regard everything that is above the common level of rooted custom..." or, with a smile: "But we want the wolves to be fed and the sheep to be safe..." or: "*They* cannot understand this..." and all in a way that seemed to say: "We, you and I, understand what *they* are and who *we* are."

This first long conversation with Secretary of State Speransky only strengthened in Andrei the feeling he had experienced toward him at their first meeting. He saw in him a remarkable, clear-thinking man of vast intellect who by his energy and persistence had attained power, which he was using solely for the welfare of Russia. In Andrei's eyes, Secretary of State Speransky was the man he would himself have wished to be—one who explained all the facts of life reasonably, considered important only what was rational, and was capable of applying the standard of reason to everything. Everything seemed so simple and clear in Secretary of State Speransky's exposition that Andrei involuntarily agreed with him about everything. If he replied and argued, it was only because he wished to maintain his independence and not submit to Secretary of State Speransky's opinions entirely. Everything was right and everything was as it should be: only one thing disconcerted Andrei. This was Secretary of State Speransky's cold, mirrorlike look, which did not allow one to penetrate his soul, and his delicate white hands, which Andrei involuntarily watched as one does watch the hands of those who possess power. This mirrorlike gaze and those delicate hands irritated Andrei, he knew not why. He was unpleasantly struck, too, by the excessive contempt for others that he

observed in Secretary of State Speransky, and by the diversity of lines of argument he used to support his opinions. He made use of every kind of mental device, except analogy, and passed too boldly, it seemed to Andrei, from one to another. Now he would take up the position of a practical man and condemn dreamers; now that of a satirist, and laugh ironically at his opponents; now grow severely logical, or suddenly rise to the realm of metaphysics. (This last resource was one he very frequently employed.) He would transfer a question to metaphysical heights, pass on to definitions of space, time, and thought, and, having deduced the refutation he needed, would again descend to the level of the original discussion.

In general, the trait of Secretary of State Speransky's mentality which struck Andrei most was his absolute and unshakable belief in the power and authority of reason. It was evident that the thought could never occur to him which to Andrei seemed so natural, namely, that it is after all impossible to express all one thinks; and that he had never felt the doubt, "Is not all I think and believe nonsense?" And it was just this peculiarity of Secretary of State Speransky's mind that particularly attracted Andrei.

During the first period of their acquaintance, Andrei felt a passionate admiration for him similar to that which he had once felt for Napoleon. The fact that Secretary of State Speransky was the son of a village priest, and that stupid people might meanly despise him on account of his humble origin (as in fact many did), caused Andrei to cherish his sentiment for him the more, and unconsciously to strengthen it.

On that first evening Andrei spent with him, having mentioned the Commission for the Revision of the Code of Laws, Secretary of State Speransky told him sarcastically that the Commission had existed for a hundred and fifty years, had cost millions, and had done nothing except that Rosenkampf had stuck labels on the corresponding paragraphs of the different codes.

“And that is all the state has for the millions it has spent,” said Rosenkampf. “We want to give the Senate new juridical powers, but we have no laws. That is why it is a sin for men like you, Baron, not to serve in these times!”

Andrei said that for that work an education in jurisprudence was needed which he did not possess.

“But nobody possesses it, so what would you have? It is a vicious circle from which we must break a way out.”

A week later Andrei was a member of the Committee on Army Regulations and—what he had not at all expected—was chairman of a section of the committee for the revision of the laws. At Secretary of State Speransky’s request, Andrei took the first part of the Civil Code that was being drawn up and, with the aid of the *Code Napoléon* and the Institutes of Justinian, he worked at formulating the section on Personal Rights.

Nearly two years before this, in 1808, Pierre on returning to St. Petersburg after visiting his estates had involuntarily found himself in a leading position among the St. Petersburg Freemasons. Pierre arranged dining and funeral lodge meetings, enrolled new members, and busied himself uniting various lodges and acquiring authentic charters. He gave money for the erection of temples and supplemented as far as he could the collection of alms, in regard to which the majority of members were stingy and irregular. He supported almost singlehanded a poorhouse the order had founded in St. Petersburg.

Pierre’s life meanwhile continued as before, with the same infatuations and dissipations. He liked to dine and drink well, and though he considered it immoral and humiliating could not resist the temptations of the bachelor circles in which he moved.

Amid the turmoil of his activities and distractions, however, Pierre at the end of a year began to feel that the more firmly he tried to rest upon it, the more Masonic ground on which he stood gave way under him. At the

same time, he felt that the deeper the ground sank under him the closer bound he involuntarily became to the order. When he had joined the Freemasons he had experienced the feeling of one who confidently steps onto the smooth surface of a bog. When he put his foot down it sank in. To make quite sure of the firmness of the ground, he put his other foot down and sank deeper still, became stuck in it, and involuntarily waded knee-deep in the bog.

The Mason Bazdéev was not in St. Petersburg—he had of late stood aside from the affairs of the St. Petersburg lodges, and lived almost entirely in Moscow. All the members of the lodges were men Pierre knew in ordinary life, and it was difficult for him to regard them merely as Brothers in Freemasonry and not as Baron B. or Iván Vasílevich D., whom he knew in society mostly as weak and insignificant men. Under the Masonic aprons and insignia, he saw the uniforms and decorations at which they aimed in ordinary life. Often after collecting alms, and reckoning up twenty to thirty rubles received for the most part in promises from a dozen members, of whom half were as well able to pay as himself, Pierre remembered the Masonic vow in which each Brother promised to devote all his belongings to his neighbor, and doubts on which he tried not to dwell arose in his soul.

Pierre divided the Masons he knew into four categories. In the first, he put those who did not take an active part in the affairs of the lodges or in human affairs but were exclusively occupied with the mystical science of the order: with questions of the threefold designation of God, the three primordial elements—sulfur, mercury, and salt—or the meaning of the square and all the various figures of the temple of Solomon. Pierre respected this class of Masons to which the elder ones chiefly belonged, including, Pierre thought, the Mason Bazdéev himself, but he did not share their interests. His heart was not in the mystical aspect of Freemasonry.

In the second category, Pierre reckoned himself and others like him, seeking and vacillating, who had not yet found in Freemasonry a straight

and comprehensible path but hoped to do so.

In the third category, he included those Masons (the majority) who saw nothing in Freemasonry but the external forms and ceremonies and prized the strict performance of these forms without troubling about their purport or significance. Such were Willarski and even the Grand Master of the principal lodge.

Finally, to the fourth category also a great many Masons belonged, particularly those who had lately joined. These according to Pierre's observations were men who had no belief in anything, nor desire for anything but joined the Freemasons merely to associate with the wealthy young Brothers who were influential through their connections or rank, and of whom there were very many in the lodge.

Pierre began to feel dissatisfied with what he was doing. Freemasonry, at any rate as he saw it here, sometimes seemed to him based merely on externals. He did not think of doubting Freemasonry itself but suspected that Russian Masonry had taken a wrong path and deviated from its original principles. And so toward the end of the year, he went abroad to be initiated into the higher secrets of the order.

In the summer of 1809, Pierre returned to St. Petersburg. Our Freemasons knew from correspondence with those abroad that Pierre had obtained the confidence of many highly placed persons, had been initiated into many mysteries, had been raised to a higher grade, and was bringing back with him much that might conduce to the advantage of the Masonic cause in Russia. The St. Petersburg Freemasons all came to see him, tried to ingratiate themselves with him, and it seemed to them all that he was preparing something for them and concealing it.

A solemn meeting of the lodge of the second degree was convened, at which Pierre promised to communicate to the St. Petersburg Brothers what he had to deliver to them from the highest leaders of their order. The

meeting was a full one. After the usual ceremonies, Pierre rose and began his address.

“Dear Brother Masons,” Pierre began, blushing and stammering, with a written speech in his hand, “it is not sufficient to observe our mysteries in the seclusion of our lodge—we must act—act! We are drowsing, but we must act.” Pierre raised his notebook and began to read.

“For the dissemination of pure truth and to secure the triumph of virtue,” Pierre read, “we must cleanse men from prejudice, diffuse principles in harmony with the spirit of the times, undertake the education of the young, unite ourselves in indissoluble bonds with the wisest men, boldly yet prudently overcome superstitions, infidelity, and folly, and form of those devoted to us a body linked together by unity of purpose and possessed of authority and power.

“To attain this end we must secure a preponderance of virtue over vice and must endeavor to secure that the honest man may, even in this world, receive a lasting reward for his virtue. But in these great endeavors, we are gravely hampered by the political institutions of today. What is to be done in these circumstances? To favor revolutions, overthrow everything, repel force by force?... No! We are very far from that. Every violent reform deserves censure, for it quite fails to remedy evil while men remain what they are, and also because wisdom needs no violence.

“The whole plan of our order should be based on the idea of preparing men of firmness and virtue bound together by unity of conviction—aiming at the punishment of vice and folly, and patronizing talent and virtue: raising worthy men from the dust and attaching them to our Brotherhood. Only then will our order have the power unobtrusively to bind the hands of the protectors of disorder and to control them without their being aware of it. In a word, we must found a form of government holding universal sway, which should be diffused over the whole world without destroying the bonds of citizenship, and besides which all other governments can continue

in their customary course and do everything except what impedes the great aim of our order, which is to obtain for virtue the victory over vice. This aim was that of Christianity itself. It taught men to be wise and good and for their own benefit to follow the example and instruction of the best and wisest men.

“At that time, when everything was plunged in darkness, preaching alone was of course sufficient. The novelty of Truth endowed preaching with special strength, but now we need much more powerful methods. It is now necessary that man, governed by his senses, should find in virtue a charm palpable to those senses. It is impossible to eradicate passions, but we must strive to direct them to a noble aim, and it is, therefore, necessary that everyone should be able to satisfy his passions within the limits of virtue. Our order should provide means to that end.

“As soon as we have a certain number of worthy men in every state, each of them again training two others and all being closely united, everything will be possible for our order, which has already in secret accomplished much for the welfare of mankind.”

Pierre's speech not only made a strong impression but created excitement in the lodge. The majority of the Masons, seeing in it dangerous designs of Illuminism, (substitute republican for monarchical institutions) met it with a coldness that surprised Pierre. The Grand Master began answering him, and Pierre began developing his views with more and more warmth. It was a long time since there had been so stormy a meeting. Parties were formed, some accusing Pierre of Illuminism, others supporting him. At that meeting, he was struck for the first time by the endless variety of men's minds, which prevents a truth from ever presenting itself identically to two persons. Even those members who seemed to be on his side understood him in their own way with limitations and alterations he could not agree to, as what he always wanted most was to convey his thought to others just as he himself understood them.

At the end of the meeting, the Grand Master with both irony and ill will reproved Pierre for his vehemence and said it was not love of virtue alone, but also a love of strife that had moved him in the dispute. Pierre did not answer the Grand Master and asked briefly whether his proposal would be accepted. Pierre was told that it would not, and without waiting for the usual formalities he left the lodge and went home.

Again Pierre was overtaken by the depression he so dreaded. For three days after the delivery of his speech at the lodge, he lay on a sofa at home receiving no one and going nowhere.

It was just then that Pierre received a letter from Helene, who implored him to see her, telling him how grieved she was about him and how she wished to devote her whole life to him.

At the end of the letter, Helene informed him that in a few days she would return to St. Petersburg from abroad.

Following this letter, one of the Masonic Brothers whom Pierre respected less than the others forced his way in to see him and, turning the conversation upon Pierre's matrimonial affairs, by way of fraternal advice expressed the opinion that his severity to Helene was wrong and that Pierre was neglecting one of the first rules of Freemasonry by not forgiving the penitent.

At the same time, Helene's mother sent to Pierre imploring him to come if only for a few minutes to discuss a most important matter. Pierre saw that there was a conspiracy against him and that they wanted to reunite him with Helene, and in the mood he then was, this was not even unpleasant to him. Nothing mattered to him. Nothing in life seemed to him of much importance, and under the influence of the depression that possessed him, he valued neither his liberty nor his resolution to punish his wife.

"No one is right and no one is to blame; so she too is not to blame," Pierre thought.

If Pierre did not at once give his consent to a reunion with Helene, it was only because in his state of depression he did not feel able to take any step. Had Helene come to him, he would not have turned her away. Compared to what preoccupied him, was it not a matter of indifference whether he lived with his wife or not?

Without replying either to Helene or her mother, Pierre late one night prepared for a journey and started for Moscow to see the Mason Bazdéev. This is what he noted in his diary:

Moscow, 17th November

I have just returned from my benefactor, the Mason Bazdéev, and hasten to write down what I have experienced. He is living poorly and has for three years been suffering from a painful disease of the bladder. No one has ever heard him utter a groan or a word of complaint. From morning till late at night, except when he eats his very plain food, he is working at science. The Mason Bazdéev received me graciously and made me sit down on the bed on which he lay. I made the sign of the Knights of the East and of Jerusalem, and he responded in the same manner, asking me with a mild smile what I had learned and gained in the Prussian and Scottish lodges. I told him everything as best I could, and told him what I had proposed to our St. Petersburg lodge, of the bad reception I had encountered, and of my rupture with the Brothers. The Mason Bazdéev, having remained silent and thoughtful for a good while, told me his view of the matter, which at once lit up for me my whole past and the future path I should follow. He surprised me by asking whether I remembered the threefold aim of the order: (1) The preservation and study of the mystery. (2) The purification and reformation of oneself for its reception, and (3) The improvement of the human race by striving for such purification. Which is the principal *aim* of these three? Certainly self-reformation and self-purification. Only to this aim can we always strive independently of circumstances. But at the same time just this aim demands the greatest efforts of us; and so, led astray by

pride, losing sight of this aim, we occupy ourselves either with the mystery which in our impurity we are unworthy to receive, or seek the reformation of the human race while ourselves setting an example of baseness and profligacy. Illuminism is not a pure doctrine, just because it is attracted by social activity and puffed up by pride. On this ground, the Mason Bazdév condemned my speech and my whole activity, and in the depth of my soul, I agreed with him. Talking of my family affairs he said to me, “the chief duty of a true Mason, as I have told you, lies in perfecting himself. We often think that by removing all the difficulties of our life we shall more quickly reach our aim, but on the contrary, my dear sir, it is only in the midst of worldly cares that we can attain our three chief aims: (1) Self-knowledge—for man can only know himself by comparison, (2) Self-perfecting, which can only be attained by conflict, and (3) The attainment of the chief virtue—love of death. Only the vicissitudes of life can show us its vanity and develop our innate love of death or of rebirth to a new life.” These words are all the more remarkable because, in spite of his great physical sufferings, the Mason Bazdév is never weary of life though he loves death, for which—in spite of the purity and loftiness of his inner man—he does not yet feel himself sufficiently prepared. My benefactor then explained to me fully the meaning of the Great Square of creation and pointed out to me that the numbers three and seven are the basis of everything. He advised me not to avoid intercourse with the St. Petersburg Brothers, but to take up only second-grade posts in the lodge, to try, while diverting the Masons from pride, to turn them toward the true path of self-knowledge and self-perfecting. Besides this, he advised me personally above all to keep a watch over myself, and to that end, he gave me a notebook, the one I am now writing in and in which I will in future note down all my actions.

St. Petersburg, 23rd November

I am again living with Helene. Her mother came to me in tears and said that Helene was here and that she implored me to hear her; that Helene was

innocent and unhappy at my desertion, and much more. I knew that if I once let myself see Helene I should not have the strength to go on refusing what she wanted. In my perplexity, I did not know whose aid and advice to seek. Had the Mason Bazdév been here he would have told me what to do. I went to my room and reread the Mason Bazdév's letters and recalled my conversations with him, and deduced from it all that I ought not to refuse a suppliant, and ought to reach a helping hand to everyone—especially to one so closely bound to me—and that I must bear my cross. But if I forgive Helene for the sake of doing right, then let union with her have only a spiritual aim. That is what I decided, and what I wrote to the Mason Bazdév. I told Helene that I begged her to forget the past, to forgive me for whatever wrong I may have done her, and that I had nothing to forgive. It gave me joy to tell her this. Helene need not know how hard it was for me to see her again. I have settled on the upper floor of this big house and am experiencing a happy feeling of regeneration.

At that time, as always happens, the highest society that met at court and at the grand balls was divided into several circles, each with its own particular tone. The largest of these was the French circle of the Napoleonic alliance, the circle of Chancellor Romyántsev and Général Caulaincourt. In this group Helene, as soon as she had settled in St. Petersburg with her husband, took a very prominent place. Helene was visited by the members of the French embassy and by many belonging to that circle and noted for their intellect and polished manners.

Helene had been at Erfurt during the famous meeting of the Tzar and the Napoleon and had brought from there these connections with the Napoleonic notabilities. At Erfurt, her success had been brilliant. Napoleon himself had noticed her in the theater and said of her: "*That's a superb animal.*" Her success as a beautiful and elegant woman did not surprise Pierre, for she had become even more handsome than before. What did surprise him was that during these last two years his wife had succeeded in

gaining the reputation “*as a charming woman, as witty as she is lovely.*” The distinguished Baron de Ligne wrote her eight-page letters. Adjutant Bilibin saved up his epigrams to produce them in Helene’s presence. To be received in Helene’s salon was regarded as a diploma of intellect. Young men read books before attending Helene’s evenings, to have something to say in her salon, and secretaries of the embassy, and even ambassadors, confided diplomatic secrets to her so that in a way Helene was a power. Pierre, who knew she was very stupid, sometimes attended, with a strange feeling of perplexity and fear, her evenings and dinner parties, where politics, poetry, and philosophy were discussed. At these parties, his feelings were like those of a conjuror who always expects his trick to be found out at any moment. But whether because stupidity was just what was needed to run such a salon, or because those who were deceived found pleasure in the deception, at any rate, it remained unexposed and Helene’s reputation as a lovely and clever woman became so firmly established that she could say the emptiest and stupidest things and everybody would go into raptures over every word of hers and look for a profound meaning in it of which she herself had no conception.

Pierre was just the husband needed for Helene to be a brilliant society woman. Pierre was that absent-minded crank, a *nobleman* husband who was in no one’s way, and far from spoiling the high tone and general impression of the drawing room, he served, by the contrast, he presented to her, as an advantageous background to his elegant and tactful wife. Pierre during the last two years, as a result of his continual absorption in abstract interests and his sincere contempt for all else, had acquired in his wife’s circle, which did not interest him, that air of unconcern, indifference, and benevolence toward all, which cannot be acquired artificially and therefore inspires involuntary respect. Pierre entered Helene’s drawing room as one enters a theater, was acquainted with everybody, equally pleased to see everyone, and equally indifferent to them all. Sometimes he joined in a

conversation that interested him and, regardless of whether any “gentlemen of the embassy” were present or not, lispingly expressed his views, which were sometimes not at all in accord with the accepted tone of the moment. But the general opinion concerning the queer husband of “the most distinguished woman in St. Petersburg” was so well established that no one took his freaks seriously.

Among the many young men who frequented Helene’s house every day, Boris, who had already achieved great success in the service, was the most intimate friend of Pierre and Helene’s household since Helene’s return from Erfurt. Helene spoke of Boris as “*my page*” and treated him like a child. Her smile for him was the same as for everybody, but sometimes that smile made Pierre uncomfortable. Boris behaved towards Pierre with a particularly dignified and sad deference. This shade of deference also disturbed Pierre. He had suffered so painfully three years before from the mortification to which his wife had subjected him that he now protected himself from the danger of its repetition, first by not being a husband to his wife, and secondly by not allowing himself to suspect.

“No, now that Helene has become a bluestocking she has finally renounced her former infatuations,” Boris told himself. “There has never been an instance of a bluestocking being carried away by affairs of the heart”—a statement which, though gathered from an unknown source, he believed implicitly. Yet strange to say Boris’ presence in Helene’s drawing room (and he was almost always there) had a physical effect upon Pierre; it constricted his limbs and destroyed the unconsciousness and freedom of his movements.

“What a strange antipathy,” thought Pierre, “yet I used to like him very much.”

In the eyes of the world, Pierre was a great gentleman, the rather blind and absurd husband of a distinguished wife, a clever crank who did nothing but harmed nobody and was a first-rate, good-natured fellow. But a

complex and difficult process of internal development was taking place all this time in Pierre's soul, revealing much to him and causing him many spiritual doubts and joys.

Pierre went on with his diary, and this is what he wrote in it during that time:

24th November

Got up at eight, read the Scriptures, then went to my duties. (By the Mason Bazdév's advice Pierre had entered the service of the state and served on one of the committees.) Returned home for dinner and dined alone—Countess Rostov had many visitors I do not like. I ate and drank moderately and after dinner copied out some passages for the Brothers. In the evening I went down to Countess Rostov and told a funny story about B., and only remembered that I ought not to have done so when everybody laughed loudly at it.

I am going to bed with a happy and tranquil mind. Great God, help me to walk in Thy paths, (1) to conquer anger by calmness and deliberation, (2) to vanquish lust by self-restraint and repulsion, (3) to withdraw from worldliness, but not avoid (a) the service of the state, (b) family duties, (c) relations with my friends, and the management of my affairs.

27th November

I got up late. On waking, I lay long in bed yielding to sloth. Oh, God, help and strengthen me that I may walk in Thy ways! Read the Scriptures, but without proper feeling. Fellow mason Urúsov came and we talked about worldly vanities. He told me of the Tzar's new projects. I began to criticize them but remembered my rules and my benefactor's words—that a true Freemason should be a zealous worker for the state when his aid is required and a quiet onlooker when not called on to assist. My tongue is my enemy. Brothers G. V. and O. visited me and we had a preliminary talk about the

reception of a new Brother. They laid on me the duty of Rhetor. I feel myself weak and unworthy. Then our talk turned to the interpretation of the seven pillars and steps of the Temple, the seven sciences, the seven virtues, the seven vices, and the seven gifts of the Holy Spirit. Brother Mason O. was very eloquent. In the evening the admission took place. The new decoration of the Premises contributed much to the magnificence of the spectacle. It was Boris who was admitted. I nominated him and was the Rhetor. A strange feeling agitated me all the time I was alone with him in the dark chamber. I caught myself harboring a feeling of hatred toward him which I vainly tried to overcome. That is why I should really like to save Boris from evil and lead him into the path of truth, but evil thoughts of him did not leave me. It seemed to me that his object in entering the Brotherhood was merely to be intimate and in favor with members of our lodge. Apart from the fact that he had asked me several times whether N. and S. were members of our lodge (a question to which I could not reply) and that according to my observation he is incapable of feeling respect for our holy order and is too preoccupied and satisfied with the outer man to desire spiritual improvement, I had no cause to doubt him, but he seemed to me insincere, and all the time I stood alone with him in the dark temple it seemed to me that he was smiling contemptuously at my words, and I wished really to stab Boris's bare breast with the sword I held to it. I could not be eloquent, nor could I frankly mention my doubts to my Brother Masons and to the Grand Master. Great Architect of Nature, help me to find the true path out of the labyrinth of lies!

After this, three pages were left blank in the diary, and then the following was written:

I have had a long and instructive talk alone with Brother V., who advised me to hold fast by Brother A. Though I am unworthy, much was

revealed to me. Adonai is the name of the creator of the world. Elohim is the name of the ruler of all. The third name is the name unutterable which means the *All*. Talks with Brother V. strengthen, refresh, and support me in the path of virtue. In his presence doubt has no place. The distinction between the poor teachings of mundane science and our sacred all-embracing teaching is clear to me. Human sciences dissect everything to comprehend it and kill everything to examine it. In the holy science of our order all is one, all is known in its entirety and life. The Trinity—the three elements of matter—are sulfur, mercury, and salt. Sulfur is of an oily and fiery nature; in combination with salt by its fiery nature, it arouses a desire in the latter by means of which it attracts mercury, seizes it, holds it, and in combination produces other bodies. Mercury is a fluid, volatile, spiritual essence. Christ, the Holy Spirit, Him!...

3rd December

Woke late, read the Scriptures but was apathetic. Afterward went and paced up and down the large hall. I wished to meditate, but instead, my imagination pictured an occurrence of four years ago, when Dolokhov, meeting me in Moscow after our duel, said he hoped I was enjoying perfect peace of mind in spite of my wife's absence. At the time I gave him no answer. Now I recalled every detail of that meeting and in my mind gave him the most malevolent and bitter replies. I recollected myself and drove away that thought only when I found myself glowing with anger, but I did not sufficiently repent. Afterward, Boris came and began relating various adventures. His coming vexed me from the first, and I said something disagreeable to him. He replied. I flared up and said much that was unpleasant and even rude to him. He became silent, and I recollected myself only when it was too late. My God, I cannot get on with him at all. The cause of this is my egotism. I set myself above him and so become much worse than he, for he is lenient to my rudeness while I on the contrary

nourish contempt for him. Oh God, grant that in his presence I may rather see my own vileness, and behave so that he too may benefit. After dinner, I fell asleep and as I was drowsing off I clearly heard a voice saying in my left ear, “Thy day!”

I dreamed that I was walking in the dark and was suddenly surrounded by dogs, but I went on undismayed. Suddenly a smallish dog seized my left thigh with its teeth and would not let go. I began to throttle it with my hands. Scarcely had I torn it off before another, a bigger one, began biting me. I lifted it up, but the higher I lifted it the bigger and heavier it grew. And suddenly Brother A. came and, taking my arm, led me to a building to enter which we had to pass along a narrow plank. I stepped on it, but it bent and gave way and I began to clamber up a fence that I could scarcely reach with my hands. After much effort, I dragged myself up, so that my leg hung down on one side and my body on the other. I looked round and saw Brother A. standing on the fence and pointing me to a broad avenue and garden, and in the garden was a large and beautiful building. I woke up. Oh Lord, great Architect of Nature, help me to tear from myself these dogs—my passions especially the last, which unites in itself the strength of all the former ones and aid me to enter that temple of virtue to a vision of which I attained in my dream.

7th December

I dreamed that the Mason Bazdéev was sitting in my house and that I was very glad and wished to entertain him. It seemed as if I chattered incessantly with other people and suddenly remembered that this could not please him, and I wished to come close to him and embrace him. But as soon as I drew near I saw that his face had changed and grown young, and he was quietly telling me something about the teaching of our order, but so softly that I could not hear it. Then it seemed that we all left the room and something strange happened. We were sitting or lying on the floor. Mason

Bazdéev was telling me something, and I wished to show him my sensibility, and not listening to what he was saying I began picturing to myself the condition of my inner man and the grace of God sanctifying me. And tears came into my eyes, and I was glad he noticed this. But he looked at me with vexation and jumped up, breaking off his remarks. I felt abashed and asked whether what he had been saying did not concern me; but he did not reply, gave me a kind look, and then we suddenly found ourselves in my bedroom where there is a double bed. He lay down on the edge of it and I burned with longing to caress him and lie down too. And he said, "Tell me frankly what is your chief temptation? Do you know it? I think you know it already." Abashed by this question, I replied that sloth was my chief temptation. He shook his head incredulously, and even more abashed, I said that though I was living with my wife as he advised, I was not living with her as her husband. To this, he replied that one should not deprive a wife of one's embrace and gave me to understanding that that was my duty. But I replied that I should be ashamed to do it, and suddenly everything vanished. And I awoke and found in my mind the text from the Gospel: "The life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not." The Mason Bazdéev's face had looked young and bright. That day I received a letter from my benefactor in which he wrote about "conjugal duties."

9th December

I had a dream from which I awoke with a throbbing heart. I saw that I was in Moscow in my house, in the big sitting room, and the Mason Bazdéev came in from the drawing room. I seemed to know at once that the process of regeneration had already taken place in him, and I rushed to meet him. I embraced him and kissed his hands, and he said, "Hast thou noticed that my face is different?" I looked at him, still holding him in my arms, and saw that his face was young, but that he had no hair on his head and his

features were quite changed. And I said, "I should have known you had I met you by chance," and I thought to myself, "Am I telling the truth?" And suddenly I saw Mason Bazdéev lying like a dead body; then he gradually recovered and went with me into my study carrying a large book of sheets of drawing paper; I said, "I drew that," and he answered by bowing his head. I opened the book, and on all the pages there were excellent drawings. And in my dream, I knew that these drawings represented the love adventures of the soul with its beloved. And on its pages I saw a beautiful representation of a maiden in transparent garments and with a transparent body, flying up to the clouds. And I seemed to know that this maiden was nothing else than a representation of the Song of Songs. And looking at those drawings I dreamed I felt that I was doing wrong, but could not tear myself away from them. Lord, help me! My God, if Thy forsaking me is Thy doing, Thy will be done; but if I am myself the cause, teach me what I should do! I shall perish of my debauchery if Thou utterly desertest me!

The Rostovs' monetary affairs had not improved during the two years they had spent in the country.

Though Nicholas had kept firmly to his resolution and was still serving modestly in an obscure regiment, spending comparatively little, the way of life at the home in Otrádnœ—Account Manager Míténka's management of affairs, in particular—was such that the debts inevitably increased every year. The only resource obviously presenting itself to Count Rostov was to apply for an official post, so he had come to St. Petersburg to look for one and also, as he said, to let the lassies enjoy themselves for the last time.

Soon after their arrival in St. Petersburg Berg proposed to Vera and was accepted.

Though in Moscow the Rostovs belonged to the best society without themselves giving it a thought, in St. Petersburg their circle of acquaintances was a mixed and indefinite one. In St. Petersburg they were

provincials, and the very people they had entertained in Moscow without inquiring to what set they belonged, here looked down on them.

The Rostovs lived in the same hospitable way in St. Petersburg as in Moscow, and the most diverse people met at their suppers. Country neighbors from Otrádnœ, impoverished old squires and their daughters, Miss Perónskaya (maid of honor at the court of the Mother of the Tzar), Pierre, and the son of their district postmaster who had obtained a post in St. Petersburg. Among the men who very soon became frequent visitors at the Rostovs' house in St. Petersburg were Boris, Pierre (whom Count Rostov had seen in the street and dragged home with him), and Berg, who spent whole days at the Rostovs' and paid the eldest daughter, Countess Vera, the attentions a young man pays when he intends to propose.

Not in vain had Berg shown everybody his right hand wounded at Austerlitz and held a perfectly unnecessary sword in his left. Berg narrated that episode so persistently and with so important an air that everyone believed in the merit and usefulness of his deed, and he had obtained two decorations for Austerlitz.

In the Finnish war, Berg also managed to distinguish himself. He had picked up a scrap of a grenade that had killed an aide-de-camp standing near General Kutuzov and had taken it to his commander. Just as he had done after Austerlitz, he related this occurrence at such length and so insistently that everyone again believed it had been necessary to do this, and he received two decorations for the Finnish war also. In 1809 Berg was a captain in the Guards, wore medals, and held some special lucrative posts in St. Petersburg.

Though some skeptics smiled when told of Berg's merits, it could not be denied that he was a painstaking and brave officer, on excellent terms with his superiors, and a moral young man with a brilliant career before him and an assured position in society.

Four years before, meeting a German comrade in the stalls of a Moscow theater, Berg had pointed out Vera to him and had said in German, "*that girl shall be my wife,*" and from that moment had made up his mind to marry her. Now in St. Petersburg, having considered the Rostovs' position and his own, Berg decided that the time had come to propose.

Berg's proposal was at first received with a perplexity that was not flattering to him. At first, it seemed strange that the son of an obscure Livonian gentleman should propose marriage to a Countess Rostov; but Berg's chief characteristic was such a naive and good-natured egotism that the Rostovs involuntarily came to think it would be a good thing, since he himself was so firmly convinced that it was good, indeed excellent. Moreover, the Rostovs' affairs were seriously embarrassed, as Berg could not but know; and above all, Vera was twenty-four, had been taken out everywhere, and though she was certainly good-looking and sensible, no one up to now had proposed to her. So the Rostovs gave their consent.

"You see," said Berg to a comrade, whom he called "friend" only because he knew that everyone has friends, "you see, I have considered it all, and should not marry if I had not thought it all out or if it were in any way unsuitable. But on the contrary, my papa and mamma are now provided for—I have arranged that rent for them in the Baltic Provinces—and I can live in St. Petersburg on my pay, and with her fortune and my good management we can get along nicely. I am not marrying for money—I consider that dishonorable—but a wife should bring her share and a husband his. I have my position in the service, she has connections and some means. In our times that is worth something, isn't it? But above all, she is a handsome, estimable girl, and she loves me..."

Berg blushed and smiled.

"And I love Vera because her character is sensible and very good. Now the other sister, Natasha, though they are the same family, is quite different—an unpleasant character and does not have the same intelligence. Natasha

is so... you know?... Unpleasant... But my fiancée, Vera!... Well, you will be coming,” Berg was going to say, “to dine,” but changed his mind and said “to take tea with us,” and quickly doubling up his tongue he blew a small round ring of tobacco smoke, perfectly embodying his dream of happiness.

After the first feeling of perplexity aroused in the parents by Berg’s proposal, the holiday tone of joyousness usual at such times took possession of the family, but the rejoicing was external and insincere. In the family’s feelings toward this wedding, a certain awkwardness and constraint were evident, as if they were ashamed of not having loved Vera sufficiently and of being so ready to get her off their hands. Count Rostov felt this most. He would probably have been unable to state the cause of his embarrassment, but it resulted from the state of his affairs. Count Rostov did not know at all how much he had, what his debts amounted to, or what dowry he could give Vera. When his daughters were born he had assigned to each of them, for her dowry, an estate with three hundred serfs; but one of these estates had already been sold, and the other was mortgaged and the interest so much in arrears that it would have to be sold so that it was impossible to give it to Vera. Nor had Count Rostov any money.

Berg had already been engaged a month, and only a week remained before the wedding, but Count Rostov had not yet decided in his own mind the question of the dowry, nor spoken to his wife about it. At one time Count Rostov thought of giving her the Ryazán estate or of selling a forest, at another time of borrowing money on a note of hand. A few days before the wedding Berg entered Count Rostov’s study early one morning and, with a pleasant smile, respectfully asked his future father-in-law to let him know what Vera’s dowry would be. Count Rostov was so disconcerted by this long-foreseen inquiry that without consideration he gave the first reply that came into his head. “I like your being businesslike about it... I like it. You shall be satisfied...”

And patting Berg on the shoulder Count Rostov got up, wishing to end the conversation. But Berg, smiling pleasantly, explained that if he did not know for certain how much Vera would have and did not receive at least part of the dowry in advance, Berg would have to break matters off.

“Because consider, Count Rostov—if I allowed myself to marry now without having definite means to maintain my wife, I should be acting badly...”

The conversation was ended by Count Rostov, who wished to be generous and to avoid further importunity, saying that he would give a note of hand for eighty thousand rubles. Berg smiled meekly, kissed Count Rostov on the shoulder, and said that he was very grateful, but that it was impossible for him to arrange his new life without receiving thirty thousand in ready money. “Or at least twenty thousand, Count Rostov,” he added, “and then a note of hand for only sixty thousand.”

“Yes, yes, all right!” said Count Rostov hurriedly. “Only excuse me, my dear fellow, I’ll give you twenty thousand and a note of hand for eighty thousand as well. Yes, yes! Kiss me.”

Natasha was sixteen and it was the year 1809, the very year to which she had counted on her fingers with Boris after they had kissed four years ago. Since then Natasha had not seen him. Before Sonya and her mother, if Boris happened to be mentioned, Natasha spoke quite freely of that episode as of some childish, long-forgotten matter that was not worth mentioning. But in the secret depths of her soul, the question of whether her engagement to Boris was a jest or an important, binding promise tormented her.

Since Boris left Moscow in 1805 to join the army he had not seen the Rostovs. He had been to Moscow several times, and had passed near their home in Otrádnœ, but had never been to see them.

Sometimes it occurred to Natasha that he did not wish to see her, and this conjecture was confirmed by the sad tone in which her elders spoke of him.

“Nowadays old friends are not remembered,” Countess Rostov would say when Boris was mentioned.

Widow Drubetskoy also had of late visited them less frequently, seemed to hold herself with particular dignity, and always spoke rapturously and gratefully of the merits of her son and the brilliant career on which he had entered. When the Rostovs came to St. Petersburg Boris called on them.

Boris drove to their house in some agitation. The memory of Natasha was his most poetic recollection. But he went with the firm intention of letting her and her parents feel that the childish relations between himself and Natasha could not be binding either on her or on him. Boris had a brilliant position in society thanks to his intimacy with Helene, a brilliant position in the service thanks to the patronage of an important personage whose complete confidence he enjoyed, and he was beginning to make plans for marrying one of the richest heiresses in St. Petersburg, plans which might very easily be realized. When Boris entered the Rostovs’ drawing room Natasha was in her own room. When she heard of his arrival she almost ran into the drawing-room, flushed and beaming with a more than cordial smile.

Boris remembered Natasha in a short dress, with dark eyes shining from under her curls and boisterous, childish laughter, as he had known her four years before; and so he was taken aback when quite a different Natasha entered, and his face expressed rapturous astonishment. This expression on his face pleased Natasha.

“Well, do you recognize your little madcap playmate?” asked Countess Rostov.

Boris kissed Natasha’s hand and said that he was astonished at the change in her.

“How handsome you have grown!”

“I should think so!” replied Natasha’s laughing eyes.

“And is Papa older?” she asked.

Natasha sat down and, without joining in Boris' conversation with Countess Rostov, silently and minutely studied her childhood's suitor. He felt the weight of that resolute and affectionate scrutiny and glanced at her occasionally.

Boris' uniform, spurs, tie, and the way his hair was brushed were all *proper* and in the latest fashion. This Natasha noticed at once. He sat rather sideways in the armchair next to Countess Rostov, arranging with his right hand the cleanest of gloves that fitted his left hand like a skin, and he spoke with a particularly refined compression of his lips about the amusements of the highest St. Petersburg society, recalling with mild irony old times in Moscow and Moscow acquaintances. It was not accidentally, Natasha felt, that Boris alluded, when speaking of the highest aristocracy, to an ambassador's ball he had attended, and to invitations he had received from N.N. and S.S.

All this time Natasha sat silent, glancing up at him from under her brows. This gaze disturbed and confused Boris more and more. He looked round more frequently toward her and broke off in what he was saying. He did not stay more than ten minutes, then rose and took his leave. The same inquisitive, challenging, and rather mocking eyes still looked at him. After his first visit Boris said to himself that Natasha attracted him just as much as ever, but that he must not yield to that feeling, because to marry her, a girl almost without fortune, would mean ruin to his career, while to renew their former relations without intending to marry her would be dishonorable. Boris made up his mind to avoid meeting Natasha, but despite that resolution, he called again a few days later and began calling often and spending whole days at the Rostovs'. It seemed to him that he ought to have an explanation with Natasha and tell her that the old times must be forgotten, that in spite of everything... she could not be his wife, that he had no means, and they would never let her marry him. But he failed to do so and felt awkward about entering on such an explanation. From day to day

he became more and more entangled. It seemed to Countess Rostov and Sonya that Natasha was in love with Boris as of old. She sang him his favorite songs, showed him her album, making him write in it, did not allow him to allude to the past, letting it be understood how delightful was the present; and every day he went away in a fog, without having said what he meant to, and not knowing what he was doing or why he came, or how it would all end. Boris left off visiting Helene and received reproachful notes from her every day, and yet he continued to spend whole days with the Rostovs.

One night when Countess Rostov, in nightcap and dressing jacket, without her false curls, and with her poor little knob of hair showing under her white cotton cap, knelt sighing and groaning on a rug and bowing to the ground in prayer, her door creaked and Natasha, also in a dressing jacket with slippers on her bare feet and her hair in curl-papers, ran in. Countess Rostov—her prayerful mood dispelled—looked round and frowned. She was finishing her last prayer: “Can it be that this couch will be my grave?” Natasha, flushed and eager, seeing her mother in prayer, suddenly checked her rush, half sat down and unconsciously put out her tongue as if chiding herself. Seeing that her mother was still praying she ran on tiptoe to the bed and, rapidly slipping one little foot against the other, pushed off her slippers and jumped onto the bed Countess Rostov had feared might become her grave. This couch was high, with a feather bed and five pillows each smaller than the one below. Natasha jumped on it, sank into the feather bed, rolled over to the wall, and began snuggling up the bedclothes as she settled down, raising her knees to her chin, kicking out and laughing almost inaudibly, now covering herself up head and all, and now peeping at her mother. Countess Rostov finished her prayers and came to the bed with a stern face, but seeing that Natasha’s head was covered, she smiled in her kind, weak way.

“Now then, now then!” said Countess Rostov.

“Mamma, can we have a talk? Yes?” said Natasha. “Now, just one on your throat and another... that’ll do!” And seizing her mother round the neck, she kissed her on the throat. In her behavior towards her mother, Natasha seemed rough, but she was so sensitive and tactful that however she clasped her mother she always managed to do it without hurting her or making her feel uncomfortable or displeased.

“Well, what is it tonight?” said Countess Rostov, having arranged her pillows and waited until Natasha, after turning over a couple of times, had settled down beside her under the quilt, spread out her arms, and assumed a serious expression.

These visits of Natasha’s at night before Count Rostov returned from his club were one of the greatest pleasures of both mother and daughter.

“What is it tonight?—But I have to tell you...”

Natasha put her hand on her mother’s mouth.

“About Boris... I know,” Natasha said seriously; “that’s what I have come about. Don’t say it—I know. No, do tell me!” and she removed her hand. “Tell me, Mamma! He’s nice?”

“Natasha, you are sixteen. At your age, I was married. You say Boris is nice. He is very nice, and I love him like a son. But what then?... What are you thinking about? You have quite turned his head, I can see that...”

As she said this Countess Rostov looked round at her daughter. Natasha was lying looking steadily straight before her at one of the mahogany sphinxes carved on the corners of the bedstead so that Countess Rostov only saw her daughter’s face in profile. That face struck her by its peculiarly serious and concentrated expression.

Natasha was listening and considering.

“Well, what then?” said she.

“You have quite turned his head, and why? What do you want of him? You know you can’t marry him.”

“Why not?” said Natasha, without changing her position.

“Because Boris is young, because he is poor, because he is a relation... and because you yourself don’t love him.”

“How do you know?”

“I know. It is not right, darling!”

“But if I want to...” said Natasha.

“Leave off talking nonsense,” said Countess Rostov.

“But if I want to...”

“Natasha, I am in earnest...”

Natasha did not let her finish. She drew Countess Rostov’s large hand to her, kissed it on the back and then on the palm, then again turned it over and began kissing first one knuckle, then the space between the knuckles, then the next knuckle, whispering, “January, February, March, April, May. Speak, Mamma, why don’t you say anything? Speak!” said Natasha, turning to her mother, who was tenderly gazing at her daughter and in that contemplation seemed to have forgotten all she had wished to say.

“It won’t do, my love! Not everyone will understand this friendship with Boris from back in your childish days, and to see him so intimate with you may injure you in the eyes of other young men who visit us, and above all, it torments him for nothing. Boris may already have found a suitable and wealthy match, and now he’s half crazy.”

“Crazy?” repeated Natasha.

“I’ll tell you some things about myself. I had a cousin...”

“I know! Count Bezukhov... but he is old.”

“He was not always old. But this is what I’ll do, Natasha, I’ll have a talk with Boris. He need not come so often...”

“Why not, if he likes to?”

“Because I know it will end in nothing...”

“How can you know? No, Mamma, don’t speak to him! What nonsense!” said Natasha in the tone of one being deprived of her property.

“Well, I won’t marry, but let him come if he enjoys it and I enjoy it.”

Natasha smiled and looked at her mother. "Not to marry, but just so," she added.

"How so, my pet?"

"Just so. There's no need for me to marry him. But... just so."

"Just so, just so," repeated Countess Rostov, and shaking all over, she went off into a good-humored, unexpected, elderly laugh.

"Don't laugh, stop!" cried Natasha. "You're shaking the whole bed! You're awfully like me, just such another giggler... Wait..." and she seized Countess Rostov's hands and kissed a knuckle of the little finger, saying, "June," and continued, kissing, "July, August," on the other hand. "But, Mamma, is he very much in love? What do you think? Was anybody ever so much in love with you? And Boris is very nice, very, very nice. Only not quite my taste—he is so narrow, like the dining-room clock... Don't you understand? Narrow, you know—gray, light gray..."

"What rubbish you're talking!" said Countess Rostov.

Natasha continued: "Don't you really understand? Nicholas would understand... Pierre, now, is blue, dark blue, and red, and he is square."

"You flirt with him too," said Countess Rostov, laughing.

"No, he is a Freemason, I have found out. He is fine, dark blue and red... How can I explain it to you?"

"Little countess!" Count Rostov's voice called from behind the door. "You're not asleep?" Natasha jumped up, snatched up her slippers, and ran barefoot to her own room.

It was a long time before Natasha could sleep. She kept thinking that no one could understand all that she understood and all there was in her.

"Sonya?" she thought, glancing at that curled-up, sleeping little kitten with her enormous plait of hair. "No, how could she? She's virtuous. She fell in love with Nicholas and does not wish to know anything more. Even Mamma does not understand. It is wonderful how clever I am and how... charming she is," she went on, speaking of herself in the third person, and

imagining it was some very wise man—the wisest and best of men—who was saying it of her. “There is everything, everything in her,” continued this man. “She is unusually intelligent, charming... and then she *is* pretty, uncommonly pretty, and agile—she swims and rides splendidly... and her voice! One can really say it’s a wonderful voice!”

Natasha hummed a scrap from her favorite opera by Cherubini, threw herself on her bed, laughed at the pleasant thought that she would immediately fall asleep, called the maid to put out the candle, and before the maid had left the room had already passed into yet another happier world of dreams, where everything was as light and beautiful as in reality, and even more so because it was different.

The next day, Countess Rostov called Boris aside and had a talk with him, after which he ceased coming to the Rostovs’.

On the thirty-first of December, New Year’s Eve, 1809 - 10 an old grandee of Catherine the Great’s day was giving a ball and midnight supper. The diplomatic corps and the Tzar himself were to be present.

The grandee’s well-known mansion on the English Quay glittered with innumerable lights. Police were stationed at the brightly lit entrance which was carpeted with red baize, and not only gendarmes but dozens of police officers and even the police master himself stood at the porch. Carriages kept driving away and fresh ones arriving, with red-liveried footmen and footmen in plumed hats. From the carriages emerged men wearing uniforms, stars, and ribbons, while ladies in satin and ermine cautiously descended the carriage steps which were let down for them with a clatter, and then walked hurriedly and noiselessly over the baize at the entrance.

Almost every time a new carriage drove up a whisper ran through the crowd and caps were doffed.

“The Tzar?... No, a minister... Baron... ambassador. Don’t you see the plumes?...” was whispered among the crowd.

One person, better dressed than the rest, seemed to know everyone and mentioned by name the greatest dignitaries of the day.

A third of the visitors had already arrived, but the Rostovs, who were to be present, were still hurrying to get dressed.

There had been many discussions and preparations for this ball in the Rostov family, many fears that the invitation would not arrive, that the dresses would not be ready, or that something would not be arranged as it should be.

Miss Perónskaya, a thin and shallow attendant at the court of the Mother of the Tzar, who was a friend and relation of Countess Rostov and piloted the provincial Rostovs in St. Petersburg high society, was to accompany the Rostovs to the ball.

The Rostovs were to call for her at Widow Drubetskoy's house in the Taurida Gardens at ten o'clock, but it was already five minutes to ten, and the girls were not yet dressed.

Natasha was going to her first grand ball. She had gotten up at eight that morning and had been in a fever of excitement and activity all day. All her powers since morning had been concentrated on ensuring that they all—she herself, Mamma, and Sonya—should be as well dressed as possible. Sonya and her mother put themselves entirely in her hands. Countess Rostov was to wear a claret-colored velvet dress, and the two girls white gauze over pink silk slips, with roses on their bodices and their hair dressed *in the Greek fashion*.

Everything essential had already been done; feet, hands, necks, and ears washed, perfumed, and powdered, as befits a ball; the openwork silk stockings and white satin shoes with ribbons were already on; the hairdressing was almost done. Sonya was finishing dressing and so was Countess Rostov, but Natasha, who had bustled about helping them all, was behindhand. She was still sitting before a looking glass with a dressing jacket thrown over her slender shoulders. Sonya stood ready dressed in the

middle of the room and, pressing the head of a pin till it hurt her dainty finger, was fixing on a last ribbon that squeaked as the pin went through it.

“That’s not the way, that’s not the way, Sonya!” cried Natasha turning her head and clutching with both hands at her hair which the maid who was dressing it had not time to release. “That bow is not right. Come here!”

Sonya sat down and Natasha pinned the ribbon on differently.

“Allow me, Natasha! I can’t do it like that,” said the maid who was holding Natasha’s hair.

“Oh, dear! Well then, wait. That’s right, Sonya.”

“Aren’t you ready? It is nearly ten,” came Countess Rostov’s voice.

“Directly! Directly! And you, Mamma?”

“I have only my cap to pin on.”

“Don’t do it without me!” called Natasha. “You won’t do it right.”

“But it’s already ten.”

The Rostovs had decided to be at the ball by half-past ten, and Natasha had still to get dressed and they had to call at the Taurida Gardens.

When her hair was done, Natasha, in her short petticoat from under which her dancing shoes showed, and in her mother’s dressing jacket, ran up to Sonya, scrutinized her, and then ran to her mother. Turning her mother’s head this way and that, she fastened on the cap and, hurriedly kissing her gray hair, ran back to the maids who were turning up the hem of her skirt.

The cause of the delay was Natasha’s skirt, which was too long. Two maids were turning up the hem and hurriedly biting off the ends of threads. A third with pins in her mouth was running about between Countess Rostov and Sonya, and a fourth held the whole of the gossamer garment up high on one uplifted hand.

“Quicker, darling!”

“Give me my thimble, Natasha, from there...”

“Whenever will you be ready?” asked Count Rostov coming to the door. “Here is some scent. Miss Perónskaya must be tired of waiting.”

“It’s ready, Natasha,” said the maid, holding up the shortened gauze dress with two fingers, and blowing and shaking something off it, as if by this to express a consciousness of the airiness and purity of what she held.

Natasha began putting on the dress.

“In a minute! In a minute! Don’t come in, Papa!” Natasha cried to her father as he opened the door—speaking from under the filmy skirt which still covered her whole face.

Sonya slammed the door. A minute later they let Count Rostov in. He was wearing a blue swallow-tail coat, shoes, and stockings, and was perfumed and his hair pomaded.

“Oh, Papa! how nice you look! Charming!” cried Natasha, as she stood in the middle of the room smoothing out the folds of the gauze.

“If you please, Natasha! Allow me,” said the maid, who on her knees was pulling the skirt straight and shifting the pins from one side of her mouth to the other with her tongue.

“Say what you like,” exclaimed Sonya, in a despairing voice as she looked at Natasha, “say what you like, the hem is still too long.”

Natasha stepped back to look at herself in the pier glass. The dress *was* too long.

“Really, madam, it is not at all too long,” said the maid, crawling on her knees after her young lady.

“Well, if it’s too long we’ll tack it up... we’ll tack it up in one minute,” said the resolute nurse taking a needle that was stuck on the front of her little shawl and, still kneeling on the floor, set to work once more.

At that moment, with soft steps, Countess Rostov came in shyly, in her cap and velvet gown.

“Ooh, ooh, my beautiful Countess Rostov!” exclaimed Count Rostov, “You look better than anyone!”

He would have embraced her but, blushing, she stepped aside fearing to be rumped.

“Mamma, your cap, more to this side,” said Natasha. “I’ll arrange it,” and she rushed forward so that the servants who were tacking up her skirt could not move fast enough and a piece of gauze was torn off.

“Oh goodness! What has happened? Really it was not my fault!”

“Never mind, I’ll run it up, it won’t show,” said the maid.

“What a beauty—a very queen!” said the nurse as she came to the door. “And Sonya! They are lovely!”

At a quarter past ten, they, at last, got into their carriages and started. But they had still to call at the Taurida Gardens.

Miss Perónskaya was quite ready. In spite of her age and plainness she had gone through the same process as the Rostovs, but with less flurry—for to her it was a matter of routine. Her ugly old body was washed, perfumed, and powdered in just the same way. She had washed behind her ears just as carefully, and when she entered her drawing room in her yellow dress, wearing her badge as maid of honor, her old lady’s maid was as full of rapturous admiration as the Rostovs’ servants had been.

Miss Perónskaya praised the Rostovs’ toilets. They praised her taste and toilet, and at eleven o’clock, careful of their coiffures and dresses, they settled themselves in their carriages and drove off.

Natasha had not had a moment free since early morning and had not once had time to think of what lay before her.

In the damp chill air and crowded closeness of the swaying carriage, Natasha for the first time vividly imagined what was in store for her there at the ball, in those brightly lighted rooms—with music, flowers, dances, the Tzar, and all the brilliant young people of St. Petersburg. The prospect was so splendid that she hardly believed it would come true, so out of keeping was it with the chill darkness and closeness of the carriage. She understood all that awaited her only when, after stepping over the red baize at the

entrance, she entered the hall, took off her fur cloak, and, beside Sonya and in front of her mother, mounted the brightly illuminated stairs between the flowers. Only then did Natasha remember how she must behave at a ball, and tried to assume the majestic air she considered indispensable for a girl on such an occasion. But, fortunately for her, she felt her eyes growing misty, she saw nothing clearly, her pulse beat a hundred to the minute, and the blood throbbed at her heart. She could not assume that pose, which would have made her ridiculous, and she moved on almost fainting from excitement and trying with all her might to conceal it. And this was the very attitude that became her best. Before and behind them other visitors were entering, also talking in low tones and wearing ball dresses. The mirrors on the landing reflected ladies in white, pale-blue, and pink dresses, with diamonds and pearls on their bare necks and arms.

Natasha looked in the mirrors and could not distinguish her reflection from the others. All was blended into one brilliant procession. On entering the ballroom the regular hum of voices, footsteps, and greetings deafened Natasha, and the light and glitter dazzled her still more. The host and hostess, who had already been standing at the door for half an hour repeating the same words to the various arrivals, "*Delighted to see you*," greeted the Rostovs and Miss Perónskaya in the same manner.

Natasha and Sonya, in their white dresses, each with a rose in her black hair, both curtsied in the same way, but the hostess' eye involuntarily rested longer on the slim Natasha. She looked at her and gave her alone a special smile in addition to her usual smile as a hostess. Looking at her she may have recalled the golden, irrecoverable days of her own girlhood and her own first ball. The host also followed Natasha with his eyes and asked Count Rostov who was his daughter.

"Charming!" said the host, kissing the tips of his fingers.

In the ballroom, guests stood crowding at the entrance doors awaiting the Tzar. Countess Rostov took up a position in one of the front rows of that

crowd. Natasha heard and felt that several people were asking about her and looking at her. She realized that those noticing her liked her, and this observation helped to calm her.

“There are some like ourselves and some worse,” Natasha thought.

Miss Perónskaya was pointing out to Countess Rostov the most important people at the ball.

“That is the Dutch ambassador, do you see? That gray-haired man,” Miss Perónskaya said, indicating an old man with a profusion of silver-gray curly hair, who was surrounded by ladies laughing at something he said.

“Ah, here she is, the Queen of St. Petersburg, Helene is,” said Miss Perónskaya, indicating Helene who had just entered. “How lovely! She is quite equal to Mary Antónovna. See how the men, young and old, pay court to her. Beautiful and clever... they say Baron —— is quite mad about her. But see, those two, though not good-looking, are even more run after.”

Miss Perónskaya pointed to a lady who was crossing the room followed by a very plain daughter.

“She is a splendid match, a millionairess,” said Miss Perónskaya. “And look, here come her suitors.”

“That is Helene’s brother, Anatole,” Miss Perónskaya said, indicating a handsome officer of the Horse Guards who passed by them with head erect, looking at something over the heads of the ladies. “Anatole is handsome, isn’t he? I hear they will marry him to that rich girl, Marya. But your cousin, Boris, is also very attentive to her. They say she has millions. Oh yes, that’s the French ambassador himself!” Miss Perónskaya replied to Countess Rostov’s inquiry about Général Caulaincourt. “Looks as if he were a king! All the same, the French are charming, very charming. No one is more charming in society. Ah, here she is! Yes, she is still the most beautiful of them all, our Márya Antónovna! And how simply she is dressed! Lovely! And that stout one in spectacles is the universal

Freemason,” she went on, indicating Pierre. “Put him beside his wife Helene and he looks like a regular buffoon!”

Pierre, swaying his stout body, advanced, making his way through the crowd and nodding to right and left as casually and good-naturedly as if he were passing through a crowd at a fair. He pushed through, evidently looking for someone.

Natasha looked joyfully at the familiar face of Pierre, “the buffoon,” as Miss Perónskaya had called him, and knew Pierre was looking for them, and for her in particular. He had promised to be at the ball and introduce partners to her.

But before Pierre reached them he stopped beside a very handsome, dark man of middle height, and in a white uniform, who stood by a window talking to a tall man wearing stars and a ribbon. Natasha at once recognized the shorter and younger man in the white uniform: it was Andrei, who seemed to her to have grown much younger, happier, and better looking.

“There’s someone else we know—Andrei, do you see, Mamma?” said Natasha, pointing out Andrei. “You remember, he stayed a night with us at Otrádnœ.”

“Oh, you know him?” said Miss Perónskaya. “I can’t bear him. *He is all the rage just now.* He’s too proud for anything. Takes after his father. And he’s hand in glove with Secretary of State Speransky, writing some project or other. Just look how he treats the ladies! There’s one talking to him and he has turned away,” Miss Perónskaya said, pointing at him. “I’d give it to him if he treated me as he does those ladies.”

Suddenly everybody stirred, began talking, and pressed forward and then back, and between the two rows, which separated, the Tzar entered to the sounds of music that had immediately struck up. Behind him walked the host and hostess. The Tzar walked in rapidly, bowing to the right and left as if anxious to get the first moments of the reception over. The band played the polonaise in vogue at that time on account of the words that had been

set to it, beginning: "The Tzar, all our hearts you ravish quite..." The Tzar passed on to the drawing-room, the crowd made a rush for the doors, and several persons with excited faces hurried there and back again. Then the crowd hastily retired from the drawing room door, at which the Tzar reappeared talking to the hostess. A young man, looking distraught, pounced down on the ladies, asking them to move aside. Some ladies, with faces betraying complete forgetfulness of all the rules of decorum, pushed forward to the detriment of their toilets. The men began to choose partners and take their places for the polonaise.

Everyone moved back, and the Tzar came smiling out of the drawing room leading his hostess by the hand but not keeping time to the music. The host followed with Márya Antónovna; then came ambassadors, ministers, and various generals, whom Miss Perónskaya diligently named. More than half the ladies already had partners and were taking up, or preparing to take up, their positions for the polonaise. Natasha felt that she would be left with her mother and Sonya among a minority of women who crowded near the wall, not having been invited to dance. She stood with her slender arms hanging down, her scarcely defined bosom rising and falling regularly, and with bated breath and glittering, frightened eyes gazed straight before her, evidently prepared for the height of joy or misery. Natasha was not concerned about the Tzar or any of those great people whom Miss Perónskaya was pointing out—she had but one thought: "Is it possible no one will ask me, that I shall not be among the first to dance? Is it possible that not one of all these men will notice me? They do not even seem to see me, or if they do they look as if they were saying, 'Ah, she's not the one I'm after, so it's not worth looking at her!' No, it's impossible," Natasha thought. "They must know how I long to dance, how splendidly I dance, and how they would enjoy dancing with me."

The strains of the polonaise, which had continued for a considerable time, had begun to sound like a sad reminiscence to Natasha's ears. She

wanted to cry. Miss Perónskaya had left them. Count Rostov was at the other end of the room. Natasha and Countess Rostov and Sonya were standing by themselves as if in the depths of a forest amid that crowd of strangers, with no one interested in them and not wanted by anyone. Andrei with a lady passed by, evidently not recognizing them. The handsome Anatole was smilingly talking to a partner on his arm and looked at Natasha as one looks at a wall. Boris passed them twice and each time turned away. Berg and Vera, who were not dancing, came up to them.

This family gathering seemed humiliating to Natasha—as if there were nowhere else for the family to talk but here at the ball. She did not listen to or look at Vera, who was telling her something about her own green dress.

At last, the Tzar stopped beside his last partner (he had danced with three) and the music ceased. A worried aide-de-camp ran up to the Rostovs requesting them to stand farther back, though as it was they were already close to the wall, and from the gallery resounded the distinct, precise, enticingly rhythmical strains of a waltz. The Tzar looked smilingly down the room. A minute passed but no one had yet begun dancing. An aide-de-camp, the Master of Ceremonies, went up to Helene and asked her to dance. She smilingly raised her hand and laid it on his shoulder without looking at him. The aide-de-camp, an adept in his art, grasping his partner firmly round her waist, with confident deliberation started smoothly, gliding first around the edge of the circle, then at the corner of the room he caught Helene's left hand and turned her, the only sound audible, apart from the ever-quickenning music, being the rhythmic click of the spurs on his rapid, agile feet, while at every third beat his partner's velvet dress spread out and seemed to flash as she whirled round. Natasha gazed at them and was ready to cry because it was not she who was dancing that first turn of the waltz.

Andrei, in the white uniform of a cavalry colonel, wearing stockings and dancing shoes, stood looking animated and bright in the front row of the circle not far from the Rostovs. A baron was talking to him about the

first sitting of the Council of State to be held the next day. Andrei, as one closely connected with Secretary of State Speransky and participating in the work of the legislative commission, could give reliable information about that sitting, concerning which various rumors were current. But not listening to what the baron was saying, Andre was gazing now at the sovereign and now at the men intending to dance who had not yet gathered the courage to enter the circle.

Andrei was watching these men abashed by the Tzar's presence and the women who were breathlessly longing to be asked to dance.

Pierre came up to him and caught him by the arm.

"You always dance. I have a protégée, the young Nicholas, here. Ask her," he said.

"Where is she?" asked Andrei. "Excuse me!" he added, turning to the baron, "we will finish this conversation elsewhere—at a ball one must dance." He stepped forward in the direction Pierre indicated. The despairing, dejected expression on Natasha's face caught his eye. He recognized her, guessed her feelings, saw that it was her début, remembered her conversation at the window, and with an expression of pleasure on his face approached Countess Rostov.

"Allow me to introduce you to my daughter Natasha," said Countess Rostov, with heightened color.

"I have the pleasure of being already acquainted if Countess Rostov remembers me," said Andrei with a low and courteous bow quite belying Miss Perónskaya's remarks about his rudeness, and approaching Natasha he held out his arm to grasp her waist before he had completed his invitation. Andrei asked her to waltz. That tremulous expression on Natasha's face, prepared either for despair or rapture, suddenly brightened into a happy, grateful, childlike smile.

"I have long been waiting for you," that frightened happy little girl Natasha seemed to say by the smile that replaced the threatened tears, as

she raised her hand to Andrei's shoulder. They were the second couple to enter the circle. Andrei was one of the best dancers of his day and Natasha danced exquisitely. Her little feet in their white satin dancing shoes did their work swiftly, lightly, and independently of herself, while her face beamed with ecstatic happiness. Her slender bare arms and neck were not beautiful—compared to Helene's her shoulders looked thin and her bosom undeveloped. But Helene seemed, as it were, hardened by a varnish left by the thousands of looks that had scanned her person, while Natasha was like a girl exposed for the first time, who would have felt very much ashamed had she not been assured that this was absolutely necessary.

Andrei liked dancing, and wished to escape as quickly as possible from the political and clever talk that everyone addressed to him, wishing also to break up the circle of restraint he disliked, caused by the Tzar's presence, he danced, and had chosen Natasha because Pierre pointed her out to him and because she was the first pretty girl who caught his eye; but scarcely had he embraced that slender supple figure and felt her stirring so close to him and smiling so near him than the wine of her charm rose to his head, and he felt revived and rejuvenated when after leaving her he stood breathing deeply and watching the other dancers.

After Andrei, Boris came up to ask Natasha for a dance, and then the aide-de-camp who had opened the ball, and several other young men, so that, flushed and happy, and passing on her superfluous partners to Sonya, she did not cease dancing all the evening. Natasha noticed and saw nothing of what occupied everyone else. Not only did she fail to notice that the Tzar talked a long time with the French ambassador, and how particularly gracious he was to a certain lady, or that Baron So-and-so and So-and-so did and said this and that, and that Helene had great success and was honored by the special attention of So-and-so, but she did not even see the Tzar and only noticed that he had gone because the ball became livelier after his departure. For one of the merry cotillions before supper, Andrei

was again her partner. He reminded her of their first encounter in the Otrádnœ avenue, and how she had been unable to sleep that moonlight night, and told her how he had involuntarily overheard her. Natasha blushed at that recollection and tried to excuse herself as if there had been something to be ashamed of in what Andrei had overheard.

Like all men who have grown up in society, Andrei liked meeting someone there not of the conventional society stamp. And such was Natasha, with her surprise, her delight, her shyness, and even her mistakes in speaking French. With her he behaved with special care and tenderness, sitting beside her and talking of the simplest and most unimportant matters; he admired her shy grace. In the middle of the cotillion, having completed one of the figures, Natasha, still out of breath, was returning to her seat when another dancer chose her. She was tired and panting and evidently thought of declining, but immediately put her hand gaily on the man's shoulder, smiling at Andrei.

"I'd be glad to sit beside you and rest: I'm tired, but you see how they keep asking me, and I'm glad of it, I'm happy and I love everybody, and you and I understand it all," and much, much more was said in Natasha's smile. When her partner left her Natasha ran across the room to choose two ladies for the figure.

"If Natasha goes to her cousin first and then to another lady, she will be my wife," said Andrei to himself quite to his own surprise, as he watched her. She did go first to her cousin.

"What rubbish sometimes enters one's head!" thought Andrei, "but what is certain is that that girl is so charming, so original, that she won't be dancing here a month before she will be married... Such as she are rare here," he thought, as Natasha, readjusting a rose that was slipping on her bodice, settled herself beside him.

When the cotillion was over Count Rostov in his blue coat came up to the dancers. He invited Andrei to come and see them and asked Natasha

whether she was enjoying herself. She did not answer at once but only looked up with a smile that said reproachfully: "How can you ask such a question?"

"I have never enjoyed myself so much before!" Natasha said, and Andrei noticed how her thin arms rose quickly as if to embrace her father and instantly dropped again. Natasha was happier than she had ever been in her life. She was at that height of bliss when one becomes completely kind and good and does not believe in the possibility of evil, unhappiness, or sorrow.

At that ball, Pierre for the first time felt humiliated by the position Helene occupied in court circles. He was gloomy and absent-minded. A deep furrow ran across his forehead, and standing by a window he stared over his spectacles seeing no one.

On her way to supper, Natasha passed him.

Pierre's gloomy, unhappy look struck her. She stopped in front of him. She wished to help him, to bestow on him the superabundance of her own happiness.

"How delightful it is, Pierre!" said Natasha. "Isn't it?"

Pierre smiled absent-mindedly, evidently not grasping what she said.

"Yes, I am very glad," he said.

"How can people be dissatisfied with anything?" thought Natasha. "Especially such a capital fellow as Pierre!" In Natasha's eyes all the people at the ball alike were good, kind, and splendid people, loving one another; none of them capable of injuring another—and so they ought all to be happy.

The next day, Andrei thought of the ball, but his mind did not dwell on it long. "Yes, it was a very brilliant ball," and then... "Yes, Natasha is very charming. There's something fresh, original, un-St. Petersburg-like about her that distinguishes her." That was all he thought about yesterday's ball, and after his morning tea, he set to work.

But either from fatigue or want of sleep, Andrei was ill-disposed for work and could get nothing done. He kept criticizing his own work, as he often did, and was glad when he heard someone coming.

The visitor was a fellow committee member of Andrei's, who served on various committees, frequented all the societies in St. Petersburg, and was a passionate devotee of the new ideas and of Secretary of State Speransky, and a diligent St. Petersburg newsmonger—one of those men who choose their opinions like their clothes according to the fashion, but who for that very reason appear to be the warmest partisans. Hardly had he gotten rid of his hat before he ran into Andrei's room with a preoccupied air and at once began talking. He had just heard particulars of that morning's sitting of the Council of State opened by the Tzar, and he spoke of it enthusiastically. The Tzar's speech had been extraordinary. It had been a speech such as only constitutional monarchs deliver. "The Sovereign plainly said that the Council and Senate are *estates* of the realm, he said that the government must rest not on authority but on secure bases. The Tzar said that the fiscal system must be reorganized and the accounts published," recounted the visitor, emphasizing certain words and opening his eyes significantly.

"Ah, yes! Today's events mark an epoch, the greatest epoch in our history," Andrei's visitor concluded.

Andrei listened to the account of the opening of the Council of State, which he had so impatiently awaited and to which he had attached such importance, and was surprised that this event, now that it had taken place, did not affect him, and even seemed quite insignificant. He listened with quiet irony to his visitors' enthusiastic account of it. A very simple thought occurred to him: "What does it matter to us what the Tzar was pleased to say at the Council? Can all that make me any happier or better?"

And this simple reflection suddenly destroyed all the interest Andrei had felt in the impending reforms. He was going to dine that evening at Secretary of State Speransky's, "with only a few friends," as the host had

said when inviting him. The prospect of that dinner in the intimate home circle of the man he so admired had greatly interested Andrei, especially as he had not yet seen Secretary of State Speransky in his domestic surroundings, but now he felt disinclined to go to it.

At the appointed hour, however, Andrei entered the modest house Secretary of State Speransky owned in the Taurida Gardens. In the parqueted dining room of this small house, remarkable for its extreme cleanliness (suggesting that of a monastery), Andrei, who was rather late, found the friendly gathering of Secretary of State Speransky's intimate acquaintances already assembled at five o'clock. There were no ladies present except Secretary of State Speransky's little daughter (long-faced like her father) and her governess. The other guests were Gervais, Magníski, and Stolýpin. While still in the anteroom Andrei heard loud voices and a ringing staccato laugh—a laugh such as one hears on the stage. Someone—it sounded like Secretary of State Speransky—was distinctly ejaculating *ha-ha-ha*. Andrei had never before heard Secretary of State Speransky's famous laugh, and this ringing, high-pitched laughter from a statesman made a strange impression on him.

Andrei entered the dining room. The whole company was standing between two windows at a small table laid with hors-d'oeuvres. Secretary of State Speransky, wearing a gray swallow-tail coat with a star on the breast, and evidently, still the same waistcoat and high white stock he had worn at the meeting of the Council of State, stood at the table with a beaming countenance. His guests surrounded him. Magníski, addressing himself to Secretary of State Speransky, was relating an anecdote, and Secretary of State Speransky was laughing in advance at what Magníski was going to say. When Andrei entered the room Magníski's words were again crowned by laughter. Stolýpin gave a deep bass guffaw as he munched a piece of bread and cheese. Gervais laughed softly with a hissing

chuckle, and Secretary of State Speransky in a high-pitched staccato manner.

Still laughing, Secretary of State Speransky held out his soft white hand to Andrei.

“Very pleased to see you, Andrei,” he said. “One moment...” he went on, turning to Magnítski and interrupting his story. “We have agreed that this is a dinner for recreation, with not a word about business!” and turning again to the narrator he began to laugh afresh.

Andrei looked at the laughing Secretary of State Speransky with astonishment, regret, and disillusionment. It seemed to him that this was not Secretary of State Speransky but someone else. Everything that had formerly appeared mysterious and fascinating in Secretary of State Speransky suddenly became plain and unattractive.

At dinner, the conversation did not cease for a moment and seemed to consist of the contents of a book of funny anecdotes. Before Magnítski had finished his story someone else was anxious to relate something still funnier. Most of the anecdotes, if not related to the state service, were related to people in the service. It seemed that in this company the insignificance of those people was so definitely accepted that the only possible attitude toward them was one of good-humored ridicule. Secretary of State Speransky related how at the Council that morning a deaf dignitary when asked his opinion, replied that he thought so too. Gervais gave a long account of an official revision, remarkable for the stupidity of everybody concerned. Stolýpin, stuttering, broke into the conversation and began excitedly talking of the abuses that existed under the former order of things—threatening to give a serious turn to the conversation. Magnítski started quizzing Stolýpin about his vehemence. Gervais intervened with a joke, and the talk reverted to its former lively tone.

Evidently, Secretary of State Speransky liked to rest after his labors and find amusement in a circle of friends, and his guests, understanding his

wish, tried to enliven him and amuse themselves. But their gaiety seemed to Andrei mirthless and tiresome. Secretary of State Speransky's high-pitched voice struck him unpleasantly, and the incessant laughter grated on him like a false note. Andrei did not laugh and feared that he would be a damper on the spirits of the company, but no one took any notice of his being out of harmony with the general mood. They all seemed very gay.

Andrei tried several times to join in the conversation, but his remarks were tossed aside each time like a cork thrown out of the water, and he could not jest with them.

There was nothing wrong or unseemly in what they said, it was witty and might have been funny, but it lacked just that something which is the salt of mirth, and they were not even aware that such a thing existed.

After dinner Secretary of State Speransky's daughter and her governess rose. He patted the little girl with his white hand and kissed her. And that gesture, too, seemed unnatural to Andrei.

The men remained at the table over their port—English fashion. In the midst of a conversation that was started about Napoleon's Spanish affairs, which they all agreed in approving, Andrei began to express a contrary opinion. Secretary of State Speransky smiled and, with an evident wish to prevent the conversation from taking an unpleasant course, told a story that had no connection with the previous conversation. For a few moments, all were silent.

Having sat some time at the table, Secretary of State Speransky corked a bottle of wine and, remarking, "Nowadays good wine rides in a carriage and pair," passed it to the servant and got up. All rose and continuing to talk loudly went into the drawing room. Two letters brought by a courier were handed to Secretary of State Speransky and he took them to his study. As soon as he had left the room the general merriment stopped and the guests began to converse sensibly and quietly with one another.

“Now for the recitation!” said Secretary of State Speransky on returning from his study. “A wonderful talent!” he said to Andrei, and Magnítski immediately assumed a pose and began reciting some humorous verses in French that he had composed about various well-known St. Petersburg people. He was interrupted several times by applause. When the verses were finished Andrei went up to Secretary of State Speransky and took his leave.

“Where are you off to so early?” asked Secretary of State Speransky.

“I promised to go to a reception.”

They said no more. Andrei looked closely into those mirrorlike, impenetrable eyes, and felt that it had been ridiculous of him to have expected anything from Secretary of State Speransky and from any of his own activities connected with him, or ever to have attributed importance to what Secretary of State Speransky was doing. That precise, mirthless laughter rang in Andrei’s ears long after he had left the house.

When Andrei reached home he began thinking of his life in St. Petersburg during those last four months as if it were something new. He recalled his exertions and solicitations, and the history of his project of army reform, which had been accepted for consideration and which they were trying to pass over in silence simply because another, a very poor one, had already been prepared and submitted to the Tzar. Andrei thought of the meetings of a committee of which Berg was a member. He remembered how carefully and at what length everything relating to form and procedure was discussed at those meetings, and how sedulously and promptly all that related to the gist of the business was evaded. He recalled his labors on the Legal Code, and how painstakingly he had translated the articles of the Roman and French codes into Russian, and he felt ashamed of himself. Then Andrei vividly pictured to himself Boguchárovo, his occupations in the country, his journey to Ryazán; he remembered the peasants and Dron the village elder, and mentally applying to them the Personal Rights he had

divided into paragraphs, he felt astonished that he could have spent so much time on such useless work.

The next day, Andrei called at a few houses he had not visited before, and among them the Rostovs' with whom he had renewed acquaintance at the ball. Apart from considerations of politeness which demanded the call, he wanted to see that original, eager girl who had left such a pleasant impression on his mind, in her own home.

Natasha was one of the first to meet Andrei. She was wearing a dark-blue house dress in which Andrei thought her even prettier than in her ball dress. Natasha and the Rostov family welcomed Andrei as an old friend, simply and cordially. The whole family, whom he had formerly judged severely, now seemed to him to consist of excellent, simple, and kindly people. Count Rostov's hospitality and good nature, which struck one especially in St. Petersburg as a pleasant surprise, were such that Andrei could not refuse to stay for dinner. "Yes," Andrei thought, "they are capital people, who of course have not the slightest idea what a treasure they possess in Natasha; but they are kindly folk and form the best possible setting for this strikingly poetic, charming girl, overflowing with life!"

In Natasha, Andrei was conscious of a strange world completely alien to him and brimful of joys unknown to him, a different world, that in the Otrádnœ avenue and at the window that moonlight night had already begun to disconcert him. Now this world disconcerted him no longer and was no longer alien to him, but he himself having entered it found in it a new enjoyment.

After dinner Natasha, at Andrei's request, went to the clavichord and began singing. Andrei stood by a window talking to the ladies and listened to her. In the midst of a phrase, he ceased speaking and suddenly felt tears choking him, a thing he had thought impossible for him. He looked at Natasha as she sang, and something new and joyful stirred in his soul. He felt happy and at the same time sad. He had absolutely nothing to weep

about yet he was ready to weep. What about? His former love? Lise? His disillusionments?... His hopes for the future?... Yes and no. The chief reason was a sudden, vivid sense of the terrible contrast between something infinitely great and illimitable within him and that limited and material something that he, and even she, was. This contrast weighed on and yet cheered him while she sang.

As soon as Natasha had finished she went up to Andrei and asked how he liked her voice. She asked this and then became confused, feeling that she ought not to have asked it. He smiled, looking at her, and said he liked her singing as he liked everything she did.

Andrei left the Rostovs' home late in the evening. He went to bed from habit but soon realized that he could not sleep. Having lit his candle he sat up in bed, then got up, then lay down again not at all troubled by his sleeplessness: his soul was as fresh and joyful as if he had stepped out of a stuffy room into God's own fresh air. It did not enter his head that he was in love with Natasha; he was not thinking about her, but only picturing her to himself, and in consequence, all life appeared in a new light. "Why do I strive, why do I toil in this narrow, confined frame, when life, all life with all its joys, is open to me?" said Andrei to himself. And for the first time in a very long while he began making happy plans for the future. He decided that he must attend to his son Nicolai's education by finding a tutor and putting the boy in his charge, then he ought to retire from the service and go abroad, and see England, Switzerland, and Italy. "I must use my freedom while I feel so much strength and youth in me," he said to himself. "Pierre was right when he said one must believe in the possibility of happiness in order to be happy, and now I do believe in it. Let the dead bury their dead, but while one has life one must live and be happy!" Andrei thought.

One morning Berg, whom Pierre knew as he knew everybody in Moscow and St. Petersburg, came to see him. Berg arrived in an

immaculate brand-new uniform, with his hair pomaded and brushed forward over his temples as the Tzar wore his hair.

“I have just been to see Helene, your wife. Unfortunately, she could not grant my request, but I hope, Pierre, I shall be more fortunate with you,” he said with a smile.

“What is it you wish, Berg? I am at your service.”

“I have now quite settled in my new rooms, Pierre” (Berg said this with perfect conviction that this information could not but be agreeable), “and so I wish to arrange just a small party for my own and Vera’s friends.” (He smiled still more pleasantly.) “I wished to ask Helene and you to do me the honor of coming to tea and to supper.”

Only Helene, considering the society of such people as the Bergs beneath her, could be cruel enough to refuse such an invitation. Berg explained so clearly why he wanted to collect at his house a small but select company, why this would give him pleasure, and why though he grudged spending money on cards or anything harmful, Berg was prepared to run into some expense for the sake of good society—that Pierre could not refuse, and promised to come.

“But don’t be late, Pierre, if I may venture to ask; about ten minutes to eight, please. We shall make up a rubber. Our general is coming. He is very good to me. We shall have supper, Pierre. So you will do me the favor.”

Contrary to his habit of being late, Pierre on that day arrived at the Bergs’ house, not at ten but at fifteen minutes to eight.

Having prepared everything necessary for the party, the Bergs were ready for their guests’ arrival.

In their new, clean, and light study with its small busts and pictures and new furniture sat Berg and Vera. Berg, closely buttoned up in his new uniform, sat beside Vera explaining to her that one always could and should be acquainted with people above one because only then does one get satisfaction from acquaintances.

“You can get to know something, you can ask for something. See how I managed from my first promotion.” (Berg measured his life not by years but by promotions.) “My comrades are still nobodies, while I am only waiting for a vacancy to command a regiment, and have the happiness to be your husband.” (He rose and kissed Vera’s hand, and on the way to her straightened out a turned-up corner of the carpet.) “And how have I obtained all this? Chiefly by knowing how to choose my acquaintances. It goes without saying that one must be conscientious and methodical.”

Berg smiled with a sense of his superiority over a weak woman, and paused, reflecting that this dear wife of his was after all but a weak woman who could not understand all that constitutes a man’s dignity, what it was *to be a man*. Vera at the same time smiled with a sense of superiority over her good, conscientious husband, who all the same understood life wrongly, as according to Vera all men did. Berg, judging by his wife, thought all women weak and foolish. Vera, judging only by her husband and generalizing from that observation, supposed that all men, though they understand nothing and are conceited and selfish, ascribe common sense to themselves alone.

Berg rose and embraced Vera carefully, so as not to crush her lace fichu for which he had paid a good price, kissing her straight on the lips.

“The only thing is, we mustn’t have children too soon,” Berg continued, following an unconscious sequence of ideas.

“Yes,” answered Vera, “I don’t at all want that. We must live for society.”

“Baroness Yusúpova wore one exactly like this,” said Berg, pointing to the fichu with a happy and kindly smile.

Just then Pierre was announced. Berg and Vera glanced at one another, both smiling with self-satisfaction, and each mentally claiming the honor of this visit.

“This is what comes of knowing how to make acquaintances,” thought Berg. “This is what comes of knowing how to conduct oneself.”

“But please don’t interrupt me when I am entertaining the guests,” said Vera, “because I know what interests each of them and what to say to different people.”

Berg smiled again.

“It can’t be helped: men must sometimes have masculine conversation,” said Berg.

Berg and Vera received Pierre in their small, new drawing room, where it was impossible to sit down anywhere without disturbing its symmetry, neatness, and order; so it was quite comprehensible and not strange that Berg, having generously offered to disturb the symmetry of an armchair or of the sofa for his dear guest, but being apparently painfully undecided on the matter himself, eventually left the visitor to settle the question of selection. Pierre disturbed the symmetry by moving a chair for himself, and Berg and Vera immediately began their evening party, interrupting each other in their efforts to entertain their guest.

Vera, having decided in her own mind that Pierre ought to be entertained with a conversation about the French embassy, at once began accordingly. Berg, having decided that masculine conversation was required, interrupted Vera’s remarks and touched on the question of the war with Austria, and unconsciously jumped from the general subject to personal considerations as to the proposals that made him take part in the Austrian campaign and the reasons why he had declined them. Though the conversation was very incoherent and Vera was angry at the intrusion of the masculine element, both Berg and Vera felt with satisfaction that, even if only one guest was present, their evening had begun very well and was as like as two peas to every other evening party with its talk, tea, and lighted candles.

Before long, Berg’s old comrade Boris arrived. There was a shade of condescension and patronage in his treatment of Berg and Vera. After Boris came a lady with the colonel, then the general himself, then the Rostovs,

and the party became unquestionably exactly like all other evening parties. Berg and Vera could not repress their smiles of satisfaction at the sight of all this movement in their drawing room, at the sound of the disconnected talk, the rustling of dresses, and the bowing and scraping. Everything was just as everybody always has it, especially so the general, who admired the apartment, patted Berg on the shoulder, and with parental authority superintended the setting out of the table for a game of boston. The general sat down by Count Rostov, who was next to himself the most important guest. The old people sat with the old, the young with the young, and the hostess at the tea table, on which stood exactly the same kind of cakes in a silver cake basket as the Panins had at their party. Everything was just as it was everywhere else.

Pierre, as one of the principal guests, had to sit down to boston with Count Rostov, the general, and the colonel. At the card table, he happened to be directly facing Natasha and was struck by a curious change that had come over her since the ball. She was silent, and not only less pretty than at the ball, but only redeemed from plainness by her look of gentle indifference to everything around.

“What’s the matter with Natasha?” thought Pierre, glancing at her. She was sitting by her sister at the tea table, and reluctantly, without looking at him, made some reply to Boris who sat down beside her. After playing out a whole suit and to his partner’s delight taking five tricks, Pierre, hearing greetings and the steps of someone who had entered the room while he was picking up his tricks, glanced again at Natasha.

“What has happened to her?” Pierre asked himself with still greater surprise.

Andrei was standing before Natasha, saying something to her with a look of tender solicitude. She, having raised her head, was looking up at him, flushed and evidently trying to master her rapid breathing. And the bright glow of some inner fire that had been suppressed was again alight in

her. She was completely transformed and from a plain girl had again become what she had been at the ball.

Andrei went up to Pierre, and Pierre noticed a new and youthful expression on Andrei's face.

Pierre changed places several times during the game, sitting now with his back to Natasha and now facing her, but during the whole of the six rubbers, he watched her and Andrei.

"Something very important is happening between them," thought Pierre, and a feeling that was both joyful and painful agitated him and made him neglect the game.

After six rubbers the general got up, saying that it was no use playing like that, and Pierre was released. Natasha on one side was talking with Sonya and Boris, and Vera with a subtle smile was saying something to Andrei. Pierre went up to Andrei and, asking whether they were talking secrets, sat down beside them. Vera, having noticed Andrei's attentions to Natasha, decided that at a party, a real evening party, subtle allusions to the tender passion were absolutely necessary and, seizing a moment when Andrei was alone, began a conversation with him about feelings in general and about her sister Natasha. With so intellectual a guest as Vera considered Andrei to be, she felt that she had to employ her diplomatic tact.

When Pierre went up to them he noticed that Vera was being carried away by her self-satisfied talk, but that Andrei seemed embarrassed, a thing that rarely happened with him.

"What do you think?" Vera was saying with an arch smile. "You are so discerning, Andrei, and understand people's characters so well at a glance. What do you think of Natasha? Could she be constant in her attachments? Could she, like other women" (Vera meant herself), "love a man once for all and remain true to him forever? That is what I consider true love. What do you think, Andrei?"

“I know Natasha too little,” replied Andrei, with a sarcastic smile under which he wished to hide his embarrassment, “to be able to solve so delicate a question, and then I have noticed that the less attractive a woman is the more constant she is likely to be,” he added and looked up at Pierre who was just approaching them.

“Yes, that is true, Andrei. In our days,” continued Vera—mentioning “our days” as people of limited intelligence are fond of doing, imagining that they have discovered and appraised the peculiarities of “our days” and that human characteristics change with the times—“in our days a girl has so much freedom that the pleasure of being courted often stifles real feeling in her. And it must be confessed that Natasha is very susceptible.” This return to the subject of Natasha caused Andrei to knit his brows with discomfort: he was about to rise, but Vera continued with a still more subtle smile:

“I think no one has been more courted than Natasha,” Vera went on, “but till quite lately she never cared seriously for anyone. Now you know, Pierre,” she said, “even our dear cousin Boris, who, between ourselves, was very far gone in the land of tenderness...” (alluding to a map of love much in vogue at that time).

Andrei frowned and remained silent.

“You are friendly with Boris, aren’t you?” asked Vera.

“Yes, I know him...”

“I expect he has told you of his childish love for Natasha?”

“Oh, there was childish love?” suddenly asked Andrei, blushing unexpectedly.

“Yes, you know between cousins intimacy often leads to love. *Cousinhood is a dangerous neighborhood*. Don’t you think so?”

“Oh, undoubtedly!” said Andrei, and with sudden and unnatural liveliness he began chaffing Pierre about the need to be very careful with his fifty-year-old Moscow cousins, and in the midst of these jesting remarks Andrei rose, taking Pierre by the arm, and drew him aside.

“Well?” asked Pierre, seeing Andrei’s strange animation with surprise, and noticing the glance he turned on Natasha as he rose.

“I must... I must have a talk with you,” said Andrei. “You know that pair of women’s gloves?” (He referred to the Masonic gloves given to a newly initiated Brother to present to the woman he loved.) “I... but no, I will talk to you later on,” and with a strange light in his eyes and restlessness in his movements, Andrei approached Natasha and sat down beside her. Pierre saw how Andrei asked her something and how she flushed as she replied.

But at that moment Berg came to Pierre and began insisting that Pierre should take part in an argument between the general and the colonel on the affairs in Spain.

Berg was satisfied and happy. The smile of pleasure never left his face. The party was very successful and quite like other parties he had seen. Everything was similar: the ladies’ subtle talk, the cards, the general raising his voice at the card table, and the samovar and the tea cakes; only one thing was lacking that he had always seen at the evening parties he wished to imitate. They had not yet had a loud conversation among the men and a dispute about something important and clever. Now the general had begun such a discussion and so Berg drew Pierre to it.

The next day, having been invited by Count Rostov, Andrei dined with the Rostovs and spent the rest of the day there.

Everyone in the house realized for whose sake Andrei came, and without concealing it Andrei tried to be with Natasha all day. Not only in the soul of the frightened yet happy and enraptured Natasha, but in the whole house, there was a feeling of awe at something important that was bound to happen. Countess Rostov looked with sad and sternly serious eyes at Andrei when he talked to Natasha and timidly started some artificial conversation about trifles as soon as he looked her way. Sonya was afraid to leave Natasha and afraid of being in the way when she was with them. Natasha grew pale, in a panic of expectation, when she remained alone with

him for a moment. Andrei surprised her by his timidity. She felt that he wanted to say something to her but could not bring himself to do so.

In the evening, when Andrei had left, Countess Rostov went up to Natasha and whispered: "Well, what?"

"Mamma! For heaven's sake don't ask me anything now! One can't talk about that," said Natasha.

But all the same that night Natasha, now agitated and now frightened, lay a long time in her mother's bed gazing straight before her. Natasha told her how Andrei had complimented her, how he told her he was going abroad, asked her where they were going to spend the summer, and then how Andrei had asked her about Boris.

"But such a... such a... never happened to me before!" Natasha said. "Only I feel afraid in Andrei's presence. I am always afraid when I'm with him. What does that mean? Does it mean that it's the real thing? Yes? Mamma, are you asleep?"

"No, my love; I am frightened myself," answered her mother. "Now go!"

"All the same I shan't sleep. What silliness, to sleep! Mummy! Mummy! Such a thing never happened to me before," Natasha said, surprised and alarmed at the feeling she was aware of in herself. "And could we ever have thought!..."

It seemed to Natasha that even at the time she first saw Andrei at Otrádnoe she had fallen in love with him. It was as if she feared this strange, unexpected happiness of meeting again the very man she had then chosen (she was firmly convinced she had done so) and of finding him, as it seemed, not indifferent to her.

"And it had to happen that Andrei should come specially to St. Petersburg while we are here. And it had to happen that we should meet at that ball. It is fate. Clearly, it is fate that everything led up to this! Already *then*, directly I saw Andrei I felt something peculiar."

“What else did he say to you? What are those verses? Read them...” said Countess Rostov, thoughtfully, referring to some verses Andrei had written in Natasha’s album.

“Mamma, one need not be ashamed of his being a widower?”

“Don’t, Natasha! Pray to God. ‘Marriages are made in heaven,’” said her mother.

“Darling Mummy, how I love you! How happy I am!” cried Natasha, shedding tears of joy and excitement and embracing her mother.

At that very time, Andrei was sitting with Pierre and telling him of his love for Natasha and his firm resolve to make her his wife.

That day Countess Helene had a reception at her house. The French ambassador was there, and a foreign Baron of the blood who had of late become a frequent visitor of hers, and many brilliant ladies and gentlemen. Pierre, who had come downstairs, walked through the rooms and struck everyone with his preoccupied, absent-minded, and morose air.

Since the ball, Pierre had felt the approach of a fit of nervous depression and had made desperate efforts to combat it. Since the intimacy of Helene with the Tzar, Pierre had unexpectedly been made a gentleman of the bedchamber, and from that time he had begun to feel oppressed and ashamed in court society, and dark thoughts of the vanity of all things human came to him oftener than before. At the same time, the feeling Pierre had noticed between his protégée Natasha and Andrei accentuated his gloom by the contrast between his own position and his friend’s. He tried equally to avoid thinking about his wife, and about Natasha and Andrei, and again everything seemed to him insignificant in comparison with eternity; again the question, “For what?” presented itself; and Pierre forced himself to work day and night at Masonic labors, hoping to drive away the evil spirit that threatened him. Toward midnight, after Pierre had left Countess Rostov’s apartments, he was sitting upstairs in a shabby dressing gown,

copying out the original transaction of the Scottish lodge of Freemasons at a table in his low room cloudy with tobacco smoke, when someone came in. It was Andrei.

“Ah, it’s you, Andre!” said Pierre with a preoccupied, dissatisfied air. “And I, you see, am hard at it.” Pierre pointed to his manuscript book with that air of escaping from the ills of life with which unhappy people look at their work.

Andrei, with a beaming, ecstatic expression of renewed life on his face, paused in front of Pierre and, not noticing his sad look, smiled at Pierre with the egotism of joy.

“Well, dear Pierre,” said Andrei, “I wanted to tell you about it yesterday and I have come to do so today. I never experienced anything like it before. I am in love, my friend!”

Suddenly Pierre heaved a deep sigh and dumped his heavy person down on the sofa beside Andrei.

“With Natasha, yes?” said Pierre.

“Yes, yes! Who else should it be? I should never have believed it, but the feeling is stronger than I am. Yesterday I tormented myself and suffered, but I would not exchange even that torment for anything in the world, I have not lived till now. At last, I live, but I can’t live without her! But can she love me?... I am too old for her... Why don’t you speak?”

“I? I? What did I tell you?” said Pierre suddenly, rising and beginning to pace up and down the room. “I always thought it... That Natasha is such a treasure... she is a rare girl... My dear Andrei, I entreat you, don’t philosophize, don’t doubt, marry, marry, marry... And I am sure there will not be a happier man than you.”

“But what of Natasha?”

“She loves you.”

“Don’t talk rubbish...” said Andrei, smiling and looking into Pierre’s eyes.

“She does, I know,” Pierre cried fiercely.

“But do listen,” returned Andrei, holding him by the arm. “Do you know the condition I am in? I must talk about it to someone.”

“Well, go on, go on. I am very glad,” said Pierre, and his face really changed, his brow became smooth, and he listened gladly to Andrei. Andrei seemed, and really was, quite a different, quite a new man. Where was his spleen, his contempt for life, his disillusionment? Pierre was the only person to whom he made up his mind to speak openly, and to him, he told all that was in his soul. Now Andrei boldly and lightly made plans for an extended future, said he could not sacrifice his own happiness to his father’s caprice, and spoke of how he would either make his father consent to this marriage and love her or would do without his consent; then he marveled at the feeling that had mastered him as at something strange, apart from and independent of himself.

“I should not have believed anyone who told me that I was capable of such love,” said Andrei. “It is not at all the same feeling that I knew in the past. The whole world is now for me divided into two halves: one half is she, and there is all is joy, hope, and light: the other half is everything where she is not, and there is all gloom and darkness...”

“Darkness and gloom,” reiterated Pierre: “yes, yes, I understand that.”

“I cannot help loving the light, it is not my fault. And I am very happy! Do you understand me? I know you are glad for my sake.”

“Yes, yes,” Pierre assented, looking at Andrei with a touched and sad expression in his eyes. The brighter Andrei’s lot appeared to him, the gloomier seemed his own.

Andrei needed his father’s consent to his marriage, and to obtain this he started for the country the next day.

Baron Bolkonski received his son’s communication with external composure, but inward wrath. He could not comprehend how anyone could wish to alter his life or introduce anything new into it when his own life was

already ending. “If only they would let me end my days as I want to,” thought Baron Bolkonski, “then they might do as they please.” With Andrei, however, he employed the diplomacy he reserved for important occasions and, adopting a quiet tone, discussed the whole matter.

In the first place, the marriage was not a brilliant one as regards birth, wealth, or rank. Secondly, Andrei was no longer as young as he had been and his health was poor (the old man laid special stress on this), while she was very young. Thirdly, Andrei had a son whom it would be a pity to entrust to a child of a girl. “Fourthly and finally,” Baron Bolkonski said, looking ironically at his son, “I beg you to put it off for a year: go abroad, take a cure, look out as you wanted to for a German tutor for Nikolenka. Then if your love or passion or obstinacy—as you please—is still as great, marry! And that’s my last word on it. Mind, the last...” concluded Baron Bolkonski, in a tone that showed that nothing would make him alter his decision.

Andrei saw clearly that Baron Bolkonski hoped that his feelings, or his fiancée’s, would not stand a year’s test, or that Baron Bolkonski himself would die before then, and Andrei decided to conform to his father’s wish—to propose, and postpone the wedding for a year.

Three weeks after the last evening he had spent with the Rostovs, Andrei returned to St. Petersburg.

The next day after Natasha’s talk with her mother, Natasha expected Andrei all day, but he did not come. On the second and third days, it was the same. Pierre did not come either and Natasha, not knowing that Andrei had gone to see his father, could not explain his absence to herself.

Three weeks passed in this way. Natasha had no desire to go out anywhere and wandered from room to room like a shadow, idle and listless; she wept secretly at night and did not go to her mother in the evenings. She blushed continually and was irritable. It seemed to her that everybody knew

about her disappointment and was laughing at her and pitying her. Strong as was her inward grief, this wound to her vanity intensified her misery.

Once Natasha came to her mother, tried to say something, and suddenly began to cry. Her tears were those of an offended child who does not know why she is being punished.

Countess Rostov began to soothe Natasha, who after first listening to her mother's words, suddenly interrupted her:

"Leave off, Mamma! I don't think, and don't want to think about it! Andrei just came and then left off, left off..."

Natasha's voice trembled, and she again nearly cried, but recovered and went on quietly:

"And I don't at all want to get married. And I am afraid of him; I have now become quite calm, quite calm."

The day after this conversation Natasha put on the old dress which she knew had the peculiar property of conducing to cheerfulness in the mornings, and that day she returned to the old way of life which she had abandoned since the ball. Having finished her morning tea she went to the ballroom, which she particularly liked for its loud resonance, and began singing her solfeggio. When Natasha had finished her first exercise she stood still in the middle of the room and sang a musical phrase that particularly pleased her. She listened joyfully (as though she had not expected it) to the charm of the notes reverberating, filling the whole empty ballroom, and slowly dying away; and all at once, she felt cheerful. "What's the good of making so much of it? Things are nice as it is," she said to herself, and she began walking up and down the room, not stepping simply on the resounding parquet but treading with each step from the heel to the toe (she had on a new and favorite pair of shoes) and listening to the regular tap of the heel and creak of the toe as gladly as she had to the sounds of her own voice. Passing a mirror Natasha glanced into it. "There, that's me!" the

expression on her face seemed to say as she caught sight of herself. “Well, and very nice too! I need nobody.”

A footman wanted to come in to clear away something in the room but Natasha would not let him, and having closed the door behind him continued her walk. That morning she had returned to her favorite mood—love of, and delight in, herself. “How charming that Natasha is!” she said again, speaking as some third, collective, male person. “Pretty, a good voice, young, and in nobody’s way if only they leave her in peace.” But however much they left her in peace Natasha could not now be at peace, and immediately felt this.

In the hall, the porch door opened, and someone asked, “At home?” and then footsteps were heard. Natasha was looking in the mirror but did not see herself. She listened to the sounds in the hall. When she saw herself, her face was pale. It was *he*. She knew this for certain, though she hardly heard his voice through the closed doors.

Pale and agitated, Natasha ran into the drawing room.

“Mamma! Andrei has come!” she said. “Mamma, it is awful, it is unbearable! I don’t want... to be tormented? What am I to do?...”

Before Countess Rostov could answer, Andrei entered the room with an agitated and serious face. As soon as he saw Natasha his face brightened. He kissed Countess Rostov’s hand and Natasha’s and sat down beside the sofa.

“It is long since we had the pleasure...” began Countess Rostov, but Andrei interrupted her by answering her intended question, obviously in haste to say what he had to.

“I have not been to see you all this time because I have been at my father’s. I had to talk over a very important matter with him. I only got back last night,” Andrei said glancing at Natasha; “I want to have a talk with you, Countess Rostov,” he added after a moment’s pause.

Countess Rostov lowered her eyes, sighing deeply.

“I am at your disposal,” she murmured.

Natasha knew that she ought to go away, but was unable to do so: something gripped her throat, and regardless of manners she stared straight at Andrei with wide-open eyes.

“At once? This instant!... No, it can’t be!” Natasha thought.

Again Andrei glanced at her, and that glance convinced her that she was not mistaken. Yes, at once, that very instant, her fate would be decided.

“Go, Natasha! I will call you,” said Countess Rostov in a whisper.

Natasha glanced with frightened imploring eyes at Andrei and at her mother and went out.

“I have come, Countess Rostov, to ask for your daughter’s hand,” said Andrei.

Countess Rostov’s face flushed hotly, but she said nothing.

“Your offer...” she began at last sedately. He remained silent, looking into her eyes. “Your offer...” (she grew confused) “is agreeable to us, and I accept your offer. I am glad. And my husband... I hope... but it will depend on her...”

“I will speak to Natasha when I have your consent... Do you give it to me?” said Andrei.

“Yes,” replied Countess Rostov. She held out her hand to him, and with a mixed feeling of estrangement and tenderness pressed her lips to his forehead as he stooped to kiss her hand. She wished to love Andrei as a son but felt that to her he was a stranger and a terrifying man. “I am sure my husband will consent,” said Countess Rostov, “but your father...”

“My father, to whom I have told my plans, has made it an express condition of his consent that the wedding is not to take place for a year. And I wished to tell you of that,” said Andrei.

“It is true that Natasha is still young, but—so long as that?...”

“It is unavoidable,” said Andrei with a sigh.

“I will send Natasha to you,” said Countess Rostov, and left the room.

“Lord have mercy upon us!” Countess Rostov repeated while seeking her daughter.

Sonya said that Natasha was in her bedroom. Natasha was sitting on the bed, pale and dry-eyed, and was gazing at the icons and whispering something as she rapidly crossed herself. Seeing her mother she jumped up and flew to her.

“Well, Mamma?... Well?...”

“Go, go to him. He is asking for your hand,” said Countess Rostov, coldly it seemed to Natasha. “Go... go,” said the mother, sadly and reproachfully, with a deep sigh, as Natasha ran away.

Natasha never remembered how she entered the drawing room. When she came in and saw Andrei she paused. “Is it possible that this stranger has now become *everything* to me?” she asked herself, and immediately answered, “Yes, everything! He alone is now dearer to me than everything in the world.” Andrei came up to her with downcast eyes.

“I have loved you from the very first moment I saw you. May I hope?”

Andrei looked at her and was struck by the serious impassioned expression on her face. Her face said: “Why ask? Why doubt what you cannot but know? Why speak, when words cannot express what one feels?”

Natasha drew near to him and stopped. He took her hand and kissed it.

“Do you love me?”

“Yes, yes!” Natasha murmured as if in vexation. Then she sighed loudly and, catching her breath more and more quickly, began to sob.

“What is it? What’s the matter?”

“Oh, I am so happy!” Natasha replied, smiled through her tears, bent over closer to him, paused for an instant as if asking herself whether she might, and then kissed him.

Andrei held her hands, looked into her eyes, and did not find in his heart his former love for her. Something in him had suddenly changed; there was no longer the former poetic and mystic charm of desire, but there was pity

for her feminine and childish weakness, fear at her devotion and trustfulness, and an oppressive yet joyful sense of the duty that now bound him to her forever. The present feeling, though not so bright and poetic as the former, was stronger and more serious.

“Did your mother tell you that it cannot be for a year?” asked Andrei, still looking into her eyes.

“Is it possible that I—the ‘chit of a girl,’ as everybody called me,” thought Natasha—“is it possible that I am now to be the *wife* and the equal of this strange, dear, clever man whom even my father looks up to? Can it be true? Can it be true that there can be no more playing with life, that now I am grown up, that on me now lies a responsibility for my every word and deed? Yes, but what did he ask me?”

“No,” Natasha replied, but she had not understood his question.

“Forgive me!” Andre said. “But you are so young, and I have already been through so much in life. I am afraid for you, you do not yet know yourself.”

Natasha listened with concentrated attention, trying but failing to take in the meaning of his words.

“Hard as this year which delays my happiness will be,” continued Andrei, “it will give you time to be sure of yourself. I ask you to make me happy in a year, but you are free: our engagement shall remain a secret, and should you find that you do not love me, or should you come to love...” said Andrei with an unnatural smile.

“Why do you say that?” Natasha interrupted him. “You know that from the very day you first came to Otrádnœ I have loved you,” she cried, quite convinced that she spoke the truth.

“In a year you will learn to know yourself...”

“A whole year!” Natasha repeated suddenly, only now realizing that the marriage was to be postponed for a year. “But why a year? Why a year?...”

Andrei began to explain to her the reasons for this delay. Natasha did not hear him.

“And can’t it be helped?” Natasha asked. Andrei did not reply, but his face expressed the impossibility of altering that decision.

“It’s awful! Oh, it’s awful! awful!” Natasha suddenly cried, and again burst into sobs. “I shall die, waiting a year: it’s impossible, it’s awful!” She looked into her lover’s face and saw in it a look of commiseration and perplexity.

“No, no! I’ll do anything!” Natasha said, suddenly checking her tears. “I am so happy.”

The father and mother came into the room and gave the betrothed couple their blessing.

From that day Andrei began to frequent the Rostov’s home as Natasha’s fiancé.

No betrothal ceremony took place and Natasha’s engagement to Andrei was not announced; Andrei insisted on that. He said that as he was responsible for the delay he ought to bear the whole burden of it; that he had given his word and bound himself forever, but that he did not wish to bind Natasha and gave her perfect freedom. If after six months she felt that she did not love him she would have full right to reject him. Naturally neither Natasha nor her parents wished to hear of this, but Andrei was firm. He came every day to the Rostovs’, but did not behave to Natasha as an affianced lover: he did not use the familiar *thou*, but said *you* to her, and kissed only her hand. After their engagement, quite different, intimate, and natural relations sprang up between them. It was as if they had not known each other till now. Both liked to recall how they had regarded each other when as yet they were *nothing* to one another; they felt themselves now quite different beings: then they were artificial, now natural and sincere. At first, the family felt some constraint in intercourse with Andrei; he seemed a man from another world, and for a long time Natasha trained the family to

get used to him, proudly assuring them all that he only appeared to be different, but was really just like all of them, and that she was not afraid of him and no one else ought to be. After a few days they grew accustomed to him, and without restraint in his presence pursued their usual way of life, in which he took his part. Andrei could talk about the rural economy with Count Rostov, fashions with Countess Rostov and Natasha, and about albums and fancywork with Sonya. Sometimes the household both among themselves and in his presence expressed their wonder at how it had all happened, and at the evident omens there had been of it: Andrei's coming to Otrádnœ and their coming to St. Petersburg, and the likeness between Natasha and Andrei which her nurse had noticed on his first visit, and Andrei's encounter with Nicholas in 1805, and many other incidents betokening that it had to be.

In the house, that poetic dullness and quiet reigned which always accompanies the presence of a betrothed couple. Often when all sitting together everyone kept silent. Sometimes the others would get up and go away and the couple, left alone, still remained silent. They rarely spoke of their future life. Andrei was afraid and ashamed to speak of it. Natasha shared this as she did all his feelings, which she constantly divined. Once she began questioning him about his son Nikolenka. Andrei blushed, as he often did now—Natasha particularly liked it in him—and said that Nikolenka would not live with them.

“Why not?” asked Natasha in a frightened tone.

“I cannot take him away from his grandfather, and besides...”

“How I should have loved him!” said Natasha, immediately guessing his thought; “but I know you wish to avoid any pretext for finding fault with us.”

Sometimes Count Rostov would come up, kiss Andrei, and ask his advice about Petya's education or Nicholas' service. Count Rostov sighed as she looked at them; Sonya was always getting frightened lest she should

be in the way and tried to find excuses for leaving them alone, even when they did not wish it. When Andrei spoke (he could tell a story very well), Natasha listened to him with pride; when she spoke she noticed with fear and joy that he gazed attentively and scrutinizingly at her. She asked herself in perplexity: "What does he look for in me? He is trying to discover something by looking at me! What if what he seeks in me is not there?" Sometimes she fell into one of the mad, merry moods characteristic of her, and then she particularly loved to hear and see how Andrei laughed. He seldom laughed, but when he did he abandoned himself entirely to his laughter, and after such a laugh she always felt nearer to him. Natasha would have been completely happy if the thought of the separation awaiting her and drawing near had not terrified her, just as the mere thought of it made him turn pale and cold.

On the eve of his departure from St. Petersburg, Andrei brought with him Pierre, who had not been to the Rostovs' once since the ball. Pierre seemed disconcerted and embarrassed. He was talking to Countess Rostov, and Natasha sat down beside a little chess table with Sonya, thereby inviting Andrei to come too. He did so.

"You have known Pierre a long time?" he asked. "Do you like him?"

"Yes, he's a dear, but very absurd."

As usual, when speaking of Pierre, she began to tell anecdotes of his absent-mindedness, some of which had even been invented about him.

"Do you know I have entrusted him with our secret? I have known him since childhood. He has a heart of gold. I beg you, Natasha," Andrei said with sudden seriousness—"I am going away and heaven knows what may happen. You may cease to... all right, I know I am not to say that. Only this, then: whatever may happen to you when I am not here..."

"What can happen?"

"Whatever trouble may come," Andrei continued, "I beg you, Sophie, whatever may happen, to turn to him alone for advice and help! Pierre is a

most absent-minded and absurd fellow, but he has a heart of gold.”

Neither Natasha’s father, nor her mother, nor Sonya, nor Andrei himself could have foreseen how the separation from her lover would act on Natasha. Flushed and agitated she went about the house all that day, dry-eyed, occupied with most trivial matters as if not understanding what awaited her. She did not even cry when, on taking leave, he kissed her hand for the last time. “Don’t go!” Natasha said in a tone that made Andrei wonder whether he really ought not to stay and which he remembered long afterward. Nor did she cry when he was gone; but for several days she sat in her room dry-eyed, taking no interest in anything and only saying now and then, “Oh, why did he go away?”

But a fortnight after his departure, to the surprise of those around Natasha, she recovered from her mental sickness just as suddenly and became her old self again, but with a change in her moral physiognomy, as a child gets up after a long illness with a changed expression of face.

During that year after Andrei’s departure, Baron Bolkonski’s health and temper became much worse. He grew still more irritable, and it was Marya who generally bore the brunt of his frequent fits of unprovoked anger. He seemed careful to seek out her tender spots so as to torture her mentally as harshly as possible. Marya had two passions and consequently, two joys—her nephew, Nikolenka, and religion—and these were the favorite subjects of the Baron’s attacks and ridicule. Whatever was spoken of he would bring round to the superstitiousness of old maids or the petting and spoiling of children. “You want to make him”—Nikolenka—“into an old maid like yourself! A pity! Andrei wants a son and not an old maid,” Baron Bolkonski would say. Or, turning to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, he would ask her in Marya’s presence how she liked our village priests and icons and would joke about them.

Baron Bolkonski continually hurt Marya’s feelings and tormented her, but it cost her no effort to forgive him. Could he be to blame toward her, or

could her father, whom she knew loved her in spite of it all, be unjust? And what is justice? Marya never thought of that proud word “justice.” All the complex laws of man centered for her in one clear and simple law—the law of love and self-sacrifice taught us by Him who lovingly suffered for mankind though He Himself was God. What had she to do with the justice or injustice of other people? She had to endure and love, and that she did.

During the winter Andrei had come to Bald Hills and had been gay, gentle, and more affectionate than Marya had known him for a long time past. She felt that something had happened to him, but he said nothing to her about his love. Before he left he had a long talk with his father about something, and Marya noticed that before his departure they were dissatisfied with one another.

Soon after Andrei had gone, Marya wrote to her friend Julie in St. Petersburg, whom she had dreamed (as all girls dream) of marrying her brother, and who was at that time in mourning for her own brother, killed in Turkey.

Sorrow, it seems, is our common lot, my dear, tender friend Julie.

The death of your brother is so terrible that I can only explain it to myself as a special providence of God who, loving you, wishes to try you and your excellent mother. Oh, my friend! Religion, and religion alone, can—I will not say comfort us—but save us from despair. Religion alone can explain to us what without its help man cannot comprehend: why, for what cause, kind and noble beings able to find happiness in life—not merely harming no one but necessary to the happiness of others—are called away to God, while cruel, useless, harmful persons, or such as are a burden to themselves and to others, are left living. The first death I saw, and one I shall never forget—that of my dear sister-in-law, Lise—left that impression on me. Just as you ask destiny why your splendid brother had to die, so I asked why that angel Lise, who not only never wronged anyone but in whose soul there were never any unkind thoughts, had to die. And what do

you think, dear friend? Five years have passed since then, and already I, with my petty understanding, begin to see clearly why she had to die, and in what way that death was but an expression of the infinite goodness of the Creator, whose every action, though generally incomprehensible to us, is but a manifestation of His infinite love for His creatures. Perhaps, I often think, Lise was too angelically innocent to have the strength to perform all a mother's duties. As a young wife, she was irreproachable; perhaps she could not have been so as a mother. As it is, not only has she left us, and particularly Andrei, with the purest regrets and memories, but probably she will *there* receive a place I dare not hope for myself. But not to speak of her alone, that early and terrible death has had the most beneficent influence on me and on my brother in spite of all our grief. Then, at the moment of our loss, these thoughts could not occur to me; I should then have dismissed them with horror, but now they are very clear and certain. I write all this to you, dear friend, only to convince you of the Gospel truth which has become for me a principle of life: not a single hair of our heads will fall without His will. And His will is governed only by infinite love for us, and so whatever befalls us is for our good.

You ask whether we shall spend next winter in Moscow. In spite of my wish to see you, I do not think so and do not want to do so. You will be surprised to hear that the reason for this is Napoleon! The case is this: my father's health is growing noticeably worse, he cannot stand any contradiction and is becoming irritable. This irritability is, as you know, chiefly directed to political questions. My father cannot endure the notion that Napoleon is negotiating on equal terms with all the sovereigns of Europe and particularly with our own, the grandson of Catherine the Great! As you know, I am quite indifferent to politics, but from my father's remarks and his talks with the architect Michael Ivanovich I know all that goes on in the world and especially about the honors conferred on Napoleon, who only at Bald Hills in the whole world, it seems, is not

accepted as a great man, still less as Tzar of France. And my father cannot stand this. It seems to me that it is chiefly because of his political views that my father is reluctant to speak of going to Moscow; for he foresees the encounters that would result from his way of expressing his views regardless of anybody. All the benefit he might derive from a course of treatment he would lose as a result of the disputes about Napoleon which would be inevitable. In any case, it will be decided very shortly.

Our family life goes on in the old way except for my brother Andrei's absence. He, as I wrote you before, has changed very much of late. After his sorrow he only this year quite recovered his spirits. He has again become as I used to know him when a child: kind, affectionate, with that heart of gold to which I know no equal. He has realized, it seems to me, that life is not over for him. But together with this mental change, he has grown physically much weaker. Andrei has become thinner and more nervous. I am anxious about him and glad he is taking this trip abroad which the doctors recommended long ago. I hope it will cure him. You write that in St. Petersburg he is spoken of as one of the most active, cultivated, and capable of the young men. Forgive my vanity as a relation, but I never doubted it. The good that Andrei has done to everybody here, from his peasants up to the gentry, is incalculable. On his arrival in St. Petersburg, he received only his due. I always wonder at the way rumors fly from St. Petersburg to Moscow, especially such false ones as that you write about—I mean the report of my brother's betrothal to Natasha. I do not think Andrei will ever marry again, and certainly not her, and this is why: first, I know that though he rarely speaks about the wife he has lost, the grief of that loss has gone too deep in his heart for him ever to decide to give her a successor and our little angel a stepmother. Secondly, as far as I know, Natasha is not the kind of girl who could please Andrei. I do not think he would choose her for a wife, and frankly, I do not wish it. But I am running on too long and am at the end of my second sheet. Good-by, my dear friend. May God keep you in

His holy and mighty care. My dear friend, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, sends you kisses.

MARYA

In the middle of the summer, Marya received an unexpected letter from Andrei in Switzerland in which he gave her strange and surprising news. He informed her of his engagement to Natasha. The whole letter breathed loving rapture for his betrothed and tender and confiding affection for his sister. Andrei wrote that he had never loved as he did now and that only now did he understand and know what life was. He asked Marya to forgive him for not having told her of his resolve when he had last visited Bald Hills, though he had spoken of it to his father. Andrei had not done so for fear Marya should ask her father to give his consent, irritating him and having to bear the brunt of his displeasure without attaining her object. “Besides,” Andrei wrote, “the matter was not then so definitely settled as it is now. My father then insisted on a delay of a year and now already *six months*, half of that period, have passed, and my resolution is firmer than ever. If the doctors did not keep me here at the spas I should be back in Russia, but as it is I have to postpone my return for three months. You know me and my relations with Father. I want nothing from him. I have been and always shall be independent; but to go against his will and arouse his anger, now that he may perhaps remain with us such a short time, would destroy half my happiness. I am now writing to him about the same question, and beg you to choose a good moment to hand him the letter and to let me know how he looks at the whole matter and whether there is hope that he may consent to reduce the term by four months.”

After long hesitations, doubts, and prayers, Marya gave the letter to Baron Bolkonski. The next day he said to her quietly:

“Write and tell Andrei to wait till I am dead... It won’t be long—I shall soon set him free.”

Marya was about to reply, but Baron Bolkonski would not let her speak and, raising his voice more and more, cried:

“Marry, marry, my boy!... A good family!... Clever people, eh? Rich, eh? Yes, a nice stepmother Nikolenka will have! Write and tell him that Andrei may marry tomorrow if he likes. She will be Nikolenka’s stepmother and I’ll marry Bourienne!... Ha, ha, ha! He mustn’t be without a stepmother either! Only one thing, no more women are wanted in my house—let Andrei marry and live by himself. Perhaps you will go and live with him too?” he added, turning to Marya. “Go in heaven’s name! Go out into the frost... the frost... the frost!”

After this outburst Baron Bolkonski did not speak anymore about the matter. But repressed vexation at his son’s poor-spirited behavior found expression in his treatment of his daughter. To his former pretexts for irony, a fresh one was now added—allusions to stepmothers and amiabilities to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne.

“Why shouldn’t I marry her?” Baron Bolkonski asked Marya. “She’ll make a splendid wife!”

And latterly, to her surprise and bewilderment, Marya noticed that her father was really associating more and more with Lady-in-waiting Bourienne. Marya wrote to Andrei about the reception of his letter but comforted him with hopes of reconciling their father to the idea.

Nikolenka and his education, her brother Andrei, and religion were Marya’s joys and consolations; but besides that, since everyone must have personal hopes, Marya in the most profound depths of her heart had a hidden dream and hope that supplied the chief consolation of her life. This comforting dream and hope were given to her by *God’s folk*—the half-witted and other pilgrims who visited her without the Baron’s knowledge. The longer she lived, the more experience and observation she had of life, the greater was her wonder at the short-sightedness of men who seek enjoyment and happiness here on earth: toiling, suffering, struggling, and

harming one another, to obtain that impossible, visionary, sinful happiness. Andrei had loved Lise, and she died, but that was not enough: he wanted to bind his happiness to another woman. Baron Bolkonski objected to this because he wanted a more distinguished and wealthier match for Andrei. And they all struggled and suffered and tormented one another and injured their souls, their eternal souls, for the attainment of benefits that endure but for an instant. Not only do we know this ourselves, but Christ, the Son of God, came down to earth and told us that this life is but for a moment and is a probation; yet we cling to it and think to find happiness in it. “How is it that no one realizes this?” thought Marya. “No one except these despised *God’s folk* who, wallet on back, come to me by the back door, afraid of being seen by the Baron, not for fear of ill-usage by him but for fear of causing him to sin. To leave family, home, and all the cares of worldly welfare, in order without clinging to anything to wander in hempen rags from place to place under an assumed name, doing no one any harm but praying for all—for those who drive one away as well as for those who protect one: higher than that life and truth there is no life or truth!”

There was one pilgrim, a quiet pockmarked little woman of fifty called Theodosia, who for over thirty years had gone about barefoot and worn heavy chains. Marya was particularly fond of her. Once, when in a room with a lamp dimly lit before the icon Theodosia was talking of her life, the thought that Theodosia alone had found the true path of life suddenly came to Marya with such force that she resolved to become a pilgrim herself. When Theodosia had gone to sleep Marya thought about this for a long time, and at last made up her mind that, strange as it might seem, she must go on a pilgrimage. She disclosed this thought to no one but to her confessor, Father Akínfi, the monk, and he approved of her intention. Under the guise of a present for the pilgrims, Marya prepared a pilgrim’s complete costume for herself: a coarse smock, bast shoes, a rough coat, and a black kerchief. Often, approaching the chest of drawers containing this secret

treasure, Marya paused, uncertain whether the time had not already come to put her project into execution.

Often, listening to the pilgrims' tales, Marya was so stimulated by their simple speech, mechanical to them but to her so full of deep meaning, that several times she was on the point of abandoning everything and running away from home. In imagination she already pictured herself by Theodosia's side, dressed in coarse rags, walking with a staff, a wallet on her back, along the dusty road, directing her wanderings from one saint's shrine to another, free from envy, earthly love, or desire, and reaching, at last, the place where there is no more sorrow or sighing, but eternal joy and bliss.

"I shall come to a place and pray there, and before having time to get used to it or getting to love it, I shall go farther. I will go on till my legs fail, and I'll lie down and die somewhere, and shall at last reach that eternal, quiet haven, where there is neither sorrow nor sighing..." thought Marya.

But afterward, when Marya saw her father and especially little Nikolenka, her resolve weakened. She wept quietly and felt that she was a sinner who loved her father and little nephew more than God.

BOOK 7: 1810 - 11



*T*he Bible legend tells us that the absence of labor—idleness—was a condition of the first man's blessedness before the Fall. Fallen man has retained a love of idleness, but the curse weighs on the race not only because we have to seek our bread in the sweat of our brows, but because our moral nature is such that we cannot be both idle and at ease. An inner voice tells us we are in the wrong if we are idle. If man could find a state in which he felt that though idle he was fulfilling his duty, he would have found one of the conditions of man's primitive blessedness. And such a state of obligatory and irreproachable idleness is the lot of a whole class—the military. The chief attraction of military service has consisted and will consist in this compulsory and irreproachable idleness.

Nicholas experienced this blissful condition to the full when, after 1807, he continued to serve in the Pávlograd regiment, in which he already commanded the squadron he had taken over from Denisov.

Nicholas had become a bluff, good-natured fellow, whom his Moscow acquaintances would have considered rather bad form, but who was liked and respected by his comrades, subordinates, and superiors, and was well contented with his life. Of late, in 1809, he found in letters from home more frequent complaints from his mother that their affairs were falling into

greater and greater disorder, and that it was time for him to come back to gladden and comfort his old parents.

Reading these letters, Nicholas felt a dread of their wanting to take him away from surroundings in which, protected from all the entanglements of life, he was living so calmly and quietly. He felt that sooner or later he would have to re-enter that whirlpool of life, with its embarrassments and affairs to be straightened out, its accounts with stewards, quarrels, and intrigues, its ties, society, and with Sonya's love and his promise to her. It was all dreadfully difficult and complicated; and he replied to his mother in cold, formal letters in French, beginning with "My dear Mamma," and ending with "Your obedient son," which said nothing of when he would return. In 1810 he received letters from his parents, in which they told him of Natasha's engagement to Andrei, and that the wedding would be in a year's time because Andrei made difficulties. This letter grieved and mortified Nicholas. In the first place, he was sorry that Natasha, for whom he cared more than for anyone else in the family, should be lost to the home; and secondly, from his hussar point of view, he regretted not having been there to show that fellow Andrei that connection with him was no such great honor after all, and that if he loved Natasha he might dispense with permission from his dotard father. For a moment Nicholas hesitated whether he should not apply for leave in order to see Natasha before she was married, but then came the maneuvers, and considerations about Sonya and about the confusion of their affairs, and Nicholas again put it off. But in the spring of that year, he received a letter from his mother, written without his father's knowledge, and that letter persuaded him to return. She wrote that if he did not come and take matters in hand, their whole property would be sold by auction and they would all have to go begging. Count Rostov was so weak, and trusted Account Manager Míténka so much, and was so good-natured, that everybody took advantage of him and things were going from

bad to worse. “For God’s sake, I implore you, come at once if you do not wish to make me and the whole family wretched,” wrote Countess Rostov.

This letter touched Nicholas. He had that common sense of a matter-of-fact man which showed him what he ought to do.

The right thing now was, if not to retire from the service, at any rate, to go home on leave. Why Nicholas had to go he did not know; but after his after-dinner nap he gave orders to saddle Mars, an extremely vicious gray stallion that had not been ridden for a long time, and when he returned with the horse all in a lather, he informed Lavrushka (Denisov’s servant who had remained with him) and his comrades who turned up in the evening that he was applying for leave and was going home. Difficult and strange as it was for him to reflect that he would go away without having heard from the staff—and this interested him extremely—whether he was promoted to a captaincy or would receive the Order of St. Anne for the last maneuvers; strange as it was to think that he would go away without having sold his three roans to a Polish count, who was bargaining for the horses Nicholas had betted he would sell for two thousand rubles; incomprehensible as it seemed that the ball the hussars were giving (out of rivalry to the light cavalry who had given a similar ball) would take place without him—he knew he must go away from this good, bright world to somewhere where everything was stupid and confusing. A week later Nicholas obtained his leave. His hussar comrades—not only those of his own regiment, but the whole brigade—gave Nicholas a dinner to which the subscription was fifteen rubles a head, and at which there were two bands and two choirs of singers. Nicholas danced the Trepák with Major Básov; the tipsy officers tossed, embraced, and dropped Nicholas; the soldiers of the third squadron tossed him too, and shouted “hurrah!” and then they put him in his sleigh and escorted him as far as the first post station.

During the first half of the journey—from Kremenchúg to Kiev—all Nicholas’s thoughts, as is usual in such cases, were behind him, with the

squadron; but when he had gone more than halfway he began to forget his three roans and Dozhoyvéyko, his quartermaster, and to wonder anxiously how things would be at Otrádnœ and what he would find there. Thoughts of home grew stronger the nearer Nicholas approached it—far stronger, as though this feeling of his was subject to the law by which the force of attraction is in inverse proportion to the square of the distance. At the last post station before Otrádnœ, he gave the driver a three-ruble tip, and on arriving he ran breathlessly, like a boy, up the steps of his home.

After the rapture of meeting, and after that odd feeling of unsatisfied expectation—the feeling that “everything is just the same, so why did I hurry?”—Nicholas began to settle down in his old home world. Count and Countess Rostov were much the same, only a little older. What was new in them was a certain uneasiness and occasional discord, which there used not to be, and which, as Nicholas soon found out, was due to the bad state of their affairs. Sonya was nearly twenty; she had stopped growing prettier and promised nothing more than she was already, but that was enough. She exhaled happiness and love from the time Nicholas returned, and the faithful, unalterable love of this girl had a gladdening effect on him. Petya and Natasha surprised Nicholas the most. Petya was a big handsome boy of thirteen, merry, witty, and mischievous, with a voice that was already breaking. As for Natasha, for a long while, Nicholas wondered and laughed whenever he looked at her.

“You’re not the same at all,” Nicholas said.

“How? Am I uglier?”

“On the contrary, but what dignity? A Baroness!” Nicholas whispered to her.

“Yes, yes, yes!” cried Natasha, joyfully.

She told him about her romance with Andrei and of his visit to Otrádnœ and showed him his last letter.

“Well, are you glad?” Natasha asked. “I am so tranquil and happy now.”

“Very glad,” answered Nicholas. “Andrei is an excellent fellow... And are you very much in love?”

“How shall I put it?” replied Natasha. “I was in love with Boris, with my dancing teacher, and with Denisov, but this is quite different. I feel at peace and settled. I know that no better man than he exists, and I am calm and contented now. Not at all as before.”

Nicholas expressed his disapproval of the postponement of the marriage for a year; but Natasha attacked her brother with exasperation, proving to him that it could not be otherwise, and that it would be a bad thing to enter a family against the father’s will, and that Natasha herself wished it so.

“You don’t at all understand,” she said.

Nicholas was silent and agreed with her.

Nicholas often wondered as he looked at her. Natasha did not seem at all like a girl in love and parted from her affianced husband. She was even-tempered and calm and quite as cheerful as of old. This amazed Nicholas and even made him regard Andrei’s courtship skeptically. He could not believe that her fate was sealed, especially as he had not seen her with Andrei. It always seemed to him that there was something not quite right about this intended marriage.

“Why this delay? Why no betrothal?” Nicholas thought. Once, when he had touched on this topic with his mother, he discovered, to his surprise and somewhat to his satisfaction, that in the depth of her soul she too had doubts about this marriage.

“You see Andrei writes,” said Countess Rostov, showing Nicholas a letter of Andrei’s, with that latent grudge a mother always has in regard to a daughter’s future married happiness, “Andrei writes that he won’t come before December. What can be keeping him? Illness, probably! His health is very delicate. Don’t tell Natasha. And don’t attach importance to Natasha being so bright: that’s because she’s living through the last days of her

girlhood, but I know what she is like every time we receive a letter from him! However, God grant that everything turns out well!” (She always ended with these words.) “Andrei is an excellent man!”

After reaching home Nicholas was at first serious and even dull. He was worried by the impending necessity of interfering in the stupid business matters for which his mother had called him home. To throw off this burden as quickly as possible, on the third day after his arrival he went, angry and scowling and without answering questions as to where he was going, to Account Manager Míténka’s lodge and demanded an *account of everything*. But what an *account of everything* might be Nicholas knew even less than the frightened and bewildered Míténka. The conversation and the examination of the accounts with Míténka did not last long. The village elder, a peasant delegate, and the village clerk, who were waiting in the passage, heard with fear and delight first Nicholas’s voice roaring and snapping and rising louder and louder, and then words of abuse, dreadful words, ejaculated one after the other.

“Robber!... Ungrateful wretch!... I’ll hack the dog to pieces! I’m not my father!... Robbing us!...” and so on.

Then with no less fear and delight, they saw how the young count, red in the face and with bloodshot eyes, dragged Account Manager Míténka out by the scruff of the neck and applied his foot and knee to his behind with great agility at convenient moments between the words, shouting, “Be off! Never let me see your face here again, you villain!”

Account Manager Míténka flew headlong down the six steps and ran away into the shrubbery. (This shrubbery was a well-known haven of refuge for culprits at Otrádnœ. Míténka himself, returning tipsy from the town, used to hide there, and many of the residents at Otrádnœ, hiding from Míténka, knew of its protective qualities.)

Account Manager Míténka’s wife and sisters-in-law thrust their heads and frightened faces out of the door of a room where a bright samovar was

boiling and where the steward's high bedstead stood with its patchwork quilt.

Nicholas paid no heed to them, but, breathing hard, passed by with resolute strides and went into the house.

Countess Rostov, who heard at once from the maids what had happened at the lodge, was calmed by the thought that now their affairs would certainly improve, but on the other hand, felt anxious as to the effect this excitement might have on her son. She went several times to his door on tiptoe and listened, as he lighted one pipe after another.

The next day, Count Rostov called Nicholas aside and, with an embarrassed smile, said to him:

"But you know, my dear Nicholas, it's a pity you got excited! Account Manager Mitenka has told me all about it."

"I knew," thought Nicholas, "that I should never understand anything in this crazy world."

"You were angry that he had not entered those 700 rubles. But they were carried forward—and you did not look at the other page."

"Papa, Account Manager Mitenka is a blackguard and a thief! I know he is! And what I have done, I have done; but, if you like, I won't speak to him again."

"No, my dear Nicholas" (Count Rostov, too, felt embarrassed. He knew he had mismanaged his wife's property and was to blame toward his children, but he did not know how to remedy it). "No, I beg you to attend to the business. I am old. I..."

"No, Papa. Forgive me if I have caused you unpleasantness. I understand it all less than you do."

"Devil take all these peasants, and money matters, and carryings forward from page to page," Nicholas thought. "I used to understand what a 'corner' and the stakes at cards meant, but carrying forward to another page I don't understand at all," said he to himself, and after that, he did not

meddle in business affairs. But once Countess Rostov called her son and informed him that she had a promissory note from Widow Drubetskoy for two thousand rubles, and asked him what he thought of doing with it.

“This,” answered Nicholas. “You say it rests with me. Well, I don’t like Widow Drubetskoy and I don’t like Boris, but they were our friends and poor. Well then, this!” and Nicholas tore up the note, and by so doing caused Count Rostov to weep tears of joy. After that, young Nicholas took no further part in any business affairs but devoted himself with passionate enthusiasm to what was to him a new pursuit—the chase—for which Count Rostov kept a large establishment.

The weather was already growing wintry and morning frosts congealed an earth saturated by autumn rains. The verdure had thickened and its bright green stood out sharply against the brownish strips of winter rye trodden down by the cattle, and against the pale-yellow stubble of the spring buckwheat. The wooded ravines and the groves of trees, which at the end of August had still been green islands amid black fields and stubble, had become golden and bright-red islands amid the green winter rye. The hares had already half-changed their summer coats, the fox cubs were beginning to scatter, and the young wolves were bigger than dogs. It was the best time of the year for the chase. The hounds of that ardent young sportsman Nicholas had not merely reached hard winter condition but were so jaded that at a meeting of the huntsmen it was decided to give them a three days’ rest and then, on the sixteenth of September, to go on a distant expedition, starting from the oak grove where there was an undisturbed litter of wolf cubs.

All that day the hounds remained at home. It was frosty and the air was sharp, but toward evening the sky became overcast and it began to thaw. On the fifteenth, when young Nicholas, in his dressing gown, looked out of the window, he saw it was an unsurpassable morning for hunting: it was as if the sky were melting and sinking to the earth without any wind. The only

motion in the air was that of the dripping, microscopic particles of drizzling mist. The bare twigs in the garden were hung with transparent drops which fell on the freshly fallen leaves. The earth in the kitchen garden looked wet and black and glistened like poppy seed and at a short distance merged into the dull, moist veil of mist. Nicholas went out into the wet and muddy porch. There was a smell of decaying leaves and of dogs. Mílka, a black-spotted, bitch with broad haunches and prominent black eyes, got up on seeing her master, stretched her hind legs, lay down like a hare, and then suddenly jumped up and licked him right on his nose and mustache. Another borzoi, a dog, catching sight of his master from the garden path, arched his back and, rushing headlong toward the porch with a lifted tail, began rubbing himself against his legs.

“O-hoy!” came at that moment, that inimitable huntsman’s call which unites the deepest bass with the shrillest tenor, and round the corner came Daniel the head huntsman and head kennelman, a gray, wrinkled old man with hair cut straight over his forehead, Ukrainian fashion, a long bent whip in his hand, and that look of independence and scorn of everything that is only seen in huntsmen. He doffed his Circassian cap to his master and looked at him scornfully. This scorn was not offensive to his master. Nicholas knew that this Daniel, disdainful of everybody and who considered himself above them, was all the same his serf and huntsman.

“Daniel!” Nicholas said timidly, conscious at the sight of the weather, the hounds, and the huntsman that he was being carried away by that irresistible passion for a sport that makes a man forget all his previous resolutions, as a lover forgets in the presence of his mistress.

“What orders, your excellency?” said the huntsman in his deep bass, deep as a bishop’s and hoarse with hallooing—and two flashing black eyes gazed from under his brows at his master, who was silent. “Can you resist it?” those eyes seemed to be asking.

“It’s a good day, eh? For a hunt and a gallop, eh?” asked Nicholas, scratching Mílka behind the ears.

Daniel did not answer but winked instead.

“I sent Uvárka at dawn to listen,” his bass boomed out after a minute’s pause. “He says *she’s moved them* into the Otrádnœ enclosure. They were howling there.” (This meant that the she-wolf, about whom they both knew, had moved with her cubs to the Otrádnœ grove, a small place a mile and a half from the house.)

“We ought to go, don’t you think so?” said Nicholas. “Come to me with Uvárka.”

“As you please.”

“Then put off feeding them.”

“Yes, sir.”

Five minutes later Daniel and Uvárka were standing in Nicholas’ big study. Though Daniel was not a big man, to see him in a room was like seeing a horse or a bear on the floor among the furniture and surroundings of human life. Daniel himself felt this, and as usual stood just inside the door, trying to speak softly and not move, for fear of breaking something in the master’s apartment, and he hastened to say all that was necessary so as to get from under that ceiling, out into the open under the sky once more.

Having finished his inquiries and extorted from Daniel an opinion that the hounds were fit (Daniel himself wished to go hunting), Nicholas ordered the horses to be saddled. But just as Daniel was about to go Natasha came in with rapid steps, not having done up her hair or finished dressing and with her old nurse’s big shawl wrapped around her. Nicholas’s little brother Petya ran in at the same time.

“You are going?” asked Natasha. “I knew you would! Sonya said you wouldn’t go, but I knew that today is the sort of day when you couldn’t help going.”

“Yes, we are going,” replied Nicholas reluctantly, for today, as he intended to hunt seriously, he did not want to take Natasha and Petya. “We are going, but only wolf hunting: it would be dull for you.”

“You know it is my greatest pleasure,” said Natasha. “It’s not fair; you are going by yourself, are having the horses saddled, and said nothing to us about it.”

“‘No barrier bars a Russian’s path’—we’ll go!” shouted Petya.

“But you can’t. Mamma said you mustn’t,” said Nicholas to Natasha.

“Yes, I’ll go. I shall certainly go,” said Natasha decisively. “Daniel, tell them to saddle for us, and Michael must come with my dogs,” she added to the huntsman.

It seemed to Daniel irksome and improper to be in a room at all but to have anything to do with a young lady seemed to him impossible. He cast down his eyes and hurried out as if it were none of his business, careful as he went not to inflict any accidental injury on the young lady.

Count Rostov, who had always kept up an enormous hunting establishment but had now handed it all completely over to his son’s care, being in very good spirits on this fifteenth of September, prepared to go out with the others.

In an hour’s time, the whole hunting party was at the porch. Nicholas, with a stern and serious air which showed that now was no time for attending to trifles, went past Natasha and Petya who were trying to tell him something. He had a look at all the details of the hunt, sent a pack of hounds and huntsmen on ahead to find the quarry, mounted his chestnut Donéts, and whistling to his own leash of borzois, set off across the threshing ground to a field leading to the Otrádnœ wood. Count Rostov’s horse, a sorrel gelding called Viflyánka, was led by the groom in attendance on him, while Count Rostov himself was to drive in a small carriage straight to a spot reserved for him.

They were taking fifty-four hounds, with six hunt attendants and whippers-in. Besides the family, there were eight borzoi kennelmen and more than forty borzois, so that, with the borzois on the leash belonging to members of the family, there were about a hundred and thirty dogs and twenty horsemen.

Each dog knew its master and its call. Each man in the hunt knew his business, his place, and what he had to do. As soon as they had passed the fence they all spread out evenly and quietly, without noise or talk, along the road and field leading to the Otrádnœ covert.

The horses stepped over the field as over a thick carpet, now and then splashing into puddles as they crossed a road. The misty sky still seemed to descend evenly and imperceptibly toward the earth, the air was still, warm, and silent. Occasionally the whistle of a huntsman, the snort of a horse, the crack of a whip, or the whine of a straggling hound could be heard.

When they had gone a little less than a mile, five more riders with dogs appeared out of the mist, approaching the Rostovs. In front rode a fresh-looking, handsome old man with a large gray mustache.

“Good morning, Dyadya!” said Nicholas, when the old man drew near.

“That’s it. Come on!... I was sure of it,” began Dyadya. (Dyadya was a distant relative of the Rostovs, a man of small means, and their neighbor.) “I knew you wouldn’t be able to resist it and it’s a good thing you’re going. That’s it! Come on!” (This was Dyadya’s favorite expression.) “Take the covert at once, for my hunt-master says the my neighbors are at Korniki with their hounds. That’s it. Come on!... Our neighbors will take the wolf cubs from under your very nose.”

“That’s where I’m going. Shall we join up your pack and ours?” asked Nicholas.

The hounds were joined into one pack, and Dyadya and Nicholas rode side by side. Natasha, muffled up in shawls that did not hide her eager face and shining eyes, galloped up to them. She was followed by Petya who

always kept close to her, by Michael, a huntsman, and by a groom appointed to look after her. Petya, who was laughing, whipped and pulled at his horse. Natasha sat easily and confidently on her black Arábchik horse and reined him in without effort with a firm hand.

Dyadya looked around disapprovingly at Petya and Natasha. He did not like to combine frivolity with the serious business of hunting.

“Good morning, Dyadya! We are going too!” shouted Petya.

“Good morning, good morning! But don’t go overriding the hounds,” said Dyadya sternly.

“Nicholas, what a fine dog Truníla is! He knew me,” said Natasha, referring to her favorite hound.

“In the first place, Truníla is not a ‘dog,’ but a harrier,” thought Nicholas, and looked sternly at his sister, trying to make her feel the distance that ought to separate them at that moment. Natasha understood it.

“You mustn’t think we’ll be in anyone’s way, Dyadya,” Natasha said. “We’ll go to our places and won’t budge.”

“A good thing too, Natasha,” said Dyadya, “only mind you don’t fall off your horse,” he added, “because—that’s it, come on!—you’ve nothing to hold on to.”

The oasis of the Otrádnœ covert came in sight a few hundred yards off, the huntsmen were already nearing it. Nicholas, having finally settled with Dyadya where they should set on the hounds, and having shown Natasha where she was to stand—a spot where nothing could possibly run out—went round above the ravine.

“Well, Nicholas, you’re going for a big wolf,” said Dyadya. “Mind and don’t let her slip!”

“That’s as may happen,” answered Nicholas. “Karáy, here!” he shouted, answering Dyadya’s remark with this call to his borzoi. Karáy was a shaggy old dog with a hanging jowl, famous for having tackled a big wolf unaided. They all took up their places.

Count Rostov, knowing Nicholas's ardor in the hunt, hurried so as not to be late, and the huntsmen had not yet reached their places when Count Rostov, cheerful, flushed, and with quivering cheeks, drove up with his black horses over the winter rye to the place reserved for him, where a wolf might come out. Having straightened his coat and fastened on his hunting knives and horn, he mounted his good, sleek, well-fed, and comfortable horse, Viflyánka, which was turning gray, like himself. His horses and carriage were sent home. Count Rostov though not at heart a keen sportsman, knew the rules of the hunt well, and rode to the bushy edge of the road where he was to stand, arranged his reins, settled himself in the saddle, and, feeling that he was ready, looked about with a smile.

Beside him was Simon Chekmár, Count Rostov's personal attendant, an old horseman now somewhat stiff in the saddle. Chekmár held in leash three formidable wolfhounds, who had, however, grown fat like their master and his horse. Two wise old dogs lay down unleashed. Some hundred paces farther along the edge of the wood stood Mítka, Count Rostov's other groom, a daring horseman and keen rider to hounds. Before the hunt, by old custom, Count Rostov had drunk a silver cupful of mulled brandy, taken a snack, and washed it down with half a bottle of his favorite Bordeaux.

Count Rostov was somewhat flushed with the wine and the drive. His eyes were rather moist and glittered more than usual, and as he sat in his saddle, wrapped up in his fur coat, he looked like a child taken out for an outing.

The thin, hollow-cheeked Chekmár, having got everything ready, kept glancing at his master with whom he had lived on the best of terms for thirty years, and understanding the mood he was in expected a pleasant chat. A third person rode up circumspectly through the wood (it was plain that he had had a lesson) and stopped behind Count Rostov. This person was a gray-bearded old man in a woman's cloak, with a tall peaked cap on

his head. He was “the buffoon”, (a fool or jester), who went by a woman’s name, Nastásya Ivánovna.

“Well, Nastásya Ivánovna!” whispered Count Rostov, winking at him. “If you scare away the beast, Daniel will give it to you!”

“I know a thing or two myself!” said Nastásya Ivánovna.

“Hush!” whispered Count Rostov and turned to Simon. “Have you seen Natasha?” he asked. “Where is she?”

“With young Petya, by the Zhárov rank grass,” answered Simon, smiling. “Though Natasha is a lady, she’s very fond of hunting.”

“And you’re surprised at the way she rides, Simon, eh?” said Count Rostov. “She’s as good as many a man!”

“Of course! It’s marvelous. So bold, so easy!”

“And Nicholas? Where is he? By the Lyádov upland, isn’t he?”

“Yes, sir. Nicholas knows where to stand. He understands the matter so well that Daniel and I are often quite astounded,” said Simon, well knowing what would please his master.

“Rides well, eh? And how well he looks on his horse, eh?”

“A perfect picture! How Nicholas chased a fox out of the rank grass by the Zavárzinsk thicket the other day! Leaped a fearful place; what a sight when they rushed from the covert... the horse worth a thousand rubles and the rider beyond all price! Yes, one would have to search far to find another as smart.”

“To search far...” repeated Count Rostov, evidently sorry Simon had not said more. “To search far,” he said, turning back the skirt of his coat to get at his snuffbox.

“The other day when he came out from Mass in full uniform, Michael Sidórych...” Simon did not finish, for on the still air, he had distinctly caught the music of the hunt with only two or three hounds giving tongue. He bent down his head and listened, shaking a warning finger at his master.

“They are on the scent of the cubs...” he whispered, “straight to the Lyádov uplands.”

Count Rostov, forgetting to smooth out the smile on his face, looked into the distance straight before him, down the narrow open space, holding the snuffbox in his hand but not taking any. After the cry of the hounds came the deep tones of the wolf call from Daniel’s hunting horn; the pack joined the first three hounds and they could be heard in full cry, with that peculiar lift in the note that indicates that they are after a wolf. The whippers-in no longer set on the hounds but changed to the cry of *ulyulyu*, and above the others rose Daniel’s voice, now a deep bass, now piercingly shrill. His voice seemed to fill the whole wood and carried far beyond out into the open field.

After listening a few moments in silence, Count Rostov and his attendant convinced themselves that the hounds had separated into two packs: the sound of the larger pack, eagerly giving tongue, began to die away in the distance, the other pack rushed by the wood past Count Rostov, and it was with this that Daniel’s voice was heard calling *ulyulyu*. The sounds of both packs mingled and broke apart again, but both were becoming more distant.

Simon sighed and stooped to straighten the leash a young borzoi had entangled; Count Rostov too sighed and, noticing the snuffbox in his hand, opened it and took a pinch. “Back!” cried Simon to a borzoi that was pushing forward out of the wood. Count Rostov started and dropped the snuffbox. Nastásya Ivánovna dismounted to pick it up. Count Rostov and Simon were looking at him.

Then, unexpectedly, as often happens, the sound of the hunt suddenly approached, as if the hounds in full cry and Daniel *ululating* were just in front of them.

Count Rostov turned and saw on his right Mítka staring at him with eyes starting to come out of his head, raising his cap and pointing before

him to the other side.

“Look out!” Count Rostov shouted, in a voice plainly showing that he had long fretted to utter that word, and letting the borzois slip he galloped toward Count Rostov.

Count Rostov and Simon galloped out of the wood and saw on their left a wolf which, softly swaying from side to side, was coming at a quiet lope farther to the left to the very place where they were standing. The angry borzois whined and getting free of the leash rushed past the horses’ feet at the wolf.

The wolf paused, turned its heavy forehead toward the dogs awkwardly, like a man suffering from quinsy, and, still slightly swaying from side to side, gave a couple of leaps and with a swish of its tail disappeared into the skirt of the wood. At the same instant, with a cry like a wail, first one hound, then another, and then another, sprang helter-skelter from the wood opposite and the whole pack rushed across the field toward the very spot where the wolf had disappeared. The hazel bushes parted behind the hounds and Daniel’s chestnut horse appeared, dark with sweat. On its long back sat Daniel, hunched forward, without his cap, his disheveled gray hair hanging over his flushed, perspiring face.

“*Ulyulyuyu! Ulyulyu!...*” he cried. When he caught sight of Count Rostov his eyes flashed lightning.

“Blast you!” Daniel shouted, holding up his whip threateningly at Count Rostov.

“You’ve let the wolf go!... What sportsmen!” and as if scorning to say more to the frightened and shamefaced count, he lashed the heaving flanks of his sweating chestnut gelding with all the anger Count Rostov had aroused and flew off after the hounds. Count Rostov, like a punished schoolboy, looked around, trying with a smile to win Simon’s sympathy for his plight. But Simon was no longer there. He was galloping around by the

bushes while the field was coming up on both sides, all trying to head the wolf, but it vanished into the wood before they could do so.

Nicholas meanwhile remained at his post, waiting for the wolf. By the way the hunt approached and receded, by the cries of the dogs whose notes were familiar to him, by the way the voices of the huntsmen approached, receded, and rose, he realized what was happening at the grove. He knew that young and old wolves were there, that the hounds had separated into two packs, that somewhere a wolf was being chased, and that something had gone wrong. He expected the wolf to come his way any moment. He made thousands of different conjectures as to where and from what side the beast would come and how he would set upon it. Hope alternated with despair. Several times Nicholas addressed a prayer to God that the wolf should come his way. He prayed with that passionate and shamefaced feeling with which men pray at moments of great excitement arising from trivial causes. "What would it be to Thee to do this for me?" he said to God. "I know Thou art great, and that it is a sin to ask this of Thee, but for God's sake do let the old wolf come my way and let Karáy spring at it—in sight of Dyadya who is watching from over there—and seize it by the throat in a death grip!" A thousand times during that half-hour Nicholas cast eager and restless glances over the edge of the wood, with the two scraggy oaks rising above the aspen undergrowth and the gully with its water-worn side and Dyadya's cap just visible above the bush on his right.

"No, I shan't have much luck," thought Nicholas, "yet what wouldn't it be worth! It is not to be! Everywhere, at cards and in war, I am always unlucky." Memories of Austerlitz and of Dolokhov flashed rapidly and clearly through his mind. "Only once in my life to get an old wolf, I want only that!" thought he, straining eyes and ears and looking to the left and then to the right and listening to the slightest variation of note in the cries of the dogs.

Again Nicholas looked to the right and saw something running toward him across the deserted field. “No, it can’t be!” thought Nicholas, taking a deep breath, as a man does at the coming of something long hoped for. The height of happiness was reached—and so simply, without warning, noise, or display, that Nicholas could not believe his eyes and remained in doubt for over a second. The wolf ran forward and jumped heavily over a gully that lay in her path. She was an old animal with a gray back and a big reddish belly. She ran without hurry, evidently feeling sure that no one saw her. Nicholas, holding his breath, looked round at the borzois. They stood or lay not seeing the wolf or understanding the situation. Old Karáy had turned his head and was angrily searching for fleas, baring his yellow teeth and snapping at his hind legs.

“*Ulyulyulyu!*” whispered Nicholas, pouting his lips. The borzois jumped up, jerking the rings of the leashes and pricking their ears. Karáy finished scratching his hindquarters and, cocking his ears, got up with a quivering tail from which tufts of matted hair hung down.

“Shall I loose the hounds or not?” Nicholas asked himself as the wolf approached him coming from the grove of trees. Suddenly the wolf’s whole physiognomy changed: she shuddered, seeing what she had probably never seen before—human eyes fixed upon her—and turning her head a little toward Nicholas, she paused.

“Back or forward? Eh, no matter, forward...” the wolf seemed to say to herself, and she moved forward without again looking round and with a quiet, long, easy yet resolute lope.

“*Ulyulyu!*” cried Nicholas, in a voice not his own, and of its own accord his good horse darted headlong downhill, leaping over gullies to head off the wolf, and the borzois passed it, running faster still. Nicholas did not hear his own cry nor feel that he was galloping, nor see the borzois, nor the ground over which he went: he saw only the wolf, who, increasing her speed, bounded on in the same direction along the hollow. The first to

come into view was Mílka, with her black markings and powerful quarters, gaining upon the wolf. Nearer and nearer... now she was ahead of it, but the wolf turned its head to face her, and instead of putting on speed as she usually did Mílka suddenly raised her tail and stiffened her forelegs.

“*Ulyulyulyu!*” shouted Nicholas.

The reddish Lyubím rushed forward from behind Mílka, sprang impetuously at the wolf, and seized it by its hindquarters, but immediately jumped aside in terror. The wolf crouched, gnashed her teeth, and again rose and bounded forward, followed at the distance of a couple of feet by all the borzois, who did not get any closer to her.

“She’ll get away! No, it’s impossible!” thought Nicholas, still shouting with a hoarse voice.

“Karáy, *ulyulyu!*...” Nicholas shouted, looking around for the old borzoi who was now his only hope. Karáy, with all the strength age had left him, stretched himself to the utmost and, watching the wolf, galloped heavily aside to intercept it. But the quickness of the wolf’s lope and the borzoi’s slower pace made it plain that Karáy had miscalculated. Nicholas could already see not far in front of him the wood where the wolf would certainly escape should she reach it. But, coming toward him, he saw hounds and a huntsman galloping almost straight at the wolf. There was still hope. A long, yellowish young borzoi, one Nicholas did not know, from another leash, rushed impetuously at the wolf from in front and almost knocked her over. But the wolf jumped up more quickly than anyone could have expected and, gnashing her teeth, flew at the yellowish borzoi, which, with a piercing yelp, fell with its head on the ground, bleeding from a gash in its side.

“Karáy? Old fellow!...” wailed Nicholas.

Thanks to the delay caused by this crossing of the wolf’s path, the old dog with its felted hair hanging from its thigh was within five paces of it. As if aware of her danger, the wolf turned her eyes on Karáy, tucked her tail

yet further between her legs, and increased her speed. But here Nicholas only saw that something happened to Karáy—the borzoi was suddenly on the wolf, and they rolled together down into a gully just in front of them.

That instant, when Nicholas saw the wolf struggling in the gully with the dogs, while from under them could be seen her gray hair and outstretched hind leg and her frightened choking head, with her ears laid back (Karáy was pinning her by the throat), was the happiest moment of his life. With his hand on his saddlebow, he was ready to dismount and stab the wolf, when she suddenly thrust her head up from among that mass of dogs, and then her forepaws were on the edge of the gully. She clicked her teeth (Karáy no longer had her by the throat), leaped with a movement of her hind legs out of the gully, and having disengaged herself from the dogs, with tail tucked in again, went forward. Karáy, his hair bristling, and probably bruised or wounded, climbed with difficulty out of the gully.

“Oh my God! Why?” Nicholas cried in despair.

Dyadya’s huntsman was galloping from the other side across the wolf’s path and his borzois once more stopped the animal’s advance. She was again hemmed in.

Nicholas and his attendant, with Dyadya and his huntsman, were all riding round the wolf, crying “*ulyulyu!*” shouting and preparing to dismount each moment that the wolf crouched back, and starting forward again every time she shook herself and moved toward the wood where she would be safe.

Already, at the beginning of this chase, Daniel, hearing the ulyulyuing, had rushed out from the wood. He saw Karáy seize the wolf, and checked his horse, supposing the affair to be over. But when he saw that the horsemen did not dismount and that the wolf shook herself and ran for safety, Daniel set his chestnut galloping, not at the wolf but straight toward the wood, just as Karáy had run to cut the animal off. As a result of this, he

galloped up to the wolf just when she had been stopped a second time by Dyadya's borzois.

The huntsman Daniel galloped up silently, holding a naked dagger in his left hand and thrashing the laboring sides of his chestnut horse with his whip as if it were a flail.

Nicholas neither saw nor heard Daniel until the chestnut, breathing heavily, panted past him, and he heard the fall of a body and saw Daniel lying on the wolf's back among the dogs, trying to seize her by the ears. It was evident to the dogs, the hunters, and to the wolf herself that all was now over. The terrified wolf pressed back her ears and tried to rise, but the borzois stuck to her. Daniel rose a little, took a step, and with his whole weight, as if lying down to rest, fell on the wolf, seizing her by the ears. Nicholas was about to stab her, but Daniel whispered, "Don't! We'll gag her!" and, changing his position, set his foot on the wolf's neck. A stick was thrust between her jaws and she was fastened with a leash as if bridled, her legs were bound together, and Daniel rolled her over once or twice from side to side.

With happy, exhausted faces, Nicholas and Daniel laid the old wolf, alive, on a shying and snorting horse and, accompanied by the dogs yelping at her, took her to the place where they were all to meet. The hounds had killed two of the cubs and the borzois three. The huntsmen assembled with their booty and their stories, and all came to look at the wolf, which, with her broad-browed head hanging down and the bitten stick between her jaws, gazed with great glassy eyes at this crowd of dogs and men surrounding her. When she was touched, she jerked her bound legs and looked wildly yet simply at everybody. Count Rostov also rode up and touched the wolf.

"Oh, what a formidable one!" said Count Rostov. "A formidable one, eh?" he asked Daniel, who was standing near.

"Yes, your excellency," answered Daniel, quickly doffing his cap.

Count Rostov remembered the wolf he had let slip and his encounter with Daniel.

“Ah, but you are a crusty fellow, friend!” said Count Rostov.

For sole reply, Daniel gave him a shy, childlike, meek, and amiable smile.

Count Rostov went home, and Natasha and Petya promised to return very soon, but as it was still early the hunt went farther. At midday, they put the hounds into a ravine thickly overgrown with young trees. Nicholas standing in a fallow field could see all his whips.

Facing him lay a field of winter rye, there his own huntsman stood alone in a hollow behind a hazel bush. The hounds had scarcely been loosed before Nicholas heard one he knew, Voltórn, giving tongue at intervals; other hounds joined in, now pausing and now again giving tongue. A moment later he heard a cry from the wooded ravine that a fox had been found, and the whole pack, joining together, rushed along the ravine toward the field of rye and away from Nicholas.

Nicholas saw the whips in their red caps galloping along the edge of the ravine, he even saw the hounds and was expecting a fox to show itself at any moment on the field of rye opposite.

The huntsman standing in the hollow moved and loosed his borzois, and Nicholas saw a queer, short-legged red fox with a fine brush going hard across the field. The borzois bore down on it... Now they drew close to the fox which began to dodge between the field in sharper and sharper curves, trailing its brush, when suddenly a strange white borzoi dashed in followed by a black one, and everything was in confusion; the borzois formed a star-shaped figure, scarcely swaying their bodies and with tails turned away from the center of the group. Two huntsmen galloped up to the dogs; one in a red cap, the other, a stranger, in a green coat.

“What’s this?” thought Nicholas. “Where’s that huntsman from? He is not Dyadya’s man.”

The huntsmen got the fox but stayed there a long time without strapping it to the saddle. Their horses bridled and with high saddles, stood near them, and there too the dogs were lying. The huntsmen waved their arms and did something to the fox. Then from that spot came the sound of a horn, with the signal agreed on in case of a fight.

“That’s our neighbor Ilágin’s huntsman having a row with our Iván,” said Nicholas’ groom.

Nicholas sent the man to call Natasha and Petya to him and rode at a footpace to the place where the whips were getting the hounds together. Several of the field galloped to the spot where the fight was going on.

Nicholas dismounted, and with Natasha and Petya, who had ridden up, stopped near the hounds, waiting to see how the matter would end. Out of the bushes came the huntsman who had been fighting and rode toward his young master, with the fox tied to his crupper. While still at a distance he took off his cap and tried to speak respectfully, but he was pale and breathless and his face was angry. One of his eyes was black, but he probably was not even aware of it.

“What has happened?” asked Nicholas.

“A likely thing, our neighbor, Ilágin killing a fox our dogs had hunted! And it was my gray bitch that caught it! Go to law, indeed!... Ilágin snatches at the fox! I gave him one with the fox. Here it is on my saddle! Do you want a taste of this?...” said the huntsman, pointing to his dagger and probably imagining himself still speaking to his foe.

Nicholas, not stopping to talk to the huntsman, asked Natasha and Petya to wait for him and rode to the spot where the enemy’s, Ilágin’s, hunting party was.

The victorious huntsman Ilágin rode off to join the field, and there, surrounded by inquiring sympathizers, recounted his exploits.

The facts were that Ilágin, with whom the Rostovs had a quarrel and were at law, hunted over places that belonged by custom to the Rostovs, and

had now, as if purposely, sent his men to the very woods the Rostovs were hunting and let his man snatch a fox their dogs had chased.

Nicholas, though he had never seen Ilágin, with his usual absence of moderation in judgment, hated him cordially from reports of his arbitrariness and violence, and regarded him as his bitterest foe. Nicholas rode in angry agitation toward him, firmly grasping his whip and fully prepared to take the most resolute and desperate steps to punish his enemy.

Hardly had Nicholas passed an angle of the wood before a stout gentleman in a beaver cap came riding toward him on a handsome raven-black horse, accompanied by two hunt servants.

Instead of an enemy, Nicholas found in Ilágin a stately and courteous gentleman who was particularly anxious to make Nicholas's acquaintance. Having ridden up to Nicholas, Ilágin raised his beaver cap and said he much regretted what had occurred and would have the man punished who had allowed himself to seize a fox hunted by someone else's borzois. He hoped to become better acquainted with Nicholas and invited him to draw his covert.

Natasha, afraid that Nicholas would do something dreadful, had followed him in some excitement. Seeing the enemies exchanging friendly greetings, she rode up to them. Ilágin lifted his beaver cap still higher to Natasha and said, with a pleasant smile, that Natasha resembled Diana in her passion for the chase as well as in her beauty, of which he had heard much.

To expiate his huntsman's offense, Ilágin pressed the Rostovs to come to an upland of his about a mile away which he usually kept for himself and which, he said, swarmed with hares. Nicholas agreed, and the hunt, now doubled, moved on.

The way to Ilágin's upland was across the fields. The hunt servants fell into line. The masters rode together. Dyadya, Nicholas, and Ilágin kept

stealthily glancing at one another's dogs, trying not to be observed by their companions and searching uneasily for rivals to their own borzois.

Nicholas was particularly struck by the beauty of a small, pure-bred, red-spotted bitch on Ilágin's leash, slender but with muscles like steel, a delicate muzzle, and prominent black eyes. He had heard of the swiftness of Ilágin's borzois, and in that beautiful bitch saw a rival to his own Mílka.

In the middle of a sober conversation begun by Ilágin about the year's harvest, Nicholas pointed to the red-spotted bitch.

"A fine little bitch, that!" Nicholas said in a careless tone. "Is she swift?"

"That one? Yes, she's a good dog, gets what she's after," answered Ilágin indifferently, of the red-spotted bitch Erzá, for which, a year before, he had given a neighbor three families of house serfs. "So in your parts, too, the harvest is nothing to boast of, Nicholas?" he went on, continuing the conversation they had begun. And considering it polite to return the young count's compliment, Ilágin looked at his borzois and picked out Mílka who attracted his attention by her breadth. "That black-spotted one of yours is fine—well shaped!" said Ilágin.

"Yes, she's fast enough," replied Nicholas, and thought: "If only a full-grown hare would cross the field now I'd show you what sort of borzoi she is," and turning to his groom, he said he would give a ruble to anyone who found a hare.

"I don't understand," continued Ilágin, "how some sportsmen can be so jealous about game and dogs. As for myself, I can tell you, Nicholas, I enjoy riding in a company such as this... what could be better?" (he again raised his cap to Natasha) "but as for counting skins and what one takes, I don't care about that."

"Of course not!"

"Or being upset because someone else's borzoi and not mine catches something. All I care about is to enjoy seeing the chase, is it not so,

Nicholas? For I consider that..."

"*A-tu!*" came the long-drawn cry of one of the borzoi whippers-in, who had halted. He stood on a knoll in the stubble, holding his whip aloft, and again repeated his long-drawn cry, "*A-tu!*" (This call and the uplifted whip meant that he saw a sitting hare.)

"Ah, he has found one, I think," said Ilágin carelessly. "Yes, we must ride up... Shall we both course it?" answered Nicholas, seeing in Erzá and Dyadya's red Rugáy two rivals he had never yet had a chance of pitting against his own borzois. "And suppose they outdo my Mílka at once!" Nicholas thought as he rode with Dyadya and Ilágin toward the hare.

"A full-grown one?" asked Ilágin as he approached the whip who had sighted the hare—and not without agitation he looked round and whistled to Erzá.

"And you?" Ilágin said, addressing Dyadya.

Dyadya was riding with a sullen expression on his face.

"How can I join in? Why, you've given a village for each of your borzois! That's it, come on! Yours are worth thousands. Try yours against one another, you two, and I'll look on!"

"Rugáy, hey, hey!" Ilágin shouted. "Rugáyushka!" he added, involuntarily by this diminutive expressing his affection and the hopes he placed on this red borzoi.

Natasha saw and felt the agitation the two elderly men and her brother were trying to conceal and was herself excited by it.

The huntsman stood halfway up the knoll holding up his whip and the gentlefolk rode up to him at a footpace; the hounds that were far off on the horizon turned away from the hare, and the whips, but not the gentlefolk, also moved away. All were moving slowly and sedately.

"How is it pointing?" asked Nicholas, riding a hundred paces toward the whip who had sighted the hare.

But before the whip could reply, the hare, scenting the frost coming the next morning, was unable to rest and leaped up. The pack on leash rushed downhill in full cry after the hare, and from all sides, the borzois that were not on leash darted after the hounds and the hare. All the hunters, who had been moving slowly, shouted, "Stop!" calling in the hounds, while the borzoi whips, with a cry of "*A-tu!*" galloped across the field setting the borzois on the hare. The tranquil Ilágin, Nicholas, Natasha, and Dyadya flew, reckless of where and how they went, seeing only the borzois and the hare and fearing only to lose sight even for an instant of the chase. The hare they had started was a strong and swift one. When he jumped up he did not run at once but pricked his ears listening to the shouting and trampling that resounded from all sides at once. The hare took a dozen bounds, not very quickly, letting the borzois gain on him, and, finally having chosen his direction and realized his danger, laid back his ears and rushed off headlong. He had been lying in the stubble, but in front of him was the autumn sowing where the ground was soft. The two borzois of the huntsman who had sighted him, having been the nearest, were the first to see and pursue him, but they had not gone far before Ilágin's red-spotted Erzá passed them, got within a length, flew at the hare with terrible swiftness aiming at his scut, and, thinking she had seized him, rolled over like a ball. The hare arched his back and bounded off yet more swiftly. From behind Erzá rushed the broad-haunched, black-spotted Mílka and began rapidly gaining on the hare.

"Miláshka, dear!" rose Nicholas' triumphant cry. It looked as if Mílka would immediately pounce on the hare, but she overtook him and flew past. The hare had squatted. Again the beautiful Erzá reached him, but when close to the hare's scut paused as if measuring the distance, so as not to make a mistake this time but seize his hind leg.

"Erzá, darling!" Ilágin wailed in a voice unlike his own. Erzá did not hearken to his appeal. At the very moment when she would have seized her

prey, the hare moved and darted along the balk between the winter rye and the stubble. Again Erzá and Mílka were abreast, running like a pair of carriage horses, and began to overtake the hare, but it was easier for the hare to run on the balk and the borzois did not overtake him so quickly.

“Rugáy, Rugáyushka! That’s it, come on!” came a third voice just then, and Dyadya’s red borzoi, straining and curving its back, caught up with the two foremost borzois, pushed ahead of them regardless of the terrible strain, put on speed close to the hare, knocked it off the balk onto the field of rye, again put on speed still more viciously, sinking to his knees in the muddy field, and all one could see was how, muddying his back, he rolled over with the hare. A ring of borzois surrounded the red borzoi. A moment later everyone had drawn up around the crowd of dogs. Only the delighted Dyadya dismounted, and cut off a pad, shaking the hare for the blood to drip off, and anxiously glancing around with restless eyes while his arms and legs twitched. He spoke without himself knowing whom to or what about. “That’s it, come on! That’s a dog!... There, it has beaten them all, the thousand-ruble as well as the one-ruble borzois. That’s it, come on!” said he, panting and looking wrathfully around as if he were abusing someone, as if they were all his enemies and had insulted him, and only now had he at last succeeded in justifying himself. “There are your thousand-ruble ones... That’s it, come on!...”

“Rugáy, here’s a pad for you!” Dyadya said, throwing down the hare’s muddy pad. “You’ve deserved it, that’s it, come on!”

“She’d tired herself out, she’d run it down three times by herself,” said Nicholas, also not listening to anyone and regardless of whether he was heard or not.

“But what is there in running across it like that?” said Ilágin’s groom.

“Once she had missed it and turned it away, any mongrel could take it,” Ilágin was saying at the same time, breathless from his gallop and his excitement. At the same moment Natasha, without drawing breath,

screamed joyously, ecstatically, and so piercingly that it set everyone's ear tingling. By that shriek, she expressed what the others expressed by all talking at once, and it was so strange that she must herself have been ashamed of so wild a cry and everyone else would have been amazed at it at any other time. Dyadya himself twisted up the hare, threw it neatly and smartly across his horse's back as if by that gesture he meant to rebuke everybody, and, with an air of not wishing to speak to anyone, mounted his bay and rode off. The others all followed, dispirited and shamefaced, and only much later were they able to regain their former affectation of indifference. For a long time, they continued to look at red Rugáy who, his arched back spattered with mud and clanking the ring of his leash, walked along just behind Dyadya's horse with the serene air of a conqueror.

"Well, I am like any other dog as long as it's not a question of coursing. But when it is, then look out!" the dog's appearance seemed to Nicholas to be saying.

When, much later, Dyadya rode up to Nicholas and began talking to him, Nicholas felt flattered that, after what had happened, Dyadya deigned to speak to him.

Toward evening Ilágin took leave of Nicholas, who found that they were so far from home that he accepted Dyadya's offer that the hunting party should spend the night in his little village of Mikháylovna.

"And if you put up at my house that will be better still. That's it, come on!" said Dyadya. "You see it's damp weather, and you could rest, and the little countess could be driven home in a carriage."

Dyadya's offer was accepted. A huntsman was sent to Otrádnœ for a carriage, while Nicholas rode with Natasha and Petya to Dyadya's house.

Some five male domestic serfs, big and little, rushed out to the front porch to meet their master. A score of women serfs, old and young, as well as children, popped out from the back entrance to have a look at the hunters who were arriving. The presence of Natasha—a woman, a lady, and on

horseback—raised the curiosity of the serfs to such a degree that many of them came up to her, stared her in the face, and unabashed by her presence made remarks about her as though she were some prodigy on a show and not a human being able to hear or understand what was said about her.

“Look, Natasha sits sideways! There she sits and her skirt dangles... See, she’s got a little hunting horn!”

“Goodness gracious! See her knife?...”

“Isn’t she a Tartar!”

“How is it you didn’t go head over heels?” asked the boldest of all, addressing Natasha directly.

Dyadya dismounted at the porch of his little wooden house which stood in the midst of an overgrown garden and, after a glance at his retainers, shouted authoritatively that the superfluous ones should take themselves off and that all necessary preparations should be made to receive the guests and the visitors.

The serfs all dispersed. Dyadya lifted Natasha off her horse and taking her hand led her up the rickety wooden steps of the porch. The house, with its bare, un-plastered log walls, was not overclean—it did not seem that those living in it aimed at keeping it spotless—but neither was it noticeably neglected. In the entry, there was a smell of fresh apples, and wolf and fox skins hung about.

Dyadya led the visitors through the anteroom into a small hall with a folding table and red chairs, then into the drawing room with a round birchwood table and a sofa, and finally into his private room where there was a tattered sofa, a worn carpet, and portraits of Suvórov, of the host’s father and mother, and of himself in military uniform. The study smelt strongly of tobacco and dogs. Dyadya asked his visitors to sit down and make themselves at home, and then went out of the room. Rugáy, his back still muddy, came into the room and lay down on the sofa, cleaning himself with his tongue and teeth. Leading from the study was a passage in which a

partition with ragged curtains could be seen. From behind this came women's laughter and whispers. Natasha, Nicholas, and Petya took off their wraps and sat down on the sofa. Petya, leaning on his elbow, fell asleep at once. Natasha and Nicholas were silent. Their faces glowed, they were hungry and very cheerful. They looked at one another (now that the hunt was over and they were in the house, Nicholas no longer considered it necessary to show his manly superiority over his sister), Natasha gave him a wink, and neither refrained long from bursting into a peal of ringing laughter even before they had a pretext ready to account for it.

After a while, Dyadya came in, in a Cossack coat, blue trousers, and small top boots. And Natasha felt that this costume, the very one she had regarded with surprise and amusement at Otrádnœ, was just the right thing and not at all worse than a swallowtail or frock coat. Dyadya too was in high spirits and far from being offended by the brother's and sister's laughter (it could never enter his head that they might be laughing at his way of life), he himself joined in the merriment.

"That's right, Natasha, that's it, come on! I never saw anyone like her!" said Dyadya, offering Nicholas a pipe with a long stem and, with a practiced motion of three fingers, taking down another that had been cut short. "She's ridden all day like a man, and is as fresh as ever!"

Soon after Dyadya's reappearance the door was opened, evidently from the sound by a barefooted girl, and a stout, rosy, good-looking woman of about forty, with a double chin and full red lips, entered carrying a large loaded tray. With hospitable dignity and cordiality in her glance and in every motion, she looked at the visitors and, with a pleasant smile, bowed respectfully. In spite of her exceptional stoutness, which caused her to protrude her chest and stomach and throw back her head, this woman (who was Dyadya's housekeeper, Anísya) trod very lightly. Anísya went to the table, set down the tray, and with her plump white hands deftly took from it the bottles and various hors d'oeuvres and dishes and arranged them on the

table. When Anísya had finished, she stepped aside and stopped at the door with a smile on her face. “Here I am. I am she! Now do you understand Dyadya?” Anísya’s expression said to Nicholas. How could one help understanding? Not only Nicholas, but even Natasha understood the meaning of his puckered brow and the happy complacent smile that slightly puckered Dyadya’s lips when Anísya entered. On the tray were a bottle of herb wine, different kinds of vodka, pickled mushrooms, rye cakes made with buttermilk, honey in the comb, still mead and sparkling mead, apples, nuts (raw and roasted), and nut-and-honey sweets. Afterward, she brought a freshly roasted chicken, ham, preserves made with honey, and preserves made with sugar.

All this was the fruit of Anísya housekeeping, gathered and prepared by her. The smell and taste of it all had a smack of Anísya herself: a savor of juiciness, cleanliness, whiteness, and pleasant smiles.

“Take this, little Natasha!” Anísya kept saying, as she offered Natasha first one thing and then another.

Natasha ate some of everything and thought she had never seen or eaten such buttermilk cakes, such aromatic jam, such honey-and-nut sweets, or such a chicken anywhere. Anísya left the room.

After supper, over their cherry brandy, Nicholas and Dyadya talked of past and future hunts, of Rugáy and Ilágin’s dogs, while Natasha sat upright on the sofa and listened with sparkling eyes. Natasha tried several times to wake Petya so that he might eat something, but he only muttered incoherent words without waking up. Natasha felt so lighthearted and happy in these novel surroundings that she only feared the carriage would come for her too soon. After a casual pause, such as often occurs when receiving friends for the first time in one’s own house, Dyadya, answering a thought that was in his visitors’ minds, said:

“This, you see, is how I am finishing my days... Death will come. That’s it, come on! Nothing will remain. Then why harm anyone?”

Dyadya's face was very significant and even handsome as he said this. Involuntarily Nicholas recalled all the good he had heard about him from his father and the neighbors. Throughout the whole province Dyadya had the reputation of being the most honorable and disinterested of cranks. They called him in to decide family disputes, chose him as executor, confided secrets to him, and elected him to be a justice and to other posts; but he always persistently refused public appointments, passing the autumn and spring in the fields on his bay gelding, sitting at home in winter, and lying in his overgrown garden in summer.

"Why don't you enter the service, Dyadya?"

"I did once but gave it up. I am not fit for it. That's it, come on! I can't make heads or tails of it. That's for you—I haven't brains enough. Now, hunting is another matter—that's it, come on! Open the door, there!" Dyadya shouted. "Why have you shut it?"

The door at the end of the passage led to the huntsmen's room, as they called the room for the hunt servants.

There was a rapid patter of bare feet, and an unseen hand opened the door into the huntsmen's room, from which came the clear sounds of a balaláyka guitar on which someone, who was evidently a master of the art, was playing. Natasha had been listening to those strains for some time and now went out into the passage to hear better.

"That's Mítka, my coachman... I have got him a good balaláyka. I'm fond of it," said Dyadya.

It was the custom for Mítka to play the balaláyka in the huntsmen's room when Dyadya returned from the chase. Dyadya was fond of such music.

"How good! Really very good!" said Nicholas with some unintentional superciliousness, as if ashamed to confess that the sounds pleased him very much.

“Very good?” said Natasha reproachfully, noticing her brother’s tone. “Not ‘very good’—it’s simply delicious!”

Just as Dyadya’s pickled mushrooms, honey, and cherry brandy had seemed to her the best in the world, so also that song, at that moment, seemed to her the acme of musical delight.

“More, please, more!” cried Natasha at the door as soon as the balaláyka ceased. Mítka tuned up afresh and recommenced thrumming the balaláyka to the air of *My Lady*, with trills and variations. Dyadya sat listening, slightly smiling, with his head on one side. The air was repeated a hundred times. The balaláyka was retuned several times and the same notes were thrummed again, but the listeners did not grow weary of it and wished to hear it again and again. Anísya came in and leaned her portly person against the doorpost.

“You like listening?” Anísya said to Natasha, with a smile extremely like Dyadya’s. “That’s a good player of ours,” she added.

“He doesn’t play that part right!” said Dyadya suddenly, with an energetic gesture. “Here he ought to burst out—that’s it, come on!—ought to burst out.”

“Do you play then?” asked Natasha.

Dyadya did not answer, but smiled.

“Anísya, go and see if the strings of my guitar are all right. I haven’t touched it for a long time. That’s it—come on! I’ve given it up.”

Anísya, with her light step, willingly went to fulfill her errand and brought back the guitar.

Without looking at anyone, Dyadya blew the dust off it and, tapping the case with his bony fingers, tuned the guitar and settled himself in his armchair. He took the guitar a little above the fingerboard, arching his left elbow with a somewhat theatrical gesture, and, with a wink at Anísya, struck a single chord, pure and sonorous, and then quietly, smoothly, and confidently began playing in very slow time, not *My Lady*, but the well-

known song: *Came a maiden down the street*. The tune, played with precision and in exact time, began to thrill in the hearts of Nicholas and Natasha, arousing in them the same kind of sober mirth as radiated from Anísya whole being. Anísya flushed, and drawing her kerchief over her face went laughing out of the room. Dyadya continued to play correctly, carefully, with energetic firmness, looking with a changed and inspired expression at the spot where Anísya had just stood. Something seemed to be laughing a little on one side of his face under his gray mustaches, especially as the song grew brisker and the time quicker and when, here and there, as he ran his fingers over the strings, something seemed to snap.

“Lovely, lovely! Go on, Dyadya, go on!” shouted Natasha as soon as he had finished. She jumped up and hugged and kissed him. “Nicholas, Nicholas!” she said, turning to her brother as if asking him: “What is it that moves me so?”

Nicholas too was greatly pleased by Dyadya’s playing, and Dyadya played the piece over again. Anísya’s smiling face reappeared in the doorway and behind hers other faces...

Fetching

water

clear

and

sweet,

Stop, dear maiden, I entreat—

played Dyadya once more, running his fingers skillfully over the strings, and then he stopped short and jerked his shoulders.

“Go on, Dyadya dear,” Natasha wailed in an imploring tone as if her life depended on it.

Dyadya rose, and it was as if there were two men in him: one of them smiled seriously at the merry fellow, while the merry fellow struck a naive and precise attitude preparatory to a folk dance.

“Now then, niece!” Dyadya exclaimed, waving to Natasha the hand that had just struck a chord.

Natasha threw off the shawl from her shoulders, ran forward to face Dyadya, and setting her arms akimbo also made a motion with her shoulders and struck an attitude.

Where, how, and when had Natasha, educated by an *emigrant* French governess, imbibed from the Russian air she breathed that spirit and obtained that manner which the *French shawl dance* would, one would have supposed, long ago have effaced? But the spirit and the movements were those inimitable and unteachable Russian ones that Dyadya had expected of her. As soon as Natasha had struck her pose, and smiled triumphantly, proudly, and with sly merriment, the fear that had at first seized Nicholas and the others that she might not do the right thing was at an end, and they were already admiring her.

She did the right thing with such precision, such complete precision, that Anísya, who had at once handed her the handkerchief she needed for the dance, had tears in her eyes, though she laughed as she watched this slim, graceful countess, reared in silks and velvets and so different from herself, who yet was able to understand all that was in Anísya and in Anísya’s father and mother and aunt, and in every Russian man and woman.

“Well, Natasha; that’s it—come on!” cried Dyadya, with a joyous laugh, having finished the dance. “Well done, Natasha! Now a fine young fellow must be found as a husband for you. That’s it—come on!”

“He’s chosen already,” said Nicholas smiling.

“Oh?” said Dyadya in surprise, looking inquiringly at Natasha, who nodded her head with a happy smile.

“And such a one!” Natasha said. But as soon as she had said it a new train of thoughts and feelings arose in her. “What did Nicholas’ smile mean when he said ‘chosen already’? Is he glad of it or not? It is as if he thought my Andrei would not approve of or understand our gaiety. But he would

understand it all. Where is he now?" Natasha thought, and her face suddenly became serious. But this lasted only a second. "Don't dare to think about it," she said to herself, and sat down again smilingly beside Dyadya, begging him to play something more.

Dyadya played another song and a valse; then after a pause, he cleared his throat and sang his favorite hunting song:

As 'twas growing dark last night

Fell the snow so soft and light...

Dyadya sang as peasants sing, with full and naive conviction that the whole meaning of a song lies in the words and that the tune comes of itself, and that apart from the words there is no tune, which exists only to give measure to the words. As a result of this the unconsidered tune, like the song of a bird, was extraordinarily good. Natasha was in ecstasies over Dyadya's singing. She resolved to give up learning the harp and to play only the guitar. She asked Dyadya for his guitar and at once found the chords of the song.

After nine o'clock two carriages and three mounted men, who had been sent to look for them, arrived to fetch Natasha and Petya. Count and Countess Rostov did not know where they were and were very anxious, said one of the men.

Petya was sleeping hard, so he was carried out like a log and laid in the larger of the two carriages. Natasha and Nicholas got into the other. Dyadya wrapped Natasha up warmly and took leave of her with quite a new tenderness. He accompanied them on foot as far as the bridge that could not be crossed, so that they had to go round by the ford, and he sent huntsmen to ride in front with lanterns.

"Good-by, dear Natasha," his voice called out of the darkness—not the voice Natasha had known previously, but the one that had sung *As 'twas growing dark last night*.

In the village through which they passed there were red lights and a cheerful smell of smoke.

“What a darling Dyadya is!” said Natasha, when they had come out onto the high road.

“Yes,” returned Nicholas. “You’re not cold?”

“No. I’m quite, quite all right. I feel so comfortable!” answered Natasha, almost perplexed by her feelings. They remained silent for a long while. The night was dark and damp. They could not see the horses but only heard them splashing through the unseen mud.

What was passing in that receptive childlike soul that so eagerly caught and assimilated all the diverse impressions of life? How did they all find a place in her? But Natasha was very happy. As they were nearing home she suddenly struck up the air of *As ‘twas growing dark last night*—the tune of which she had all the way been trying to get and had at last caught.

“Got it?” said Nicholas.

“What were you thinking about just now, Nicholas?” inquired Natasha.

They were fond of asking one another that question.

“I?” said Nicholas, trying to remember. “Well, you see, first I thought that Rugáy, the red hound, was like Dyadya and that if he were a man he would always keep Dyadya near him, if not for his riding, then for his manner. What a good fellow Dyadya is! Don’t you think so?... Well, and you?”

“I? Wait a bit, wait... Yes, first I thought that we are driving along and imagining that we are going home, but that heaven knows where we are really going in the darkness, and that we shall arrive and suddenly find that we are not in Otrádnœ, but in Fairyland. And then I thought... No, nothing else.”

“I know, I expect you thought of Andrei,” said Nicholas, smiling as Natasha knew by the sound of his voice.

“No,” said Natasha, though she had in reality been thinking about Andrei at the same time as the rest, and of how he would have liked Dyadya. “And then I was saying to myself all the way, ‘How well Anísya carried herself, how well!’” And Nicholas heard her spontaneous, happy, ringing laughter. “And do you know,” she suddenly said, “I know that I shall never again be as happy and tranquil as I am now.”

“Rubbish, nonsense, humbug!” exclaimed Nicholas, and he thought: “How charming this sister of mine is! I have no other friend like her and never shall have. Why should she marry? We might always drive about together!”

“What a darling my brother of mine is!” thought Natasha.

“Ah, there are still lights in the drawing room!” Natasha said, pointing to the windows of the house that gleamed invitingly in the moist velvety darkness of the night.

Count Rostov had resigned from the position to supervise his district because it involved him in too much expense, but still, his affairs did not improve. Natasha and Nicholas often noticed their parents conferring together anxiously and privately and heard suggestions of selling the fine ancestral Nicholas house and estate near Moscow. It was not necessary to entertain so freely as when Count Rostov was supervisor of the district, and life at Otrádnœ was quieter than in former years, but still, the enormous house and its lodges were full of people and more than twenty sat down to table every day. These were all their own people who had settled down in the house almost as members of the family, or persons who were, it seemed, obliged to live in Count Rostov’s house. Such were Dimmler the musician and his wife, Vogel the dancing master and his family, Belóva, an old maiden lady, an inmate of the house, and many others such as Petya’s tutors, the girls’ former governess, and other people who simply found it preferable and more advantageous to live in Count Rostov’s house than at home. They had not as many visitors as before, but the old habits of life

without which Count and Countess Rostov could not conceive of existence remained unchanged. There was still the hunting establishment which Nicholas had even enlarged, the same fifty horses and fifteen grooms in the stables, the same expensive presents and dinner parties to the whole district on name days; there were still Count Rostov's games of whist and boston, at which—spreading out his cards so that everybody could see them—he let himself be plundered of hundreds of rubles every day by his neighbors, who looked upon an opportunity to play a rubber with Count Rostov as a most profitable source of income.

Count Rostov moved in his affairs as in a huge net, trying not to believe that he was entangled but becoming more and more so at every step, and feeling too feeble to break the meshes or to set to work carefully and patiently to disentangle them. Countess Rostov, with her loving heart, felt that her children were being ruined, that it was not Count Rostov's fault for he could not help being what he was—that (though he tried to hide it) he himself suffered from the consciousness of his own and his children's ruin, and she tried to find means of remedying the position. From her feminine point of view, she could see only one solution, namely, for Nicholas to marry a rich heiress. Countess Rostov felt this to be their last hope and that if Nicholas refused the match she had found for him, she would have to abandon the hope of ever getting matters right. This match was with Julie, the daughter of excellent and virtuous parents, a girl the Rostovs had known from childhood, and who had now become a wealthy heiress through the death of the last of her brothers.

Countess Rostov had written directly to Julie's mother in Moscow suggesting a marriage between their children and had received a favorable answer from her. Julie's mother had replied that for her part she was agreeable, and everything depend on her daughter's inclination. She invited Nicholas to come to Moscow.

Several times Countess Rostov, with tears in her eyes, told her son that now both her daughters were settled, her only wish was to see him married. She said she could lie down in her grave peacefully if that were accomplished. Then she told him that she knew of a splendid girl and tried to discover what he thought about marriage.

At other times Countess Rostov praised Julie to Nicholas and advised him to go to Moscow during the holidays to amuse himself. Nicholas guessed what his mother's remarks were leading to and one of these conversations induced her to speak quite frankly. She told him that her only hope of getting their affairs disentangled now lay in his marrying Julie.

"But, Mamma, suppose I loved a girl who has no fortune, would you expect me to sacrifice my feelings and my honor for the sake of money?" Nicholas asked his mother, not realizing the cruelty of his question and only wishing to show his noble-mindedness.

"No, you have not understood me," said his mother, not knowing how to justify herself. "You have not understood me, Nicholas. It is your happiness I wish for," she added, feeling that she was telling an untruth and was becoming entangled. She began to cry.

"Mamma, don't cry! Only tell me that you wish it, and you know I will give my life, anything, to put you at ease," said Nicholas. "I would sacrifice anything for you—even my feelings."

But Countess Rostov did not want the question put like that: she did not want a sacrifice from Nicholas, she herself wished to make a sacrifice for him.

"No, you have not understood me, don't let us talk about it," she replied, wiping away her tears.

"Maybe I do love a poor girl," said Nicholas to himself. "Am I to sacrifice my feelings and my honor for money? I wonder how Mamma could speak so to me. Because Sonya is poor I must not love her," Nicholas thought, "must not respond to her faithful, devoted love? Yet I should

certainly be happier with her than with some doll-like Julie. I can always sacrifice my feelings for my family's welfare," he said to himself, "but I can't coerce my feelings. If I love Sonya, that feeling is for me stronger and higher than all else."

Nicholas did not go to Moscow, and Countess Rostov did not renew the conversation with him about marriage. She saw with sorrow, and sometimes with exasperation, symptoms of a growing attachment between her son and the portionless Sonya. Though she blamed herself for it, she could not refrain from grumbling at and worrying Sonya, often pulling her up without reason, addressing her stiffly as "my dear," and using the formal "you" instead of the intimate "thou" in speaking to her. The kindhearted countess was the more vexed with Sonya because that poor, dark-eyed niece of hers was so meek, so kind, so devotedly grateful to her benefactors, and so faithfully, unchangingly, and unselfishly in love with Nicholas, that there were no grounds for finding fault with her.

Nicholas was spending the last of his leave at home. A fourth letter had come from Andrei, from Rome, in which he wrote that he would have been on his way back to Russia long ago had not his wound unexpectedly reopened in the warm climate, which obliged him to defer his return till the beginning of the new year. Natasha was still as much in love with Andrei, found the same comfort in that love, and was still as ready to throw herself into all the pleasures of life as before; but at the end of the fourth month of their separation, she began to have fits of depression which she could not master. She felt sorry for herself: sorry that she was being wasted all this time and of no use to anyone—while she felt so capable of loving and being loved.

Things were not cheerful in the Rostovs' home.

Christmas came and except for the ceremonial Mass, the solemn and wearisome Christmas congratulations from neighbors and servants, and the new dresses everyone put on, there were no special festivities, though the

calm frost of twenty degrees Réaumur, the dazzling sunshine by day, and the starlight of the winter nights seemed to call for some special celebration of the season.

On the third day of Christmas week, after the midday dinner, all the inmates of the house dispersed to various rooms. It was the duller time of the day. Nicholas, who had been visiting some neighbors that morning, was asleep on the sitting-room sofa. Count Rostov was resting in his study. Sonya sat in the drawing room at the round table, copying a design for embroidery. Countess Rostov was playing patience. Nastáya Ivánovna the buffoon/fool/jester sat with a sad face at the window with two old ladies. Natasha came into the room, went up to Sonya, glanced at what she was doing, and then went up to her mother and stood without speaking.

“Why are you wandering about like an outcast?” asked Countess Rostov. “What do you want?”

“*Him...* I want Andrei... now, this minute! I want *him!*” said Natasha, with glittering eyes and no sign of a smile.

Countess Rostov lifted her head and looked attentively at her daughter.

“Don’t look at me, Mamma! Don’t look; I shall cry directly.”

“Sit down with me a little,” said Countess Rostov.

“Mamma, I want *him*. Why should I be wasted like this, Mamma?”

Natasha’s voice broke, tears gushed from her eyes, and she turned quickly to hide them and left the room.

She passed into the sitting room, stood there thinking awhile, and then went into the maids’ room. There an old maidservant was grumbling at a young girl who stood panting, having just run in through the cold from the serfs’ quarters.

“Stop playing—there’s a time for everything,” said the old woman.

“Let her alone,” said Natasha. “Go, go.”

Having released the old maidservant, Natasha crossed the dancing hall and went to the vestibule. There an old footman and two young ones were

playing cards. They broke off and rose as she entered.

“What can I do with them?” thought Natasha.

“Oh, just please go... where can I send him?... Yes, go to the yard and fetch a fowl, please, a cock, and you, footman, bring me some oats.”

“Just a few oats?” said the young footman, cheerfully and readily.

“Go, go quickly,” the old footman urged him.

“And you, get me a piece of chalk.”

On her way past the butler’s pantry, Natasha told them to set a samovar, though it was not at all the time for tea.

The butler was the most ill-tempered person in the house. Natasha liked to test her power over him. He distrusted the order and asked whether the samovar was really wanted.

“Oh dear, what a young lady!” said the butler, pretending to frown at Natasha.

No one in the house sent people about or gave them as much trouble as Natasha did. She could not see people unconcernedly but had to send them on some errand. Natasha seemed to be trying whether any of them would get angry or sulky with her, but the serfs fulfilled no one’s orders so readily as they did hers. “What can I do, where can I go?” thought she, as she went slowly along the passage.

“Nastásya Ivánovna, what sort of children shall I have?” she asked the buffoon, who was coming toward her in a woman’s jacket.

“Why, fleas, crickets, grasshoppers,” answered the buffoon.

“Oh Lord, Oh Lord, it’s always the same! Oh, where am I to go? What am I to do with myself?” And tapping her heels, Natasha ran quickly upstairs to see Vogel and his wife who lived on the upper story.

Two governesses were sitting with the Vogels at a table, on which were plates of raisins, walnuts, and almonds. The governesses were discussing whether it was cheaper to live in Moscow or Odessa. Natasha sat down, listened to their talk with a serious and thoughtful air, and then got up again.

“The island of Madagascar,” she said, “Ma-da-gas-car,” she repeated, articulating each syllable distinctly, and, not replying to Madame Schoss who asked her what she was saying, she went out of the room.

Natasha’s brother Petya was upstairs too; with the man in attendance on him, he was preparing fireworks to let off that night.

“Petya! Petya!” Natasha called to him. “Carry me downstairs.”

Petya ran up and offered her his back. She jumped on it, putting her arms around his neck, and he pranced along with her.

“No, don’t... the island of Madagascar!” Natasha said, and jumping off his back she went downstairs.

Having, as it were, reviewed her kingdom, tested her power, and made sure that everyone was submissive, but that all the same it was dull, Natasha betook herself to the ballroom, picked up her guitar, sat down in a dark corner behind a bookcase, and began to run her fingers over the strings in the bass, picking out a passage she recalled from an opera she had heard in St. Petersburg with Andrei. What she drew from the guitar would have had no meaning for other listeners, but in her imagination, a whole series of reminiscences arose from those sounds. She sat behind the bookcase with her eyes fixed on a streak of light escaping from the pantry door and listened to herself and pondered. She was in a mood for brooding on the past.

Sonya passed to the pantry with a glass in her hand. Natasha glanced at her and at the crack in the pantry door, and it seemed to her that she remembered the light falling through that crack once before and Sonya passing with a glass in her hand. “Yes it was exactly the same,” thought Natasha.

“Sonya, what is this?” Natasha cried, twanging a thick string of the guitar.

“Oh, you are there!” said Sonya with a start, and came near and listened. “I don’t know. A storm?” she ventured timidly, afraid of being

wrong.

“There! That’s just how she started and just how she came up smiling timidly when all this happened before,” thought Natasha, “and in just the same way I thought there was something lacking in her.”

“No, it’s the chorus from *The Water-Carrier*, listen!” Natasha sang the air of the chorus so that Sonya should catch it. “Where were you going?” she asked.

“To change the water in this glass. I am just finishing the design.”

“You always find something to do, but I can’t,” said Natasha. “And where’s Nicholas?”

“Asleep, I think.”

“Sonya, go and wake him,” said Natasha. “Tell him I want him to come and sing.”

Natasha sat awhile, wondering what the meaning of it all having happened before could be, and without solving this problem, or at all regretting not having done so, she again passed in fancy to the time when she was with *him* and he was looking at her with a lover’s eyes.

“Oh, if only Andrei would come quicker! I am so afraid it will never be! And, worst of all, I am growing old—that’s the thing! There won’t then be in me what there is now. But perhaps he’ll come today, will come immediately. Perhaps he has come and is sitting in the drawing room. Perhaps he came yesterday and I have forgotten it.” She rose, put down the guitar, and went to the drawing room.

All the domestic circle, tutors, governesses, and guests, were already at the tea table. The servants stood round the table—but Andrei was not there and life was going on as before.

“Ah, here she is!” said Count Rostov, when he saw Natasha enter. “Well, sit down by me.” But Natasha stayed by her mother and glanced around as if looking for something.

“Mamma!” Natasha muttered, “give Andrei to me, give him, Mamma, quickly, quickly!” and she again had difficulty in repressing her sobs.

She sat down at the table and listened to the conversation between the elders and Nicholas, who had also come to the table. “My God, my God! The same faces, the same talk, Papa holding his cup and blowing in the same way!” thought Natasha, feeling with horror a sense of repulsion rising up in her for the whole household, because they were always the same.

After tea, Nicholas, Sonya, and Natasha went to the sitting room, to their favorite corner where their most intimate talks always began.

“Does it ever happen to you,” said Natasha to Nicholas, when they settled down in the sitting room, “does it ever happen to you to feel as if there were nothing more to come—nothing; that everything good is in the past? And to feel not exactly dull, but sad?”

“I should think so!” Nicholas replied. “I have felt like that when everything was all right and everyone was cheerful. The thought has come into my mind that I was already tired of it all and that we must all die. Once in the regiment, I had not gone to some merrymaking where there was music... and suddenly I felt so depressed...”

“Oh yes, I know, I know, I know!” Natasha interrupted him. “When I was quite little that used to be so with me. Do you remember when I was punished once for taking some plums? You were all dancing, and I sat sobbing in the schoolroom? I shall never forget it: I felt sad and sorry for everyone, for myself, and for everyone. And I was innocent—that was the chief thing,” said Natasha. “Do you remember?”

“I remember,” answered Nicholas. “I remember that I came to you afterward and wanted to comfort you, but do you know, I felt ashamed to do so. We were terribly absurd. I had a funny doll then and wanted to give it to you. Do you remember?”

“And do you remember,” Natasha asked with a pensive smile, “how once, long, long ago, when we were quite little, Dyadya called us into the

study—that was in the old house—and it was dark—we went in and suddenly there stood...”

“A man from Africa, a black man,” chimed in Nicholas with a smile of delight. “Of course, I remember. Even now I don’t know whether there really was a black man, or if we only dreamed it or were told about him.”

“He was gray, you remember, and had white teeth, and stood and looked at us...”

“Sonya, do *you* remember?” asked Nicholas.

“Yes, yes, I do remember something too,” Sonya answered timidly.

“You know I have asked Papa and Mamma about that man from Africa,” said Natasha, “and they say there was no black man at all. But you see, you remember!”

“Of course I do, I remember his teeth as if I had just seen them.”

“How strange it is! It’s as if it were a dream! I like that.”

“And do you remember how we rolled hard-boiled eggs in the ballroom, and suddenly two old women began spinning round on the carpet? Was that real or not? Do you remember what fun it was?”

“Yes, and you remember how Papa in his blue overcoat fired a gun on the porch?”

So they went through their memories, smiling with pleasure: not the sad memories of old age, but poetic, youthful ones—those impressions of one’s most distant past in which dreams and realities blend—and they laughed with quiet enjoyment.

Sonya, as always, did not quite keep pace with them, though they shared the same reminiscences.

Much that they remembered had slipped from Sonya’s mind, and what she recalled did not arouse the same poetic feeling as they experienced. She simply enjoyed their pleasure and tried to fit in with it.

Sonya only really took part when they recalled her first arrival. Sonya told them how afraid she had been of Nicholas because he had on a corded

jacket and her nurse had told her that Sonya, too, would be sewn up with cords.

“And I remember their telling me that you had been born under a cabbage,” said Natasha, “and I remember that I dared not disbelieve it then, but knew that it was not true, and I felt so uncomfortable.”

While they were talking a maid thrust her head in at the other door of the sitting room.

“They have brought the cock, Natasha,” she said in a whisper.

“It isn’t wanted. Tell them to take it away,” replied Natasha.

In the middle of their talk in the sitting room, Dimmler, the house musician, came in and went up to the harp that stood there in a corner. He took off its cloth covering, and the harp gave out a jarring sound.

“Mr. Dimmler, please play my favorite nocturne by Field,” came Count Rostov’s voice from the drawing room.

Dimmler struck a chord and, turning to Natasha, Nicholas, and Sonya, he remarked: “How quiet you young people are!”

“Yes, we’re philosophizing,” said Natasha, glancing around for a moment and then continuing the conversation. They were now discussing dreams.

Dimmler began to play; Natasha went on tiptoe noiselessly to the table, took up a candle, carried it out, and returned, seating herself quietly in her former place. It was dark in the room, especially where they were sitting on the sofa, but through the big windows, the silvery light of the full moon fell on the floor. Dimmler had finished the piece but still sat softly running his fingers over the strings, evidently uncertain whether to stop or to play something else.

“Do you know,” said Natasha in a whisper, moving closer to Nicholas and Sonya, “that when one goes on and on recalling memories, one, at last, begins to remember what happened before one was in the world...”

“That is metempsychosis,” said Sonya, who had always learned well, and remembered everything. “The Egyptians believed that our souls have lived in animals, and will go back into animals again.”

“No, I don’t believe we ever were in animals,” said Natasha, still in a whisper though the music had ceased. “But I am certain that we were angels somewhere *there*, and have been here, and that is why we remember...”

“May I join you?” said Dimmler who had come up quietly, and he sat down by them.

“If we have been angels, why have we fallen lower?” said Nicholas. “No, that can’t be!”

“Not lower, who said we were lower?... How do I know what I was before?” Natasha rejoined with conviction. “The soul is immortal—well then, if I shall always live I must have lived before, lived for a whole eternity.”

“Yes, but it is hard for us to imagine eternity,” remarked Dimmler, who had joined the young folk with a mildly condescending smile but now spoke as quietly and seriously as they.

“Why is it hard to imagine eternity?” said Natasha. “It is now today, and it will be tomorrow, and always; and there was yesterday, and the day before...”

“Natasha! Now it’s your turn. Sing me something,” they heard Countess Rostov say. “Why are you sitting there like conspirators?”

“Mamma, I don’t at all want to,” replied Natasha, but all the same she rose.

None of them, not even the middle-aged Dimmler, wanted to break off their conversation and quit that corner in the sitting room, but Natasha got up and Nicholas sat down at the clavichord. Standing as usual in the middle of the hall and choosing the place where the resonance was best, Natasha began to sing her mother’s favorite song.

Natasha had said she did not want to sing, but it was long since she had sung, and long before she again sang, as she did that evening. Count Rostov, from his study where he was talking to Account Manager Míténka, heard her and, like a schoolboy in a hurry to run out to play, blundered in his talk while giving orders to the steward, and at last stopped, while Míténka stood in front of him also listening and smiling. Nicholas did not take his eyes off his sister and drew breath in time with her. Sonya, as she listened, thought of the immense difference there was between herself and her friend, and how impossible it was for her to be anything as bewitching as her cousin. Count Rostov sat with a blissful yet sad smile and with tears in her eyes, occasionally shaking her head. She thought of Natasha and of her own youth, and of how there was something unnatural and dreadful in this impending marriage of Natasha and Andrei.

Dimmler, who had seated himself beside Countess Rostov, listened with closed eyes.

“Ah, Countess,” Dimmler said at last, “that’s a European talent, she has nothing to learn—what softness, tenderness, and strength...”

“Ah, how afraid I am for Natasha, how afraid I am!” said Countess Rostov, not realizing to whom she was speaking. Her maternal instinct told her that Natasha had too much of something and that because of this she would not be happy. Before Natasha had finished singing, fourteen-year-old Petya rushed in delightedly, to say that some mummers had arrived.

Natasha stopped abruptly.

“Idiot!” Natasha screamed at her brother and, running to a chair, threw herself on it, sobbing so violently that she could not stop for a long time.

“It’s nothing, Mamma, really it’s nothing; only Petya startled me,” she said, trying to smile, but her tears still flowed and sobs still choked her.

The mummers (some of the house serfs) dressed up as bears, Turks, innkeepers, and ladies—frightening and funny—bringing in with them the cold from outside and a feeling of gaiety, crowded, at first timidly, into the

anteroom, then hiding behind one another they pushed into the ballroom where shyly at first and then more and more merrily and heartily, they started singing, dancing, and playing Christmas games. Countess Rostov, when she had identified them and laughed at their costumes, went into the drawing room. Count Rostov sat in the ballroom, smiling radiantly and applauding the players. The young people had disappeared.

Half an hour later there appeared among the other mummers in the ballroom an old lady in a hooped skirt—this was Nicholas. A Turkish girl was Petya. A clown was the house musician Dimmler. A hussar was Natasha, and a Circassian was Sonya with a burnt-cork mustache and eyebrows.

After the condescending surprise, nonrecognition, and praise, from those who were not themselves dressed up, the young people decided that their costumes were so good that they ought to be shown elsewhere.

Nicholas, who, as the roads were in splendid condition, wanted to take them all for a drive in his sleigh, proposed to take with them about a dozen of the serf mummers and drive to Dyadya's.

"No, why disturb the old fellow?" said Countess Rostov. "Besides, you wouldn't have room to turn round there. If you must go, go to the Melyukóvs', which is just three miles away.

"That's right, my dear," chimed in Count Rostov, thoroughly aroused. "I'll dress up at once and go with them. I'll make our neighbors open their eyes."

But Countess Rostov would not agree to his going; he had had a bad leg all these last days. It was decided that Count Rostov must not go, but that if Madame Schoss would go with them as chaperone, the young ladies might go to the Melyukóvs', Sonya, generally so timid and shy, more urgently than anyone begging Louisa Ivánovna not to refuse.

Sonya's costume was the best of all. Her mustache and eyebrows were extraordinarily becoming. Everyone told her she looked very handsome,

and she was in a spirited and energetic mood unusual with her. Some inner voice told her that now or never her fate would be decided, and in her male attire she seemed quite a different person. Madame Schoss consented to go, and in half an hour four sleighs with large and small bells, their runners squeaking and whistling over the frozen snow, drove up to the porch.

Natasha was foremost in setting a merry holiday tone, which, passing from one to another, grew stronger and reached its climax when they all came out into the frost and got into the sleighs, talking, calling to one another, laughing, and shouting.

Two of the sleighs were the usual household sleighs, the third was Count Rostov's with a trotter from the Orlóv stud as shaft horse, the fourth was Nicholas' own with a short shaggy black shaft horse. Nicholas, in his old lady's dress over which he had belted his hussar overcoat, stood in the middle of the sleigh, reins in hand.

It was so light that he could see the moonlight reflected from the metal harness disks and from the eyes of the horses, who looked round in alarm at the noisy party under the shadow of the porch roof.

Natasha, Sonya, Madame Schoss the chaperone, and two maids got into Nicholas' sleigh; Dimmler, his wife, and Petya, into Count Rostov's, and the rest of the mummers seated themselves in the other two sleighs.

"You go ahead, Zakhár!" shouted Nicholas to his father's coachman, wishing for a chance to race past him.

Count Rostov's sleigh, with Dimmler and his party, started forward, squeaking on its runners as though freezing to the snow, its deep-toned bell clanging. The side horses, pressing against the shafts of the middle horse, sank in the snow, which was dry and glittered like sugar, and threw it up.

Nicholas set off, following the first sleigh; behind him, the others moved noisily, their runners squeaking. At first, they drove at a steady trot along the narrow road. While they drove past the garden the shadows of the bare trees often fell across the road and hid the brilliant moonlight, but as

soon as they were past the fence, the snowy plain bathed in moonlight and motionless spread out before them glittering like diamonds and dappled with bluish shadows. *Bang, bang!* went the first sleigh over a cradle hole in the snow of the road, and each of the other sleighs jolted in the same way, and rudely breaking the frost-bound stillness, the sleighs began to speed along the road, one after the other.

“A hare’s track, a lot of tracks!” rang out Natasha’s voice through the frost-bound air.

“How light it is, Nicholas!” came Sonya’s voice.

Nicholas glanced round at Sonya and bent down to see her face closer. Quite a new, sweet face with black eyebrows and mustaches peeped up at him from her sable furs—so close and yet so distant—in the moonlight.

“That used to be Sonya,” thought Nicholas, and looked at her closer and smiled.

“What is it, Nicholas?”

“Nothing,” said Nicholas and turned again to the horses.

When they came out onto the beaten highroad—polished by sleigh runners and cut up by rough-shod hoofs, the marks of which were visible in the moonlight—the horses began to tug at the reins of their own accord and increased their pace. The near side horse, arching his head and breaking into a short canter, tugged at his traces. The shaft horse swayed from side to side, moving his ears as if asking: “Isn’t it time to begin now?” In front, already far ahead the deep bell of the sleigh ringing farther and farther off, the black horses driven by Zakhár could be clearly seen against the white snow. From that sleigh one could hear the shouts, laughter, and voices of the mummers.

“Gee up, my darlings!” shouted Nicholas, pulling the reins to one side and flourishing the whip.

It was only by the keener wind that met them and the jerks given by the side horses who pulled harder—ever increasing their gallop—that one

noticed how fast the sleigh was flying. Nicholas looked back. With screams, squeals, and waving of whips that caused even the shaft horses to gallop—the other sleighs followed. The shaft horse swung steadily beneath the bow over its head, with no thought of slackening pace and ready to put on speed when required.

Nicholas overtook the first sleigh. They were driving downhill and coming out upon a broad-trodden track across a meadow, near a river.

“Where are we?” thought Nicholas. “It’s the Kosóy meadow, I suppose. But no—this is something new I’ve never seen before. This isn’t the Kosóy meadow nor the Dēmkin hill, and heaven only knows what it is! It is something new and enchanted. Well, whatever it may be...” And shouting to his horses, Nicholas began to pass the first sleigh.

Zakhár held back his horses and turned his face, which was already covered with hoarfrost to his eyebrows.

Nicholas gave the horses the rein, and Zakhár, stretching out his arms, clucked his tongue and let his horses go.

“Now, look out, Nicholas!” Zakhár cried.

Faster still the two sleighs flew side by side, and faster moved the feet of the galloping side horses. Nicholas began to draw ahead. Zakhár, while still keeping his arms extended, raised one hand with the reins.

“No, you won’t, Nicholas!” Zakhár shouted.

Nicholas put all his horses to a gallop and passed Zakhár. The horses showered the fine dry snow on the faces of those in the sleigh—beside them sounded quick ringing bells and they caught confused glimpses of swiftly moving legs and the shadows of the sleigh they were passing. The whistling sound of the runners on the snow and the voices of girls shrieking were heard from different sides.

Again checking his horses, Nicholas looked around him. They were still surrounded by the magic plain bathed in moonlight and spangled with stars.

“Zakhár is shouting that I should turn to the left, but why to the left?” thought Nicholas. “Are we getting to the Melyukóvs’? Is this Melyukóvka? Heaven only knows where we are going, and heaven knows what is happening to us—but it is very strange and pleasant whatever it is.” And he looked round in the sleigh.

“Look, his mustache and eyelashes are all white!” said one of the strange, pretty, unfamiliar people—the one with fine eyebrows and mustache.

“I think this used to be Natasha,” thought Nicholas, “and that was Madame Schoss, but perhaps it’s not, and this Circassian with the mustache I don’t know, but I love her.”

“Aren’t you cold?” Nicholas asked.

They did not answer but began to laugh. The house musician Dimmler from the sleigh behind shouted something—probably something funny—but they could not make out what he said.

“Yes, yes!” some voices answered, laughing.

“But here was a fairy forest with black moving shadows, and a glitter of diamonds and a flight of marble steps and the silver roofs of fairy buildings and the shrill yells of some animals. And if this is really Melyukóvka, it is still stranger that we drove heaven knows where and have come to Melyukóvka,” thought Nicholas.

It really was Melyukóvka, and maids and footmen with merry faces came running, out to the porch carrying candles.

“Who is it?” asked someone on the porch.

“The mummers from Count Rostov’s. I know by the horses,” replied some voices.

Madame Melyukóva, a broadly built, energetic woman wearing spectacles, sat in the drawing room in a loose dress, surrounded by her daughters whom she was trying to keep from feeling dull. They were quietly dropping melted wax into the snow and looking at the shadows the

wax figures would throw on the wall when they heard the steps and voices of new arrivals in the vestibule.

Hussars, ladies, witches, clowns, and bears, after clearing their throats and wiping the hoarfrost from their faces in the vestibule, came into the ballroom where candles were hurriedly lighted. The clown—Dimmler—and the lady—Nicholas—started a dance. Surrounded by the screaming children the mummers, covering their faces and disguising their voices, bowed to their hostess and arranged themselves about the room.

“Dear me! There’s no recognizing them! And Natasha! See whom she looks like! She really reminds me of somebody. But Herr Dimmler— isn’t he good! I didn’t know him! And how he dances. Dear me, there’s a Circassian. Really, how becoming it is to dear Sonya. And who is that? Well, you have cheered us up! Nikíta and Vanya—clear away the tables! And we were sitting so quietly. Ha, ha, ha!... The hussar, the hussar! Just like a boy! And the legs!... I can’t look at him...” different voices were saying.

Natasha, the young Melyukóvs’ favorite, disappeared with them into the back rooms where a cork and various dressing gowns and male garments were called for and received from the footman by bare girlish arms from behind the door. Ten minutes later, all the young Melyukóvs joined the mummers.

The maid, having given orders to clear the rooms for the visitors and arranged refreshments for the gentry and the serfs, went about among the mummers without removing her spectacles, peering into their faces with a suppressed smile and failing to recognize any of them. It was not merely Dimmler and the Rostovs she failed to recognize, she did not even recognize her own daughters, or her late husband’s, dressing gowns and uniforms, which they had put on.

“And who is this?” the maid asked Madame Melyukóva, peering into the face of her own daughter dressed up as a Kazán-Tartar. “I suppose it is

one of the Rostovs! Well, Mr. Hussar, what regiment do you serve in?" she asked Natasha. "Here, handsome fruit jelly to the Turk!" she ordered the butler who was handing things around. "That's not forbidden by his law."

Sometimes, Madame Melyukóva looked at the strange but amusing capers cut by the dancers, who—having decided once for all that being disguised, no one would recognize them—were not at all shy, she hid her face in her handkerchief, and her whole stout body shook with irrepressible, kindly, elderly laughter.

"My little Sásha! Look at Sásha!" Madame Melyukóva said.

After Russian country dances and chorus dances, Madame Melyukóva made the serfs and gentry join in one large circle: a ring, a string, and a silver ruble were fetched and they all played games together.

In an hour, all the costumes were crumpled and disordered. The corked eyebrows and mustaches were smeared over the perspiring, flushed, and merry faces. Madame Melyukóva began to recognize the mummers, admired their cleverly contrived costumes, and particularly how they suited the young ladies, and she thanked them all for having entertained her so well. The visitors were invited to supper in the drawing room, and the serfs had something served to them in the ballroom.

"Now to tell one's fortune in the empty bathhouse is frightening!" said an old maid who lived with the Melyukóvs, during supper.

"Why?" said the eldest girl.

"You wouldn't go, it takes courage..."

"I'll go," said Sonya.

"Tell what happened to the young lady!" said the second girl.

"Well," began the old maid, "a young lady once went out, took a cock, laid the table for two, all properly, and sat down. After sitting a while, she suddenly hears someone coming... a sleigh drives up with harness bells; she hears him coming! He comes in, just in the shape of a man, like an officer—comes in and sits down at the table with her."

“Ah! ah!” screamed Natasha, rolling her eyes with horror.

“Yes? And how... did he speak?”

“Yes, like a man. Everything quite all right, and he began persuading her, and she should have kept him talking till cockcrow, but she got frightened, just got frightened, and hid her face in her hands. Then he caught her up. It was lucky the maids ran in just then...”

“Now, why frighten them?” said Madame Melyukóva.

“Mamma, you used to tell your fortune yourself...” said her daughter.

“And how does tell one’s fortune in a barn?” inquired Sonya.

“Well, say you went to the barn now and listened. It depends on what you hear; hammering and knocking—that’s bad; but a sound of shifting grain is good and one sometimes one hears that, too.”

“Mamma, tell us what happened to you in the barn.”

Madame Melyukóva smiled.

“Oh, I’ve forgotten...” Madame Melyukóva replied. “But none of you would go?”

“Yes, I will; Madame Melyukóva, let me! I’ll tell my fortune! I’ll go,” said Sonya.

“Well, why not, if you’re not afraid?”

“Madame Melyukóva, may I go, too?” asked Sonya.

All this evening, whether they were playing the ring and string game or the ruble game or talking as now, Nicholas did not leave Sonya’s side and gazed at her with quite new eyes. It seemed to him that it was only today, thanks to that burnt-cork mustache, that he had fully learned to know her. And really, that evening, Sonya was brighter, more animated, and prettier than Nicholas had ever seen her before.

“So that’s what Sonya is like; what a fool I have been!” Nicholas thought gazing at her sparkling eyes, and under the mustache, a happy rapturous smile dimpled her cheeks, a smile he had never seen before.

“I’m not afraid of anything,” said Sonya. “May I go at once?” She got up.

They told Sonya where the barn was and how she should stand and listen, and they handed her a fur cloak. She threw this over her head and shoulders and glanced at Nicholas.

“What a darling Sonya is!” thought Nicholas. “And what have I been thinking of till now?”

Sonya went out into the passage to go to the barn. Nicholas went hastily to the front porch, saying he felt too hot. The crowd of people really had made the house stuffy.

Outside, there was the same cold stillness and the same moon, but even brighter than before. The light was so strong and the snow sparkled with so many stars that one did not wish to look up at the sky and the real stars were unnoticed. The sky was black and dreary, while the earth was gay.

“I am a fool, a fool! What have I been waiting for?” thought Nicholas, and running out from the porch he went round the corner of the house and along the path that led to the back porch. He knew Sonya would pass that way. Halfway lay some snow-covered piles of firewood and across and along them a network of shadows from the bare old lime trees fell on the snow and on the path. This path led to the barn. The log walls of the barn and its snow-covered roof, which looked as if hewn out of some precious stone, sparkled in the moonlight. A tree in the garden snapped with the frost, and then all was again perfectly silent. Nicholas’s bosom seemed to inhale not air but the strength of eternal youth and gladness.

From the back porch came the sound of feet descending the steps, the bottom step upon which snow had fallen gave a ringing creak and he heard the voice of an old maidservant saying, “Straight, straight, along the path, Sonya. Only, don’t look back.”

“I am not afraid,” answered Sonya’s voice, and along the path toward Nicholas came the crunching, whistling sound of Sonya’s feet in her thin

shoes.

Sonya came along, wrapped in her cloak. She was only a couple of paces away when she saw him, and to her too he was not the Nicholas she had known and always slightly feared. Nicholas was in a woman's dress, with tousled hair and a happy smile new to Sonya. She ran rapidly toward him.

"Quite different and yet the same," thought Nicholas, looking at her face all lit up by the moonlight. Nicholas slipped his arms under the cloak that covered Sonya's head, embraced her, pressed her to him, and kissed her on the lips that wore a mustache and had a smell of burnt cork. Sonya kissed him full on the lips and disengaging her little hands pressed them to his cheeks.

"Sonya! Nicholas!" was all they said. They ran to the barn and then back again, re-entering, Nicholas by the front and Sonya by the back porch.

When they all drove back from the Melyukóva's, Natasha, who always saw and noticed everything, arranged that she and their chaperone, Madame Schoss, should go back in the sleigh with the house musician Dimmler, while Sonya with Nicholas would go in the sleigh with the maids.

On the way back Nicholas drove at a steady pace instead of racing and kept peering by that fantastic all-transforming light into Sonya's face and searching beneath the eyebrows and mustache for his former and his present Sonya from whom he had resolved never to be parted again. Nicholas looked and recognized in her both the old and the new Sonya, and being reminded by the smell of burnt cork of the sensation of her kiss, inhaled the frosty air with a full breast and, looking at the ground flying beneath him and at the sparkling sky, felt himself again in fairyland.

"Sonya, is it well with *thee*?" Nicholas asked from time to time.

"Yes!" Sonya replied. "And with *thee*?"

When halfway home Nicholas handed the reins to the coachman. He ran back for a moment to Natasha's sleigh and stood on its wing.

“Natasha!” Nicholas whispered to her in French, “do you know I have made up my mind about Sonya?”

“That’s wonderful! Have you told Sonya?” asked Natasha, suddenly beaming all over with joy.

“Oh, how strange you are with that mustache and those eyebrows!... Natasha—are you glad?”

“I am so glad, so glad! I was beginning to be vexed with you. I did not tell you, but you have been treating her badly. What a heart Sonya has, Nicholas! I am horrid sometimes, but I was ashamed to be happy while Sonya was not,” continued Natasha. “Now I am so glad! Well, run back to her.”

“No, wait a bit... Oh, how funny you look!” cried Nicholas, peering into Natasha’s face and also finding in his sister something new, unusual, and bewitchingly tender that he had not seen in her before. “Natasha, it’s magical, isn’t it?”

“Yes,” Natasha replied. “You have done splendidly.”

“Had I seen her before as she is now,” thought Nicholas, “I should long ago have asked her what to do and have done whatever she told me, and all would have been well.”

“So you are glad and I have done right?”

“Oh, quite right! I had a quarrel with Mamma some time ago about it. Mamma said Sonya was angling for you. How could she say such a thing? I nearly stormed at Mamma. I will never let anyone say anything bad of Sonya, for there is nothing but good in her.”

“Then it’s all right?” said Nicholas, again scrutinizing the expression on Natasha’s face to see if she was in earnest.

Then he jumped down and, his boots scrunching the snow ran back to his sleigh. The same happy, smiling Circassian, with mustache and beaming eyes looking up from under a sable hood, was still sitting there, and that

Circassian was Sonya, and that Sonya was certainly his future happy and loving wife.

When they reached home and told their mother how they had spent the evening at the Melyukóvs', Sonya and Natasha went to their bedroom. When they had undressed, but without washing off the cork mustaches, they sat a long time talking of their happiness. They talked of how they would live when they were married, how their husbands would be friends, and how happy they would be. On Natasha's table stood two looking glasses that the maid had prepared beforehand.

"Only when will all that be? I am afraid never... It would be too good!" said Natasha, rising and going to the looking glasses.

"Sit down, Natasha; perhaps you'll see Andrei," said Sonya.

Natasha lit the candles, one on each side of one of the looking glasses, and sat down.

"I see someone with a mustache," said Natasha, seeing her own face.

"You mustn't laugh, Natasha," said the maid.

With Sonya's help and the maid's, Natasha got the glass she held into the right position opposite the other; her face assumed a serious expression and she sat silent. She sat a long time looking at the receding line of candles reflected in the glasses and expecting (from tales she had heard) to see a coffin, or *him*, Andrei, in that last dim, indistinctly outlined square. But ready as Natasha was to take the smallest speck for the image of a man or of a coffin, she saw nothing. She began blinking rapidly and moved away from the looking glasses.

"Why is it others see things and I don't?" Natasha said. "You sit down now, Sonya. You absolutely must, tonight! Do it for me... Today I feel so frightened!"

Sonya sat down before the glasses, got the right position, and began looking.

“Now, Sonya is sure to see something,” whispered the maid; “while you do nothing but laugh.”

Sonya heard this and then Natasha whispered:

“I know she will. She saw something last year.”

For about three minutes all were silent.

“Of course, she will!” whispered Natasha, but did not finish... suddenly Sonya pushed away the glass she was holding and covered her eyes with her hand.

“Oh, Natasha!” Sonya cried.

“Did you see? Did you? What was it?” exclaimed Natasha, holding up the looking glass.

Sonya had not seen anything, she was just wanting to blink and get up when she heard Natasha say, “Of course, she will!” She did not wish to disappoint either the maid or Natasha, but it was hard to sit still. Sonya did not know how or why the exclamation escaped her when she covered her eyes.

“You saw him?” urged Natasha, seizing her hand.

“Yes. Wait a bit... I... saw him,” Sonya could not help saying, not yet knowing whom Natasha meant by *him*, Nicholas or Andrei.

“But why shouldn’t I say I saw something? Others do see! Besides who can tell whether I saw anything or not?” flashed through Sonya’s mind.

“Yes, I saw him,” Sonya said.

“How? Standing or lying?”

“No, I saw... At first, there was nothing, then I saw him lying down.”

“Andrei lying? Is he ill?” asked Natasha, her frightened eyes fixed on her friend.

“No, on the contrary, on the contrary! His face was cheerful, and he turned to me.” And when saying this she herself fancied she had really seen what she described.

“Well, and then, Sonya?...”

“After that, I could not make out what there was; something blue and red...”

“Sonya! When will he come back? When shall I see him? Oh, God, how afraid I am for him and for myself and about everything!...” Natasha began, and without replying to Sonya’s words of comfort Natasha got into bed, and long after her candle was out lay open-eyed and motionless, gazing at the moonlight through the frosty windowpanes.

Soon after the Christmas holidays, Nicholas told Countess Rostov of his love for Sonya and of his firm resolve to marry her. Countess Rostov, who had long noticed what was going on between Nicholas and Sonya and was expecting this declaration, listened to him in silence and then told Nicholas that he might marry whom he pleased, but that neither she nor his father would give their blessing to such a marriage. Nicholas, for the first time, felt that his mother was displeased with him and that, despite her love for him, she would not give way. Coldly, without looking at Nicholas, Countess Rostov sent for her husband and, when he came, tried briefly and coldly to inform him of the facts, in her son’s presence, but unable to restrain herself she burst into tears of vexation and left the room. Count Rostov began irresolutely to admonish Nicholas and beg him to abandon his purpose. Nicholas replied that he could not go back on his word, and his father, sighing and evidently disconcerted, very soon became silent and went in to Countess Rostov. In all his encounters with Nicholas, Count Rostov was always conscious of his own guilt toward Nicholas for having wasted the family fortune, so Count Rostov could not be angry with Nicholas for refusing to marry an heiress and choosing the Sonya, who had no dowry. On this occasion, Count Rostov was only more vividly conscious of the fact that if his affairs had not been in disorder, no better wife for Nicholas than Sonya could have been wished for, and that no one but himself with his Account Manager Míténka and his uncomfortable habits was to blame for the condition of the family finances.

Count and Countess Rostov did not speak of the matter to Nicholas again, but a few days later Countess Rostov sent for Sonya and, with a cruelty neither of them expected, reproached her niece for trying to catch Nicholas and for ingratitude. Sonya listened silently with downcast eyes to Countess Rostov's cruel words, without understanding what was required of her. Sonya was ready to sacrifice everything for her benefactors. Self-sacrifice was her most cherished idea but in this case, she could not see what she ought to sacrifice, or for whom. She could not help loving Countess Rostov and the whole Rostov family, but neither could she help loving Nicholas and knowing that his happiness depended on that love. Sonya was silent and sad and did not reply. Nicholas felt the situation to be intolerable and went to have an explanation with his mother. Nicholas first implored her to forgive him and Sonya and consent to their marriage, then he threatened that if she molested Sonya he would at once marry her secretly.

Countess Rostov, with a coldness Nicholas had never seen in her before, replied that he was of age, and after all, Andrei was marrying without his father's consent, and he could do the same, but that she would never receive that *intriguer* as her daughter.

Exploding at the word *intriguer*, Nicholas, raising his voice, told his mother he had never expected her to try to force him to sell his feelings, but if that were so, he would say for the last time... But he had no time to utter the decisive word that the expression on his face caused his mother to await with terror, and which would perhaps have forever remained a cruel memory to them both. He had not time to say it, for Natasha, with a pale and set face, entered the room from the door at which she had been listening.

"Nicholas, you are talking nonsense! Be quiet, be quiet, be quiet, I tell you!..." Countess Rostov almost screamed, so as to drown his voice.

“Mamma darling, it’s not at all so... my poor, sweet darling,” she said to her mother, who conscious that they had been on the brink of a rupture gazed at her son with terror, but in the obstinacy and excitement of the conflict could not and would not give way.

“Nicholas, I’ll explain to you. Go away! Listen, Mamma darling,” said Natasha.

Natasha’s words were incoherent, but they attained the purpose at which she was aiming.

Countess Rostov, sobbing heavily, hid her face on Natasha’s breast, while Nicholas rose, clutching his head, and left the room.

Natasha set to work to effect a reconciliation, and so far succeeded that Nicholas received a promise from his mother that Sonya should not be troubled, while Nicholas on his side promised not to undertake anything without his parents’ knowledge.

Firmly resolved, after putting his affairs in order in the regiment, to retire from the army and return and marry Sonya, Nicholas, serious, sorrowful, and at variance with his parents, but, as it seemed to him, passionately in love, left at the beginning of January to rejoin his regiment.

After Nicholas had gone things in the Nicholas household were more depressing than ever, and Countess Rostov fell ill from mental agitation.

Sonya was unhappy at the separation from Nicholas and still more so on account of the hostile tone Countess Rostov could not help adopting toward her. Count Rostov was more perturbed than ever by the condition of his affairs, which called for some decisive action. Their town house and estate near Moscow had inevitably to be sold, and for this, they had to go to Moscow. But Countess Rostov’s health obliged them to delay their departure from day to day.

Natasha, who had borne the first period of separation from her betrothed lightly and even cheerfully, now grew more agitated and impatient every day. The thought that her best days, which she would have employed in

loving Andrei, were being vainly wasted, with no advantage to anyone, tormented her incessantly. His letters for the most part irritated her. It hurt her to think that while she lived only in the thought of him, he was living a real life, seeing new places and new people that interested him. The more interesting his letters were the more vexed she felt. Her letters to him, far from giving her any comfort, seemed to her a wearisome and artificial obligation. She could not write, because she could not conceive the possibility of expressing sincerely in a letter even a thousandth part of what she expressed by voice, smile, and glance. She wrote to him formal, monotonous, and dry letters, to which she attached no importance herself, and in the rough copies of which Countess Rostov corrected her mistakes in spelling.

There was still no improvement in Countess Rostov's health, but it was impossible to defer the journey to Moscow any longer. Natasha's trousseau had to be ordered and the house sold. Moreover, Andrei was expected in Moscow, where Baron Bolkonski was spending the winter, and Natasha felt sure he had already arrived.

So Countess Rostov remained in the country, and Count Rostov, taking Sonya and Natasha with him, went to Moscow at the end of January.

BOOK 8: 1811 - 12



*A*fter Andrei's engagement to Natasha, Pierre without any apparent cause suddenly felt it impossible to go on living as before. Firmly convinced as he was of the truths revealed to him by his benefactor, and happy as he had been in perfecting his inner man, to which he had devoted himself with such ardor—all the zest of such a life vanished after the engagement of Andrei and Natasha and the death of the Mason Bazdéev, the news of which reached him almost at the same time. Only the skeleton of life remained: Pierre's house, a brilliant wife, Helene, who now enjoyed the favors of a very important personage, acquaintance with all St. Petersburg, and his court service with its dull formalities. And this life suddenly seemed to Pierre unexpectedly loathsome. He ceased keeping a diary, avoided the company of the Masonic Brothers, began going to the club again, drank a great deal, and came once more in touch with the bachelor sets, leading such a life that Helene thought it necessary to speak severely to him about it. Pierre felt that she was right, and to avoid compromising her, he went away to Moscow.

In Moscow as soon as Pierre entered his huge house in which the faded and fading Katerina and her sisters still lived, with its enormous retinue; as soon as, driving through the town, he saw the Iberian shrine with innumerable tapers burning before the golden covers of the icons, the

Krémlin Square with its snow undisturbed by vehicles, the sleigh drivers and hovels of the Sívtsev Vrazhók, those old Moscovites who desired nothing, hurried nowhere, and were ending their days leisurely; when he saw those old Moscow ladies, the Moscow balls, and the English Club, he felt himself at home in a quiet haven. In Moscow, he felt at peace, at home, warm and dirty as in an old dressing gown.

Moscow society, from the old women down to the children, received Pierre like a long-expected guest whose place was always readily awaiting him. For Moscow society, Pierre was the nicest, kindest, most intellectual, merriest, and most magnanimous of cranks, a heedless, genial nobleman of the old Russian type. His purse was always empty because it was open to everyone.

Benefit performances, poor pictures, statues, benevolent societies, Bohemian choirs, schools, subscription dinners, sprees, Freemasons, churches, and books—no one and nothing met with a refusal from Pierre, and had it not been for two friends who had borrowed large sums from him and taken him under their protection, he would have given everything away. There was never a dinner or soiree at the club without him. As soon as he sank into his place on the sofa after two bottles of Margaux he was surrounded, and talking, disputing, and joking began. When there were quarrels, his kindly smile and well-timed jests reconciled the antagonists. The Masonic dinners were dull and dreary when he was not there.

When after a bachelor supper he rose with his amiable and kindly smile, yielding to the entreaties of the festive company to drive off somewhere with them, shouts of delight and triumph arose among the young men. At balls, he danced if a partner was needed. Young ladies, married and unmarried, liked him because without making love to any of them, he was equally amiable to all, especially after supper. “*He is charming; he has no sex,*” they said of him.

Pierre was one of those retired gentlemen-in-waiting of whom there were hundreds good-humoredly ending their days in Moscow.

How horrified Pierre would have been seven years before, when he first arrived from abroad, had he been told that there was no need for him to seek or plan anything, that his rut had long been shaped, eternally predetermined, and that wriggle as he might, he would be what all in his position were. He could not have believed it! Had Pierre not at one time longed with all his heart to establish a republic in Russia; then himself to be a Napoleon; then to be a philosopher, and then a strategist and the conqueror of Napoleon? Had he not seen the possibility of, and passionately desired, the regeneration of the sinful human race, and his own progress to the highest degree of perfection? Had he not established schools and hospitals and liberated his serfs?

But instead of all that—here Pierre was the wealthy husband of an unfaithful wife, a retired gentleman-in-waiting, fond of eating and drinking and, as he unbuttoned his waistcoat, of abusing the government a bit, a member of the Moscow English Club, and a universal favorite in Moscow society. For a long time, he could not reconcile himself to the idea that he was one of those same retired Moscow gentlemen-in-waiting he had so despised seven years before.

Sometimes Pierre consoled himself with the thought that he was only living this life temporarily; but then he was shocked by the thought of how many, like himself, had entered that life and that club temporarily, with all their teeth and hair, and had only left it when not a single tooth or hair remained.

In moments of pride, when Pierre thought of his position it seemed to him that he was quite different and distinct from those other retired gentlemen-in-waiting he had formerly despised: they were empty, stupid, contented fellows, satisfied with their position, “while I am still discontented and want to do something for mankind. But perhaps all these

comrades of mine struggled just like me and sought something new, a path in life of their own, and like me were brought by force of circumstances, society, and race—by that elemental force against which man is powerless—to the condition I am in,” said he to himself in moments of humility; and after living some time in Moscow he no longer despised, but began to grow fond of, to respect, and to pity his comrades in destiny, as he pitied himself.

Pierre no longer suffered moments of despair, hypochondria, and disgust with life, but the malady that had formerly found expression in such acute attacks was driven inwards and never left him for a moment. “What for? Why? What is going on in the world?” he would ask himself in perplexity several times a day, involuntarily beginning to reflect anew on the meaning of the phenomena of life; but knowing by experience that there were no answers to these questions he made haste to turn away from them, and took up a book, or hurried off to the club or to Apollón Nikoláevich’s (poet, journalist, writer, translator, and memoirist), to exchange the gossip of the town.

“Helene, who has never cared for anything but her own body and is one of the stupidest women in the world,” thought Pierre, “is regarded by people as the acme of intelligence and refinement, and they pay homage to her. Napoleon was despised by all as long as he was great, but now that he has become a wretched comedian the Austrian Emperor wants to offer him his daughter in an illegal marriage. The Spaniards, through the Catholic clergy, offer praise to God for their victory over the French on the fourteenth of June, and the French, also through the Catholic clergy, offer praise because on that same fourteenth of June they defeated the Spaniards. My Brother Masons swear by the blood that they are ready to sacrifice everything for their neighbor, but they do not give a ruble each to the collections for the poor, and they intrigue, the Astraia Lodge against the Manna Seekers, and fuss about an authentic Scotch carpet and a charter that nobody needs, and the meaning of which the very man who wrote it does

not understand. We all profess the Christian law of forgiveness of injuries and love of our neighbors, the law in honor of which we have built in Moscow forty times forty churches—but yesterday a deserter was knouted to death and a minister of that same law of love and forgiveness, a priest, gave the soldier a cross to kiss before his execution.” So thought Pierre, and the whole of this general deception which everyone accepts, accustomed as he was to it, astonished him each time as if it were something new. “I understand the deception and confusion,” he thought, “but how am I to tell them all that I see? I have tried, and have always found that they too in the depths of their souls understand it as I do, and only try not to see it. So it appears that it must be so! But I—what is to become of me?” thought Pierre. He had the unfortunate capacity many men, especially Russians, have of seeing and believing in the possibility of goodness and truth, but of seeing the evil and falsehood of life too clearly to be able to take a serious part in it. Every sphere of work was connected, in his eyes, with evil and deception. Whatever he tried to be, whatever he engaged in, the evil and falsehood of it repulsed him and blocked every path of activity. Yet he had to live and find occupation. It was too dreadful to be under the burden of these insoluble problems, so he abandoned himself to any distraction in order to forget them. He frequented every kind of society, drank much, bought pictures, engaged in building, and above all—read.

Pierre read, and read everything that came to hand. On coming home, while his valets were still taking off his things, he picked up a book and began to read. From reading he passed to sleeping, from sleeping to gossip in drawing rooms of the club, from gossip to carousals and women; from carousals back to gossip, reading, and wine. Drinking became more and more a physical and also a moral necessity. Though the doctors warned him that with his corpulence, wine was dangerous for him, he drank a great deal. Pierre was only quite at ease when having poured several glasses of wine mechanically into his large mouth he felt a pleasant warmth in his body, an

amiability toward all his fellows, and a readiness to respond superficially to every idea without probing it deeply. Only after emptying a bottle or two did he feel dimly that the terribly tangled skein of life which previously had terrified him was not as dreadful as he had thought. Pierre was always conscious of some aspect of that skein, as with a buzzing in his head after dinner or supper he chatted or listened to conversation or read. But under the influence of wine, he said to himself: "It doesn't matter. I'll get it unraveled. I have a solution ready, but have no time now—I'll think it all out later on!" But the *later on* never came.

In the morning, on an empty stomach, all the old questions appeared as insoluble and terrible as ever, and Pierre hastily picked up a book, and if anyone came to see him he was glad.

Sometimes Pierre remembered how he had heard that soldiers in war when entrenched under the enemy's fire if they have nothing to do, try hard to find some occupation the more easily to bear the danger. To Pierre all men seemed like those soldiers, seeking refuge from life: some in ambition, some in cards, some in framing laws, some in women, some in toys, some in horses, some in politics, some in sport, some in wine, and some in governmental affairs. "Nothing is trivial, and nothing is important, it's all the same—only to save oneself from it as best one can," thought Pierre. "Only not to see *it*, that dreadful *it*!"

At the beginning of winter Baron Bolkonski and Marya moved to Moscow. At that time enthusiasm for the Tzar's regime had weakened and a patriotic and anti-French tendency prevailed there, and this, together with his past, his intellect, and his originality, at once made Baron Bolkonski an object of particular respect to the Moscovites and the center of the Moscow opposition to the government.

Baron Bolkonski had aged very much that year. He showed marked signs of senility by a tendency to fall asleep, forgetfulness of quite recent events, remembrance of remote ones, and the childish vanity with which he

accepted the role of head of the Moscow opposition. In spite of this the old man inspired in all his visitors alike a feeling of respectful veneration—especially on an evening when he came in to tea in his old-fashioned coat and powdered wig and, aroused by anyone, told his abrupt stories of the past or uttered yet more abrupt and scathing criticisms of the present. For them, that old-fashioned house with its gigantic mirrors, pre-Revolution furniture, powdered footmen, and the stern shrewd old man (himself a relic of the past century) with his gentle daughter, Marya, and Marya's lady companion, the pretty Lady-in-waiting Bourienne who were reverently devoted to him presented a majestic and agreeable spectacle. But the visitors did not reflect that besides the couple of hours during which they saw Baron Bolkonski, there were also twenty-two hours in the day during which the private and intimate life of the house continued.

Latterly that private life had become very trying for Marya. There in Moscow, she was deprived of her greatest pleasures—talks with the pilgrims and the solitude which refreshed her at Bald Hills—and she had none of the advantages and pleasures of city life. She did not go out into society; everyone knew that her father would not let her go anywhere without him, and his failing health prevented him from going out himself so she was not invited to dinners and evening parties. Marya had quite abandoned the hope of getting married. She saw the coldness and malevolence with which Baron Bolkonski received and dismissed the young men, possible suitors, who sometimes appeared at their house. She had no friends: during this visit to Moscow, she had been disappointed in the two who had been nearest to her. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, with whom she had never been able to be quite frank, had now become unpleasant to her, and for various reasons Marya avoided her.

Julie, with whom she had corresponded for the last five years, was in Moscow but proved to be quite alien to her when they met. Just then Julie, who by the death of her brothers had become one of the richest heiresses in

Moscow, was in the full whirl of society pleasures. She was surrounded by young men who, she fancied, had suddenly learned to appreciate her worth. Julie was at that stage in the life of a society woman when she feels that her last chance of marrying has come and that her fate must be decided now or never. On Thursdays, Marya remembered with a mournful smile that she now had no one to write to, since Julie—whose presence gave her no pleasure was here and they met every week. Like the old *emigrant* who declined to marry the lady with whom he had spent his evenings for years, she regretted Julie's presence and having no one to write to.

In Moscow, Marya had no one to talk to, no one to whom to confide her sorrow, and much sorrow fell to her lot just then. The time for Andrei's return and marriage was approaching, but his request to her to prepare his father for it had not been carried out; in fact, it seemed as if matters were quite hopeless, for, at every mention of the young Countess Rostov, Baron Bolkonski (who apart from that was usually in a bad temper) lost control of himself. Another lately added sorrow arose from the lessons she gave her six-year-old nephew, Nikolenka. To Marya's consternation, she detected in herself in relation to Nikolenka some symptoms of her father's irritability. However often she told herself that she must not get irritable when teaching her nephew, almost every time that, pointer in hand, she sat down to show him the French alphabet, she so longed to pour her own knowledge quickly and easily into Nikolenka—who was already afraid that Marya might at any moment get angry—that at his slightest inattention she trembled, became flustered and heated, raised her voice, and sometimes pulled him by the arm and put him in the corner. Having put him in the corner she would herself begin to cry over her cruel, evil nature, and Nikolenka, following her example, would sob, and without permission would leave his corner, come to her, pull her wet hands from her face, and comfort her.

But what distressed Marya most of all was her father's irritability, which was always directed against her and had of late amounted to cruelty. Had

Baron Bolkonski forced her to prostrate herself to the ground all night, had he beaten her or made her fetch wood or water, it would never have entered her mind to think her position hard; but this loving despot—the crueller because he loved her and for that reason tormented himself and her—knew how not merely to hurt and humiliate her deliberately, but to show her that she was always to blame for everything. Of late he had exhibited a new trait that tormented Marya more than anything else; this was his ever-increasing intimacy with Lady-in-waiting Bourienne. The idea that at the first moment of receiving the news of his son's intentions had occurred to him in jest—that if Baron Bolkonski got married he himself would marry Lady-in-waiting Bourienne—had evidently pleased him, and latterly he had persistently, and as it seemed to Marya merely to offend her, shown special endearments to the companion and expressed his dissatisfaction with his daughter by demonstrations of his love of Lady-in-waiting Bourienne.

One day in Moscow in Marya's presence (she thought her father did it purposely when she was there) Baron Bolkonski kissed Lady-in-waiting Bourienne's hand and, drawing her to him, embraced her affectionately. Marya flushed and ran out of the room. A few minutes later Lady-in-waiting Bourienne came into Marya's room smiling and making cheerful remarks in her agreeable voice. Marya hastily wiped away her tears, went resolutely up to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, and evidently unconscious of what she was doing began shouting in angry haste at the Frenchwoman, her voice breaking: "It's horrible, vile, inhuman, to take advantage of the weakness..." Marya did not finish. "Leave my room," she exclaimed and burst into sobs.

The next day, Baron Bolkonski did not say a word to Marya, but she noticed that at dinner he gave orders that Lady-in-waiting Bourienne should be served first. After dinner, when the footman handed coffee and from habit began with Marya, Baron Bolkonski suddenly grew furious, threw his

stick at the footman, and instantly gave instructions to have him conscripted for the army.

“The footman doesn’t obey... I said it twice... and he doesn’t obey! Lady-in-waiting Bourienne is the first person in this house; she’s my best friend,” cried Baron Bolkonski. “And if you allow yourself,” he screamed in a fury, addressing Marya for the first time, “to forget yourself again before Lady-in-waiting Bourienne as you dared to do yesterday, I will show you who is master in this house. Go! Don’t let me set eyes on you; beg Lady-in-waiting Bourienne’s pardon!”

Marya asked Lady-in-waiting Bourienne’s pardon, and also her father’s pardon for herself and for Philip the footman, who had begged for her intervention.

At such moments something like a pride of sacrifice gathered in her soul. And suddenly Baron Bolkonski whom she had judged would look for his spectacles in her presence, fumbling near them and not seeing them, or would forget something that had just occurred, or take a false step with his failing legs and turn to see if anyone had noticed his feebleness, or, worst of all, at dinner when there were no visitors to excite him would suddenly fall asleep, letting his napkin drop and his shaking head sink over his plate. “My father is old and feeble, and I dare to condemn him!” Marya thought at such moments, with a feeling of revulsion against herself.

In 1811 there was living in Moscow a French doctor—Dr. Métivier—who had rapidly become the fashion. He was enormously tall, handsome, amiable as Frenchmen are, and was, as all Moscow said, an extraordinarily clever doctor. Dr. Métivier was received in the best houses not merely as a doctor, but as an equal.

Baron Bolkonski had always ridiculed medicine, but recently on Lady-in-waiting Bourienne’s advice had allowed this doctor to visit him and had grown accustomed to him. Dr. Métivier came to see the Baron about twice a week.

On December 6—St. Nicholas' Day and Baron Bolkonski's name day—all Moscow came to the Baron's front door but he gave orders to admit no one and to invite to dinner only a small number, a list of whom he gave to Marya.

Dr. Métivier, who came in the morning with his felicitations, considered it proper as a doctor *to force the guard*, as he told Marya and went in to see Baron Bolkonski. It happened that on that morning of his name day the Baron was in one of his worst moods. Baron Bolkonski had been going about the house all morning finding fault with everyone and pretending not to understand what was said to him and not to be understood himself. Marya well knew this mood of quietly absorbed querulousness, which generally culminated in a burst of rage, and she went about all that morning as though facing a cocked and loaded gun and awaited the inevitable explosion. Until the doctor's arrival, the morning had passed off safely. After admitting the doctor, Marya sat down with a book in the drawing room near the door through which she could hear all that passed in the study.

At first, she heard only Dr. Métivier's voice, then Baron Bolkonski's, then both voices began speaking at the same time, the door was flung open, and on the threshold appeared the handsome figure of the terrified Dr. Métivier with his shock of black hair, and Baron Bolkonski in his dressing gown and fez, his face distorted with fury and the pupils of his eyes rolled downwards.

"You don't understand?" shouted Baron Bolkonski, "but I do! French spy, slave of Napoleon, spy, get out of my house! Be off, I tell you..." and he slammed the door.

Dr. Métivier, shrugging his shoulders, went up to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne who at the sound of shouting had run in from an adjoining room.

"Baron Bolkonski is not very well: bile and rush of blood to the head. Keep calm, I will call again tomorrow," said Dr. Métivier; and putting his

fingers to his lips he hastened away.

Through the study door came the sound of slippers and the cry: "Spies, traitors, traitors everywhere! Not a moment's peace in my own house!"

After Dr. Métivier's departure Baron Bolkonski called Marya in, and the whole weight of his wrath fell on her. Marya was to blame that a spy had been admitted. Had he not told her, yes, told her to make a list, and not to admit anyone who was not on that list? Then why was that scoundrel admitted? She was the cause of it all. With her, he said, he could not have a moment's peace and could not die quietly.

"No, ma'am! We must part, we must part! Understand that, understand it! I cannot endure anymore," Baron Bolkonski said, and left the room. Then, as if afraid Marya might find some means of consolation, he returned and trying to appear calm added: "And don't imagine I have said this in a moment of anger. I am calm. I have thought it over, and it will be carried out—we must part; so find some place for yourself..." But he could not restrain himself and with the virulence of which only one who loves is capable, evidently suffering himself, he shook his fists at her and screamed:

"If only some fool would marry Marya!" Then Baron Bolkonski slammed the door, sent for Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, and subsided into his study.

At two o'clock the six chosen guests assembled for dinner.

These guests—the famous Mayor Rostopchin, Baron Lopukhin with his nephew, General Chatróv an old war comrade of the Baron's, and of the younger generation Pierre and Boris—awaited Baron Bolkonski in the drawing room.

Boris, who had come to Moscow on leave a few days before, had been anxious to be presented to Baron Bolkonski and had contrived to ingratiate himself so well that Baron Bolkonski made an exception to the rule of not receiving bachelors in his house.

Baron Bolkonski's house did not belong to what is known as *fashionable society*, but his little circle—though not much talked about in town—was one it was more flattering to be received in than any other. Boris had realized this the week before when Marshal Kutuzov in his presence invited Mayor Rostopchin to dinner on St. Nicholas' Day, and Mayor Rostopchin had replied that he could not come:

“On that day I always go to pay my devotions to the relics of Baron Bolkonski.”

“Oh, yes, yes!” replied Marshal Kutuzov. “How is he?...”

The small group that assembled before dinner in the lofty old-fashioned drawing room with its old furniture resembled the solemn gathering of a court of justice. All were silent or talked in low tones. Baron Bolkonski came in serious and taciturn. Marya seemed even quieter and more diffident than usual. The guests were reluctant to address her, feeling that she was in no mood for their conversation. Mayor Rostopchin alone kept the conversation going, now relating the latest town news, and now the latest political gossip.

Lopukhin and the old general occasionally took part in the conversation. Baron Bolkonski listened as a presiding judge receives a report, only now and then, silently or by a brief word, showing that he took heed of what was being reported to him. The tone of the conversation was such as indicated that no one approved of what was being done in the political world. Incidents were related evidently confirming the opinion that everything was going from bad to worse, but whether telling a story or giving an opinion the speaker always stopped or was stopped at the point beyond which his criticism might touch the sovereign himself.

At dinner, the talk turned on the latest political news: Napoleon's seizure of the Duke of Oldenburg's territory, and the Russian Note, hostile to Napoleon, which had been sent to all the European courts.

“Napoleon treats Europe as a pirate does a captured vessel,” said Mayor Rostopchin, repeating a phrase he had uttered several times before. “One only wonders at the long-suffering or blindness of the crowned heads. Now the Pope’s turn has come and Napoleon doesn’t scruple to depose the head of the Catholic Church—yet all keep silent! The Tzar alone has protested against the seizure of the Duke of Oldenburg’s territory, and even...” Mayor Rostopchin paused, feeling that he had reached the limit beyond which censure was impossible.

“Other territories have been offered in exchange for the Duchy of Oldenburg,” said Baron Bolkonski. “He shifts the Dukes about as I might move my serfs from Bald Hills to Boguchárovo or my Ryazán estates.”

“The Duke of Oldenburg bears his misfortunes with admirable strength of character and resignation,” remarked Boris, joining in respectfully.

Boris said this because on his journey from St. Petersburg he had had the honor of being presented to the Duke. Baron Bolkonski glanced at Boris as if about to say something in reply, but changed his mind, evidently considering him too young.

“I have read our protests about the Oldenburg affair and was surprised how badly the Note was worded,” remarked Mayor Rostopchin in the casual tone of a man dealing with a subject quite familiar to him.

Pierre looked at Mayor Rostopchin with naive astonishment, not understanding why he should be disturbed by the bad composition of the Note.

“Does it matter, Mayor Rostopchin, how the Note is worded,” Pierre asked, “so long as its substance is forcible?”

“My dear Pierre, with our five hundred thousand troops it should be easy to have a good style,” returned Mayor Rostopchin.

Pierre now understood Mayor Rostopchin’s dissatisfaction with the wording of the Note.

“One would have thought quill drivers enough had sprung up,” remarked Baron Bolkonski. “There in St. Petersburg they are always writing—not notes only but even new laws. My Andrei there has written a whole volume of laws for Russia. Nowadays they are always writing!” and he laughed unnaturally.

There was a momentary pause in the conversation; the old general cleared his throat to draw attention.

“Did you hear of the last event at the review in St. Petersburg? The figure cut by the new French ambassador.”

“Eh? Yes, I heard something: he said something awkward in the Tzar’s presence.”

“The Tzar drew attention to the Grenadier division and to the march past,” continued the general, “and it seems the ambassador took no notice and allowed himself to reply that: ‘We in France pay no attention to such trifles!’ The Tzar did not condescend to reply. At the next review, they say, the Tzar did not once deign to address him.”

All were silent. On this fact relating to the Tzar personally, it was impossible to pass any judgment.

“Impudent fellows!” said Baron Bolkonski. “You know Dr. Métivier? I turned him out of my house this morning. He was here; they admitted him in spite of my request that they should let no one in,” he went on, glancing angrily at Marya.

And Baron Bolkonski narrated his whole conversation with the French doctor and the reasons that convinced him that Dr. Métivier was a spy. Though these reasons were very insufficient and obscure, no one made any rejoinder.

After the roast, champagne was served. The guests rose to congratulate Baron Bolkonski. Marya, too, went round to him.

Baron Bolkonski gave Marya a cold, angry look and offered her his wrinkled, clean-shaven cheek to kiss. The whole expression on his face told

her that he had not forgotten the morning's talk, that his decision remained in force, and only the presence of visitors hindered his speaking of it to her now.

When they went into the drawing room where coffee was served, the old men sat together.

Baron Nicholas grew more animated and expressed his views on the impending war.

Baron Bolkonski said that our wars with Napoleon would be disastrous so long as we sought alliances with the Germans and thrust ourselves into European affairs, into which we had been drawn by the Peace of Tilsit. "We ought not to fight either for or against Austria. Our political interests are all in the East, and in regard to Napoleon the only thing is to have an armed frontier and a firm policy, and he will never dare to cross the Russian frontier, as was the case in 1807!"

"How can we fight the French, Baron Bolkonski?" said Mayor Rostopchin. "Can we arm ourselves against our teachers and divinities? Look at our youths, look at our ladies! The French are our Gods: Paris is our Kingdom of Heaven."

Mayor Rostopchin began speaking louder, evidently to be heard by everyone.

"French dresses, French ideas, French feelings! There now, you turned Dr. Métivier out by the scruff of his neck because he is a Frenchman and a scoundrel, but our ladies crawl after him on their knees. I went to a party last night, and there out of five ladies, three were Roman Catholics and had the Pope's indulgence for knitting on Sundays. And they themselves sit there nearly naked, like the signboards at our Public Baths if I may say so. Ah, when one looks at our young people, Baron Bolkonski, one would like to take Peter the Great's old cudgel out of the museum and belabor them in the Russian way till all the nonsense jumps out of them."

All were silent. Baron Bolkonski looked at Mayor Rostopchin with a smile and wagged his head approvingly.

“Well, goodbye, Baron Bolkonski, keep well!” said Mayor Rostopchin, getting up with characteristic briskness and holding out his hand to Baron Bolkonski.

“Good-by, my dear Mayor Rostopchin... His words are music, I never tire of hearing him!” said Baron Bolkonski, keeping hold of the hand and offering his cheek to be kissed.

Following Mayor Rostopchin’s example, the others also rose.

Marya as she sat listening to the old men’s talk and faultfinding, understood nothing of what she heard; she only wondered whether the guests had all observed her father’s hostile attitude toward her. She did not even notice the special attention and amiabilities shown her during dinner by Boris, who was visiting them for the third time already.

Marya turned with absent-minded questioning look to Pierre, who hat in hand and with a smile on his face was the last of the guests to approach her after Baron Bolkonski had gone out and they were left alone in the drawing room.

“May I stay a little longer?” Pierre said, letting his stout body sink into an armchair beside her.

“Oh yes,” Marya answered. “You noticed nothing?” her look asked.

Pierre was in an agreeable after-dinner mood. He looked straight before him and smiled quietly.

“Have you known that young man long, Marya?” he asked.

“Who?”

“Boris.”

“No, not long...”

“Do you like him?”

“Yes, Boris is an agreeable young man... Why do you ask me that?” said Marya, still thinking of that morning’s conversation with her father.

“Because I have noticed that when a young man comes on leave from St. Petersburg to Moscow it is usually with the object of marrying an heiress.”

“You have observed that?” said Marya.

“Yes,” returned Pierre with a smile, “and this Boris now manages matters so that where there is a wealthy heiress there he is too. I can read him like a book. At present, he is hesitating as to whom he should lay siege—you or Julie. Boris is very attentive to Julie.”

“Boris visits Julie?”

“Yes, very often. And do you know the new way of courting?” said Pierre with an amused smile, evidently in that cheerful mood of good-humored raillery for which he so often reproached himself in his diary.

“No,” replied Marya.

“To please Moscow girls nowadays one has to be melancholy. Boris is very melancholy with Julie,” said Pierre.

“Really?” asked Marya, looking into Pierre’s kind face and still thinking of her own sorrow. “It would be a relief,” thought Marya, “if I ventured to confide what I am feeling to someone. I should like to tell everything to Pierre. He is kind and generous. It would be a relief. He would give me advice.”

“Would you marry Boris?”

“Oh, my God, Pierre, there are moments when I would marry anybody!” she cried suddenly to her own surprise and with tears in her voice. “Ah, how bitter it is to love someone near to you and to feel that...” Marya went on in a trembling voice, “that you can do nothing for him but grieve him, and to know that you cannot alter this. Then there is only one thing left—to go away, but where could I go?”

“What is wrong? What is it, Marya?”

But without finishing what she was saying, Marya burst into tears.

“I don’t know what is the matter with me today. Don’t take any notice—forget what I have said!”

Pierre’s gaiety vanished completely. He anxiously questioned Marya, asked her to speak out fully and confide her grief to him; but she only repeated that she begged him to forget what she had said, that she did not remember what she had said, and that she had no trouble except the one he knew of—that Andrei’s marriage threatened to cause a rupture between Baron Bolkonski and Andrei.

“Have you any news of the Rostovs?” Marya asked, to change the subject. “I was told they are coming soon. I am also expecting Andrei any day. I should like them to meet here.”

“And how does he now regard the matter?” asked Pierre, referring to Baron Bolkonski.

Marya shook her head.

“What is to be done? In a few months, the year will be up. The thing is impossible. I only wish I could spare Andrei the first moments. I wish they would come sooner. I hope to be friends with Natasha. You have known them a long time,” said Marya. “Tell me honestly the whole truth: what sort of girl is Natasha, and what do you think of her?—The real truth, because you know Andrei is risking so much doing this against his father’s will that I should like to know...”

An undefined instinct told Pierre that these explanations, and repeated requests to be told the *whole truth*, expressed ill will on Marya’s part toward her future sister-in-law and a wish that Pierre should disapprove of Andrei’s choice; but in reply, he said what he felt rather than what he thought.

“I don’t know how to answer your question,” Pierre said, blushing without knowing why. “I really don’t know what sort of girl Natasha is; I can’t analyze her at all. She is enchanting, but what makes her so I don’t know. That is all one can say about her.”

Marya sighed, and the expression on her face said: "Yes, that's what I expected and feared."

"Is Natasha clever?" Marya asked.

Pierre considered.

"I think not," he said, "and yet—yes. She does not deign to be clever... Oh no, she is simply enchanting, and that is all."

Marya again shook her head disapprovingly.

"Ah, I so long to like her! Tell Natasha so if you see her before I do."

"I hear they are expected very soon," said Pierre.

Marya told Pierre of her plan to become intimate with her future sister-in-law as soon as the Rostovs arrived and to try to accustom Baron Bolkonski to her.

Boris had not succeeded in making a wealthy match in St. Petersburg, so with the same object in view, he came to Moscow. There he wavered between the two richest heiresses, Julie and Marya. Though Marya despite her plainness seemed to him more attractive than Julie, he, without knowing why, felt awkward about paying court to her. When they had last met on Baron Bolkonski's name day, Marya had answered at random all his attempts to talk sentimentally, evidently not listening to what he was saying.

Julie, on the contrary, accepted his attentions readily, though in a manner peculiar to herself.

Julie was twenty-seven. After the death of her brothers, she had become very wealthy. Julie was by now decidedly plain, but thought herself not merely as good-looking as before but even far more attractive. She was confirmed in this delusion by the fact that she had become a very wealthy heiress and also by the fact that the older she grew the less dangerous she became to men, and the more freely they could associate with her and avail themselves of her suppers, soirees, and the animated company that assembled at her house, without incurring any obligation. A man who would have been afraid ten years before of going every day to the house

when there was a girl of seventeen there, for fear of compromising her and committing himself, would now go boldly every day and treat her not as a marriageable girl but as a sexless acquaintance.

That winter Julie's family's house was the most agreeable and hospitable in Moscow. In addition to the formal evening and dinner parties, a large company, chiefly of men, gathered there every day, supping at midnight and staying till three in the morning. Julie never missed a ball, a promenade, or a play. Her dresses were always of the latest fashion. But in spite of that, she seemed to be disillusioned about everything and told everyone that she did not believe either in friendship or in love, or any of the joys of life, and expected peace only "yonder." Julie adopted the tone of one who has suffered a great disappointment, like a girl who has either lost the man she loved or been cruelly deceived by him. Though nothing of the kind had happened to her she was regarded in that light and had even herself come to believe that she had suffered much in life. This melancholy, which did not prevent her from amusing herself, did not hinder the young people who came to her house from passing the time pleasantly. Every visitor who came to the house paid his tribute to the melancholy mood of the hostess and then amused himself with society gossip, dancing, intellectual games, and *rhymed ends*, which were in vogue. Only a few of these young men, among them Boris, entered more deeply into Julie's melancholy, and with these, she had prolonged conversations in private on the vanity of all worldly things, and to them, she showed her albums filled with mournful sketches, maxims, and verses.

To Boris, Julie was particularly gracious: she regretted his early disillusionment with life, offered him such consolation of friendship as she who had herself suffered so much could render, and showed him her album. Boris sketched two trees in the album and wrote: "Rustic trees, your dark branches shed gloom and melancholy upon me."

On another page, he drew a tomb and wrote:

*Poisonous nourishment of a too-sensitive soul,
Thou, without whom happiness would for me be impossible,
Tender melancholy, ah, come to console me,
Come to calm the torments of my gloomy retreat,
And mingle a secret sweetness
With these tears that I feel to be flowing.*

Julie said this was charming

“There is something so enchanting in the smile of melancholy,” Julie said to Boris, repeating word for word a passage she had copied from a book. “It is a ray of light in the darkness, a shade between sadness and despair, showing the possibility of consolation.”

In reply Boris wrote these lines:

For Boris, Julie played the most doleful nocturnes on her harp. Boris read *Poor Liza* aloud to her, and more than once interrupted the reading because of the emotions that choked him. Meeting at large gatherings Julie and Boris looked at one another as the only souls who understood one another in a world of indifferent people.

Widow Drubetskoy, who often visited Julie’s family, while playing cards with the mother made careful inquiries as to Julie’s dowry (she was to have two estates in Pénza and the Nizhegórod forests). Widow Drubetskoy regarded the refined sadness that united Boris to the wealthy Julie with emotion, and resignation to the Divine will.

“You are always charming and melancholy, my dear Julie,” Widow Drubetskoy said to the daughter. “Boris says his soul finds repose at your house. He has suffered so many disappointments and is so sensitive,” said she to the mother. “Ah, my dear, I can’t tell you how fond I have grown of Julie latterly,” she said to Boris. “But who could help loving her? She is an angelic being! Ah, Boris, Boris!”—she paused. “And how I pity her mother,” she went on; “today she showed me her accounts and letters from

Pénza (they have enormous estates there), and she, poor thing, has no one to help her, and they do cheat her so!”

Boris smiled almost imperceptibly while listening to his mother. Boris laughed blandly at her naive diplomacy but listened to what she had to say, and sometimes questioned her carefully about the Pénza and Nizhegórod estates.

Julie had long been expecting a proposal from her melancholy adorer, Boris, and was ready to accept it; but some secret feeling of repulsion for her, for her passionate desire to get married, for her artificiality, and a feeling of horror at renouncing the possibility of real love still restrained Boris. His leave was expiring. He spent every day and whole days with Julie's family, and every day on thinking the matter over told himself that he would propose tomorrow. But in Julie's presence, looking at her red face and chin (nearly always powdered), her moist eyes, and her expression of continual readiness to pass at once from melancholy to an unnatural rapture of married bliss, Boris could not utter the decisive words, though in imagination he had long regarded himself as the possessor of those Pénza and Nizhegórod estates and had apportioned the use of the income from them. Julie saw Boris' indecision, and sometimes the thought occurred to her that she was repulsive to him, but her feminine self-deception immediately supplied her with consolation, and she told herself that he was only shy from love. Her melancholy, however, began to turn to irritability, and not long before Boris' departure, she formed a definite plan of action. Just as Boris' leave of absence was expiring, Anatole made his appearance in Moscow, and of course in the family drawing room, and Julie, suddenly abandoning her melancholy, became cheerful and very attentive to Anatole.

“My dear,” said Widow Drubetskoy to Boris, “I know from a reliable source that Baron Vasili has sent his son, Anatole, to Moscow to get him married to Julie. I am so fond of Julie that I should be sorry for her. What do you think of it, my dear Boris?”

The idea of being made a fool of and of having thrown away that whole month of arduous melancholy service to Julie, and of seeing all the revenue from the Pénza estates which Boris had already mentally apportioned and put to proper use fall into the hands of another, and especially into the hands of that idiot Anatole, pained Boris. He drove to Julie's home with the firm intention of proposing. Julie met him in a gay, careless manner, spoke casually of how she had enjoyed yesterday's ball, and asked when he was leaving. Though Boris had come intentionally to speak of his love and therefore meant to be tender, he began speaking irritably of feminine inconstancy, of how easily women can turn from sadness to joy, and how their moods depend solely on who happens to be paying court to them. Julie was offended and replied that it was true that a woman needs variety, and the same thing over and over again would weary anyone.

"Then I should advise you..." Boris began, wishing to sting Julie; but at that instant, the galling thought occurred to him that he might have to leave Moscow without having accomplished his aim, and have vainly wasted his efforts—which was a thing he never allowed to happen.

Boris checked himself in the middle of the sentence, lowered his eyes to avoid seeing her unpleasantly irritated and irresolute face, and said:

"I did not come here at all to quarrel with you. On the contrary..."

He glanced at Julie to make sure that he might go on. Her irritability had suddenly quite vanished, and her anxious, imploring eyes were fixed on him with greedy expectation. "I can always arrange so as not to see her often," thought Boris. "The affair has been begun and must be finished!" Boris blushed hotly, raised his eyes to hers, and said:

"You know my feelings for you!"

There was no need to say more: Julie's face shone with triumph and self-satisfaction; but she forced Boris to say all that is said on such occasions—that he loved her and had never loved any other woman more

than her. Julie knew that for the Pénza estates and Nizhegórod forests she could demand this, and she received what she demanded.

The affianced couple, Boris and Julie, no longer alluding to trees that shed gloom and melancholy upon them, planned the arrangements of a splendid house in St. Petersburg, paid calls, and prepared everything for a brilliant wedding.

At the end of January, Nicholas went to Moscow with Natasha and Sonya. Countess Rostov was still unwell and unable to travel but it was impossible to wait for her recovery. Andrei was expected in Moscow any day, Natasha's trousseau had to be ordered and the estate near Moscow had to be sold, besides which the opportunity of presenting Baron Bolkonski to his future daughter-in-law, Natasha, while he was in Moscow could not be missed. The Rostovs' Moscow house had not been heated that winter and, as they had come only for a short time and Countess Rostov was not with them, Count Rostov decided to stay with Mary Dmitrievna, who had long been pressing her hospitality on them.

Late one evening the Rostovs' four sleighs drove into Mary Dmitrievna's courtyard in the old Konyúsheny Street. Mary Dmitrievna lived alone. She had already married off her daughter, and her sons were all in the service.

Mary Dmitrievna held herself as erect, told everyone her opinion as candidly, loudly, and bluntly as ever, and her whole bearing seemed a reproach to others for any weakness, passion, or temptation—the possibility of which she did not admit. From early in the morning, wearing a dressing jacket, she attended to her household affairs, and then she drove out: on holy days to church and after the service to jails and prisons on affairs of which she never spoke to anyone. On ordinary days, after dressing, she received petitioners of various classes, of whom there were always some. Then she had dinner, a substantial and appetizing meal at which there were always three or four guests; after dinner, she played a game of boston, and

at night she had the newspapers or a new book read to her while she knitted. She rarely made an exception and went out to pay visits, and then only to the most important persons in the town.

Mary Dmitrievna had not yet gone to bed when the Rostovs arrived and the pulley of the hall door squeaked from the cold as it let in the Rostovs and their servants. Mary Dmitrievna, with her spectacles hanging down on her nose and her head flung back, stood in the hall doorway looking with a stern, grim face at the new arrivals. One might have thought she was angry with the travelers and would immediately turn them out, had she not at the same time been giving careful instructions to the servants for the accommodation of the visitors and their belongings.

“Count Rostov’s things? Bring them here,” Mary Dmitrievna said, pointing to the portmanteaus and not greeting anyone. “The young ladies’ things? There to the left. Now what are you dawdling for?” she cried to the maids. “Get the samovar ready!... You’ve grown plumper and prettier,” she remarked, drawing Natasha (whose cheeks were glowing from the cold) to her by the hood. “Foo! You *are* cold! Now take off your things, quick!” she shouted to Count Rostov who was going to kiss her hand. “You’re half frozen, I’m sure! Bring some rum for tea!... *Bonjour*, Sonya dear!” Mary Dmitrievna added, turning to Sonya and indicating by this French greeting her slightly contemptuous though affectionate attitude toward her.

When they came in to tea, having taken off their outdoor things and tidied themselves up after their journey, Mary Dmitrievna kissed them all in due order.

“I’m heartily glad you have come and are staying with me. It was high time,” Mary Dmitrievna said, giving Natasha a significant look. “Baron Bolkonski is here and Andrei is expected any day. You’ll have to make his acquaintance. But we’ll speak of that later on,” she added, glancing at Sonya with a look that showed she did not want to speak of it in her presence. “Now listen,” Mary Dmitrievna said to Count Rostov. “What do

you want tomorrow? Whom will you send for? Cousin Sinchin?" Mary Dmitrievna crooked one of her fingers. "The sniveling Widow Drubetskoy? That's two. She's here with her son Boris. Boris is getting married! Then Pierre, eh? He is here too, with his wife Helene. Pierre ran away from Helene and she came galloping after him. Pierre dined with me on Wednesday. As for them"—and she pointed to Natasha and Sonya—"tomorrow I'll take them first to the Iberian shrine of the Mother of God, and then we'll drive to the Super-Rogue's. I suppose you'll have everything new. Don't judge me: sleeves nowadays are this size! The other day one of Baron Vasili's young daughters came to see me; she was an awful sight—looked as if she had put two barrels on her arms. You know not a day passes now without some new fashion... And what have you to do yourself?" she asked Count Rostov sternly.

"One thing has come on top of another: her rags to buy, and now a purchaser has turned up for the Moscow estate and for the house. If you will be so kind, I'll fix a time and go down to the estate just for a day, and leave my lassies with you."

"All right. All right. They'll be safe with me, as safe as in Chancery! I'll take them where they must go, scold them a bit, and pet them a bit," said Mary Dmitrievna, touching her goddaughter and favorite, Natasha, on the cheek with her large hand.

The next morning Mary Dmitrievna took Natasha and Sonya to the Iberian shrine of the Mother of God and to the dressmaker Madame Suppert-Roguet, who was so afraid of Mary Dmitrievna that she always let her have dresses at a loss merely to get rid of her. Mary Dmitrievna ordered almost the whole trousseau. When they got home she turned everybody out of the room except Natasha and then called her pet to her armchair.

"Well, Natasha, now we'll talk. I congratulate you on your betrothed, Andrei. You've hooked a fine fellow! I am glad for your sake and I've known him since he was so high." She held her hand a couple of feet from

the ground. Natasha blushed happily. "I like him and all his family. Now listen! You know that old Baron Nicholas much dislikes Andrei's marrying. The old fellow's crotchety! Of course, Andrei is not a child and can shift without him, but it's not nice to enter a family against a father's will. One wants to do it peacefully and lovingly. You're a clever girl and you'll know how to manage. Be kind, and use your wits. Then all will be well."

Natasha remained silent, from shyness Mary Dmitrievna supposed, but really because she disliked anyone interfering in what touched her love of Andrei, which seemed to her so apart from all human affairs that no one could understand it. Natasha loved and knew Andrei, he loved her only and was to come one of these days and take her. She wanted nothing more.

"You see I have known him a long time and am also fond of Marya, your future sister-in-law. 'Husbands' sisters bring up blisters,' but this one wouldn't hurt a fly. Marya has asked me to bring you two together. Tomorrow you'll go with Count Rostov to see her. Be very nice and affectionate to Marya: you're younger than she. When *he* comes, he'll find you already know his sister and father and are liked by them. Am I right or not? Won't that be best?"

"Yes, it will," Natasha answered reluctantly.

The next day, by Mary Dmitrievna's advice, Count Rostov took Natasha to call on Baron Bolkonski. Count Rostov did not set out cheerfully on this visit, at heart he felt afraid. Count Rostov well remembered the last meeting he had had with Baron Bolkonski at the time of the enrollment when in reply to an invitation to dinner he had had to listen to an angry reprimand for not having provided his full quota of men. Natasha, on the other hand, having put on her best gown, was in the highest spirits. "They can't help liking me," Natasha thought. "Everybody always has liked me, and I am so willing to do anything they wish, so ready to be fond of him—for being *his* father—and of her—for being *his* sister—that there is no reason for them not to like me..."

They drove up to the gloomy old house on the Vozdvízhenka and entered the vestibule.

“Well, the Lord have mercy on us!” said Count Rostov, half in jest, half in earnest; but Natasha noticed that her father was flurried on entering the anteroom and inquired timidly and softly whether Baron Bolkonski and Marya were at home.

When they had been announced a perturbation was noticeable among the servants. The footman who had gone to announce them was stopped by another in the large hall and they whispered to one another. Then a maidservant ran into the hall and hurriedly said something, mentioning Marya. At last, an old, cross-looking footman came and announced to the Rostovs that Baron Bolkonski was not receiving, but that Marya begged them to walk up. The first person who came to meet the visitors was Lady-in-waiting Bourienne. She greeted Count Rostov and Natasha with special politeness and showed them to Marya’s room. Marya, looking excited and nervous, her face flushed in patches, ran in to meet the visitors, treading heavily, and vainly trying to appear cordial and at ease. From Marya’s first glance at Natasha, Marya did not like her. Marya thought Natasha was too fashionably dressed, frivolously gay, and vain. She did not at all realize that before having seen her future sister-in-law she was prejudiced against her by involuntary envy of her beauty, youth, and happiness, as well as by jealousy of her brother’s love for her. Apart from this insuperable antipathy to her, Marya was agitated just then because on the Rostovs’ being announced, Baron Bolkonski had shouted that he did not wish to see them, that Marya might do so if she chose, but they were not to be admitted to him. She had decided to receive them but feared lest the Baron might at any moment indulge in some fit of anger, as he seemed much upset by the Rostovs’ visit.

“There, my dear Marya, I’ve brought you my songstress,” said Count Rostov, bowing and looking round uneasily as if afraid Baron Bolkonski

might appear. "I am so glad you should get to know one another... very sorry that Baron Bolkonski is still ailing," and after a few more commonplace remarks Count Rostov rose. "If you'll allow me to leave my Natasha in your hands for a quarter of an hour, Marya, I'll drive round to see Anna Semënovna, it's quite near in the Dogs' Square, and then I'll come back for her."

Count Rostov had devised this diplomatic ruse (as he afterward told Natasha) to give the future sisters-in-law an opportunity to talk to one another freely, but another motive was to avoid the danger of encountering Baron Bolkonski, of whom he was afraid. Count Rostov did not mention this to his daughter, but Natasha noticed her father's nervousness and anxiety and felt mortified by it. She blushed for him, grew still angrier at having blushed, and looked at Marya with a bold and defiant expression that said that she was not afraid of anybody. Marya told Count Rostov that she would be delighted, and only begged him to stay longer at Anna Semënovna's, and he departed.

Despite the uneasy glances thrown at her by Marya—who wished to have a tête-à-tête with Natasha—Lady-in-waiting Bourienne remained in the room and persistently talked about Moscow amusements and theaters. Natasha felt offended by the hesitation she had noticed in the anteroom, by her father's nervousness, and by the unnatural manner of Marya who—she thought—was making a favor of receiving her, and so everything displeased her. Natasha did not like Marya, whom she thought very plain, affected, and dry. Natasha suddenly shrank into herself and involuntarily assumed an offhand air that alienated Marya still more. After five minutes of irksome, constrained conversation, they heard the sound of slippers rapidly approaching. Marya looked frightened.

The door opened and Baron Bolkonski, in a dressing gown and a white nightcap, came in.

“Ah, madam!” Baron Bolkonski began. “Madam, Natasha, if I am not mistaken... I beg you to excuse me, to excuse me... I did not know, madam. God is my witness, I did not know you had honored us with a visit, and I came in such a costume only to see my daughter. I beg you to excuse me... God is my witness, I didn’t know—” he repeated, stressing the word “God” so unnaturally and so unpleasantly that Marya stood with downcast eyes not daring to look either at her father or at Natasha.

Nor did Natasha, having risen and curtsied, know what to do. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne alone smiled agreeably.

“I beg you to excuse me, excuse me! God is my witness, I did not know,” muttered the old man, and after looking Natasha over from head to foot he went out.

Lady-in-waiting Bourienne was the first to recover herself after this apparition and began speaking about the Baron’s indisposition. Natasha and Marya looked at one another in silence, and the longer they did so without saying what they wanted to say, the greater grew their antipathy toward one another.

When Count Rostov returned, Natasha was impolitely pleased and hastened to get away: at that moment she hated the stiff, elderly Marya, who could place her in such an embarrassing position and had spent half an hour with her without once mentioning Andrei. “I couldn’t begin talking about him in the presence of that Frenchwoman,” thought Natasha. The same thought was meanwhile tormenting Marya. She knew what she ought to have said to Natasha, but she had been unable to say it because Lady-in-waiting Bourienne was in the way, and because, without knowing why, she felt it very difficult to speak of the marriage. When Count Rostov was already leaving the room, Marya went up hurriedly to Natasha, took her by the hand, and said with a deep sigh:

“Wait, I must...”

Natasha glanced at her ironically without knowing why.

“Dear Natasha,” said Marya, “I want you to know that I am glad that Andrei has found happiness...”

Marya paused, feeling that she was not telling the truth. Natasha noticed this and guessed its reason.

“I think, Marya, it is not convenient to speak of that now,” Natasha said with external dignity and coldness, though she felt the tears choking her.

“What have I said and what have I done?” thought Natasha, as soon as she was out of the room.

The Rostovs waited a long time for Natasha to come to dinner that day. She sat in her room crying like a child, blowing her nose and sobbing. Sonya stood beside her, kissing her hair.

“Natasha, what is it about?” Sonya asked. “What do they matter to you? It will all pass, Natasha.”

“But if you only knew how offensive it was... as if I...”

“Don’t talk about it, Natasha. It wasn’t your fault so why should you mind? Kiss me,” said Sonya.

Natasha raised her head and, kissing Sonya on the lips, pressed her wet face against her.

“I can’t tell you, I don’t know. No one’s to blame,” said Natasha—“It’s my fault. But it all hurts terribly. Oh, why doesn’t Andrei come?...”

Natasha came in to dinner with red eyes. Mary Dmitrievna, who knew how Baron Bolkonski had received the Rostovs, pretended not to notice how upset Natasha was and jested resolutely and loudly at the table with Count Rostov and the other guests.

That evening the Rostovs went to the Opera, for which Mary Dmitrievna had taken a box.

Natasha did not want to go, but could not refuse Mary Dmitrievna’s kind offer which was intended expressly for her. When she came ready dressed into the ballroom to await her father, and looking in the large mirror

there saw that she was pretty, very pretty, she felt even sadder, but it was a sweet, tender sadness.

“Oh God, if Andrei were here now I would not behave as I did then, but differently. I would not be silly and afraid of things, I would simply embrace him, cling to him, and make him look at me with those searching inquiring eyes with which he has so often looked at me, and then I would make him laugh as he used to laugh. And Andrei’s eyes—how I see those eyes!” thought Natasha. “And what do his father and sister matter to me? I love him alone, him, him, with that face and those eyes, with his smile, manly and yet childlike... No, I had better not think of him; not think of him but forget him, quite forget him for the present. I can’t bear this waiting and I shall cry in a minute!” Natasha turned away from the glass, making an effort not to cry. “And how can Sonya love Nicholas so calmly and quietly and wait so long and so patiently?” thought she, looking at Sonya, who also came in quite ready, with a fan in her hand. “No, she’s altogether different. I can’t!”

Natasha at that moment felt so softened and tender that it was not enough for her to love and know she was beloved, she wanted now, at once, to embrace the man she loved, to speak and hear from him words of love such as filled her heart. While Natasha sat in the carriage beside Count Rostov, pensively watching the lights of the street lamps flickering on the frozen window, she felt still sadder and more in love, and forgot where she was going and with whom. Having fallen into the line of carriages, the Rostovs’ carriage drove up to the theater, its wheels squeaking over the snow. Natasha and Sonya, holding up their dresses, jumped out quickly. Count Rostov got out helped by the footmen, and, passing among men and women who were entering and the program sellers, they all three went along the corridor to the first row of boxes. Through the closed doors, the music was already audible.

“Natasha, your hair!...” whispered Sonya.

An attendant deferentially and quickly slipped before the ladies and opened the door of their box. The music sounded louder and through the door rows of brightly lit boxes in which ladies sat with bare arms and shoulders, and noisy stalls brilliant with uniforms, glittered before their eyes. A lady entering the next box shot a glance of feminine envy at Natasha. The curtain had not yet risen and the overture was being played. Natasha, smoothing her gown, went in with Sonya and sat down, scanning the brilliant tiers of boxes opposite. A sensation Natasha had not experienced for a long time—that of hundreds of eyes looking at her bare arms and neck—suddenly affected her both agreeably and disagreeably and called up a whole crowd of memories, desires, and emotions associated with that feeling.

The two remarkably pretty girls, Natasha and Sonya, with Count Rostov who had not been seen in Moscow for a long time, attracted general attention. Moreover, everybody knew vaguely of Natasha's engagement to Andrei and knew that the Rostovs had lived in the country ever since, and all looked with curiosity at a fiancée who was making one of the best matches in Russia.

Natasha's looks, as everyone told her, had improved in the country, and that evening thanks to her agitation she was particularly pretty. She struck those who saw her with her fullness of life and beauty, combined with her indifference to everything about her. Her black eyes looked at the crowd without seeking anyone, and her delicate arm, bare to above the elbow, lay on the velvet edge of the box, while, evidently unconsciously, she opened and closed her hand in time to the music, crumpling her program. "Look, there's Alénina," said Sonya, "with her mother, isn't it?"

"Dear me, Michael Kirílovich has grown still stouter!" remarked Count Rostov.

"Look at our Widow Drubetskoy—what a headdress she has on!"

“Julie is there—and Boris with them. One can see at once that they’re engaged...”

“Boris has proposed?”

“Oh yes, I heard it today,” said Cousin Sinchin, coming into the Rostovs’ box.

Natasha looked in the direction in which Count Rostov’s eyes were turned and saw Julie sitting beside her mother with a happy look on her face and a string of pearls around her thick red neck—which Natasha knew was covered with powder. Behind them, wearing a smile and leaning over with an ear to Julie’s mouth, was Boris’ handsome smoothly brushed head. Boris looked at the Rostovs from under his brows and said something, smiling, to his betrothed.

“They are talking about us, about me and Boris!” thought Natasha. “And he no doubt is calming her jealousy of me. They needn’t trouble themselves! If only they knew how little I am concerned about any of them.”

Behind them sat Widow Drubetskoy wearing a green headdress and with a happy look of resignation to the will of God on her face. Their box was pervaded by that atmosphere of an affianced couple that Natasha knew so well and liked so much. Natasha turned away and suddenly remembered all that had been so humiliating in her morning’s visit.

“What right has Baron Bolkonski not to wish to receive me into his family? Oh, better not think of it—not till Andrei comes back!” Natasha told herself and began looking at the faces, some strange and some familiar, in the stalls. In the front, in the very center, leaning back against the orchestra rail, stood Dolokhov in a Persian dress, his curly hair brushed up into a huge shock. He stood in full view of the audience, well aware that he was attracting everyone’s attention, yet as much at ease as though he were in his own room. Around him thronged Moscow’s most brilliant young men, whom he evidently dominated.

Count Rostov, laughing, nudged the blushing Sonya and pointed to her former adorer.

“Do you recognize Dolokhov?” said Count Rostov. “And where has he sprung from?” he asked, turning to Cousin Sinchin. “Didn’t he vanish somewhere?”

“He did,” replied Cousin Sinchin. “He was in the Caucasus and ran away from there. They say Dolokhov has been acting as minister to some ruling Baron in Persia, where he killed the Shah’s brother. Now all the Moscow ladies are mad about him! It’s ‘Dolokhov the Persian’ that does it! We never hear a word but Dolokhov is mentioned. They swear by him, they offer him to you as they would a dish of choice sterlet. Dolokhov and Anatole have turned all our ladies’ heads.”

A tall, beautiful woman with a mass of plaited hair and much exposed plump white shoulders and neck, round which she wore a double string of large pearls, entered the adjoining box rustling her heavy silk dress, and took a long time settling into her place.

Natasha involuntarily gazed at that neck, those shoulders, and pearls and coiffure, and admired the beauty of the shoulders and the pearls. While Natasha was fixing her gaze on her for the second time the lady looked round and, meeting Count Rostov’s eyes, nodded to him and smiled. She was Helene, Pierre’s wife, and Count Rostov, who knew everyone in society, leaned over and spoke to her.

“Have you been here long, Helene?” Count Rostov inquired. “I’ll call, I’ll call to kiss your hand. I’m here on business and have brought my girls with me. They say Semënova acts marvelously in this opera. Pierre never used to forget us. Is he here?”

“Yes, Pierre meant to look in,” answered Helene, and glanced attentively at Natasha.

Count Rostov resumed his seat.

“Helene is beautiful, isn’t she?” Count Rostov whispered to Natasha.

“Wonderful!” answered Natasha. “Helene is a woman one could easily fall in love with.”

Just then the last chords of the overture were heard and the conductor tapped with his stick. Some latecomers took their seats in the stalls, and the curtain rose.

As soon as it rose everyone in the boxes and stalls became silent, and all the men, old and young, in uniform and evening dress, and all the women with gems on their bare flesh, turned their whole attention with eager curiosity to the stage. Natasha too began to look at it.

The floor of the stage consisted of smooth boards, at the sides was some painted cardboard representing trees, and at the back was a cloth stretched over boards. In the center of the stage sat some girls in red bodices and white skirts. One very fat girl in a white silk dress sat apart on a low bench, to the back of which a piece of green cardboard was glued. They all sang something. When they had finished their song the girl in white went up to the prompter’s box and a man with tight silk trousers over his stout legs and holding a plume and a dagger, went up to her and began singing, waving his arms about.

First, the man in the tight trousers sang alone, then she sang, then they both paused while the orchestra played and the man fingered the hand of the girl in white, obviously awaiting the beat to start singing with her. They sang together and everyone in the theater began clapping and shouting, while the man and woman on the stage—who represented lovers—began smiling, spreading out their arms, and bowing.

After Natasha’s life in the country, and in her present serious mood, all this seemed grotesque and amazing to her. She could not follow the opera nor even listen to the music; she saw only the painted cardboard and the queerly dressed men and women who moved, spoke, and sang so strangely in that brilliant light. She knew what it was all meant to represent, but it was so pretentiously false and unnatural that she first felt ashamed for the actors

and then amused at them. She looked at the faces of the audience, seeking in them the same sense of ridicule and perplexity she herself experienced, but they all seemed attentive to what was happening on the stage and expressed delight which to Natasha seemed feigned. "I suppose it has to be like this!" she thought. She kept looking round in turn at the rows of pomaded heads in the stalls and then at the seminude women in the boxes, especially at Helene in the next box, who—apparently quite unclothed—sat with a quiet tranquil smile, not taking her eyes off the stage. And feeling the bright light that flooded the whole place and the warm air heated by the crowd, Natasha little by little began to pass into a state of intoxication she had not experienced for a long while. She did not realize who and where she was, nor what was going on before her. As she looked and thought, the strangest fancies unexpectedly and disconnectedly passed through her mind: the idea occurred to her of jumping onto the edge of the box and singing the aria the actress was singing, then she wished to touch with her fan an old gentleman sitting not far from her, then to lean over to Helene and tickle her.

At a moment when all was quiet before the commencement of a song, a door leading to the stalls on the side nearest the Rostovs' box creaked, and the steps of a belated arrival were heard. "There's Anatole!" whispered Cousin Sinchin. Helene turned smiling to the newcomer, and Natasha, following the direction of that look, saw an exceptionally handsome adjutant approaching their box with a self-assured yet courteous bearing. This was Anatole whom Natasha had seen and noticed long ago at the ball in St. Petersburg. He was now in an adjutant's uniform with one epaulet and a shoulder knot. Anatole moved with a restrained swagger which would have been ridiculous had he not been so good-looking and had his handsome face not worn such an expression of good-humored complacency and gaiety. Though the performance was proceeding, he walked deliberately down the carpeted gangway, his sword and spurs slightly jingling and his

handsome perfumed head held high. Having looked at Natasha, Anatole approached his sister, Helene, laid his well-gloved hand on the edge of her box, nodded to her, and leaning forward asked a question, with a motion toward Natasha.

“*But so charming!*” said Anatole, evidently referring to Natasha, who did not exactly hear his words but understood them from the movement of his lips. Then Anatole took his place in the first row of the stalls and sat down beside Dolokhov, nudging with his elbow in a friendly and offhand way that Dolokhov whom others treated so fawningly. He winked at him gaily, smiled, and rested his foot against the orchestra screen.

“How like the brother is to the sister,” remarked Count Rostov. “And how handsome both Anatole and Dolokhov are!”

Cousin Sinchin, lowering his voice, began to tell Count Rostov of some intrigue of Anatole’s in Moscow, and Natasha tried to overhear it just because he had said she was “*charming*.”

The first act was over. In the stalls everyone began moving about, going out and coming in.

Boris came to the Rostovs’ box, received their congratulations very simply, and raising his eyebrows with an absent-minded smile conveyed to Natasha and Sonya his fiancée’s invitation to her wedding, and went away. Natasha with a gay, coquettish smile talked to Boris and congratulated him on his approaching wedding that same Boris with whom she had formerly been in love. In the state of intoxication Natasha was in, everything seemed simple and natural.

The scantily clad Helene smiled at everyone in the same way, and Natasha gave Boris a similar smile.

Helene’s box was filled and surrounded from the stalls by the most distinguished and intellectual men, who seemed to vie with one another in their wish to let everyone see that they knew her.

During the whole of that first act, Anatole stood with Dolokhov in front of the orchestra partition, looking at the Rostovs' box. Natasha knew Anatole was talking about her and this afforded her pleasure. She even turned so that he should see her profile in what she thought was its most becoming aspect. Before the beginning of the second act, Pierre appeared in the stalls. The Rostovs had not seen Pierre since their arrival. His face looked sad, and he had grown still stouter since Natasha last saw him. He passed up to the front rows, not noticing anyone. Anatole went up to him and began speaking to him, looking at and indicating the Rostovs' box. On seeing Natasha, Pierre grew animated and, hastily passing between the rows, came toward their box. When he got there he leaned on his elbows and, smiling, talked to her for a long time. While conversing with Pierre, Natasha heard a man's voice in Helene's box and something told her it was Anatole. She turned and their eyes met. Almost smiling, Anatole gazed straight into her eyes with such an enraptured caressing look that it seemed strange to be so near him, to look at him like that, to be so sure he admired her, and not to be acquainted with him.

In the second act, there was scenery representing tombstones, there was a round hole in the canvas to represent the moon, shades were raised over the footlights, and from horns and contrabass came deep notes while many people appeared from right and left wearing black cloaks and holding things like daggers in their hands. They began waving their arms. Then some other people ran in and began dragging away the maiden who had been in white and was now in light blue. They did not drag the maiden away at once but sang with her for a long time and then, at last, dragged her off, and behind the scenes, something metallic was struck three times and everyone knelt down and sang a prayer. All these things were repeatedly interrupted by the enthusiastic shouts of the audience.

During this act every time Natasha looked toward the stalls she saw Anatole with an arm thrown across the back of his chair, staring at her. She

was pleased to see that he was captivated by her and it did not occur to her that there was anything wrong in it.

When the second act was over Helene rose, turned to the Rostovs' box—her whole bosom completely exposed—beckoned Count Rostov with a gloved finger, and paying no attention to those who had entered her box began talking to him with an amiable smile.

“Do make me acquainted with your charming daughters,” said Helene. “The whole town is singing their praises and I don’t even know them!”

Natasha rose and curtsied to the splendid Helene. Natasha was so pleased by the praise from this brilliant beauty that she blushed with pleasure.

“I want to become a Moscow citizen too, now,” said Helene. “How is it you’re not ashamed to bury such pearls in the country?”

Helene quite deserved her reputation of being a fascinating woman. She could say what she did not think—especially what was flattering—quite simply and naturally.

“Dear Count Rostov, you must let me look after your daughters! Though I am not staying here long this time—nor are you—I will try to amuse them. I have already heard much of you in St. Petersburg and wanted to get to know you,” said Helene to Natasha with her stereotyped and lovely smile. “I had heard about you from my page, Boris. Have you heard he is getting married? And also from my husband’s friend Bolkonski, Andrei Bolkonski,” she went on with special emphasis, implying that she knew of his relation to Natasha. To get better acquainted Helene asked that one of the young ladies should come into her box for the rest of the performance, and Natasha moved over to it.

The scene of the third act represented a palace in which many candles were burning and pictures of knights with short beards hung on the walls. In the middle stood what were probably a king and a queen. The king waved his right arm and, evidently nervous, sang something badly and sat down on

a crimson throne. The maiden who had been first in white and then in light blue now wore only a smock and stood beside the throne with her hair down. She sang something mournfully, addressing the queen, but the king waved his arm severely, and men and women with bare legs came in from both sides and began dancing all together. Then the violins played very shrilly and merrily and one of the women with thick bare legs and thin arms, separating from the others, went behind the wings, adjusted her bodice, returned to the middle of the stage, and began jumping and striking one foot rapidly against the other. In the stalls, everyone clapped and shouted "bravo!" Then one of the men went into a corner of the stage. The cymbals and horns in the orchestra struck up more loudly, and this man with bare legs jumped very high and waved his feet about very rapidly. (He was Duport, who received sixty thousand rubles a year for this art.) Everybody in the stalls, boxes, and galleries began clapping and shouting with all their might, and the man stopped and began smiling and bowing to all sides. Then other men and women danced with bare legs. Then the king again shouted to the sound of music, and they all began singing. But suddenly a storm came on, chromatic scales and diminished sevenths were heard in the orchestra, everyone ran off, again dragging one of their number away, and the curtain dropped. Once more there was a terrible noise and clatter among the audience, and with rapturous faces, everyone began shouting: "Duport! Duport! Duport!" Natasha no longer thought this strange. She looked about with pleasure, smiling joyfully.

"Isn't Duport delightful?" Helene asked her.

"Oh, yes," replied Natasha.

During the last act, a whiff of cold air came into Helene's box, the door opened, and Anatole entered, stooping and trying not to brush against anyone.

"Let me introduce my brother, Anatole, to you," said Helene, her eyes shifting uneasily from Natasha to Anatole.

Natasha turned her pretty little head toward the elegant young officer and smiled at him over her bare shoulder. Anatole, who was as handsome at close quarters as at a distance, sat down beside her and told her he had long wished to have this happiness—ever since the Narýshkins' ball in fact, at which he had had the well-remembered pleasure of seeing her. Anatole was much more sensible and simple with women than with men. He talked boldly and naturally, and Natasha was strangely and agreeably struck by the fact that there was nothing formidable in this man about whom there was so much talk, but that on the contrary, his smile was most naive, cheerful, and good-natured.

Anatole asked Natasha's opinion of the performance and told her how at a previous performance Seménova had fallen down on the stage.

"And do you know, Natasha," Anatole said, suddenly addressing her as an old, familiar acquaintance, "we are getting up a costume tournament; you ought to take part in it! It will be great fun. We shall all meet at our home! Please come! No! Really, eh?" said he.

While saying this Anatole never removed his smiling eyes from her face, her neck, and her bare arms. Natasha knew for certain that he was enraptured by her. This pleased her, yet his presence made her feel constrained and oppressed. When she was not looking at him she felt that he was looking at her shoulders, and she involuntarily caught his eye so that he should look into hers rather than this. But looking into Anatole's eyes she was frightened, realizing that there was not that barrier of modesty she had always felt between herself and other men. She did not know how it was that within five minutes she had come to feel herself terribly near to this man. When she turned away she feared he might seize her from behind by her bare arm and kiss her on the neck. They spoke of most ordinary things, yet she felt that they were closer to one another than she had ever been to any man. Natasha kept turning to Helene and to Count Rostov, as if asking what it all meant, but Helene was engaged in conversation with a

general and did not answer her look, and Count Rostov's eyes said nothing but what they always said: "Having a good time? Well, I'm glad about it!"

During one of these moments of awkward silence when Anatole's prominent eyes were gazing calmly and fixedly at her, Natasha, to break the silence, asked him how he liked Moscow. Natasha asked the question and blushed. She felt all the time that by talking to him she was doing something improper. Anatole smiled as though to encourage her.

"At first I did not like it much, because what makes a town pleasant is *all the pretty women*, isn't that so? But now I like it very much indeed," he said, looking at her significantly. "You'll come to the costume tournament, Natasha? Do come!" and putting out his hand to her bouquet and dropping his voice, Anatole added, "You will be the prettiest there. Do come, Natasha, and give me this flower as a pledge!"

Natasha did not understand what Anatole was saying any more than he did himself, but she felt that his incomprehensible words had an improper intention. She did not know what to say and turned away as if she had not heard his remark. But as soon as she had turned away she felt that he was there, behind, so close behind her.

"How is Anatole now? Confused? Angry? Ought I to put it right?" Natasha asked herself, and she could not refrain from turning round. She looked straight into his eyes, and his nearness, self-assurance, and the good-natured tenderness of his smile vanquished her. Natasha smiled just as he was doing, gazing straight into his eyes. And again she felt with horror that no barrier lay between him and her.

The curtain rose again. Anatole left the box, serene and gay. Natasha went back to her father in the other box, now quite submissive to the world she found herself in. All that was going on before her now seemed quite natural, but on the other hand, all her previous thoughts of Andrei, of Marya, or of life in the country did not once recur to her mind and were as if belonging to a remote past.

In the fourth act, there was some sort of devil who sang waving his arm about, till the boards were withdrawn from under him and he disappeared down below. That was the only part of the fourth act that Natasha saw. She felt agitated and tormented, and the cause of this was Anatole whom she could not help watching. As they were leaving the theater Anatole came up to them, called their carriage, and helped them in. As he was putting Natasha in he pressed her arm above the elbow. Agitated and flushed she turned round. Anatole was looking at her with glittering eyes, smiling tenderly.

Only after Natasha had reached home was she able clearly to think over what had happened to her, and suddenly remembering Andrei she was horrified, and at tea to which all had sat down after the opera, she gave a loud exclamation, flushed, and ran out of the room.

“Oh, God! I am lost!” Natasha said to herself. “How could I let him?” She sat for a long time hiding her flushed face in her hands trying to realize what had happened to her but was unable either to understand what had happened or what she felt. Everything seemed dark, obscure, and terrible. There in that enormous, illuminated theater where the bare-legged Duport, in a tinsel-decorated jacket, jumped about to the music on wet boards, and young girls and old men, and the nearly naked Helene with her proud, calm smile, rapturously cried “bravo!”—there in the presence of that Helene it had all seemed clear and simple; but now, alone by herself, it was incomprehensible. “What is it? What was that terror I felt of him? What is this gnawing of conscience I am feeling now?” she thought.

Only to Countess Rostov at night in bed could Natasha have told all she was feeling. She knew that Sonya with her severe and simple views would either not understand it at all or would be horrified at such a confession. So Natasha tried to solve what was torturing her by herself.

“Am I spoiled for Andrei’s love or not?” Natasha asked herself, and with soothing irony replied: “What a fool I am to ask that! What did happen to me? Nothing! I have done nothing, I didn’t lead him on at all. Nobody will know and I shall never see him again,” she told herself. “So it is plain that nothing has happened and there is nothing to repent of, and Andrei can love me still. But why ‘still?’ Oh, God, why isn’t he here?” Natasha quieted herself for a moment, but again some instinct told her that though all this was true, and though nothing had happened, the former purity of her love for Andrei had perished. And again in imagination, she went over her whole conversation with Anatole, and again saw the face, gestures, and tender smile of that bold handsome man when he pressed her arm.

Anatole was staying in Moscow because his father had sent him away from St. Petersburg, where he had been spending twenty thousand rubles a year in cash, besides running up debts for as much more, which his creditors demanded from his father.

Baron Vasili announced to Anatole that he would now pay half his debts for the last time, but only on condition that he went to Moscow as adjutant to General Kutuzov—a post his father had procured for him—and would at last try to find an appropriate wife there. Baron Vasili indicated to him Marya Bolkonski and Julie Karágina as possibilities.

Anatole consented and went to Moscow, where he put up at Pierre’s house. Pierre received him unwillingly at first but got used to him after a while, sometimes even accompanying him on his carousals, and gave him money under the guise of loans.

As Cousin Sinchin had remarked, from the time of his arrival Anatole had turned the heads of the Moscow ladies, especially by the fact that he slighted them and preferred the Bohemian girls and French actresses—with the chief of whom, Mademoiselle George, he was said to be on intimate relations. Anatole had never missed a carousal at Danílov’s or other Moscow revelers’, drank whole nights through, outvying everyone else, and

was at all the balls and parties of the best society. There was talk of his intrigues with some of the ladies, and he flirted with a few of them at the balls. But he did not run after the unmarried girls, especially the rich heiresses who were most of them plain. There was a special reason for this, as he had got married two years before—a fact known only to his most intimate friends. At that time while with his regiment in Poland, a Polish landowner of small means had forced him to marry his daughter. Anatole had very soon abandoned his wife and, for a payment which he agreed to send to his father-in-law, had arranged to be free to pass himself off as a bachelor.

Anatole was always content with his position, with himself, and with others. He was instinctively and thoroughly convinced that he couldn't live otherwise than as he did and that he had never in his life done anything base. He was incapable of considering how his actions might affect others or what the consequences of this or that action of his might be. He was convinced that, as a duck is so made that it must live in water, Oh, God had made him such that he must spend thirty thousand rubles a year and always occupy a prominent position in society. He believed this so firmly that others, looking at him, were persuaded of it too and did not refuse him either a leading place in society or money, which he borrowed from anyone and everyone and evidently would not repay.

Anatole was not a gambler, at any rate, he did not care about winning. He was not vain. He did not mind what people thought of him. Still less could he be accused of ambition. More than once he had vexed his father by spoiling his own career, and he laughed at distinctions of all kinds. He was not mean and did not refuse anyone who asked of him. All he cared about was gaiety and women, and as according to his ideas there was nothing dishonorable in these tastes, and he was incapable of considering what the gratification of his tastes entailed for others, he honestly considered himself

irreproachable, sincerely despised rogues and bad people, and with a tranquil conscience carried his head high.

Rakes, those male versions of Mary Magdalene from the bible, have a secret feeling of innocence similar to that which female Magdalenes have, based on the same hope of forgiveness. "All will be forgiven her, for she loved much; and all will be forgiven him, for he enjoyed much."

Dolokhov, who had reappeared that year in Moscow after his exile and his Persian adventures, and was leading a life of luxury, gambling, and dissipation, associated with his old St. Petersburg comrade Anatole and made use of him for his own ends.

Anatole was sincerely fond of Dolokhov for his cleverness and audacity. Dolokhov, who needed Anatole's name, position, and connections as bait to draw rich young men into his gambling set, made use of him and amused himself at his expense without letting the other feel it. Apart from the advantage Dolokhov derived from Anatole, the very process of dominating another's will was in itself a pleasure, a habit, and a necessity to Dolokhov.

Natasha had made a strong impression on Anatole. At supper, after the opera, Anatole described to Dolokhov with the air of a connoisseur the attractions of her arms, shoulders, feet, and hair and expressed his intention of making love to her. Anatole had no notion and was incapable of considering what might come of such love-making, as he never had any notion of the outcome of any of his actions.

"Natasha is first-rate, my dear Anatole, but not for us," replied Dolokhov.

"I will tell Helene to ask her to dinner," said Anatole. "Eh?"

"You'd better wait till she's married..."

"You know, I adore little girls, they lose their heads at once," pursued Anatole.

"You have been caught once already by a 'little girl,'" said Dolokhov who knew of Anatole's marriage. "Take care!"

“Well, that can’t happen twice! Eh?” said Anatole, with a good-humored laugh.

The day after the opera, the Rostovs went nowhere and nobody came to see them. Mary Dmitrievna talked to Count Rostov about something which they concealed from Natasha. Natasha guessed they were talking about Baron Bolkonski and planning something, and this disquieted and offended her. Natasha was expecting Andrei any moment and twice that day sent a manservant to the Vozdvízhenka to ascertain whether he had come. Andrei had not arrived. Natasha suffered more now than during her first days in Moscow. To her impatience and pining for him were now added the unpleasant recollection of her interview with Marya and Baron Bolkonski and a fear and anxiety of which she did not understand the cause. Natasha continually fancied that either he would never come or that something would happen to her before he came. She could no longer think of him by herself calmly and continuously as she had done before. As soon as she began to think of him, the recollection of Baron Bolkonski, of Marya, of the theater, and of Anatole mingled with her thoughts. The question again presented itself whether she was not guilty, whether she had not already broken faith with Andrei, and again Natasha found herself recalling to the minutest detail every word, every gesture, and every shade in the play of expression on the face of the man who had been able to arouse in her such an incomprehensible and terrifying feeling. To the family, Natasha seemed livelier than usual, but she was far less tranquil and happy than before.

On Sunday morning Mary Dmitrievna invited her visitors to Mass at her parish church—the Church of the Assumption built over the graves of victims of the plague.

“I don’t like those fashionable churches,” Mary Dmitrievna said, evidently priding herself on her independence of thought. “God is the same everywhere. We have an excellent priest, he conducts the service decently

and with dignity, and the deacon is the same. What holiness is there in giving concerts in the choir? I don't like it, it's just self-indulgence!"

Mary Dmitrievna liked Sundays and knew how to keep them. Her whole house was scrubbed and cleaned on Saturdays; neither she nor the servants worked, and they all wore holiday dress and went to church. At her table, there were extra dishes at dinner, and the servants had vodka and roast goose or suckling pig. But in nothing in the house was the holiday so noticeable as in Mary Dmitrievna's broad, stern face, which on that day wore an invariable look of solemn festivity.

After Mass, when they had finished their coffee in the dining room where the loose covers had been removed from the furniture, a servant announced that the carriage was ready, and Mary Dmitrievna rose with a stern air. She wore her holiday shawl, in which she paid calls, and announced that she was going to see Baron Bolkonski to have an explanation with him about Natasha.

After Mary Dmitrievna had gone, a dressmaker from Madame Suppert-Roguet waited on the Rostovs, and Natasha, very glad of this diversion, having shut herself into a room adjoining the drawing room, occupied herself trying on the new dresses. Just as she had put on a bodice without sleeves and only tacked together, and was turning her head to see in the glass how the back fitted, she heard in the drawing room the animated sounds of her father's voice and another's—a woman's—that made her flush. It was Helene. Natasha had not time to take off the bodice before the door opened and Helene, dressed in a purple velvet gown with a high collar, came into the room beaming with good-humored amiable smiles.

"Oh, my enchantress Natasha!" Helene cried to the blushing Natasha. "Charming! No, this is really beyond anything, my dear," said she to Count Rostov who had followed her in. "How can you live in Moscow and go nowhere? No, I won't let you off! Mademoiselle George will recite at my house tonight and there'll be some people, and if you don't bring your

lovely girls—who are prettier than Mademoiselle George—I won't know you! Pierre is away in Tver or I would send him to fetch you. You must come. You positively must! Between eight and nine."

Helene nodded to the dressmaker, whom she knew and who had curtsied respectfully to her, and seated herself in an armchair beside the looking glass, draping the folds of her velvet dress picturesquely. Helene did not cease chattering good-naturedly and gaily, continually praising Natasha's beauty. She looked at Natasha's dresses and praised them, as well as a new dress of her own made of "metallic gauze," which she had received from Paris, and advised Natasha to have one like it.

"But anything suits you, my charmer!" Helene remarked.

A smile of pleasure never left Natasha's face. She felt happy and as if she were blossoming under the praise of this dear Helene who had formerly seemed to her so unapproachable and important and was now so kind to her. Natasha brightened up and felt almost in love with this woman, who was so beautiful and so kind. Helene for her part was sincerely delighted with Natasha and wished to give her a good time. Anatole had asked her to bring him and Natasha together, and she was calling on the Rostovs for that purpose. The idea of throwing her brother and Natasha together amused her.

Though at one time, in St. Petersburg, Helene had been annoyed with Natasha for drawing Boris away, she did not think of that now, and in her own way heartily wished Natasha well. As she was leaving the Rostovs Helene called her protégée, Natasha, aside.

"My brother, Anatole, dined with me yesterday—we nearly died of laughter—he ate nothing and kept sighing for you, my charmer! Anatole is madly, quite madly, in love with you, my dear."

Natasha blushed scarlet when she heard this.

"How she blushes, how she blushes, my pretty!" said Helene. "You must certainly come. If you love somebody, my charmer, that is not a

reason to shut yourself up. Even if you are engaged, I am sure Andrei would wish you to go into society rather than be bored to death.”

“So Helene knows I am engaged, and she and her husband Pierre—that good Pierre—have talked and laughed about this. So it’s all right.” And again, under Helene’s influence, what had seemed terrible now seemed simple and natural. “And she is such a *grand woman*, so kind, and evidently, she likes me so much. And why not enjoy myself?” thought Natasha, gazing at Helene with wide-open, wondering eyes.

Mary Dmitrievna came back to dinner taciturn and serious, having evidently suffered a defeat at Baron Bolkonski’s. Mary Dmitrievna was still too agitated by the encounter to be able to talk of the affair calmly. In answer to Count Rostov’s inquiries, she replied that things were all right and that she would tell about it the next day. On hearing of Helene’s visit and the invitation for that evening, Mary Dmitrievna remarked:

“I don’t care to have anything to do with Helene and don’t advise you to; however, if you’ve promised—go. It will divert your thoughts,” Mary Dmitrievna added, addressing Natasha.

Count Rostov took Natasha and Sonya to Helene’s. There were a good many people there, but nearly all strangers to Natasha. Count Rostov was displeased to see that the company consisted almost entirely of men and women known for the freedom of their conduct. Mademoiselle George was standing in a corner of the drawing room surrounded by young men. There were several Frenchmen present, among them Dr. Métivier who from the time Helene reached Moscow had been an intimate in her house. Count Rostov decided not to sit down to cards or let his girls out of his sight and to get away as soon as Mademoiselle George’s performance was over.

Anatole was at the door, evidently on the lookout for the Rostovs. Immediately after greeting Count Rostov, Anatole went up to Natasha and followed her. As soon as Natasha saw him she was seized by the same

feeling she had had at the opera—gratified vanity at his admiration of her and fear at the absence of a moral barrier between them.

Helene welcomed Natasha delightedly and was loud in admiration of her beauty and her dress. Soon after their arrival, Mademoiselle George went out of the room to change her costume. In the drawing-room, people began arranging the chairs and taking their seats. Anatole moved a chair for Natasha and was about to sit down beside her, but Count Rostov, who never lost sight of her, took the seat himself. Anatole sat down behind her.

The famous French actress, Mademoiselle George, with her bare, fat, dimpled arms, and a red shawl draped over one shoulder, came into the space left vacant for her and assumed an unnatural pose. Enthusiastic whispering was audible.

Mademoiselle George looked sternly and gloomily at the audience and began reciting some French verses describing her guilty love for her son. In some places she raised her voice, in others she whispered, lifting her head triumphantly; sometimes she paused and uttered hoarse sounds, rolling her eyes.

“Adorable! divine! delicious!” was heard from every side.

Natasha looked at the fat actress, but neither saw nor heard nor understood anything of what went on before her. She only felt herself again completely borne away into this strange senseless world—so remote from her old world—a world in which it was impossible to know what was good or bad, reasonable or senseless. Behind her sat Anatole, and conscious of his proximity she experienced a frightening sense of expectancy.

After the first monologue, the whole company rose and surrounded Mademoiselle George, expressing their enthusiasm.

“How beautiful she is!” Natasha remarked to her father who had also risen and was moving through the crowd toward the actress.

“I don’t think so when I look at you!” said Anatole, following Natasha. He said this at a moment when she alone could hear him. “You are

enchanting... from the moment I saw you I have never ceased...”

“Come, come, Natasha!” said Count Rostov, as he turned back for his daughter. “How beautiful she is!” Natasha without saying anything stepped up to her father and looked at him with surprised inquiring eyes.

After giving several recitations, Mademoiselle George left, and Helene asked her visitors into the ballroom.

Count Rostov wished to go home, but Helene entreated him not to spoil her improvised ball, and the Rostovs stayed on. Anatole asked Natasha for a valse and as they danced he pressed her waist and hand and told her she was bewitching and that he loved her. During the *Scottish dance*, which Natasha also danced with him, Anatole said nothing when they happened to be by themselves but merely gazed at her. Natasha lifted her frightened eyes to him, but there was such confident tenderness in his affectionate look and smile that she could not, whilst looking at him, say what she had to say. She lowered her eyes.

“Don’t say such things to me. I am betrothed and love another,” Natasha said rapidly... She glanced at him.

Anatole was not upset or pained by what she had said.

“Don’t speak to me of that! What can I do?” said Anatole. “I tell you I am madly, madly, in love with you! Is it my fault that you are enchanting?... It’s our turn to begin.”

Natasha, animated and excited, looked about her with wide-open frightened eyes and seemed merrier than usual. She understood hardly anything that went on that evening. They danced the *Scottish dance* and the *Grandfather dance*. Count Rostov asked Natasha to come home, but she begged to remain. Wherever she went and whomever she was speaking to, she felt *his* eyes upon her. Later on, Natasha recalled how she had asked her father to let her go to the dressing room to rearrange her dress, that Helene had followed her and spoken laughingly of her brother’s love, and that she

again met Anatole in the little sitting room. Helene had disappeared leaving them alone, and Anatole had taken her hand and said in a tender voice:

“I cannot come to visit you but is it possible that I shall never see you? I love you madly. Can I never...?” and, blocking her path, Anatole brought his face close to hers.

Anatole’s large, glittering, masculine eyes were so close to hers that she saw nothing but them.

“Natasha?” he whispered inquiringly while she felt her hands being painfully pressed. “Natasha?”

“I don’t understand. I have nothing to say,” Natasha’s eyes replied.

Burning lips were pressed to hers, and at the same instant she felt herself released, and Helene’s footsteps and the rustle of her dress were heard in the room. Natasha looked round at her, and then, red and trembling, threw a frightened look of inquiry at Anatole and moved toward the door.

“One word, just one, for God’s sake!” cried Anatole.

Natasha paused. She so wanted a word from Anatole that would explain to her what had happened and to which she could find no answer.

“Natasha, just a word, only one!” Anatole kept repeating, evidently not knowing what to say and he repeated it till Helene came up to them.

Helene returned with Natasha to the drawing room. The Rostovs went away without staying for supper.

After reaching home Natasha did not sleep all night. She was tormented by the insoluble question of whether she loved Anatole or Andrei. She loved Andrei—she remembered distinctly how deeply she loved him. But she also loved Anatole, of that there was no doubt. “Else how could all this have happened?” thought Natasha. “If, after that, I could return his smile when saying goodbye if I was able to let it come to that, it means that I loved him from the first. It means that he is kind, noble, and splendid, and I

could not help loving him. What am I to do if I love him and the other one too?" she asked herself, unable to find an answer to these terrible questions.

Morning came with its cares and bustle. Everyone got up and began to move about and talk, dressmakers came again. Mary Dmitrievna appeared, and they were called to breakfast. Natasha kept looking uneasily at everybody with wide-open eyes as if wishing to intercept every glance directed toward her and tried to appear the same as usual.

After breakfast, which was her best time, Mary Dmitrievna sat down in her armchair and called Natasha and Count Rostov to her.

"Well, friends, I have now thought the whole matter over and this is my advice," she began. "Yesterday, as you know, I went to see Baron Bolkonski. Well, I had a talk with him... He took it into his head to begin shouting, but I am not one to be shouted down. I said what I had to say!"

"Well, and he?" asked Count Rostov.

"He? He has dementia... he did not want to listen. But what's the use of talking? As it is we have worn the poor girl out," said Mary Dmitrievna. "My advice to you is finish your business and go back home to Otrádnoe... and wait there."

"Oh, no!" exclaimed Natasha.

"Yes, go back," said Mary Dmitrievna, "and wait there. If Andrei comes here now—there will be no avoiding a quarrel; but alone with Baron Bolkonski, Andrei will talk things over and then come on to you."

Count Rostov approved of this suggestion, appreciating its reasonableness. If Baron Bolkonski came round it would be all the better to visit him in Moscow or at Bald Hills later on; and if not, the wedding, against his wishes, could only be arranged at Otrádnoe.

"That is perfectly true. And I am sorry I went to see him and took her," said Count Rostov.

"No, why be sorry? Being here, you had to pay your respects. But if Baron Bolkonski won't—that's his affair," said Mary Dmitrievna, looking

for something in her reticule. “Besides, Natasha’s trousseau is ready, so there is nothing to wait for; and what is not ready I’ll send after you. Though I don’t like letting you go, it is the best way. So go, with God’s blessing!”

Having found what Mary Dmitrievna was looking for in the reticule she handed it to Natasha. It was a letter from Marya.

“Marya has written to you. How she torments herself, poor thing! She’s afraid you might think that she does not like you.”

“But Marya doesn’t like me,” said Natasha.

“Don’t talk nonsense!” cried Mary Dmitrievna.

“I shan’t believe anyone, I know she doesn’t like me,” replied Natasha boldly as she took the letter, and her face expressed a cold and angry resolution that caused Mary Dmitrievna to look at her more intently and to frown.

“Don’t answer like that, my good girl!” Mary Dmitrievna said. “What I say is true! Write an answer!”

Natasha did not reply and went to her room to read Marya’s letter.

Marya wrote that she was in despair at the misunderstanding that had occurred between them. Whatever Baron Bolkonski’s feelings might be, Marya begged Natasha to believe that she could not help loving her as the one chosen by her brother, for whose happiness she was ready to sacrifice everything.

“Do not think, however,” Marya wrote, “that my father is ill-disposed toward you. Baron Bolkonski is an invalid and an old man who must be forgiven, but he is good and magnanimous and will love her who makes his son happy.” Marya went on to ask Natasha to fix a time when she could see her again.

After reading the letter Natasha sat down at the writing table to answer it. “Dear Marya,” she wrote in French quickly and mechanically and then paused. What more could she write after all that had happened the evening

before? “Yes, yes! All that has happened, and now all is changed,” Natasha thought as she sat with the letter she had begun before her. “Must I break off with him? Must I really? That’s awful...” and to escape from these dreadful thoughts she went to Sonya and began sorting patterns with her.

After dinner, Natasha went to her room and again took up Marya’s letter. “Can it be that it is all over?” she thought. “Can it be that all this has happened so quickly and has destroyed all that went before?” Natasha recalled her love for Andrei in all its former strength, and at the same time felt that she loved Anatole. She vividly pictured herself as Andrei’s wife, and the scenes of happiness with him she had so often repeated in her imagination, and at the same time, aglow with excitement, recalled every detail of yesterday’s interview with Anatole.

“Why could that not be as well?” Natasha sometimes asked herself in complete bewilderment. “Only so could I be completely happy; but now I have to choose, and I can’t be happy without either of them. Only,” she thought, “to tell Andrei what has happened or to hide it from him are both equally impossible. But with *that one* nothing is spoiled. But am I really to abandon forever the joy of Andrei’s love, in which I have lived so long?”

“Please, Natasha!” whispered a maid entering the room with a mysterious air. “A man told me to give you this—” and she handed Natasha a letter.

“Only...” the maid went on, as Natasha, without thinking, mechanically broke the seal and read a love letter from Anatole, of which, without taking in a word, she understood only that it was a letter from him—from the man she loved. Yes, she loved him, or else how could that have happened which had happened? And how could she have a love letter from him in her hand?

With trembling hands, Natasha held that passionate love letter that Dolokhov had composed for Anatole, and as she read it she found in it an echo of all that she herself imagined she was feeling.

“Since yesterday evening my fate has been sealed; to be loved by you or to die. There is no other way for me,” the letter began. Then Anatole went on to say that he knew her parents would not give her to him—for this, there were secret reasons he could reveal only to her—but that if Natasha loved him she need only say the word “yes”, and no human power could hinder their bliss. Love would conquer all. He would steal her away and carry her off to the ends of the earth.

“Yes, yes! I love him!” thought Natasha, reading the letter for the twentieth time and finding some peculiarly deep meaning in each word of it.

That evening Mary Dmitrievna was going to the Akhárovs’ and proposed to take the girls with her. Natasha, pleading a headache, remained at home.

On returning late in the evening Sonya went to Natasha’s room, and to her surprise found Natasha still dressed and asleep on the sofa. Open on the table, beside her lay Anatole’s letter. Sonya picked it up and read it.

As she read she glanced at the sleeping Natasha, trying to find in her face an explanation of what she was reading, but did not find it. Natasha’s face was calm, gentle, and happy. Clutching her breast to keep herself from choking, Sonya, pale and trembling with fear and agitation, sat down in an armchair and burst into tears.

“How was it I noticed nothing? How could it go so far? Can Natasha have left off loving Andrei? And how could she let Anatole go to such lengths? He is a deceiver and a villain, that’s plain! What will Nicholas, dear noble Nicholas, do when he hears of it? So this is the meaning of Natasha’s excited, resolute, unnatural look the day before yesterday, yesterday, and today,” thought Sonya. “But it can’t be that she loves him! She probably opened the letter without knowing who it was from. Probably she is offended by it. She could not do such a thing!”

Sonya wiped away her tears and went up to Natasha, again scanning her face.

“Natasha!” Sonya said, just audibly.

Natasha awoke and saw Sonya.

“Ah, you’re back?”

And with the decision and tenderness that often come at the moment of awakening, Natasha embraced her friend, but noticing Sonya’s look of embarrassment, Natasha’s face showed expressed confusion and suspicion.

“Sonya, you’ve read that letter?” she demanded.

“Yes,” answered Sonya softly.

Natasha smiled rapturously.

“No, Sonya, I can’t any longer!” she said. “I can’t hide it from you any longer. You know, we love one another! Sonya, darling, he writes... Sonya...”

Sonya stared open-eyed at Natasha, unable to believe her ears.

“And Andrei?” she asked.

“Ah, Sonya, if you only knew how happy I am!” cried Natasha. “You don’t know what love is...”

“But, Natasha, can *that* be all over?”

Natasha looked at Sonya with wide-open eyes as if she could not grasp the question.

“Well, then, are you refusing Andrei?” said Sonya.

“Oh, you don’t understand anything! Don’t talk nonsense, just listen!” said Natasha, with momentary vexation.

“But I can’t believe it,” insisted Sonya. “I don’t understand. How is it you have loved Andrei for a whole year and suddenly... Why, you have only seen Anatole three times! Natasha, I don’t believe you, you’re joking! In three days to forget everything and so...”

“Three days?” said Natasha. “It seems to me I’ve loved Anatole a hundred years. It seems to me that I have never loved anyone before. You

can't understand it... Sonya, wait a bit, sit here," and Natasha embraced and kissed her.

"I had heard that it happens like this, and you must have heard it too, but it's only now that I feel such love. It's not the same as before. As soon as I saw Anatole I felt he was my master and I was his slave, and that I could not help loving him. Yes, his slave! Whatever he orders I shall do. You don't understand that. What can I do? What can I do, Sonya?" cried Natasha with a happy yet frightened expression.

"But think what you are doing," cried Sonya. "I can't leave it like this. This secret correspondence... How could you let Anatole go so far?" she went on, with a horror and disgust she could hardly conceal.

"I told you that I have no will," Natasha replied. "Why can't you understand? I love him!"

"Then I won't let it come to that... I shall tell!" cried Sonya, bursting into tears.

"What do you mean? For God's sake... If you tell, you are my enemy!" declared Natasha. "You want me to be miserable, you want us to be separated..."

When she saw Natasha's fright, Sonya shed tears of shame and pity for her friend.

"But what has happened between you?" Sonya asked. "What has he said to you? Why doesn't he come to the house?"

Natasha did not answer her questions.

"For God's sake, Sonya, don't tell anyone, don't torture me," Natasha entreated. "Remember no one ought to interfere in such matters! I have confided in you..."

"But why this secrecy? Why doesn't Anatole come to the house?" asked Sonya. "Why doesn't he openly ask for your hand? You know Andrei gave you complete freedom—if it is really so, but I don't believe it! Natasha, have you considered what these *secret reasons* can be?"

Natasha looked at Sonya with astonishment. This question presented itself to her mind for the first time and Natasha did not know how to answer it.

“I don’t know what the reasons are. But there must be reasons!”

Sonya sighed and shook her head incredulously.

“If there were reasons...” Sonya began.

But Natasha, guessing her doubts, interrupted her in alarm.

“Sonya, one can’t doubt Anatole! One can’t, one can’t! Don’t you understand?” she cried.

“Does Anatole love you?”

“Does he love me?” Natasha repeated with a smile of pity at her friend’s lack of comprehension. “Why, you have read his letter and you have seen him.”

“But if Anatole is dishonorable?”

“*He!* dishonorable? If you only knew!” exclaimed Natasha.

“If Anatole is an honorable man, he should either declare his intentions or cease seeing you; and if you won’t do this, I will. I will write to him, and I will tell Papa!” said Sonya resolutely.

“But I can’t live without him!” cried Natasha.

“Natasha, I don’t understand you. And what are you saying? Think of your father and Nicholas.”

“I don’t want anyone, I don’t love anyone but Anatole. How dare you say he is dishonorable? Don’t you know that I love him?” screamed Natasha. “Go away, Sonya! I don’t want to quarrel with you, but go, for God’s sake go! You see how I am suffering!” Natasha cried angrily, in a voice of despair and repressed irritation. Sonya burst into sobs and ran from the room.

Natasha went to the table and without a moment’s reflection wrote that answer to Marya which she had been unable to write all morning. In this letter Natasha said briefly that all their misunderstandings were at an end;

that availing herself of the magnanimity of Andrei who when he went abroad had given her her freedom, she begged Marya to forget everything and forgive her if she had been to blame toward her, but that she could not be his wife. At that moment this all seemed quite easy, simple, and clear to Natasha.

On Friday the Rostovs were to return to the country, but on Wednesday, Count Rostov went with the prospective purchaser to his estate near Moscow.

On the day Count Rostov left, Sonya and Natasha were invited to a big dinner party at the Karágin's, and Mary Dmitrievna took them there. At that party, Natasha again met Anatole, and Sonya noticed that she spoke to him, trying not to be overheard and that all through dinner she was more agitated than ever. When they got home Natasha was the first to begin the explanation Sonya expected.

"There, Sonya, you were talking all sorts of nonsense about him," Natasha began in a mild voice such as children use when they wish to be praised. "We have had an explanation today."

"Well, what happened? What did he say? Natasha, how glad I am you're not angry with me! Tell me everything—the whole truth. What did Anatole say?"

Natasha became thoughtful.

"Oh, Sonya, if you knew Anatole as I do! He said... He asked me what I had promised Andrei. He was glad I was free to refuse him."

Sonya sighed sorrowfully.

"But you haven't refused Andrei?" said she.

"Perhaps I have. Perhaps all is over between me and Andrei. Why do you think so badly of me?"

"I don't think anything, only I don't understand this..."

“Wait a bit, Sonya, you’ll understand everything. You’ll see what Anatole is! Now don’t think badly of me or him. I don’t think badly of anyone: I love and pity everybody. But what am I to do?”

Sonya did not succumb to the tender tone Natasha used toward her. The more emotional and ingratiating the expression on Natasha’s face became, the more serious and stern grew Sonya’s.

“Natasha,” said she, “you asked me not to speak to you, and I haven’t spoken, but now you yourself have begun. I don’t trust Anatole. Why this secrecy?”

“Again, again!” interrupted Natasha.

“Natasha, I am afraid for you!”

“Afraid of what?”

“I am afraid you’re going to your ruin,” said Sonya resolutely, and was herself horrified at what she had said.

Anger again showed on Natasha’s face.

“And I’ll go to my ruin, I will, as soon as possible! It’s not your business! It won’t be you, but I, who’ll suffer. Leave me alone, leave me alone! I hate you!”

“Natasha!” moaned Sonya, aghast.

“I hate you, I hate you! You’re my enemy forever!” And Natasha ran out of the room.

Natasha did not speak to Sonya again and avoided her. With the same expression of agitated surprise and guilt, Natasha went about the house, taking up now one occupation, now another, and at once abandoning them.

Hard as it was for Sonya, she watched Natasha and did not let her out of her sight.

The day before Count Rostov was to return, Sonya noticed that Natasha sat by the drawing-room window all morning as if expecting something and that she made a sign to an officer who drove past, whom Sonya took to be Anatole.

Sonya began watching Natasha still more attentively and noticed that at dinner and all that evening Natasha was in a strange and unnatural state. She answered questions at random, began sentences she did not finish and laughed at everything.

After tea, Sonya noticed a housemaid at Natasha's door timidly waiting to let her pass. Natasha let the housemaid go in, and then listening at the door learned that another letter had been delivered.

Then suddenly it became clear to Sonya that Natasha had some dreadful plan for that evening. Sonya knocked at her door. Natasha did not let her in.

"Natasha will run away with him!" thought Sonya. "She is capable of anything. There was something particularly pathetic and resolute in her face today. She cried as she said good-by to Dyadya," Sonya remembered. "Yes, that's it, Natasha means to elope with Anatole, but what am I to do?" thought she, recalling all the signs that clearly indicated that Natasha had some terrible intention. "Count Rostov is away. What am I to do? Write to Anatole demanding an explanation? But what is there to oblige him to reply? Write to Pierre, as Andrei asked me to in case of some misfortune?... But perhaps Natasha really has already refused Andrei—she sent a letter to Marya yesterday. And Dyadya is away..." To tell Mary Dmitrievna who had such faith in Natasha seemed to Sonya terrible. "Well, anyway," thought Sonya as she stood in the dark passage, "now or never I must prove that I remember the family's goodness to me and that I love Nicholas. Yes! If I don't sleep for three nights I'll not leave this passage and will hold her back by force and will and not let the family be disgraced," thought Sonya.

Anatole had lately moved to Dolokhov's. The plan for Natasha's abduction had been arranged and the preparations made by Dolokhov a few days before, and on the day that Sonya, after listening at Natasha's door, resolved to safeguard her, it was to have been put into execution. Natasha had promised to come out to Anatole on the back porch at ten that evening. Anatole was to put her into a sleigh he would have ready and to drive her

forty miles to the village of Kámenka, where an unfrocked priest was in readiness to perform a marriage ceremony over them. At Kámenka a relay of horses was to wait which would take them to the Warsaw highroad, and from there they would hasten abroad with post horses.

Anatole had a passport, an order for post horses, ten thousand rubles he had taken from his sister, and another ten thousand borrowed with Dolokhov's help.

Two witnesses for the mock marriage—Khvóstikov, a retired petty official whom Dolokhov made use of in his gambling transactions, and Makárin, a retired hussar, a kindly, weak fellow who had an unbounded affection for Anatole —were sitting at tea in Dolokhov's front room.

In his large study, the walls of which were hung to the ceiling with Persian rugs, bearskins, and weapons, sat Dolokhov in a traveling cloak and high boots, at an open desk on which lay an abacus and some bundles of paper money. Anatole, with uniform unbuttoned, walked to and fro from the room where the witnesses were sitting, through the study to the room behind, where his French valet and others were packing the last of his things. Dolokhov was counting the money and noting something down.

"Well," Dolokhov said, "Khvóstikov must have two thousand."

"Give it to him, then," said Anatole.

"Makárka" (their name for Makárin) "will go through fire and water for you for nothing. So here are our accounts all settled," said Dolokhov, showing him the memorandum. "Is that right?"

"Yes, of course," returned Anatole, evidently not listening to Dolokhov and looking straight before him with a smile that did not leave his face.

Dolokhov banged down the lid of his desk and turned to Anatole with an ironic smile:

"Do you know? You'd really better drop it all. There's still time!"

"Fool," retorted Anatole. "Don't talk nonsense! If you only knew... it's the devil knows what!"

“No, really, give it up!” said Dolokhov. “I am speaking seriously. It’s no joke, this plot you’ve hatched.”

“What, teasing again? Go to the devil! Eh?” said Anatole, grimacing. “It’s no time for your stupid jokes,” and he left the room.

Dolokhov smiled contemptuously and condescendingly when Anatole had gone out.

“You wait a bit,” Dolokhov called after him. “I’m not joking, I’m talking sense. Come here, come here!”

Anatole returned and looked at Dolokhov, trying to give him his attention and submitting to him involuntarily.

“Now listen to me, Anatole. I’m telling you this for the last time. Why should I joke about it? Did I hinder you? Who arranged everything for you? Who found the priest and got the passport? Who raised the money? I did it all.”

“Well, thank you for it. Do you think I am not grateful?” And Anatole sighed and embraced Dolokhov.

“I helped you, Anatole, but all the same I must tell you the truth; it is a dangerous business, and if you think about it—a stupid business. Well, you’ll carry Natasha off—all right! Will they let it stop at that? It will come out that you’re already married. Why, they’ll have you in the criminal court...”

“Oh, nonsense, nonsense!” Anatole ejaculated and again grimaced. “Didn’t I explain to you? What?” And Anatole, with the partiality dull-witted people have for any conclusion they have reached by their own reasoning, repeated the argument he had already put to Dolokhov a hundred times. “Didn’t I explain to you that I have come to the following conclusion? If this marriage is invalid,” Anatole went on, crooking one finger, “then I have nothing to answer for; but if it is valid, no matter! Abroad, no one will know anything about it. Isn’t that so? And don’t talk to me, don’t, don’t.”

“Seriously, you’d better drop it! You’ll only get yourself into a mess!”

“Go to the devil!” cried Anatole and, clutching his hair, left the room, but returned at once and dropped into an armchair in front of Dolokhov with his feet turned under him. “It’s the very devil! What? Feel how it beats!” He took Dolokhov’s hand and put it on his heart. “What a foot, my dear fellow! What a glance! She is a goddess!” he added in French. “What?”

Dolokhov with a cold smile and a gleam in his handsome insolent eyes looked at him—evidently wishing to get some more amusement out of him.

“Well and when the money’s gone, what then?”

“What then? Eh?” repeated Anatole, sincerely perplexed by a thought of the future. “What then?... Then, I don’t know... But why talk nonsense!” He glanced at his watch. “It’s time!”

Anatole went into the back room.

“Now then! Nearly ready? You’re dawdling!” he shouted to the servants.

Dolokhov put away the money, called a footman whom he ordered to bring something for them to eat and drink before the journey, and went into the room where Khvóstikov and Makárin were sitting.

Anatole lay on the sofa in the study leaning on his elbow and smiling pensively, while his handsome lips muttered tenderly to himself.

“Come and eat something. Have a drink!” Dolokhov shouted to him from the other room.

“I don’t want to,” answered Anatole continuing to smile.

“Come! Balagá is here.”

Anatole rose and went into the dining room. Balagá was a famous sleigh driver who had known Dolokhov and Anatole for some six years and had given them good service with his sleighs. More than once when Anatole’s regiment was stationed at Tver, Anatole had taken Balagá from Tver in the evening, brought him to Moscow by daybreak, and driven him back again

the next night. More than once Balagá had enabled Dolokhov to escape when pursued. More than once Balagá had driven them through the town with Bohemians and “ladykins” as he called the cocottes. More than once in their service Balagá had run over pedestrians and upset vehicles in the streets of Moscow and had always been protected from the consequences by “my gentlemen” as he called them. Balagá had ruined more than one horse in their service. More than once they had beaten him, and more than once they had made him drunk on champagne and Madeira, which he loved; and he knew more than one thing about each of them which would long ago have sent an ordinary man to Siberia. They often called Balagá into their orgies and made him drink and dance, and more than one thousand rubles of their money had passed through his hands. In their service, Balagá risked his skin and his life twenty times a year, and in their service had lost more horses than the money he had from them would buy. But he liked them; liked that mad driving at twelve miles an hour, liked upsetting a driver or running down a pedestrian, and flying at full gallop through the Moscow streets. Balagá liked to hear those wild, tipsy shouts behind him: “Get on! Get on!” when it was impossible to go any faster. He liked giving a painful lash on the neck to some peasant who, more dead than alive, was already hurrying out of his way. “Real gentlemen!” he considered them.

Anatole and Dolokhov liked Balagá too for his masterly driving and because he liked the things they liked. With others Balagá bargained, charging twenty-five rubles for a two-hour drive, and rarely drove himself, generally letting his young men do so. But with “his gentlemen” he always drove himself and never demanded anything for his work. Only a couple of times a year—when Balagá knew from their valets that they had money in hand—he would turn up in the morning quite sober and with a deep bow would ask them to help him. The gentlemen always made him sit down.

“Do help me out, Dolokhov,” or “your excellency,” Balagá would say. “I am quite out of horses. Let me have what you can to go to the fair.”

And Anatole and Dolokhov, when they had money, would give him a thousand or a couple of thousand rubles.

Balagá was a fair-haired, short, and snub-nosed peasant of about twenty-seven; red-faced, with a particularly red thick neck, glittering little eyes, and a small beard. He wore a fine, dark-blue, silk-lined cloth coat over a sheepskin.

On entering the room now Balagá crossed himself, turning toward the front corner of the room, and went up to Dolokhov, holding out a small, black hand.

“Dolokhov!” he said, bowing.

“How d’you do, Balagá? Well, here he is!”

“Good day, your excellency!” Balagá said, again holding out his hand to Anatole who had just come in.

“I say, Balagá,” said Anatole, putting his hands on the man’s shoulders, “do you care for me or not? Eh? Now, do me a service... What horses have you come with? Eh?”

“As your messenger ordered, your special beasts,” replied Balagá.

“Well, listen, Balagá! Drive all three to death but get me there in three hours. Eh?”

“When they are dead, what shall I drive?” said Balagá with a wink.

“Mind, I’ll smash your face in! Don’t make jokes!” cried Anatole, suddenly rolling his eyes.

“Why joke?” said Balagá, laughing. “As if I’d grudge my gentlemen anything! As fast as ever the horses can gallop, so fast we’ll go!”

“Ah!” said Anatole. “Well, sit down.”

“Yes, sit down!” said Dolokhov.

“I’ll stand, Dolokhov.”

“Sit down; nonsense! Have a drink!” said Anatole, and filled a large glass of Madeira for him.

Balagá's eyes sparkled at the sight of the wine. After refusing it for manners' sake, he drank it and wiped his mouth with a red silk handkerchief he took out of his cap.

"And when are we to start, your excellency?"

"Well..." Anatole looked at his watch. "We'll start at once. Mind, Balagá! You'll get there in time? Eh?"

"That depends on our luck in starting, else why shouldn't we be there in time?" replied Balagá. "Didn't we get you to Tver in seven hours? I think you remember that, your excellency?"

"Do you know, one Christmas I drove from Tver," said Anatole, smilingly at the recollection and turning to Makárin who gazed rapturously at him with wide-open eyes. "Will you believe it, Makárka, it took one's breath away, the rate we flew. We came across a train of loaded sleighs and drove right over two of them. Eh?"

"Those were horses!" Balagá continued the tale. "That time I'd harnessed two young side horses with the bay in the shafts," he went on, turning to Dolokhov. "Will you believe it, Dolokhov, those animals flew forty miles? I couldn't hold them in, my hands grew numb in the sharp frost so that I threw down the reins—'Catch hold yourself, your excellency!' says I, and I just tumbled on the bottom of the sleigh and sprawled there. It wasn't a case of urging them on, there was no holding them in till we reached the place. The devils took us there in three hours! Only the near one died of it."

Anatole went out of the room and returned a few minutes later wearing a fur coat girt with a silver belt, and a sable cap jauntily set on one side and very becoming to his handsome face. Having looked in a mirror, and standing before Dolokhov in the same pose he had assumed before it, he lifted a glass of wine.

"Well, good-by, Dolokhov. Thank you for everything and farewell!" said Anatole. "Well, comrades and friends..." he considered for a moment

“... of my youth, farewell!” he said, turning to Makárin and the others.

Though they were all going with him, Anatole evidently wished to make something touching and solemn out of this address to his comrades. He spoke slowly in a loud voice and throwing out his chest slightly swayed one leg.

“All take glasses; you too, Balagá. Well, comrades and friends of my youth, we’ve had our fling and lived and reveled. Eh? And now, when shall we meet again? I am going abroad. We have had a good time—now farewell, lads! To our health! Hurrah!...” he cried and emptying his glass flung it on the floor.

“To your health!” said Balagá who also emptied his glass, and wiped his mouth with his handkerchief.

Makárin embraced Anatole with tears in his eyes.

“Ah, Anatole, how sorry I am to part from you!

“Let’s go. Let’s go!” cried Anatole.

Balagá was about to leave the room.

“No, stop!” said Anatole. “Shut the door; we have first to sit down. That’s the way.”

They shut the door and all sat down.

“Now, quick march, lads!” said Anatole, rising.

Anatole’s valet handed him his sabretache and saber, and they all went out into the vestibule.

“And where’s the fur cloak?” asked Dolokhov. “Hey, valet! Go to the Bohemian girl and ask her for the sable cloak. I have heard what elopements are like,” continued Dolokhov with a wink. “Why, she’ll rush out more dead than alive just in the things she is wearing; if you delay at all there’ll be tears and ‘Papa’ and ‘Mamma,’ and she’s frozen in a minute and must go back—but you wrap the fur cloak round her first thing and carry her to the sleigh.”

The valet brought a woman’s fox-lined cloak.

“Fool, I told you the sable one! Hey, girl, the sable!” he shouted so that his voice rang far through the rooms.

A handsome, slim, and pale-faced Bohemian girl with glittering black eyes and curly blue-black hair, wearing a red shawl, ran out with a sable mantle on her arm.

“Here, I don’t grudge it—take it!” she said, evidently afraid of her master and yet regretful of her cloak.

Dolokhov, without answering, took the cloak, threw it over the girl, and wrapped her up in it.

“That’s the way,” said Dolokhov, “and then so!” and he turned the collar up round her head, leaving only a little of the face uncovered. “And then so, do you see?” and he pushed Anatole’s head forward to meet the gap left by the collar, through which the girl’s brilliant smile was seen.

“Well, good-bye, sweet girl,” said Anatole, kissing her. “Ah, my revels here are over. Remember me to Stëshka. There, goodbye! Good-bye, wish me luck!”

“Well, Baron, may God give you great luck!” said the girl in her Bohemian accent.

Two sleighs were standing before the porch and two young drivers were holding the horses. Balagá took his seat in the front one and holding his elbows high arranged the reins deliberately. Anatole and Dolokhov got in with him. Makárin, Khvóstikov, and a valet seated themselves in the other sleigh.

“Well, are you ready?” asked Balagá.

“Go!” he cried, twisting the reins around his hands, and the sleigh tore down Nikítski Boulevard.

“Tproo! Get out of the way! Hi!... Tproo!...” The shouting of Balagá and the sturdy young fellow seated on the box was all that could be heard. On the Arbát Square the sleigh caught against a carriage; something cracked, shouts were heard, and the sleigh flew along Arbát Street.

After taking a turn along Podnovínski Boulevard, Balagá began to rein in, and turning back drew up at the crossing of the old Konyúsheny Street.

The yard porter jumped down to hold the horses and Anatole and Dolokhov went along the pavement. When they reached the gate Dolokhov whistled. The whistle was answered, and a maid ran out.

“Come into the courtyard or you’ll be seen; she’ll come out directly,” said the maid.

Dolokhov stayed by the gate. Anatole followed the maid into the courtyard, turned the corner, and ran up to the porch.

He was met by Gabriel, Mary Dmitrievna’s gigantic footman.

“Come to the mistress, please,” said the footman in his deep bass, intercepting any retreat.

“To what Mistress? Who are you?” asked Anatole in a breathless whisper.

“Kindly step in, my orders are to bring you in.”

“Anatole! Come back!” shouted Dolokhov. “Betrayed! Back!”

Dolokhov, after Anatole entered, had remained at the wicket gate and was struggling with the yard porter who was trying to lock it. With a last desperate effort, Dolokhov pushed the yard porter aside, and when Anatole ran back, Dolokhov seized Anatole by the arm, pulled him through the wicket, and ran back with him to the sleigh.

Mary Dmitrievna, having found Sonya weeping in the corridor, made her confess everything, and intercepting the note to Natasha, Mary Dmitrievna read it and went into Natasha’s room with it in her hand.

“You shameless good-for-nothing Natasha!” said Mary Dmitrievna. “I won’t hear a word.”

Pushing back Natasha who looked at her with astonished but tearless eyes, Mary Dmitrievna locked Natasha in; and having given orders to the yard porter to admit the persons who would be coming that evening, but not to let them out again, and having told Gabriel, her giant footman to bring

them up to her, she seated herself in the drawing room to await the abductors.

When Gabriel came to inform her that the men who had come had run away again, Mary Dmitrievna rose frowning and clasping her hands behind her paced through the rooms a long time considering what she should do. Toward midnight she went to Natasha's room fingering the key in her pocket. Sonya was sitting sobbing in the corridor. "Mary Dmitrievna, for God's sake let me in to her!" Sonya pleaded, but Mary Dmitrievna unlocked the door and went in without giving her an answer... "Disgusting, abominable... In my house... horrid Natasha, hussy! I'm only sorry for her father!" thought she, trying to restrain her wrath. "Hard as it may be, I'll tell them all to hold their tongues and will hide it from Count Rostov." Mary Dmitrievna entered the room with resolute steps. Natasha lying on the sofa, her head hidden in her hands, and she did not stir. She was in just the same position in which Mary Dmitrievna had left her.

"A nice girl! Very nice, Natasha!" said Mary Dmitrievna. "Arranging meetings with lovers in my house! It's no use pretending: you listen when I speak to you!" And Mary Dmitrievna touched Natasha's arm. "Listen when I speak! You've disgraced yourself like the lowest of hussies. I'd treat you differently, but I'm sorry for your father, so I will conceal it."

Natasha did not change her position, but her whole body heaved with noiseless, convulsive sobs which choked her. Mary Dmitrievna glanced round at Sonya and seated herself on the sofa beside Natasha.

"It's lucky for him that he escaped me, but I'll find him!" Mary Dmitrievna said in her rough voice. "Do you hear what I am saying or not?" she added.

She put her large hand under Natasha's face and turned it toward her. Both Mary Dmitrievna and Sonya were amazed when they saw how Natasha looked. Her eyes were dry and glistening, her lips compressed, and her cheeks sunken.

“Let me be!... What is it to me?... I shall die!” Natasha muttered, wrenching herself from Mary Dmitrievna’s hands with a vicious effort and sinking again into her former position.

“Natasha!” said Mary Dmitrievna. “I wish for your good. Lie still, stay like that then, I won’t touch you. But listen. I won’t tell you how guilty you are. You know that yourself. But when Count Rostov comes back tomorrow what am I to tell him? Eh?”

Again Natasha’s body shook with sobs.

“Suppose he finds out, and your brother, and your betrothed?”

“I have no betrothed: I have refused him!” cried Natasha.

“That’s all the same,” continued Mary Dmitrievna. “If they hear of this, will they let it pass? Count Rostov, I know him... if he challenges Anatole to a duel will that be all right? Eh?”

“Oh, let me be! Why have you interfered at all? Why? Why? Who asked you to?” shouted Natasha, raising herself on the sofa and looking malignantly at Mary Dmitrievna.

“But what did you want?” cried Mary Dmitrievna, growing angry again. “Were you kept under lock and key? Who hindered Anatole’s coming to the house? Why carry you off as if you were some Bohemian singing girl?... Well, if Anatole had carried you off... do you think they wouldn’t have found him? Your father, or brother, or your betrothed? And Anatole’s a scoundrel, a wretch—that’s a fact!”

“Anatole is better than any of you!” exclaimed Natasha getting up. “If you hadn’t interfered... Oh, my God! What is it all? What is it? Sonya, why?... Go away!”

And Natasha burst into sobs with the despairing vehemence with which people bewail disasters they feel they have themselves occasioned. Mary Dmitrievna was to speak again but Natasha cried out:

“Go away! Go away! You all hate and despise me!” and she threw herself back on the sofa.

Mary Dmitrievna went on admonishing Natasha for some time, enjoining her that it must all be kept from her father and assuring her that nobody would know anything about it if only Natasha herself would undertake to forget it all and not let anyone see that something had happened. Natasha did not reply, nor did she sob any longer, but she grew cold and had a shivering fit. Mary Dmitrievna put a pillow under her head, covered her with two quilts, and herself brought her some lime-flower water, but Natasha did not respond to her.

“Well, let her sleep,” said Mary Dmitrievna as she went out of the room supposing Natasha to be asleep.

But Natasha was not asleep; with a pale face and fixed wide-open eyes, she looked straight before her. All that night she did not sleep or weep and did not speak to Sonya who got up and went to her several times.

The next day, Count Rostov returned from his estate near Moscow in time for lunch as he had promised. He was in very good spirits; the affair with the purchaser was going on satisfactorily, and there was nothing to keep him any longer in Moscow, away from Countess Rostov whom he missed. Mary Dmitrievna met him and told him that Natasha had been very unwell the day before and that they had sent for the doctor, but that she was better now. Natasha had not left her room that morning. With compressed and parched lips and dry fixed eyes, she sat at the window, uneasily watching the people who drove past and hurriedly glancing around at anyone who entered the room. She was evidently expecting news of him and that he would come or would write to her.

When Count Rostov came to see Natasha she turned anxiously round at the sound of a man’s footstep, and then her face resumed its cold and malevolent expression. She did not even get up to greet him. “What is the matter with you, my angel? Are you ill?” asked Count Rostov.

After a moment’s silence, Natasha answered: “Yes, ill.”

In reply to Count Rostov's anxious inquiries as to why she was so dejected and whether anything had happened to her betrothed, she assured him that nothing had happened and asked him not to worry. Mary Dmitrievna confirmed Natasha's assurances that nothing had happened. From the pretense of illness, from his daughter's distress, and by the embarrassed faces of Sonya and Mary Dmitrievna, Count Rostov saw clearly that something had gone wrong during his absence, but it was so terrible for him to think that anything disgraceful had happened to his beloved daughter, and he so prized his own cheerful tranquility, that he avoided inquiries and tried to assure himself that nothing, in particular, had happened; and he was only dissatisfied that her indisposition delayed their return to the country.

From the day Helene arrived in Moscow Pierre had been intending to go away somewhere, so as not to be near her. Soon after the Rostovs came to Moscow the effect Natasha had on him made him hasten to carry out his intention. Pierre went to Tver to see the Mason Bazdév's widow, who had long since promised to hand over to him some papers of her deceased husband's.

When Pierre returned to Moscow, Pierre was handed a letter from Marya asking him to come and see her on a matter of great importance relating to Andrei and his betrothed, Natasha. Pierre had been avoiding Natasha because it seemed to him that his feeling for Natasha was stronger than a married man's should be for his friend's fiancée. Yet some fate constantly Pierre and Natasha them together.

"What can have happened? And what can they want with me?" thought Pierre as he dressed to go to Mary Dmitrievna's. "If only Andrei would hurry up and come and marry her!" thought he on his way to the house.

On Tverskóy Boulevard a familiar voice called to him.

"Pierre! Been back long?" someone shouted. Pierre raised his head. In a sleigh drawn by two gray trotting horses that were bespattering the

dashboard with snow, Anatole and his constant companion Makárin dashed past. Anatole was sitting upright in the classic pose of military dandies, the lower part of his face hidden by his beaver collar and his head slightly bent. His face was fresh and rosy, and his white-plumed hat, tilted to one side, disclosed his curled and pomaded hair besprinkled with powdery snow.

“Yes, indeed, that’s a true sage,” thought Pierre. “Anatole sees nothing beyond the pleasure of the moment, nothing troubles him and so he is always cheerful, satisfied, and serene. What wouldn’t I give to be like him!” Pierre thought enviously.

In Mary Dmitrievna’s anteroom, Gabriel, the footman who helped him off with his fur coat, said that Mary Dmitrievna asked him to come to her bedroom.

When Pierre opened the ballroom door he saw Natasha sitting at the window, with a thin, pale, and spiteful face. She glanced round at him, frowned, and left the room with an expression of cold dignity.

“What has happened?” asked Pierre, entering Mary Dmitrievna’s room.

“Fine doings!” answered Mary Dmitrievna. “For fifty-eight years have I lived in this world and never known anything so disgraceful!”

And having put Pierre on his honor not to repeat anything she told him, Mary Dmitrievna informed him that Natasha had refused Andrei without her parents’ knowledge and that the cause of this was Anatole into whose society Helene had thrown her and with whom Natasha had tried to elope during Count Rostov’s absence, in order to be married secretly.

Pierre raised his shoulders and listened open-mouthed to what was told him, scarcely able to believe his ears. That Andrei’s deeply loved affianced wife—the same Natasha who used to be so charming—should give up Andrei for that fool Anatole who was already secretly married (as Pierre knew), and should be so in love with him as to agree to run away with him, was something Pierre could not conceive and could not imagine.

Pierre could not reconcile the charming impression he had of Natasha, whom he had known from a child, with this new conception of her baseness, folly, and cruelty. He thought of Helene. "They are all alike!" Pierre said to himself, reflecting that he was not the only man unfortunate enough to be tied to a bad woman. But still, Pierre pitied Andrei to the point of tears and sympathized with his wounded pride, and the more he pitied his friend the more did he think with contempt and even with disgust of that Natasha who had just passed him in the ballroom with such a look of cold dignity. He did not know that Natasha's soul was overflowing with despair, shame, and humiliation and that it was not her fault that her face happened to assume an expression of calm dignity and severity.

"But how to get married?" said Pierre, in answer to Mary Dmitrievna. "Anatole could not marry—he is married!"

"Things get worse from hour to hour!" ejaculated Mary Dmitrievna. "A nice youth! What a scoundrel! And Natasha's expecting him—expecting him since yesterday. She must be told! Then at least she won't go on expecting him."

After hearing the details of Anatole's marriage from Pierre, and giving vent to her anger against Anatole in words of abuse, Mary Dmitrievna told Pierre why she had sent for him. She was afraid that Count Rostov or Andrei, who might arrive at any moment, if they knew of this affair (which she hoped to hide from them) might challenge Anatole to a duel, and she, therefore, asked Pierre to tell his Andrei in her name to leave Moscow and not dare to let her set eyes on him again. Pierre—only now realizing the danger to Count Rostov, Nicholas, and Andrei—promised to do as she wished. Having briefly and exactly explained her wishes to him, she let him go to the drawing room.

"Mind, Count Rostov knows nothing. Behave as if you know nothing either," Mary Dmitrievna said. "And I will go and tell her it is no use expecting him! And stay to dinner if you care to!" she called after Pierre.

Pierre met Count Rostov, who seemed nervous and upset. That morning Natasha had told him that she had rejected Andrei.

“Troubles, troubles, my dear fellow!” he said to Pierre. “What troubles one has with these girls without their mother! I do so regret having come here... I will be frank with you. Have you heard Natasha has broken off her engagement without consulting anybody? It’s true that this engagement never was much to my liking. Of course, Andrei is an excellent man, but still, with his father’s disapproval they wouldn’t have been happy, and Natasha won’t lack suitors. Still, it has been going on so long, and to take such a step without the father’s or mother’s consent! And now Natasha’s ill, and God knows what! It’s hard, Pierre, hard to manage daughters in their mother’s absence...”

Pierre saw that Count Rostov was much upset and tried to change the subject, but Count Rostov returned to his troubles.

Sonya entered the room with an agitated face.

“Natasha is not quite well; she’s in her room and would like to see you. Mary Dmitrievna is with her and she too asks you to come.”

“Yes, you are a great friend of Andrei, no doubt Natasha wants to send him a message,” said Count Rostov. “Oh, dear! Oh, dear! How happy it all was!”

And clutching the spare gray locks on his temples Count Rostov left the room.

When Mary Dmitrievna told Natasha that Anatole was married, Natasha did not wish to believe it and insisted on having it confirmed by Pierre himself. Sonya told Pierre this as she led him along the corridor to Natasha’s room.

Natasha, pale and stern, was sitting beside Mary Dmitrievna, and her eyes, glittering feverishly, met Pierre with a questioning look the moment he entered. She did not smile or nod, but only gazed fixedly at him, and her

look asked only one thing: was Pierre a friend or like the others an enemy regarding Anatole? As for Pierre, he evidently did not exist for her.

“He knows all about it,” said Mary Dmitrievna pointing to Pierre and addressing Natasha. “Let him tell you whether I have told the truth.”

Natasha looked from one to the other as a hunted and wounded animal looks at the approaching dogs and sportsmen.

“Natasha,” Pierre began, dropping his eyes with a feeling of pity for her and loathing for the thing he had to do, “whether it is true or not should make no difference to you, because...”

“Then it is not true that Anatole is married!”

“Yes, it is true.”

“Has he been married long?” Natasha asked. “On your honor?...”

Pierre gave his word of honor.

“Is he still here?” she asked, quickly.

“Yes, I have just seen him.”

Natasha was unable to speak and made a sign with her hands that they should leave her alone.

Pierre did not stay for dinner, but left the room and went away at once. He drove through the town seeking Anatole, at the thought of whom now the blood rushed to his heart and he felt a difficulty in breathing. He was not at the ice hills, nor the Bohemian girl’s house, nor at Komoneno’s. Pierre drove to the Club. In the Club, all was going on as usual. The members who were assembling for dinner were sitting about in groups; they greeted Pierre and spoke of the town news. The footman having greeted him, knowing his habits and his acquaintances, told him there was a place left for him in the small dining room and that Baron Michael Zakhárych was in the library, but Paul Timoféevich had not yet arrived. One of Pierre’s acquaintances, while they were talking about the weather, asked if Pierre had heard of Anatole’s abduction of Natasha which was talked of in the town, and was it true? Pierre laughed and said it was nonsense for he had just come from the

Rostovs'. Pierre asked everyone about Anatole. One man told him he had not come yet, and another that he was coming to dinner. Pierre felt it strange to see this calm, indifferent crowd of people unaware of what was going on in his soul. He paced through the ballroom, waited till everyone had come, and as Anatole had not turned up did not stay for dinner but drove home.

Anatole, for whom Pierre was looking, dined that day with Dolokhov, consulting him as to how to remedy this unfortunate affair. It seemed to him essential to see Natasha. In the evening Anatole drove to Helene's to discuss with her how to arrange a meeting. When Pierre returned home after vainly hunting all over Moscow, his valet informed him that Anatole was with Countess Rostov. Countess Rostov's drawing room was full of guests.

Pierre without greeting Helene whom he had not seen since his return—at that moment she was more repulsive to him than ever—entered the drawing room and seeing Anatole went up to him.

"Ah, Pierre," said Helene going up to him. "You don't know what a plight our Anatole..."

Helene stopped, seeing in the forward thrust of Pierre's head, in his glowing eyes and his resolute gait, the terrible indications of that rage and strength that she knew and had herself experienced after his duel with Dolokhov.

"Where you are, there is vice and evil!" said Pierre to Helene. "Anatole, come with me! I must speak to you," he added in French.

Anatole glanced round at Helene and rose submissively, ready to follow Pierre. Pierre, taking him by the arm, pulled him toward himself and was leading him from the room.

"If you allow yourself in my drawing room..." whispered Helene, but Pierre did not reply and went out of the room.

Anatole followed him with his usual jaunty step but his face betrayed anxiety.

Having entered his study Pierre closed the door and addressed Anatole without looking at him.

“You promised Natasha to marry her and were about to elope with her, is that so?”

“*My dear,*” answered Anatole (their whole conversation was in French), “I don’t consider myself bound to answer questions put to me in that tone.”

Pierre’s face, already pale, became distorted by fury. He seized Anatole by the collar of his uniform with his big hand and shook him from side to side till Anatole’s face showed a sufficient degree of terror.

“When I tell you that I must talk to you!...” repeated Pierre.

“Come now, this is stupid. What?” said Anatole, fingering a button of his collar that had been wrenched loose with a bit of the cloth.

“You’re a scoundrel and a blackguard, and I don’t know what deprives me of the pleasure of smashing your head with this!” said Pierre, expressing himself so artificially because he was talking French.

Pierre took a heavy paperweight and lifted it threateningly, but at once put it back in its place.

“Did you promise to marry Natasha?”

“I... I didn’t think of it. I never promised, because...”

Pierre interrupted him.

“Have you any letters of hers? Any letters?” Pierre said, moving toward Anatole.

Anatole glanced at him and immediately thrust his hand into his pocket and drew out his pocketbook.

Pierre took the letter Anatole handed him and, pushing aside a table that stood in his way, threw himself on the sofa.

“I shan’t be violent, don’t be afraid!” said Pierre in answer to a frightened gesture of Anatole’s. “First, the letters,” said Pierre, as if repeating a lesson to himself. “Secondly,” he continued after a short pause,

again rising and again pacing the room, “tomorrow you must get out of Moscow.”

“But how can I?...”

“Thirdly,” Pierre continued without listening to him, “you must never breathe a word of what has passed between you and Natasha. I know I can’t prevent you from doing so, but if you have a spark of conscience...” Pierre paced the room several times in silence.

Anatole sat at a table frowning and biting his lips.

“After all, you must understand that besides your pleasure there is such a thing as other people’s happiness and peace and that you are ruining a whole life for the sake of amusing yourself! Amuse yourself with women like Helene—with them you are within your rights, for they know what you want of them. They are armed against you by the same experience of debauchery; but to promise a *maid* to marry her... to deceive, to kidnap... Don’t you understand that it is as mean as beating an old man or a child?...”

Pierre paused and looked at Anatole no longer with an angry but with a questioning look.

“I don’t know about that, eh?” said Anatole, growing more confident as Pierre mastered his wrath. “I don’t know that and don’t want to,” he said, not looking at Pierre and with a slight tremor of his lower jaw, “but you have used such words to me—‘mean’ and so on—which as a man of honor I can’t allow anyone to use.”

Pierre glanced at him with amazement, unable to understand what he wanted.

“Though it was tête-à-tête,” Anatole continued, “still I can’t...”

“Is it satisfaction you want?” said Pierre ironically.

“You could at least take back your words. What? If you want me to do as you wish, eh?”

“I take them back, I take them back!” said Pierre, “and I ask you to forgive me.” Pierre involuntarily glanced at the loose button. “And if you

require money for your journey...”

Anatole smiled. The expression of that base and cringing smile, which Pierre knew so well in Helene, revolted him.

“Oh, vile and heartless brood!” Pierre exclaimed and left the room.

The next day, Anatole left for St. Petersburg.

Pierre drove to Mary Dmitrievna’s to tell her of the fulfillment of her wish that Anatole should be banished from Moscow. The whole house was in a state of alarm and commotion. Natasha was very ill, having, as Mary Dmitrievna told him in secret, poisoned herself the night after she had been told that Anatole was married, with some arsenic she had stealthily procured. After swallowing a little she had been so frightened that she woke Sonya and told her what she had done. The necessary antidotes had been administered in time and Natasha was now out of danger, though still so weak that it was out of the question to move her to the country, and so Countess Rostov had been sent for. Pierre saw the distracted Count Rostov, and Sonya, who had a tear-stained face, but he could not see Natasha.

Pierre dined at the club that day and heard on all sides gossip about the attempted abduction of Natasha. He resolutely denied these rumors, assuring everyone that nothing had happened except that his brother-in-law had proposed to her and been refused. It seemed to Pierre that it was his duty to conceal the whole affair and re-establish Natasha’s reputation.

He was awaiting Andrei’s return with dread and went every day to Baron Bolkonski’s for news of him.

Baron Bolkonski had heard all the rumors current in the town from Lady-in-waiting Bourienne and had read the note to Marya in which Natasha had broken off her engagement. He seemed in better spirits than usual and awaited his son with great impatience.

Some days after Anatole’s departure Pierre received a note from Andrei, informing him of his arrival and asking him to come to see him.

As soon as he reached Moscow, Andrei had received from his father Natasha's note to Marya breaking off her engagement (Lady-in-waiting Bourienne had purloined it from Marya and given it to Baron Bolkonski), and Andrei heard from him the story of Natasha's elopement, with additions.

Andrei had arrived in the evening and Pierre came to see him the next morning. Pierre expected to find Andrei in almost the same state as Natasha and was therefore surprised on entering the drawing room to hear him in the study talking in a loud animated voice about some intrigue going on in St. Petersburg. Baron Bolkonski's voice and another now and then interrupted him. Marya came out to meet Pierre. She sighed, looking toward the door of the room where Andrei was, evidently intending to express her sympathy with his sorrow, but Pierre saw by her face that she was glad both at what had happened and at the way her brother had taken the news of Natasha's faithlessness.

"Andrei says he expected it," she remarked. "I know his pride will not let him express his feelings, but still he has taken it better, far better, than I expected. It had to be..."

"But is it possible that all is really ended?" asked Pierre.

Marya looked at him with astonishment. She did not understand how he could ask such a question. Pierre went into the study. Andrei, greatly changed and plainly in better health, but with a fresh horizontal wrinkle between his brows, stood in civilian dress facing his father and Baron Meshcherski, warmly disputing and vigorously gesticulating. The conversation was about Secretary of State Speransky—the news of whose sudden exile and alleged treachery had just reached Moscow.

"Now Secretary of State Speransky is censured and accused by all who were enthusiastic about him a month ago," Andrei was saying, "and by those who were unable to understand his aims. To judge a man who is in disfavor and to throw on him all the blame for other men's mistakes is very

easy, but I maintain that if anything good has been accomplished in this reign it was done by him and him alone.”

Andrei paused at the sight of Pierre. His face quivered and immediately assumed a vindictive expression.

“Posterity will do him justice,” Andrei concluded, and at once turned to Pierre.

“Well, how are you? Still getting stouter?” Andrei said with animation, but the new wrinkle on his forehead deepened. “Yes, I am well,” Andrei said in answer to Pierre’s question and smiled.

To Pierre, that smile said plainly: “I am well, but my health is now of no use to anyone.”

After a few words to Pierre about the awful roads from the Polish frontier, about people Andrei had met in Switzerland who knew Pierre, and about the tutor Desalles, whom Andrei had brought from abroad to be his son’s tutor, Andrei again joined warmly in the conversation about Secretary of State Speransky which was still going on between the two old men.

“If there were treason or proofs of secret relations with Napoleon, they would have been made public,” Andrei said with warmth and haste. “I do not, and never did, like Secretary of State Speransky personally, but I like justice!”

Pierre now recognized in Andrei a need with which he was only too familiar, to get excited and to have arguments about extraneous matters in order to stifle thoughts that were too oppressive and too intimate. When Baron Meshchérski had left, Andrei took Pierre’s arm and asked him into the room that had been assigned to him. A bed had been made up there, and some open portmanteaus and trunks stood about. Andrei went to one and took out a small casket, from which he drew a packet wrapped in paper. He did it all silently and very quickly. Andrei stood up and coughed. His face was gloomy and his lips compressed.

“Forgive me for troubling you...”

Pierre saw that Andrei was going to speak of Natasha, and his broad face expressed pity and sympathy. This expression irritated Andrei, and in a determined, ringing, and unpleasant tone he continued:

“I have received a refusal from Natasha and have heard reports of Anatole having sought her hand or something of that kind. Is that true?”

“Both true and untrue,” Pierre began; but Andrei interrupted him.

“Here are Natasha’s letters and her portrait,” said Andrei.

He took the packet from the table and handed it to Pierre.

“Give this to Natasha... if you see her.”

“She is very ill,” said Pierre.

“Then she is here still?” said Andrei. “And Anatole?” he added quickly.

“Anatole left long ago. Natasha has been at death’s door.”

“I much regret her illness,” said Andrei; and he smiled like his father, coldly, maliciously, and unpleasantly.

“So Anatole has not honored Natasha with his hand?” said Andrei, and he snorted several times.

“Anatole could not marry, for he was married already,” said Pierre.

Andrei laughed disagreeably, again reminding one of his father.

“And where is Anatole now, if I may ask?” he said.

“He has gone to Peters... But I don’t know,” said Pierre.

“Well, it doesn’t matter,” said Andrei. “Tell Natasha that she was and is perfectly free and that I wish her all that is good.”

Pierre took the packet. Andrei, as if trying to remember whether he had something more to say, or waiting to see if Pierre would say anything, looked fixedly at him.

“I say, do you remember our discussion in St. Petersburg?” asked Pierre, “about...”

“Yes,” returned Andrei hastily. “I said that a fallen woman should be forgiven, but I didn’t say I could forgive her. I can’t.”

“But can this be compared...?” said Pierre.

Andrei interrupted him and cried sharply: "Yes, ask Natasha's hand again, be magnanimous, and so on?... Yes, that would be very noble, but I am unable to follow in that gentleman's footsteps. If you wish to be my friend never speak to me of that... of all that! Well, goodbye. So you'll give Natasha the packet?"

Pierre left the room and went to Baron Bolkonski and Marya.

Baron Bolkonski seemed livelier than usual. Marya was the same as always, but beneath her sympathy for Andrei, Pierre noticed her satisfaction that the engagement had been broken off. Looking at them Pierre realized what contempt and animosity they all felt for the Rostovs, and that it was impossible in their presence even to mention the name of her who could give up Andrei for anyone else.

At dinner, the talk turned on the war, the approach of which was becoming evident. Andrei talked incessantly, arguing now with Baron Bolkonski, now with the Swiss tutor Desalles, and showing an unnatural animation, the cause of which Pierre so well understood.

That same evening Pierre went to the Rostovs' to fulfill the commission entrusted to him. Natasha was in bed, Count Rostov at the club, and Pierre, after giving the letters to Sonya, went to Mary Dmitrievna who was interested to know how Andrei had taken the news. Ten minutes later Sonya came to Mary Dmitrievna.

"Natasha insists on seeing Pierre," said Sonya.

"But how? Are we to take Pierre up to her? The room there has not been tidied up."

"No, she has dressed and gone into the drawing-room," said Sonya.

Mary Dmitrievna only shrugged her shoulders.

"When will her mother come? Natasha has worried me to death! Now mind, don't tell her everything!" said Mary Dmitrievna to Pierre. "One hasn't the heart to scold her, Natasha is so much to be pitied, so much to be pitied."

Natasha was standing in the middle of the drawing-room, emaciated, with a pale set face, but not at all shamefaced as Pierre expected to find her. When he appeared at the door she grew flurried, evidently undecided whether to go to meet him or to wait till he came up.

Pierre hastened to her. He thought she would give him her hand as usual; but she, stepping up to him, stopped, breathing heavily, her arms hanging lifelessly just in the pose she used to stand in when she went to the middle of the ballroom to sing, but with quite a different expression of face.

“Pierre,” Natasha began rapidly, “Andrei was your friend—is your friend,” she corrected herself. (It seemed to her that everything that had once been must now be different.) “He told me once to apply to you...”

Pierre sniffed as he looked at her, but did not speak. Till then he had reproached her in his heart and tried to despise her, but he now felt so sorry for her that there was no room in his soul for reproach.

“Andrei is here now: tell him... to for... forgive me!” She stopped and breathed still more quickly, but did not shed tears.

“Yes... I will tell him,” answered Pierre; “but...”

Pierre did not know what to say.

Natasha was dismayed at the thought of what Pierre might think she had meant.

“No, I know all is over,” she said hurriedly. “No, that can never be. I’m only tormented by the wrong I have done him. Tell Andrei only that I beg him to forgive, forgive, forgive me for everything...”

She trembled all over and sat down on a chair.

A sense of pity Pierre had never before known overflowed his heart.

“I will tell him, I will tell him everything once more,” said Pierre. “But... I should like to know one thing...”

“Know what?” Natasha’s eyes asked.

“I should like to know, did you love...” Pierre did not know how to refer to Anatole and flushed at the thought of him—“did you love that bad man?”

“Don’t call him bad!” said Natasha. “But I don’t know, don’t know at all...”

She began to cry and a still greater sense of pity, tenderness, and love welled up in Pierre. He felt the tears trickle under his spectacles and hoped they would not be noticed.

“We won’t speak of it anymore, my dear,” said Pierre, and his gentle, cordial tone suddenly seemed very strange to Natasha.

“We won’t speak of it, my dear Natasha—I’ll tell Andrei everything; but one thing I beg of you, consider me your friend and if you want help, advice, or simply to open your heart to someone—not now, but when your mind is clearer—think of me!” He took her hand and kissed it. “I shall be happy if it’s in my power...”

Pierre grew confused.

“Don’t speak to me like that, Pierre. I am not worth it!” exclaimed Natasha and turned to leave the room, but Pierre held her hand.

Pierre knew he had something more to say to her. But when he said it he was amazed at his own words.

“Stop, stop! You have your whole life before you,” said he to her.

“Before me? No! All is over for me,” Natasha replied with shame and self-abasement.

“All over?” Pierre repeated. “If I were not myself, but the most handsome, cleverest, and best man in the world, and were free, I would this moment ask on my knees for your hand and your love!”

For the first time in many days, Natasha wept tears of gratitude and tenderness and glancing at Pierre she went out of the room.

Pierre too when she had gone almost ran into the anteroom, restraining tears of tenderness and joy that choked him, and without finding the sleeves of his fur cloak threw it on and got into his sleigh.

“Where to now, your excellency?” asked Gabriel, the coachman.

“Where to?” Pierre asked himself. “Where can I go now? Surely not to the Club or to pay calls?” All men seemed so pitiful, so poor, in comparison with this feeling of tenderness and love he experienced: in comparison with that softened, grateful, last look she had given him through her tears.

“Home!” said Pierre, and despite twenty-two degrees of frost Fahrenheit he threw open the bearskin cloak from his broad chest and inhaled the air with joy.

It was clear and frosty. Above the dirty, ill-lit streets, above the black roofs, stretched the dark starry sky. Only looking up at the sky did Pierre cease to feel how sordid and humiliating were all mundane things compared with the heights to which his soul had just been raised. At the entrance to the Arbát Square, an immense expanse of dark starry sky presented itself to his eyes. Almost in the center of it, above the Prechístenka Boulevard, surrounded and sprinkled on all sides by stars but distinguished from them all by its nearness to the earth, its white light, and its long uplifted tail, shone the enormous and brilliant comet of 1812—the comet which was said to portend all kinds of woes and the end of the world. In Pierre, however, that comet with its long luminous tail aroused no feeling of fear. On the contrary, he gazed joyfully, his eyes moist with tears, at this bright comet which, having traveled in its orbit with inconceivable velocity through immeasurable space, seemed suddenly—like an arrow piercing the earth—to remain fixed in a chosen spot, vigorously holding its tail erect, shining and displaying its white light amid countless other scintillating stars. It seemed to Pierre that this comet fully responded to what was passing in his own softened and uplifted soul, now blossoming into a new life.

BOOK 9: 1812



From the close of the year 1811 an intensified arming and concentrating of the forces of Western Europe began, and in 1812 these forces—millions of men, reckoning those transporting and feeding the army—moved from the west eastwards to the Russian frontier, toward which since 1811 Russian forces had been similarly drawn. On the twelfth of June, 1812, the forces of Western Europe crossed the Russian frontier and war began, that is, an event took place opposed to human reason and to human nature. Millions of men perpetrated against one another such innumerable crimes, frauds, treacheries, thefts, forgeries, issues of false money, burglaries, arson, and murders as in whole centuries are not recorded in the annals of all the law courts of the world, but which those who committed them did not at the time regard as being crimes.

What produced this extraordinary occurrence? What were its causes? The historians tell us with a naive assurance that its causes were the wrongs inflicted on the Duke of Oldenburg, the nonobservance of the Continental System, the ambition of Napoleon, the firmness of The Tzar, the mistakes of the diplomatists, and so on.

Consequently, it would only have been necessary for diplomats between a levee and an evening party, to have taken proper pains and written a more adroit note, or for Napoleon to have written to The Tzar: “My respected

Brother, I consent to restore the duchy to the Duke of Oldenburg”—and there would have been no war.

We can understand that the matter seemed like that to contemporaries. It naturally seemed to Napoleon that the war was caused by England's intrigues (as in fact he said on the island of St. Helene). It naturally seemed to members of the English Parliament that the cause of the war was Napoleon's ambition; to the Duke of Oldenburg, that the cause of the war was the violence done to him; to businessmen that the cause of the war was the Continental System which was ruining Europe; to the generals and old soldiers that the chief reason for the war was the necessity of giving them employment; to the legitimists of that day that it was the need of re-establishing *the best principles*/ and to the diplomatists of that time that it all resulted from the fact that the alliance between Russia and Austria in 1809 had not been sufficiently well concealed from Napoleon, and from the awkward wording of Memorandum No. 178. It is natural that these and a countless and infinite quantity of other reasons, the number depending on the endless diversity of points of view, presented themselves to the men of that day; but to us, to posterity who views the thing that happened in all its magnitude and perceives its plain and terrible meaning, these causes seem insufficient. To us, it is incomprehensible that millions of Christian men killed and tortured each other either because Napoleon was ambitious or because the Tzar was firm, or because England's policy was astute or the Duke of Oldenburg wronged. We cannot grasp what connection such circumstances have with the actual fact of slaughter and violence: why because the Duke was wronged, thousands of men from the other side of Europe killed and ruined the people of Smolénsk and Moscow and were killed by them.

To us, their descendants, who are not historians and are not carried away by the process of research and can therefore regard the event with unclouded common sense, an incalculable number of causes present

themselves. The deeper we delve in search of these causes the more of them we find, and each separate cause or whole series of causes appears to us equally valid in itself and equally false by its insignificance compared to the magnitude of the events, and by its impotence—apart from the cooperation of all the other coincident causes—to occasion the event. To us, the wish or objection of this or that French corporal to serve a second term appears as much a cause as Napoleon's refusal to withdraw his troops beyond the Vistula and to restore the duchy of Oldenburg; for had he not wished to serve, and had a second, a third, and a thousandth corporal and private also refused, there would have been so many fewer men in Napoleon's army and the war could not have occurred.

Had Napoleon not taken offense at the demand that he should withdraw beyond the Vistula, and not ordered his troops to advance, there would have been no war; but had all his sergeants objected to serving a second term then also there could have been no war. Nor could there have been a war had there been no English intrigues and no Duke of Oldenburg and had the Tzar not felt insulted, and had there not been an autocratic government in Russia, or a Revolution in France and a subsequent dictatorship and Empire, or all the things that produced the French Revolution, and so on. Without each of these causes, nothing could have happened. So all these causes—myriads of causes—coincided to bring it about. And so there was no one cause for that occurrence, but it had to occur because it had to. Millions of men, renouncing their human feelings and reason, had to go from west to east to slay their fellows, just as some centuries previously hordes of men had come from the east to the west, slaying their fellows.

The actions of Napoleon and the Tzar, on whose words the event seemed to hang, were as little voluntary as the actions of any soldier who was drawn into the campaign by lot or by conscription. This could not be otherwise, for in order that the will of Napoleon and the Tzar (on whom the event seemed to depend) should be carried out, the concurrence of

innumerable circumstances was needed without any one of which the event could not have taken place. It was necessary that millions of men in whose hands lay the real power—the soldiers who fired or transported provisions and guns—should consent to carry out the will of these weak individuals, and should have been induced to do so by an infinite number of diverse and complex causes.

We are forced to fall back on fatalism as an explanation of irrational events (that is to say, events the reasonableness of which we do not understand). The more we try to explain such events in history reasonably, the more unreasonable and incomprehensible they become to us.

Each man lives for himself, using his freedom to attain his personal aims, and feels with his whole being that he can now do or abstain from doing this or that action; but as soon as he has done it, that action performed at a certain moment in time becomes irrevocable and belongs to history, in which it has not a free but a predestined significance.

There are two sides to the life of every man, his individual life, which is the more free the more abstract its interests, and his elemental hive life in which he inevitably obeys laws laid down for him.

Man lives consciously for himself, but is an unconscious instrument in the attainment of the historic, universal, aims of humanity. A deed done is irrevocable, and its result coinciding in time with the actions of millions of other men assumes a historic significance. The higher a man stands on the social ladder, the more people he is connected with, and the more power he has over others, the more evident is the predestination and inevitability of his every action.

“The king’s heart is in the hands of the Lord.”

A king is history’s slave.

History, that is, the unconscious, general, hive life of mankind, uses every moment of the life of kings as a tool for its own purposes.

Though Napoleon at that time, in 1812, was more convinced than ever that it depended on him, *to shed (or not to shed) the blood of his peoples*—as the Tzar expressed it in the last letter Napoleon wrote him—he had never been so much in the grip of inevitable laws, which compelled him, while thinking that he was acting on his own volition, to perform for the hive life—that is to say, for history—whatever had to be performed.

The people of the west moved eastwards to slay their fellow men and by the law of coincidence thousands of minute causes fitted in and coordinated to produce that movement and war: reproaches for the nonobservance of the Continental System, the Duke of Oldenburg's wrongs, the movement of troops into Prussia—undertaken (as it seemed to Napoleon) only for the purpose of securing an armed peace, Napoleon's love and habit of war coinciding with his people's inclinations, allurements by the grandeur of the preparations, and the expenditure on those preparations and the need of obtaining advantages to compensate for that expenditure, the intoxicating honors he received in Dresden, the diplomatic negotiations which, in the opinion of contemporaries, were carried on with a sincere desire to attain peace, but which only wounded the self-love of both sides, and millions of other causes that adapted themselves to the event that was happening or coincided with it.

When an apple has ripened and falls, why does it fall? Because of its attraction to the earth, because its stalk withers, because it is dried by the sun, because it grows heavier, because the wind shakes it, or because the boy standing below wants to eat it?

Nothing is the cause. All this is only the coincidence of conditions in which all vital organic and elemental events occur. And the botanist who finds that the apple falls because the cellular tissue decays and so forth is equally right with the child who stands under the tree and says the apple fell because he wanted to eat it and prayed for it. Equally right or wrong is he who says that Napoleon went to Moscow because he wanted to, and

perished because the Tzar desired his destruction and he who says that an undermined hill weighing a million tons fell because the last laborer struck it for the last time with his mattock. In historic events, the so-called great men are labels giving names to events, and like labels they have but the smallest connection with the event itself.

Every act of theirs, which appears to them an act of their own will, is in a historical sense involuntary and is related to the whole course of history and predestined from eternity.

On the twenty-ninth of May, Napoleon left Dresden, where he had spent three weeks surrounded by a court that included barons, dukes, kings, and even an Emperor. Before leaving, Napoleon showed favor to the sovereigns who had deserved it, reprimanded the kings and barons with whom he was dissatisfied, presented pearls and diamonds of his own—that is, which he had taken from other kings—to the Empress of Austria, and having, as his historian tells us, tenderly embraced Empress Marie Louise—who regarded him as her husband, though he had left another wife in Paris—left her grieved by the parting which she seemed hardly able to bear. Though the diplomatists still firmly believed in the possibility of peace and worked zealously to that end, and though Napoleon himself wrote a letter to the Tzar, calling him *my friend*, and sincerely assured him that he did not want war and would always love and honor him—yet he set off to join his army, and at every station gave fresh orders to accelerate the movement of his troops from west to east. He went in a traveling coach with six horses, surrounded by pages, aides-de-camp, and an escort, along the road to Posen, Thorn, Danzig, and Königsberg. At each of these towns, thousands of people met him with excitement and enthusiasm.

The army was moving from west to east, and relays of six horses carried him in the same direction. On the tenth of June, coming up with the army, he spent the night in apartments prepared for him on the estate of a Polish count in the Vilkavisski forest.

The next day, overtaking the army, he went in a carriage to the Niemen River, and, changing into a Polish uniform, he drove to the riverbank in order to select a place for the crossing.

Seeing, on the other side, some Cossacks and the wide-spreading steppes in the midst of which lay the holy city of Moscow, the capital of a realm such as the Scythia into which Catherine the Great had marched—Napoleon unexpectedly, and contrary alike to strategic and diplomatic considerations, ordered an advance, and the next day his army began to cross the Niemen.

Early in the morning of the twelfth of June Napoleon came out of his tent, which was pitched that day on the steep left bank of the Niemen, and looked through a spyglass at the streams of his troops pouring out of the Vilkaviski forest and flowing over the three bridges thrown across the river. The troops, knowing of Napoleon's presence, were on the lookout for him, and when they caught sight of a figure in an overcoat and a cocked hat standing apart from his suite in front of his tent on the hill, they threw up their caps and shouted: "*Long live Napoleon!*" and one after another poured in a ceaseless stream out of the vast forest that had concealed them and, separating, flowed on and on by the three bridges to the other side.

"Now we'll go into action. Oh, when he takes it in hand himself, things get hot... by heaven!... There he is!... *Long live Napoleon!* So these are the steppes of Asia! It's a nasty country all the same. *Goodbye*, Beauché; I'll keep the best palace in Moscow for you! *Goodbye*. Good luck!... Did you see Napoleon? *Long live Napoleon!... Long live Napoleon!*—If they make me Governor of India, Général Gérard, I'll make you Minister of Kashmir—that's settled. *Long live Napoleon!* Hurrah! hurrah! hurrah! The Cossacks—those rascals—see how they run! *Long live Napoleon!* There he is, do you see him? I've seen him twice, as I see you now. The little corporal... I saw him give the cross to one of the veterans... *Long live Napoleon!*" came the voices of men, old and young, of most diverse characters and social

positions. On the faces of all was one common expression of joy at the commencement of the long-expected campaign and of rapture and devotion to the man in the gray coat who was standing on the hill.

On the thirteenth of June a rather small, thoroughbred Arab horse was brought to Napoleon. He mounted it and rode at a gallop to one of the bridges over the Niemen, deafened continually by incessant and rapturous acclamations which he evidently endured only because it was impossible to forbid the soldiers to express their love of him by such shouting, but the shouting which accompanied him everywhere disturbed him and distracted him from the military cares that had occupied him from the time he joined the army. Napoleon rode across one of the swaying pontoon bridges to the farther side, turned sharply to the left, and galloped in the direction of Kóvno, preceded by enraptured, mounted chasseurs of the Guard who, breathless with delight, galloped ahead to clear a path for him through the troops. On reaching the broad river Víliya, he stopped near a regiment of Polish light cavalry stationed by the river.

“Long live!” shouted the Poles, ecstatically, breaking their ranks and pressing against one another to see him.

Napoleon looked up and down the river, dismounted, and sat down on a log that lay on the bank. At a mute sign from him, a telescope was handed him which he rested on the back of a happy page who had run up to him, and he gazed at the opposite bank. Then he became absorbed in a map laid out on the logs. Without lifting his head Napoleon said something, and two of his aides-de-camp galloped off to the Polish light cavalry.

“What? What did he say?” was heard in the ranks of the Polish light cavalry when one of the aides-de-camp rode up to them.

The order was to find a ford and cross the river. The colonel of the Polish light cavalry, a handsome old man, flushed and, fumbling in his speech from excitement, asked the aide-de-camp whether he would be permitted to swim the river with his light cavalry instead of seeking a ford.

In evident fear of refusal, like a boy asking for permission to get on a horse, he begged to be allowed to swim across the river before Napoleon's eyes. The aide-de-camp replied that probably Napoleon would not be displeased at this excess of zeal.

As soon as the aide-de-camp had said this, the old mustached officer, with a happy face and sparkling eyes, raised his saber, shouted "*Long live!*" and, commanding the light cavalry to follow him, spurred his horse and galloped into the river. He gave an angry thrust to his horse, which had grown restive under him, and plunged into the water, heading for the deepest part where the current was swift. Hundreds of light cavalry galloped in after him. It was cold and uncanny in the rapid current in the middle of the stream, and the light cavalry caught hold of one another as they fell off their horses. Some of the horses were drowned and some of the men; the others tried to swim on, some in the saddle and some clinging to their horses' manes. They tried to make their way forward to the opposite bank and, though there was a ford one-third of a mile away, were proud that they were swimming and drowning in this river under the eyes of the man who sat on the log and was not even looking at what they were doing. When the aide-de-camp, having returned and choosing an opportune moment, ventured to draw Napoleon's attention to the devotion of the Poles to his person, the little man in the gray overcoat got up and, having summoned Chief of Staff Berthier, began pacing up and down the bank with him, giving him instructions and occasionally glancing disapprovingly at the drowning light cavalry who distracted his attention.

For Napoleon, it was no new conviction that his presence in any part of the world, from Africa to the steppes of Muscovy alike, was enough to dumfound people and impel them to insane self-oblivion. Napoleon called for his horse and rode to his quarters.

Some forty light cavalymen were drowned in the river, though boats were sent to their assistance. The majority struggled back to the bank from

which they had started. The colonel and some of his men got across and with difficulty clambered out on the further bank. And as soon as they had got out, in their soaked and streaming clothes, they shouted “*Long live!*” and looked ecstatically at the spot where Napoleon had been but where he no longer was and at that moment considered themselves happy.

That evening, between issuing one order that the forged Russian paper money prepared for use in Russia should be delivered as quickly as possible and another that a Saxon should be shot, on whom a letter containing information about the orders to the French army had been found, Napoleon also gave instructions that the Polish colonel who had needlessly plunged into the river should be enrolled in the *Legion of honor* of which Napoleon was himself the head.

Those whom (God) wishes to destroy he drives mad.

The Tzar had, meanwhile, been in Vílna for more than a month, reviewing troops and holding maneuvers. Nothing was ready for the war that everyone expected and to prepare for which the Tzar had come from St. Petersburg. There was no general plan of action. The vacillation between the various plans that were proposed had even increased after the Tzar had been at headquarters for a month. Each of the three armies had its own Marshal, but there was no supreme commander of all the forces, and the Tzar did not assume that responsibility himself.

The longer the Tzar remained in Vílna the less everybody—tired of waiting—prepared for the war. All the efforts of those who surrounded the Tzar seemed directed merely at making him spend his time pleasantly and forget that war was impending.

In June, after many balls and fetes given by the Polish magnates, by the courtiers, and by the Tzar himself, it occurred to one of the Polish aides-de-camp in attendance that a dinner and ball should be given for the Tzar by his aides-de-camp. This idea was eagerly received. The Tzar gave his consent. The aides-de-camp collected money by subscription. The lady who

was thought to be most pleasing to the Tzar was invited to act as hostess. General General Bennigsen, being a landowner in the Vılna province, offered his country house for the fete, and the thirteenth of June was fixed for a ball, dinner, regatta, and fireworks at Zakret, General General Bennigsen's country seat.

The very day that Napoleon issued the order to cross the Niemen, and his vanguard, driving off the Cossacks, crossed the Russian frontier, The Tzar spent the evening at the entertainment given by his aides-de-camp at General Bennigsen's country house.

It was a gay and brilliant fete. Connoisseurs of such matters declared that rarely had so many beautiful women been assembled in one place. Helene was present among other Russian ladies who had followed the sovereign from St. Petersburg to Vılna and eclipsed the refined Polish ladies with her massive, so-called Russian type of beauty. The Tzar noticed her and honored her with a dance.

Boris, having left his wife in Moscow and being for the present *as a boy* (as he phrased it), was also there and, though not an aide-de-camp, had subscribed a large sum toward the expenses. Boris, having married Julie, was now a rich man who had risen to high honors and no longer sought patronage but stood on an equal footing with the highest of those of his own age. He was meeting Helene in Vılna after not having seen her for a long time and did not recall the past, but as Helene was enjoying the favors of a very important personage and Boris had only recently married, they met as good friends of long-standing.

At midnight dancing was still going on. Helene, not having a suitable partner, offered to dance the mazurka with Boris. They were the third couple. Boris, coolly looking at Helene's dazzling bare shoulders which emerged from a dark, gold-embroidered, gauze gown, talked to her of old acquaintances and at the same time, unaware of it himself and unnoticed by others, never for an instant ceased to observe the Tzar who was in the same

room. The Tzar was not dancing, he stood in the doorway, stopping now one pair and now another with gracious words which he alone knew how to utter.

As the mazurka began, Boris saw that General Baleshev, one of those in closest attendance on the Tzar, went up to him and contrary to court etiquette stood near him while he was talking to a Polish lady. Having finished speaking to her, the Tzar looked inquiringly at General Baleshev and, evidently understanding that he only acted thus because there were important reasons for so doing, nodded slightly to the lady and turned to him. Hardly had General Baleshev begun to speak before a look of amazement appeared on the Tzar's face. He took General Baleshev by the arm and crossed the room with him, unconsciously clearing a path seven yards wide as the people on both sides made way for him. Boris noticed War Minister Arakchéev's excited face when the sovereign went out with General Baleshev. War Minister Arakchéev looked at the Tzar from under his brow and, sniffing with his red nose, stepped forward from the crowd as if expecting the Tzar to address him. (Boris understood that War Minister Arakchéev envied General Baleshev and was displeased that evidently, important news had reached the Tzar otherwise than through himself.)

But the Tzar and General Baleshev passed out into the illuminated garden without noticing War Minister Arakchéev who, holding his sword and glancing wrathfully around, followed some twenty paces behind them.

All the time Boris was going through the figures of the mazurka, he was worried by the question of what news General Baleshev had brought and how he could find it out before others. In the figure in which he had to choose two ladies, he whispered to Helene that he meant to choose Countess Potocka who, he thought, had gone out onto the veranda, and glided over the parquet to the door opening into the garden, where, seeing General Baleshev and the Tzar returning to the veranda, he stood still. They

were moving toward the door. Boris, fluttering as if he had not had time to withdraw, respectfully pressed close to the doorpost with bowed head.

The Tzar, with the agitation of one who has been personally affronted, was finishing with these words:

“That Napoleon, to enter Russia without declaring war! I will not make peace as long as a single armed enemy remains in my country!” It seemed to Boris that it gave the Tzar pleasure to utter these words. He was satisfied with the form in which he had expressed his thoughts but displeased that Boris had overheard it.

“Let no one know of it!” the Tzar added with a frown.

Boris understood that this was meant for him and, closing his eyes, slightly bowed his head. The Tzar re-entered the ballroom and remained there for about another half-hour.

Boris was thus the first to learn the news that the French army had crossed the Niemen and, thanks to this, was able to show certain important personages that much that was concealed from others was usually known to him, and by this means he rose higher in their estimation.

The unexpected news of the French having crossed the Niemen River was particularly startling after a month of unfulfilled expectations, and at a ball. On first receiving the news, under the influence of indignation and resentment the Tzar had found a phrase that pleased him, fully expressed his feelings, and has since become famous. On returning home at two o'clock that night he sent for his secretary, Shishkóv, and told him to write an order to the troops and a rescript to General Saltykóv, in which he insisted on the words being inserted that he would not make peace so long as a single armed Frenchman remained on Russian soil.

The next day, the following letter was sent to Napoleon:

My friend,

Yesterday I learned that, despite the loyalty with which I have kept my engagements with Your Majesty, your troops have crossed the Russian frontier, and I have this moment received from St. Petersburg a note, in which Count Lauriston informs me, as a reason for this aggression, that Your Majesty has considered yourself to be in a state of war with me from the time Baron Kurákin asked for his passports. The reasons on which the Duc de Bassano based his refusal to deliver them to Baron Kurákin would never have led me to suppose that that could serve as a pretext for aggression. In fact, the ambassador, as Baron Kurákin himself has declared, was never authorized to make that demand, and as soon as I was informed of it I let him know how much I disapproved of it and ordered him to remain at his post. If Your Majesty does not intend to shed the blood of our peoples for such a misunderstanding and consents to withdraw your troops from Russian territory, I will regard what has passed as not having occurred and an understanding between us will be possible. In the contrary case, Your Majesty, I shall see myself forced to repel an attack that nothing on my part has provoked. It still depends on Your Majesty to preserve humanity from the calamity of another war.

I am, etc.,

(signed) THE TZAR

At two in the morning of the fourteenth of June, the Tzar, having sent for General Baleshev and read him his letter to Napoleon, ordered him to take it and hand it personally to Napoleon. When dispatching General Baleshev, the Tzar repeated to him the words that he would not make peace so long as a single armed enemy remained on Russian soil and told him to transmit those words to Napoleon. The Tzar did not insert them in his letter to Napoleon, because with his characteristic tact he felt it would be injudicious to use them at a moment when a last attempt at reconciliation was being made, but he definitely instructed General Baleshev to repeat them personally to Napoleon.

Having set off in the small hours of the fourteenth, accompanied by a bugler and two Cossacks, General Baleshev reached the French outposts at the village of Rykónty, on the Russian side of the Niemen, by dawn. There he was stopped by French cavalry sentinels.

A French noncommissioned officer of hussars, in crimson uniform and a shaggy cap, shouted to the approaching General Baleshev to halt. General Baleshev did not do so at once but continued to advance along the road at a walking pace.

The noncommissioned officer frowned and, muttering words of abuse, advanced his horse's chest against General Baleshev, put his hand to his saber, and shouted rudely at the Russian general, asking: was he deaf that he did not do as he was told? General Baleshev mentioned who he was. The noncommissioned officer began talking with his comrades about regimental matters without looking at General Baleshev.

After living at the seat of the highest authority and power, after conversing with the Tzar less than three hours before, and in general being accustomed to the respect due to his rank in the service, General Baleshev found it very strange here on Russian soil to encounter this hostile, and still more this disrespectful, application of brute force to himself.

The sun was only just appearing from behind the clouds, the air was fresh and dewy. A herd of cattle was being driven along the road from the village, and over the fields, the larks rose trilling, one after another, like bubbles rising in water.

General Baleshev looked around him, awaiting the arrival of an officer from the village. The Russian Cossacks and bugler and the French hussars looked silently at one another from time to time.

A French colonel of hussars, who had evidently just left his bed, came riding from the village on a handsome sleek gray horse, accompanied by two hussars. The officer, the soldiers, and their horses all looked smart and well-kept.

It was that first period of a campaign when troops are still in full trim, almost like that of peacetime maneuvers, but with a shade of martial swagger in their clothes, and a touch of the gaiety and spirit of enterprise which always accompanies the opening of a campaign.

The French colonel with difficulty repressed a yawn, but was polite and evidently understood General Baleshev's importance. He led him past his soldiers and behind the outposts and told him that his wish to be presented to Napoleon would most likely be satisfied immediately, as Napoleon's quarters were, he believed, not far off.

They rode through the village of Rykónty, past tethered French hussar horses, sentinels, and men who saluted their colonel and stared with curiosity at a Russian uniform and came out at the other end of the village. The colonel said that the commander of the division was a mile and a quarter away and would receive General Baleshev and conduct him to his destination.

The sun had by now risen and shone gaily on the bright verdure.

They had hardly ridden up a hill, past a tavern, before they saw a group of horsemen coming toward them. In front of the group, on a black horse with saddle trim that glittered in the sun, rode a tall man with plumes in his hat and black hair curling down to his shoulders. He wore a red mantle and stretched his long legs forward in French fashion. This man rode toward General Baleshev at a gallop, his plumes flowing and his gems and gold lace glittering in the bright June sunshine.

General Baleshev was only two horses' length from the equestrian with the bracelets, plumes, necklaces, and gold embroidery, who was galloping toward him with a theatrically solemn countenance, when Julner, the French colonel, whispered respectfully: "The King of Naples!" It was, in fact, Général Murat, now called "King of Naples." Though it was quite incomprehensible why he should be called "King of Naples", he was called so and was himself convinced that he was so, and therefore assumed a more

solemn and important air than formerly. Général Murat was so sure that he really was the King of Naples that when, on the eve of his departure from that city, while walking through the streets with his wife, some Italians called out to him: “*Long live the king!*” he turned to his wife with a pensive smile and said: “Poor fellows, they don’t know that I am leaving them tomorrow!”

But though Général Murat firmly believed himself to be King of Naples and pitied the grief felt by the subjects he was abandoning, latterly, after he had been ordered to return to his military service—and especially since Général Murat’s last interview with Napoleon in Danzig, when Napoleon had told him: “I made you King in Naples that you should reign in my way, but not in yours!”—Général Murat had cheerfully taken up his familiar military role, and—like a well-fed but not overweight horse that feels himself in harness and grows skittish between the shafts—Général Murat dressed up in clothes as variegated and expensive as possible, and gaily and contentedly galloped along the roads of Poland, without himself knowing why or whither.

On seeing the Russian Général Murat throw back his head, with its long hair curling to his shoulders, in a majestically royal manner, and looked inquiringly at the French colonel. The colonel respectfully informed Général Murat of General Baleshev’s mission, whose name he could not pronounce.

“De Bal-machève!” said Général Murat (overcoming by his assurance the difficulty that had presented itself to the colonel). “Charmed to make your acquaintance, general!” he added, with a gesture of kingly condescension.

As soon as Général Murat began to speak loud and fast his royal dignity instantly forsook him, and without noticing it he passed into his natural tone of good-natured familiarity. He laid his hand on the withers of General Baleshev’s horse and said:

“Well, general, it all looks like war,” as if regretting a circumstance of which he was unable to judge.

“Your Majesty, Général Murat,” replied General Baleshev, “my master, the Tzar, does not desire war and as Your Majesty sees...” said General Baleshev, using the words *Your Majesty* at every opportunity, with the affectation unavoidable in frequently addressing one to whom the title was still a novelty.

Général Murat’s face beamed with stupid satisfaction as he listened to “Monsieur de Bal-machève.” But *royalty has its obligations!* and he felt it incumbent on him, as a king and an ally, to confer on state affairs with Napoleon’s envoy. He dismounted, took General Baleshev’s arm, and moving a few steps away from his suite, which waited respectfully, began to pace up and down with him, trying to speak significantly. Général Murat referred to the fact that Napoleon had resented the demand that he should withdraw his troops from Prussia, especially when that demand became generally known and the dignity of France was thereby offended.

General Baleshev replied that there was “nothing offensive in the demand because...” but Général Murat interrupted him.

“Then you don’t consider Napoleon the aggressor?” he asked unexpectedly, with a kindly and foolish smile.

General Baleshev told him why he considered Napoleon to be the originator of the war.

“Oh, my dear general!” Général Murat again interrupted him, “with all my heart I wish our leaders may arrange the affair between them, and that the war begun by no wish of mine may finish as quickly as possible!” said he, in the tone of a servant who wants to remain good friends with another despite a quarrel between their masters.

And Général Murat went on to inquiries about the Grand Duke and the state of his health, and to reminiscences of the gay and amusing times he had spent with him in Naples. Then suddenly, as if remembering his royal

dignity, Général Murat solemnly drew himself up, assumed the pose in which he had stood at his coronation, and, waving his right arm, said:

“I won’t detain you longer, General Baleshev. I wish success to your mission,” and with his embroidered red mantle, his flowing feathers, and his glittering ornaments, he rejoined his suite who were respectfully awaiting him.

General Baleshev rode on, supposing from Général Murat’s words that he would very soon be brought before Napoleon himself. But instead of that, at the next village the sentinels of War Minister Davout’s infantry corps detained him as the pickets of the vanguard had done, and an adjutant of the corps commander, who was fetched, conducted him into the village to War Minister Davout.

War Minister Davout was to Napoleon what War Minister Arakchéev was to the Tzar—though not a coward like War Minister Arakchéev, Davout was as precise, as cruel, and as unable to express his devotion to his monarch except by cruelty.

In the organism of states, such men are necessary, as wolves are necessary in the organism of nature, and they always exist, always appear, and always hold their own, however incongruous their presence and their proximity to the head of the government may be. This inevitability alone can explain how the cruel War Minister Arakchéev, who tore out a grenadier’s mustache with his own hands, whose weak nerves rendered him unable to face danger, and who was neither an educated man nor a courtier, was able to maintain his powerful position with The Tzar, whose own character was chivalrous, noble, and gentle.

General Baleshev found War Minister Davout seated on a barrel in the shed of a peasant’s hut, writing—he was auditing accounts. Better quarters could have been found him, but War Minister Davout was one of those men who purposely put themselves in the most depressing conditions to have a justification for being gloomy. For the same reason, they are always hard at

work and in a hurry. “How can I think of the bright side of life when, as you see, I am sitting on a barrel and working in a dirty shed?” the expression on his face seemed to say. The chief pleasure and necessity of such men, when they encounter anyone who shows animation, is to flaunt their own dreary, persistent activity. War Minister Davout allowed himself that pleasure when General Baleshev was brought in. He became still more absorbed in his task when the Russian general entered, and after glancing over his spectacles at General Baleshev’s face, which was animated by the beauty of the morning and by his talk with Général Murat, he did not rise or even stir, but scowled still more and sneered malevolently.

When he noticed in General Baleshev’s face the disagreeable impression this reception produced, War Minister Davout raised his head and coldly asked what he wanted.

Thinking he could have been received in such a manner only because War Minister Davout did not know that he was adjutant general to the Tzar and even his envoy to Napoleon, General Baleshev hastened to inform him of his rank and mission. Contrary to his expectation, War Minister Davout, after hearing him, became still surlier and ruder.

“Where is your dispatch?” War Minister Davout inquired. “Give it to me. I will send it to Napoleon.”

General Baleshev replied that he had been ordered to hand it personally to Napoleon.

“Your Tzar’s orders are obeyed in your army, but here,” said War Minister Davout, “you must do as you’re told.”

And, as if to make the Russian general still more conscious of his dependence on brute force, War Minister Davout sent an adjutant to call the officer on duty.

General Baleshev took out the packet containing the Tzar’s letter and laid it on the table (made of a door with its hinges still hanging on it, laid

across two barrels). War Minister Davout took the packet and read the inscription.

“You are perfectly at liberty to treat me with respect or not,” protested General Baleshev, “but permit me to observe that I have the honor to be adjutant general to His Majesty the Tzar...”

War Minister Davout glanced at him silently and plainly derived pleasure from the signs of agitation and confusion which appeared on General Baleshev’s face.

“You will be treated as is fitting,” said he and, putting the packet in his pocket, left the shed.

A minute later the War Minister’s adjutant, came in and conducted General Baleshev to the quarters assigned to him.

That day War Minister Davout dined with the general, at the same board on the barrels.

The next day, War Minister Davout rode out early and, after asking General Baleshev to come to him, peremptorily requested him to remain there, to move on with the baggage train should orders come for it to move, and to talk to no one except his adjutant.

After four days of solitude, ennui, and consciousness of his impotence and insignificance—particularly acute by contrast with the sphere of power in which he had so lately moved—and after several marches with the general’s baggage and the French army, which occupied the whole district, General Baleshev was brought to Vίlna—now occupied by the French—through the very gate by which he had left it four days previously.

The next day, the imperial gentleman-in-waiting, the War Minister’s adjutant came to General Baleshev and informed him of the Tzar Napoleon’s wish to honor him with an audience.

Four days before, sentinels of the Preobrazhénsk regiment had stood in front of the house to which General Baleshev was conducted, and now two French grenadiers stood there in blue uniforms unfastened in front and with

shaggy caps on their heads, and an escort of hussars and light cavalry and a brilliant suite of aides-de-camp, pages, and generals, who were waiting for Napoleon to come out, were standing at the porch, round his saddle horse and his Mameluke horse. Napoleon received General Baleshev in the very house in Vîlna from which The Tzar had dispatched him on his mission.

Though General Baleshev was used to imperial pomp, he was amazed at the luxury and magnificence of Napoleon's court.

The War Minister's adjutant showed him into a big reception room where many generals, gentlemen-in-waiting, and Polish magnates—several of whom General Baleshev had seen at the court of the Tzar—were waiting. Duroc said that Napoleon would receive General Baleshev before going for his ride.

After some minutes, the gentleman-in-waiting who was on duty came into the great reception room and, bowing politely, asked General Baleshev to follow him.

General Baleshev went into a small reception room, one door of which led into a study, the very one from which the Tzar had dispatched him on his mission. He stood a minute or two, waiting. He heard hurried footsteps beyond the door, both halves of it were opened rapidly; all was silent and then from the study, the sound was heard of other steps, firm and resolute—they were those of Napoleon. He had just finished dressing for his ride, and wore a blue uniform, opening in front over a white waistcoat so long that it covered his rotund stomach, white leather breeches tightly fitting the fat thighs of his short legs, and Hessian boots. Napoleon's short hair had evidently just been brushed, but one lock hung down in the middle of his broad forehead. His plump white neck stood out sharply above the black collar of his uniform, and he smelled of Eau de Cologne. His full face, rather young-looking, with its prominent chin, wore a gracious and majestic expression of imperial welcome.

Napoleon entered briskly, with a jerk at every step and his head slightly thrown back. His whole short corpulent figure with broad thick shoulders, and chest and stomach involuntarily protruding, had that imposing and stately appearance one sees in men of forty who live in comfort. It was evident, too, that he was in the best of spirits that day.

Napoleon nodded in answer to General Baleshev's low and respectful bow and coming up to him at once began speaking like a man who values every moment of his time and does not condescend to prepare what he has to say but is sure he will always say the right thing and say it well.

"Good day, General Baleshev!" said Napoleon. "I have received the letter you brought from the Tzar and am very glad to see you." Napoleon glanced with his large eyes into General Baleshev's face and immediately looked past him.

It was plain that General Baleshev's personality did not interest him at all. Evidently only what took place within *his own* mind interested Napoleon. Nothing outside himself had any significance for him, because everything in the world, it seemed to him, depended entirely on his will.

"I do not, and did not, desire war," Napoleon continued, "but it has been forced on me. Even *now*" (he emphasized the word) "I am ready to receive any explanations you can give me."

And he began clearly and concisely to explain his reasons for dissatisfaction with the Russian government. Judging by the calmly moderate and amicable tone in which Napoleon spoke, General Baleshev was firmly persuaded that he wished for peace and intended to enter into negotiations.

When Napoleon, having finished speaking, looked inquiringly at the Russian envoy, General Baleshev began a speech he had prepared long before: "Sire! The Tzar, my master..." but the sight of Napoleon's eyes bent on him confused him. "You are flurried—compose yourself!" Napoleon

seemed to say, as with a scarcely perceptible smile he looked at General Baleshev's uniform and sword.

General Baleshev recovered himself and began to speak. He said that the Tzar did not consider Kurákin's demand for his passports a sufficient cause for war; that Kurákin had acted on his own initiative and without the Tzar's assent, that the Tzar did not desire war, and had no relations with England.

"Not *yet!*" interposed Napoleon, and, as if fearing to give vent to his feelings, he frowned and nodded slightly as a sign that General Baleshev might proceed.

After saying all General Baleshev had been instructed to say, he added that the Tzar wished for peace, but would not enter into negotiations except on condition that... Here General Baleshev hesitated: he remembered the words the Tzar had not written in his letter, but had specially inserted in the rescript to Saltykóv and had told General Baleshev to repeat to Napoleon. General Baleshev remembered these words, "So long as a single armed foe remains on Russian soil," but some complex feeling restrained him. General Baleshev could not utter them, though he wished to do so. He grew confused and said: "On condition that the French army retires beyond the Niemen."

Napoleon noticed General Baleshev's embarrassment when uttering these last words; his face twitched and the calf of his left leg began to quiver rhythmically. Without moving from where he stood he began speaking in a louder tone and more hurriedly than before. During the speech that followed, General Baleshev, who more than once lowered his eyes, involuntarily noticed the quivering of Napoleon's left leg which increased the more Napoleon raised his voice.

"I desire peace, no less than the Tzar," Napoleon began. "Have I not for eighteen months been doing everything to obtain it? I have waited eighteen months for explanations. But in order to begin negotiations, what is

demanded of me?” he said, frowning and making an energetic gesture of inquiry with his small white plump hand.

“The withdrawal of your army beyond the Niemen, sire,” replied General Baleshev.

“The Niemen?” repeated Napoleon. “So now you want me to retire beyond the Niemen—only the Niemen?” repeated Napoleon, looking straight at General Baleshev.

The latter bowed his head respectfully.

Instead of the demand of four months earlier to withdraw from Pomerania, only a withdrawal beyond the Niemen River was now demanded. Napoleon turned quickly and began to pace the room.

“You say the demand now is that I am to withdraw beyond the Niemen before commencing negotiations, but in just the same way two months ago the demand was that I should withdraw beyond the Vistula and the Oder, and yet you are willing to negotiate.”

Napoleon went in silence from one corner of the room to the other and again stopped in front of General Baleshev. General Baleshev noticed that his left leg was quivering faster than before and his face seemed petrified in its stern expression. This quivering of his left leg was a thing Napoleon was conscious of. “The vibration of my left calf is a great sign with me,” Napoleon remarked at a later date.

“Such demands as to retreat beyond the Vistula and Oder may be made to a Baron of Baden, but not to me!” Napoleon almost screamed, quite to his own surprise. “If you gave me St. Petersburg and Moscow I could not accept such conditions. You say I have begun this war! But who first joined his army? The Tzar, not I! And you offer me negotiations when I have expended millions, when you are in alliance with England, and when your position is a bad one. You offer me negotiations! But what is the aim of your alliance with England? What has England given you?” Napoleon continued hurriedly, evidently no longer trying to show the advantages of

peace and discuss its possibility, but only to prove his own rectitude and power and The Tzar's errors and duplicity.

The commencement of Napoleon's speech had obviously been made with the intention of demonstrating the advantages of his position and showing that he was nevertheless willing to negotiate. But Napoleon had begun talking, and the more he talked the less could he control his words.

The whole purport of Napoleon's remarks now was evidently to exalt himself and insult The Tzar—just what he had least desired at the commencement of the interview.

“I hear you have made peace with Turkey?”

General Baleshev bowed his head affirmatively.

“Peace has been concluded...” he began.

But Napoleon did not let him speak. He evidently wanted to do all the talking himself and continued to talk with the sort of eloquence and unrestrained irritability to which spoiled people are so prone.

“Yes, I know you have made peace with the Turks without obtaining Moldavia and Wallachia; I would have given your sovereign those provinces as I gave him Finland. Yes,” Napoleon went on, “I promised and would have given the Tzar Moldavia and Wallachia, and now he won't have those splendid provinces. Yet the Tzar might have united them to his empire and in a single reign would have extended Russia from the Gulf of Bothnia to the mouths of the Danube. Catherine the Great could not have done more,” said Napoleon, growing more and more excited as he paced up and down the room, repeating to General Baleshev almost the very words he had used to The Tzar himself at Tilsit. “All that, he would have owed to my friendship. Oh, what a splendid reign!” he repeated several times, then paused, drew from his pocket a gold snuffbox, lifted it to his nose, and greedily sniffed at it.

“What a splendid reign the Tzar's *might have been!*”

Napoleon looked compassionately at General Baleshev, and as soon as the latter tried to make some rejoinder hastily interrupted him.

“What could the Tzar wish or look for that he would not have obtained through my friendship?” demanded Napoleon, shrugging his shoulders in perplexity. “But no, he has preferred to surround himself with my enemies, and with whom? With Steins, Armfeldts, General Bennigsens, and Wintzingerodes! Stein, a traitor expelled from his own country; Armfeldt, a rake and an intriguer; Wintzingerode, a fugitive French subject; General Bennigsen, rather more of a soldier than the others, but all the same an incompetent who was unable to do anything in 1807 and who should awaken terrible memories in the Tzar’s mind... Granted that were they competent they might be made use of,” continued Napoleon—hardly able to keep pace in words with the rush of thoughts that incessantly sprang up, proving how right and strong he was (in his perception the two were one and the same)—“but they are not even that! They are neither fit for war nor peace! Barclay is said to be the most capable of them all, but I cannot say so, judging by his first movements. And what are they doing, all these courtiers? General Pfuel proposes, Armfeldt disputes, General Bennigsen considers, and Barclay, called on to act, does not know what to decide on, and time passes bringing no result. Major-General Bagration alone is a military man. He’s stupid, but he has experience, a quick eye, and resolution... And what role is your young Tzar playing in that monstrous crowd? They compromise him and throw on him the responsibility for all that happens. A sovereign should not be with the army unless he is a general!” said Napoleon, evidently uttering these words as a direct challenge to the Tzar. He knew how the Tzar desired to be a military commander.

“The campaign began only a week ago, and you haven’t even been able to defend Vílna. You are cut in two and have been driven out of the Polish provinces. Your army is grumbling.”

“On the contrary, Your Majesty,” said General Baleshev, hardly able to remember what had been said to him and following these verbal fireworks with difficulty, “the troops are burning with eagerness...”

“I know everything!” Napoleon interrupted him. “I know everything. I know the number of your battalions as exactly as I know my own. You have not two hundred thousand men, and I have three times that number. I give you my word of honor,” said Napoleon, forgetting that his word of honor could carry no weight—“I give you my word of honor that I have five hundred and thirty thousand men this side of the Vistula. The Turks will be of no use to you; they are worth nothing and have shown it by making peace with you. As for the Swedes—it is their fate to be governed by mad kings. Their king was insane and they changed him for another—Bernadotte, who promptly went mad—for no Swede would ally himself with Russia unless he were mad.”

Napoleon grinned maliciously and again raised his snuffbox to his nose.

General Baleshev knew how to reply to each of Napoleon’s remarks, and would have done so; he continually made the gesture of a man wishing to say something, but Napoleon always interrupted him. To the alleged insanity of the Swedes, General Baleshev wished to reply that when Russia is on her side Sweden is practically an island: but Napoleon gave an angry exclamation to drown his voice. Napoleon was in that state of irritability in which a man has to talk, talk, and talk, merely to convince himself that he is in the right. General Baleshev began to feel uncomfortable: as envoy, he feared to demean his dignity and felt the necessity of replying; but, as a man, he shrank before the transport of groundless wrath that had evidently seized Napoleon. General Baleshev knew that none of the words now uttered by Napoleon had any significance and that Napoleon himself would be ashamed of them when he came to his senses. General Baleshev stood with downcast eyes, looking at the movements of Napoleon’s stout legs and trying to avoid meeting his eyes.

“But what do I care about your allies?” said Napoleon. “I have allies—the Poles. There are eighty thousand of them and they fight like lions. And there will be two hundred thousand of them.”

And probably still more perturbed by the fact that Napoleon had uttered this obvious falsehood, and that General Baleshev still stood silently before him in the same attitude of submission to fate, Napoleon abruptly turned round, drew close to General Baleshev’s face, and, gesticulating rapidly and energetically with his white hands, almost shouted:

“Know that if you stir up Prussia against me, I’ll wipe it off the map of Europe!” Napoleon declared, his face pale and distorted by anger, and he struck one of his small hands energetically with the other. “Yes, I will throw you back beyond the Dvína and beyond the Dnieper, and will re-erect against you that barrier which it was criminal and blind of Europe to allow to be destroyed. Yes, that is what will happen to you. That is what you have gained by alienating me!” And he walked silently several times up and down the room, his fat shoulders twitching.

Napoleon put his snuffbox into his waistcoat pocket, took it out again, lifted it several times to his nose, and stopped in front of General Baleshev. He paused, looked ironically straight into General Baleshev’s eyes, and said in a quiet voice:

“And yet what a splendid reign your master, the Tzar, *might have had!*”

General Baleshev, feeling it incumbent on him to reply, said that from the Russian side things did not appear in so gloomy a light. Napoleon was silent, still looking derisively at him and evidently not listening to him. General Baleshev said that in Russia the best results were expected from the war. Napoleon nodded condescendingly as if to say, “I know it’s your duty to say that, but you don’t believe it yourself. I have convinced you.”

When General Baleshev had ended, Napoleon again took out his snuffbox, sniffed at it, and stamped his foot twice on the floor as a signal. The door opened and a gentleman-in-waiting, bending respectfully, handed

Napoleon his hat and gloves; another brought him a pocket handkerchief. Napoleon, without giving them a glance, turned to General Baleshev:

“Assure the Tzar from me,” said Napoleon, taking his hat, “that I am as devoted to him as before: I know him thoroughly and very highly esteem his lofty qualities. I will detain you no longer, general; you shall receive my letter to the Tzar.”

And Napoleon went quickly to the door. Everyone in the reception room rushed forward and descended the staircase.

After all that Napoleon had said to General Baleshev —those bursts of anger and the last dryly spoken words: “I will detain you no longer, general; you shall receive my letter,” he felt convinced that Napoleon would not wish to see him, and would even avoid another meeting with him—an insulted envoy—especially as he had witnessed his unseemly anger. But, to his surprise, General Baleshev received, through Duroc, an invitation to dine with Napoleon that day.

Général Caulaincourt and Chief of Staff Berthier were present at that dinner.

Napoleon met General Baleshev cheerfully and amiably. He not only showed no sign of constraint or self-reproach on account of his outburst that morning but, on the contrary, tried to reassure General Baleshev. It was evident that he had long been convinced that it was impossible for him to make a mistake and that in his perception whatever he did was right, not because it harmonized with any idea of right and wrong, but because *he* did it.

Napoleon was in very good spirits after his ride through Vılna, where crowds of people had rapturously greeted and followed him. From all the windows of the streets through which he rode, rugs, flags, and his monogram were displayed, and the Polish ladies, welcoming him, waved their handkerchiefs to him.

At dinner, having placed General Baleshev beside him, Napoleon not only treated him amiably but behaved as if General Baleshev were one of his own courtiers, one of those who sympathized with his plans and ought to rejoice at his success. In the course of the conversation he mentioned Moscow and questioned General Baleshev about the Russian capital, not merely as an interested traveler asks about a new city he intends to visit, but as if convinced that General Baleshev, as a Russian, must be flattered by his curiosity.

“How many inhabitants are there in Moscow? How many houses? Is it true that Moscow is called ‘Holy Moscow’? How many churches are there in Moscow?” Napoleon asked.

And receiving the reply that there were more than two hundred churches, he remarked:

“Why such a quantity of churches?”

“The Russians are very devout,” replied General Baleshev.

“But a large number of monasteries and churches is always a sign of the backwardness of a people,” said Napoleon, turning to Général Caulaincourt for appreciation of this remark.

General Baleshev respectfully ventured to disagree with Napoleon.

“Every country has its own character,” said he.

“But nowhere in Europe is there anything like that,” said Napoleon.

“I beg your Majesty’s pardon,” returned General Baleshev, “besides Russia, there is Spain, where there are also many churches and monasteries.”

This reply of General Baleshev’s, which hinted at the recent defeats of the French in Spain, was much appreciated when he related it at The Tzar’s court, but it was not much appreciated at Napoleon’s dinner, where it passed unnoticed.

The uninterested and perplexed faces of the generals showed that they were puzzled as to what General Baleshev’s tone suggested. “If there is a

point we don't see it, or it is not at all witty," their expressions seemed to say. So little was his rejoinder appreciated that Napoleon did not notice it at all and naively asked General Baleshev through what towns the direct road from there to Moscow passed. General Baleshev, who was on the alert all through the dinner, replied that just as "all roads lead to Rome," so all roads lead to Moscow: there were many roads, and "among them the road through *Poltáva*, which Charles XII chose." General Baleshev involuntarily flushed with pleasure at the aptitude of this reply, but hardly had he uttered the word *Poltáva* before Général Caulaincourt began speaking of the badness of the road from St. Petersburg to Moscow and of his St. Petersburg reminiscences.

After dinner, they went to drink coffee in Napoleon's study, which four days previously had been that of the Tzar. Napoleon sat down, toying with his Sèvres coffee cup, and motioned General Baleshev to a chair beside him.

Napoleon was in that well-known after-dinner mood which, more than any reasoned cause, makes a man contented with himself and disposed to consider everyone his friend. It seemed to him that he was surrounded by men who adored him: and he felt convinced that, after his dinner, General Baleshev too was his friend and worshiper. Napoleon turned to him with a pleasant, though slightly ironic, smile.

"They tell me this is the room the Tzar occupied? Strange, isn't it, General Baleshev?" Napoleon said, evidently not doubting that this remark would be agreeable to his hearer since it went to prove his, Napoleon's, superiority to The Tzar.

General Baleshev made no reply and bowed his head in silence.

"Yes. Four days ago in this room, Wintzingerode and Stein were deliberating," continued Napoleon with the same derisive and self-confident smile. "What I can't understand," he went on, "is that the Tzar has surrounded himself with my personal enemies. That I do not... understand.

Has he not thought that I may do the same?" and he turned inquiringly to General Baleshev, and evidently this thought turned him back on to the track of his morning's anger, which was still fresh in him.

"And let him know that I will do so!" said Napoleon, rising and pushing his cup away with his hand. "I'll drive all his Württemberg, Baden, and Weimar relations out of Germany... Yes. I'll drive them out. Let him prepare an asylum for them in Russia!"

General Baleshev bowed his head with an air indicating that he would like to make his bow and leave and only listened because he could not help hearing what was said to him. Napoleon did not notice this expression; he treated General Baleshev not as an envoy from his enemy, but as a man now fully devoted to him and who must rejoice at his former master's humiliation.

"And why has the Tzar taken command of the armies? What is the good of that? War is my profession, but his business is to reign and not to command armies! Why has he taken on himself such a responsibility?"

Again Napoleon brought out his snuffbox, paced several times up and down the room in silence, and then, suddenly and unexpectedly, went up to General Baleshev and with a slight smile, as confidently, quickly, and simply as if he were doing something not merely important but pleasing to General Baleshev, he raised his hand to the forty-year-old Russian general's face and, taking him by the ear, pulled it gently, smiling with his lips only.

To have one's ear pulled by Napoleon was considered the greatest honor and mark of favor at the French court.

"Well, adorer and courtier of the Tzar, why don't you say anything?" said Napoleon, as if it was ridiculous, in his presence, to be the adorer and courtier of anyone but himself, Napoleon. "Are the horses ready for General Baleshev?" he added, with a slight inclination of his head in reply to General Baleshev's bow. "Let him have mine, he has a *long way to go!*"

The letter taken by General Baleshev was the last Napoleon sent to the Tzar. Every detail of the interview was communicated to the Russian monarch, and the war began...

After Andrei's interview with Pierre in Moscow, Andrei went to St. Petersburg, on business as he told his family, but really to meet Anatole whom he felt it necessary to encounter. On reaching St. Petersburg Andrei inquired about Anatole but the latter had already left the city. Pierre had warned Anatole that Andrei was on his track. Anatole promptly obtained an appointment from the War Minister and went to join the army in Moldavia. While in St. Petersburg Andrei met General Kutuzov, his former commander who was always well disposed toward him, and Kutuzov suggested that he should accompany him to the army in Moldavia, to which Kutuzov had been appointed head. So Andrei, having received an appointment with the headquarters staff, left for Turkey.

Andrei did not think it proper to write and challenge Anatole. He thought that if he challenged him without some fresh cause it might compromise Natasha and so he wanted to meet Anatole personally in order to find a fresh pretext for a duel. But he again failed to meet Anatole in Turkey, for soon after Andrei arrived, the latter returned to Russia. In a new country, amid new conditions, Andrei found life easier to bear. After his betrothed had broken faith with him—which he felt the more acutely the more he tried to conceal its effects—the surroundings in which he had been happy became trying to him, and the freedom and independence he had once prized so highly were still more so. Not only could he no longer think the thoughts that had first come to him as he lay gazing at the sky on the field of Austerlitz and had later enlarged upon with Pierre, and which had filled his solitude at Boguchárovo and then in Switzerland and Rome, but he even dreaded to recall them and the bright and boundless horizons they had revealed. Andrei was now concerned only with the nearest practical matters unrelated to his past interests, and he seized on these the more

eagerly the more those past interests were closed to him. It was as if that lofty, infinite canopy of heaven that had once towered above him had suddenly turned into a low, solid vault that weighed him down, in which all was clear, but nothing eternal or mysterious.

Of the activities that presented themselves to Andrei, army service was the simplest and most familiar. As a general on duty on General Kutuzov's staff, Andrei applied himself to business with zeal and perseverance and surprised General Kutuzov with his willingness and accuracy in work. Not having found Anatole in Turkey, Andrei did not think it necessary to rush back to Russia after him, but all the same, he knew that however long it might be before he met Anatole, despite his contempt for him and despite all the proofs he deduced to convince himself that it was not worth stooping to a conflict with him—Andrei knew that when he did meet him he would not be able to resist calling him out, any more than a ravenous man can help snatching at food. And the consciousness that the insult was not yet avenged, that his rancor was still unspent, weighed on his heart and poisoned the artificial tranquility which he managed to obtain in Turkey by means of restless, plodding, and rather vainglorious and ambitious activity.

In the year 1812, when news of the war with Napoleon reached Bucharest—where General Kutuzov had been living for two months, passing his days and nights with a Wallachian woman—Andrei asked General Kutuzov to transfer him to the Western Army. General Kutuzov, who was already weary of Andrei's activity which seemed to reproach his own idleness, very readily let him go and gave him a mission to Barclay.

Before joining the Western Army which was then, in May, encamped at Drissa, Andrei visited Bald Hills which was directly on his way, being only two miles off the Smolensk highroad. During the last three years, there had been so many changes in his life, Andrei had thought, felt, and seen so much (having traveled both in the east and the west), that on reaching Bald Hills it struck him as strange and unexpected to find the way of life there

unchanged and still the same in every detail. He entered through the gates with their stone pillars and drove up the avenue leading to the house as if he were entering an enchanted, sleeping castle. The same old stateliness, the same cleanliness, the same stillness reigned there, and inside there was the same furniture, the same walls, sounds, and smell, and the same timid faces, only somewhat older. Marya was still the same timid, plain maiden getting on in years, uselessly and joylessly passing the best years of her life in fear and constant suffering. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne was the same coquettish, self-satisfied girl, enjoying every moment of her existence and full of joyous hopes for the future. She had merely become more self-confident, Andrei thought. Desalles, the tutor Andrei had brought from Switzerland for Nicolai, was wearing a coat of Russian cut and talking broken Russian to the servants but was still the same narrowly intelligent, conscientious, and pedantic preceptor. Baron Bolkonski had changed in appearance only by the loss of a tooth, which left a noticeable gap on one side of his mouth; in character he was the same as ever, only showing still more irritability and skepticism as to what was happening in the world. Nikolenka alone had changed. Nikolenka had grown, become rosier, had curly dark hair, and, when merry and laughing, quite unconsciously lifted the upper lip of his pretty little mouth just as Lise used to do. He alone did not obey the law of immutability in the enchanted, sleeping castle. But though externally all remained as of old, the inner relations of all these people had changed since Andrei had seen them last. The household was divided into two alien and hostile camps, who changed their habits for his sake and only met because he was there. To the one camp belonged Baron Bolkonski, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, and the architect; to the other Marya, the tutor Desalles, Nikolenka, and all the old nurses and maids.

During Andrei's stay at Bald Hills, all the family dined together, but they were ill at ease and Andrei felt that he was a visitor for whose sake an exception was being made and that his presence made them all feel

awkward. Involuntarily feeling this at dinner on the first day, Andrei was taciturn, and Baron Bolkonski noticing this also became morosely dumb and retired to his apartments directly after dinner. In the evening, when Andrei went to him and, trying to rouse him, began to tell him of the young Count Kámsky's campaign, Baron Bolkonski began unexpectedly to talk about Marya, blaming her for her superstitions and her dislike of Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, who, he said, was the only person really attached to him.

Baron Bolkonski said that if he was ill it was only because of Marya: that she purposely worried and irritated him, and that by indulgence and silly talk she was spoiling little Baron Nicholas. Baron Bolkonski knew very well that he tormented Marya and that her life was very hard, but he also knew that he could not help tormenting her and that she deserved it. "Why does Andrei, who sees this, say nothing to me about Marya? Does he think me a scoundrel or an old fool who, without any reason, keeps his own daughter at a distance and attaches Lady-in-waiting Bourienne to himself? Andrei doesn't understand, so I must explain it, and he must hear me out," thought Baron Bolkonski. And he began explaining why he could not put up with his daughter's unreasonable character.

"If you ask me," said Andrei, without looking up (he was censuring his father for the first time in his life), "I did not wish to speak about it, but as you ask me I will give you my frank opinion. If there is any misunderstanding and discord between you and Marya, I can't blame her for it at all. I know how she loves and respects you. Since you ask me," continued Andrei, becoming irritable—as he was always liable to do of late—"I can only say that if there are any misunderstandings they are caused by that worthless Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, who is not fit to be Marya's companion."

Baron Bolkonski at first stared fixedly at Andrei, and an unnatural smile disclosed the fresh gap between his teeth to which Andrei could not get

accustomed.

“What companion, my dear boy? Eh? You’ve already been talking it over! Eh?”

“Father, I did not want to judge,” said Andrei, in a hard and bitter tone, “but you challenged me, and I have said, and always shall say, that Marya is not to blame, but those to blame—the one to blame—is that Lady-in-waiting Bourienne.”

“Ah, Andrei has passed judgment... passed judgment!” said Baron Bolkonski in a low voice and, as it seemed to Andrei, with some embarrassment, but then he suddenly jumped up and cried: “Be off, be off! Let not a trace of you remain here!...”

Andrei wished to leave at once, but Marya persuaded him to stay another day. That day he did not see Baron Bolkonski, who did not leave his room and admitted no one but Lady-in-waiting Bourienne and Butler Tikhon, but asked several times whether his son had gone. The next day, before leaving, Andrei went to Nikolenka’s room. The boy, curly-headed like his mother and glowing with health, sat on his knee, and Andrei began telling him the story of Bluebeard but fell into a reverie without finishing the story. Andrei thought not of this pretty child, his son whom he held on his knee, but of himself. He sought in himself either remorse for having angered his father or regret at leaving home for the first time in his life on bad terms with him and was horrified to find neither. What meant still more to him was that he sought and did not find in himself the former tenderness for Nikolenka which he had hoped to reawaken by caressing the boy and taking him on his knee.

“Well, go on!” said Nikolenka.

Andrei, without replying, took Nikolenka off his knee and went out of the room.

As soon as Andrei had given up his daily occupations, and especially on returning to the old conditions of life amid which he had been happy, a weariness of life overcame him with its former intensity, and he hastened to escape from these memories and to find some work as soon as possible.

“So you’ve decided to go, Andrei?” asked Marya.

“Thank God that I can,” replied Andrei. “I am very sorry you can’t.”

“Why do you say that?” replied Marya. “Why do you say that, when you are going to this terrible war, and he is so old? Lady-in-waiting Bourienne says he has been asking about you...”

As soon as Marya began to speak of that, her lips trembled and her tears began to fall. Andrei turned away and began pacing the room.

“Ah, my God! My God! When one thinks who and what—what trash—can cause people misery!” Andrei said with a malignity that alarmed Marya.

Marya understood that when speaking of “trash” he referred not only to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, the cause of her misery but also to Anatole, the man who had ruined Andrei’s own happiness.

“Andrei! One thing I beg, I entreat of you!” Marya said, touching his elbow and looking at him with eyes that shone through her tears. “I understand you” (she looked down). “Don’t imagine that sorrow is the work of *men*. Men are God’s tools.” She looked a little above Andrei’s head with the confident, accustomed look with which one looks at the place where a familiar portrait hangs. “Sorrow is sent by *Him*, not by men. Men are His instruments, they are not to blame. If you think someone has wronged you, forget it and forgive! We have no right to punish. And then you will know the happiness of forgiving.”

“If I were a woman I would do so, Marya. That is a woman’s virtue. But a man should not and cannot forgive and forget,” Andrei replied, and though till that moment he had not been thinking of Anatole, all his unexpended anger suddenly swelled up in his heart.

“If Marya is already persuading me to forgive Anatole, it means that I ought long ago to have punished him,” Andrei thought. And giving her no further reply, Andrei began thinking of the glad vindictive moment when he would meet Anatole who he knew was now in the army.

Marya begged Andrei to stay one day more, saying that she knew how unhappy her father would be if Andrei left without being reconciled to him, but Andrei replied that he would probably soon be back again from the army and would certainly write to his father, but that the longer he stayed now the more embittered their differences would become.

“Good-by, Andrei! Remember that misfortunes come from God, and men are never to blame,” were the last words Andrei heard from Marya when he took leave of her.

“Then it must be so!” thought Andrei as he drove out of the avenue from the house at Bald Hills. “Marya, poor innocent creature, is left to be victimized by Baron Bolkonski who has outlived his wits. The old man feels he is guilty but cannot change himself. My boy is growing up and rejoices in life, in which like everybody else he will deceive or be deceived. And I am off to the army. Why? I myself don’t know. I want to meet that man whom I despise, so as to give him a chance to kill and laugh at me!”

These conditions of life had been the same before, but then they were all connected, while now they had all tumbled to pieces. Only senseless things, lacking coherence, presented themselves one after another to Andrei’s mind.

Andrei reached the general headquarters of the army at the end of June. The first army, with which was the Tzar, occupied the fortified camp at Drissa; the second army was retreating, trying to effect a junction with the first one from which it was said to be cut off by large French forces. Everyone was dissatisfied with the general course of affairs in the Russian army, but no one anticipated any danger of invasion of the Russian

provinces, and no one thought the war would extend farther than the western Polish, provinces.

Andrei found Marshal Barclay, to whom he had been assigned, on the bank of the Drissa. As there was not a single town or large village in the vicinity of the camp, the immense number of generals and courtiers accompanying the army were living in the best houses of the villages on both sides of the river, over a radius of six miles. Marshal Barclay was quartered nearly three miles from the Tzar. He received Andrei stiffly and coldly and told him in his foreign accent that he would mention him to the Tzar for a decision as to his employment, but asked him meanwhile to remain on his staff. Anatole, whom Andrei had hoped to find with the army, was not there. Anatole had gone to St. Petersburg, but Andrei was glad to hear this. His mind was occupied by the interests of the center that was conducting a gigantic war, and he was glad to be free for a while from the distraction caused by the thought of Anatole. During the first four days, while no duties were required of him, Andrei rode around the whole fortified camp and, with the aid of his own knowledge and by talks with experts, tried to form a definite opinion about it. But the question of whether the camp was advantageous or disadvantageous remained for him undecided. Already from his military experience and what he had seen in the Austrian campaign, he had come to the conclusion that in war the most deeply considered plans have no significance and that all depends on the way unexpected movements of the enemy—that cannot be foreseen—are met, and on how and by whom the whole matter is handled. To clear up this last point for himself, Andrei, utilizing his position and acquaintances, tried to fathom the character of the control of the army and of the men and parties engaged in it, and he deduced for himself the following of the state of affairs.

While the Tzar had still been at Vílna, the forces had been divided into three armies. First, the army under Marshal Barclay, secondly, the army

under Major-General Bagration, and thirdly, the one commanded by Tormásov. The Tzar was with the first army, but not as Marshal. In the orders issued, it was stated, not that the Tzar would take command, but only that he would be with the army. The Tzar, moreover, had with him not a Marshal's staff but the imperial headquarters staff. In attendance on him was the head of the imperial staff, as well as generals, imperial aides-de-camp, diplomatic officials, and a large number of foreigners, but not the army staff. Besides these, there were in attendance on the Tzar without any definite appointments. Though these men had no military appointment in the army, their position gave them influence, and often a corps commander, or even General Kutuzov, did not know in what capacity he was questioned, or was given this or that advice and did not know whether a certain order received in the form of advice emanated from the man who gave it or from the Tzar and whether it had to be executed or not. But this was only the external condition; the essential significance of the presence of the Tzar and of all these people, from a courtier's point of view (and in a Tzar's vicinity all became courtiers), was clear to everyone. It was this: the Tzar did not assume the title of Marshal of all the armies, but disposed of all the armies; the men around him were his assistants. War Minister Arakchéev was a faithful custodian to enforce order and acted as the sovereign's bodyguard. General Bennigsen was a landlord in the Vílna province who appeared to be doing the honors of the district but was in reality a good general, useful as an adviser, and ready at hand to replace Barclay. The Grand Duke was there because it suited him to be. The ex-Minister Stein was there because his advice was useful and the Tzar held him in high esteem personally. Armfeldt virulently hated Napoleon and was a general full of self-confidence, a quality that always influenced The Tzar. Paulucci was there because he was bold and decided in his speech. The adjutants general were there because they always accompanied the Tzar, and lastly and chiefly General Pfuel was there because he had drawn up the plan of campaign

against Napoleon and, having induced the Tzar to believe in the efficacy of that plan, was directing the whole business of the war. With General Pfuel was Wolzogen, who expressed General Pfuel's thoughts in a more comprehensible way than General Pfuel himself (who was a harsh, bookish theorist, self-confident to the point of despising everyone else) was able to do.

Besides these Russians and foreigners who propounded new and unexpected ideas every day—especially the foreigners, who did so with a boldness characteristic of people employed in a country not their own—there were many secondary personages accompanying the army because their principals were there.

Among the opinions and voices in this immense, restless, brilliant, and proud sphere, Andrei noticed the following sharply defined subdivisions of tendencies and parties:

The first party consisted of General Pfuel and his adherents—military theorists who believed in a science of war with immutable laws—laws of oblique movements, outflankings, and so forth. General Pfuel and his adherents demanded a retirement into the depths of the country in accordance with precise laws defined by a pseudo-theory of war, and they saw only barbarism, ignorance, or evil intention in every deviation from that theory. To this party belonged the foreign nobles, Wolzogen, Wintzingerode, and others, chiefly Germans.

The second party was directly opposed to the first; one extreme, as always happens, was met by representatives of the other. The members of this party were those who had demanded an advance from Vílna into Poland and freedom from all prearranged plans. Besides being advocates of bold action, this section also represented nationalism, which made them still more one-sided in the dispute. They were Russians: Major-General Bagration, General Ermólov (who was beginning to come to the front), and others. At that time a famous joke of General Ermólov's was being

circulated, that as a great favor he had petitioned the Tzar to make him a German. The men of that party, remembering Suvórov, said that what one had to do was not to reason, or stick pins into maps, but to fight, beat the enemy, keep him out of Russia, and not let the army get discouraged.

To the third party—in which the Tzar had the most confidence—belonged the courtiers who tried to arrange compromises between the other two. The members of this party, chiefly civilians and to whom War Minister Arakchéev belonged, thought and said what men who have no convictions but wish to seem to have some generally say. They said that undoubtedly war, particularly against such a genius as Napoleon (they called him Napoleon now), needs most deeply devised plans and profound scientific knowledge and in that respect, General Pfuel was a genius, but at the same time it had to be acknowledged that the theorists are often one-sided, and therefore one should not trust them absolutely, but should also listen to what General Pfuel's opponents and practical men of experience in warfare had to say, and then choose a middle course. They insisted on the retention of the camp at Drissa, according to General Pfuel's plan, but on changing the movements of the other armies. Though, by this course, neither one aim nor the other could be attained, yet it seemed best to the adherents of this third party.

Of a fourth opinion the most conspicuous representative was the Tzar's son, who could not forget his disillusionment at Austerlitz, where he had ridden out at the head of the Guards, in his casque and cavalry uniform as to a review, expecting to crush the French gallantly; but unexpectedly finding himself in the front line had narrowly escaped amid the general confusion. The men of this party had both the quality and the defect of frankness in their opinions. They feared Napoleon, recognized his strength and their own weakness, and frankly said so. They said: "Nothing but sorrow, shame, and ruin will come of all this! We have abandoned Vílna and Vítebsk and shall

abandon Drissa. The only reasonable thing left to do is to conclude peace as soon as possible before we are turned out of St. Petersburg.”

This view was very general in the upper army circles and found support also in St. Petersburg and from the chancellor, Rumyantsev, who, for other reasons of state, was in favor of peace.

The fifth party consisted of those who were adherents of Barclay, not so much as a man but as the War Minister. “Be he what he may” (they always began like that), “Barclay is an honest, practical man and we have nobody better. Give him real power, for war cannot be conducted successfully without unity of command, and he will show what he can do, as he did in Finland. If our army is well organized and strong and has withdrawn to Drissa without suffering any defeats, we owe this entirely to Barclay. If Barclay is now to be superseded by General Bennigsen all will be lost, for General Bennigsen showed his incapacity already in 1807.”

The sixth party, the Bennigsenites, said, on the contrary, that at any rate there was no one more active and experienced than General Bennigsen: “and twist about as you may, you will have to come to General Bennigsen eventually. Let the others make mistakes now!” said they, arguing that our retirement to Drissa was a most shameful reverse and an unbroken series of blunders. “The more mistakes that are made the better. It will at any rate be understood all the sooner that things cannot go on like this. What is wanted is not some Barclay or other, but a man like General Bennigsen, who made his mark in 1807, and to whom Napoleon himself did justice—a man whose authority would be willingly recognized, and General Bennigsen is the only such man.”

The seventh party consisted of the sort of people who are always to be found, especially around young sovereigns, and of whom there were particularly many around the Tzar—generals and imperial aides-de-camp passionately devoted to the Tzar, not merely as a monarch but as a man, adoring him sincerely and disinterestedly, as Nicholas had done in 1805,

and who saw in him not only all the virtues but all human capabilities as well. These men, though enchanted with the sovereign for refusing the command of the army, yet blamed him for such excessive modesty, and only desired and insisted that their adored sovereign should abandon his diffidence and openly announce that he would place himself at the head of the army, gather round him a Marshal's staff, and, consulting experienced theoreticians and practical men where necessary, would himself lead the troops, whose spirits would thereby be raised to the highest pitch.

The eighth and largest group, which in its enormous numbers was to the others as ninety-nine to one, consisted of men who desired neither peace nor war, neither an advance nor a defensive camp at the Drissa or anywhere else, neither Barclay nor the Tzar, neither General Pfuel nor General Bennigsen, but only the one most essential thing—as much advantage and pleasure for themselves as possible. In the troubled waters of conflicting and intersecting intrigues that eddied about the Tzar's headquarters, it was possible to succeed in many ways unthinkable at other times. A man who simply wished to retain his lucrative post would today agree with General Pfuel, tomorrow with his opponent, and the day after, merely to avoid responsibility or to please the Tzar, would declare that he had no opinion at all on the matter. Another who wished to gain some advantage would attract the Tzar's attention by loudly advocating the very thing the Tzar had hinted at the day before and would dispute and shout at the council, beating his breast and challenging those who did not agree with him to duels, thereby proving that he was prepared to sacrifice himself for the common good. A third, in the absence of opponents, between two councils would simply solicit a special gratuity for his faithful services, well knowing that at that moment people would be too busy to refuse him. A fourth while seemingly overwhelmed with work would often come accidentally under the Tzar's eye. A fifth, to achieve his long-cherished aim of dining with the Tzar, would stubbornly insist on the correctness or falsity of some newly

emerging opinion and for this object would produce arguments more or less forcible and correct.

All the men of this party were fishing for rubles, decorations, and promotions, and in this pursuit watched only the weathercock of imperial favor, and directly they noticed it turning in any direction, this whole drone population of the army began blowing hard that way so that it was all the harder for the Tzar to turn it elsewhere. Amid the uncertainties of the position, with the menace of serious danger giving a peculiarly threatening character to everything, amid this vortex of intrigue, egotism, conflict of views and feelings, and the diversity of race among these people—this eighth and largest party of those preoccupied with personal interests imparted great confusion and obscurity to the common task. Whatever question arose, a swarm of these drones, without having finished their buzzing on a previous theme, flew over to the new one and by their hum drowned and obscured the voices of those who were disputing honestly.

From among all these parties, just at the time Andrei reached the army, another, a ninth party, was being formed and was beginning to raise its voice. This was the party of the elders, reasonable men experienced and capable in state affairs, who, without sharing any of those conflicting opinions, were able to take a detached view of what was going on at the staff at headquarters and to consider means of escape from this muddle, indecision, intricacy, and weakness.

The men of this party said and thought that what was wrong resulted chiefly from the Tzar's presence in the army with his military court and from the consequent presence there of an indefinite, conditional, and unsteady fluctuation of relations, which is in place at court but harmful in an army; that a sovereign should reign but not command the army, and that the only way out of the position would be for the Tzar and his court to leave the army; that the mere presence of the Tzar paralyzed the action of fifty thousand men required to secure his personal safety, and that the worst

Marshal, if independent, would be better than the very best one trammelled by the presence and authority of the monarch.

Just at the time, Andrei was living unoccupied at Drissa, Shishkóv, the Secretary of State and one of the chief representatives of this party wrote a letter to the Tzar which War Minister Arakchéev and General Baleshev agreed to sign. In this letter, availing himself of permission given him by the Tzar to discuss the general course of affairs, he respectfully suggested—on the plea that it was necessary for the sovereign to arouse a warlike spirit in the people of the capital—that the Tzar should leave the army.

That arousing of the people by their sovereign and his call to them to defend their country—the very incitement which was the chief cause of Russia's triumph in so far as it was produced by the Tzar's personal presence in Moscow—was suggested to the Tzar, and accepted by him, as a pretext for quitting the army.

This letter had not yet been presented to the Tzar when Barclay, one day at dinner, informed Andrei that the Tzar wished to see him personally, to question him about Turkey and that Andrei was to present himself at General Bennigsen's quarters at six that evening.

The news was received at the Tzar's quarters that very day of a fresh movement by Napoleon which might endanger the army—news subsequently found to be false. And that morning Colonel Michaud had ridden around the Drissa fortifications with the Tzar and had pointed out to him that this fortified camp constructed by General Pfuel, and till then considered a master of tactical science which would ensure Napoleon's destruction, was an absurdity, threatening the destruction of the Russian army.

Andrei arrived at General Bennigsen's quarters—a country gentleman's house of moderate size, situated on the very banks of the river. Neither General Bennigsen nor the Tzar was there, but the Tzar's aide-de-camp received Andrei and informed him that the Tzar, accompanied by General

Bennigsen and Marquis Paulucci, had gone a second time that day to inspect the fortifications of the Drissa camp, of the suitability of which serious doubts were beginning to be felt.

The Tzar's aide-de-camp was sitting at a window in the first room with a French novel in his hand. This room had probably been a music room; there was still an organ in it on which some rugs were piled, and in one corner stood the folding bedstead of General Bennigsen's adjutant. This adjutant was also there and sat dozing on the rolled-up bedding, evidently exhausted by work or by feasting. Two doors led from the room, one straight on into what had been the drawing room, and another, on the right, to the study. Through the first door came the sound of voices conversing in German and occasionally in French. In that drawing room were gathered, by the Tzar's wish, not a military council (the Tzar preferred indefiniteness), but certain persons whose opinions he wished to know in view of the impending difficulties. It was not a council of war, but, as it were, a council to elucidate certain questions for the Tzar personally. To this semi-council had been invited the Swedish General Armfeldt, Adjutant General Wolzogen, Wintzingerode (whom Napoleon had referred to as a renegade French subject), Michaud, Toll, Count Stein who was not a military man at all, and General Pfuel himself, who, as Andrei had heard, was the mainspring of the whole affair. Andrei had an opportunity of getting a good look at him, for General Pfuel arrived soon after himself and, in passing through to the drawing room, stopped a minute to speak to the Tzar's aide-de-camp.

At first sight, General Pfuel, in his ill-made uniform of a Russian General, which fitted him badly like a fancy costume, seemed familiar to Andrei, though he saw him now for the first time. There was about him something of General Weyrother, General Mack, Schmidt, and many other German theorist-generals whom Andrei had seen in 1805, but he was more

typical than any of them. Andrei had never yet seen a German theorist in whom all the characteristics of those others were united to such an extent.

General Pfuel was short and very thin but broad-boned, of coarse, robust build, broad in the hips, and with prominent shoulder blades. His face was much wrinkled and his eyes deep set. His hair had evidently been hastily brushed smooth in front of the temples, but stuck up behind in quaint little tufts. He entered the room, looking restlessly and angrily around, as if afraid of everything in that large apartment. Awkwardly holding up his sword, General Pfuel addressed the Tzar's aide-de-camp and asked in German where the Tzar was. One could see that he wished to pass through the rooms as quickly as possible, finish with the bows and greetings, and sit down to business in front of a map, where he would feel at home. He nodded hurriedly in reply to the aide-de-camp and smiled ironically on hearing that the sovereign was inspecting the fortifications that he, General Pfuel, had planned in accord with his theory. He muttered something to himself abruptly and in a bass voice, as self-assured Germans do—it might have been “stupid fellow” or “the whole affair will be ruined,” or “something absurd will come of it.” Andrei did not catch what he said and would have passed on, but the Tzar's aide-de-camp introduced him to General Pfuel, remarking that Andrei was just back from Turkey where the war had terminated so fortunately. General Pfuel barely glanced—not so much at Andrei as past him—and said, with a laugh: “That must have been a fine tactical war”; and, laughing contemptuously, went on into the room from which the sound of voices was heard.

General Pfuel, always inclined to be irritably sarcastic, was particularly disturbed that day, evidently by the fact that they had dared to inspect and criticize his camp in his absence. From this short interview with General Pfuel, Andrei, thanks to his Austerlitz experiences, was able to form a clear conception of the man. General Pfuel was one of those hopelessly and immutably self-confident men, self-confident to the point of martyrdom as

only Germans are because only Germans are self-confident on the basis of an abstract notion—science, that is, the supposed knowledge of absolute truth. A Frenchman is self-assured because he regards himself personally, both in mind and body, as irresistibly attractive to men and women. An Englishman is self-assured, as being a citizen of the best-organized state in the world, and therefore as an Englishman always knows what he should do and knows that all he does as an Englishman is undoubtedly correct. An Italian is self-assured because he is excitable and easily forgets himself and other people. A Russian is self-assured just because he knows nothing and does not want to know anything, since he does not believe that anything can be known. The German's self-assurance is worst of all, stronger and more repulsive than any other because he imagines that he knows the truth—science—which he himself has invented but which is for him the absolute truth.

General Pfuel was evidently of that sort. He had a science—the theory of oblique movements deduced by him from the history of Frederick the Great's wars, and all he came across in the history of more recent warfare seemed to him absurd and barbarous—monstrous collisions in which so many blunders were committed by both sides that these wars could not be called wars, they did not accord with the theory, and therefore could not serve as material for science.

In 1806, General Pfuel had been one of those responsible, for the plan of campaign that ended in Jena and Auerstädt, but he did not see the least proof of the fallibility of his theory in the disasters of that war. On the contrary, the deviations made from his theory were, in his opinion, the sole cause of the whole disaster, and with characteristically gleeful sarcasm he would remark, "There, I said the whole affair would go to the devil!" General Pfuel was one of those theoreticians who so love their theory that they lose sight of the theory's object—its practical application. His love of theory made him hate everything practical, and he would not listen to it. He

was even pleased by failures, for failures resulting from deviations in practice from the theory only proved to him the accuracy of his theory.

General Pfuel said a few words to Andrei and the Tzar's aide-de-camp about the present war, with the air of a man who knows beforehand that all will go wrong, and who is not displeased that it should be so. The unbrushed tufts of hair sticking up behind and the hastily brushed hair on his temples expressed this most eloquently.

General Pfuel passed into the next room, and the deep, querulous sounds of his voice were at once heard from there.

Andrei's eyes were still following General Pfuel out of the room when General Bennigsen entered hurriedly, and nodding to Andrei, but not pausing, went into the study, giving instructions to his adjutant as he went. The Tzar was following him, and General Bennigsen had hastened on to make some preparations and to be ready to receive the sovereign. The Tzar's aide-de-camp and Andrei went out into the porch, where the Tzar, who looked fatigued, was dismounting. Marquis Paulucci was talking to him with particular warmth and the Tzar, with his head bent to the left, was listening with a dissatisfied air. The Tzar moved forward evidently wishing to end the conversation, but the flushed and excited Italian, oblivious of decorum, followed him and continued to speak.

"And as for the man who advised forming this camp—the Drissa camp," said Paulucci, as the Tzar mounted the steps and noticing Andrei scanned his unfamiliar face, "as to that person, sire..." continued Paulucci, desperately, apparently unable to restrain himself, "the man who advised the Drissa camp—I see no alternative but the lunatic asylum or the gallows!"

Without heeding the end of the Italian's remarks, and as though not hearing them, the Tzar, recognizing Andrei, addressed him graciously.

"I am very glad to see you! Go in there where they are meeting, and wait for me."

The Tzar went into the study. He was followed by Baron Volkónski and Baron Stein, and the door closed behind them. Andrei, taking advantage of the Tzar's permission, accompanied Paulucci, whom he had known in Turkey, into the drawing room where the council was assembled.

Baron Volkónski occupied the position, as it were, of the chief of the Tzar's staff. He came out of the study into the drawing room with some maps which he spread on a table and put questions on which he wished to hear the opinion of the gentlemen present. What had happened was that news (which afterward proved to be false) had been received during the night of a movement by the French to outflank the Drissa camp.

The first to speak was General Armfeldt who, to meet the difficulty that presented itself, unexpectedly proposed a perfectly new position away from the St. Petersburg and Moscow roads. The reason for this was inexplicable (unless he wished to show that he, too, could have an opinion), but he urged that at this point the army should unite and there await the enemy. It was plain that Armfeldt had thought out that plan long ago and now expounded it not so much to answer the questions put—which, in fact, his plan did not answer—as to avail himself of the opportunity to air it. It was one of the millions of proposals, one as good as another, that could be made as long as it was quite unknown what character the war would take. Some disputed his arguments, others defended them. Young Count Toll objected to the Swedish general's views more warmly than anyone else, and in the course of the dispute drew from his side pocket a well-filled notebook, which he asked permission to read to them. In these voluminous notes Toll suggested another scheme, totally different from Armfeldt's or General Pfuel's plan of campaign. In answer to Toll, Paulucci suggested an advance and an attack, which, he urged, could alone extricate us from the present uncertainty and from the carriage (as he called the Drissa camp) in which we were situated.

During all these discussions General Pfuel and his interpreter, Wolzogen (his "bridge" in court relations), were silent. General Pfuel only snorted

contemptuously and turned away, to show that he would never demean himself by replying to such nonsense as he was now hearing. So when Baron Volkónski, who was in the chair, called on him to give his opinion, General Pfuel merely said:

“Why ask me? General Armfeldt has proposed a splendid position with an exposed rear, or why not this Italian gentleman’s attack—very fine, or a retreat, also good! Why ask me?” said General Pfuel. “Why, you yourselves know everything better than I do.”

But when Volkónski said, with a frown, that it was in the Tzar’s name that General Pfuel asked his opinion, General Pfuel rose and, suddenly growing animated, began to speak:

“Everything has been spoiled, everything muddled, everybody thought they knew better than I did, and now you come to me! How to mend matters? There is nothing to mend! The principles laid down by me must be strictly adhered to,” said General Pfuel, drumming on the table with his bony fingers. “What is the difficulty? Nonsense, childishness!”

General Pfuel went up to the map and speaking rapidly began proving that no eventuality could alter the efficiency of the Drissa camp, that everything had been foreseen, and that if the enemy were really going to outflank it, the enemy would inevitably be destroyed.

Paulucci, who did not know German, began questioning General Pfuel in French. Wolzogen came to the assistance of his chief, who spoke French badly, and began translating for him, hardly able to keep pace with General Pfuel, who was rapidly demonstrating that not only all that had happened, but all that could happen, had been foreseen in his scheme and that if there were now any difficulties the whole fault lay in the fact that his plan had not been precisely executed. General Pfuel kept laughing sarcastically, he demonstrated, and at last contemptuously ceased to demonstrate, like a mathematician who ceases to prove in various ways the accuracy of a problem that has already been proved. Wolzogen took his place and

continued to explain his views in French, every now and then turning to General Pfuel and saying, "Is it not so, your excellency?" But General Pfuel, like a man heated in a fight who strikes those on his own side, shouted angrily at his own supporter, Wolzogen:

"Well, of course, what more is there to explain?"

Paulucci and Michaud both attacked Wolzogen simultaneously in French. Armfeldt addressed General Pfuel in German. Toll explained to Volkónski in Russian. Andrei listened and observed in silence.

Of all these men Andrei sympathized most with General Pfuel, angry, determined, and absurdly self-confident as he was. Of all those present, evidently, he alone was not seeking anything for himself, nursed no hatred against anyone, and only desired that the plan, formed on a theory arrived at by years of toil, should be carried out. General Pfuel was ridiculous and unpleasantly sarcastic, yet he inspired involuntary respect by his boundless devotion to an idea. Besides this, the remarks of all except General Pfuel had one common trait that had not been noticeable at the council of war in 1805: there was now a panic fear of Napoleon's genius, which, though concealed, was noticeable in every rejoinder. Everything was assumed to be possible for Napoleon, they expected him from every side, and invoked his terrible name to shatter each other's proposals. General Pfuel alone seemed to consider Napoleon a barbarian like everyone else who opposed his theory. But besides this feeling of respect, General Pfuel evoked pity in Andrei. From the tone in which the courtiers addressed him and the way Paulucci had allowed himself to speak of him to the Tzar, but above all from a certain desperation in General Pfuel's own expressions, it was clear that the others knew, and General Pfuel himself felt, that his fall was at hand. And despite his self-confidence and grumpy German sarcasm, he was pitiable, with his hair smoothly brushed on the temples and sticking up in tufts behind. Though he concealed the fact under a show of irritation and contempt, he was evidently in despair that the sole remaining chance of

verifying his theory by a huge experiment and proving its soundness to the whole world was slipping away from him.

The discussions continued for a long time, and the longer they lasted the more heated became the disputes, culminating in shouts and personalities, and the less was it possible to arrive at any general conclusion from all that had been said. Andrei, listening to this polyglot talk and to these surmises, plans, refutations, and shouts, felt nothing but amazement at what they were saying. A thought that had long since and often occurred to Andrei during his military activities—the idea that there is not and cannot be any science of war, and that therefore there can be no such thing as a military genius—now appeared to him an obvious truth. “What theories and sciences are possible about a matter the conditions and circumstances of which are unknown and cannot be defined, especially when the strength of the acting forces cannot be ascertained? No one was or is able to foresee in what condition our or the enemy’s armies will be in a day’s time, and no one can gauge the force of this or that detachment. Sometimes—when there is not a coward at the front to shout, ‘We are cut off!’ and start running, but a brave and jolly lad who shouts, ‘Hurrah!’—a detachment of five thousand is worth thirty thousand, as at Schön Grabern, while at times fifty thousand run from eight thousand, as at Austerlitz. What science can there be in a matter in which, as in all practical matters, nothing can be defined and everything depends on innumerable conditions, the significance of which is determined at a particular moment which arrives no one knows when? Armfeldt says our army is cut in half, and Paulucci says we have got the French army between two fires; Michaud says that the worthlessness of the Drissa camp lies in having the river behind it, and General Pfuel says that is what constitutes its strength; Toll proposes one plan, Armfeldt another, and they are all good and all bad, and the advantages of any suggestions can be seen only at the moment of trial. And why do they all speak of a ‘military genius’? Is a man a genius who can order bread to be brought up at the right

time and say who is to go to the right and who to the left? It is only because military men are invested with pomp and power and crowds of sycophants flatter power, attributing to it qualities of genius it does not possess. The best generals I have known were, on the contrary, stupid or absent-minded men. Major-General Bagration was the best, Napoleon himself admitted that. And of Napoleon himself! I remember his limited, self-satisfied face on the field of Austerlitz. Not only does a good army commander not need any special qualities, on the contrary, he also needs the absence of the highest and best human attributes—love, poetry, tenderness, and philosophic inquiring doubt. He should be limited, firmly convinced that what he is doing is very important (otherwise he will not have sufficient patience), and only then will he be a brave leader. God forbid that he should be humane, should love, or pity, or think of what is just and unjust. It is understandable that a theory of their ‘genius’ was invented for them long ago because they have power! The success of a military action depends not on them, but on the man in the ranks who shouts, ‘We are lost!’ or who shouts, ‘Hurrah!’ And only in the ranks can one serve with an assurance of being useful.”

So thought Andrei as he listened to the talking, and he roused himself only when Paulucci called him and everyone was leaving.

At the review the next day, the Tzar asked Andrei where he would like to serve, and Andrei lost his standing in court circles forever by not asking to remain attached to the Tzar’s person, but for permission to serve in the army.

Before the beginning of the campaign, Nicholas had received a letter from his parents in which they told him briefly of Natasha’s illness and the breaking off of her engagement to Andrei (which they explained by Natasha’s having rejected him) and again asked Nicholas to retire from the army and return home. On receiving this letter, Nicholas did not even make any attempt to get a leave of absence or to retire from the army but wrote to

his parents that he was sorry Natasha was ill and her engagement had broken off and that he would do all he could to meet their wishes. To Sonya, he wrote separately.

“Adored friend of my soul!” Nicholas wrote. “Nothing but honor could keep me from returning to the country. But now, at the commencement of the campaign, I should feel dishonored, not only in my comrades’ eyes but in my own, if I preferred my own happiness to my love and duty to Russia. But this shall be our last separation. Believe me, directly the war is over, if I am still alive and still loved by you, I will throw up everything and fly to you, to press you forever to my ardent breast.”

It was, in fact, only the commencement of the campaign that prevented Nicholas from returning home as he had promised and marrying Sonya. The autumn in Otrádnœ with the hunting, and the winter with the Christmas holidays and Sonya’s love, had opened out to him a vista of tranquil rural joys and peace such as he had never known before, and which now allured him. “A splendid wife, children, a good pack of hounds, a dozen leashes of smart borzois, agriculture, neighbors, service by election...” thought Nicholas. But now the campaign was beginning, and he had to remain with his regiment. And since it had to be so, Nicholas, as was natural to him, felt contented with the life he led in the regiment and was able to find pleasure in that life.

On his return from his furlough Nicholas, having been joyfully welcomed by his comrades was sent to obtain remounts and brought back from the Ukraine excellent horses which pleased him and earned him a commendation from his commanders. During Nicholas’s absence, he had been promoted to captain, and when the regiment was put on a war footing with an increase in numbers, he was again allotted his old squadron.

The campaign began, the regiment was moved into Poland on double pay, new officers arrived, new men and horses, and above all everybody was infected with the merrily excited mood that goes with the

commencement of a war, and Nicholas, conscious of his advantageous position in the regiment, devoted himself entirely to the pleasures and interests of military service, though he knew that sooner or later he would have to relinquish them.

The troops retired from Vílna for various complicated reasons that were state, political, and strategic. Each step of the retreat was accompanied by a complicated interplay of interests, arguments, and passions at headquarters. For the Pávlograd hussars, however, the whole of this retreat during the finest period of summer and with sufficient supplies was a very simple and agreeable business.

It was only at headquarters that there was depression, uneasiness, and intrigue; in the body of the army, they did not ask themselves where they were going or why. If they regretted having to retreat, it was only because they had to leave billets they had grown accustomed to or some pretty young Polish lady. If the thought that things looked bad chanced to enter anyone's head, he tried to be as cheerful as befits a good soldier and not to think of the usual trend of affairs, but only of the task nearest to hand. First, they camped gaily before Vílna, making acquaintance with the Polish landowners, preparing for reviews, and being reviewed by the Tzar and other high commanders. Then came an order to retreat to Sventsyáni and destroy any provisions they could not carry away with them. Sventsyáni was remembered by the hussars only as the *drunken camp*, a name the whole army gave to their encampment there, and because many complaints were made against the troops, who, taking advantage of the order to collect provisions, took also horses, carriages, and carpets from the Polish proprietors. Nicholas remembered Sventsyáni, because on the first day of their arrival at that small town he changed his sergeant major and was unable to manage all the drunken men of his squadron who, unknown to him, had appropriated five barrels of old beer. From Sventsyáni they retired

farther and farther to Drissa, and thence again beyond Drissa, drawing near to the frontier of Russia proper.

On the thirteenth of July, the Pávlograd regiment took part in a serious action for the first time.

On the twelfth of July, on the eve of that action, there was a heavy storm of rain and hail. The summer of 1812 was remarkable for its storms.

The two Pávlograd squadrons were bivouacking on a field of rye, which was already ripe but had been completely trodden down by cattle and horses. The rain was descending in torrents, and Nicholas, with a young officer named Ilyín, his protégé, was sitting in a hastily constructed shelter. An officer of their regiment, with long mustaches extending onto his cheeks, who after riding to the staff had been overtaken by the rain, entered Nicholas's shelter.

"I have come from the staff, Nicholas. Have you heard of Raévski's exploit?"

And the officer gave them details of the Saltánov battle, which he had heard from the staff.

Nicholas, smoking his pipe and turning his head about as the water trickled down his neck, listened inattentively, with an occasional glance at Ilyín, who was pressing close to him. This officer, a lad of sixteen who had recently joined the regiment, was now in the same relation to Nicholas that Nicholas had been to Denisov seven years before. Ilyín tried to imitate Nicholas in everything and adored him as a girl might have done.

Zdrzhinski, the officer with the long mustache, spoke grandiloquently of the Saltánov dam being "a Russian Thermopylae," and of how a deed worthy of antiquity had been performed by General Raévski. He recounted how Raévski had led his two sons onto the dam under terrific fire and had charged with them beside him. Nicholas heard the story and not only said nothing to encourage Zdrzhinski's enthusiasm but, on the contrary, looked like a man ashamed of what he was hearing, though with no intention of

contradicting it. Since the campaigns of Austerlitz and of 1807 Nicholas knew by experience that men always lie when describing military exploits, as he himself had done when recounting them; besides that, he had experience enough to know that nothing happens in war at all as we can imagine or relate it. And so Nicholas did not like Zdrzhinski's tale, nor did he like Zdrzhinski himself who, with his mustaches extending over his cheeks, bent low over the face of his hearer, as was his habit, and crowded Nicholas in the narrow shanty. Nicholas looked at him in silence. "In the first place, there must have been such confusion and crowding on the dam that was being attacked that if Raévski did lead his sons there, it could have had no effect except perhaps on some dozen men nearest to him," thought Nicholas, "the rest could not have seen how or with whom Raévski came onto the dam. And even those who did see it would not have been much stimulated by it, for what had they to do with Raévski's tender paternal feelings when their own skins were in danger? And besides, the fate of the Fatherland did not depend on whether they took the Saltánov dam or not, as we are told was the case at Thermopylae. So why should he have made such a sacrifice? And why expose his own children in the battle? I would not have taken my brother Petya there, or even Ilyín, who's a stranger to me but a nice lad, but would have tried to put them somewhere under cover," Nicholas continued to think, as he listened to Zdrzhinski. But he did not express his thoughts, for in such matters, too, he had gained experience. Nicholas knew that this tale redounded to the glory of our arms and so one had to pretend not to doubt it. And he acted accordingly.

"I can't stand this anymore," said Ilyín, noticing that Nicholas did not relish Zdrzhinski's conversation. "My stockings and shirt... and the water is running on my seat! I'll go and look for shelter. The rain seems less heavy."

Ilyín went out and Zdrzhinski rode away.

Five minutes later Ilyín, splashing through the mud, came running back to the shanty.

“Hurrah! Nicholas, come quick! I’ve found it! About two hundred yards away there’s a tavern where *ours* have already gathered. We can at least get dry there, and Mrs. Hendrikhovna’s there.”

Mrs. Hendrikhovna was the wife of the regimental doctor, a pretty young German woman he had married in Poland. The doctor, whether from lack of means or because he did not like to part from his young wife in the early days of their marriage, took her about with him wherever the hussar regiment went and his jealousy had become a standing joke among the hussar officers.

Nicholas threw his cloak over his shoulders, shouted to Lavrúshka to follow with the things, and—now slipping in the mud, now splashing right through it—set off with Ilyín in the lessening rain and the darkness that was occasionally rent by distant lightning.

“Nicholas, where are you?”

“Here. What lightning!” they called to one another.

In the tavern, before which stood the doctor’s covered cart, there were already some five officers. Mrs. Hendrikhovna, a plump little blonde German, in a dressing jacket and nightcap, was sitting on a broad bench in the front corner. Her husband, the doctor, lay asleep behind her. Nicholas and Ilyín, on entering the room, were welcomed with merry shouts and laughter.

“Dear me, how jolly we are!” said Nicholas laughing.

“And why do you stand there gaping?”

“What swells they are! Why, the water streams from them! Don’t make our drawing room so wet.”

“Don’t mess Mrs. Hendrikhovna’s dress!” cried other voices.

Nicholas and Ilyín hastened to find a corner where they could change into dry clothes without offending Mrs. Hendrikhovna’s modesty. They were going into a tiny recess behind a partition to change but found it completely filled by three officers who sat playing cards by the light of a

solitary candle on an empty box, and these officers would on no account yield their position. Mrs. Hendrikhovna obliged them with the loan of a petticoat to be used as a curtain, and behind that screen Nicholas and Ilyín, helped by Lavrúshka who had brought their kits, changed their wet things for dry ones.

A fire was made up in the dilapidated brick stove. A board was found, fixed on two saddles and covered with a horsecloth, a small samovar was produced and a cellaret and half a bottle of rum, and having asked Mrs. Hendrikhovna to preside, they all crowded around her. One offered her a clean handkerchief to wipe her charming hands, another spread a jacket under her little feet to keep them from the damp, another hung his coat over the window to keep out the draft, and yet another waved the flies off her husband's face, lest he should wake up.

"Leave him alone," said Mrs. Hendrikhovna, smiling timidly and happily. "He is sleeping well as it is, after a sleepless night."

"Oh, no, Mrs. Hendrikhovna," replied the officer, "one must look after the doctor. Perhaps he'll take pity on me someday when it comes to cutting off a leg or an arm for me."

There were only three tumblers, the water was so muddy that one could not make out whether the tea was strong or weak, and the samovar held only six tumblers of water, but this made it all the pleasanter to take turns in order of seniority to receive one's tumbler from Mrs. Hendrikhovna's plump little hands with their short and not overclean nails. All the officers appeared to be, and really were, in love with her that evening. Even those playing cards behind the partition soon left their game and came over to the samovar, yielding to the mood of courting Mrs. Hendrikhovna. She, seeing herself surrounded by such brilliant and polite young men, beamed with satisfaction, try as she might hide it, and perturbed as she evidently was each time her husband moved in his sleep behind her.

There was only one spoon, sugar was more plentiful than anything else, but it took too long to dissolve, so it was decided that Mrs. Hendrikhovna should stir the sugar for everyone in turn. Nicholas received his tumbler, and adding some rum to it asked Mrs. Hendrikhovna to stir it.

“But you take it without sugar?” she said, smiling all the time as if everything she said and everything the others said was very amusing and had a double meaning.

“It is not the sugar I want, but only that your little hand should stir my tea.”

Mrs. Hendrikhovna assented and began looking for the spoon which someone meanwhile had pounced on.

“Use your finger, Mrs. Hendrikhovna, it will be still nicer,” said Nicholas.

“Too hot!” she replied, blushing with pleasure.

Ilyín put a few drops of rum into the bucket of water and brought it to Mrs. Hendrikhovna, asking her to stir it with her finger.

“This is my cup,” said he. “Only dip your finger in it and I’ll drink it all up.”

When they had emptied the samovar, Nicholas took a pack of cards and proposed that they should play “Kings” with Mrs. Hendrikhovna. They drew lots to settle who should make up her set. At Nicholas’s suggestion, it was agreed that whoever became “King” should have the right to kiss Mrs. Hendrikhovna’s hand and that the “Booby” should go to refill and reheat the samovar for the doctor when the latter awoke.

“Well, but supposing Mrs. Hendrikhovna is ‘King’?” asked Ilyín.

“As it is, she is Queen, and her word is law!”

They had hardly begun to play before the doctor’s disheveled head suddenly appeared from behind Mrs. Hendrikhovna. He had been awake for some time, listening to what was being said, and evidently found nothing entertaining or amusing in what was going on. His face was sad and

depressed. Without greeting the officers, he scratched himself and asked to be allowed to pass as they were blocking the way. As soon as he had left the room all the officers burst into loud laughter and Mrs. Hendrikhovna blushed till her eyes filled with tears and thereby became still more attractive to them. Returning from the yard, the doctor told his wife (who had ceased to smile so happily, and looked at him in alarm, awaiting her sentence) that the rain had ceased and they must go to sleep in their covered cart, or everything in it would be stolen.

“But I’ll send an orderly... Two of them!” said Nicholas. “What an idea, doctor!”

“I’ll stand guard on it myself!” said Ilyín.

“No, gentlemen, you have had your sleep, but I have not slept for two nights,” replied the doctor, and he sat down morosely beside his wife, waiting for the game to end.

Seeing the doctor’s gloomy face as he frowned at his wife, the officers grew still merrier, and some of them could not refrain from laughter, for which they hurriedly sought plausible pretexts. When he had gone, taking his wife with him, and had settled down with her in their covered cart, the officers lay down in the tavern, covering themselves with their wet cloaks, but they did not sleep for a long time; now they exchanged remarks, recalling the doctor’s uneasiness and his wife’s delight, now they ran out into the porch and reported what was taking place in the covered carriage. Several times Nicholas, covering his head, tried to go to sleep, but some remark would arouse him and conversation would be resumed, to the accompaniment of unreasoning, merry, childlike laughter.

It was nearly three o’clock but no one was yet asleep when the quartermaster appeared with an order to move on to the little town of Ostróvna. Still laughing and talking, the officers began hurriedly getting ready and again boiled some muddy water in the samovar. But Nicholas went off to his squadron without waiting for tea. The day was breaking, the

rain had ceased, and the clouds were dispersing. It felt damp and cold, especially in clothes that were still moist. As they left the tavern in the twilight of the dawn, Nicholas and Ilyín both glanced under the wet and glistening leather hood of the doctor's cart, from under the apron of which his feet were sticking out, and in the middle of which his wife's nightcap was visible and her sleepy breathing audible.

"Mrs. Hendrikhovna really is a dear little thing," said Nicholas to Ilyín, who was following him.

"A charming woman!" said Ilyín, with all the gravity of a boy of sixteen.

Half an hour later the squadron was lined up on the road. The command was heard to "mount" and the soldiers crossed themselves and mounted. Nicholas riding in front gave the order "Forward!" and the hussars, with clanking sabers and subdued talk, their horses' hoofs splashing in the mud, defiled in fours and moved along the broad road planted with birch trees on each side, following the infantry and a battery that had gone on in front.

Tattered, blue-purple clouds, reddening in the east, were scudding before the wind. It was growing lighter and lighter. That curly grass which always grows by country roadsides became clearly visible, still wet with the night's rain; the drooping branches of the birches, also wet, swayed in the wind and flung down bright drops of water to one side. The soldiers' faces were more and more clearly visible. Nicholas, always closely followed by Ilyín, rode along the side of the road between two rows of birch trees.

When campaigning, Nicholas allowed himself the indulgence of riding not a regimental but a Cossack horse. A judge of horses and a sportsman, he had lately procured himself a large, fine, mettlesome, Donét's horse, dun-colored, with light mane and tail, and when he rode it no one could gallop faster than him. To ride this horse was a pleasure to him, and he thought of the horse, of the morning, of the doctor's wife, but not once of the impending danger.

Formerly, when going into action, Nicholas had felt afraid; now he had not the least feeling of fear. He was fearless, not because he had grown used to being under fire (one cannot grow used to danger), but because he had learned how to manage his thoughts when in danger. He had grown accustomed when going into action to think about anything but what would seem most likely to interest him—the impending danger. During the first period of his service, hard as he tried and much as he reproached himself with cowardice, he had not been able to do this, but with time it had come of itself. Now he rode beside Ilyín under the birch trees, occasionally plucking leaves from a branch that met his hand, sometimes touching his horse's side with his foot, or, without turning round, handing a pipe he had finished to a hussar riding behind him, with as calm and careless an air as though he were merely out for a ride. He glanced with pity at the excited face of Ilyín, who talked much and in great agitation. He knew from experience the tormenting expectation of terror and death the cornet was suffering and knew that only time could help him.

As soon as the sun appeared in a clear strip of sky beneath the clouds, the wind fell, as if it dared not spoil the beauty of the summer morning after the storm; drops still continued to fall, but vertically now, and all was still. The whole sun appeared on the horizon and disappeared behind a long narrow cloud that hung above it. A few minutes later it reappeared brighter still from behind the top of the cloud, tearing its edge. Everything grew bright and glittered. And with that light, and as if in reply to it, came the sound of guns ahead of them.

Before Nicholas had had time to consider and determine the distance of that firing, Grand Marshal of the Court Tolstóy's adjutant came galloping from Vítebsk with orders to advance at a trot along the road.

The squadron overtook and passed the infantry and the battery—which had also quickened their pace—rode down a hill, and passing through an

empty and deserted village again ascended. The horses began to lather and the men to flush.

“Halt! Dress your ranks!” the order of the regimental commander was heard ahead. “Forward by the left. Walk, march!” came the order from in front.

And the hussars, passing along the line of troops on the left flank of our position, halted behind our light cavalry who were in the front line. To the right stood our infantry in a dense column: they were the reserve. Higher up the hill, on the very horizon, our guns were visible through the wonderfully clear air, brightly illuminated by slanting morning sunbeams. In front, beyond a hollow dale, could be seen the enemy’s columns and guns. Our advanced line, already in action, could be heard briskly exchanging shots with the enemy in the dale.

At these sounds, long unheard, Nicholas’s spirits rose, as at the strains of the merriest music. *Carriage-ta-ta-tap!* cracked the shots, now together, now several quickly one after another. Again all was silent and then again it sounded as if someone were walking on detonators and exploding them.

The hussars remained in the same place for about an hour. A cannonade began. General Ostermann with his suite rode up behind the squadron, halted, spoke to the commander of the regiment, and rode up the hill to the guns.

After General Ostermann had gone, a command rang out to the light cavalry.

“Form column! Prepare to charge!”

The infantry in front of them parted into platoons to allow the light cavalry to pass. The light cavalry started, the streamers on their spears fluttering, and trotted downhill toward the French cavalry which was seen below to the left.

As soon as the light cavalry descended the hill, the hussars were ordered up the hill to support the battery. As they took the places vacated by the

light cavalry, bullets came from the front, whining and whistling, but fell spent without taking effect.

The sounds, which he had not heard for so long, had an even more pleasurable and exhilarating effect on Nicholas than the previous sounds of firing. Drawing himself up, Nicholas viewed the field of battle opening out before him from the hill, and with his whole soul followed the movement of the light cavalry. They swooped down close to the French dragoons, something confusing happened there amid the smoke, and five minutes later our light cavalry was galloping back, not to the place they had occupied but more to the left, and among the orange-colored light cavalry on chestnut horses and behind them, in a large group, blue French dragoons on gray horses could be seen.

Nicholas, with his keen sportsman's eye, was one of the first to catch sight of these blue French dragoons pursuing our light cavalry. Nearer and nearer in disorderly crowds came the light cavalry and the French dragoons pursuing them. Nicholas could already see how these men, who looked so small at the foot of the hill, jostled and overtook one another, waving their arms and their sabers in the air.

Nicholas gazed at what was happening before him as at a hunt. He felt instinctively that if the hussars struck at the French dragoons now, the latter could not withstand them, but if a charge was to be made it must be done now, at that very moment, or it would be too late. He looked around. A captain, standing beside him, was gazing like himself with eyes fixed on the cavalry below them.

“Captain!” said Nicholas. “You know, we could crush them...”

“A fine thing too!” replied the captain, “and really...”

Nicholas, without waiting to hear him out, touched his horse, galloped to the front of his squadron, and before he had time to finish giving the word of command, the whole squadron, sharing his feeling, was following him. Nicholas himself did not know how or why he did it. He acted as he

did when hunting, without reflecting or considering. He saw the dragoons near and that they were galloping in disorder; he knew they could not withstand an attack—knew there was only that moment and that if he let it slip it would not return. The bullets were whining and whistling so stimulatingly around him and his horse was so eager to go that he could not restrain himself. Nicholas touched his horse, gave the word of command, and immediately, hearing behind him the tramp of the horses of his deployed squadron rode at full trot downhill toward the dragoons. Hardly had they reached the bottom of the hill before their pace instinctively changed to a gallop, which grew faster and faster as they drew nearer to our light cavalry and the French dragoons who galloped after them. The dragoons were now close at hand. On seeing the hussars, the foremost began to turn, while those behind began to halt. With the same feeling with which he had galloped across the path of a wolf, Nicholas gave rein to his Donéts horse and galloped to intersect the path of the dragoons' disordered lines. One cavalry stopped, another who was on foot flung himself to the ground to avoid being knocked over, and a riderless horse fell in among the hussars. Nearly all the French dragoons were galloping back. Nicholas, picking out one on a gray horse, dashed after him. On the way he came upon a bush, his gallant horse cleared it, and almost before he had righted himself in his saddle he saw that he would immediately overtake the enemy he had selected. That Frenchman, by his uniform an officer, was going at a gallop, crouching on his gray horse and urging it on with his saber. In another moment Nicholas's horse dashed its breast against the hindquarters of the officer's horse, almost knocking it over, and at the same instant Nicholas, without knowing why, raised his saber and struck the Frenchman with it.

The instant he had done this, all of Nicholas's animation vanished. The officer fell, not so much from the blow—which had but slightly cut his arm above the elbow—as from the shock to his horse and from fright. Nicholas

reined in his horse, and his eyes sought his foe to see whom he had vanquished. The French dragoon officer was hopping with one foot on the ground, the other being caught in the stirrup. His eyes, screwed up with fear as if he every moment expected another blow, gazed up at Nicholas with shrinking terror. His pale and mud-stained face—fair and young, with a dimple in the chin and light-blue eyes—was not an enemy's face at all suited to a battlefield, but a most ordinary, homelike face. Before Nicholas had decided what to do with him, the officer cried, "I surrender!" He hurriedly but vainly tried to get his foot out of the stirrup and did not remove his frightened blue eyes from Nicholas's face. Some hussars who galloped up disengaged his foot and helped him into the saddle. On all sides, the hussars were busy with the dragoons; one was wounded, but though his face was bleeding, he would not give up his horse; another was perched up behind a hussar with his arms around him; a third was being helped by a hussar to mount his horse. In front, the French infantry soldiers were firing as they ran. The hussars galloped hastily back with their prisoners. Nicholas galloped back with the rest, aware of an unpleasant feeling of depression in his heart. Something vague and confused, which he could not at all account for, had come over him with the capture of that officer and the blow he had dealt him.

General Ostermann met the returning hussars, sent for Nicholas, thanked him, and said he would report his gallant deed to the Tzar and would recommend him for a St. George's Cross. When sent for by General Ostermann, Nicholas, remembering that he had charged without orders, felt sure his commander was sending for him to punish him for breach of discipline. General Ostermann's flattering words and promise of a reward should therefore have struck him all the more pleasantly, but he still felt that same vaguely disagreeable feeling of moral nausea. "But what on earth is worrying me?" he asked himself as he rode back from the general. "Ilyín? No, he's safe. Have I disgraced myself in any way? No, that's not it."

Something else, resembling remorse, tormented him. “Yes, oh yes, that French officer with the dimple. And I remember how my arm paused when I raised it.”

Nicholas saw the prisoners being led away and galloped after them to have a look at his Frenchman with the dimple on his chin. He was sitting in his foreign uniform on a hussar packhorse and looked anxiously about him. The sword cut on his arm could scarcely be called a wound. The French officer glanced at Nicholas with a feigned smile and waved his hand in greeting. Nicholas still had the same indefinite feeling of shame.

All that day and the next his friends and comrades noticed that Nicholas, without being dull or angry, was silent, thoughtful, and preoccupied. He drank reluctantly, tried to remain alone, and kept turning something over in his mind.

Nicholas was always thinking about that brilliant exploit of his, which to his amazement had gained him the St. George’s Cross and even given him a reputation for bravery, and there was something he could not at all understand. “So others are even more afraid than I am!” Nicholas thought. “So that’s all there is in what is called heroism! And did I do it for my country’s sake? And how was the French officer to blame, with his dimple and blue eyes? And how frightened he was! He thought that I should kill him. Why should I kill him? My hand trembled. And they have given me a St. George’s Cross... I can’t make it out at all.”

But while Nicholas was considering these questions and still could reach no clear solution to what puzzled him, the wheel of fortune in the service, as often happens, turned in his favor. After the affair at Ostróvna, Nicholas was brought to notice, received command of a hussar battalion, and when a brave officer was needed he was chosen.

On receiving news of Natasha’s illness, Countess Rostov, though not quite well yet and still weak, went to Moscow with Petya and the rest of the

household, and the whole family moved from Mary Dmitrievna's house to their own and settled down in town.

Natasha's illness was so serious that, fortunately for her and for her parents, the consideration of all that had caused the illness, her conduct, and the breaking off of her engagement, receded into the background. She was so ill that it was impossible for them to consider how far she was to blame for what had happened. Natasha could not eat or sleep, grew visibly thinner, coughed, and, as the doctors made them feel, was in danger. They could not think of anything but how to help her. Doctors came to see her singly and in consultation, talked much in French, German, and Latin, blamed one another and prescribed a great variety of medicines for all the diseases known to them, but the simple idea never occurred to any of them that they could not know the disease Natasha was suffering from, as no disease suffered by a live man can be known, for every living person has his own peculiarities and always has his own peculiar, personal, novel, complicated disease, unknown to medicine—not a disease of the lungs, liver, skin, heart, nerves, and so on mentioned in medical books, but a disease consisting of one of the innumerable combinations of the maladies of those organs. This simple thought could not occur to the doctors (as it cannot occur to a wizard that he is unable to work his charms) because the business of their lives was to cure, and they received money for it and had spent the best years of their lives on that business. But, above all, that thought was kept out of their minds by the fact that they saw they were really useful, as, in fact, they were to the whole Rostov family. Their usefulness did not depend on making the patient swallow substances for the most part harmful (the harm was scarcely perceptible, as they were given in small doses), but they were useful, necessary, and indispensable because they satisfied a mental need of the invalid and of those who loved her—and that is why there are, and always will be, pseudo-healers, wise women, homeopaths, and allopaths. They satisfied that eternal human need for hope of relief, for sympathy, and

that something should be done, which is felt by those who are suffering. They satisfied the need seen in its most elementary form in a child when it wants to have a place rubbed that has been hurt. A child knocks itself and runs at once to the arms of its mother or nurse to have the aching spot rubbed or kissed, and it feels better when this is done. The child cannot believe that the strongest and wisest of its people have no remedy for its pain, and the hope of relief and the expression of its mother's sympathy, while she rubs the bump, comforts it. The doctors were of use to Natasha because they kissed and rubbed her bump, assuring her that it would soon pass if only the coachman went to the chemist's on Arbát Street and got a powder and some pills in a pretty box for a ruble and seventy kopeks, and if she took those powders in boiled water at intervals of precisely two hours, neither more nor less.

What would Sonya and Count and Countess Rostov have done, how would they have looked, if nothing had been done, if there had not been those pills to give by the clock, the warm drinks, the chicken cutlets, and all the other details of life ordered by the doctors, the carrying out of which supplied an occupation and consolation to the family circle? How would Count Rostov have borne his dearly loved daughter's illness had he not known that it was costing him a thousand rubles, and that he would not grudge thousands more to benefit her, or had he not known that if her illness continued he would not grudge yet other thousands and would take her abroad for consultations there, and had he not been able to explain the details of how Dr. Métivier and Feller had not understood the symptoms, but Frise had, and Múdrov had diagnosed them even better? What would Countess Rostov have done had she not been able sometimes to scold the invalid Natasha for not strictly obeying the doctor's orders?

"You'll never get well like that, Natasha," Countess Rostov would say, forgetting her grief in her vexation, "if you won't obey the doctor and take your medicine at the right time! You mustn't trifle with it, you know, or it

may turn to *pneumonia*,” she would go on, deriving much comfort from the utterance of that foreign word, incomprehensible to others as well as to herself.

What would Sonya have done without the glad consciousness that she had not undressed during the first three nights, in order to be ready to carry out all the doctor’s injunctions with precision, and that she still kept awake at night so as not to miss the proper time when the slightly harmful pills in the little gilt box had to be administered? Even to Natasha herself, it was pleasant to see that so many sacrifices were being made for her sake and to know that she had to take medicine at certain hours, though she declared that no medicine would cure her and that it was all nonsense. And it was even pleasant to be able to show, by disregarding the orders, that she did not believe in medical treatment and did not value her life.

The doctor came every day, felt Natasha’s pulse, looked at her tongue, and regardless of her grief-stricken face joked with her. But when he had gone into another room, to which Countess Rostov hurriedly followed him, he assumed a grave air and thoughtfully shaking his head said that though there was danger, he had hopes of the effect of this last medicine and one must wait and see, that the malady was chiefly mental, but... And Countess Rostov, trying to conceal the action from herself and from him, slipped a gold coin into his hand and always returned to the patient with a more tranquil mind.

The symptoms of Natasha’s illness were that she ate little, slept little, coughed, and was always low-spirited. The doctors said that she could not get on without medical treatment, so they kept her in the stifling atmosphere of the town, and the Rostovs did not move to the country that summer of 1812.

In spite of the many pills she swallowed and the drops and powders out of the little bottles and boxes of which Madame Schoss who was fond of such things made a large collection, and in spite of being deprived of the

country life to which she was accustomed, youth prevailed. Natasha's grief began to be overlaid by the impressions of daily life, it ceased to press so painfully on her heart, it gradually faded into the past, and she began to recover physically.

Natasha was calmer but no happier. She did not merely avoid all external forms of pleasure—balls, promenades, concerts, and theaters—but she never laughed without a sound of tears in her laughter. She could not sing. As soon as she began to laugh, or tried to sing by herself, tears choked her: tears of remorse, tears at the recollection of those pure times which could never return, tears of vexation that she should so uselessly have ruined her young life which might have been so happy. Laughter and singing in particular seemed to her like blasphemy, in face of her sorrow. Without any need of self-restraint, no wish to coquet ever entered her head. She said and felt at that time that no man was more to her than Nastásya Ivánovna, the buffoon. Something stood sentinel within her and forbade her every joy. Besides, Natasha had lost all the old interests of her carefree girlish life that had been so full of hope. The previous autumn, the hunting, “Uncle,” and the Christmas holidays spent with Nicholas at Otrádnœ were what she recalled oftenest and most painfully. What would she not have given to bring back even a single day of that time! But it was gone forever. Her presentiment at the time had not deceived her—that that state of freedom and readiness for any enjoyment would not return again. Yet it was necessary to live on.

It comforted Natasha to reflect that she was not better as she had formerly imagined, but worse, much worse, than anybody else in the world. But this was not enough. She knew that, and asked herself, “What next?” But there was nothing to come. There was no joy in life, yet life was passing. Natasha apparently tried not to be a burden or a hindrance to anyone but wanted nothing for herself. She kept away from everyone in the house and felt at ease only with her brother Petya. She liked to be with him

better than with the others, and when alone with him she sometimes laughed. She hardly ever left the house and of those who came to see them was glad to see only one person, Pierre. It would have been impossible to treat her with more delicacy, greater care, and at the same time more seriously than Pierre did. Natasha unconsciously felt this delicacy and so found great pleasure in his society. But she was not even grateful to him for it; nothing good on Pierre's part seemed to her to be an effort, it seemed so natural for him to be kind to everyone that there was no merit in his kindness. Sometimes Natasha noticed embarrassment and awkwardness on his part in her presence, especially when he wanted to do something to please her, or feared that something they spoke of would awaken memories distressing to her. She noticed this and attributed it to his kindness and shyness, which she imagined must be the same towards everyone as it was towards her. After those involuntary words—that if Pierre were free he would have asked on his knees for her hand and her love—uttered at a moment when she was so strongly agitated, Pierre never spoke to Natasha of his feelings; and it seemed plain to her that those words, which had then so comforted her, were spoken as all sorts of meaningless words are spoken to comfort a crying child. It was not because Pierre was a married man, but because Natasha felt very strongly with him that moral barrier the absence of which she had experienced with Anatole that it never entered her head that the relations between him and herself could lead to love on her part, still less on his, or even to the kind of tender, self-conscious, romantic friendship between a man and a woman of which she had known several instances.

Before the end of the fast of St. Peter, Agraféna Ivánovna, a country neighbor of the Rostovs, came to Moscow to pay her devotions at the shrines of the Moscow saints. She suggested that Natasha should fast and prepare for Holy Communion, and Natasha gladly welcomed the idea. Despite the doctor's orders that she should not go out early in the morning,

Natasha insisted on fasting and preparing for the sacrament, not as they prepared for it in the Rostov family by attending three services in their own house, but as Agraféna Ivánovna did, by going to church every day for a week and not once missing Vespers, Matins, or Mass.

Countess Rostov was pleased with Natasha's zeal; after the poor results of the medical treatment, in the depths of her heart she hoped that prayer might help her daughter more than medicines and, though not without fear and concealing it from the doctor, she agreed to Natasha's wish and entrusted her to Agraféna Ivánovna. She used to come to wake Natasha at three in the morning but usually found her already awake. She was afraid of being late for Matins. Hastily washing, and meekly putting on her shabbiest dress and an old mantilla, Natasha, shivering in the fresh air, went out into the deserted streets lit by the clear light of dawn. By Agraféna Ivánovna's advice Natasha prepared herself not in their own parish, but at a church where, according to the devout Agraféna Ivánovna, the priest was a man of very severe and lofty life. There were never many people in the church; Natasha always stood beside Agraféna Ivánovna in the customary place before an icon of the Blessed Virgin, let into the screen before the choir on the left side, and a feeling, new to her, of humility before something great and incomprehensible, seized her when at that unusual morning hour, gazing at the dark face of the Virgin illuminated by the candles burning before it and by the morning light falling from the window, she listened to the words of the service which she tried to follow with understanding. When Natasha understood them her personal feelings became interwoven in the prayers with shades of their own. When she did not understand, it was sweeter still to think that the wish to understand everything is pride, that it is impossible to understand all, that it is only necessary to believe and to commit oneself to God, whom she felt guiding her soul at those moments. Natasha crossed herself, bowed low, and when she did not understand, in horror at her own vileness, simply asked God to forgive her everything,

everything, to have mercy upon her. The prayers to which she surrendered herself most of all were those of repentance. On her way home at an early hour when she met no one but bricklayers going to work or men sweeping the street, and everybody within the houses was still asleep, Natasha experienced a feeling new to her, a sense of the possibility of correcting her faults, the possibility of a new, clean life, and of happiness.

During the whole week, Natasha spent in this way, that feeling grew every day. And the happiness of taking communion, or “communing” as Agraféna Ivánovna, joyously playing with the word, called it, seemed to Natasha so great that she felt she should never live till that blessed Sunday.

But the happy day came, and on that memorable Sunday, when, dressed in white muslin, Natasha returned home after communion, for the first time in many months she felt calm and not oppressed by the thought of the life that lay before her.

The doctor who came to see her that day ordered her to continue the powders he had prescribed a fortnight previously.

“Natasha must certainly go on taking them morning and evening,” said the doctor, evidently sincerely satisfied with his success. “Only, please be particular about it.

“Be quite easy,” the doctor continued playfully, as he adroitly took the gold coin in his palm. “She will soon be singing and frolicking about. The last medicine has done her a very great deal of good. She has freshened up very much.”

Countess Rostov, with a cheerful expression on her face, looked down at her nails and spat a little for luck as she returned to the drawing room.

At the beginning of July, more and more disquieting reports about the war began to spread in Moscow; people spoke of an appeal by the Tzar to the people, and of his coming from the army to Moscow. And as up to the eleventh of July no manifesto or appeal had been received, exaggerated reports became current about them and about the position of Russia. It was

said that the Tzar was leaving the army because it was in danger, it was said that Smolénsk had surrendered, that Napoleon had an army of a million and only a miracle could save Russia.

On the eleventh of July, which was Saturday, the manifesto was received but was not yet in print, and Pierre, who was at the Rostovs', promised to come to dinner the next day, Sunday, and bring a copy of the manifesto and appeal, which he would obtain from Mayor Rostopchin.

That Sunday, the Rostovs went to Mass at the Razumóvskis' private chapel as usual. It was a hot July day. Even at ten o'clock, when the Rostovs got out of their carriage at the chapel, the sultry air, the shouts of hawkers, the light and gay summer clothes of the crowd, the dusty leaves of the trees on the boulevard, the sounds of the band and the white trousers of a battalion marching to parade, the rattling of wheels on the cobblestones, and the brilliant, hot sunshine were all full of that summer languor, that content and discontent with the present, which is most strongly felt on a bright, hot day in town. All the Moscow notabilities, all the Rostovs' acquaintances, were at the Razumóvskis' chapel, for, as if expecting something to happen, many wealthy families who usually left town for their country estates had not gone away that summer. As Natasha, at her mother's side, passed through the crowd behind a liveried footman who cleared the way for them, she heard a young man speaking about her in too loud a whisper.

"That's Natasha, the one who..."

"She's much thinner, but all the same she's pretty!"

Natasha heard or thought she heard, the names of Anatole and Andrei. But she was always imagining that. It always seemed to her that everyone who looked at her was thinking only of what had happened to her. With a sinking heart, wretched as she always was now when she found herself in a crowd, Natasha in her lilac silk dress trimmed with black lace walked—as women can walk—with the more repose and stateliness the greater the pain

and shame in her soul. Natasha knew for certain that she was pretty, but this no longer gave her satisfaction as it used to. On the contrary, it tormented her more than anything else of late, particularly so on this bright, hot summer day in town. "It's Sunday again—another week past," she thought, recalling that she had been here the Sunday before, "and always the same life that is no life, and the same surroundings in which it used to be so easy to live. I'm pretty, I'm young, and I know that now I am good. I used to be bad, but now I know I am good," she thought, "but yet my best years are slipping by and are no good to anyone." Natasha stood by her mother's side and exchanged nods with acquaintances near her. From habit, she scrutinized the ladies' dresses, condemned the bearing of a lady standing close by who was not crossing herself properly but in a cramped manner, and again she thought with vexation that she was herself being judged and was judging others, and suddenly, at the sound of the service, she felt horrified at her own vileness, horrified that the former purity of her soul was again lost to her.

A comely, fresh-looking old man was conducting the service with that mild solemnity that has so elevating and soothing an effect on the souls of the worshipers. The gates of the sanctuary screen were closed, the curtain was slowly drawn, and from behind it, a soft mysterious voice pronounced some words. Tears, the cause of which she herself did not understand, made Natasha's breast heave, and a joyous but oppressive feeling agitated her.

"Teach me what I should do, how to live my life, how I may grow good forever, forever!" Natasha pleaded.

The deacon came out onto the raised space before the altar screen and, holding his thumb extended, drew his long hair from under his dalmatic and, making the sign of the cross on his breast, began in a loud and solemn voice to recite the words of the prayer...

"In peace let us pray unto the Lord."

“As one community, without distinction of class, without enmity, united by brotherly love—let us pray!” thought Natasha.

“For the peace that is from above, and for the salvation of our souls.”

“For the world of angels and all the spirits who dwell above us,” prayed Natasha.

When they prayed for the warriors, Natasha thought of Nicholas and Denisov. When they prayed for all traveling by land and sea, Natasha remembered Andrei, prayed for him, and asked God to forgive her all the wrongs she had done him. When they prayed for those who love us, she prayed for the members of her own family, her father and mother, and Sonya, realizing for the first time how wrongly she had acted toward them, and feeling all the strength of her love for them. When they prayed for those who hate us, Natasha tried to think of her enemies and people who hated her, in order to pray for them. She included among her enemies the creditors and all who had business dealings with her father, and always at the thought of enemies and those who hated her she remembered Anatole who had done her so much harm—and though he did not hate her she gladly prayed for him as for an enemy. Only at prayer did she feel able to think clearly and calmly of Andrei and Anatole, as men for whom her feelings were as nothing compared with her awe and devotion to God. When they prayed for the Imperial family and the Synod, Natasha bowed very low and made the sign of the cross, saying to herself that even if she did not understand, still she could not doubt, and at any rate loved the governing Synod and prayed for it.

When he had finished the Litany the deacon crossed the stole over his breast and said, “Let us commit ourselves and our whole lives to Christ the Lord!”

“Commit ourselves to God,” Natasha inwardly repeated. “Lord God, I submit myself to Thy will!” she thought. “I want nothing, wish for nothing; teach me what to do and how to use my will! Take me, take me!” prayed

Natasha, with impatient emotion in her heart, not crossing herself but letting her slender arms hang down as if expecting some invisible power at any moment to take her and deliver her from herself, from her regrets, desires, remorse, hopes, and sins.

Countess Rostov looked around several times at Natasha's softened face and shining eyes and prayed to God to help her.

Unexpectedly, in the middle of the service, and not in the usual order Natasha knew so well, the deacon brought out a small stool, the one he knelt on when praying on Trinity Sunday, and placed it before the doors of the sanctuary screen. The priest came out with his purple velvet biretta on his head, adjusted his hair, and knelt down with an effort. Everybody followed his example and they looked at one another in surprise. Then came the prayer just received from the Synod—a prayer for the deliverance of Russia from hostile invasion.

“Lord God of might, God of our salvation!” began the priest in that voice, clear, not grandiloquent but mild, in which only the Slav clergy read and which acts so irresistibly on a Russian heart.

“Lord God of might, God of our salvation! Look this day in mercy and blessing on Thy humble people, and graciously hear us, spare us, and have mercy upon us! This foe confounding Thy land, desiring to lay waste the whole world, rises against us; these lawless men are gathered together to overthrow Thy kingdom, to destroy Thy dear Jerusalem, Thy beloved Russia; to defile Thy temples, to overthrow Thine altars, and to desecrate our holy shrines. How long, Oh Lord, how long shall the wicked triumph? How long shall they wield unlawful power?

“Lord God! Hear us when we pray to Thee; strengthen with Thy might our most gracious sovereign lord, the Tzar; be mindful of his uprightness and meekness, reward him according to his righteousness, and let it preserve us, Thy chosen Israel! Bless his counsels, his undertakings, and his work; strengthen his kingdom by Thine almighty hand, and give him

victory over his enemy, even as Thou gavest Moses the victory over Amalek, Gideon over Midian, and David over Goliath. Preserve his army, put a bow of brass in the hands of those who have armed themselves in Thy Name, and gird their loins with strength for the fight. Take up the spear and shield and arise to help us; confound and put to shame those who have devised evil against us, may they be before the faces of Thy faithful warriors as dust before the wind, and may Thy mighty Angel confound them and put them to flight; may they be ensnared when they know it not, and may the plots they have laid in secret be turned against them; let them fall before Thy servants' feet and be laid low by our hosts! Lord, Thou art able to save both great and small; Thou art God, and man cannot prevail against Thee!

“God of our fathers! Remember Thy bounteous mercy and loving-kindness which are from of old; turn not Thy face from us, but be gracious to our unworthiness, and in Thy great goodness and Thy many mercies regard not our transgressions and iniquities! Create in us a clean heart and renew a right spirit within us, strengthen us all in Thy faith, fortify our hope, inspire us with true love one for another, arm us with unity of the spirit in the righteous defense of the heritage Thou gavest to us and to our fathers, and let not the scepter of the wicked be exalted against the destiny of those Thou hast sanctified.

“Oh Lord our God, in whom we believe and in whom we put our trust, let us not be confounded in our hope of Thy mercy, and give us a token of Thy blessing, that those who hate us and our Orthodox faith may see it and be put to shame and perish, and may all the nations know that Thou art the Lord and we are Thy people. Show Thy mercy upon us this day, Oh Lord, and grant us Thy salvation; make the hearts of Thy servants rejoice in Thy mercy; smite down our enemies and destroy them swiftly beneath the feet of Thy faithful servants! For Thou art the defense, the succor, and the

victory of them that put their trust in Thee, and to Thee be all glory, to Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, now and forever, world without end. Amen.”

In Natasha’s receptive condition of soul, this prayer affected her strongly. She listened to every word about the victory of Moses over Amalek, of Gideon over Midian, and of David over Goliath, and about the destruction of “Thy Jerusalem,” and she prayed to God with the tenderness and emotion with which her heart was overflowing, but without fully understanding what she was asking of God in that prayer. Natasha shared with all her heart in the prayer for the spirit of righteousness, for the strengthening of the heart by faith and hope, and its animation by love. But she could not pray that her enemies might be trampled underfoot when but a few minutes before she had been wishing she had more of them that she might pray for them. But neither could she doubt the righteousness of the prayer that was being read on bended knees. Natasha felt in her heart a devout and tremulous awe at the thought of the punishment that overtakes men for their sins, and especially of her own sins, and she prayed to God to forgive them all, and her too, and to give them all, and her too, peace and happiness. And it seemed to Natasha that God heard her prayer.

From the day when Pierre, after leaving the Rostovs with Natasha’s grateful look fresh in his mind, had gazed at the comet that seemed to be fixed in the sky and felt that something new was appearing on his own horizon—from that day the problem of the vanity and uselessness of all earthly things, that had incessantly tormented him, no longer presented itself. That terrible question “Why?” “Wherefore?” which had come to him amid every occupation, was now replaced, not by another question or by a reply to the former question, but by *her* image. When Pierre listened to, or himself took part in, trivial conversations, when he read or heard of human baseness or folly, he was not horrified as formerly, and did not ask himself why men struggled so about these things when all is so transient and incomprehensible—but he remembered her as he had last seen Natasha, and

all his doubts vanished—not because Natasha had answered the questions that had haunted him, but because his conception of her transferred him instantly to another, a brighter, realm of spiritual activity in which no one could be justified or guilty—a realm of beauty and love which it was worth living for. Whatever worldly baseness presented itself to him, Pierre said to himself:

“Well, supposing N. N. has swindled the country and the Tzar, and the country and the Tzar confer honors upon him, what does that matter? Natasha smiled at me yesterday and asked me to come again, and I love her, and no one will ever know it.” And his soul felt calm and peaceful.

Pierre still went into society, drank as much, and led the same idle and dissipated life, because besides the hours he spent at the Rostovs’ there were other hours he had to spend somehow, and the habits and acquaintances he had made in Moscow formed a current that bore him along irresistibly. But lately, when more and more disquieting reports came from the seat of war and Natasha’s health began to improve and she no longer aroused in him the former feeling of careful pity, an ever-increasing restlessness, which he could not explain, took possession of him. Pierre felt that the condition he was in could not continue long, that a catastrophe was coming which would change his whole life, and he impatiently sought everywhere for signs of that approaching catastrophe. One of his Brother Masons had revealed to Pierre the following prophecy concerning Napoleon, drawn from the Revelation of St. John.

In ***

CHAPTER 13, verse 18, of the Apocalypse, it is said:

Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.

And in the fifth verse of the same ***

CHAPTER:

And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months.

The French alphabet, written out with the same numerical values as the Hebrew, in which the first nine letters denote units and the others tens, will have the following significance:

a b c d e f g h i k
1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10
l m n o p q r s
20 30 40 50 60 70 80 90
t u v w x y
100 110 120 130 140 150
z
160

Writing the French words *L'Empereur Napoléon* in numbers, it appears that the sum of them is 666 and that Napoleon was therefore the beast foretold in the Apocalypse. Moreover, by applying the same system to the words *forty-two*, which was the term allowed to the beast that “spoke great things and blasphemies,” the same number 666 was obtained; from which it followed that the limit fixed for Napoleon’s power had come in the year 1812 when he was forty-two. This prophecy pleased Pierre very much and he often asked himself what would put an end to the power of the beast, that is, of Napoleon, and tried using the same system of using letters as numbers and adding them up, to find an answer to the question that engrossed him. He wrote the words *L'Empereur Alexandre, La nation russe* and added up their numbers, but the sums were either more or less than 666. Once when making such calculations he wrote down his own name in French, *Comte Pierre Besouhoff*, but the sum of the numbers did not come right. Then he changed the spelling, substituting a z for the s and adding *de* and the

article *le*, still without obtaining the desired result. Then it occurred to him: if the answer to the question were contained in his name, his nationality would also be given in the answer. So he wrote *Le Russe Besuhof* and adding up the numbers got 671. This was only five too much, and five was represented by *e*, the very letter elided from the article *le* before the word *Empereur*. By omitting the *e*, though incorrectly, Pierre got the answer he sought. *L'russe Besuhof* made 666. This discovery excited him. How, or by what means, he was connected with the great event foretold in the Apocalypse he did not know, but he did not doubt that connection for a moment. His love for Natasha, Antichrist, Napoleon, the invasion, the comet, 666, *L'Empereur Napoléon*, and *L'russe Besuhof*—all this had to mature and culminate, to lift him out of that spellbound, petty sphere of Moscow habits in which he felt held captive and lead him to great achievement and great happiness.

On the eve of the Sunday when the special prayer was read, Pierre had promised the Rostovs to bring them, from Mayor Rostopchin whom he knew well, both the appeal to the people and the news from the army. In the morning, when Pierre went to call at Mayor Rostopchin's he met there a courier fresh from the army, an acquaintance of his own, who often danced at Moscow balls.

"Do, please, for heaven's sake, relieve me of something!" said the courier. "I have a sack full of letters to parents."

Among these letters was one from Nicholas to his father. Pierre took that letter, and Mayor Rostopchin also gave him the Tzar's appeal to Moscow, which had just been printed, the last army orders, and his own most recent bulletin. Glancing through the army orders, Pierre found in one of them, in the lists of killed, wounded, and rewarded, the name of Nicholas Rostov, awarded a St. George's Cross of the Fourth Class for his courage shown in the Ostróvna affair, and in the same order the name of Andrei

Bolkonski, appointed to the command of a regiment of Chasseurs. Though he did not want to remind the Rostovs of Andrei, Pierre could not refrain from making them happy with the news of their son's having received a decoration, so he sent that printed army order and Nicholas' letter to the Rostovs, keeping the appeal, the bulletin, and the other orders to take with him when he went to dinner.

Pierre's conversation with Mayor Rostopchin and the mayor's tone of anxious hurry, the meeting with the courier who talked casually of how badly things were going in the army, the rumors of the discovery of spies in Moscow and of a leaflet in circulation stating that Napoleon promised to be in both the Russian capitals by the autumn, and the talk of the Tzar's being expected to arrive the next day—all aroused with a fresh force that feeling of agitation and expectation in Pierre which he had been conscious of ever since the appearance of the comet, and especially since the beginning of the war.

Pierre had long been thinking of entering the army and would have done so had he not been hindered, first, by his membership of the Society of Freemasons to which he was bound by oath and which preached perpetual peace and the abolition of war, and secondly, by the fact that when he saw the great mass of Muscovites who had donned a uniform and were talking patriotism, he somehow felt ashamed to take the step. But the chief reason for not carrying out his intention to enter the army lay in the vague idea that he was *L'russe Besuhof* who had the number of the beast, 666; that his part in the great affair of setting a limit to the power of the beast that spoke great and blasphemous things had been predestined from eternity, and that therefore he ought not to undertake anything, but wait for what was bound to come to pass.

A few intimate friends were dining with the Rostovs that day, as usual on Sundays.

Pierre came early so as to find them alone.

Pierre had grown so stout this year that he would have been abnormal had he not been so tall, so broad of limb, and so strong that he carried his bulk with evident ease.

Pierre went up the stairs, puffing and muttering something. His coachman did not even ask whether he was to wait. He knew that when his master was at the Rostovs' he stayed till midnight. The Rostovs' footman rushed eagerly forward to help him off with his cloak and take his hat and stick. Pierre, from club habit, always left both hat and stick in the anteroom.

The first person Pierre saw in the house was Natasha. Even before he saw her, while taking off his cloak, he heard her. She was practicing solfa exercises in the music room. He knew that she had not sung since her illness, and so the sound of her voice surprised and delighted him. Pierre opened the door softly and saw her, in the lilac dress she had worn at church, walking about the room singing. She had her back to him when he opened the door, but when, turning quickly, she saw his broad, surprised face, she blushed and came rapidly up to him.

"I want to try to sing again," Natasha said, adding as if by way of excuse, "it is, at least, something to do."

"That's capital!"

"How glad I am you've come! I am so happy today," Natasha said, with the old animation Pierre had not seen in her for a long time. "You know Nicholas has received a St. George's Cross? I am so proud of him."

"Oh yes, I sent that announcement. But I don't want to interrupt you," Pierre added, and was about to go to the drawing room.

Natasha stopped him.

"Pierre, is it wrong of me to sing?" she said blushing and fixing her eyes inquiringly on him.

"No... Why should it be? On the contrary... But why do you ask me?"

"I don't know myself," Natasha answered quickly, "but I should not like to do anything you disapproved of. I believe in you completely. You don't

know how important you are to me, how much you've done for me..." Natasha spoke rapidly and did not notice how Pierre flushed at her words. "I saw in that same army order that *he*, Andrei" (she whispered the name hastily), "is in Russia, and in the army again. What do you think?"—she was speaking hurriedly, evidently afraid her strength might fail her—"Will Andrei ever forgive me? Will he not always have a bitter feelings toward me? What do you think? What do you think?"

"I think..." Pierre replied, "that Andrei has nothing to forgive... If I were in his place..."

By association of ideas, Pierre was at once carried back to the day when trying to comfort her, he had said that if he were not himself but the best man in the world and free, he would ask on his knees for her hand; and the same feeling of pity, tenderness, and love took possession of him and the same words rose to his lips. But she did not give him time to say them.

"Yes, you... you..." Natasha said, uttering the word *you* rapturously—"that's a different thing. I know no one kinder, more generous, or better than you; nobody could be! Had you not been there then, and now too, I don't know what would have become of me, because..."

Tears suddenly rose in Natasha's eyes, she turned away, lifted her music before her eyes, began singing again, and again began walking up and down the room.

Just then Petya came running in from the drawing room.

Petya was now a handsome rosy lad of fifteen with full red lips and resembled Natasha. Petya was preparing to enter the university, but he and his friend Obolénski had lately, in secret, agreed to join the hussars.

Petya had come rushing out to talk to Pierre about this affair. He had asked Pierre to find out whether he would be accepted in the hussars.

Pierre walked up and down the drawing room, not listening to what Petya was saying.

Petya pulled him by the arm to attract his attention.

“Well, what about my plan? Pierre, for heaven’s sake! You are my only hope,” said Petya.

“Oh yes, your plan. To join the hussars? I’ll mention it, I’ll bring it all up today.”

“Well, *my dear*, have you got the manifesto?” asked Count Rostov. “Countess Rostov has been to Mass at the Razumóvskis’ and heard the new prayer. She says it’s very fine.”

“Yes, I’ve got it,” said Pierre. “The Tzar is to be here tomorrow... there’s to be an Extraordinary Meeting of the nobility, and they are talking of a levy of ten men per thousand. Oh yes, let me congratulate you!”

“Yes, yes, thank God! Well, and what news from the army?”

“We are again retreating. They say we’re already near Smolénsk,” replied Pierre.

“Oh Lord, Oh Lord!” exclaimed Count Rostov. “Where is the manifesto?”

“The Tzar’s appeal? Oh yes!”

Pierre began feeling in his pockets for the papers, but could not find them. Still slapping his pockets, he kissed the hand of Countess Rostov who entered the room and glanced uneasily around, evidently expecting Natasha, who had left off singing but had not yet come into the drawing room.

“On my word, I don’t know what I’ve done with it,” Pierre said.

“There he is, always losing everything!” remarked Countess Rostov.

Natasha entered with a softened and agitated expression on her face and sat down looking silently at Pierre. As soon as she entered, Pierre’s features, which had been gloomy, suddenly lighted up, and while still searching for the papers he glanced at her several times.

“No, really! I’ll drive home, I must have left them there. I’ll certainly...”

“But you’ll be late for dinner.”

“Oh! And my coachman has gone.”

But Sonya, who had gone to look for the papers in the anteroom, had found them in Pierre's hat, where he had carefully tucked them under the lining. Pierre was about to begin reading.

"No, after dinner," said Count Rostov, evidently expecting much enjoyment from that reading.

At dinner, at which champagne was drunk to the health of the new chevalier of St. George, Cousin Sinchin told them the town news, of the illness of the old Georgian Baroness, of Dr. Métivier's disappearance from Moscow, and of how some German fellow had been brought to Mayor Rostopchin and accused of being a French "spyer" (so Mayor Rostopchin had told the story), and how Mayor Rostopchin let him go and assured the people that he was "not a spire at all, but only an old German ruin."

"People are being arrested..." said Count Rostov. "I've told Nicholas she should not speak French so much. It's not the time for it now."

"And have you heard?" Cousin Sinchin asked. "Privy Councilor Golítsyn has engaged a master to teach him Russian. It is becoming dangerous to speak French in the streets."

"And how about you, Pierre? If they call up the militia, you too will have to mount a horse," remarked Count Rostov.

Pierre had been silent and preoccupied all through dinner, seeming not to grasp what was said. He looked at Count Rostov.

"Oh yes, the war," Pierre said. "No! What sort of warrior should I make? And yet everything is so strange, so strange! I can't make it out. I don't know, I am very far from having military tastes, but in these times no one can answer for himself."

After dinner Count Rostov settled himself comfortably in an easy chair and with a serious face asked Sonya, who was considered an excellent reader, to read the appeal.

"To Moscow, our ancient Capital!

“The enemy has entered the borders of Russia with immense forces. The French come to despoil our beloved country.”

Sonya read painstakingly in her high-pitched voice. Count Rostov listened with closed eyes, heaving abrupt sighs at certain passages.

Natasha sat erect, gazing with a searching look now at her father and now at Pierre.

Pierre felt her eyes on him and tried not to look around. Countess Rostov shook her head disapprovingly and angrily at every solemn expression in the manifesto. In all these words Countess Rostov saw only that the danger threatening Nicholas would not soon be over. Cousin Sinchin, with a sarcastic smile on his lips, was evidently preparing to make fun of anything that gave him the opportunity: Sonya’s reading, any remark of Count Rostov’s, or even the manifesto itself should no better pretext present itself.

After reading about the dangers that threatened Russia, the hopes the Tzar placed on Moscow and especially on its illustrious nobility, Sonya, with a quiver in her voice due chiefly to the attention that was being paid to her, read the last words:

“We ourselves will not delay appearing among our people in that Capital and in other parts of our realm for consultation, and for the direction of all our levies, both those now barring the enemy’s path and those freshly formed to defeat him wherever he may appear. May the ruin he hopes to bring upon us recoil on his own head, and may Europe delivered from bondage glorify the name of Russia!”

“Yes, that’s it!” cried Count Rostov, opening his moist eyes and sniffing repeatedly, as if a strong vinaigrette had been held to his nose; and he added, “Let the Tzar but say the word and we’ll sacrifice everything and begrudge nothing.”

Before Cousin Sinchin had time to utter the joke he was ready to make about Count Rostov's patriotism, Natasha jumped up from her place and ran to her father.

"What a darling our Papa is!" Natasha cried, kissing him, and she again looked at Pierre with the unconscious coquetry that had returned to her with her better spirits.

"There! Here's a patriot for you!" said Cousin Sinchin.

"Not a patriot at all, but simply..." Natasha replied in an injured tone. "Everything seems funny to you, but this isn't at all a joke..."

"A joke indeed!" put in Count Rostov. "Let him but say the word and we'll all go... We're not Germans!"

"But did you notice, it says, 'for consultation'?" said Pierre.

"Never mind what it's for..."

At this moment, Petya, to whom nobody was paying any attention, came up to his father with a very flushed face and said in his breaking voice that was now deep and now shrill:

"Well, Papa, I tell you definitely, and Mamma too, it's as you please, but I say definitely that you must let me enter the army because I can't... that's all..."

Countess Rostov, in dismay, looked up to heaven, clasped her hands, and turned angrily to her husband.

"That comes of your talking!" said Countess Rostov.

But Count Rostov had already recovered from his excitement.

"Come, come!" said Count Rostov. "Here's a fine warrior! No! Nonsense! Petya, you must study."

"It's not nonsense, Papa. Obolénski is younger than I, and he's going too. Besides, all the same, I can't study now when..." Petya stopped short, flushed till he perspired, but still got out the words, "when our Fatherland is in danger."

"That'll do, that'll do—nonsense..."

“But you said yourself that we would sacrifice everything.”

“Petya! Be quiet, I tell you!” cried Count Rostov, with a glance at his wife, who had turned pale and was staring fixedly at her son.

“And I tell you—Pierre here will also tell you...”

“Nonsense, I tell you. Your mother’s milk has hardly dried on your lips and you want to go into the army! There, there, I tell you,” and Count Rostov moved to go out of the room, taking the papers, probably to reread them in his study before having a nap.

“Well, Pierre, let’s go and have a smoke,” he said.

Pierre was agitated and undecided. Natasha’s unwontedly brilliant eyes, continually glancing at him with a more than cordial look, had reduced him to this condition.

“No, I think I’ll go home.”

“Home? Why, you meant to spend the evening with us... You don’t often come nowadays as it is, and this girl of mine,” said Count Rostov good-naturedly, pointing to Natasha, “only brightens up when you’re here.”

“Yes, I had forgotten... I really must go home... business...” said Pierre hurriedly.

“Well, then, *goodbye!*” said Count Rostov, and went out of the room.

“Why are you going? Why are you upset?” asked Natasha, and she looked challengingly into Pierre’s eyes.

“Because I love you!” was what Pierre wanted to say, but he did not say it, and only blushed till the tears came, and lowered his eyes.

“Because it is better for me to come less often... because... No, simply I have business...”

“Why? No, tell me!” Natasha began resolutely and suddenly stopped.

They looked at each other with dismayed and embarrassed faces. Pierre tried to smile but could not: his smile expressed suffering, and he silently kissed her hand and went out.

Pierre made up his mind not to go to the Rostovs anymore.

After the definite refusal he had received, Petya went to his room and there locked himself in and wept bitterly. When he came in to tea, silent, morose, and with a tear-stained face, everybody pretended not to notice anything.

The next day, the Tzar arrived in Moscow, and several of the Rostovs' domestic serfs begged permission to go to have a look at him. That morning Petya was a long time dressing and arranging his hair and collar to look like a grown-up man. He frowned before his looking glass, gesticulated, shrugged his shoulders, and finally, without saying a word to anyone, took his cap and left the house by the back door, trying to avoid notice. Petya decided to go straight to where the Tzar was and to explain frankly to some gentleman-in-waiting (he imagined the Tzar to be always surrounded by gentlemen-in-waiting) that he, Count Rostov, in spite of his youth wished to serve his country; that youth could be no hindrance to loyalty, and that he was ready to... While dressing, Petya had prepared many fine things he meant to say to the gentleman-in-waiting.

It was on the very fact of being so young that Petya counted for success in reaching the Tzar—he even thought of how surprised everyone would be at his youthfulness—and yet in the arrangement of his collar and hair and by his sedate deliberate walk, he wished to appear a grown-up man. But the farther he went and the more his attention was diverted by the ever-increasing crowds moving toward the Krémelin, the less he remembered to walk with the sedateness and deliberation of a man. As Petya approached the Krémelin he even began to avoid being crushed and resolutely stuck out his elbows in a menacing way. But within the Trinity Gateway, he was so pressed to the wall by people who probably were unaware of the patriotic intentions with which he had come that in spite of all his determination he had to give in, and stop while carriages passed in, rumbling beneath the archway. Beside Petya stood a peasant woman, a footman, two tradesmen, and a discharged soldier. After standing some time in the gateway, Petya

tried to move forward in front of the others without waiting for all the carriages to pass, and he began resolutely working his way with his elbows, but the woman just in front of him, who was the first against whom he directed his efforts, angrily shouted at him:

“What are you shoving for, young lordling? Don’t you see we’re all standing still? Then why push?”

“Anybody can shove,” said the footman, and also began working his elbows to such effect that he pushed Petya into a very filthy corner of the gateway.

Petya wiped his perspiring face with his hands and pulled up the damp collar that he had arranged so well at home to seem like a man’s.

Petya felt that he no longer looked presentable, and feared that if he were now to approach the gentlemen-in-waiting in that plight he would not be admitted to the Tzar. But it was impossible to smarten oneself up or move to another place, because of the crowd. One of the generals who drove past was an acquaintance of the Rostovs’, and Petya thought of asking his help but came to the conclusion that that would not be a manly thing to do. When the carriages had all passed in, the crowd, carrying Petya with it, streamed forward into the Krémelin Square which was already full of people. There were people not only in the square but everywhere—on the slopes and on the roofs. As soon as Petya found himself in the square he clearly heard the sound of bells and the joyous voices of the crowd that filled the whole Krémelin.

For a while, the crowd was less dense, but suddenly all heads were bared, and everyone rushed forward in one direction. Petya was being pressed so that he could scarcely breathe, and everybody shouted, “Hurrah! hurrah! hurrah!” Petya stood on tiptoe and pushed and pinched, but could see nothing except the people around him.

All the faces bore the same expression of excitement and enthusiasm. A tradesman’s wife standing beside Petya sobbed, and tears ran down her

cheeks.

“Father! Angel! Dear one!” she kept repeating, wiping away her tears with her fingers.

“Hurrah!” was heard on all sides.

For a moment the crowd stood still, but then it made another rush forward.

Quite beside himself, Petya, clenching his teeth and rolling his eyes ferociously, pushed forward, elbowing his way and shouting “hurrah!” as if he were prepared that instant to kill himself and everyone else, but on both sides of him other people with similarly ferocious faces pushed forward and everybody shouted “hurrah!”

“So this is what the Tzar is!” thought Petya. “No, I can’t petition him myself—that would be too bold.” But in spite of this he continued to struggle desperately forward, and from between the backs of those in front he caught glimpses of open space with a strip of red cloth spread out on it; but just then the crowd swayed back—the police in front were pushing back those who had pressed too close to the procession: the Tzar was passing from the palace to the Cathedral of the Assumption—and Petya unexpectedly received such a blow on his side and ribs and was squeezed so hard that suddenly everything grew dim before his eyes and he lost consciousness. When Petya came to himself, a man of clerical appearance with a tuft of gray hair at the back of his head and wearing a shabby blue cassock—probably a church clerk and chanter—was holding him under the arm with one hand while warding off the pressure of the crowd with the other.

“You’ve crushed the young gentleman!” said the clerk. “What are you up to? Gently!... They’ve crushed him, crushed him!”

The Tzar entered the Cathedral of the Assumption. The crowd spread out again more evenly, and the clerk led Petya—pale and breathless—to the famous giant Tzar Cannon. Several people were sorry for Petya, and

suddenly a crowd turned toward him and pressed around him. Those who stood nearest him attended to him, unbuttoned his coat, seated him on the raised platform of the cannon, and reproached those others (whoever they might be) who had crushed him.

“One might easily get killed that way! What do they mean by it? Killing people! Poor dear, he’s as white as a sheet!”—various voices were heard saying.

Petya soon came to himself, the color returned to his face, the pain had passed, and at the cost of that temporary unpleasantness, he had obtained a place by the cannon from where he hoped to see the Tzar who would be returning that way. Petya no longer thought of presenting his petition. If he could only see the Tzar he would be happy!

While the service was proceeding in the Cathedral of the Assumption—it was a combined service of prayer on the occasion of the Tzar’s arrival and of thanksgiving for the conclusion of peace with the Turks—the crowd outside spread out and hawkers appeared, selling kvass, gingerbread, and poppyseed sweets (of which Petya was particularly fond), and ordinary conversation could again be heard. A tradesman’s wife was showing a rent in her shawl and telling how much the shawl had cost; another was saying that all silk goods had now got dear. The clerk who had rescued Petya was talking to a functionary about the priests who were officiating that day with the bishop. The clerk several times used the word “plenary” (of the service), a word Petya did not understand. Two young citizens were joking with some serf girls who were cracking nuts. All these conversations, especially the joking with the girls, were such as might have had a particular charm for Petya at his age, but they did not interest him now. He sat on his elevation—the pedestal of the cannon—still agitated as before by the thought of the Tzar and by his love for him. The feeling of pain and fear he had experienced when he was being crushed, together with that of rapture, still further intensified his sense of the importance of the occasion.

Suddenly the sound of a firing cannon was heard from the embankment, to celebrate the signing of peace with the Turks, and the crowd rushed impetuously toward the embankment to watch the firing. Petya too would have run there, but the clerk who had taken the young gentleman under his protection stopped him. The firing was still proceeding when officers, generals, and gentlemen-in-waiting came running out of the cathedral, and after them, others in a more leisurely manner: caps were again raised, and those who had run to look at the cannon ran back again. At last four men in uniforms and sashes emerged from the cathedral doors. “Hurrah! hurrah!” shouted the crowd again.

“Which is the Tzar? Which?” asked Petya in a tearful voice, to those around him, but no one answered him, everybody was too excited; and Petya, fixing on one of those four men, whom he could not clearly see for the tears of joy that filled his eyes, concentrated all his enthusiasm on him—though it happened not to be the Tzar—frantically shouted “Hurrah!” and resolved that tomorrow, come what might, he would join the army.

The crowd ran after the Tzar, followed him to the palace, and began to disperse. It was already late, and Petya had not eaten anything and was drenched with perspiration, yet he did not go home but stood with that diminishing, but still considerable, crowd before the palace while the Tzar dined—looking in at the palace windows, expecting he knew not what, and envying alike the notables he saw arriving at the entrance to dine with the Tzar and the court footmen who served at the table, glimpses of whom could be seen through the windows.

While the Tzar was dining, Valúev, looking out of the window, said:

“The people are still hoping to see Your Majesty again.”

The dinner was nearly over, and the Tzar, munching a biscuit, rose and went out onto the balcony. The people, with Petya among them, rushed toward the balcony.

“Angel! Dear one! Hurrah! Father!...” cried the crowd, and Petya with it, and again the women and men of weaker mold, Petya among them, wept with joy.

A largish piece of the biscuit the Tzar was holding in his hand broke off, fell on the balcony parapet, and then to the ground. A coachman in a jerkin, who stood nearest, sprang forward and snatched it up. Several people in the crowd rushed at the coachman. Seeing this the Tzar had a plateful of biscuits brought him and began throwing them down from the balcony. Petya’s eyes grew bloodshot, and still more excited by the danger of being crushed, he rushed at the biscuits. He did not know why, but he had to have a biscuit from the Tzar’s hand and he felt that he must not give way. He sprang forward and upset an old woman who was catching at a biscuit; the old woman did not consider herself defeated though she was lying on the ground—she grabbed at some biscuits but her hand did not reach them. Petya pushed her hand away with his knee, seized a biscuit, and as if fearing to be too late, again shouted “Hurrah!” with a voice already hoarse.

The Tzar went in, and after that, the greater part of the crowd began to disperse.

“There! I said if only we waited—and so it was!” was being joyfully said various people.

Happy as Petya was, he felt sad at having to go home knowing that all the enjoyment of that day was over. He did not go straight home from the Krémelin but called on his friend Obolénski, who was fifteen and was also entering the regiment. On returning home Petya announced resolutely and firmly that if he was not allowed to enter the service he would run away. And the next day, Count Rostov—though he had not yet quite yielded—went to inquire how he could arrange for Petya to serve where there would be the least danger.

Two days later, on the fifteenth of July, an immense number of carriages were standing outside the Slobóda Palace.

The great halls were full. In the first were the nobility and gentry in their uniforms, in the second were bearded merchants in full-skirted coats of blue cloth and wearing medals. In the noblemen's hall, there was an incessant movement and buzz of voices. The chief magnates sat on high-backed chairs at a large table under the portrait of the Tzar, but most of the gentry were strolling about the room.

All these nobles, whom Pierre met every day at the Club or in their own houses, were in uniform—some in that of Katerina's day, others in that of Tzar Paul, others again in the new uniforms of The Tzar's time or the ordinary uniform of the nobility, and the characteristic of being in uniform imparted something strange and fantastic to these diverse and familiar personalities, both old and young. The old men, dim-eyed, toothless, bald, sallow, and bloated, or gaunt and wrinkled, were especially striking. For the most part, they sat quietly in their places and were silent, or, if they walked about and talked, attached themselves to someone younger. On all these faces, as on the faces of the crowd Petya had seen in the Square, there was a striking contradiction: the expectation of a solemn event, and at the same time the everyday interests in a boston card party, Peter the cook, Zinaída Dmítrievna's health, and so on.

Pierre was there too, buttoned up since early morning in a nobleman's uniform that had become too tight for him. He was agitated; this extraordinary gathering not only of nobles but also of the merchant class—the *General States*—evoked in him a whole series of ideas he had long laid aside but which were deeply graven in his soul: thoughts of the *Social Contract* and the French Revolution. The words that had struck him in the Tzar's appeal—that the sovereign was coming to the capital for consultation with his people—strengthened this idea. And imagining that in this direction something important that he had long awaited was drawing near, he strolled about watching and listening to conversations but nowhere finding any confirmation of the ideas that occupied him.

The Tzar's manifesto was read, evoking enthusiasm, and then all moved about discussing it. Besides the ordinary topics of conversation, Pierre heard questions of where the generals were to stand when the Tzar entered, when a ball should be given in the Tzar's honor, whether they should group themselves by districts or by whole provinces... and so on; but as soon as the war was touched on, or what the nobility had been convened for, the talk became undecided and indefinite. Then all preferred listening to speaking.

A middle-aged man, handsome and virile, in the uniform of a retired naval officer, was speaking in one of the rooms, and a small crowd was pressing around him. Pierre went up to the circle that had formed around the speaker and listened. Count Rostov, in a military uniform of Catherine the Great's time, was sauntering with a pleasant smile among the crowd, with all of whom he was acquainted. He too approached that group and listened with a kindly smile and nods of approval, as he always did, to what the speaker was saying. The retired naval man was speaking very boldly, as was evident from the expression on the faces of the listeners and from the fact that some people Pierre knew as the meekest and quietest of men walked away disapprovingly or expressed disagreement with him. Pierre pushed his way into the middle of the group, listened, and convinced himself that the man was indeed a liberal, but of views quite different from his own. The naval officer spoke in a particularly sonorous, musical, and aristocratic baritone voice, pleasantly swallowing his *r*'s and slurring his consonants: the voice of a man calling out to his servant, "Heah! Bwing me my pipe!" It was indicative of dissipation and the exercise of authority.

"What if the Smolénsk people have offahd to waise militia for the Empewah? Ah we to take Smolénsk as our patte'n? If the noble awistocwacy of the pwovince of Moscow thinks fit, it can show its loyalty to our sov'weign the Empewah in other ways. Have we fo'gotten the

waising of the militia in the yeah 'seven? All that did was to enwich the pwiests' sons and thieves and wobbahs..."

Count Rostov smiled blandly and nodded approval.

"And was our militia of any use to the Empia? Not at all! It only wuined our farming! Bettah have another conscwription... o' ou' men will wetu'n neithah soldiers no' peasants, and we'll get only depwavity fwom them. The nobility doesn't gwudge theah lives—ewewy one of us will go and bwing in more wecwuits, and the sov'weign" (that was the way he referred to the Tzar) "need only say the word and we'll all die fo' him!" added the orator with animation.

Count Rostov's mouth watered with pleasure and he nudged Pierre, but Pierre wanted to speak for himself. He pushed forward, feeling stirred, but not yet sure what stirred him or what he would say. Scarcely had Pierre opened his mouth when one of the senators, a man without a tooth in his head, with a shrewd though angry expression, standing near the first speaker, interrupted him. Evidently accustomed to managing debates and to maintaining an argument, he began in low but distinct tones:

"I imagine, sir," said the senator, mumbling with his toothless mouth, "that we have been summoned here not to discuss whether it's best for the empire at the present moment to adopt conscription or to call out the militia. We have been summoned to reply to the appeal with which our sovereign the Tzar has honored us. But to judge what is best—conscription or the militia—we can leave it to the supreme authority..."

Pierre suddenly saw an outlet for his excitement. He hardened his heart against the senator who was introducing this set and narrow attitude into the deliberations of the nobility. Pierre stepped forward and interrupted him. He himself did not yet know what he would say, but he began to speak eagerly, occasionally lapsing into French or expressing himself in bookish Russian.

"Excuse me, your excellency," Pierre began. (He was well acquainted with the senator, but thought it necessary on this occasion to address him

formally.) “Though I don’t agree with the gentleman...” (he hesitated: he wished to say, “*Mon très honorable préopinant*”—“My very honorable opponent”) “with the gentleman... whom I have not the honor of knowing, I suppose that the nobility has been summoned not merely to express their sympathy and enthusiasm but also to consider the means by which we can assist our Fatherland! I imagine,” he went on, warming to his subject, “that the Tzar himself would not be satisfied to find in us merely owners of serfs whom we are willing to devote to his service, and *food for cannon* we are ready to make of ourselves—and not to obtain from us any co-co-counsel.”

Many persons withdrew from the circle, noticing the senator’s sarcastic smile and the freedom of Pierre’s remarks. Only Count Rostov was pleased with them as he had been pleased with those of the naval officer, the senator, and with whatever speech he had last heard.

“I think that before discussing these questions,” Pierre continued, “we should ask the Tzar—most respectfully ask the Tzar—to let us know the number of our troops and the position in which our army and our forces now are, and then...”

But scarcely had Pierre uttered these words before he was attacked from three sides. The most vigorous attack came from an old acquaintance, a boston player who had always been well disposed toward him, Adráksin. Adráksin was in uniform, and whether as a result of the uniform or from some other cause Pierre saw before him quite a different man. With a sudden expression of malevolence on his aged face, Adráksin shouted at Pierre:

“In the first place, I tell you we have no right to question the Tzar about that, and secondly, if the Russian nobility had that right, the Tzar could not answer such a question. The troops are moved according to the enemy’s movements and the number of men increases and decreases...”

Another voice, that of a nobleman of medium height and about forty years of age, whom Pierre had formerly met at the Bohemians’ and knew as

a bad card player, and who, also transformed by his uniform, came up to Pierre, interrupted Adráksin.

“Yes, and this is not a time for discussing,” Adráksin continued, “but for acting: there is war in Russia! The enemy is advancing to destroy Russia, to desecrate the tombs of our fathers, to carry off our wives and children.” The nobleman smote his breast. “We will all arise, every one of us will go, for our father the Tzar!” he shouted, rolling his bloodshot eyes. Several approving voices were heard in the crowd. “We are Russians and will not grudge our blood in defense of our faith, the throne, and the Fatherland! We must cease raving if we are sons of our Fatherland! We will show Europe how Russia rises to the defense of Russia!”

Pierre wished to reply, but could not get in a word. He felt that his words, apart from what meaning they conveyed, were less audible than the sound of his opponent’s voice.

Count Rostov at the back of the crowd was expressing approval; several persons, briskly turning a shoulder to the orator at the end of a phrase, said:

“That’s right, quite right! Just so!”

Pierre wished to say that he was ready to sacrifice his money, his serfs, or himself, only one ought to know the state of affairs in order to be able to improve it, but he was unable to speak. Many voices shouted and talked at the same time so that Count Rostov had not time to signify his approval of them all, and the group increased, dispersed, re-formed, and then moved with a hum of talk into the largest hall and to the big table. Not only was Pierre’s attempt to speak unsuccessfully, but he was rudely interrupted, pushed aside, and people turned away from him as from a common enemy. This happened not because they were displeased by the substance of his speech, which had even been forgotten after the many subsequent speeches, but to animate it the crowd needed a tangible object to love and a tangible object to hate. Pierre became the latter. Many other orators spoke after the

excited nobleman, and all in the same tone. Many spoke eloquently and with originality.

The editor of the *Russian Messenger* was recognized (cries of “author! author!” were heard in the crowd), and said that “hell must be repulsed by hell,” and that he had seen a child smiling at lightning flashes and thunderclaps, but “we will not be that child.”

“Yes, yes, at thunderclaps!” was repeated approvingly in the back rows of the crowd.

The crowd drew up to the large table, at which sat gray-haired or bald seventy-year-old magnates, uniformed and be-sashed, almost all of whom Pierre had seen in their own homes with their buffoons, or playing boston at the clubs. With an incessant hum of voices, the crowd advanced to the table. Pressed by the throng against the high backs of the chairs, the orators spoke one after another and sometimes two together. Those standing behind noticed what a speaker omitted to say and hastened to supply it. Others in that heat and crush racked their brains to find some thought and hastened to utter it. The old magnates, whom Pierre knew, sat and turned to look first at one and then at another, and their faces for the most part only expressed the fact that they found it very hot. Pierre, however, felt excited, and the desire to show that they were ready to go to all lengths—which found expression in the tones and looks more than in the substance of the speeches—infected him too. He did not renounce his opinions, but felt himself in some way to blame and wished to justify himself.

“I only said that it would be more to the purpose to make sacrifices when we know what is needed!” said Pierre, trying to be heard above the other voices.

One of the old men nearest to him looked around, but his attention was immediately diverted by an exclamation at the other side of the table.

“Yes, Moscow will be surrendered! She will be our expiation!” shouted one man.

“He is the enemy of mankind!” cried another. “Allow me to speak...”
“Gentlemen, you are crushing me!...”

At that moment Mayor Rostopchin with his protruding chin and alert eyes, wearing the uniform of a general with a sash over his shoulder, entered the room, stepping briskly to the front of the crowd of gentry.

“Our sovereign the Tzar will be here in a moment,” said Mayor Rostopchin. “I am straight from the palace. Seeing the position we are in, I think there is little need for discussion. The Tzar has deigned to summon us and the merchants. Millions will pour forth from there”—he pointed to the merchants’ hall—“but our business is to supply men and not spare ourselves... That is the least we can do!”

A conference took place confined to the magnates sitting at the table. The whole consultation passed more than quietly. After all the preceding noise the sound of their old voices saying one after another, “I agree,” or for variety, “I too am of that opinion,” and so on had even a mournful effect.

The secretary was told to write down the resolution of the Moscow nobility and gentry, that they would furnish ten men, fully equipped, out of every thousand serfs, as the Smolénsk gentry had done. Their chairs made a scraping noise as the gentlemen who had conferred rose with apparent relief, and began walking up and down, arm in arm, to stretch their legs and converse in couples.

“The Tzar! The Tzar!” a sudden cry resounded through the halls and the whole throng hurried to the entrance.

The Tzar entered the hall through a broad path between two lines of nobles. Every face expressed respectful, awe-struck curiosity. Pierre stood rather far off and could not hear all that the Tzar said. From what he did hear he understood that the Tzar spoke of the danger threatening the empire and of the hopes he placed on the Moscow nobility. He was answered by a voice that informed him of the resolution just arrived at.

“Gentlemen!” said the Tzar with a quivering voice.

There was a rustling among the crowd and it again subsided, so that Pierre distinctly heard the pleasantly human voice of the Tzar saying with emotion:

“I never doubted the devotion of the Russian nobles, but today it has surpassed my expectations. I thank you in the name of Russia! Gentlemen, let us act! Time is most precious...”

The Tzar ceased speaking, the crowd began pressing around him, and rapturous exclamations were heard from all sides.

“Yes, most precious... a royal word,” said Count Rostov, with a sob. He stood at the back, and, though he had heard hardly anything, understood everything in his own way.

From the hall of the nobility, the Tzar went to that of the merchants. There he remained for about ten minutes. Pierre was among those who saw him come out from the merchants’ hall with tears of emotion in his eyes. As became known later, he had scarcely begun to address the merchants before tears gushed from his eyes and he concluded in a trembling voice. When Pierre saw the Tzar he was coming out accompanied by two merchants, one of whom Pierre knew, a fat *publican*. The other was the mayor, a man with a thin sallow face and narrow beard. Both were weeping. Tears filled the thin man’s eyes, and the fat *publican* sobbed outright like a child and kept repeating:

“Our lives and property—take them, Your Majesty!”

Pierre’s one feeling at the moment was a desire to show that he was ready to go to all lengths and was prepared to sacrifice everything. He now felt ashamed of his speech with its constitutional tendency and sought an opportunity of effacing it. Having heard that another count was furnishing a regiment, Pierre at once informed Mayor Rostopchin that he would give a thousand men and their maintenance.

Old Nicholas could not tell his wife of what had passed without tears, and at once consented to Petya’s request and went himself to enter his

name.

The next day, the Tzar left Moscow. The assembled nobles all took off their uniforms and settled down again in their homes and clubs, and not without some groans gave orders to their stewards about the enrollment, feeling amazed at what they had done.

BOOK 10: 1812



*N*apoleon began the war with Russia because he could not resist going to Dresden, could not help having his head turned by the homage he received, could not help donning a Polish uniform and yielding to the stimulating influence of a June morning, and could not refrain from bursts of anger in the presence of Kurákin and then of General Baleshev.

The Tzar refused negotiations because he felt himself to be personally insulted. Barclay tried to command the army in the best way because he wished to fulfill his duty and earn fame as a great commander. Nicholas charged the French because he could not restrain his wish for a gallop across a level field; and in the same way, the innumerable people who took part in the war acted in accord with their personal characteristics, habits, circumstances, and aims. They were moved by fear or vanity, rejoiced or were indignant, reasoned, imagining that they knew what they were doing and did it of their own free will, but they all were involuntary tools of history, carrying on a work concealed from them but comprehensible to us. Such is the inevitable fate of men of action, and the higher they stand in the social hierarchy the less are they free.

The actors of 1812 have long since left the stage, their personal interests have vanished leaving no trace, and nothing remains of that time but its historic results.

Providence compelled all these men, striving to attain personal aims, to further the accomplishment of a stupendous result no one of them at all expected—neither Napoleon, nor the Tzar, nor still less any of those who did the actual fighting.

The cause of the destruction of the French army in 1812 is clear to us now. No one will deny that that cause was, on the one hand, its advance into the heart of Russia late in the season without any preparation for a winter campaign and, on the other, the character given to the war by the burning of Russian towns and the hatred of the foe this aroused among the Russian people. But no one at the time foresaw (what now seems so evident) that this was the only way an army of eight hundred thousand men—the best in the world and led by the best general—could be destroyed in the conflict with a raw army of half its numerical strength, and led by inexperienced commanders as the Russian army was. *Not only did no one see this*, but *on the Russian side*, every effort was made to hinder the only thing that could save Russia, while *on the French side*, despite Napoleon's experience and so-called military genius, every effort was directed to push on to Moscow at the end of the summer, that is, to do the very thing that was bound to lead to destruction.

In historical works on the year 1812 French writers are very fond of saying that Napoleon felt the danger of extending his line, that he sought a battle and that his generals advised him to stop at Smolénsk, and of making similar statements to show that the danger of the campaign was even then understood. Russian authors are still fonder of telling us that from the commencement of the campaign a Scythian war plan was adopted to lure Napoleon into the depths of Russia, and this plan some of them attribute to General Pfuel, others to a certain Frenchman, others to Toll, and others again to The Tzar himself—pointing to notes, projects, and letters which contain hints of such a line of action. But all these hints at what happened, both from the French side and the Russian, are advanced only because they

fit in with the event. Had that event not occurred these hints would have been forgotten, as we have forgotten the thousands and millions of hints and expectations to the contrary which were current then but have now been forgotten because the event falsified them. There are always so many conjectures as to the issue of any event that however it may end there will always be people to say: "I said then that it would be so," quite forgetting that amid their innumerable conjectures many were to quite the contrary effect.

Conjectures as to Napoleon's awareness of the danger of extending his line, and (on the Russian side) as to lure the enemy into the depths of Russia, are evidently of that kind, and only by much straining can historians attribute such conceptions to Napoleon and his generals, or such plans to the Russian commanders. All the facts are in flat contradiction to such conjectures. During the whole period of the war not only was there no wish on the Russian side to draw the French into the heart of the country but from their first entry into Russia, everything was done to stop them. And not only was Napoleon not afraid to extend his line, but he welcomed every step forward as a triumph and did not seek battle as eagerly as in former campaigns, but very lazily.

At the very beginning of the war, the Russian armies were divided, and our sole aim was to unite them, though uniting the armies was no advantage if we meant to retire and lure the enemy into the depths of the country. Our Tzar joined the army to encourage it to defend every inch of Russian soil and not to retreat. The enormous Drissa camp was formed on General Pfuel's plan, and there was no intention of retiring further. The Tzar reproached the generals for every step they retreated. The Tzar could not bear the idea of letting the enemy even reach Smolénsk, still less could he contemplate the burning of Moscow, and when our armies did unite he was displeased that Smolénsk was abandoned and burned without an engagement having been fought under its walls.

So thought the Tzar, and the Russian commanders and people were still more provoked at the thought that our forces were retreating into the depths of the country.

Napoleon having cut our armies apart advanced far into the country and missed several chances of forcing an engagement. In August, Napoleon was at Smolénsk and thought only of how to advance farther, though as we now see that advance was evidently ruinous to him.

The facts clearly show that Napoleon did not foresee the danger of the advance on Moscow, nor did the Tzar and the Russian commanders then think of luring Napoleon on, but quite the contrary. The luring of Napoleon into the depths of the country was not the result of any plan, for no one believed it to be possible; it resulted from a most complex interplay of intrigues, aims, and wishes among those who took part in the war and had no perception whatever of the inevitable, or of the one way of saving Russia. Everything came about fortuitously. The armies were divided at the commencement of the campaign. We tried to unite them, with the evident intention of giving battle and checking the enemy's advance, and by this effort to unite them while avoiding battle with a much stronger enemy, and necessarily withdrawing the armies at an acute angle—we led the French on to Smolénsk. But we withdrew at an acute angle not only because the French advanced between our two armies; the angle became still more acute and we withdrew still farther, because Marshal Barclay was an unpopular foreigner disliked by Major-General Bagration (who would come under his command), and Major-General Bagration—being in command of the second army—tried to postpone joining up and coming under Marshal Barclay's command as long as he could. Major-General Bagration was slow in effecting the junction—though that was the chief aim of all at headquarters—because, as he alleged, he exposed his army to danger on this march, and it was best for him to retire more to the left and more to the south, worrying the enemy from flank and rear and securing from the

Ukraine recruits for his army; and it looks as if he planned this in order not to come under the command of the detested foreigner Marshal Barclay, whose rank was inferior to his own.

The Tzar was with the army to encourage it, but his presence and ignorance of what steps to take, and the enormous number of advisers and plans, destroyed the first army's energy and it retired.

The intention was to make a stand at the Drissa camp, but Paulucci, aiming at becoming the new Marshal, unexpectedly employed his energy to influence the Tzar, and General Pfuel's whole plan was abandoned and the command entrusted to Marshal Barclay. But as Marshal Barclay did not inspire confidence his power was limited. The armies were divided, there was no unity of command, and Marshal Barclay was unpopular; but from this confusion, division, and the unpopularity of the foreign Marshal Barclay, there resulted on the one hand indecision and the avoidance of a battle (which we could not have refrained from had the armies been united and had someone else, instead of Marshal Barclay, been in command) and on the other, an ever-increasing indignation against the foreigners and an increase in patriotic zeal.

At last, the Tzar left the army, and as the most convenient and indeed the only pretext for his departure it was decided that it was necessary for him to inspire the people in the capitals and arouse the nation to a patriotic war. And by this visit of the Tzar to Moscow, the strength of the Russian army was trebled.

The Tzar left in order not to obstruct Marshal Barclay's undivided control of the army and hoped that more decisive action would then be taken, but the command of the armies became still more confused and enfeebled. General Bennigsen and the Tzar's son plus a swarm of adjutants general remained with the army to keep Marshal Barclay under observation and arouse his energy, and the Marshal, feeling less free than ever under the

observation of all these “eyes of the Tzar,” became still more cautious of undertaking any decisive action and avoided giving battle.

Marshal Barclay stood for caution. The Tzar’s son hinted at treachery and demanded a general engagement. Lubomírski, Bronnitski, Wlocki, and the others of that group stirred up so much trouble that Marshal Barclay, under the pretext of sending papers to the Tzar, dispatched these Polish adjutants general to St. Petersburg and plunged into an open struggle with General Bennigsen and the Tzar’s son.

At Smolensk the armies at last reunited, much as Major-General Bagration disliked it.

Major-General Bagration drove up in a carriage to the house occupied by Marshal Barclay. Barclay donned his sash and came out to meet and report to his senior officer Major-General Bagration.

Despite his seniority in rank Major-General Bagration, in this contest of magnanimity, took his orders from Marshal Barclay, but, having submitted, agreed with him less than ever. By the Tzar’s orders, Major-General Bagration reported directly to the Marshal. Major-General Bagration wrote to War Minister Arakchëev, the Tzar’s confidant: “It must be as my sovereign pleases, but I cannot work with the *Minister* (meaning Marshal Barclay). For God’s sake send me somewhere else if only in command of a regiment. I cannot stand it here. Headquarters are so full of Germans that a Russian cannot exist and there is no sense in anything. I thought I was really serving my sovereign and the Fatherland, but it turns out that I am serving Barclay. I confess I do not want to.”

The swarm of Bronnitskis and Wintzingerodes and their like still further embittered the relations between the commanders in chief, and even less unity resulted. Preparations were made to fight the French before Smolensk. A general was sent to survey the position. This general, hating Marshal Barclay, rode to visit a friend of his own, a corps commander, and, having

spent the day with him, returned to Barclay and condemned, as unsuitable from every point of view, the battleground he had not seen.

While disputes and intrigues were going on about the future field of battle, and while we were looking for the French—having lost touch with them—the French stumbled upon Nevérovski's division and reached the walls of Smolénsk.

It was necessary to fight an unexpected battle at Smolénsk to save our lines of communication. The battle was fought and thousands were killed on both sides.

Smolénsk was abandoned contrary to the wishes of the Tzar and of the whole people. But Smolénsk was burned by its own inhabitants who had been misled by their governor. And these ruined inhabitants, setting an example to other Russians, went to Moscow thinking only of their own losses but kindling hatred of the foe. Napoleon advanced farther and we retired, thus arriving at the very result which caused his destruction.

The day after Andrei had left, Baron Bolkonski sent for Marya to come to his study.

“Well? Are you satisfied now?” said Baron Bolkonski. “You’ve made me quarrel with Andrei! Satisfied, are you? That’s all you wanted! Satisfied?... It hurts me, it hurts. I’m old and weak and this is what you wanted. Well then, gloat over it! Gloat over it!”

After that Marya did not see her father for a whole week. Baron Bolkonski was ill and did not leave his study.

Marya noticed to her surprise that during this illness Baron Bolkonski not only excluded her from his room but did not admit Lady-in-waiting Bourienne either. Butler Tikhon alone attended him.

At the end of the week, Baron Bolkonski reappeared and resumed his former way of life, devoting himself with special activity to building operations and the arrangement of the gardens and completely breaking off his relations with Lady-in-waiting Bourienne. His looks and cold tone to

Marya seemed to say: "There, you see? You plotted against me, you lied to Andrei about my relations with Lady-in-waiting Bourienne and made me quarrel with him, but you see I need neither her nor you!"

Marya spent half of every day with Nikolenka, watching his lessons, teaching him Russian and music herself, and talking to the tutor Desalles; the rest of the day she spent over her books, with her old nurse, or with "God's folk" who sometimes came by the back door to see her.

Of the war, Marya thought as women do think about wars. She feared for Andrei who was in it, and was horrified by and amazed at the strange cruelty that impels men to kill one another, but she did not understand the significance of this war, which seemed to her like all previous wars. Marya did not realize the significance of this war, though the tutor Desalles with whom she constantly conversed was passionately interested in its progress and tried to explain his own conception of it to her, and though the "God's folk" who came to see her reported, in their own way, the rumors current among the people of an invasion by Antichrist, and though Julie (now married to Boris), who had resumed correspondence with her, wrote patriotic letters from Moscow.

"I write you in Russian, my good friend," wrote Julie in her Frenchified Russian, "because I have a detestation for all the French, and the same for their language which I cannot support to hear spoken... We in Moscow are elated by enthusiasm for our adored Tzar.

"My poor husband, Boris, is enduring pains and hunger in Jewish taverns, but the news which I have inspires me yet more.

"You heard probably of the heroic exploit of Raévski, embracing his two sons and saying: 'I will perish with them but we will not be shaken!' And truly though the enemy was twice stronger as we, we were unshakable. We pass the time as we can, but in war as in war! My sisters Aline and Sophie sit whole days with me, and we, unhappy widows of live men, make

beautiful conversations over our *making surgical dressings with lint*, only you, my friend, are missing..." and so on.

The chief reason Marya did not realize the full significance of this war was that Baron Bolkonski never spoke of it, did not recognize it and laughed at the tutor Desalles when he mentioned it at dinner. Baron Bolkonski's tone was so calm and confident that Marya unhesitatingly believed him.

All that July, Baron Bolkonski was exceedingly active and even animated. He planned another garden and began a new building for the domestic serfs. The only thing that made Marya anxious about him was that he slept very little and, instead of sleeping in his study, as usual, changed his sleeping place every day. One day Baron Bolkonski would order his camp bed to be set up in the glass gallery, another day he remained on the couch or on the lounge chair in the drawing room and dozed there without undressing, while—instead of Lady-in-waiting Bourienne—a serf boy read to him. Then again he would spend a night in the dining room.

On August 1, a second letter was received from Andrei. In his first letter which came soon after Andrei had left home, he had dutifully asked Baron Bolkonski's forgiveness for what he had allowed himself to say and begged to be restored to his favor. To this letter, Baron Bolkonski had replied affectionately, and from that time had kept the Frenchwoman at a distance. Andrei's second letter, written near Vitebsk after the French had occupied that town, gave a brief account of the whole campaign, enclosed for them a plan he had drawn and forecasts as to the further progress of the war. In this letter, Andrei pointed out to his father the danger of staying at Bald Hills, so near the theater of war and on the army's direct line of march, and advised him to move to Moscow.

At dinner that day, on the tutor Desalles' mentioning that the French were said to have already entered Vitebsk, Baron Bolkonski remembered Andrei's letter.

“There was a letter from Andrei today,” Baron Bolkonski said to Marya —“Haven’t you read it?”

“No, Father,” she replied in a frightened voice.

Marya could not have read the letter as she did not even know it had arrived.

“He writes about this war,” said Baron Bolkonski, with the ironic smile that had become habitual to him in speaking of the present war.

“That must be very interesting,” said the tutor Desalles. “Andrei is in a position to know...”

“Oh, very interesting!” said Lady-in-waiting Bourienne.

“Go and get it for me,” said Baron Bolkonski to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne. “You know—under the paperweight on the little table.”

Lady-in-waiting Bourienne jumped up eagerly.

“No, don’t!” Baron Bolkonski exclaimed with a frown. “You go, Michael Ivanovich.”

The architect Michael Ivanovich rose and went to the study. But as soon as he had left the room Baron Bolkonski, looking uneasily round, threw down his napkin and went himself.

“They can’t do anything... always make some muddle,” Baron Bolkonski muttered.

While he was away Marya, the tutor Desalles, Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, and even Nikolenka exchanged looks in silence. Baron Bolkonski returned with quick steps, accompanied by the architect Michael Ivanovich, bringing the letter and a plan. These he put down beside him—not letting anyone read them at dinner.

On moving to the drawing room he handed the letter to Marya and, spreading out before him the plan of the new building and fixing his eyes upon it, told her to read the letter aloud. When she had done so Marya looked inquiringly at her father. He was examining the plan, evidently engrossed in his own ideas.

“What do you think of it, Baron Bolkonski?” the tutor Desalles ventured to ask.

“I? I?...” said Baron Bolkonski as if unpleasantly awakened, and not taking his eyes from the plan of the building.

“Very possibly the theater of war will move so near to us that...”

“Ha ha ha! The theater of war!” said Baron Bolkonski. “I have said and still say that the theater of war is Poland and the enemy will never get beyond the Niemen.”

The tutor Desalles looked in amazement at Baron Bolkonski, who was talking of the Niemen when the enemy was already at the Dnieper, but Marya, forgetting the geographical position of the Niemen, thought that what her father was saying was correct.

“When the snow melts they’ll sink in the Polish swamps. Only they could fail to see it,” Baron Bolkonski continued, evidently thinking of the campaign of 1807 which seemed to him so recent. “General Bennigsen should have advanced into Prussia sooner, then things would have taken a different turn...”

“But, Baron Bolkonski,” The tutor Desalles began timidly, “the letter mentions Vitebsk...”

“Ah, the letter? Yes...” replied Baron Bolkonski peevishly. “Yes... yes...” His face suddenly took on a morose expression. He paused. “Yes, he writes that the French were beaten at... at... what river is it?”

The tutor Desalles dropped his eyes.

“Andrei says nothing about that,” he remarked gently.

“Andrei doesn’t say that? But I didn’t invent it myself.”

No one spoke for a long time.

“Yes... yes... Well, Michael Ivanovich,” Baron Bolkonski suddenly went on, raising his head and pointing to the plan of the building, “tell me how you mean to alter it...”

The architect Michael Ivanovich went up to the plan, and Baron Bolkonski after speaking to him about the building looked angrily at Marya and the tutor Desalles and went to his own room.

Marya saw the tutor Desalles' embarrassed and astonished look fixed on Baron Bolkonski, noticed his silence, and was struck by the fact that her father had forgotten Andrei's letter on the drawing-room table; but Marya was not only afraid to speak of it and ask the tutor Desalles the reason of his confusion and silence but was afraid even to think about it.

In the evening, the architect Michael Ivanovich, sent by Baron Bolkonski, came to Marya for Andrei's letter which had been forgotten in the drawing room. She gave it to him and, unpleasant as it was to her to do so, ventured to ask him what Baron Bolkonski was doing.

"Always busy," replied the architect Michael Ivanovich with a respectfully ironic smile which caused Marya to turn pale. "He's worrying very much about the new building. He has been reading a little, but now"—Michael Ivanovich went on, lowering his voice—"now he's at his desk, busy with his will, I expect." (One of Baron Bolkonski's favorite occupations of late had been the preparation of some papers he meant to leave at his death and which he called his "will.")

"And Overseer Alpatych is being sent to Smolénsk?" asked Marya.

"Oh, yes, he has been waiting to start for some time."

When the architect Michael Ivanovich returned to the study with the letter, Baron Bolkonski, with spectacles on and a shade over his eyes, was sitting at his open bureau with screened candles, holding a paper in his outstretched hand, and in a somewhat dramatic attitude was reading his manuscript—his "Remarks" as he termed it—which was to be transmitted to the Tzar after his death.

When Michael Ivanovich went in there were tears in Baron Bolkonski's eyes evoked by the memory of the time when the paper he was now reading had been written. He took the letter from Michael Ivanovich's hand, put it

in his pocket, folded up his papers, and called in Overseer Alpatych who had long been waiting.

Baron Bolkonski had a list of things to be bought in Smolénsk and, walking up and down the room past Overseer Alpatych who stood by the door, he gave his instructions.

“First, notepaper—do you hear? Eight quires, like this sample, gilt-edged... it must be exactly like the sample. Varnish, sealing wax, as in Michael Ivanovich’s list.”

Baron Bolkonski paced up and down for a while and glanced at his notes.

“Then hand to the governor in person a letter about the deed.”

Next, bolts for the doors of the new building were wanted and had to be of a special shape the Baron had himself designed, and a leather case had to be ordered to keep the “will” in.

The instructions to Overseer Alpatych took over two hours and still Baron Bolkonski did not let him go. He sat down, sank into thought, closed his eyes, and dozed off. Overseer Alpatych made a slight movement.

“Well, go, go! If anything more is wanted I’ll send after you.”

Overseer Alpatych went out. Baron Bolkonski again went to his bureau, glanced into it, fingered his papers, closed the bureau again, and sat down at the table to write to the governor.

It was already late when he rose after sealing the letter. Baron Bolkonski wished to sleep, but he knew he would not be able to and that most depressing thoughts came to him in bed. So he called Butler Tikhon and went through the rooms with him to show him where to set up the bed for that night.

Baron Bolkonski went about looking at every corner. Every place seemed unsatisfactory, but worst of all was his customary couch in the study. That couch was dreadful to him, probably because of the oppressive thoughts he had had when lying there. It was unsatisfactory everywhere, but

the corner behind the piano in the sitting room was better than other places: he had never slept there yet.

With the help of a footman, Butler Tikhon brought in the bedstead and began putting it up.

“That’s not right! That’s not right!” cried Baron Bolkonski, and himself pushed it a few inches from the corner and then closer in again.

“Well, at last, I’ve finished, now I’ll rest,” thought Baron Bolkonski, and let Butler Tikhon undress him.

Frowning with vexation at the effort necessary to divest himself of his coat and trousers, Baron Bolkonski undressed, sat down heavily on the bed, and appeared to be meditating as he looked contemptuously at his withered yellow legs. He was not meditating, but only deferring the moment of making the effort to lift those legs up and turn over on the bed. “Ugh, how hard it is! Oh, that this toil might end and *you* would release me!” thought he. Pressing his lips together he made that effort for the twenty-thousandth time and lay down. But hardly had Baron Bolkonski done so before he felt the bed rocking backward and forwards beneath him as if it were breathing heavily and jolting. This happened to him almost every night. He opened his eyes as they were closing.

“No peace, damn them!” Baron Bolkonski muttered, angry he knew not with whom. “Ah yes, there was something else important, very important, that I was keeping till I should be in bed. The bolts? No, I told him about them. No, it was something, something in the drawing room. Marya talked some nonsense. The tutor Desalles, that fool, said something. Something in my pocket—can’t remember...”

“Butler Tikhon, what did we talk about at dinner?”

“About Baron Michael...”

“Be quiet, quiet!” Baron Bolkonski slapped his hand on the table. “Yes, I know, Andrei’s letter! Marya read it. The tutor Desalles said something about Vitebsk. Now I’ll read it.”

Baron Bolkonski had the letter taken from his pocket and the table—on which stood a glass of lemonade and a spiral wax candle—moved close to the bed, and putting on his spectacles he began reading. Only now in the stillness of the night, reading it by the faint light under the green shade, did he grasp its meaning for a moment.

“The French at Vitebsk, in four days’ march they may be at Smolensk; perhaps are already there! Butler Tikhon!” Butler Tikhon jumped up. “No, no, I don’t want anything!” Baron Bolkonski shouted.

Baron Bolkonski put the letter under the candlestick and closed his eyes. And there rose before him the Danube at bright noonday: reeds, the Russian camp, and himself a young general without a wrinkle on his ruddy face, vigorous and alert, entering Potëmkin’s gaily colored tent, and a burning sense of jealousy of “the favorite” agitated him now as strongly as it had done then. Baron Bolkonski recalled all the words spoken at that first meeting with Potëmkin. And he saw before him a plump, rather sallow-faced, short, stout woman, the Mother of the Tzar, with her smile and her words at her first gracious reception of him, and then that same face on the catafalque, and the encounter he had with Zúbov over her coffin about his right to kiss her hand.

“Oh, quicker, quicker! To get back to that time and have done with all the present! Quicker, quicker—and that they should leave me in peace!”

Bald Hills, Baron Bolkonski’s estate, lay forty miles east of Smolensk and two miles from the main road to Moscow.

The same evening that Baron Bolkonski gave his instructions to Overseer Alpatych, the tutor Desalles, having asked to see Marya, told her that, as the Baron was not very well and was taking no steps to secure his safety, though from Andrei’s letter it was evident that to remain at Bald Hills might be dangerous, he respectfully advised her to send a letter by Overseer Alpatych to the Provincial Governor at Smolensk, asking him to let her know the state of affairs and the extent of the danger to which Bald

Hills was exposed. The tutor Desalles wrote this letter to the Governor for Marya, she signed it, and it was given to Overseer Alpatych with instructions to hand it to the Governor and to come back as quickly as possible if there was danger.

Having received all his orders Overseer Alpatych, wearing a white beaver hat—a present from the Baron—and carrying a stick as the Baron did, went out accompanied by his family. Three well-fed roans stood ready harnessed to a small conveyance with a leather hood.

The larger bell was muffled and the little bells on the harness were stuffed with paper. Baron Bolkonski allowed no one at Bald Hills to drive with ringing bells, but on a long journey, Overseer Alpatych liked to have them. His satellites—the senior clerk, a countinghouse clerk, a scullery maid, a cook, two old women, a little pageboy, the coachman, and various domestic serfs—were seeing him off.

Overseer Alpatych's daughter placed chintz-covered down cushions for him to sit on and behind his back. His old sister-in-law popped in a small bundle, and one of the coachmen helped him into the vehicle.

“There! There! Women's fuss! Women, women!” said Overseer Alpatych, puffing and speaking rapidly just as the Baron did, and he climbed into the carriage.

After giving the clerk orders about the work to be done, Overseer Alpatych, not trying to imitate the Baron now, lifted the hat from his bald head and crossed himself three times.

“If there is anything... come back, Overseer Alpatych! For Christ's sake think of us!” cried his wife, referring to the rumors of war and the enemy.

“Women, women! Women's fuss!” muttered Overseer Alpatych to himself and started on his journey, looking round at the fields of yellow rye and the still-green, thickly growing oats, and at other quite black fields just being plowed a second time.

As Overseer Alpatych went along he looked with pleasure at the year's splendid crop of corn, scrutinized the strips of a field of rye which here and there were already being reaped, made his calculations as to the sowing and the harvest, and asked himself whether he had not forgotten any of Baron Bolkonski's orders.

Having baited the horses twice on the way, he arrived at the town toward evening on the fourth of August.

Overseer Alpatych kept meeting and overtaking baggage trains and troops on the road. As he approached Smolénsk he heard the sounds of distant firing, but these did not impress him. What struck him most was the sight of a splendid field of oats in which a camp had been pitched and which was being mown down by the soldiers, evidently for fodder. This fact impressed Overseer Alpatych, but in thinking about his own business he soon forgot it.

All the interests of his life for more than thirty years had been bounded by the will of Baron Bolkonski, and he never went beyond that limit. Everything not connected with the execution of Baron Bolkonski's orders did not interest and did not even exist for Overseer Alpatych.

On reaching Smolénsk on the evening of the fourth of August he put up in the Gáchina suburb across the Dnieper, at the inn kept by Innkeeper Ferapontov, where he had been in the habit of putting up for the last thirty years. Some thirty years ago Ferapontov, by Overseer Alpatych's advice, had bought a plank of wood from Baron Bolkonski, had begun to trade, and now had a house, an inn, and a corn dealer's shop in that province. Innkeeper Ferapontov was a stout, dark, red-faced peasant in his forties, with thick lips, a broad knob of a nose, similar knobs over his black frowning brows, and a round belly.

Wearing a waistcoat over his cotton shirt, Innkeeper Ferapontov was standing before his shop which opened onto the street. On seeing Overseer Alpatych, he went up to him.

“You are welcome here, Overseer Alpatych. Folks are leaving the town, but you have come to it,” said Innkeeper Ferapontov.

“Why are they leaving the town?” asked Overseer Alpatych.

“That’s what I say. Folks are foolish! Always afraid of the French.”

“Women’s fuss, women’s fuss!” said Overseer Alpatych.

“Just what I think. What I say is: orders have been given not to let them in, so that must be right. And the peasants are asking three rubles for carting—it isn’t Christian!”

Overseer Alpatych heard without heeding. He asked for a samovar and for hay for his horses, and when he had had his tea he went to bed.

All night long troops were moving past the inn. The next morning, Overseer Alpatych donned a jacket he wore only in town and went out on business. It was a sunny morning and by eight o’clock it was already hot. “A good day for harvesting,” thought Overseer Alpatych.

From beyond the town, gunfire had been heard since early morning. At eight o’clock the booming of cannon was added to the sound of musketry. Many people were hurrying through the streets and there were many soldiers, but cabs were still driving about, tradesmen stood at their shops, and service was being held in the churches as usual. Overseer Alpatych went to the shops, to government offices, to the post office, and to the Governor’s residence. In the offices and shops and at the post office everyone was talking about the army and about the enemy who was already attacking the town, everybody was asking what should be done, and all were trying to calm one another.

In front of the Governor’s house, Overseer Alpatych found a large number of people, Cossacks, and a traveling carriage of the Governor’s. At the porch, he met two of the landed gentry, one of whom he knew. This man, an ex-captain of police, was saying angrily:

“It’s no joke, you know! It’s all very well if you’re single. ‘One man though undone is but one,’ as the proverb says, but with thirteen in your

family and all the property... They've brought us to utter ruin! What sort of governors are they to do that? They ought to be hanged—the brigands!...”

“Oh come, that's enough!” said the other.

“What do I care? Let him hear! We're not dogs,” said the ex-captain of police, and looking around he noticed Overseer Alpatych.

“Oh, Overseer Alpatych! What have you come for?”

“To see the Governor by Baron Bolkonski's order,” answered Overseer Alpatych, lifting his head and proudly thrusting his hand into the bosom of his coat as he always did when he mentioned Baron Bolkonski. “Baron Bolkonski has ordered me to inquire into the position of affairs,” he added.

“Yes, go and find out!” shouted the angry gentleman. “They've brought things to such a pass that there are no carts or anything!... There it is again, do you hear?” said he, pointing in the direction whence came the sounds of firing.

“They've brought us all to ruin... the brigands!” he repeated, and descended the porch steps.

Overseer Alpatych swayed his head and went upstairs. In the waiting room were tradesmen, women, and officials, looking silently at one another. The door of the Governor's room opened and they all rose and moved forward. An official ran out, said some words to a merchant, called a stout official with a cross hanging on his neck to follow him, and vanished again, evidently wishing to avoid the inquiring looks and questions addressed to him. Overseer Alpatych moved forward and the next time the official came out addressed him, one hand placed in the breast of his buttoned coat, and handed him two letters.

“To Baron Asch, from Baron Bolkonski,” he announced with such solemnity and significance that the official turned to him and took the letters.

A few minutes later the Governor received Overseer Alpatych and hurriedly said to him:

“Inform Baron Bolkonski and Marya that I knew nothing: I acted on the highest instructions—here...” and the Governor handed a paper to Overseer Alpatych. “Still, as Baron Bolkonski is unwell my advice is that they should go to Moscow. I am just starting myself. Inform them...”

But the Governor did not finish: a dusty perspiring officer ran into the room and began to say something in French. The Governor’s face expressed terror.

“Go,” the Governor said, nodding his head to Overseer Alpatych, and began questioning the officer.

Eager, frightened, helpless glances were turned on Overseer Alpatych when he came out of the Governor’s room. Involuntarily listening now to the firing, which had drawn nearer and was increasing in strength, Overseer Alpatych hurried to his inn. The paper handed to him by the Governor said this:

“I assure you that the town of Smolénsk is not in the slightest danger as yet and it is unlikely that it will be threatened with any. I from the one side and Major-General Bagration from the other are marching to unite our forces before Smolénsk, which junction will be effected on the 22nd instant, and both armies with their united forces will defend our compatriots of the province entrusted to your care till our efforts shall have beaten back the enemies of our Fatherland, or till the last warrior in our valiant ranks has perished. From this, you will see that you have a perfect right to reassure the inhabitants of Smolénsk, for those defended by two such brave armies may feel assured of victory.” (Instructions from Barclay to Baron Asch, the civil governor of Smolénsk, 1812.)

People were anxiously roaming about the streets.

Carts piled high with household utensils, chairs, and cupboards kept emerging from the gates of the yards and moving along the streets. Loaded carts stood at the house next to Innkeeper Ferapontov’s and women were

wailing and lamenting as they said goodbye. A small watchdog ran around barking in front of the harnessed horses.

Overseer Alpatych entered the yard of the inn at a quicker pace than usual and went straight to the shed where his horses and carriage were. The coachman was asleep. Overseer Alpatych woke the coachman up, told him to harness, and went into the passage. From Innkeeper Ferapontov's room came the sounds of a child crying, the despairing sobs of a woman, and the hoarse angry shouting of Innkeeper Ferapontov. The cook began running hither and thither in the passage like a frightened hen, just as Overseer Alpatych entered.

"Innkeeper Ferapontov has done her to death. Killed the mistress!... Beat her... dragged her about so!..."

"What for?" asked Overseer Alpatych.

"She kept begging to go away. She's a woman! 'Take me away,' says Innkeeper Ferapontov's wife, 'don't let me perish with my little children! Folks,' she says, 'are all gone, so why,' she says, 'don't we go?' And Innkeeper Ferapontov began beating and pulling her about so!"

At these words, Overseer Alpatych nodded as if in approval, and not wishing to hear more went to the door of the room opposite Innkeeper Ferapontov's, where he had left his purchases.

"You brute, you murderer!" screamed a thin, pale woman who, with a baby in her arms and her kerchief torn from her head, burst through the door at that moment and down the steps into the yard.

Innkeeper Ferapontov came out after her, but on seeing Overseer Alpatych adjusted his waistcoat, smoothed his hair, yawned, and followed Overseer Alpatych into the opposite room.

"Going already?" said Innkeeper Ferapontov.

Overseer Alpatych, without answering or looking at Innkeeper Ferapontov, sorted his packages and asked how much he owed.

“We’ll reckon up! Well, have you been to the Governor’s?” asked Innkeeper Ferapontov. “What has been decided?”

Overseer Alpatych replied that the Governor had not told him anything definite.

“With our business, how can we get away?” said Innkeeper Ferapontov. “We’d have to pay seven rubles a cartload to Dorogobúzh and I tell them they’re not Christians to ask it! Selivánov, now, did a good stroke last Thursday—sold flour to the army at nine rubles a sack. Will you have some tea?” he added.

While the horses were being harnessed, the men over their tea talked of the price of corn, the crops, and the good weather for harvesting.

“Well, it seems to be getting quieter,” remarked Innkeeper Ferapontov, finishing his third cup of tea and getting up. “Ours must have got the best of it. The orders were not to let them in. So we’re in force, it seems... They say the other day General Platov drove them into the river Márina and drowned some eighteen thousand in one day.”

Overseer Alpatych collected his parcels, handed them to the coachman who had come in, and settled up with Innkeeper Ferapontov. The noise of wheels, hoofs, and bells was heard from the gateway as a little carriage passed out.

It was by now late in the afternoon. Half the street was in shadow, the other half brightly lit by the sun. Overseer Alpatych looked out of the window and went to the door. Suddenly the strange sound of a far-off whistling and thud was heard, followed by a boom of cannon blending into a dull roar that set the windows rattling.

Overseer Alpatych went out into the street: two men were running past toward the bridge. From different sides came whistling sounds and the thud of cannon balls and bursting shells falling on the town. But these sounds were hardly heard in comparison with the noise of the firing outside the town and attracted little attention from the inhabitants. The town was being

bombarded by a hundred and thirty guns which Napoleon had ordered up after four o'clock. The people did not at once realize the meaning of this bombardment.

At first, the noise of the falling bombs and shells only aroused curiosity. Innkeeper Ferapontov's wife, who till then had not ceased wailing under the shed, became quiet and with the baby in her arms went to the gate, listening to the sounds and looking in silence at the people.

The cook and a shop assistant came to the gate. With lively curiosity, everyone tried to get a glimpse of the projectiles as they flew over their heads. Several people came round the corner talking eagerly.

"What force!" remarked one. "Knocked the roof and ceiling all to splinters!"

"Routed up the earth like a pig," said another.

"That's grand, it bucks one up!" laughed the first. "Lucky you jumped aside, or it would have wiped you out!"

Others joined those men and stopped and told how cannonballs had fallen on a house close to them. Meanwhile, still more projectiles, now with the swift sinister whistle of a cannon ball, now with the agreeable intermittent whistle of a shell, flew over people's heads incessantly, but not one fell close by, they all flew over. Overseer Alpatych was getting into his carriage. Innkeeper Ferapontov stood at the gate.

"What are you staring at?" Innkeeper Ferapontov shouted to the cook, who in her red skirt, with sleeves rolled up, swinging her bare elbows, had stepped to the corner to listen to what was being said.

"What marvels!" the cook exclaimed, but hearing Innkeeper Ferapontov's voice she turned back, pulling down her tucked-up skirt.

Once more something whistled, but this time quite close, swooping downwards like a little bird; a flame flashed in the middle of the street, something exploded, and the street was shrouded in smoke.

“Scoundrel, what are you doing?” shouted Innkeeper Ferapontov, rushing to the cook.

At that moment the pitiful wailing of women was heard from different sides, the frightened baby began to cry, and people crowded silently with pale faces around the cook. The loudest sound in that crowd was her wailing.

“Oh-h-h! Dear souls, dear kind souls! Don’t let me die! My good souls!...”

Five minutes later no one remained in the street. The cook, with her thigh broken by a shell splinter, had been carried into the kitchen. Overseer Alpatych, his coachman, Innkeeper Ferapontov’s wife and children, and the house porter were all sitting in the cellar, listening. The roar of guns, the whistling of projectiles, and the piteous moaning of the cook, which rose above the other sounds, did not cease for a moment. The mistress rocked and hushed her baby and when anyone came into the cellar asked in a pathetic whisper what had become of her husband who had remained in the street. A shopman who entered told her that her husband had gone with others to the cathedral, whence they were fetching the wonder-working icon of Smolénsk.

Toward dusk, the cannonade began to subside. Overseer Alpatych left the cellar and stopped in the doorway. The evening sky that had been so clear was clouded with smoke, through which, high up, the sickle of the new moon shone strangely. Now that the terrible din of the guns had ceased a hush seemed to reign over the town, broken only by the rustle of footsteps, the moaning, the distant cries, and the crackle of fires which seemed widespread everywhere. The cook’s moans had now subsided. On two sides black curling clouds of smoke rose and spread from the fires. Through the streets, soldiers in various uniforms walked or ran confusedly in different directions like ants from a ruined ant hill. Several of them ran into Innkeeper Ferapontov’s yard before Overseer Alpatych’s eyes.

Overseer Alpatych went out to the gate. A retreating regiment, thronging and hurrying, blocked the street.

Noticing him, an officer said: “The town is being abandoned. Get away, get away!” and then, turning to the soldiers, shouted:

“I’ll teach you to run into the yards!”

Overseer Alpatych went back to the house, called the coachman, and told him to set off. Innkeeper Ferapontov’s whole household came out too, following Overseer Alpatych and the coachman. The women, who had been silent till then, suddenly began to wail as they looked at the fires—the smoke and even the flames of which could be seen in the failing twilight—and as if in reply the same kind of lamentation was heard from other parts of the street. Inside the shed, Overseer Alpatych and the coachman arranged the tangled reins and traces of their horses with trembling hands.

As Overseer Alpatych was driving out of the gate he saw some ten soldiers in Innkeeper Ferapontov’s open shop, talking loudly and filling their bags and knapsacks with flour and sunflower seeds. Just then Innkeeper Ferapontov returned and entered his shop. On seeing the soldiers he was about to shout at them, but suddenly stopped and, clutching at his hair, burst into sobs and laughter:

“Loot everything, lads! Don’t let those devils get it!” Innkeeper Ferapontov cried, taking some bags of flour himself and throwing them into the street.

Some of the soldiers were frightened and ran away, others went on filling their bags. On seeing Overseer Alpatych, Innkeeper Ferapontov turned to him:

“Russia is done for!” Innkeeper Ferapontov cried. “I’ll set the place on fire myself. We’re done for!...” and Innkeeper Ferapontov ran into the yard.

Soldiers were passing in a constant stream along the street blocking it completely so that Overseer Alpatych could not pass out and had to wait.

Innkeeper Ferapontov's wife and children were also sitting in a cart waiting till it was possible to drive out.

Night had come. There were stars in the sky and the new moon shone out amid the smoke that screened it. On the sloping descent to the Dnieper, Overseer Alpatych's cart and that of Innkeeper Ferapontov's wife, which were slowly moving amid the rows of soldiers and of other vehicles, had to stop. In a side street near the crossroads where the vehicles had stopped, a house and some shops were on fire. This fire was already burning itself out. The flames now died down and were lost in the black smoke, now suddenly flared up again brightly, lighting up with strange distinctness the faces of the people crowding at the crossroads. Black figures flitted about before the fire, and through the incessant crackling of the flames talking and shouting could be heard. Seeing that his carriage would not be able to move on for some time, Overseer Alpatych got down and turned into the side street to look at the fire. Soldiers were continually rushing backward and forwards near it, and he saw two of them and a man in a frieze coat dragging burning beams into another yard across the street, while others carried bundles of hay.

Overseer Alpatych went up to a large crowd standing before a high barn that was blazing briskly. The walls were all on fire and the back wall had fallen in, the wooden roof was collapsing, and the rafters were alight. The crowd was evidently watching for the roof to fall in, and Overseer Alpatych watched for it too.

"Overseer Alpatych!" a familiar voice suddenly hailed the old man.

"Mercy on us! Your excellency!" answered Overseer Alpatych, immediately recognizing the voice of Andrei.

Andrei in his riding cloak, mounted on a black horse, was looking at Overseer Alpatych from the back of the crowd.

"Why are you here?" Andrei asked.

“Your... your excellency,” stammered Overseer Alpatych and broke into sobs. “Are we really lost? Master!...”

“Why are you here?” Andrei repeated.

At that moment the flames flared up and showed his young master’s pale worn face. Overseer Alpatych told how he had been sent there and how difficult it was to get away.

“Are we really quite lost, your excellency?” Overseer Alpatych asked again.

Andrei without replying took out a notebook and raising his knee began writing in pencil on a page he tore out. Andrei wrote to his sister:

“Smolénsk is being abandoned. Bald Hills will be occupied by the enemy within a week. Set off immediately for Moscow. Let me know at once when you will start. Send by special messenger to Usvyázh.”

Having written this and given the paper to Overseer Alpatych, Andrei told him how to arrange for the departure of the Baron, Marya, his son Nikolenka, and the boy’s tutor, and how and where to let him know immediately. Before Andrei had had time to finish giving these instructions, a chief of staff followed by a suite galloped up to him.

“You are a colonel?” shouted the chief of staff with a German accent, in a voice familiar to Andrei. “Houses are set on fire in your presence and you stand by! What does this mean? You will answer for it!” shouted Berg, who was now assistant to the chief of staff of the commander of the left flank of the infantry of the first army, a place, as Berg said, “very agreeable and well *in evidence*.”

Andrei looked at him and without replying went on speaking to Overseer Alpatych.

“So tell them that I shall await a reply till the tenth, and if by the tenth I don’t receive news that they have all got away I shall have to throw up everything and come myself to Bald Hills.”

“Andrei,” said Berg, recognizing Andrei, “I only spoke because I have to obey orders because I always do obey exactly... You must please excuse me,” Berg went on apologetically.

Something cracked in the flames. The fire died down for a moment and wreaths of black smoke rolled from under the roof. There was another terrible crash and something huge collapsed.

“Ou-rou-rou!” yelled the crowd, echoing the crash of the collapsing roof of the barn, the burning grain which diffused a cakelike aroma all around. The flames flared up again, lighting the animated, delighted, exhausted faces of the spectators.

Innkeeper Ferapontov, the man in the frieze coat raised his arms and shouted:

“It’s fine, lads! Now it’s raging... It’s fine!”

“That’s the owner himself,” cried several voices.

“Well then,” continued Andrei to Overseer Alpatych, “report to them as I have told you”; and not replying a word to Berg who was now mute beside him, Andrei touched his horse and rode down the side street.

From Smolénsk the troops continued to retreat, followed by the enemy. On the tenth of August the regiment Andrei commanded was marching along the highroad past the avenue leading to Bald Hills. Heat and drought had continued for more than three weeks. Each day fleecy clouds floated across the sky and occasionally veiled the sun, but toward evening the sky cleared again and the sun set in reddish-brown mist. Heavy night dews alone refreshed the earth. The un-reaped corn was scorched and shed its grain. The marshes dried up. The cattle lowed from hunger, finding no food in the sun-parched meadows. Only at night and in the forests while the dew lasted was there any freshness. But on the road, the high road along which the troops marched, there was no such freshness even at night or when the road passed through the forest; the dew was imperceptible on the sandy dust churned up more than six inches deep. As soon as day dawned the march

began. The artillery and baggage wagons moved noiselessly through the deep dust that rose to the very hubs of the wheels, and the infantry sank ankle-deep in that soft, choking, hot dust that never cooled even at night. Some of this dust was kneaded by the feet and wheels, while the rest rose and hung like a cloud over the troops, settling in eyes, ears, hair, and nostrils, and worst of all in the lungs of the men and beasts as they moved along that road. The higher the sun rose the higher rose that cloud of dust, and through the screen of its hot fine particles one could look with the naked eye at the sun, which showed like a huge crimson ball in the unclouded sky. There was no wind, and the men choked in that motionless atmosphere. They marched with handkerchiefs tied over their noses and mouths. When they passed through a village they all rushed to the wells and fought for the water and drank it down to the mud.

Andrei was in command of a regiment, and the management of that regiment, the welfare of the men, and the necessity of receiving and giving orders, engrossed him. The burning of Smolénsk and its abandonment made an epoch in his life. A novel feeling of anger against the foe made him forget his own sorrow. Andrei was entirely devoted to the affairs of his regiment and was considerate and kind to his men and officers. In the regiment, they called him “our Baron,” were proud of him, and loved him. But Andrei was kind and gentle only to those of his regiment, to Captain Timokhin and the like—people quite new to him, belonging to a different world and who could not know and understand his past. As soon as Andrei came across a former acquaintance or anyone from the staff, he bristled up immediately and grew spiteful, ironical, and contemptuous. Everything that reminded him of his past was repugnant to him, and so in his relations with that former circle, he confined himself to trying to do his duty and not to be unfair.

In truth everything presented itself in a dark and gloomy light to Andrei, especially after the abandonment of Smolénsk on the sixth of August (he

considered that it could and should have been defended) and after his sick father had had to flee to Moscow, abandoning to pillage his dearly beloved Bald Hills which he had built and peopled. But despite this, thanks to his regiment, Andrei had something to think about entirely apart from general questions. Two days previously he had received news that his father, son, and sister had left for Moscow; and though there was nothing for him to do at Bald Hills, Andrei with a characteristic desire to foment his own grief decided that he must ride there.

Andrei ordered his horse to be saddled and, leaving his regiment on the march, rode to his father's estate where he had been born and spent his childhood. Riding past the pond where there used always to be dozens of women chattering as they rinsed their linen or beat it with wooden beetles, Andrei noticed that there was not a soul about and that the little washing wharf, torn from its place and half submerged, was floating on its side in the middle of the pond. He rode to the keeper's lodge. No one was at the stone entrance gates of the drive and the door stood open. Grass had already begun to grow on the garden paths, and horses and calves were straying in the English park. Andrei rode up to the hothouse; some of the glass panes were broken, and of the trees in tubs some were overturned and others dried up. He called for the gardener, but no one replied. Having gone round the corner of the hothouse to the ornamental garden, he saw that the carved garden fence was broken and branches of the plum trees had been torn off with the fruit. An old peasant whom Andrei in his childhood had often seen at the gate was sitting on a green garden seat, plaiting a bast shoe.

The old peasant was deaf and did not hear Andrei ride up. He was sitting on the seat Baron Bolkonski used to like to sit on, and beside him, strips of bast were hanging on the broken and withered branch of a magnolia.

Andrei rode up to the house. Several limes in the old garden had been cut down and a piebald mare and her foal were wandering in front of the

house among the rosebushes. The shutters were all closed, except at one window which was open. A little serf boy, seeing Andrei, ran into the house. Overseer Alpatych, having sent Andrei's family away, was alone at Bald Hills and was sitting indoors reading the *Lives of the Saints*. On hearing that Andrei had come, he went out with his spectacles on his nose, buttoning his coat, and, hastily stepping up, without a word began weeping and kissing Andrei's knee.

Then, vexed at his own weakness, Andrei turned away and began to report on the position of affairs. Everything precious and valuable had been removed to Boguchárovo. Seventy quarters of grain had also been carted away. The hay and the spring corn, of which Overseer Alpatych said there had been a remarkable crop that year, had been commandeered by the troops and mown down while still green. The peasants were ruined; some of them too had gone to Boguchárovo, and only a few remained.

Without waiting to hear him out, Andrei asked:

"When did my father and sister leave?" meaning when did they leave for Moscow.

Overseer Alpatych, understanding the question to refer to their departure for Boguchárovo, replied that they had left on the seventh and again went into details concerning the estate management, asking for instructions.

"Am I to let the troops have the oats, and to take a receipt for them? We have still six hundred quarters left," Overseer Alpatych inquired.

"What am I to say to him?" thought Andrei, looking down on the old man's bald head shining in the sun and seeing by the expression on his face that Overseer Alpatych himself understood how untimely such questions were and only asked them to allay his grief.

"Yes, let them have it," replied Andrei.

"If you noticed some disorder in the garden," said Overseer Alpatych, "it was impossible to prevent it. Three regiments have been here and spent

the night, dragoons mostly. I took down the name and rank of their commanding officer, to hand in a complaint about it.”

“Well, and what are you going to do? Will you stay here if the enemy occupies the place?” asked Andrei.

Overseer Alpatych turned his face to Andrei, looked at him, and suddenly with a solemn gesture raised his arm.

“God is my refuge! His will be done!” Overseer Alpatych exclaimed.

A group of bareheaded peasants was crossing the meadow toward the Baron.

“Well, good-by!” said Andrei, bending over to Overseer Alpatych. “You must go away too, take away what you can and tell the serfs to go to the Ryazán estate or to the one near Moscow.”

Overseer Alpatych clung to Andrei’s leg and burst into sobs. Gently disengaging himself, Andrei spurred his horse and rode down the avenue at a gallop.

Overseer Alpatych was still sitting in the ornamental garden, like a fly impassive on the face of a loved one who is dead, tapping the last on which he was making the bast shoe, and two little girls, running out from the hot house carrying in their skirts plums they had plucked from the trees there, came upon Andrei. On seeing Andrei, the elder girl with a frightened look clutched her younger companion by the hand and hid with her behind a birch tree, not stopping to pick up some green plums they had dropped.

Andrei turned away with startling haste, unwilling to let them see that they had been observed. He was sorry for the pretty frightened little girl, was afraid of looking at her, and yet felt an irresistible desire to do so. A new sensation of comfort and relief came over him when, seeing these girls, Andrei realized the existence of other human interests entirely aloof from his own and just as legitimate as those that occupied him. Evidently, these girls passionately desired one thing—to carry away and eat those green plums without being caught—and Andrei shared their wish for the success

of their enterprise. He could not resist looking at them once more. Believing their danger past, the girls sprang from their ambush and, chirruping something in their shrill little voices and holding up their skirts, their bare little sunburned feet scampered merrily and quickly across the meadow grass.

Andrei was somewhat refreshed by having ridden off the dusty high road along which the troops were moving. But not far from Bald Hills he again came out on the road and overtook his regiment at its halting place by the dam of a small pond. It was past one o'clock. The sun, a red ball through the dust, burned and scorched his back intolerably through his black coat. The dust always hung motionless above the buzz of talk that came from the resting troops. There was no wind. As he crossed the dam Andrei smelled the ooze and freshness of the pond. He longed to get into that water, however dirty it might be, and he glanced round at the pool from whence came sounds of shrieks and laughter. The small, muddy, green pond had risen visibly more than a foot, flooding the dam, because it was full of the naked white bodies of soldiers with brick-red hands, necks, and faces, who were splashing about in it. All this naked white human flesh, laughing and shrieking, floundered about in that dirty pool like carp stuffed into a watering can, and the suggestion of merriment in that floundering mass rendered it specially pathetic.

One fair-haired young soldier of the third company, whom Andrei knew and who had a buckle round the calf of one leg, crossed himself, stepped back to get a good run, and plunged into the water; another, a dark noncommissioned officer who was always shaggy, stood up to his waist in the water joyfully wriggling his muscular figure and snorted with satisfaction as he poured the water over his head with hands blackened to the wrists. There were sounds of men slapping one another, yelling, and puffing.

Everywhere on the bank, on the dam, and in the pond, there was healthy, white, muscular flesh. The officer, Captain Timokhin, with his red little nose, standing on the dam wiping himself with a towel, felt confused at seeing the Baron but made up his mind to address him nevertheless.

“It’s very nice, your excellency! Wouldn’t you like to?” said Captain Timokhin.

“It’s dirty,” replied Andrei, making a grimace.

“We’ll clear it out for you in a minute,” said Captain Timokhin, and, still undressed, ran off to clear the men out of the pond.

“The Baron wants to bathe.”

“What Baron? Ours?” said many voices, and the men were in such haste to clear out that the Baron could hardly stop them. Andrei decided that he would rather wash with water in the barn.

“Flesh, bodies, cannon fodder!” Andrei thought, and he looked at his own naked body and shuddered, not from cold but from a sense of disgust and horror he did not himself understand, aroused by the sight of that immense number of bodies splashing about in the dirty pond.

On the seventh of August, Major-General Bagration wrote as follows from his quarters at Mikháylovna on the Smolénsk road:

Dear Count Aléxis Andréevich—(He was writing to War Minister Arakchéev but knew that his letter would be read by the Tzar, and therefore weighed every word in it to the best of his ability.)

I expect the Marshal (Barclay) has already reported the abandonment of Smolénsk to the enemy. It is pitiable and sad, and the whole army is in despair that this most important place has been wantonly abandoned. I, for my part, begged him personally most urgently and finally wrote him, but nothing would induce him to consent. I swear to you on my honor that Napoleon was in such a fix as never before and might have lost half his army but could not have taken Smolénsk. Our troops fought, and are

fighting, as never before. With fifteen thousand men I held the enemy at bay for thirty-five hours and beat him, but *he* would not hold out even for fourteen hours. It is disgraceful, a stain on our army, and as for him, he ought, it seems to me, not to live. If Marshal Barclay reports that our losses were great, it is not true; perhaps about four thousand, not more, and not even that; but even were they ten thousand, that's war! But the enemy has lost masses...

What would it have cost Marshal Barclay to hold out for another two days? They would have had to retire of their own accord, for they had no water for men or horses. He gave me his word he would not retreat, but suddenly sent instructions that he was retiring that night. We cannot fight in this way, or we may soon bring the enemy to Moscow...

There is a rumor that you are thinking of peace. God forbid that you should make peace after all our sacrifices and such insane retreats! You would set all of Russia against you and every one of us would feel ashamed to wear the uniform. If it has come to this—we must fight as long as Russia can and as long as there are men able to stand...

One man ought to be in command, and not two. Marshal Barclay may perhaps be good as a Minister, but as a general, he is not merely bad but execrable, yet to him is entrusted the fate of our whole country... I am really frantic with vexation; forgive my writing boldly. It is clear that the man who advocates the conclusion of peace, and that Marshal Barclay should command the army, does not love our sovereign and desires the ruin of us all. So I write you frankly: call out the militia. For Marshal Barclay is leading these visitors after him to Moscow in a most masterly way. The whole army feels great suspicion of the Imperial aide-de-camp Wolzogen. Wolzogen is said to be more Napoleon's man than ours, and he is always advising Marshal Barclay. I am not merely civil to Marshal Barclay but obey him like a corporal, though I am his senior. This is painful, but, loving my benefactor and sovereign, I submit. Only I am sorry for the Tzar that he

entrusts our fine army to such as Marshal Barclay. Consider that on our retreat we have lost by fatigue and left in the hospital more than fifteen thousand men, and had we attacked this would not have happened. Tell me, for God's sake, what will Russia, our mother Russia, say to our being so frightened, and why are we abandoning our good and gallant Russia to such rabble and implanting feelings of hatred and shame in all our subjects? What are we scared of and of whom are we afraid? I am not to blame that Marshal Barclay is vacillating, a coward, dense, dilatory, and has all bad qualities. The whole army bewails it and calls down curses upon him...

Among the innumerable categories applicable to the phenomena of human life one may discriminate between those in which substance prevails and those in which form prevails. To the latter—as distinguished from village, country, provincial, or even Moscow life—we may allot St. Petersburg life, and especially the life of its salons. That life of the salons is unchanging. Since the year 1805, we had made peace and had again quarreled with Napoleon and had made constitutions and unmade them again, but the salons of Anna Pavlovna and Helene remained just as they had been—the one seven and the other five years before. At Anna Pavlovna's they talked with perplexity of Napoleon's successes just as before and saw in them and in the subservience shown to him by the European sovereigns a malicious conspiracy, the sole object of which was to cause unpleasantness and anxiety to the court circle of which Anna Pavlovna was the representative. And in Helene's salon, which Chancellor Rumyantsev himself honored with his visits, regarding Helene as a remarkably intelligent woman, they talked with the same ecstasy in 1812 as in 1808 of the "great nation" and the "great man," and regretted our rupture with France, a rupture which, according to them, ought to be promptly terminated by peace.

Of late, since the Tzar's return from the army, there had been some excitement in these conflicting salon circles and some demonstrations of

hostility to one another, but each camp retained its own tendency. In Anna Pavlovna's circle, only those Frenchmen were admitted who were deep-rooted legitimists, and patriotic views were expressed to the effect that one ought not to go to the French theater and that to maintain the French troupe was costing the government as much as a whole army corps. The progress of the war was eagerly followed, and only the reports most flattering to our army were circulated. In the French circle of Helene and Chancellor Rummyántsev, the reports of the cruelty of the enemy and of the war were contradicted and all of Napoleon's attempts at conciliation were discussed. In that circle, they discountenanced those who advised hurried preparations for a removal to Kazán of the court and the girls' educational establishments under the patronage of the Mother of the Tzar. In Helene's circle, the war was regarded as a series of formal demonstrations which would very soon end in peace, and the view prevailed expressed by Adjutant Bilibin—who now in St. Petersburg was quite at home in Helene's house, which every clever man was obliged to visit—that not by gunpowder but by those who invented it would matters be settled. In that circle, the Moscow enthusiasm—news of which had reached St. Petersburg simultaneously with the Tzar's return—was ridiculed sarcastically and very cleverly, though with much caution.

Anna Pavlovna's circle on the contrary was enraptured by this enthusiasm and spoke of it as Plutarch speaks of the deeds of the ancients. Baron Vasili, who still occupied his former important posts, formed a connecting link between these two circles. He visited his "good friend Anna Pavlovna" as well as his daughter's "diplomatic salon," and often in his constant comings and goings between the two camps became confused and said at Helene's what he should have said at Anna Pavlovna's and vice versa.

Soon after the Tzar's return, Baron Vasili in a conversation about the war at Anna Pavlovna's severely condemned Marshal Barclay but was

undecided as to who ought to be appointed Marshal in his stead. One of the visitors, usually spoken of as “a man of great merit,” having described how he had that day seen Kutuzov, the newly chosen chief of the St. Petersburg militia, presiding over the enrollment of recruits at the Treasury, cautiously ventured to suggest that Kutuzov would be the man to satisfy all requirements.

Anna Pavlovna remarked with a melancholy smile that Kutuzov had done nothing but cause the Tzar annoyance.

“I have talked and talked at the Assembly of the Nobility,” Baron Vasili interrupted, “but they did not listen to me. I told them Kutuzov’s election as chief of the militia would not please the Tzar. They did not listen to me.

“It’s all this mania for opposition,” Baron Vasili went on. “And who for? It is all because we want to ape the foolish enthusiasm of those Muscovites,” Baron Vasili continued, forgetting for a moment that though at Helene’s one had to ridicule the Moscow enthusiasm, at Anna Pavlovna’s one had to be ecstatic about it. But Baron Vasili retrieved his mistake at once. “Now, is it suitable that Kutuzov, the oldest general in Russia, should preside at that tribunal? Kutuzov will get nothing for his pains! How could they make a man Marshal who cannot mount a horse, who drops asleep at a council, and who has the very worst morals! A good reputation Kutuzov made for himself at Bucharest! I don’t speak of Kutuzov’s capacity as a leader, but at a time like this how did they appoint a decrepit, blind old man, positively blind? A fine idea to have a blind leader! He can’t see anything. To play blindman’s buff? He can’t see at all!”

No one replied to his remarks.

This was quite correct on the twenty-fourth of July. But on the twenty-ninth of July Kutuzov received the title of Baron. This title was ambiguous and might actually indicate the Tzar’s wish to get rid of Kutuzov, and therefore Baron Vasili’s opinion continued to be correct though he was not now in any hurry to express it. But on the eighth of August, a committee,

consisting of Saltykóv, War Minister Arakchéev, Vyazmítinov, Lopukhín, and Kochubéy met to consider the progress of the war. This committee came to the conclusion that our failures were due to a want of unity in the command and though the members of the committee were aware of the Tzar's dislike of Kutuzov, after a short deliberation they agreed to advise Kutuzov's promotion to Marshal, replacing Barclay. That same day, Kutuzov was officially permanently appointed Marshal with full powers over the armies and over the whole region occupied by them.

On the ninth of August Baron Vasili at Anna Pavlovna's again met the "man of great merit." The latter was very attentive to Anna Pavlovna because he wanted to be appointed director of one of the educational establishments for young ladies. Baron Vasili entered the room with the air of a happy conqueror who has attained the object of his desires.

"Well, have you heard the great news? Kutuzov has replaced Barclay as Marshal, head of all our armies! All dissensions are at an end! I am so glad, so delighted! At last, we have a man!" said Baron Vasili, glancing sternly and significantly around at everyone in the drawing room.

The "man of great merit," despite his desire to obtain the post of director, could not refrain from reminding Baron Vasili of his former opinion. Though this was impolite to Baron Vasili in Anna Pavlovna's drawing room, and also to Anna Pavlovna herself who had received the news with delight, he could not resist the temptation.

"But, Baron Vasili, they say that Kutuzov is blind!" said he, reminding Baron Vasili of his own words.

"Eh? Nonsense! Kutuzov sees well enough," said Baron Vasili rapidly, in a deep voice and with a slight cough—the voice and cough with which he was wont to dispose of all difficulties.

"Kutuzov sees well enough," Baron Vasili repeated. "And what I am so pleased about," he went on, "is that the Tzar has given Kutuzov full powers

over all the armies and the whole region—powers no Marshal ever had before. Kutuzov is a second autocrat,” he concluded with a victorious smile.

“God grant it! God grant it!” said Anna Pavlovna.

The “man of great merit,” who was still a novice in court circles, wishing to flatter Anna Pavlovna by defending her former position on this question, observed:

“It is said that the Tzar was reluctant to give Kutuzov those powers. They say the Tzar blushed like a girl to whom *Joconde* is read when he said to Kutuzov: ‘Your Tzar and Russia award you this honor.’”

“Perhaps the heart took no part in that speech,” said Anna Pavlovna.

“Oh, no, no!” warmly rejoined Baron Vasili, who would not now yield Kutuzov to anyone; in his opinion, Kutuzov was not only admirable himself, but was adored by everybody. “No, that’s impossible,” said Baron Vasili, “for the Tzar appreciated him so highly before.”

“God grant only that Marshal Kutuzov assumes real power and does not allow *anyone* to put a spoke in his wheel,” observed Anna Pavlovna.

Understanding at once to whom she alluded, Baron Vasili said in a whisper:

“I know for a fact that Marshal Kutuzov made it an absolute condition that the Tzar’s son should not be with the army. Do you know what Kutuzov said to the Tzar?”

And Baron Vasili repeated the words supposed to have been spoken by Marshal Kutuzov to the Tzar. “I can neither punish the Tzar if he does wrong nor reward him if he does right.”

“Oh, a very wise man is Marshal Kutuzov! I have known him a long time!”

“They even say,” remarked the “man of great merit” who did not yet possess courtly tact, “that the Tzar made it an express condition that the Tzar himself should not be with the army.”

As soon as the “man of great merit” said this both Baron Vasili and Anna Pavlovna turned away from him and glanced sadly at one another with a sigh at his naivete.

While this was taking place in St. Petersburg the French had already passed Smolénsk and were drawing nearer and nearer to Moscow. Napoleon’s historian, the historian Thiers, like other of his historians, trying to justify his hero says that he was drawn to the walls of Moscow against his will. The historian Thiers is as right as other historians who look for the explanation of historic events in the will of one man; he is as right as the Russian historians who maintain that Napoleon was drawn to Moscow by the skill of the Russian commanders. Here besides the law of retrospection, which regards all the past as a preparation for events that subsequently occur, the law of reciprocity comes in, confusing the whole matter. A good chess player having lost a game is sincerely convinced that his loss resulted from a mistake he made and looks for that mistake in the opening, but forgets that at each stage of the game there were similar mistakes and that none of his moves were perfect. He only notices the mistake to which he pays attention because his opponent took advantage of it. How much more complex than this is the game of war, which occurs under certain limits of time, and where it is not one will that manipulates lifeless objects, but everything results from innumerable conflicts of various wills!

After Smolénsk Napoleon sought a battle beyond Dorogobúzh at Vyázma, and then at Tsárevo-Zaymíshche, but it happened that owing to a conjunction of innumerable circumstances the Russians could not give battle till they reached Borodinó, seventy miles from Moscow. From Vyázma Napoleon ordered a direct advance on Moscow.

Moscow, the Asiatic capital of this great empire, the sacred city of The Tzar’s people, Moscow with its innumerable churches shaped like Chinese pagodas, this Moscow gave Napoleon’s imagination no rest. On the march from Vyázma to Tsárevo-Zaymíshche, he rode his light bay bobtailed

ambler accompanied by his Guards, his bodyguard, his pages, and aides-de-camp. Berthier, his chief of staff, dropped behind to question a Russian prisoner captured by the cavalry. Followed by an interpreter, he overtook Napoleon at a gallop and reined in his horse with an amused expression.

“Well?” asked Napoleon.

“One of the Russian prisoners says that General Platov’s corps is joining up with the main army and that Kutuzov has been appointed as Marshal, replacing Barclay. The prisoner is a very shrewd and garrulous fellow.”

Napoleon smiled and told them to give the Russian prisoner a horse and bring the man to him. Napoleon wished to talk to this prisoner himself. Several adjutants galloped off, and an hour later, Lavrúshka, the serf which Denisov had handed over to Nicholas, rode up to Napoleon in an orderly’s jacket and on a French cavalry saddle, with a merry, and tipsy face. Napoleon told Lavrúshka to ride by his side and began questioning him.

“You are a Cossack?”

“Yes, a Cossack, your Honor.”

“The Cossack, not knowing in what company he was, for Napoleon’s plain appearance had nothing about it that would reveal to an Oriental mind the presence of a monarch, talked with an extreme familiarity of the incidents of the war,” says the historian Thiers, narrating this episode. In reality, Lavrúshka, having got drunk the day before and left Nicholas without dinner, had been whipped and sent to the village in quest of chickens, where Lavrúshka engaged in looting till the French took him prisoner. Lavrúshka was one of those coarse, bare-faced lackeys who have seen all sorts of things, consider it necessary to do everything in a mean and cunning way, are ready to render any sort of service to their master, and are keen at guessing their master’s baser impulses, especially those prompted by vanity and pettiness.

Finding himself in the company of Napoleon, whose identity he had easily and surely recognized, Lavrúshka was not in the least abashed but

merely did his utmost to gain his new master's favor.

Lavrúshka knew very well that this was Napoleon, but Napoleon's presence could no more intimidate him than Nicholas's, or a sergeant major's with the rods, would have done, for Lavrúshka had nothing that either the sergeant major or Napoleon could deprive him of.

So Lavrúshka rattled on, telling all the gossip he had heard among the orderlies. Much of it is true. But when Napoleon asked him whether the Russians thought they would beat Napoleon or not, Lavrúshka screwed up his eyes and considered.

In this question Lavrúshka saw subtle cunning, as men of his type see cunning in everything, so he frowned and did not answer immediately.

"It's like this," Lavrúshka said thoughtfully, "if there's a battle soon, yours will win. That's right. But if three days pass, then after that, well, then that same battle will not soon be over."

One historian smilingly interpreted this speech to Napoleon thus: "If a battle takes place within the next three days the French will win, but if later, God knows what will happen." Napoleon did not smile, though he was evidently in high good humor, and he ordered these words to be repeated.

Lavrúshka noticed this and to entertain Napoleon further, pretending not to know who Napoleon was, added:

"We know that you have Napoleon and that he has beaten everybody in the world, but we are a different matter..."—without knowing why or how this bit of boastful patriotism slipped out at the end.

The interpreter translated these words without the last phrase, and Napoleon smiled. "The young Cossack made his Napoleon smile," says the historian Thiers. After riding a few paces in silence, Napoleon turned to his interpreter and said he wished to see how the news that Lavrúshka was talking to Napoleon himself, to that very Napoleon who had written his immortally victorious name on the Pyramids, would affect this *child of the Don*.

The fact was accordingly conveyed to Lavrúshka.

Lavrúshka, understanding that this was done to perplex him and that Napoleon expected him to be frightened, to gratify Napoleon promptly pretended to be astonished and awe-struck, opened his eyes wide and assumed the expression he usually put on when taken to be whipped. “As soon as Napoleon’s interpreter had spoken,” says the historian Thiers, “the Cossack, seized by amazement, did not utter another word, but rode on, his eyes fixed on the conqueror whose fame had reached him across the steppes of the East. All his loquacity was suddenly arrested and replaced by a naive and silent feeling of admiration. Napoleon, after making the Cossack a present, had him set free like a bird restored to its native fields.”

Napoleon rode on, dreaming of the Moscow that so appealed to his imagination, and Lavrúshka, “the bird restored to its native fields” galloped to our outposts, inventing on the way all that had not taken place but that Lavrúshka meant to relate to his comrades. What had really taken place Napoleon did not wish to relate because it seemed to him not worth telling. Lavrúshka found the Cossacks, inquired for the regiment operating with General Platov’s detachment, and by evening found his master, Nicholas, quartered at Yankóvo. Nicholas was just mounting to go for a ride around the neighboring villages with Ilyín; Nicholas let Lavrúshka have another horse and took him along with him.

Marya was not in Moscow and out of danger as Andrei supposed.

After the return of Overseer Alpatych from Smolénsk, Baron Bolkonski suddenly seemed to awake from a dream. Baron Bolkonski ordered the militiamen to be called up from the villages and armed and wrote a letter to Marshal Kutuzov informing him that he had resolved to remain at Bald Hills to the last extremity and to defend it, leaving to General Kutuzov’s discretion to take measures or not for the defense of Bald Hills, where one of Russia’s oldest generals would be captured or killed, and Baron Bolkonski announced to his household that he would remain at Bald Hills.

But while Baron Bolkonski himself remained, he gave instructions for the departure of Marya and the tutor Desalles with little Nikolenka to Boguchárovo and thence to Moscow. Marya, alarmed by her father's feverish and sleepless activity after his previous apathy, could not bring herself to leave him alone and for the first time in her life ventured to disobey him. Marya refused to go away and Baron Bolkonski's fury broke over her in a terrible storm. He repeated every injustice he had ever inflicted on her. Trying to convict Marya, Baron Bolkonski told her she had worn him out, had caused his quarrel with his son, had harbored nasty suspicions of him, making it the object of her life to poison his existence, and he drove her from his study telling her that if she did not go away it was all the same to him. Baron Bolkonski declared that he did not wish to remember her existence and warned her not to dare to let him see her. The fact that Baron Bolkonski did not, as she had feared, order her to be carried away by force but only told her not to let him see her cheered Marya. She knew it was proof that in the depth of his soul Baron Bolkonski was glad she was remaining at home and had not gone away.

The morning after Nikolenka had left, Baron Bolkonski donned his full uniform and prepared to visit Marshal Kutuzov. His *carriage* was already at the door. Marya saw Baron Bolkonski walk out of the house in his uniform wearing all his orders and go down to the garden to review his armed peasants and domestic serfs. Marya sat by the window listening to his voice which reached her from the garden. Suddenly several men came running up the avenue with frightened faces.

Marya ran out to the porch, down the flower-bordered path, and into the avenue. A large crowd of militiamen and domestics were moving toward her, and in their midst, several men were supporting them by the armpits and dragging along a little old man in a uniform and decorations. She ran up to him and, in the play of the sunlight that fell in small round spots through the shade of the lime-tree avenue, could not be sure what change there was

in Baron Bolkonski's face. All she could see was that his former stern and determined expression had altered to one of timidity and submission. On seeing Marya, Baron Bolkonski moved his helpless lips and made a hoarse sound. It was impossible to make out what he wanted. Baron Bolkonski was lifted up, carried to his study, and laid on the very couch he had so feared of late.

The doctor, who was fetched that same night, bled him and said that Baron Bolkonski had had a seizure, paralyzing his right side.

It was becoming more and more dangerous to remain at Bald Hills, and the next day they moved Baron Bolkonski to Boguchárovo, the doctor accompanying him.

By the time they reached Boguchárovo, the tutor Desalles and Nikolenka had already left for Moscow.

For three weeks, Baron Bolkonski lay stricken by paralysis in the new house Andrei had built at Boguchárovo, ever in the same state, getting neither better nor worse. He was unconscious and lay like a distorted corpse. Baron Bolkonski muttered unceasingly, his eyebrows and lips twitching, and it was impossible to tell whether he understood what was going on around him or not. One thing was certain—that Baron Bolkonski was suffering and wished to say something. But what it was, no one could tell: it might be some caprice of a sick and half-crazy man, or it might relate to public affairs, or possibly to family concerns.

The doctor said this restlessness did not mean anything and was due to physical causes, but Marya thought Baron Bolkonski wished to tell her something, and the fact that her presence always increased his restlessness confirmed her opinion.

Baron Bolkonski was evidently suffering both physically and mentally. There was no hope of recovery. It was impossible for him to travel, it would not do to let him die on the road. "Would it not be better if the end did come, the very end?" Marya sometimes thought. Night and day, hardly

sleeping at all, she watched him and, terrible to say, often watched him not with the hope of finding signs of improvement but wishing to find symptoms of the approach of the end.

Strange as it was to Marya to acknowledge this feeling in herself, yet there it was. And what seemed still more terrible to her was that since Baron Bolkonski's illness began (perhaps even sooner, when she stayed with him expecting something to happen), all the personal desires and hopes that had been forgotten or sleeping within her had awakened. Thoughts that had not entered her mind for years—thoughts of a life free from the fear of her father, and even the possibility of love and of family happiness—floated continually in her imagination like temptations of the devil. Thrust them aside as she would, questions continually recurred to her as to how she would order her life now, after *that*. These were temptations of the devil and Marya knew it. She knew that the sole weapon against *him* was prayer, and she tried to pray. She assumed an attitude of prayer, looked at the icons, and repeated the words of a prayer, but she could not pray. She felt that a different world had now taken possession of her—the life of a world of strenuous and free activity, quite opposed to the spiritual world in which till now she had been confined and in which her greatest comfort had been prayer. Marya could not pray, could not weep, and worldly cares took possession of her.

It was becoming dangerous to remain in Boguchárovo. News of the approach of the French came from all sides, and in one village, ten miles from Boguchárovo, a homestead had been looted by French marauders.

The doctor insisted on the necessity of moving Baron Bolkonski; the provincial head sent an official to Marya to persuade her to get away as quickly as possible, and the head of the rural police having come to Boguchárovo urged the same thing, saying that the French were only some twenty-five miles away, that French proclamations were circulating in the

villages, and that if Marya did not take Baron Bolkonski away before the fifteenth, he could not answer for the consequences.

Marya decided to leave on the fifteenth. The cares of preparation and giving orders, for which everyone came to her, occupied her all day. She spent the night of the fourteenth as usual, without undressing, in the room next to the one where the Baron lay. Several times, waking up, Maarya heard his groans and muttering, the creak of his bed, and the steps of Butler Tikhon and the doctor when they turned Baron Bolkonski over. Several times she listened at the door, and it seemed to her that his mutterings were louder than usual and that they turned him over oftener. She could not sleep and several times went to the door and listened, wishing to enter but not deciding to do so. Though he did not speak, Marya saw and knew how unpleasant every sign of anxiety on his account was to him. She had noticed with what dissatisfaction Baron Bolkonski turned from the look she sometimes involuntarily fixed on him. She knew that her going in during the night at an unusual hour would irritate him.

But never had Marya felt so grieved for him or so much afraid of losing Baron Bolkonski. She recalled all her life with him and in every word and act of his found an expression of his love for her. Occasionally amid these memories temptations of the devil would surge into her imagination: thoughts of how things would be after his death, and how her new, liberated life would be ordered. But she drove these thoughts away with disgust. Toward morning Baron Bolkonski became quiet and she fell asleep.

She woke late. That sincerity that often comes with waking showed her clearly what chiefly concerned her about her father's illness. On waking, she listened to what was going on behind the door and, hearing him groan, said to herself with a sigh that things were still the same.

"But what could have happened? What did I want? I want his death!" Marya cried with a feeling of loathing for herself.

Marya washed, dressed, said her prayers, and went out to the porch. In front of it stood carriages without horses and things were being packed into the vehicles.

It was a warm, gray morning. Marya stopped at the porch, still horrified by her spiritual baseness and trying to arrange her thoughts before going to her father. The doctor came downstairs and went out to her.

“Baron Bolkonski is a little better today,” said the doctor. “I was looking for you. One can make out something of what he is saying. His head is clearer. Come in, he is asking for you...”

Marya’s heart beat so violently at this news that she grew pale and leaned against the wall to keep from falling. To see Baron Bolkonski, talk to him, feel his eyes on her now that her whole soul was overflowing with those dreadful, wicked temptations, was a torment of joy and terror.

“Come,” said the doctor.

Marya entered Baron Bolkonski’s room and went up to his bed. He was lying on his back propped up high, and his small bony hands with their knotted purple veins were lying on the quilt; his left eye gazed straight before him, his right eye was awry, and his brows and lips motionless. He seemed altogether so thin, small, and pathetic. His face seemed to have shriveled or melted; his features had grown smaller. Marya went up and kissed his hand. His left hand pressed hers so that she understood that he had long been waiting for her to come. He twitched her hand, and his brows and lips quivered angrily.

Marya looked at Baron Bolkonski in dismay trying to guess what he wanted of her. When she changed her position so that his left eye could see her face he calmed down, not taking his eyes off her for some seconds. Then his lips and tongue moved, sounds came, and he began to speak, gazing timidly and imploringly at her, evidently afraid that she might not understand.

Straining all her faculties, Marya looked at Baron Bolkonski. The comic efforts with which he moved his tongue made her drop her eyes and with difficulty repress the sobs that rose to her throat. He said something, repeating the same words several times. She could not understand them but tried to guess what he was saying and inquiringly repeated the words he uttered.

“Mmm...ar...ate...ate...” Baron Bolkonski repeated several times.

It was quite impossible to understand these sounds. The doctor thought he had guessed them, and inquiringly repeated: “*Marya, are you afraid?*” The Baron shook his head, and again repeated the same sounds.

“*My mind, my mind aches?*” questioned Marya.

Baron Bolkonski made a mumbling sound in confirmation of this, took her hand, and began pressing it to different parts of his breast as if trying to find the right place for it.

“Always thoughts... about you... thoughts...” Baron Bolkonski then uttered much more clearly than he had done before, now that he was sure of being understood.

Marya pressed her head against his hand, trying to hide her sobs and tears.

Baron Bolkonski moved his hand over her hair.

“I have been calling you all night...” he brought out.

“If only I had known...” she said through her tears. “I was afraid to come in.”

Baron Bolkonski pressed her hand.

“Weren’t you asleep?”

“No, I did not sleep,” said Marya, shaking her head.

Unconsciously imitating her father, Marya now tried to express herself as he did, as much as possible by signs, and her tongue too seemed to move with difficulty.

“Dear one... Dearest...” Marya could not quite make out what he had said, but from his look, it was clear that Baron Bolkonski had uttered a tender caressing word such as he had never used to her before. “Why didn’t you come in?”

“And I was wishing for his death!” thought Marya.

Baron Bolkonski was silent awhile.

“Thank you... daughter dear!... for all, for all... forgive!... thank you!... forgive!... thank you!...” and tears began to flow from his eyes. “Call Andrei!” Baron Bolkonski said suddenly, and a childish, timid expression of doubt showed itself on his face as he spoke.

Baron Bolkonski himself seemed aware that his demand was meaningless. So at least it seemed to Marya.

“I have a letter from Andrei,” Marya replied.

He glanced at her with timid surprise.

“Where is he?”

“He’s with the army, Father, at Smolénsk.”

Baron Bolkonski closed his eyes and remained silent for a long time. Then as if in answer to his doubts and to confirm the fact that now he understood and remembered everything, he nodded his head and reopened his eyes.

“Yes,” Baron Bolkonski said, softly and distinctly. “Russia has perished. They’ve destroyed her.”

And Baron Bolkonski began to sob, and again tears flowed from his eyes. Marya could no longer restrain herself and wept while she gazed at his face.

Again Baron Bolkonski closed his eyes. His sobs ceased, he pointed to his eyes, and Butler Tikhon, understanding him, wiped away the tears.

Then Baron Bolkonski again opened his eyes and said something none of them could understand for a long time, till at last Butler Tikhon understood and repeated it. Marya had sought the meaning of his words in

the mood in which he had just been speaking. She thought he was speaking of Russia, or Andrei, of herself, of his grandson, or of his own death, and so she could not guess his words.

“Put on your white dress. I like it,” was what Baron Bolkonski said.

Having understood this Marya sobbed still louder, and the doctor taking her arm led her out to the veranda, soothing her and trying to persuade her to prepare for her journey. When she had left the room Baron Bolkonski again began speaking about Andrei, about the war, and about the Tzar, angrily twitching his brows and raising his hoarse voice, and then he had a second and final stroke.

Marya stayed on the veranda. The day had cleared, and it was hot and sunny. She could understand nothing, think of nothing, and feel nothing, except passionate love for her father, love such as she thought she had never felt till that moment. She ran out sobbing into the garden and as far as the pond, along the avenues of young lime trees Andrei had planted.

“Yes... I... I... I wished for his death! Yes, I wanted it to end quicker... I wished to be at peace... And what will become of me? What use will peace be when he is no longer here?” Marya murmured, pacing the garden with hurried steps and pressing her hands to her bosom which heaved with convulsive sobs.

When Marya had completed the tour of the garden, which brought her again to the house, she saw Lady-in-waiting Bourienne—who had remained at Boguchárovo and did not wish to leave it—coming toward her with a stranger. This was the provincial head of the district, who had come personally to point out to Marya the necessity for her prompt departure. Marya listened without understanding him; she led him to the house, offered him lunch, and sat down with him. Then, excusing herself, she went to the door of Baron Bolkonski’s room. The doctor came out with an agitated face and said she could not enter.

“Go away, Marya! Go away... go away!”

Marya returned to the garden and sat down on the grass at the foot of the slope by the pond, where no one could see her. She did not know how long she had been there when she was aroused by the sound of a woman's footsteps running along the path. She rose and saw her maid, who was evidently looking for her, and who stopped suddenly as if in alarm on seeing her mistress.

"Please come, Marya... Baron Bolkonski," said the maid in a breaking voice.

"Immediately, I'm coming, I'm coming!" replied Marya hurriedly, not giving the maid time to finish what she was saying, and trying to avoid seeing the girl she ran toward the house.

"Marya, it's God's will! You must be prepared for everything," said the provincial head, meeting her at the house door.

"Let me alone; it's not true!" Marya cried angrily to him.

The doctor tried to stop her. Marya pushed him aside and ran to her father's door. "Why are these people with frightened faces stopping me? I don't want any of them! And what are they doing here?" she thought. She opened the door and the bright daylight in that previously darkened room startled her. In the room were her nurse and other women. They all drew back from the bed, making way for her. Baron Bolkonski was still lying on the bed as before, but the stern expression on his quiet face made Marya stop short on the threshold.

"No, he's not dead—it's impossible!" she told herself and approached him, and repressing the terror that seized her, she pressed her lips to his cheek. But she stepped back immediately. All the force of the tenderness she had been feeling for Baron Bolkonski vanished instantly and was replaced by a feeling of horror at what lay there before her. "No, he is no more! He is not, but here where he was is something unfamiliar and hostile, some dreadful, terrifying, and repellent mystery!" And hiding her face in her hands, Marya sank into the arms of the doctor, who held her up.

In the presence of Butler Tikhon and the doctor, the women washed what had been Baron Bolkonski, tied his head up with a handkerchief that the mouth should not stiffen while open, and with another handkerchief tied together the legs that were already spreading apart. Then they dressed him in uniform with his decorations and placed his shriveled little body on a table. Heaven only knows who arranged all this and when, but it all got done as if of its own accord. Toward night candles were burning around his coffin, a pall was spread over it, the floor was strewn with sprays of juniper, a printed band was tucked in under his shriveled head, and in a corner of the room sat a chanter reading the psalms.

Just as horses shy and snort and gather about a dead horse, so the inmates of the house and strangers crowded into the drawing room around the coffin—the village Elder, peasant women—and all with fixed and frightened eyes, crossing themselves, bowed and kissed Baron Bolkonski's cold and stiffened hand.

Until Andrei settled in Boguchárovo its owners had always been absentees, and its peasants were of quite a different character from those of Bald Hills. They differed from them in speech, dress, and disposition. They were called steppe peasants. Baron Bolkonski used to approve of them for their endurance at work when they came to Bald Hills to help with the harvest. or to dig ponds and ditches, but he disliked them for their boorishness.

Andrei's last stay at Boguchárovo, when he introduced hospitals and schools and reduced the quitrent the peasants had to pay, had not softened their disposition but had on the contrary strengthened in them the traits of character Baron Bolkonski called boorishness. Various obscure rumors were always current among them: at one time a rumor that they would all be enrolled as Cossacks; at another of a new religion to which they were all to be converted; then of some proclamation of the Tzar's and of an oath to

Tzar Paul in 1797 (in connection with which it was rumored that freedom had been granted them but the landowners had stopped it), then of Peter Fëdorovich's return to the throne in seven years' time, when everything would be made free and so "simple" that there would be no restrictions. Rumors of the war with Napoleon and his invasion were connected in their minds with the same sort of vague notions of the Antichrist, the end of the world, and "pure freedom."

In the vicinity of Boguchárovo were large villages belonging to the crown or to owners whose serfs paid quitrent and could work where they pleased. There were very few resident landlords in the neighborhood and also very few domestic or literate serfs, and in the lives of the peasantry of those parts the mysterious undercurrents in the life of the Russian people, the causes and meaning of which are so baffling to contemporaries, were more clearly and strongly noticeable than among others. One instance, which had occurred some twenty years before, was a movement among the peasants to emigrate to some unknown "warm rivers." Hundreds of peasants, among them the Boguchárovo folk, suddenly began selling their cattle and moving in whole families toward the southeast. As birds migrate to somewhere beyond the sea, so these men with their wives and children streamed to the southeast, to parts where none of them had ever been. They set off in caravans, bought their freedom one by one or ran away, and drove or walked toward the "warm rivers." Many of them were punished, some sent to Siberia, many died of cold and hunger on the road, many returned of their own accord, and the movement died down of itself just as it had sprung up, without apparent reason. But such undercurrents still existed among the people and gathered new forces ready to manifest themselves just as strangely, unexpectedly, and at the same time simply, naturally, and forcibly. Now in 1812, to anyone living in close touch with these people, it was apparent that these undercurrents were acting strongly and nearing an eruption.

Overseer Alpatych, who had reached Boguchárovo shortly before Baron Bolkonski's death, noticed an agitation among the peasants, and that contrary to what was happening in the Bald Hills district, where over a radius of forty miles all the peasants were moving away and leaving their villages to be devastated by the Cossacks, the peasants in the steppe region round Boguchárovo were, it was rumored, in touch with the French, received leaflets from them that passed from hand to hand, and did not migrate. He learned from domestic serfs loyal to him that the peasant Karp, who possessed great influence in the village commune and had recently been away driving a government transport, had returned with news that the Cossacks were destroying deserted villages, but that the French did not harm them. Overseer Alpatych also knew that on the previous day another peasant had even brought from the village of Visloúkhovo, which was occupied by the French, a proclamation by a French général that no harm would be done to the inhabitants, and if they remained they would be paid for anything taken from them. As proof of this, the peasant had brought from Visloúkhovo a hundred rubles in notes (he did not know that they were false) paid to him in advance for hay.

More important still, Overseer Alpatych learned that on the morning of the very day he gave the village Elder orders to collect carts to move Marya's luggage from Boguchárovo, there had been a village meeting at which it had been decided not to move but to wait. Yet there was no time to waste. On the fifteenth, the day of Baron Bolkonski's death, the Elder had insisted on Marya's leaving at once, as it was becoming dangerous. He had told her that after the sixteenth he could not be responsible for what might happen. On the evening of the day Baron Bolkonski died, the Elder went away, promising to return the next day for the funeral. But this the Elder was unable to do, for he received tidings that the French had unexpectedly advanced, and had barely time to remove his own family and valuables from his estate.

For some thirty years Boguchárovo had been managed by the village Elder, Dron, whom Baron Bolkonski called by the diminutive “Dronushka.”

Dron was one of those physically and mentally vigorous peasants who grow big beards as soon as they are of age and go on unchanged till they are sixty or seventy, without a gray hair or the loss of a tooth, as straight and strong at sixty as at thirty.

Soon after the migration to the “warm rivers,” in which he had taken part like the rest, Dron was made village Elder and overseer of Boguchárovo and had since filled that post irreproachably for twenty-three years. The peasants feared him more than they did their master. The masters, both Baron Bolkonski and the young, and the steward respected him and jestingly called him “the Minister.” During the whole time of his service Dron had never been drunk or ill, never after sleepless nights or the hardest tasks had he shown the least fatigue, and though he could not read he had never forgotten a single money account or the number of quarters of flour in any of the endless cartloads he sold for the Baron, nor a single shock of the whole corn crop on any single acre of the Boguchárovo fields.

Overseer Alpatych, arriving from the devastated Bald Hills estate, sent for his Dron on the day of the Baron’s funeral and told him to have twelve horses got ready for Marya’s carriages and eighteen carts for the things to be removed from Boguchárovo. Though the peasants paid quitrent, Overseer Alpatych thought no difficulty would be made about complying with this order, for there were two hundred and thirty households at work in Boguchárovo and the peasants were well to do. But on hearing the order Dron lowered his eyes and remained silent. Overseer Alpatych named certain peasants he knew, from whom he told him to take the carts.

Dron replied that the horses of these peasants were away carting. Overseer Alpatych named others, but they too, according to Dron, had no horses available: some horses were carting for the government, others were

too weak, and others had died for want of fodder. It seemed that no horses could be had even for the carriages, much less for the carting.

Overseer Alpatych looked intently at Dron and frowned. Just as Dron was a model village Elder, so Overseer Alpatych had not managed Baron Bolkonski's estates for twenty years in vain. He was a model steward, possessing in the highest degree the faculty of divining the needs and instincts of those he dealt with. Having glanced at Dron, Overseer Alpatych at once understood that his answers did not express his personal views but the mood of the Boguchárovo commune, by which the Elder had already been carried away. But he also knew that Dron, who had acquired property and was hated by the commune, must be hesitating between the two camps: the masters' and the serfs'. He noticed this hesitation in Dron's look and therefore frowned and moved closer up to him.

"Now just listen, Dron," said Overseer Alpatych. "Don't talk nonsense to me. His excellency Andrei himself gave me orders to move all the people away and not leave them with the enemy, and there is an order from the Tzar about it too. Anyone who stays is a traitor to the Tzar. Do you hear?"

"I hear," Dron answered without lifting his eyes.

Overseer Alpatych was not satisfied with this reply.

"Eh, Dron, it will turn out badly!" Overseer Alpatych said, shaking his head.

"The power is in your hands," Dron rejoined sadly.

"Eh, Dron, drop it!" Overseer Alpatych repeated, withdrawing his hand from his bosom and solemnly pointing to the floor at Dron's feet. "I can see through you and three yards into the ground under you," he continued, gazing at the floor in front of Dron.

Dron was disconcerted, glanced furtively at Overseer Alpatych, and again lowered his eyes.

"You drop this nonsense and tell the people to get ready to leave their homes and go to Moscow and to get carts ready for tomorrow morning for

Marya's things. And don't go to any meeting yourself, do you hear?"

Dron suddenly fell to his knees.

"Overseer Alpatych, discharge me! Take the keys from me and discharge me, for Christ's sake!"

"Stop that!" cried Overseer Alpatych sternly. "I see through you and three yards under you," he repeated, knowing that his skill in beekeeping, his knowledge of the right time to sow the oats, and the fact that he had been able to retain Baron Bolkonski's favor for twenty years had long since gained him the reputation of being a wizard and that the power of seeing three yards under a man is considered an attribute of wizards.

Dron got up and was about to say something, but Overseer Alpatych interrupted him.

"What is it you have got into your heads, eh?... What are you thinking of, eh?"

"What am I to do with the people?" said Dron. "They're quite beside themselves; I have already told them..."

"'Told them,' I dare say!" said Overseer Alpatych. "Are they drinking?" he asked abruptly.

"Quite beside themselves, Overseer Alpatych; they've fetched another barrel."

"Well, then, listen! I'll go to the police officer, and you tell them so, and that they must stop this and the carts must be got ready."

"I understand."

Overseer Alpatych did not insist further. He had managed people for a long time and knew that the chief way to make them obey is to show no suspicion that they can possibly disobey. Having wrung a submissive "I understand" from Dron, Overseer Alpatych contented himself with that, though he not only doubted but felt almost certain that without the help of troops the carts would not be forthcoming.

And so it was, for when evening came no carts had been provided. In the village, outside the drink shop, another meeting was being held, which, contrary to Overseer Alpatych's demand, they decided instead that the horses should be driven out into the woods and the carts should not be provided. Without saying anything of this to Marya, Overseer Alpatych had his own belongings taken out of the carts which had arrived from Bald Hills and had those horses got ready for Marya's carriages. Meanwhile, he went himself to the police authorities.

From Górkí, General Bennigsen descended the highroad to the bridge which, when they had looked at it from the hill, the officer had pointed out as being the center of our position and where rows of fragrant new-mown hay lay by the riverside. They rode across that bridge into the village of Borodinó and thence turned to the left, passing an enormous number of troops and guns, and came to a high knoll where militiamen were digging. This was the redoubt, as yet unnamed, which afterwards became known as the Raévski Redoubt, or the Knoll Battery, but Pierre paid no special attention to it. He did not know that it would become more memorable to him than any other spot on the plain of Borodinó.

They then crossed the hollow to Semënovsk, where the soldiers were dragging away the last logs from the huts and barns. Then they rode downhill and uphill, across a field of rye trodden and beaten down as if by hail, following a track freshly made by the artillery over the furrows of the plowed land, and reached some *entrenchments* which were still being dug.

At the *entrenchments*, General Bennigsen stopped and began looking at the Shevárdino Redoubt opposite, which had been ours the day before and where several horsemen could be descried. The officers said that either Napoleon or Général Murat was there, and they all gazed eagerly at this little group of horsemen. Pierre also looked at them, trying to guess which of the scarcely discernible figures was Napoleon. At last those mounted men rode away from the mound and disappeared.

General Bennisen spoke to a general who approached him, and began explaining the whole position of our troops. Pierre listened to him, straining each faculty to understand the essential points of the impending battle, but was mortified to feel that his mental capacity was inadequate for the task. Pierre could make nothing of it. General Bennisen stopped speaking and, noticing that Pierre was listening, suddenly said to him:

“I don’t think this interests you?”

“On the contrary it’s very interesting!” replied Pierre not quite truthfully.

From the *entrenchments* they rode still farther to the left, along a road winding through a thick, low-growing birch wood. In the middle of the wood a brown hare with white feet sprang out and, scared by the tramp of the many horses, grew so confused that it leaped along the road in front of them for some time, arousing attention and laughter, and only when several voices shouted at it did it dart to one side and disappear in the thicket. After going through the wood for about a mile and a half they came out on a glade where troops of Túchkov’s corps were stationed to defend the left flank.

Here, at the extreme left flank, General Bennisen talked a great deal and with much heat, and, as it seemed to Pierre, gave orders of great military importance. In front of Túchkov’s troops was some high ground not occupied by troops. General Bennisen loudly criticized this mistake, saying that it was madness to leave a height which commanded the country around unoccupied and to place troops below it. Some of the generals expressed the same opinion. One in particular declared with martial heat that they were put there to be slaughtered. General Bennisen on his own authority ordered the troops to occupy the high ground. This disposition on the left flank increased Pierre’s doubt of his own capacity to understand military matters. Listening to General Bennisen and the generals criticizing the position of the troops behind the hill, he quite understood

them and shared their opinion, but for that very reason he could not understand how the man who put them there behind the hill could have made so gross and palpable a blunder.

Pierre did not know that these troops were not, as General Bennigsen supposed, put there to defend the position, but were in a concealed position as an ambush, that they should not be seen and might be able to strike an approaching enemy unexpectedly. General Bennigsen did not know this and moved the troops forward according to his own ideas without mentioning the matter to Marshal Kutuzov.

On that bright evening of August 25, Andrei lay leaning on his elbow in a broken-down shed in the village of Knyazkóvo at the further end of his regiment's encampment. Through a gap in the broken wall he could see, beside the wooden fence, a row of thirty-year-old birches with their lower branches lopped off, a field on which shocks of oats were standing, and some bushes near which rose the smoke of campfires—the soldiers' kitchens.

Narrow and burdensome and useless to anyone as his life now seemed to him, Andrei on the eve of battle felt agitated and irritable as he had done seven years before at Austerlitz.

Andrei had received and given the orders for the next day's battle and had nothing more to do. But his thoughts—the simplest, clearest, and therefore most terrible thoughts—would give him no peace. He knew that tomorrow's battle would be the most terrible of all he had taken part in, and for the first time in his life the possibility of death presented itself to him—not in relation to any worldly matter or with reference to its effect on others, but simply in relation to himself, to his own soul—vividly, plainly, terribly, and almost as a certainty. And from the height of this perception all that had previously tormented and preoccupied Andrei suddenly became illumined by a cold white light without shadows, without perspective, without distinction of outline. All life appeared to him like magic-lantern pictures at

which he had long been gazing by artificial light through a glass. Now Andrei suddenly saw those badly daubed pictures in clear daylight and without a glass. “Yes, yes! There they are, those false images that agitated, enraptured, and tormented me,” said he to himself, passing in review the principal pictures of the magic lantern of life and regarding them now in the cold white daylight of his clear perception of death. “There they are, those rudely painted figures that once seemed splendid and mysterious. Glory, the good of society, love of a woman, the Fatherland itself—how important these pictures appeared to me, with what profound meaning they seemed to be filled! And it is all so simple, pale, and crude in the cold white light of this morning which I feel is dawning for me.” The three great sorrows of his life held his attention in particular: his love for a woman, his father’s death, and the French invasion which had overrun half Russia. “Love... that little Natasha who seemed to me brimming over with mystic forces! Yes, indeed, I loved Natasha. I made romantic plans of love and happiness with her! Oh, what a boy I was!” Andrei said aloud bitterly. “Ah me! I believed in some ideal love which was to keep her faithful to me for the whole year of my absence! Like the gentle dove in the fable she was to pine apart from me... But it was much simpler really... It was all very simple and horrible.”

“When my father built Bald Hills he thought the place was his: his land, his air, his peasants. But Napoleon came and swept him aside, unconscious of his existence, as he might brush a chip from his path, and his Bald Hills and his whole life fell to pieces. Marya says it is a trial sent from above. What is the trial for, when he is not here and will never return? My father is not here! For whom then is the trial intended? The Fatherland, the destruction of Moscow! And tomorrow I shall be killed, perhaps not even by a Frenchman but by one of our own men, by a soldier discharging a musket close to my ear as one of them did yesterday, and the French will come and take me by head and heels and fling me into a hole that I may not stink under their noses, and new conditions of life will arise, which will

seem quite ordinary to others and about which I shall know nothing. I shall not exist...”

Andrei looked at the row of birches shining in the sunshine, with their motionless green and yellow foliage and white bark. “To die... to be killed tomorrow... That I should not exist... That all this should still be, but no me...”

And the birches with their light and shade, the curly clouds, the smoke of the campfires, and all that was around him changed and seemed terrible and menacing. A cold shiver ran down his spine. Andrei rose quickly, went out of the shed, and began to walk about.

After Andrei had returned, voices were heard outside the shed. “Who’s that?” he cried.

The red-nosed Captain Timokhin, formerly Dolokhov’s squadron commander, but now from lack of officers a battalion commander, shyly entered the shed followed by an adjutant and the regimental paymaster.

Andrei rose hastily, listened to the business they had come about, gave them some further instructions, and was about to dismiss them when he heard a familiar, lisping, voice behind the shed.

“Devil take it!” said the voice of a man stumbling over something.

Andrei looked out of the shed and saw Pierre, who had tripped over a pole on the ground and had nearly fallen, coming his way. It was unpleasant to Andrei to meet people of his own set in general, and Pierre especially, for Pierre reminded him of all the painful moments of his last visit to Moscow.

“Pierre? What a surprise!” said Andrei. “What brings you here? This is unexpected!”

As Andrei said this his eyes and face expressed more than coldness—they expressed hostility, which Pierre noticed at once. Pierre had approached the shed full of animation, but on seeing Andrei’s face he felt constrained and ill at ease.

“I have come... simply... you know... come... it interests me,” said Pierre, who had so often that day senselessly repeated that word “interesting.” “I wish to see the battle.”

“Oh yes, and what do the Masonic brothers say about war? How would they stop it?” said Andrei sarcastically. “Well, and how’s Moscow? And my people? Have they reached Moscow at last?” Andrei asked seriously.

“Yes, they have. Julie told me so. I went to see your family, but missed them. They have gone to your estate near Moscow.”

The officers were about to take leave, but Andrei, apparently reluctant to be left alone with Pierre, asked them to stay and have tea. Seats were brought in and so was the tea. The officers gazed with surprise at Pierre’s huge stout figure and listened to his talk of Moscow and the position of our army, round which he had ridden. Andrei remained silent, and his expression was so forbidding that Pierre addressed his remarks chiefly to the good-natured battalion commander.

“So you understand the whole position of our troops?” Andrei interrupted him.

“Yes—that is, how do you mean?” said Pierre. “Not being a military man I can’t say I have understood it fully, but I understand the general position.”

“Well, then, you know more than anyone else, be it who it may,” said Andrei.

“Oh!” said Pierre, looking over his spectacles in perplexity at Andrei. “Well, and what do you think of Marshal Kutuzov’s appointment?” he asked.

“I was very glad of his appointment, that’s all I know,” replied Andrei.

“And tell me your opinion of the old Marshal, Barclay. In Moscow they are saying heaven knows what about him... What do you think of him?”

“Ask them,” replied Andrei, indicating the officers.

Pierre looked at Captain Timokhin with the condescendingly interrogative smile with which everybody involuntarily addressed that officer.

“We see light again, since Marshal Kutuzov has been appointed, Pierre,” said Captain Timokhin timidly, and continually turning to glance at his colonel.

“Why so?” asked Pierre.

“Well, to mention only firewood and fodder, let me inform you. Why, when we were retreating from Sventsýáni we dare not touch a stick or a wisp of hay or anything. You see, we were going away, so *he* would get it all; wasn’t it so, sir?” and again Captain Timokhin turned to Andrei. “But we daren’t. In our regiment two officers were court-martialed for that kind of thing. But when Marshal Kutuzov took command everything became straightforward. Now we see light...”

“Then why was it forbidden earlier, under Barclay?”

Captain Timokhin looked about in confusion, not knowing what or how to answer such a question. Pierre put the same question to Andrei.

“Why, so as not to lay waste the country we were abandoning to the enemy,” said Andrei with venomous irony. “It is very sound: one can’t permit the land to be pillaged and accustom the troops to marauding. At Smolénsk too Barclay judged correctly that the French might outflank us, as they had larger forces. But Barclay could not understand this,” cried Andrei in a shrill voice that seemed to escape him involuntarily: “he could not understand that there, for the first time, we were fighting for Russian soil, and that there was a spirit in the men such as I had never seen before, that we had held the French for two days, and that that success had increased our strength tenfold. Barclay ordered us to retreat, and all our efforts and losses went for nothing. He had no thought of betraying us, he tried to do the best he could, he thought out everything, and that is why he is unsuitable. Barclay is unsuitable now, just because he plans out everything

very thoroughly and accurately as every German has to. How can I explain?... Well, say your father has a German valet, and he is a splendid valet and satisfies your father's requirements better than you could, then it's all right to let him serve. But if your father is mortally sick you'll send the valet away and attend to your father with your own unpracticed, awkward hands, and will soothe him better than a skilled man who is a stranger could. So it has been with Barclay. While Russia was well, a foreigner like Barclay could serve her and be a splendid minister; but as soon as she is in danger she needs one of her own kin. But in your Club they have been making him out a traitor! They slander Barclay as a traitor, and the only result will be that afterwards, ashamed of their false accusations, they will make him out a hero or a genius instead of a traitor, and that will be still more unjust. He is an honest and very punctilious German."

"And they say Barclay is a skillful commander," rejoined Pierre.

"I don't understand what is meant by 'a skillful commander,'" replied Andrei ironically.

"A skillful commander?" replied Pierre. "Why, one who foresees all contingencies... and foresees the adversary's intentions."

"But that's impossible," said Andrei as if it were a matter settled long ago.

Pierre looked at him in surprise.

"And yet they say that war is like a game of chess?" Pierre remarked.

"Yes," replied Andrei, "but with this little difference, that in chess you may think over each move as long as you please and are not limited for time, and with this difference too, that a knight is always stronger than a pawn, and two pawns are always stronger than one, while in war a battalion is sometimes stronger than a division and sometimes weaker than a company. The relative strength of bodies of troops can never be known to anyone. Believe me," Andrei went on, "if things depended on arrangements made by the staff, I should be there making arrangements, but instead of

that I have the honor to serve here in the regiment with these gentlemen, and I consider that on us tomorrow's battle will depend and not on those others... Success never depends, and never will depend, on position, or equipment, or even on numbers, and least of all on position."

"But on what then?"

"On the feeling that is in me and in him," Andrei pointed to Captain Timokhin, "and in each soldier."

Andrei glanced at Captain Timokhin, who looked at Andrei in alarm and bewilderment. In contrast to his former reticent taciturnity Andrei now seemed excited. He could apparently not refrain from expressing the thoughts that had suddenly occurred to him.

"A battle is won by those who firmly resolve to win it! Why did we lose the battle at Austerlitz? The French losses were almost equal to ours, but very early we said to ourselves that we were losing the battle, and we did lose it. And we said so because we had nothing to fight for there, we wanted to get away from the battlefield as soon as we could. 'We've lost, so let us run,' and we ran. If we had not said that till the evening, heaven knows what might not have happened. But tomorrow we shan't say it! You talk about our position, the left flank weak and the right flank too extended," Andrei went on. "That's all nonsense, there's nothing of the kind. But what awaits us tomorrow? A hundred million most diverse chances which will be decided on the instant by the fact that our men or theirs run or do not run, and that this man or that man is killed, but all that is being done at present is only play. The fact is that those generals with whom you have ridden round the position not only do not help matters, but hinder. They are only concerned with their own petty interests."

"At such a moment?" said Pierre reproachfully.

"*At such a moment!*" Andrei repeated. "To generals it is only a moment affording opportunities to undermine a rival and obtain an extra cross or ribbon. For me tomorrow means this: a Russian army of a hundred thousand

and a French army of a hundred thousand have met to fight, and the thing is that these two hundred thousand men *will* fight and the side that fights more fiercely and spares itself least will win. And if you like I will tell you that whatever happens and whatever muddles those at the top may make, we shall win tomorrow's battle. Tomorrow, happen what may, we shall win!"

"There now, Andrei! That's the truth, the real truth," said Captain Timokhin. "Who would spare himself now? The soldiers in my battalion, believe me, wouldn't drink their vodka! 'It's not the day for that!' they say."

All were silent. The officers rose. Andrei went out of the shed with them, giving final orders to the adjutant. After they had gone Pierre approached Andrei and was about to start a conversation when they heard the clatter of three horses' hoofs on the road not far from the shed, and looking in that direction Andrei recognized Wolzogen and Clausewitz accompanied by a Cossack. They rode close by continuing to converse, and Andrei involuntarily heard these words:

"The war must be extended widely. I cannot sufficiently commend that view," said one of them.

"Oh, yes," said the other, *"the only aim is to weaken the enemy, so of course one cannot take into account the loss of private individuals."*

"Oh, no," agreed the other.

"Extend widely!" said Andrei with an angry snort, when they had ridden past. "In that 'extend' were my father, son, and sister, at Bald Hills. That's all the same to Barclay! That's what I was saying to you— Barclay and those other German gentlemen won't win the battle tomorrow but will only make all the mess they can, because they have nothing in their German heads but theories not worth an empty eggshell and haven't in their hearts the one thing needed tomorrow—that which Captain Timokhin has. Those generals have yielded up all Europe to *him*, and have now come to teach us. Fine teachers!" Again, Andrei's voice grew shrill.

"So you think we shall win tomorrow's battle?" asked Pierre.

“Yes, yes,” answered Andrei absently. “One thing I would do if I had the power,” Andrei began again, “I would not take prisoners. Why take prisoners? It’s chivalry! The French have destroyed my home and are on their way to destroy Moscow, they have outraged and are outraging me every moment. They are my enemies. In my opinion they are all criminals. And so thinks Captain Timokhin and the whole army. They should be executed! Since they are my foes they cannot be my friends, whatever may have been said at Tilsit.”

“Yes, yes,” muttered Pierre, looking with shining eyes at Andrei. “I quite agree with you!”

The question that had perturbed Pierre on the Mozháysk hill and all that day now seemed to him quite clear and completely solved. Pierre now understood the whole meaning and importance of this war and of the impending battle. All he had seen that day, all the significant and stern expressions on the faces he had seen in passing, were lit up for him by a new light. He understood that latent heat (as they say in physics) of patriotism which was present in all these men he had seen, and this explained to him why they all prepared for death calmly, and as it were lightheartedly.

“Not take prisoners,” Andrei continued: “That by itself would quite change the whole war and make it less cruel. As it is we have played at war—that’s what’s vile! We play at magnanimity and all that stuff. Such magnanimity and sensibility are like the magnanimity and sensibility of a lady who faints when she sees a calf being killed: she is so kindhearted that she can’t look at blood, but enjoys eating the calf served up with sauce. They talk to us of the rules of war, of chivalry, of flags of truce, of mercy to the unfortunate and so on. It’s all rubbish! I saw chivalry and flags of truce in 1805; they humbugged us and we humbugged them. They plunder other people’s houses, issue false paper money, and worst of all they kill my children and my father, and then talk of rules of war and magnanimity to

foes! Take no prisoners, but kill and be killed! He who has come to this as I have through the same sufferings..."

Andrei, who had thought it was all the same to him whether or not Moscow was taken as Smolénsk had been, was suddenly checked in his speech by an unexpected cramp in his throat. Andrei paced up and down a few times in silence, but his eyes glittered feverishly and his lips quivered as he began speaking.

"If there was none of this magnanimity in war, we should go to war only when it was worthwhile going to certain death, as now. Then there would not be war because Paul Ivanovich had offended Michael Ivanovich. And when there was a war, like this one, it would be war! And then the determination of the troops would be quite different. Then all these Westphalians and Hessians whom Napoleon is leading would not follow him into Russia, and we should not go to fight in Austria and Prussia without knowing why. War is not courtesy but the most horrible thing in life; and we ought to understand that and not play at war. We ought to accept this terrible necessity sternly and seriously. It all lies in that: get rid of falsehood and let war be war and not a game. As it is now, war is the favorite pastime of the idle and frivolous. The military calling is the most highly honored.

"But what is war? What is needed for success in warfare? What are the habits of the military? The aim of war is murder; the methods of war are spying, treachery, and their encouragement, the ruin of a country's inhabitants, robbing them or stealing to provision the army, and fraud and falsehood termed military craft. The habits of the military class are the absence of freedom, that is, discipline, idleness, ignorance, cruelty, debauchery, and drunkenness. And in spite of all this it is the highest class, respected by everyone. All the kings, except the Chinese, wear military uniforms, and he who kills most people receives the highest rewards.

“The leaders of countries meet, as we shall meet tomorrow, to murder one another; they kill and maim tens of thousands, and then have thanksgiving services for having killed so many people (they even exaggerate the number), and the countries’ leaders announce a victory, supposing that the more people they have killed the greater their achievement. How does God above look at these leaders and hear them?” exclaimed Andrei in a shrill, piercing voice. “Ah, my friend, it has of late become hard for me to live. I see that I have begun to understand too much. And it doesn’t do for man to taste of the tree of knowledge of good and evil... Ah, well, it’s not for long!” Andrei added.

“However, you’re sleepy, and it’s time for me to sleep. Go back to Górkí!” said Andrei suddenly.

“Oh no!” Pierre replied, looking at Andrei with frightened, compassionate eyes.

“Go, go! Before a battle one must have one’s sleep out,” repeated Andrei.

Andrei came quickly up to Pierre and embraced and kissed him. “Good-bye, be off!” he shouted. “Whether we meet again or not...” and turning away hurriedly he entered the shed.

It was already dark, and Pierre could not make out whether the expression of Andrei’s face was angry or tender.

For some time he stood in silence considering whether he should follow him or go away. “No, he does not want it!” Pierre concluded. “And I know that this is our last meeting!” Pierre sighed deeply and rode back to Górkí.

On re-entering the shed Andrei lay down on a rug, but he could not sleep.

Andrei closed his eyes. One picture succeeded another in his imagination. On one of them he dwelt long and joyfully. He vividly recalled an evening in St. Petersburg. Natasha with animated and excited face was telling him how she had gone to look for mushrooms the previous summer

and had lost her way in the big forest. She incoherently described the depths of the forest, her feelings, and a talk with a beekeeper she met, and constantly interrupted her story to say: “No, I can’t! I’m not telling it right; no, you don’t understand,” though he encouraged her by saying that he did understand, and he really had understood all she wanted to say. But Natasha was not satisfied with her own words: she felt that they did not convey the passionately poetic feeling she had experienced that day and wished to convey. “He was such a delightful old man, and it was so dark in the forest... and he had such kind... No, I can’t describe it,” Natasha had said, flushed and excited. Andrei smiled now the same happy smile as then when he had looked into her eyes. “I understood her,” Andrei thought. “I not only understood her, but it was just that inner, spiritual force, that sincerity, that frankness of soul—that very soul of hers which seemed to be fettered by her body—it was that soul I loved in her... loved so strongly and happily...” and suddenly Andrei remembered how his love had ended. “*He* did not need anything of that kind. *He* neither saw nor understood anything of the sort. Anatole only saw in her a pretty and *fresh* young girl, with whom he did not deign to unite his fate. And I?... and Anatole is still alive and gay!”

Andrei jumped up as if someone had burned him, and again began pacing up and down in front of the shed.

On August 25, the eve of the battle of Borodinó, Prefect Beausset arrived at Napoleon’s quarters at Valúevo with a colonel, the prefect from Paris and the colonel from Madrid.

Donning his court uniform, Prefect Beausset ordered a box he had brought for the Tzar to be carried before him and entered the first compartment of Napoleon’s tent, where he began opening the box while conversing with Napoleon’s aides-de-camp who surrounded him.

The colonel, not entering the tent, remained at the entrance talking to some generals of his acquaintance.

Napoleon had not yet left his bedroom and was finishing his toilet. Slightly snorting and grunting, he presented now his back and now his plump hairy chest to the brush with which his valet was rubbing him down. Another valet, with his finger over the mouth of a bottle, was sprinkling Eau de Cologne on the Napoleon's pampered body with an expression which seemed to say that he alone knew where and how much Eau de Cologne should be sprinkled. Napoleon's short hair was wet and matted on the forehead, but his face, though puffy and yellow, expressed physical satisfaction. "Go on, harder, go on!" he muttered to the valet who was rubbing him, slightly twitching and grunting. An aide-de-camp, who had entered the bedroom to report to Napoleon the number of prisoners taken in yesterday's action, was standing by the door after delivering his message, awaiting permission to withdraw. Napoleon, frowning, looked at him from under his brows.

"No prisoners!" said Napoleon, repeating the aide-de-camp's words. "They are forcing us to exterminate them. So much the worse for the Russian army... Go on... harder, harder!" he muttered, hunching his back and presenting his fat shoulders.

"All right. Let Prefect Beausset enter, and the colonel too," Napoleon said, nodding to the aide-de-camp.

"Yes, sire," and the aide-de-camp disappeared through the door of the tent.

Two valets rapidly dressed Napoleon, and wearing the blue uniform of the Guards he went with firm quick steps to the reception room.

Prefect Beausset's hands meanwhile were busily engaged arranging the present he had brought from Napoleon's wife, on two chairs directly in front of the entrance. But Napoleon had dressed and come out with such unexpected rapidity that he had not time to finish arranging the surprise.

Napoleon noticed at once what they were about and guessed that they were not ready. Napoleon did not wish to deprive them of the pleasure of

giving him a surprise, so he pretended not to see Prefect Beausset and called the colonel to him, listening silently and with a stern frown to what the colonel told him of the heroism and devotion of his troops fighting at Salamanca, at the other end of Europe, with but one thought—to be worthy of their Tzar—and but one fear—to fail to please him. The result of that battle had been deplorable. Napoleon made ironic remarks during Fabvier's account, as if he had not expected that matters could go otherwise in his absence.

"I must make up for that in Moscow," said Napoleon. "I'll see you later, colonel," he added, and summoned Prefect Beausset, who by that time had prepared the surprise, having placed something on the chairs and covered it with a cloth.

Prefect Beausset bowed low, with that courtly French bow which only the old retainers of the Bourbons knew how to make, and approached him, presenting an envelope.

Napoleon turned to him gaily and pulled his ear.

"You have hurried here. I am very glad. Well, what is Paris saying?" Napoleon asked, suddenly changing his former stern expression for a most cordial tone.

"Sire, all Paris regrets your absence," replied Prefect Beausset as was proper.

But though Napoleon knew that Prefect Beausset had to say something of this kind, and though in his lucid moments he knew it was untrue, he was pleased to hear it from him. Again he honored him by touching his ear.

"I am very sorry to have made you travel so far," said Napoleon.

"Sire, I expected nothing less than to find you at the gates of Moscow," replied Prefect Beausset.

Napoleon smiled and, lifting his head absent-mindedly, glanced to the right. An aide-de-camp approached with gliding steps and offered him a gold snuffbox, which he took.

“Yes, it has happened luckily for you,” he said, raising the open snuffbox to his nose. “You are fond of travel, and in three days you will see Moscow. You surely did not expect to see that Asiatic capital. You will have a pleasant journey.”

Prefect Beausset bowed gratefully at this regard for his taste for travel (of which he had not till then been aware).

“Ha, what’s this?” asked Napoleon, noticing that all the courtiers were looking at something concealed under a cloth.

With courtly adroitness Prefect Beausset half turned and without turning his back to the Tzar retired two steps, twitching off the cloth at the same time, and said:

“A present to Napoleon from your wife.”

It was a portrait, painted in bright colors by Général Gérard, of the son borne to Napoleon by the daughter of the Emperor of Austria, the boy whom for some reason everyone called “The King of Rome.”

A very pretty curly-headed boy with a look of the Christ in the Sistine Madonna was depicted playing at stick and ball. The ball represented the terrestrial globe and the stick in his other hand a scepter.

Though it was not clear what the artist meant to express by depicting the so-called King of Rome spiking the earth with a stick, the allegory apparently seemed to Napoleon, as it had done to all who had seen it in Paris, quite clear and very pleasing.

“The King of Rome!” Napoleon said, pointing to the portrait with a graceful gesture. “Admirable!”

With the natural capacity of an Italian for changing the expression of his face at will, Napoleon drew nearer to the portrait and assumed a look of pensive tenderness. He felt that what he now said and did would be historical, and it seemed to him that it would now be best for him—whose grandeur enabled his son to play stick and ball with the terrestrial globe—to show, in contrast to that grandeur, the simplest paternal tenderness.

Napoleon's eyes grew dim, he moved forward, glanced round at a chair (which seemed to place itself under him), and sat down on it before the portrait. At a single gesture from him everyone went out on tiptoe, leaving the great man to himself and his emotion.

Having sat still for a while Napoleon touched—himself not knowing why—the thick spot of paint representing the highest light in the portrait, rose, and recalled Prefect Beausset and the officer on duty. He ordered the portrait to be carried outside his tent, that the Old Guard, stationed round it, might not be deprived of the pleasure of seeing the King of Rome, the son and heir of their adored monarch.

And while he was doing Prefect Beausset the honor of breakfasting with him, they heard, as Napoleon had anticipated, the rapturous cries of the officers and men of the Old Guard who had run up to see the portrait.

“Long live Napoleon! Long live the King of Rome! Long live Napoleon!” came those ecstatic cries.

After breakfast, Napoleon, in Prefect Beausset's presence dictated his order of the day to the army.

“Short and energetic!” Napoleon remarked when he had read over the proclamation which he had dictated straight off without corrections. It ran:

Soldiers! This is the battle you have so longed for. Victory depends on you. It is essential for us; it will give us all we need: comfortable quarters and a speedy return to our country. Behave as you did at Austerlitz, Friedland, Vítebsk, and Smolénsk. Let our remotest posterity recall your achievements this day with pride. Let it be said of each of you: “He was in the great battle before Moscow!”

“Before Moscow!” repeated Napoleon, and inviting Prefect Beausset, who was so fond of travel, to accompany him on his ride, he went out of the tent to where the horses stood saddled.

“Your Majesty is too kind!” replied Prefect Beausset to the invitation to accompany the Tzar; he wanted to sleep, did not know how to ride and was

afraid of doing so.

But Napoleon nodded to the traveler, and Prefect Beausset had to mount. When Napoleon came out of the tent the shouting of the Guards before his son's portrait grew still louder. Napoleon frowned.

"Take him away!" Napoleon said, pointing with a gracefully majestic gesture to the portrait. "It is too soon for him to see a field of battle."

Prefect Beausset closed his eyes, bowed his head, and sighed deeply, to indicate how profoundly he valued and comprehended the Tzar's words.

On the twenty-fifth of August, so his historians tell us, Napoleon spent the whole day on horseback inspecting the locality, considering plans submitted to him by his generals, and personally giving commands to his generals.

The original line of the Russian forces along the river Kolochá had been dislocated by the capture of the Shevárdino Redoubt on the twenty-fourth, and part of the line—the left flank—had been drawn back. That part of the line was not entrenched and in front of it the ground was more open and level than elsewhere. It was evident to anyone, military or not, that it was here the French should attack. It would seem that not much consideration was needed to reach this conclusion, nor any particular care or trouble on the part of the Tzar and his generals, nor was there any need of that special and supreme quality called genius that people are so apt to ascribe to Napoleon; yet the historians who described the event later and the men who then surrounded Napoleon, and he himself, thought otherwise.

Napoleon rode over the plain and surveyed the locality with a profound air and in silence, nodded with approval or shook his head dubiously, and without communicating to the generals around him the profound course of ideas which guided his decisions merely gave them his final conclusions in the form of commands. Having listened to a suggestion from War Minister Davout to turn the Russian left wing, Napoleon said it should not be done, without explaining why not. To a proposal made by Général Campan (who

was to attack the *entrenchments*) to lead his division through the woods, Napoleon agreed, though the so-called Duke of Elchingen (Général Ney) ventured to remark that a movement through the woods was dangerous and might disorder the division.

Having inspected the country opposite the Shevárdino Redoubt, Napoleon pondered a little in silence and then indicated the spots where two batteries should be set up by the morrow to act against the Russian entrenchments, and the places where, in line with them, the field artillery should be placed.

After giving these and other commands Napoleon returned to his tent, and the dispositions for the battle were written down from his dictation.

These dispositions, of which the French historians write with enthusiasm and other historians with profound respect, were as follows:

At dawn the two new batteries established during the night on the plain occupied by War Minister Davout will open fire on the opposing batteries of the enemy.

At the same time the commander of the artillery of the 1st Corps, Perneti, with thirty cannons of Général Campan's division and all the howitzers of Général Dessaix's and Général Friant's divisions, will move forward, open fire, and overwhelm with shellfire the enemy's battery, against which will operate:

24 guns of the artillery of the Guards

30 guns of Campan's division

and 8 guns of Général Friant's and Général Dessaix's divisions

—

in all, 62 guns.

The commander of the artillery of the 3rd Corps, Fouche, will place the howitzers of the 3rd and 8th Corps, sixteen in all, on the flanks of the battery that is to bombard the entrenchment on the left, which will have forty guns in all directed against it.

Général Sorbier must be ready at the first order to advance with all the howitzers of the Guard's artillery against either one or other of the entrenchments.

During the cannonade Général Poniatowski is to advance through the wood on the village and turn the enemy's position.

General Campan will move through the wood to seize the first fortification.

After the advance has begun in this manner, orders will be given in accordance with the enemy's movements.

The cannonade on the left flank will begin as soon as the guns of the right wing are heard. The sharpshooters of Général Morand's division and of Général Murat's division will open a heavy fire on seeing the attack commence on the right wing.

Général Murat will occupy the village and cross by its three bridges, advancing to the same heights as Général Morand's and Général Gibrard's divisions, which under his leadership will be directed against the redoubt and come into line with the rest of the forces.

All this must be done in good order as far as possible retaining troops in reserve.

The Imperial Camp near Mozháysk,
September, 6, 1812.

These dispositions, which are very obscure and confused if one allows oneself to regard the arrangements without religious awe of his genius, related to Napoleon's orders to deal with four points—four different orders. Not one of these was, or could be, carried out.

In the disposition it is said first *that the batteries placed on the spot chosen by Napoleon, with the guns of Général Pernetti and Général Fouché; which were to come in line with them, 102 guns in all, were to open fire and shower shells on the Russian entrenchments and*

redoubts. This could not be done, as from the spots selected by Napoleon the projectiles did not carry to the Russian works, and those 102 guns shot into the air until the nearest commander, contrary to Napoleon's instructions, moved them forward.

The second order was that *Général Poniatowski, moving to the village through the wood, should turn the Russian left flank*. This could not be done and was not done, because Général Poniatowski, advancing on the village through the wood, met Túchkov there barring his way, and could not and did not turn the Russian position.

The third order was: *Général Campan will move through the wood to seize the first fortification*. Général Campan's division did not seize the first fortification but was driven back, for on emerging from the wood it had to reform under grapeshot, of which Napoleon was unaware.

The fourth order was: *Général Murat will occupy the village (Borodinó) and cross by its three bridges, advancing to the same heights as Général Morand's and Général Gérard's divisions* (for whose movements no directions are given), *which under his leadership will be directed against the redoubt and come into line with the rest of the forces*.

As far as one can make out, not so much from this unintelligible sentence as from the attempts Général Murat made to execute the orders given him, Général Murat was to advance from the left through Borodinó to the redoubt while the divisions of Général Morand and Général Gérard were to advance simultaneously from the front.

All this, like the other parts of the disposition, was not and could not be executed. After passing through Borodinó, Général Murat was driven back to the Kolochá and could get no farther; while the divisions of Général Morand and Général Gérard did not take the redoubt but were driven back, and the redoubt was only taken at the end of the battle by the cavalry (a thing probably unforeseen and not heard of by Napoleon). So not one of the orders in the disposition was, or could be, executed. But in the disposition it

is said that, *after the fight has commenced in this manner, orders will be given in accordance with the enemy's movements*, and so it might be supposed that all necessary arrangements would be made by Napoleon during the battle. But this was not and could not be done, for during the whole battle Napoleon was so far away that, as appeared later, he could not know the course of the battle and not one of his orders during the fight could be executed.

Many historians say that the French did not win the battle of Borodinó because Napoleon had a cold, and that if he had not had a cold the orders he gave before and during the battle would have been still more full of genius and Russia would have been lost and the face of the world have been changed. To historians who believe that Russia was shaped by the will of one man—Peter the Great—and that France from a republic became an empire and French armies went to Russia at the will of one man—Napoleon—to say that Russia remained a power because Napoleon had a bad cold on the twenty-fourth of August may seem logical and convincing.

If it had depended on Napoleon's will to fight or not to fight the battle of Borodinó, and if this or that other arrangement depended on his will, then evidently a cold affecting the manifestation of his will might have saved Russia, and consequently the valet who omitted to bring Napoleon his waterproof boots on the twenty-fourth would have been the savior of Russia. Along that line of thought such a deduction is indubitable, as indubitable as the deduction Voltaire made in jest (without knowing what he was jesting at) when he saw that the Massacre of St. Bartholomew was due to Charles IX's stomach being deranged. But to men who do not admit that Russia was formed by the will of one man, Peter I, or that the French Empire was formed and the war with Russia begun by the will of one man, Napoleon, that argument seems not merely untrue and irrational, but contrary to all human reality. To the question of what causes historic events another answer presents itself, namely, that the course of human events is

predetermined from on high—depends on the coincidence of the wills of all who take part in the events, and that a Napoleon's influence on the course of these events is purely external and fictitious.

Strange as at first glance it may seem to suppose that the Massacre of St. Bartholomew was not due to Charles IX's will, though he gave the order for it and thought it was done as a result of that order; and strange as it may seem to suppose that the slaughter of eighty thousand men at Borodinó was not due to Napoleon's will, though he ordered the commencement and conduct of the battle and thought it was done because he ordered it; strange as these suppositions appear, yet human dignity—which tells me that each of us is, if not more at least not less a man than the great Napoleon—demands the acceptance of that solution of the question, and historic investigation abundantly confirms it.

At the battle of Borodinó Napoleon shot at no one and killed no one. That was all done by the soldiers. Therefore it was not he who killed people.

The French soldiers went to kill and be killed at the battle of Borodinó not because of Napoleon's orders but by their own volition. The whole army—French, Italian, German, Polish, and Dutch—hungry, ragged, and weary of the campaign, felt at the sight of an army blocking their road to Moscow that the wine was drawn and must be drunk. Had Napoleon then forbidden them to fight the Russians, they would have killed him and have proceeded to fight the Russians because it was inevitable.

When they heard Napoleon's proclamation offering them, as compensation for mutilation and death, the words of posterity about their having been in the battle before Moscow, they cried "*Long live Napoleon!*" just as they had cried "*Long live Napoleon!*" at the sight of the portrait of the boy piercing the terrestrial globe with a toy stick, and just as they would have cried "*Long live Napoleon!*" at any nonsense that might be told them. There was nothing left for them to do but cry "*Long live*

Napoleon!” and go to fight, in order to get food and rest as conquerors in Moscow. So it was not because of Napoleon’s commands that they killed their fellow men.

And it was not Napoleon who directed the course of the battle, for none of his orders were executed and during the battle he did not know what was going on before him. So the way in which these people killed one another was not decided by Napoleon’s will but occurred independently of him, in accord with the will of hundreds of thousands of people who took part in the common action. It *only seemed* to Napoleon that it all took place by his will. And so the question whether he had or had not a cold has no more historic interest than the cold of the least of the transport soldiers.

Moreover, the assertion made by various writers that Napoleon’s cold was the cause of his dispositions not being as well-planned as on former occasions, and of his orders during the battle not being as good as previously, is quite baseless, which again shows that Napoleon’s cold on the twenty-sixth of August was unimportant.

The dispositions cited above are not at all worse, but are even better, than previous dispositions by which Napoleon had won victories. His pseudo-orders during the battle were also no worse than formerly, but much the same as usual. These dispositions and orders only seem worse than previous ones because the battle of Borodinó was the first Napoleon did not win. The profoundest and most excellent dispositions and orders seem very bad, and every learned militarist criticizes them with looks of importance, when they relate to a battle that has been lost, and the very worst dispositions and orders seem very good, and serious people fill whole volumes to demonstrate their merits, when they relate to a battle that has been won.

The dispositions drawn up by General Weyrother for the battle of Austerlitz were a model of perfection for that kind of composition, but still

they were criticized—criticized for their very perfection, for their excessive minuteness.

Napoleon at the battle of Borodinó fulfilled his office as representative of authority as well as, and even better than, at other battles. Napoleon did nothing harmful to the progress of the battle; he inclined to the most reasonable opinions, he made no confusion, did not contradict himself, did not get frightened or run away from the field of battle, but with his great tact and military experience carried out his role of appearing to command, calmly and with dignity.

On returning from a second inspection of the lines, Napoleon remarked: “The chessmen are set up, the game will begin tomorrow!”

Having ordered punch and summoned Prefect Beausset, he began to talk to him about Paris and about some changes he meant to make in the Empress’ household, surprising the prefect by his memory of minute details relating to the court.

He showed an interest in trifles, joked about Prefect Beausset’s love of travel, and chatted carelessly, as a famous, self-confident surgeon who knows his job does when turning up his sleeves and putting on his apron while a patient is being strapped to the operating table. “The matter is in my hands and is clear and definite in my head. When the time comes to set to work I shall do it as no one else could, but now I can jest, and the more I jest and the calmer I am the more tranquil and confident you ought to be, and the more amazed at my genius.”

Having finished his second glass of punch, Napoleon went to rest before the serious business which, he considered, awaited him the next day. He was so much interested in that task that he was unable to sleep, and in spite of his cold which had grown worse from the dampness of the evening, he went into the large division of the tent at three o’clock in the morning, loudly blowing his nose. Napoleon asked whether the Russians had not

withdrawn, and was told that the enemy's fires were still in the same places. He nodded approval.

The adjutant in attendance came into the tent.

"Well, Adjutant Rapp, do you think we shall do good business today?" Napoleon asked him.

"Without doubt, sire," replied Adjutant Rapp.

Napoleon looked at him.

"Do you remember, sire, what you did me the honor to say at Smolénsk?" continued Rapp. "The wine is drawn and must be drunk."

Napoleon frowned and sat silent for a long time leaning his head on his hand.

"This poor army!" Napoleon suddenly remarked. "It has diminished greatly since Smolénsk. Fortune is frankly a courtesan, Rapp. I have always said so and I am beginning to experience it. But the Guards, Rapp, the Guards are intact?" he remarked interrogatively.

"Yes, sire," replied Adjutant Rapp.

Napoleon took a lozenge, put it in his mouth, and glanced at his watch. He was not sleepy and it was still not nearly morning. It was impossible to give further orders for the sake of killing time, for the orders had all been given and were now being executed.

"Have the biscuits and rice been served out to the regiments of the Guards?" asked Napoleon sternly.

"Yes, sire."

"The rice too?"

Adjutant Rapp replied that he had given the Tzar's order about the rice, but Napoleon shook his head in dissatisfaction as if not believing that his order had been executed. An attendant came in with punch. Napoleon ordered another glass to be brought for Rapp, and silently sipped his own.

"I have neither taste nor smell," Napoleon remarked, sniffing at his glass. "This cold is tiresome. They talk about medicine—what is the good

of medicine when it can't cure a cold! Corvisart gave me these lozenges but they don't help at all. What can doctors cure? One can't cure anything. Our body is a machine for living. It is organized for that, it is its nature. Let life go on in it unhindered and let it defend itself, it will do more than if you paralyze it by encumbering it with remedies. Our body is like a perfect watch that should go for a certain time; the watchmaker cannot open it, he can only adjust it by fumbling, and that blindfold... Yes, our body is just a machine for living, that is all."

And having entered on the path of definition, of which he was fond, Napoleon suddenly and unexpectedly gave a new one.

"Do you know, Adjutant Rapp, what military art is?" asked he. "It is the art of being stronger than the enemy at a given moment. That's all."

Adjutant Rapp made no reply.

"Tomorrow we shall have to deal with Marshal Kutuzov!" said Napoleon. "We shall see! Do you remember at Braunau he commanded an army for three weeks and did not once mount a horse to inspect his entrenchments... We shall see!"

Napoleon looked at his watch. It was still only four o'clock. He did not feel sleepy. The punch was finished and there was still nothing to do. He rose, walked to and fro, put on a warm overcoat and a hat, and went out of the tent. The night was dark and damp, a scarcely perceptible moisture was descending from above. Nearby, the campfires were dimly burning among the French Guards, and in the distance those of the Russian line shone through the smoke. The weather was calm, and the rustle and tramp of the French troops already beginning to move to take up their positions were clearly audible.

Napoleon walked about in front of his tent, looked at the fires and listened to these sounds, and as he was passing a tall guardsman in a shaggy cap, who was standing sentinel before his tent and had drawn himself up like a black pillar at sight of the Tzar, Napoleon stopped in front of him.

“What year did you enter the service?” Napoleon asked with that affectation of military bluntness and geniality with which he always addressed the soldiers.

The guardsman answered the question.

“Ah! One of the old ones! Has your regiment had its rice?”

“It has, Your Majesty.”

Napoleon nodded and walked away.

At half-past five Napoleon rode to the village of Shevárdino.

It was growing light, the sky was clearing, only a single cloud lay in the east. The abandoned campfires were burning themselves out in the faint morning light.

On the right a single deep report of a cannon resounded and died away in the prevailing silence. Some minutes passed. A second and a third report shook the air, then a fourth and a fifth boomed solemnly nearby on the right.

The first shots had not yet ceased to reverberate before others rang out and yet more were heard mingling with and overtaking one another.

Napoleon with his suite rode up to the Shevárdino Redoubt where he dismounted. The game had begun.

On returning to Górkí after having seen Andrei, Pierre ordered his groom to get the horses ready and to call him early in the morning, and then immediately fell asleep behind a partition in a corner Boris had given up to him.

Before Pierre was thoroughly awake next morning everybody had already left the hut. The panes were rattling in the little windows and his groom was shaking him.

“Your excellency! Your excellency! Your excellency!” Pierre’s groom kept repeating pertinaciously while he shook Pierre by the shoulder without looking at him, having apparently lost hope of getting him to wake up.

“What? Has it begun? Is it time?” Pierre asked, waking up.

“Hear the firing,” said Pierre’s groom, a discharged soldier. “All the gentlemen have gone out, and his Serene Highness himself rode past long ago.”

Pierre dressed hastily and ran out to the porch. Outside all was bright, fresh, dewy, and cheerful. The sun, just bursting forth from behind a cloud that had concealed it, was shining, with rays still half broken by the clouds, over the roofs of the street opposite, on the dew-besprinkled dust of the road, on the walls of the houses, on the windows, the fence, and on Pierre’s horses standing before the hut. The roar of guns sounded more distinct outside. An adjutant accompanied by a Cossack passed by at a sharp trot.

“It’s time, Pierre; it’s time!” cried the adjutant.

Telling the groom to follow him with the horses, Pierre went down the street to the knoll from which he had looked at the field of battle the day before. A crowd of military men was assembled there, members of the staff could be heard conversing in French, and Marshal Kutuzov’s gray head in a white cap with a red band was visible, his gray nape sunk between his shoulders. Marshal Kutuzov was looking through a field glass down the highroad before him.

Mounting the steps to the knoll Pierre looked at the scene before him, spellbound by beauty. It was the same panorama he had admired from that spot the day before, but now the whole place was full of troops and covered by smoke clouds from the guns, and the slanting rays of the bright sun, rising slightly to the left behind Pierre, cast upon it through the clear morning air penetrating streaks of rosy, golden-tinted light and long dark shadows. The forest at the farthest extremity of the panorama seemed carved in some precious stone of a yellowish-green color; its undulating outline was silhouetted against the horizon and was pierced beyond Valúevo by the Smolénsk highroad crowded with troops. Nearer at hand glittered golden cornfields interspersed with groves. There were troops to be seen

everywhere, in front and to the right and left. All this was vivid, majestic, and unexpected; but what impressed Pierre most of all was the view of the battlefield itself, of Borodinó and the hollows on both sides of the Kolochá.

Above the Kolochá, in Borodinó and on both sides of it, especially to the left where the Vóyna flowing between its marshy banks falls into the Kolochá, a mist had spread which seemed to melt, to dissolve, and to become translucent when the brilliant sun appeared and magically colored and outlined everything. The smoke of the guns mingled with this mist, and over the whole expanse and through that mist the rays of the morning sun were reflected, flashing back like lightning from the water, from the dew, and from the bayonets of the troops crowded together by the riverbanks and in Borodinó. A white church could be seen through the mist, and here and there the roofs of huts in Borodinó as well as dense masses of soldiers, or green ammunition chests and ordnance. And all this moved, or seemed to move, as the smoke and mist spread out over the whole space. Just as in the mist-enveloped hollow near Borodinó, so along the entire line outside and above it and especially in the woods and fields to the left, in the valleys and on the summits of the high ground, clouds of powder smoke seemed continually to spring up out of nothing, now singly, now several at a time, some translucent, others dense, which, swelling, growing, rolling, and blending, extended over the whole expanse.

These puffs of smoke and (strange to say) the sound of the firing produced the chief beauty of the spectacle.

“*Puff!*”—suddenly a round compact cloud of smoke was seen merging from violet into gray and milky white, and “*boom!*” came the report a second later.

“*Puff! puff!*”—and two clouds arose pushing one another and blending together; and “*boom, boom!*” came the sounds confirming what the eye had seen.

Pierre glanced round at the first cloud, which he had seen as a round compact ball, and in its place already were balloons of smoke floating to one side, and—“*puff*” (with a pause)—“*puff, puff!*” three and then four more appeared and then from each, with the same interval—“*boom—boom, boom!*” came the fine, firm, precise sounds in reply. It seemed as if those smoke clouds sometimes ran and sometimes stood still while woods, fields, and glittering bayonets ran past them. From the left, over fields and bushes, those large balls of smoke were continually appearing followed by their solemn reports, while nearer still, in the hollows and woods, there burst from the muskets small cloudlets that had no time to become balls, but had their little echoes in just the same way. “*Trakh-ta-ta-takh!*” came the frequent crackle of musketry, but it was irregular and feeble in comparison with the reports of the cannon.

Pierre wished to be there with that smoke, those shining bayonets, that movement, and those sounds. He turned to look at Marshal Kutuzov and his suite, to compare his impressions with those of others. They were all looking at the field of battle as he was, and, as it seemed to him, with the same feelings. All their faces were now shining with that latent warmth of feeling Pierre had noticed the day before and had fully understood after his talk with Andrei.

“Go, my dear fellow, go... and Christ be with you!” Marshal Kutuzov was saying to a general who stood beside him, not taking his eye from the battlefield.

Having received this order the general passed by Pierre on his way down the knoll.

“To the crossing!” said the general coldly and sternly in reply to one of the staff who asked where he was going.

“I’ll go there too, I too!” thought Pierre, and followed the general.

The general mounted a horse that a Cossack had brought him. Pierre went to his groom who was holding his horses and, asking which was the

quietest, clambered onto it, seized it by the mane, and turning out his toes pressed his heels against its sides and, feeling that his spectacles were slipping off but unable to let go of the mane and reins, he galloped after the general, causing the staff officers to smile as they watched him from the knoll.

Having descended the hill, the general after whom Pierre was galloping turned sharply to the left, and Pierre, losing sight of him, galloped in among some ranks of infantry marching ahead of him. Pierre tried to pass either in front of them or to the right or left, but there were soldiers everywhere, all with the same preoccupied expression and busy with some unseen but evidently important task. They all gazed with the same dissatisfied and inquiring expression at this stout man in a white hat, who for some unknown reason threatened to trample them under his horse's hoofs.

"Why ride into the middle of the battalion?" one of them shouted at Pierre.

Another prodded Pierre's horse with the butt end of a musket, and Pierre, bending over his saddlebow and hardly able to control his shying horse, galloped ahead of the soldiers where there was a free space.

There was a bridge ahead of him, where other soldiers stood firing. Pierre rode up to them. Without being aware of it he had come to the bridge across the Kolochá between Górkí and Borodinó, which the French (having occupied Borodinó) were attacking in the first phase of the battle. Pierre saw that there was a bridge in front of him and that soldiers were doing something on both sides of it and in the meadow, among the rows of new-mown hay which he had taken no notice of amid the smoke of the campfires the day before; but despite the incessant firing going on there he had no idea that this was the field of battle. Pierre did not notice the sound of the bullets whistling from every side, or the projectiles that flew over him, did not see the enemy on the other side of the river, and for a long time

did not notice the killed and wounded, though many fell near him. He looked about him with a smile which did not leave his face.

“Why’s that fellow in front of the line?” shouted somebody at Pierre again.

“To the left!... Keep to the right!” the men shouted to him.

Pierre went to the right, and unexpectedly encountered one of Raévski’s adjutants whom he knew. The adjutant looked angrily at him, evidently also intending to shout at him, but on recognizing Pierre, he nodded.

“How have you got here?” the adjutant said, and galloped on.

Pierre, feeling out of place there, having nothing to do, and afraid of getting in someone’s way again, galloped after the adjutant.

“What’s happening here? May I come with you?” Pierre asked.

“One moment, one moment!” replied the adjutant, and riding up to a stout colonel who was standing in the meadow, the adjutant gave him some message and then addressed Pierre.

“Why have you come here, Pierre?” he asked with a smile. “Still inquisitive?”

“Yes, yes,” assented Pierre.

But the adjutant turned his horse about and rode on.

“Here it’s tolerable,” said the adjutant, “but with Major-General Bagration on the left flank they’re getting it frightfully hot.”

“Really?” said Pierre. “Where is that?”

“Come along with me to our knoll. We can get a view from there and in our battery it is still bearable,” said the adjutant. “Will you come?”

“Yes, I’ll come with you,” replied Pierre, looking round for his groom.

It was only now that he noticed wounded men staggering along or being carried on stretchers. On that very meadow he had ridden over the day before, a soldier was lying athwart the rows of scented hay, with his head thrown awkwardly back and his shako off.

“Why haven’t they carried him away?” Pierre was about to ask, but seeing the stern expression of the adjutant who was also looking that way, he checked himself.

Pierre did not find his groom and rode along the hollow with the adjutant to Raévski’s Redoubt. His horse lagged behind the adjutant’s and jolted him at every step.

“You don’t seem to be used to riding, Pierre?” remarked the adjutant.

“No it’s not that, but my horses action seems so jerky,” said Pierre in a puzzled tone.

“Why... she’s wounded!” said the adjutant. “In the off foreleg above the knee. A bullet, no doubt. I congratulate you, Pierre, on your baptism of fire!”

Having ridden in the smoke past the Sixth Corps, behind the artillery which had been moved forward and was in action, deafening them with the noise of firing, they came to a small wood. There it was cool and quiet, with a scent of autumn. Pierre and the adjutant dismounted and walked up the hill on foot.

“Is the general here?” asked the adjutant on reaching the knoll.

“He was here a minute ago but has just gone that way,” someone told him, pointing to the right.

The adjutant looked at Pierre as if puzzled what to do with him now.

“Don’t trouble about me,” said Pierre. “I’ll go up onto the knoll if I may?”

“Yes, do. You’ll see everything from there and it’s less dangerous, and I’ll come for you.”

Pierre went to the battery and the adjutant rode on. They did not meet again, and only much later did Pierre learn that he lost an arm that day.

The knoll to which Pierre ascended was that famous one afterwards known to the Russians as the Knoll Battery or Raévski’s Redoubt, and to the French as *the big redoubt, the fatal redoubt, the center redoubt*, around

which tens of thousands fell, and which the French regarded as the key to the whole position.

This redoubt consisted of a knoll, on three sides of which trenches had been dug. Within the entrenchment stood ten guns that were being fired through openings in the earthwork.

In line with the knoll on both sides stood other guns which also fired incessantly. A little behind the guns stood infantry. When ascending that knoll Pierre had no notion that this spot, on which small trenches had been dug and from which a few guns were firing, was the most important point of the battle.

On the contrary, just because he happened to be there he thought it one of the least significant parts of the field.

Having reached the knoll, Pierre sat down at one end of a trench surrounding the battery and gazed at what was going on around him with an unconsciously happy smile. Occasionally he rose and walked about the battery still with that same smile, trying not to obstruct the soldiers who were loading, hauling the guns, and continually running past him with bags and charges. The guns of that battery were being fired continually one after another with a deafening roar, enveloping the whole neighborhood in powder smoke.

In contrast with the dread felt by the infantrymen placed in support, here in the battery where a small number of men busy at their work were separated from the rest by a trench, everyone experienced a common and as it were family feeling of animation.

The intrusion of Pierre's nonmilitary figure in a white hat made an unpleasant impression at first. The soldiers looked askance at him with surprise and even alarm as they went past him. The senior artillery officer, a tall, long-legged, pockmarked man, moved over to Pierre as if to see the action of the farthest gun and looked at him with curiosity.

A young round-faced officer, quite a boy still and evidently only just out of the Cadet College, who was zealously commanding the two guns entrusted to him, addressed Pierre sternly.

“Sir,” he said, “permit me to ask you to stand aside. You must not be here.”

The soldiers shook their heads disapprovingly as they looked at Pierre. But when they had convinced themselves that this man in the white hat was doing no harm, but either sat quietly on the slope of the trench with a shy smile or, politely making way for the soldiers, paced up and down the battery under fire as calmly as if he were on a boulevard, their feeling of hostile distrust gradually began to change into a kindly and bantering sympathy, such as soldiers feel for their dogs, cocks, goats, and in general for the animals that live with the regiment. The men soon accepted Pierre into their family, adopted him, gave him a nickname (“our gentleman”), and made kindly fun of him among themselves.

A shell tore up the earth two paces from Pierre and he looked around with a smile as he brushed from his clothes some earth it had thrown up.

“And how’s it you’re not afraid, sir, really now?” a red-faced, broad-shouldered soldier asked Pierre, with a grin that disclosed a set of sound, white teeth.

“Are you afraid, then?” said Pierre.

“What else do you expect?” answered the soldier. “She has no mercy, you know! When she comes spluttering down, out go your innards. One can’t help being afraid,” he said laughing.

Several of the men, with bright kindly faces, stopped beside Pierre. They seemed not to have expected him to talk like anybody else, and the discovery that he did so delighted them.

“It’s the business of us soldiers. But in a gentleman it’s wonderful! There’s a gentleman for you!”

“To your places!” cried the young officer to the men gathered round Pierre.

The young officer was evidently exercising his duties for the first or second time and therefore treated both his superiors and the men with great precision and formality.

The booming cannonade and the fusillade of musketry were growing more intense over the whole field, especially to the left where Major-General Bagration’s *entrenchments* were, but where Pierre was the smoke of the firing made it almost impossible to distinguish anything. Moreover, Pierre’s whole attention was engrossed by watching the family circle—separated from all else—formed by the men in the battery. Pierre’s first unconscious feeling of joyful animation produced by the sights and sounds of the battlefield was now replaced by another, especially since he had seen that soldier lying alone in the hayfield. Now, seated on the slope of the trench, he observed the faces of those around him.

By ten o’clock some twenty men had already been carried away from the battery; two guns were smashed and cannon balls fell more and more frequently on the battery and spent bullets buzzed and whistled around. But the men in the battery seemed not to notice this, and merry voices and jokes were heard on all sides.

“A live one!” shouted a man as a whistling shell approached.

“Not this way! To the infantry!” added another with loud laughter, seeing the shell fly past and fall into the ranks of the supports.

“Are you bowing to a friend, eh?” remarked another, chaffing a peasant who ducked low as a cannon ball flew over.

Several soldiers gathered by the wall of the trench, looking out to see what was happening in front.

“They’ve withdrawn the front line, it has retired,” said they, pointing over the earthwork.

“Mind your own business,” an old sergeant shouted at them. “If they’ve retired it’s because there’s work for them to do farther back.”

And the sergeant, taking one of the men by the shoulders, gave him a shove with his knee. This was followed by a burst of laughter.

“To the fifth gun, wheel it up!” came shouts from one side.

“Now then, all together, like bargemen!” rose the merry voices of those who were moving the gun.

“Oh, she nearly knocked our gentleman’s hat off!” cried the red-faced humorist, showing his teeth chaffing Pierre. “Awkward baggage!” he added reproachfully to a cannon ball that struck a cannon wheel and a man’s leg.

“Now then, you foxes!” said another, laughing at some militiamen who, stooping low, entered the battery to carry away the wounded man.

“So this gruel isn’t to your taste? Oh, you crows! You’re scared!” they shouted at the militiamen who stood hesitating before the man whose leg had been torn off.

“There, lads... oh, oh!” they mimicked the peasants, “they don’t like it at all!”

Pierre noticed that after every ball that hit the redoubt, and after every loss, the liveliness increased more and more.

As the flames of the fire hidden within come more and more vividly and rapidly from an approaching thundercloud, so, as if in opposition to what was taking place, the lightning of hidden fire growing more and more intense glowed in the faces of these men.

Pierre did not look out at the battlefield and was not concerned to know what was happening there; he was entirely absorbed in watching this fire which burned ever more brightly and which he felt was flaming up in the same way in his own soul.

At ten o’clock the infantry that had been among the bushes in front of the battery and along the Kámenka streamlet retreated. From the battery they could be seen running back past it carrying their wounded on their

muskets. A general with his suite came to the battery, and after speaking to the colonel gave Pierre an angry look and went away again having ordered the infantry supports behind the battery to lie down, so as to be less exposed to fire. After this from amid the ranks of infantry to the right of the battery came the sound of a drum and shouts of command, and from the battery one saw how those ranks of infantry moved forward.

Pierre looked over the wall of the trench and was particularly struck by a pale young officer who, letting his sword hang down, was walking backwards and kept glancing uneasily around.

The ranks of the infantry disappeared amid the smoke but their long-drawn shout and rapid musketry firing could still be heard. A few minutes later crowds of wounded men and stretcher-bearers came back from that direction. Projectiles began to fall still more frequently in the battery. Several men were lying about who had not been removed. Around the cannon the men moved still more briskly and busily. No one any longer took notice of Pierre. Once or twice he was shouted at for being in the way. The senior officer moved with big, rapid strides from one gun to another with a frowning face. The young officer, with his face still more flushed, commanded the men more scrupulously than ever. The soldiers handed up the charges, turned, loaded, and did their business with strained smartness. They gave little jumps as they walked, as though they were on springs.

The storm cloud had come upon them, and in every face the fire which Pierre had watched kindle burned up brightly. Pierre standing beside the commanding officer. The young officer, his hand to his shako, ran up to his superior.

“I have the honor to report, sir, that only eight rounds are left. Are we to continue firing?” the young officer asked.

“Grapeshot!” the senior officer shouted, without answering the question, looking over the wall of the trench.

Suddenly something happened: the young officer gave a gasp and bending double sat down on the ground like a bird shot on the wing. Everything became strange, confused, and misty in Pierre's eyes.

One cannon ball after another whistled by and struck the earthwork, a soldier, or a gun. Pierre, who had not noticed these sounds before, now heard nothing else. On the right of the battery soldiers shouting "Hurrah!" were running not forwards but backwards, it seemed to Pierre.

A cannon ball struck the very end of the earth work by which he was standing, crumbling down the earth; a black ball flashed before his eyes and at the same instant plumped into something. Some militiamen who were entering the battery ran back.

"All with grapeshot!" shouted the officer.

The sergeant ran up to the officer and in a frightened whisper informed him (as a butler at dinner informs his master that there is no more of some wine asked for) that there were no more charges.

"The scoundrels! What are they doing?" shouted the officer, turning to Pierre.

The officer's face was red and perspiring and his eyes glittered under his frowning brow.

"Run to the reserves and bring up the ammunition boxes!" the officer yelled, angrily avoiding Pierre with his eyes and speaking to his men.

"I'll go," said Pierre.

The officer, without answering him, strode across to the opposite side.

"Don't fire... Wait!" the officer shouted.

The man who had been ordered to go for ammunition stumbled against Pierre.

"Eh, sir, this is no place for you," said he, and ran down the slope.

Pierre ran after him, avoiding the spot where the young officer was sitting.

One cannon ball, another, and a third flew over him, falling in front, beside, and behind him. Pierre ran down the slope. "Where am I going?" Pierre suddenly asked himself when he was already near the green ammunition wagons. He halted irresolutely, not knowing whether to return or go on. Suddenly a terrible concussion threw him backwards to the ground. At the same instant Pierre was dazzled by a great flash of flame, and immediately a deafening roar, crackling, and whistling made his ears tingle.

When Pierre came to himself he was sitting on the ground leaning on his hands; the ammunition wagons he had been approaching no longer existed, only charred green boards and rags littered the scorched grass, and a horse, dangling fragments of its shaft behind it, galloped past, while another horse lay, like Pierre, on the ground, uttering prolonged and piercing cries.

Beside himself with terror, Pierre jumped up and ran back to the battery, as to the only refuge from the horrors that surrounded him.

On entering the earthwork Pierre noticed that there were men doing something there but that no shots were being fired from the battery. He had no time to realize who these men were. He saw the senior officer lying on the earth wall with his back turned as if he were examining something down below and that one of the soldiers he had noticed before was struggling forward shouting "Brothers!" and trying to free himself from some men who were holding him by the arm. He also saw something else that was strange.

But Pierre had not time to realize that the colonel had been killed, that the soldier shouting "Brothers!" was a prisoner, and that another man had been bayoneted in the back before his eyes, for hardly had he run into the redoubt before a thin, sallow-faced, perspiring man in a blue uniform rushed on him sword in hand, shouting something. Instinctively guarding against the shock—for they had been running together at full speed before

they saw one another—Pierre put out his hands and seized the man (a French officer) by the shoulder with one hand and by the throat with the other. The officer, dropping his sword, seized Pierre by his collar.

For some seconds they gazed with frightened eyes at one another's unfamiliar faces and both were perplexed at what they had done and what they were to do next. "Am I taken prisoner or have I taken him prisoner?" each was thinking. But the French officer was evidently more inclined to think he had been taken prisoner because Pierre's strong hand, impelled by instinctive fear, squeezed his throat ever tighter and tighter. The French officer was about to say something, when just above their heads, terrible and low, a cannon ball whistled, and it seemed to Pierre that the French officer's head had been torn off, so swiftly had he ducked it.

Pierre too bent his head and let his hands fall. Without further thought as to who had taken whom prisoner, the French officer ran back to the battery and Pierre ran down the slope stumbling over the dead and wounded who, it seemed to him, caught at his feet. But before Pierre reached the foot of the knoll he was met by a dense crowd of Russian soldiers who, stumbling, tripping up, and shouting, ran merrily and wildly toward the battery. (This was the attack for which General Ermólov claimed the credit, declaring that only his courage and good luck made such a feat possible: it was the attack in which he was said to have thrown some St. George's Crosses he had in his pocket into the battery for the first soldiers to take who got there.)

The French who had occupied the battery fled, and our troops shouting "Hurrah!" pursued them so far beyond the battery that it was difficult to call them back.

The prisoners were brought down from the battery and among them was a wounded French général, whom the officers surrounded. Crowds of wounded—some known to Pierre and some unknown—Russians and French, with faces distorted by suffering, walked, crawled, and were carried

on stretchers from the battery. Pierre again went up onto the knoll where he had spent over an hour, and of that family circle which had received him as a member he did not find a single one. There were many dead whom he did not know, but some he recognized. The young officer still sat in the same way, bent double, in a pool of blood at the edge of the earth wall. The red-faced man was still twitching, but they did not carry him away.

Pierre ran down the slope once more.

“Now they will stop it, now they will be horrified at what they have done!” Pierre thought, aimlessly going toward a crowd of stretcher bearers moving from the battlefield.

But behind the veil of smoke the sun was still high, and in front and especially to the left, near Semënovsk, something seemed to be seething in the smoke, and the roar of cannon and musketry did not diminish, but even increased to desperation like a man who, straining himself, shrieks with all his remaining strength.

The chief action of the battle of Borodinó was fought within the seven thousand feet between Borodinó and Major-General Bagration’s *entrenchments*. Beyond that space there was, on the one side, a demonstration made by the Russians with Uvárov’s cavalry at midday, and on the other side, beyond Utítsa, Poniatowski’s collision with Túchkov; but these two were detached and feeble actions in comparison with what took place in the center of the battlefield. On the field between Borodinó and the *entrenchments*, beside the wood, the chief action of the day took place on an open space visible from both sides and was fought in the simplest and most artless way.

The battle began on both sides with a cannonade from several hundred guns.

Then when the whole field was covered with smoke, two divisions, Général Campan’s and Général Dessaix’s, advanced from the French right, while Général Murat’s troops advanced on Borodinó from their left.

From the Shevárdino Redoubt where Napoleon was standing the *entrenchments* were two thirds of a mile away, and it was more than a mile as the crow flies to Borodinó, so that Napoleon could not see what was happening there, especially as the smoke mingling with the mist hid the whole locality. The soldiers of Général Dessaix's division advancing against the *entrenchments* could only be seen till they had entered the hollow that lay between them and the *entrenchments*. As soon as they had descended into that hollow, the smoke of the guns and musketry on the *entrenchments* grew so dense that it covered the whole approach on that side of it. Through the smoke glimpses could be caught of something black—probably men—and at times the glint of bayonets. But whether they were moving or stationary, whether they were French or Russian, could not be discovered from the Shevárdino Redoubt.

The sun had risen brightly and its slanting rays struck straight into Napoleon's face as, shading his eyes with his hand, he looked at the *entrenchments*. The smoke spread out before them, and at times it looked as if the smoke were moving, at times as if the troops moved. Sometimes shouts were heard through the firing, but it was impossible to tell what was being done there.

Napoleon, standing on the knoll, looked through a field glass, and in its small circlet saw smoke and men, sometimes his own and sometimes Russians, but when he looked again with the naked eye, he could not tell where what he had seen was.

Napoleon descended the knoll and began walking up and down before it.

Occasionally he stopped, listened to the firing, and gazed intently at the battlefield.

But not only was it impossible to make out what was happening from where Napoleon was standing down below, or from the knoll above on which some of his generals had taken their stand, but even from

the *entrenchments* themselves—in which by this time there were now Russian and now French soldiers, alternately or together, dead, wounded, alive, frightened, or maddened—even at those *entrenchments* themselves it was impossible to make out what was taking place. There for several hours amid incessant cannon and musketry fire, now Russians were seen alone, now Frenchmen alone, now infantry, and now cavalry: they appeared, fired, fell, collided, not knowing what to do with one another, screamed, and ran back again.

From the battlefield adjutants he had sent out, and orderlies from his generals, kept galloping up to Napoleon with reports of the progress of the action, but all these reports were false, both because it was impossible in the heat of battle to say what was happening at any given moment and because many of the adjutants did not go to the actual place of conflict but reported what they had heard from others; and also because while an adjutant was riding more than a mile to Napoleon circumstances changed and the news he brought was already becoming false. Thus an adjutant galloped up from Général Murat with tidings that Borodinó had been occupied and the bridge over the Kolochá was in the hands of the French. The adjutant asked whether Napoleon wished the troops to cross it? Napoleon gave orders that the troops should form up on the farther side and wait. But before that order was given—almost as soon in fact as the adjutant had left Borodinó—the bridge had been retaken by the Russians and burned, in the very skirmish at which Pierre had been present at the beginning of the battle.

An adjutant galloped up from the *entrenchments* with a pale and frightened face and reported to Napoleon that their attack had been repulsed, Général Campan wounded, and War Minister Davout killed; yet at the very time the adjutant had been told that the French had been repulsed, the *entrenchments* had in fact been recaptured by other French troops, and War Minister Davout was alive and only slightly bruised. On the basis of these necessarily untrustworthy reports Napoleon gave his orders, which

had either been executed before he gave them or could not be and were not executed.

The generals, who were nearer to the field of battle but, like Napoleon, did not take part in the actual fighting and only occasionally went within musket range, made their own arrangements without asking Napoleon and issued orders where and in what direction to fire and where cavalry should gallop and infantry should run. But even their orders, like Napoleon's, were seldom carried out, and then but partially. For the most part things happened contrary to their orders. Soldiers ordered to advance ran back on meeting grapeshot; soldiers ordered to remain where they were, suddenly, seeing Russians unexpectedly before them, sometimes rushed back and sometimes forward, and the cavalry dashed without orders in pursuit of the flying Russians. In this way two cavalry regiments galloped through the Semënovsk hollow and as soon as they reached the top of the incline turned round and galloped full speed back again. The infantry moved in the same way, sometimes running to quite other places than those they were ordered to go to. All orders as to where and when to move the guns, when to send infantry to shoot or horsemen to ride down the Russian infantry—all such orders were given by the officers on the spot nearest to the units concerned, without asking either Général Ney, War Minister Davout, or Général Murat, much less Napoleon. They did not fear getting into trouble for not fulfilling orders or for acting on their own initiative, for in battle what is at stake is what is dearest to man—his own life—and it sometimes seems that safety lies in running back, sometimes in running forward; and these men who were right in the heat of the battle acted according to the mood of the moment. In reality, however, all these movements forward and backward did not improve or alter the position of the troops. All their rushing and galloping at one another did little harm, the harm of disablement and death was caused by the balls and bullets that flew over the fields on which these men were floundering about. As soon as they left the place where the balls

and bullets were flying about, their superiors, located in the background, re-formed them and brought them under discipline and under the influence of that discipline led them back to the zone of fire, where under the influence of fear of death they lost their discipline and rushed about according to the chance promptings of the throng.

Napoleon's generals—War Minister Davout, Général Ney, and Général Murat, who were near that region of fire and sometimes even entered it—repeatedly led into it huge masses of well-ordered troops. But contrary to what had always happened in their former battles, instead of the news they expected of the enemy's flight, these orderly masses returned thence as disorganized and terrified mobs. The generals re-formed them, but their numbers constantly decreased. In the middle of the day Général Murat sent his adjutant to Napoleon to demand reinforcements.

Napoleon sat at the foot of the knoll, drinking punch, when Général Murat's adjutant galloped up with an assurance that the Russians would be routed if Napoleon would let him have another division.

"Reinforcements?" said Napoleon in a tone of stern surprise, looking at the adjutant—a handsome lad with long black curls arranged like Général Murat's own—as though he did not understand his words.

"Reinforcements!" thought Napoleon to himself. "How can they need reinforcements when they already have half the army directed against a weak, Russian wing that has been driven from their trenches?"

"Tell Général Murat's," said he sternly, "that it is not noon yet, and I don't yet see my chessboard clearly. Go!..."

The handsome boy adjutant with the long hair sighed deeply without removing his hand from his hat and galloped back to where men were being slaughtered.

Napoleon rose and having summoned Général Caulaincourt and Chief of Staff Berthier began talking to them about matters unconnected with the battle.

In the midst of this conversation, which was beginning to interest Napoleon, Chief of Staff Berthier's eyes turned to look at a général with a suite, who was galloping toward the knoll on a lathering horse. It was Général Belliard. Having dismounted he went up to Napoleon with rapid strides and in a loud voice began boldly demonstrating the necessity of sending reinforcements. He swore on his honor that the Russians were lost if Napoleon would give another division.

Napoleon shrugged his shoulders and continued to pace up and down without replying. Général Belliard began talking loudly and eagerly to the generals of the suite around him.

"You are very fiery, Général Belliard," said Napoleon, when he again came up to the general. "In the heat of a battle it is easy to make a mistake. Go and have another look and then come back to me."

Before Général Belliard was out of sight, a messenger from another part of the battlefield galloped up.

"Now then, what do you want?" asked Napoleon in the tone of a man irritated at being continually disturbed.

"Sire, the général..." began the adjutant.

"Asks for reinforcements?" said Napoleon with an angry gesture.

The adjutant bent his head affirmatively and began to report, but Napoleon turned from him, took a couple of steps, stopped, came back, and called Chief of Staff Berthier.

"We must give reserves," Napoleon said, moving his arms slightly apart. "Who do you think should be sent there?" Napoleon asked of Chief of Staff Berthier (whom he subsequently termed "that gosling I have made an eagle").

"Send Général Claparède's division, sire," replied Chief of Staff Berthier, who knew all the division's regiments, and battalions by heart.

Napoleon nodded assent.

The adjutant galloped to Général Claparède's division and a few minutes later the Young Guards stationed behind the knoll moved forward. Napoleon gazed silently in that direction.

"No!" Napoleon suddenly said to Chief of Staff Berthier. "I can't send Général Claparède. Send Général Friant's division."

Though there was no advantage in sending Général Friant's division instead of Général Claparède's, and even an obvious inconvenience and delay in stopping Général Claparède and sending Général Friant now, the order was carried out exactly. Napoleon did not notice that in regard to his army he was playing the part of a doctor who hinders by his medicines—a role he so justly understood and condemned.

Général Friant's division disappeared as the others had done into the smoke of the battlefield. From all sides adjutants continued to arrive at a gallop and as if by agreement all said the same thing. They all asked for reinforcements and all said that the Russians were holding their positions and maintaining a hellish fire under which the French army was melting away.

Napoleon sat on a campstool, wrapped in thought.

Prefect Beausset, the man so fond of travel, having fasted since morning, came up to Napoleon and ventured respectfully to suggest lunch.

"I hope I may now congratulate you on a victory?" said Prefect Beausset.

Napoleon silently shook his head in negation. Assuming the negation to refer only to the victory and not to the lunch, Prefect Beausset ventured with respectful jocularly to remark that there is no reason for not having lunch when one can get it.

"Go away..." exclaimed Napoleon suddenly and morosely, and turned aside.

A beatific smile of regret, repentance, and ecstasy beamed on Prefect Beausset's face and he glided away to the other generals.

Napoleon was experiencing a feeling of depression like that of an ever-lucky gambler who, after recklessly flinging money about and always winning, suddenly just when he has calculated all the chances of the game, finds that the more he considers his play the more surely he loses.

Napoleon's troops were the same, his generals the same, the same preparations had been made, the same dispositions, and the same proclamation *short and energetic*, he himself was still the same: he knew that and knew that he was now even more experienced and skillful than before. Even the enemy was the same as at Austerlitz and Friedland—yet the terrible stroke of his arm had supernaturally become impotent.

All the old methods that had been unfailingly crowned with success: the concentration of batteries on one point, an attack by reserves to break the enemy's line, and a cavalry attack by "the men of iron," all these methods had already been employed, yet not only was there no victory, but from all sides came the same news of generals killed and wounded, of reinforcements needed, of the impossibility of driving back the Russians, and of disorganization among his own troops.

Formerly, after Napoleon had given two or three orders and uttered a few phrases, generals and adjutants had come galloping up with congratulations and happy faces, announcing the trophies taken, the corps of prisoners, bundles of enemy eagles and standards, cannon and stores, and Général Murat had only begged leave to loose the cavalry to gather in the baggage wagons. So it had been at Lodi, Marengo, Arcola, Jena, Austerlitz, Wagram, and so on. But now something strange was happening to his troops.

Despite news of the capture of the *entrenchments*, Napoleon saw that this was not the same, not at all the same, as what had happened in his former battles. Napoleon saw that what he was feeling was felt by all the men about him experienced in the art of war. All their faces looked

dejected, and they all shunned one another's eyes—only someone like Prefect Beausset could fail to grasp the meaning of what was happening.

But Napoleon with his long experience of war well knew the meaning of a battle not gained by the attacking side in eight hours, after all efforts had been expended. He knew that it was a lost battle and that the least accident might now—with the fight balanced on such a strained center—destroy him and his army.

When Napoleon ran his mind over the whole of this strange Russian campaign in which not one battle had been won, and in which not a flag, or cannon, or army corps had been captured in two months, when he looked at the concealed depression on the faces around him and heard reports of the Russians still holding their ground—a terrible feeling like a nightmare took possession of him, and all the unlucky accidents that might destroy him occurred to his mind. The Russians might fall on his left wing, might break through his center, he himself might be killed by a stray cannon ball. All this was possible. In former battles Napoleon had only considered the possibilities of success, but now innumerable unlucky chances presented themselves, and he expected them all. Yes, it was like a dream in which a man fancies that a ruffian is coming to attack him, and raises his arm to strike that ruffian a terrible blow which he knows should annihilate him, but then feels that his arm drops powerless and limp like a rag, and the horror of unavoidable destruction seizes him in his helplessness.

The news that the Russians were attacking the left flank of the French army aroused that horror in Napoleon. He sat silently on a campstool below the knoll, with head bowed and elbows on his knees. Chief of Staff Berthier approached and suggested that they should ride along the line to ascertain the position of affairs.

“What? What do you say?” asked Napoleon. “Yes, tell them to bring me my horse.”

Napoleon mounted and rode toward Semënovsk.

Amid the powder smoke, slowly dispersing over the whole space through which Napoleon rode, horses and men were lying in pools of blood, singly or in heaps. Neither Napoleon nor any of his generals had ever before seen such horrors or so many slain in such a small area. The roar of guns, that had not ceased for ten hours, wearied the ear and gave a peculiar significance to the spectacle, as music does to *living pictures*. Napoleon rode up the high ground at Semënovsk, and through the smoke saw ranks of men in uniforms of a color unfamiliar to him. They were Russians.

The Russians stood in serried ranks behind Semënovsk village and its knoll, and their guns boomed incessantly along their line and sent forth clouds of smoke. It was no longer a battle: it was a continuous slaughter which could be of no avail either to the French or the Russians. Napoleon stopped his horse and again fell into the reverie from which Chief of Staff Berthier had aroused him. He could not stop what was going on before him and around him and was supposed to be directed by him and to depend on him, and from its lack of success this affair, for the first time, seemed to him unnecessary and horrible.

One of the generals rode up to Napoleon and ventured to offer to lead the Old Guard into action. Général Ney and Chief of Staff Berthier, standing near Napoleon, exchanged looks and smiled contemptuously at this general's senseless offer.

Napoleon bowed his head and remained silent a long time.

"At eight hundred leagues from France, I will not have my Old Guard destroyed!" Napoleon said, and turning his horse rode back to Shevárdino.

On the rug-covered bench where Pierre had seen him in the morning sat Marshal Kutuzov, his gray head hanging, his heavy body relaxed. He gave no orders, but only assented to or dissented from what others suggested.

"Yes, yes, do that," Marshal Kutuzov replied to various proposals. "Yes, yes: go, dear boy, and have a look," he would say to one or another of those about him; or, "No, don't, we'd better wait!" He listened to the reports that

were brought him and gave directions when his subordinates demanded that of him; but when listening to the reports it seemed as if he were not interested in the import of the words spoken, but rather in something else—in the expression of face and tone of voice of those who were reporting. By long years of military experience Marshal Kutuzov knew, and with the wisdom of age understood, that it is impossible for one man to direct hundreds of thousands of others struggling with death, and he knew that the result of a battle is decided not by the orders of a Marshal, nor the place where the troops are stationed, nor by the number of cannon or of slaughtered men, but by that intangible force called the spirit of the army, and he watched this force and guided it in as far as that was in his power.

Marshal Kutuzov's expression was one of concentrated quiet attention, and his face wore a strained look as if he found it difficult to master the fatigue of his old and feeble body.

At eleven o'clock they brought him news that the *entrenchments* captured by the French had been retaken, but that Major-General Bagration was wounded. Marshal Kutuzov groaned and swayed his head.

"Ride over to Major-General Bagration and find out about it exactly," Marshal Kutuzov said to one of his adjutants, and then turned to the Duke of Württemberg who was standing behind him.

"Will you please take command of the first army?"

Soon after the Duke of Württemberg's departure—before he could possibly have reached Semënovsk—his adjutant came back from him and told Marshal Kutuzov that the Duke of Württemberg had asked for more troops.

Marshal Kutuzov made a grimace and sent an order to General Dokhtúrov to take over the command of the first army from the Duke of Württemberg, and also a request to the Duke of Württemberg—whom he said he could not spare at such an important moment—to return to him.

When they brought Marshal Kutuzov news that Général Murat had been taken prisoner, and the staff officers congratulated him, Marshal Kutuzov smiled.

“Wait a little, gentlemen,” said Marshal Kutuzov. “The battle is won, and there is nothing extraordinary in the capture of Général Murat. Still, it is better to wait before we rejoice.”

But Marshal Kutuzov sent an adjutant to take the news round the army.

When Scherbínin came galloping from the left flank with news that the French had captured the *entrenchments* and the village of Semënovsk, Marshal Kutuzov, guessing by the sounds of the battle and by Scherbínin’s looks that the news was bad, rose as if to stretch his legs and, taking Scherbínin’s arm, led him aside.

“Go, my dear fellow,” Marshal Kutuzov said to General Ermólov, “and see whether something can’t be done.”

Marshal Kutuzov was in Górkí, near the center of the Russian position. The attack directed by Napoleon against our left flank had been several times repulsed. In the center the French had not got beyond Borodinó, and on their left flank Uvárov’s cavalry had put the French to flight.

Toward three o’clock the French attacks ceased. On the faces of all who came from the field of battle, and of those who stood around him, Marshal Kutuzov noticed an expression of extreme tension. He was satisfied with the day’s success—a success exceeding his expectations, but the old man’s strength was failing him. Several times his head dropped low as if it were falling and he dozed off. Dinner was brought him.

Adjutant General Wolzogen, the man who when riding past Andrei had said, “the war should be extended widely,” and whom Major-General Bagration so detested, rode up while Marshal Kutuzov was at dinner. Wolzogen had come from Barclay to report on the progress of affairs on the left flank. The sagacious Barclay, seeing crowds of wounded men running back and the disordered rear of the army, weighed all the circumstances,

concluded that the battle was lost, and sent his favorite officer to Marshal Kutuzov with that news.

Marshal Kutuzov was chewing a piece of roast chicken with difficulty and glanced at Wolzogen with eyes that brightened under their puckering lids.

Wolzogen, nonchalantly stretching his legs, approached Marshal Kutuzov with a half-contemptuous smile on his lips, scarcely touching the peak of his cap.

Wolzogen treated his Serene Highness with a somewhat affected nonchalance intended to show that, as a highly trained military man, he left it to Russians to make an idol of this useless old man, but that he knew whom he was dealing with. "*The old gentleman*" (as in their own set the Germans called Marshal Kutuzov) "is making himself very comfortable," thought Wolzogen, and looking severely at the dishes in front of Marshal Kutuzov he began to report to "the old gentleman" the position of affairs on the left flank as Barclay had ordered him to and as he himself had seen and understood it.

"All the points of our position are in the enemy's hands and we cannot dislodge them for lack of troops, the men are running away and it is impossible to stop them," Wolzogen reported.

Marshal Kutuzov ceased chewing and fixed an astonished gaze on Wolzogen, as if not understanding what was said to him. Wolzogen, noticing "the old gentleman's" agitation, said with a smile:

"I have not considered it right to conceal from your Serene Highness what I have seen. The troops are in complete disorder..."

"You have seen? You have seen?..." Marshal Kutuzov shouted. Frowning and rising quickly, he went up to Wolzogen.

"How... how dare you!..." Marshal Kutuzov shouted, choking and making a threatening gesture with his trembling arms: "How dare you, sir, say that to *me*? You know nothing about it. Tell General Barclay from me

that his information is incorrect and that the real course of the battle is better known to me, who is now Marshal, than to him.”

Wolzogen was about to make a rejoinder, but Marshal Kutuzov interrupted him.

“The enemy has been repulsed on the left and defeated on the right flank. If you have seen amiss, sir, do not allow yourself to say what you don’t know! Be so good as to ride to General Barclay and inform him of my firm intention to attack the enemy tomorrow,” said Marshal Kutuzov sternly.

All were silent, and the only sound audible was the heavy breathing of the panting Marshal Kutuzov.

“They are repulsed everywhere, for which I thank God and our brave army! The enemy is beaten, and tomorrow we shall drive him from the sacred soil of Russia,” said Marshal Kutuzov crossing himself, and he suddenly sobbed as his eyes filled with tears.

Wolzogen, shrugging his shoulders and curling his lips, stepped silently aside, marveling at “the old gentleman’s” conceited stupidity.

“Ah, here he is, my hero!” said Marshal Kutuzov to a portly, handsome, dark-haired general who was just ascending the knoll.

This was Raévski, who had spent the whole day at the most important part of the field of Borodinó.

Raévski reported that the troops were firmly holding their ground and that the French no longer ventured to attack.

After hearing him, Marshal Kutuzov said in French:

“Then you do not think, *like some others*, that we must retreat?”

“On the contrary, your Highness, in indecisive actions it is always the most stubborn who remain victors,” replied Raévski, “and in my opinion...”

“Kaysárov!” Marshal Kutuzov called to his adjutant. “Sit down and write out the order of the day for tomorrow. And you,” he continued,

addressing another, “ride along the line and announce that tomorrow we attack.”

While Marshal Kutuzov was talking to Raévski and dictating the order of the day, Wolzogen returned from Barclay and said that General Barclay wished to have written confirmation of the order that Marshal Kutuzov had given.

Marshal Kutuzov, without looking at Wolzogen, gave directions for the order to be written out which the former Marshal Barclay, to avoid personal responsibility, very judiciously wished to receive.

And by means of that mysterious indefinable bond which maintains throughout an army one and the same temper, known as “the spirit of the army,” and which constitutes the sinew of war, Marshal Kutuzov’s words, his order for a battle the next day, immediately became known from one end of the army to the other.

It was far from being the same words or the same order that reached the farthest links of that chain. The tales passing from mouth to mouth at different ends of the army did not even resemble what Marshal Kutuzov had said, but the sense of his words spread everywhere because what he said was not the outcome of cunning calculations, but of a feeling that lay in the Marshal’s soul as in that of every Russian.

And on learning that tomorrow they were to attack the enemy, and hearing from the highest quarters a confirmation of what they wanted to believe, the exhausted, wavering men felt comforted and inspirited.

Andrei’s regiment was among the reserves which till after one o’clock were stationed inactive behind Semënovsk, under heavy artillery fire. Toward two o’clock the regiment, having already lost more than two hundred men, was moved forward into a trampled oat field in the gap between Semënovsk and the Knoll Battery, where thousands of men perished that day and on which an intense, concentrated fire from several hundred enemy guns was directed between one and two o’clock.

Without moving from that spot or firing a single shot, Andrei's regiment here lost another third of its men. From in front and especially from the right, in the un-lifting smoke the guns boomed, and out of the mysterious domain of smoke that overlay the whole space in front, quick hissing cannon balls and slow whistling shells flew unceasingly. At times, as if to allow them a respite, a quarter of an hour passed during which the cannon balls and shells all flew overhead, but sometimes several men were torn from the regiment in a minute and the slain were continually being dragged away and the wounded carried off.

With each fresh blow less and less chance of life remained for those not yet killed. Andrei's regiment stood in columns of battalion, three hundred paces apart, but nevertheless the men were always in one and the same mood. All alike were taciturn and morose. Talk was rarely heard in the ranks, and it ceased altogether every time the thud of a successful shot and the cry of "stretchers!" was heard. Most of the time, by their officers' order, the men sat on the ground. One, having taken off his shako, carefully loosened the gathers of its lining and drew them tight again; another, rubbing some dry clay between his palms, polished his bayonet; another fingered the scarrige and pulled the buckle of his bandolier, while another smoothed and refolded his leg bands and put his boots on again. Some built little houses of the tufts in the plowed ground, or plaited baskets from the straw in the cornfield. All seemed fully absorbed in these pursuits. When men were killed or wounded, when rows of stretchers went past, when some troops retreated, and when great masses of the enemy came into view through the smoke, no one paid any attention to these things. But when our artillery or cavalry advanced or some of our infantry were seen to move forward, words of approval were heard on all sides. But the liveliest attention was attracted by occurrences quite apart from, and unconnected with, the battle. It was as if the minds of these morally exhausted men found relief in everyday, commonplace occurrences. A battery of artillery

was passing in front of the regiment. The horse of an ammunition cart put its leg over a trace. "Hey, look at the trace horse!... Get her leg out! She'll fall... Ah, they don't see it!" came identical shouts from the ranks all along the regiment. Another time, attention was attracted by a small brown dog, coming heaven knows whence, which trotted in a preoccupied manner in front of the ranks with tail stiffly erect till suddenly a shell fell close by, when it yelped, tucked its tail between its legs, and darted aside. Yells and shrieks of laughter rose from the whole regiment. But such distractions lasted only a moment, and for eight hours the men had been inactive, without food, in constant fear of death, and their pale and gloomy faces grew ever paler and gloomier.

Andrei, pale and gloomy like everyone in the regiment, paced up and down from the border of one patch to another, at the edge of the meadow beside an field of oats, with head bowed and arms behind his back. There was nothing for him to do and no orders to be given. Everything went on of itself. The killed were dragged from the front, the wounded carried away, and the ranks closed up. If any soldiers ran to the rear they returned immediately and hastily. At first Andrei, considering it his duty to rouse the courage of the men and to set them an example, walked about among the ranks, but he soon became convinced that this was unnecessary and that there was nothing he could teach them. All the powers of his soul, as of every soldier there, were unconsciously bent on avoiding the contemplation of the horrors of their situation. Andrei walked along the meadow, dragging his feet, rustling the grass, and gazing at the dust that covered his boots; now he took big strides trying to keep to the footprints left on the meadow by the mowers, then he counted his steps, calculating how often he must walk from one strip to another to walk a mile, then he stripped the flowers from the wormwood that grew along a boundary rut, rubbed them in his palms, and smelled their pungent, sweetly bitter scent. Nothing remained of the previous day's thoughts. He thought of nothing. Andrei listened with

weary ears to the ever-recurring sounds, distinguishing the whistle of flying projectiles from the booming of the reports, glanced at the tiresomely familiar faces of the men of the first battalion, and waited. "Here it comes... this one is coming our way again!" he thought, listening to an approaching whistle in the hidden region of smoke. "One, another! Again! It has hit..." Andrei stopped and looked at the ranks. "No, it has gone over. But this one has hit!" And again he started trying to reach the boundary strip in sixteen paces. A whizz and a thud! Five paces from him, a cannon ball tore up the dry earth and disappeared. A chill ran down his back. Again he glanced at the ranks. Probably many had been hit—a large crowd had gathered near the second battalion.

"Adjutant!" Andrei shouted. "Order them not to crowd together."

The adjutant, having obeyed this instruction, approached Andrei. From the other side a battalion commander rode up.

"Look out!" came a frightened cry from a soldier and, like a bird whirring in rapid flight and alighting on the ground, a shell dropped with little noise within two steps of Andrei and close to the battalion commander's horse. The horse first, regardless of whether it was right or wrong to show fear, snorted, reared almost throwing the major, and galloped aside. The horse's terror infected the men.

"Lie down!" cried the adjutant, throwing himself flat on the ground.

Andrei hesitated. The smoking shell spun like a top between him and the prostrate adjutant, near a wormwood plant between the field and the meadow.

"Can this be death?" thought Andrei, looking with a quite new, envious glance at the grass, the wormwood, and the streamlet of smoke that curled up from the rotating black ball. "I cannot, I do not wish to die. I love life—I love this grass, this earth, this air..." He thought this, and at the same time remembered that people were looking at him.

"It's shameful, sir!" Andrei said to the adjutant. "What..."

Andrei did not finish speaking. At one and the same moment came the sound of an explosion, a whistle of splinters as from a breaking window frame, a suffocating smell of powder, and Andrei started to one side, raising his arm, and fell on his chest. Several officers ran up to him. From the right side of Andrei's abdomen, blood was welling out making a large stain on the grass.

The militiamen with stretchers who were called up stood behind the officers. Andrei lay on his chest with his face in the grass, breathing heavily and noisily.

"What are you waiting for? Come along!"

The peasants went up and took him by his shoulders and legs, but Andrei moaned piteously and, exchanging looks, they set him down again.

"Pick him up, lift him, it's all the same!" cried someone.

They again took Andrei by the shoulders and laid him on the stretcher.

"Ah, God! My God! What is it? The stomach? That means death! My God!"—voices among the officers were heard saying.

"It flew a hair's breadth past my ear," said the adjutant.

The peasants, adjusting the stretcher to their shoulders, started hurriedly along the path they had trodden down, to the dressing station.

"Keep in step! Ah... those peasants!" shouted an officer, seizing by their shoulders and checking the peasants, who were walking unevenly and jolting the stretcher.

"Get into step, Fëdor... I say, Fëdor!" said the foremost peasant.

"Now that's right!" said the one behind joyfully, when he had got into step.

"Your excellency! Eh, Andrei!" said the trembling voice of Captain Timokhin, who had run up and was looking down on the stretcher.

Andrei opened his eyes and looked up at Captain Timokhin from the stretcher into which his head had sunk deep and again his eyelids drooped.

The militiamen carried Andrei to the dressing station by the wood, where wagons were stationed. The dressing station consisted of three tents with flaps turned back, pitched at the edge of a birch wood. In the wood, wagons and horses were standing. The horses were eating oats from their movable troughs and sparrows flew down and pecked the grains that fell. Some crows, scenting blood, flew among the birch trees cawing impatiently. Around the tents, over more than five acres, bloodstained men in various garbs stood, sat, or lay. Around the wounded stood crowds of soldier stretcher-bearers with dismal and attentive faces, whom the officers keeping order tried in vain to drive from the spot. Disregarding the officers' orders, the soldiers stood leaning against their stretchers and gazing intently, as if trying to comprehend the difficult problem of what was taking place before them. From the tents came now loud angry cries and now plaintive groans. Occasionally dressers ran out to fetch water, or to point out those who were to be brought in next. The wounded men awaiting their turn outside the tents groaned, sighed, wept, screamed, swore, or asked for vodka. Some were delirious. Andrei's bearers, stepping over the wounded who had not yet been bandaged, took him, as a regimental commander, close up to one of the tents and there stopped, awaiting instructions. Andrei opened his eyes and for a long time could not make out what was going on around him. He remembered the meadow, the wormwood, the field, the whirling black ball, and his sudden rush of passionate love of life. Two steps from him, leaning against a branch and talking loudly and attracting attention, stood a tall, handsome, black-haired noncommissioned officer with a bandaged head. The officer had been wounded in the head and leg by bullets. Around him, eagerly listening to his talk, a crowd of wounded and stretcher-bearers was gathered.

"We kicked *him* out from there so that he chucked everything, we grabbed the King himself!" cried the wounded officer, looking around him

with eyes that glittered with fever. "If only reserves had come up just then, lads, there wouldn't have been nothing left of him! I tell you surely..."

Like all the others near the wounded officer, Andrei looked at him with shining eyes and experienced a sense of comfort. "But isn't it all the same now?" thought Andrei. "And what will be there, and what has there been here? Why was I so reluctant to part with life? There was something in this life I did not and do not understand."

One of the doctors came out of the tent in a bloodstained apron, holding a cigar between the thumb and little finger of one of his small bloodstained hands, so as not to smear it. The doctor raised his head and looked about him, but above the level of the wounded men. He evidently wanted a little respite. After turning his head from right to left for some time, the doctor sighed and looked down.

"All right, immediately," the doctor replied to a dresser who pointed Andrei out to him, and he told them to carry him into the tent.

Murmurs arose among the wounded who were waiting.

"It seems that even in the next world only the gentry are to have a chance!" remarked one of the wounded.

Andrei was carried in and laid on a table that had only just been cleared and which a dresser was washing down. Andrei could not make out distinctly what was in that tent. The pitiful groans from all sides and the torturing pain in his thigh, stomach, and back distracted him. All he saw about him merged into an impression of naked, bleeding human bodies that seemed to fill the whole of the low tent, as a few weeks previously, on that hot August day, such bodies had filled the dirty pond beside the Smolénsk road. Yes, it was the same flesh, the same *cannon fodder*, the sight of which had even then filled him with horror, as by a presentiment.

There were three operating tables in the tent. Two were occupied, and on the third they placed Andrei. For a little while he was left alone and involuntarily witnessed what was taking place on the other two tables. On

the nearest one sat a Tartar, probably a Cossack, judging by the uniform thrown down beside him. Four soldiers were holding him, and a spectacled doctor was cutting into his muscular brown back.

“Ooh, ooh, ooh!” grunted the Tartar, and suddenly lifting up his swarthy snub-nosed face with its high cheekbones, and baring his white teeth, he began to wriggle and twitch his body and utter piercing, ringing, and prolonged yells. On the other table, round which many people were crowding, a tall well-fed man lay on his back with his head thrown back. His curly hair, its color, and the shape of his head seemed strangely familiar to Andrei. Several dressers were pressing on his chest to hold him down. One large, white, plump leg twitched rapidly all the time with a feverish tremor. The man was sobbing and choking convulsively. Two doctors—one of whom was pale and trembling—were silently doing something to this man’s other, gory leg. When the doctor had finished with the Tartar, whom they covered with an overcoat, the spectacled doctor came up to Andrei, wiping his hands.

The doctor glanced at Andrei’s face and quickly turned away.

“Undress him! What are you waiting for?” he cried angrily to the dressers.

Andrei’s very first, remotest recollections of childhood came back to his mind when the dresser with sleeves rolled up began hastily to undo the buttons of his clothes and undressed him. The doctor bent down over the wound, felt it, and sighed deeply. Then the doctor made a sign to someone, and the torturing pain in his abdomen caused Andrei to lose consciousness. When Andrei came to himself the splintered portions of his thighbone had been extracted, the torn flesh cut away, and the wound bandaged. Water was being sprinkled on his face. As soon as Andrei opened his eyes, the doctor bent over, kissed him silently on the lips, and hurried away.

After the sufferings he had been enduring, Andrei enjoyed a blissful feeling such as he had not experienced for a long time. All the best and

happiest moments of his life—especially his earliest childhood, when Andrei used to be undressed and put to bed, and when leaning over him his nurse sang him to sleep and he, burying his head in the pillow, felt happy in the mere consciousness of life—returned to his memory, not merely as something past but as something present.

The doctors were busily engaged with the wounded man the shape of whose head seemed familiar to Andrei: they were lifting him up and trying to quiet him.

“Show it to me... Oh, ooh... Oh! Oh, ooh!” the wounded man’s frightened moans could be heard, subdued by suffering and broken by sobs.

Hearing those moans Andrei wanted to weep. Whether because he was dying without glory, or because he was sorry to part with life, or because of those memories of a childhood that could not return, or because Andrei was suffering and others were suffering and that man near him was groaning so piteously—he felt like weeping childlike, kindly, and almost happy tears.

The wounded man was shown his amputated leg stained with clotted blood and with the boot still on.

“Oh! Oh, ooh!” the wounded man sobbed, like a woman.

The doctor who had been standing beside him, preventing Andrei from seeing his face, moved away.

“My God! What is this? Why is he here?” said Andrei to himself.

In the miserable, sobbing, enfeebled man whose leg had just been amputated, Andrei recognized Anatole. Men were supporting Anatole in their arms and offering him a glass of water, but his trembling, swollen lips could not grasp its rim. Anatole was sobbing painfully. “Yes, it is Anatole! Yes, that man is somehow closely and painfully connected with me,” thought Andrei, not yet clearly grasping what he saw before him. “What is the connection of that man with my childhood and life?” he asked himself without finding an answer. And suddenly a new unexpected memory from that realm of pure and loving childhood presented itself to him. Andrei

remembered Natasha as he had seen her for the first time at the ball in 1810, with her slender neck and arms and with a frightened happy face ready for rapture, and love and tenderness for her, stronger and more vivid than ever, awoke in his soul. Andrei now remembered the connection that existed between himself and Anatole, who was dimly gazing at him through tears that filled his swollen eyes. Andrei remembered everything, and ecstatic pity and love for that man overflowed his happy heart.

Andrei could no longer restrain himself and wept tender loving tears for his fellow men, for himself, and for his own and their errors.

“Compassion, love of our brothers, for those who love us and for those who hate us, love of our enemies; yes, that love which God preached on earth and which Marya taught me and I did not understand—that is what made me sorry to part with life, that is what remained for me had I lived. But now it is too late. I know it!”

The terrible spectacle of the battlefield covered with dead and wounded, together with the heaviness of his head and the news that some twenty generals who Napoleon knew personally had been killed or wounded, and the consciousness of the impotence of his once mighty arm, produced an unexpected impression on Napoleon who usually liked to look at the killed and wounded, thereby, he considered, testing his strength of mind. This day the horrible appearance of the battlefield overcame that strength of mind which he thought constituted his merit and his greatness. Napoleon rode hurriedly from the battlefield and returned to the Shevárdino knoll, where he sat on his campstool, his sallow face swollen and heavy, his eyes dim, his nose red, and his voice hoarse, involuntarily listening, with downcast eyes, to the sounds of firing. With painful dejection Napoleon awaited the end of this action, in which he regarded himself as a participant and which he was unable to arrest. A personal, human feeling for a brief moment got the better of the artificial phantasm of life he had served so long. He felt in his own person the sufferings and death he had witnessed on the battlefield.

The heaviness of his head and chest reminded him of the possibility of suffering and death for himself. At that moment Napoleon did not desire Moscow, or victory, or glory (what need had he for any more glory?). The one thing he wished for was rest, tranquility, and freedom. But when he had been on the Semënovsk heights the artillery commander had proposed to him to bring several batteries of artillery up to those heights to strengthen the fire on the Russian troops crowded in front of Knyazkóvo. Napoleon had assented and had given orders that news should be brought to him of the effect those batteries produced.

An adjutant came now to inform Napoleon that the fire of two hundred guns had been concentrated on the Russians, as he had ordered, but that they still held their ground.

“Our fire is mowing them down by rows, but still they hold on,” said the adjutant.

“They want more!...” said Napoleon in a hoarse voice.

“Sire?” asked the adjutant who had not heard the remark.

“They want more!” croaked Napoleon frowning. “Let them have it!”

Even before Napoleon gave that order the thing he did not desire, and for which he gave the order only because he thought it was expected of him, was being done. And Napoleon fell back into that artificial realm of imaginary greatness, and again—as a horse walking a treadmill thinks it is doing something for itself—he submissively fulfilled the cruel, sad, gloomy, and inhuman role predestined for him.

And not for that day and hour alone were the mind and conscience darkened of this man on whom the responsibility for what was happening lay more than on all the others who took part in it. Never to the end of Napoleon’s life could he understand goodness, beauty, or truth, or the significance of his actions which were too contrary to goodness and truth, too remote from everything human, for him ever to be able to grasp their

meaning. Napoleon could not disavow his actions, lauded as they were by half the world, and so he had to repudiate truth, goodness, and all humanity.

Not only on that day, as Napoleon rode over the battlefield strewn with men killed and maimed (by his will as he believed), did he reckon as he looked at them how many Russians there were for each Frenchman and, deceiving himself, find reasons for rejoicing in the calculation that there were five Russians for every Frenchman. Not on that day alone did Napoleon write in a letter to Paris that “the battle field was superb,” because fifty thousand corpses lay there, but even on the island of St. Helene in the peaceful solitude where Napoleon said he intended to devote his leisure to an account of the great deeds he had done, he wrote:

The Russian war should have been the most popular war of modern times: it was a war of good sense, for real interests, for the tranquility and security of all; it was purely pacific and conservative.

It was a war for a great cause, the end of uncertainties and the beginning of security. A new horizon and new labors were opening out, full of well-being and prosperity for all. The European system was already founded; all that remained was to organize it.

Satisfied on these great points and with tranquility everywhere, I too should have had my *Congress* and my *Holy Alliance*. Those ideas were stolen from me. In that reunion of great sovereigns we should have discussed our interests like one family, and have rendered account to the peoples as clerk to master.

Europe would in this way soon have been, in fact, but one people, and anyone who traveled anywhere would have found himself always in the common fatherland. I should have demanded the freedom of all navigable rivers for everybody, that the seas should be common to all, and that the great standing armies should be reduced henceforth to mere guards for the sovereigns.

On returning to France, to the bosom of the great, strong, magnificent, peaceful, and glorious fatherland, I should have proclaimed her frontiers immutable; all future wars purely *defensive*, all aggrandizement *anti-national*. I should have associated my son in the Empire; my *dictatorship* would have been finished, and his constitutional reign would have begun.

Paris would have been the capital of the world, and the French the envy of the nations!

My leisure then, and my old age, would have been devoted, in company with the Empress and during the royal apprenticeship of my son, to leisurely visiting, with our own horses and like a true country couple, every corner of the Empire, receiving complaints, redressing wrongs, and scattering public buildings and benefactions on all sides and everywhere.

Napoleon, predestined by Providence for the gloomy role of executioner of the peoples, assured himself that the aim of his actions had been the peoples' welfare and that he could control the fate of millions and by the employment of power confer benefactions.

"Of four hundred thousand who crossed the Vistula," Napoleon wrote further of the Russian war, "half were Austrians, Prussians, Saxons, Poles, Bavarians, Württembergers, Mecklenburgers, Spaniards, Italians, and Neapolitans. The Imperial army, strictly speaking, was one third composed of Dutch, Belgians, men from the borders of the Rhine, Piedmontese, Swiss, Genevese, Tuscans, Romans, inhabitants of the Thirty-second Military Division, of Bremen, of Hamburg, and so on: it included scarcely a hundred and forty thousand who spoke French. The Russian expedition actually cost France less than fifty thousand men; the Russian army in its retreat from Vilna to Moscow lost in the various battles four times more men than the French army; the burning of Moscow cost the lives of a hundred thousand Russians who died of cold and want in the woods; finally, in its march from Moscow to the Oder the Russian army also suffered from

the severity of the season; so that by the time it reached Vílna it numbered only fifty thousand, and at Kálisch less than eighteen thousand.”

Napoleon imagined that the war with Russia came about by his will, and the horrors that occurred did not stagger his soul. He boldly took the whole responsibility for what happened, and his darkened mind found justification in the belief that among the hundreds of thousands who perished there were fewer Frenchmen than Hessians and Bavarians.

Several tens of thousands of the slain lay in diverse postures and various uniforms on the fields and meadows belonging to the Davýdov family and to the crown serfs—those fields and meadows where for hundreds of years the peasants of Borodinó, Górkí, Shevárdino, and Semënovsk had reaped their harvests and pastured their cattle. At the dressing stations the grass and earth were soaked with blood for a space of some three acres around. Crowds of men of various arms, wounded and unwounded, with frightened faces, dragged themselves back to Mozháysk from the one army and back to Valúevo from the other. Other crowds, exhausted and hungry, went forward led by their officers. Others held their ground and continued to fire.

Over the whole field, previously so gaily beautiful with the glitter of bayonets and cloudlets of smoke in the morning sun, there now spread a mist of damp and smoke and a strange acid smell of saltpeter and blood. Clouds gathered and drops of rain began to fall on the dead and wounded, on the frightened, exhausted, and hesitating men, as if to say: “Enough, men! Enough! Cease... bethink yourselves! What are you doing?”

To the men of both sides alike, worn out by want of food and rest, it began equally to appear doubtful whether they should continue to slaughter one another; all the faces expressed hesitation, and the question arose in every soul: “For what, for whom, must I kill and be killed?... You may go and kill whom you please, but I don’t want to do so anymore!” By evening this thought had ripened in every soul. At any moment these men might

have been seized with horror at what they were doing and might have thrown up everything and run away anywhere.

But though toward the end of the battle the men felt all the horror of what they were doing, though they would have been glad to leave off, some incomprehensible, mysterious power continued to control them, and they still brought up the charges, loaded, aimed, and applied the match, though only one artilleryman survived out of every three, and though they stumbled and panted with fatigue, perspiring and stained with blood and powder. The cannon balls flew just as swiftly and cruelly from both sides, crushing human bodies, and that terrible work which was not done by the will of a man but at the will of God who governs men and worlds continued.

Anyone looking at the disorganized rear of the Russian army would have said that, if only the French made one more slight effort, it would disappear; and anyone looking at the rear of the French army would have said that the Russians need only make one more slight effort and the French would be destroyed. But neither the French nor the Russians made that effort, and the flame of battle burned slowly out.

The Russians did not make that effort because they were not attacking the French. At the beginning of the battle they stood blocking the way to Moscow and they still did so at the end of the battle as at the beginning. But even had the aim of the Russians been to drive the French from their positions, they could not have made this last effort, for all the Russian troops had been broken up, there was no part of the Russian army that had not suffered in the battle, and though still holding their positions they had lost ONE HALF of their army.

The French, with the memory of all their former victories during fifteen years, with the assurance of Napoleon's invincibility, with the consciousness that they had captured part of the battlefield and had lost only a quarter of their men and still had their Guards intact, twenty thousand strong, might easily have made that effort. The French who had

attacked the Russian army in order to drive it from its position ought to have made that effort, for as long as the Russians continued to block the road to Moscow as before, the aim of the French had not been attained and all their efforts and losses were in vain. But the French did not make that effort. Some historians say that Napoleon need only have used his Old Guards, who were intact, and the battle would have been won. To speak of what would have happened had Napoleon sent his Guards is like talking of what would happen if autumn became spring. It could not be. Napoleon did not give his Guards, not because he did not want to, but because it could not be done. All the generals, officers, and soldiers of the French army knew it could not be done, because the flagging spirit of the troops would not permit it.

It was not Napoleon alone who had experienced that nightmare feeling of the mighty arm being stricken powerless, but all the generals and soldiers of his army whether they had taken part in the battle or not, after all their experience of previous battles—when after one tenth of such efforts the enemy had fled—experienced a similar feeling of terror before an enemy who, after losing HALF his men, stood as threateningly at the end as at the beginning of the battle. The moral force of the attacking French army was exhausted. Not that sort of victory which is defined by the capture of pieces of material fastened to sticks, called standards, and of the ground on which the troops had stood and were standing, but a moral victory that convinces the enemy of the moral superiority of his opponent and of his own impotence was gained by the Russians at Borodinó. The French invaders, like an infuriated animal that has in its onslaught received a mortal wound, felt that they were perishing, but could not stop, any more than the Russian army, weaker by one half, could help swerving. By impetus gained, the French army was still able to roll forward to Moscow, but there, without further effort on the part of the Russians, it had to perish, bleeding from the mortal wound it had received at Borodinó. The direct consequence of the

battle of Borodinó was Napoleon's senseless flight from Moscow, his retreat along the old Smolénsk road, the destruction of the invading army of five hundred thousand men, and the downfall of Napoleonic France, on which at Borodinó for the first time the hand of an opponent of stronger spirit had been laid.

BOOK 11: 1812



*A*bsolute continuity of motion is not comprehensible to the human mind. Laws of motion of any kind become comprehensible to man only when he examines arbitrarily selected elements of that motion; but at the same time, a large proportion of human error comes from the arbitrary division of continuous motion into discontinuous elements. There is a well-known, so-called sophism of the ancients consisting in this, that Achilles could never catch up with a tortoise he was following, in spite of the fact that he traveled ten times as fast as the tortoise. By the time Achilles has covered the distance that separated him from the tortoise, the tortoise has covered one tenth of that distance ahead of him: when Achilles has covered that tenth, the tortoise has covered another one hundredth, and so on forever. This problem seemed to the ancients insoluble. The absurd answer (that Achilles could never overtake the tortoise) resulted from this: that motion was arbitrarily divided into discontinuous elements, whereas the motion both of Achilles and of the tortoise was continuous.

By adopting smaller and smaller elements of motion we only approach a solution of the problem, but never reach it. Only when we have admitted the conception of the infinitely small, and the resulting geometrical progression with a common ratio of one tenth, and have found the sum of this progression to infinity, do we reach a solution of the problem.

A modern branch of mathematics having achieved the art of dealing with the infinitely small can now yield solutions in other more complex problems of motion which used to appear insoluble.

This modern branch of mathematics, unknown to the ancients, when dealing with problems of motion admits the conception of the infinitely small, and so conforms to the chief condition of motion (absolute continuity) and thereby corrects the inevitable error which the human mind cannot avoid when it deals with separate elements of motion instead of examining continuous motion.

In seeking the laws of historical movement just the same thing happens. The movement of humanity, arising as it does from innumerable arbitrary human wills, is continuous.

To understand the laws of this continuous movement is the aim of history. But to arrive at these laws, resulting from the sum of all those human wills, man's mind postulates arbitrary and disconnected units. The first method of history is to take an arbitrarily selected series of continuous events and examine it apart from others, though there is and can be no *beginning* to any event, for one event always flows uninterruptedly from another.

The second method is to consider the actions of some one man—a king or a commander—as equivalent to the sum of many individual wills; whereas the sum of individual wills is never expressed by the activity of a single historic personage.

Historical science in its endeavor to draw nearer to truth continually takes smaller and smaller units for examination. But however small the units it takes, we feel that to take any unit disconnected from others, or to assume a *beginning* of any phenomenon, or to say that the will of many men is expressed by the actions of any one historic personage, is in itself false.

It needs no critical exertion to reduce utterly to dust any deductions drawn from history. It is merely necessary to select some larger or smaller unit as the subject of observation—as criticism has every right to do, seeing that whatever unit history observes must always be arbitrarily selected.

Only by taking infinitesimally small units for observation (the differential of history, that is, the individual tendencies of men) and attaining to the art of integrating them (that is, finding the sum of these infinitesimals) can we hope to arrive at the laws of history.

The first fifteen years of the nineteenth century in Europe present an extraordinary movement of millions of people. Men leave their customary pursuits, hasten from one side of Europe to the other, plunder and slaughter one another, triumph and are plunged in despair, and for some years the whole course of life is altered and presents an intensive movement which first increases and then slackens. What was the cause of this movement, by what laws was it governed? asks the mind of man.

The historians, replying to this question, lay before us the sayings and doings of a few dozen men in a building in the city of Paris, calling these sayings and doings “the Revolution”; then they give a detailed biography of Napoleon and of certain people favorable or hostile to him; tell of the influence some of these people had on others, and say: that is why this movement took place and those are its laws.

But the mind of man not only refuses to believe this explanation, but plainly says that this method of explanation is fallacious, because in it a weaker phenomenon is taken as the cause of a stronger. The sum of human wills produced the Revolution and Napoleon, and only the sum of those wills first tolerated and then destroyed them.

“But every time there have been conquests there have been conquerors; every time there has been a revolution in any state there have been great men,” says history. And, indeed, human reason replies: every time conquerors appear there have been wars, but this does not prove that the

conquerors caused the wars and that it is possible to find the laws of a war in the personal activity of a single man. Whenever I look at my watch and its hands point to ten, I hear the bells of the neighboring church; but because the bells begin to ring when the hands of the clock reach ten, I have no right to assume that the movement of the bells is caused by the position of the hands of the watch.

Whenever I see the movement of a locomotive I hear the whistle and see the valves opening and wheels turning; but I have no right to conclude that the whistling and the turning of wheels are the cause of the movement of the engine.

The peasants say that a cold wind blows in late spring because the oaks are budding, and really every spring cold winds do blow when the oak is budding. But though I do not know what causes the cold winds to blow when the oak buds unfold, I cannot agree with the peasants that the unfolding of the oak buds is the cause of the cold wind, for the force of the wind is beyond the influence of the buds. I see only a coincidence of occurrences such as happens with all the phenomena of life, and I see that however much and however carefully I observe the hands of the watch, and the valves and wheels of the engine, and the oak, I shall not discover the cause of the bells ringing, the engine moving, or of the winds of spring. To that I must entirely change my point of view and study the laws of the movement of steam, of the bells, and of the wind. History must do the same. And attempts in this direction have already been made.

To study the laws of history we must completely change the subject of our observation, must leave aside kings, ministers, and generals, and study the common, infinitesimally small elements by which the masses are moved. No one can say in how far it is possible for man to advance in this way toward an understanding of the laws of history; but it is evident that only along that path does the possibility of discovering the laws of history lie, and that as yet not a millionth part as much mental effort has been

applied in this direction by historians as has been devoted to describing the actions of various kings, commanders, and ministers and propounding the historians' own reflections concerning these actions.

The forces of a dozen European nations allied with France burst into Russia. The Russian army and people avoided a collision until Smolénsk was reached, and again from Smolénsk to Borodinó. The French army pushed on to Moscow, its goal, its impetus ever increasing as it neared its aim, just as the velocity of a falling body increases as it approaches the earth. Behind it were seven hundred miles of hunger-stricken, hostile country; ahead were a few dozen miles separating it from its goal. Every soldier in Napoleon's army felt this and the invasion moved on by its own momentum.

The more the Russian army retreated the more fiercely a spirit of hatred of the enemy French flared up, and while the army retreated it increased and consolidated. At Borodinó, a collision took place between the Russians and the French. Neither army was broken up, but the Russian army retreated immediately after the collision as inevitably as a ball recoils after colliding with another having a greater momentum, and with equal inevitability the ball of invasion that had advanced with such momentum rolled on for some distance, though the collision had deprived it of all its force.

The Russians retreated eighty miles—to beyond Moscow—and when French reached Moscow, they came to a standstill. For five weeks after that there was not a single battle. The French did not move. As a bleeding, mortally wounded animal licks its wounds, the French remained inert in Moscow for five weeks, and then suddenly, with no fresh reason, they retreated: the French made a dash back to the Kalúga road, and (after a victory—for at Málo-Yaroslávets the field of conflict again remained theirs) without undertaking a single serious battle, the French fled still more

rapidly back to Smolénsk, beyond Smolénsk, beyond the Berëzina, beyond Vılna, and farther still back towards France.

All that was in the future, though. On the evening of the twenty-sixth of August, Marshal Kutuzov and the whole Russian army were convinced that the battle of Borodinó was a victory. Marshal Kutuzov reported so to the Tzar. Marshal Kutuzov gave orders to prepare for a fresh conflict to finish the enemy and did this not to deceive anyone, but because he knew that the enemy was beaten, as everyone who had taken part in the battle knew it.

But all that evening and the next day reports came in one after another of unheard-of losses, of the loss of half the Russian army, and a fresh battle proved physically impossible.

It was impossible for the Russian army to give battle before information had been collected, the wounded gathered in, the supplies of ammunition replenished, the slain reckoned up, new officers appointed to replace those who had been killed, and before the men had had food and sleep. And meanwhile, the very next morning after the battle, the French army advanced of itself towards the Russians, carried forward by the force of its own momentum now seemingly increased in inverse proportion to the square of the distance from its aim. Marshal Kutuzov's wish was to attack the next day, and the whole Russian army desired to do so. But to make an attack, merely the wish to attack is not sufficient, but rather, there must also be a possibility of attacking, and that possibility did not exist. It was impossible not to retreat a day's march, and then in the same way it was impossible not to retreat another and a third day's march, and at last, on the first of September when the Russian army drew near Moscow—despite the strength of the feeling that had arisen in all ranks—the force of circumstances compelled it to retire beyond Moscow. And the Russian troops retired one more, last, day's march, and abandoned Moscow to the enemy.

For people accustomed to think that plans of campaign and battles are made by generals—as anyone of us sitting over a map in his study may imagine how he would have arranged things in this or that battle—the questions present themselves: Why did Marshal Kutuzov during the retreat not do this or that? Why did he not take up a position before reaching Filí? Why did Marshal Kutuzov not retire at once by the Kalúga road, abandoning Moscow? and so on. People accustomed to think in that way forget, or do not know, the inevitable conditions which always limit the activities of any Marshal. The activity of a Marshal does not at all resemble the activity we imagine to ourselves when we sit at ease in our studies examining some campaign on the map, with a certain number of troops on this and that side in a certain known locality, and begin our plans from some given moment. A Marshal is never dealing with the *beginning* of any event—the position from which we always contemplate it. A Marshal is always in the midst of a series of shifting events and so he never can at any moment consider the whole import of an event that is occurring. Moment by moment the event is imperceptibly shaping itself, and at every moment of this continuous, uninterrupted shaping of events the Marshal is in the midst of a most complex play of intrigues, worries, contingencies, authorities, projects, counsels, threats, and deceptions and is continually obliged to reply to innumerable questions addressed to him, which constantly conflict with one another.

Learned military authorities quite seriously tell us that Marshal Kutuzov should have moved his army to the Kalúga road long before reaching Filí, and that somebody actually submitted such a proposal to him. But a Marshal, especially at a difficult moment, has always before him not one proposal but dozens simultaneously. And all these proposals, based on strategics and tactics, contradict each other.

A Marshal's business, it would seem, is simply to choose one of these projects. But even that he cannot do. Events and time do not wait. For

instance, on the twenty-eighth it is suggested to him to cross to the Kalúga road, but just then an adjutant gallops up from General Milorádovich asking whether he is to engage the French or retire. An order must be given him at once, that instant. And the order to retreat carries us past the turn to the Kalúga road. And after the adjutant comes the commissary general asking where the stores are to be taken, and the chief of the hospitals asks where the wounded are to go, and a courier from St. Petersburg brings a letter from the sovereign which does not admit of the possibility of abandoning Moscow, and the Marshal's rival, the man who is undermining him (and there are always not merely one but several such), presents a new project diametrically opposed to that of turning to the Kalúga road, and the Marshal himself needs sleep and refreshment to maintain his energy and a respectable general who has been overlooked in the distribution of rewards comes to complain, and the inhabitants of the district pray to be defended, and an officer sent to inspect the locality comes in and gives a report quite contrary to what was said by the officer previously sent; and a spy, a prisoner, and a general who has been on reconnaissance, all describe the position of the enemy's army differently. People accustomed to misunderstand or to forget these inevitable conditions of a Marshal's actions describe to us, for instance, the position of the army at Filí and assume that the Marshal could, on the first of September, quite freely decide whether to abandon Moscow or defend it; whereas, with the Russian army less than four miles from Moscow, no such question existed. When had that question been settled? At Drissa and at Smolénsk and most palpably of all on the twenty-fourth of August at Shevárdino and on the twenty-sixth at Borodinó, and each day and hour and minute of the retreat from Borodinó to Filí.

When General Ermólov, having been sent by Marshal Kutuzov to inspect the position, told Marshal Kutuzov that it was impossible to fight there before Moscow and that they must retreat, Marshal Kutuzov looked at him in silence.

“Give me your hand,” said Marshal Kutuzov and, turning it over so as to feel the pulse, added: “You are not well, my dear General Ermólov. Think what you are saying!”

Marshal Kutuzov could not yet admit the possibility of retreating beyond Moscow without a battle.

On the Poklónny Hill, four miles from the Dorogomílov gate of Moscow, Marshal Kutuzov got out of his carriage and sat down on a bench by the roadside. A great crowd of generals gathered around him, and Mayor Rostopchin, who had come out from Moscow, joined them. This brilliant company separated into several groups who all discussed the advantages and disadvantages of the position, the state of the army, the plans suggested, the situation of Moscow, and military questions generally. Though they had not been summoned for the purpose, and though it was not so called, they all felt that this was really a council of war. The conversations all dealt with public questions. If anyone gave or asked for personal news, it was done in a whisper and they immediately reverted to general matters. No jokes, or laughter, or smiles even, were seen among all these men. They evidently all made an effort to hold themselves at the height the situation demanded. And all these groups, while talking among themselves, tried to keep near Marshal Kutuzov (whose bench formed the center of the gathering) and to speak so that he might overhear them. Marshal Kutuzov listened to what was being said and sometimes asked them to repeat their remarks, but did not himself take part in the conversations or express any opinion. After hearing what was being said by one or other of these groups he generally turned away with an air of disappointment, as though they were not speaking of anything he wished to hear. Some discussed the position that had been chosen, criticizing not the position itself so much as the mental capacity of those who had chosen it. Others argued that a mistake had been made earlier and that a battle should have been fought two days before. Others again spoke of the battle of Salamanca, which was described by

Crosart, a newly arrived Frenchman in a Spanish uniform. (This Frenchman and one of the German Barons serving with the Russian army were discussing the siege of Saragossa and considering the possibility of defending Moscow in a similar manner.) Mayor Rostopchin was telling a fourth group that he was prepared to die with the city train bands under the walls of the capital, but that he still could not help regretting having been left in ignorance of what was happening, and that had he known it sooner things would have been different... A fifth group, displaying the profundity of their strategic perceptions, discussed the direction the troops would now have to take. A sixth group was talking absolute nonsense. Marshal Kutuzov's expression grew more and more preoccupied and gloomy. From all this talk he saw only one thing: that to defend Moscow was a *physical impossibility* in the full meaning of those words, that is to say, so utterly impossible that if any senseless commander were to give orders to fight, confusion would result but the battle would still not take place. It would not take place because the commanders not merely all recognized the position to be impossible, but in their conversations were only discussing what would happen after its inevitable abandonment. How could the commanders lead their troops to a field of battle they considered impossible to hold? The lower-grade officers and even the soldiers (who too reason) also considered the position impossible and therefore could not go to fight, fully convinced as they were of defeat. If General Bennigsen insisted on the position being defended and others still discussed it, the question was no longer important in itself but only as a pretext for disputes and intrigue. This, Marshal Kutuzov knew well.

General Bennigsen, who had chosen the position, warmly displayed his Russian patriotism (Marshal Kutuzov could not listen to this without wincing) by insisting that Moscow must be defended. His aim was as clear as daylight to Marshal Kutuzov: if the defense failed, to throw the blame on Marshal Kutuzov who had brought the army as far as the Sparrow Hills

without giving battle; if it succeeded, to claim the success as his own; or if battle were not given, to clear himself of the crime of abandoning Moscow. But this intrigue did not now occupy the old man's mind. One terrible question absorbed Marshal Kutuzov and to that question he heard no reply from anyone. The question for Marshal Kutuzov now was: "Have I really allowed Napoleon to reach Moscow, and when did I do so? When was it decided? Can it have been yesterday when I ordered General Platov to retreat, or was it the evening before, when I had a nap and told General Bennigsen to issue orders? Or was it earlier still?... When, when was this terrible affair decided? Moscow must be abandoned. The army must retreat and the order to do so must be given." To give that terrible order seemed to Marshal Kutuzov equivalent to resigning the command of the army. And not only did he love power to which he was accustomed (the honors awarded to Baron Prozoróvski, under whom he had served in Turkey, galled him), but he was convinced that he was destined to save Russia and that that was why, against the Tzar's wish and by the will of the people, he had been chosen Marshal. Marshal Kutuzov was convinced that he alone could maintain command of the army in these difficult circumstances, and that in all the world he alone could encounter the invincible Napoleon without fear, and he was horrified at the thought of the order he had to issue. But something had to be decided, and these conversations around him which were assuming too free a character must be stopped.

Marshal Kutuzov called the most important generals to him.

"My head, be it good or bad, must depend on itself," said Marshal Kutuzov, rising from the bench, and he rode to Filí where his carriages were waiting.

The Council of War began to assemble at two in the afternoon in the better and roomier part of peasant's hut. The men, women, and children of the large peasant family crowded into the back room across the passage. Only Malásha, the peasant's six-year-old granddaughter whom Marshal

Kutuzov had petted and to whom he had given a lump of sugar while drinking his tea, remained on the top of the brick oven in the larger room. The girl, Malásha, looked down from the oven with shy delight at the faces, uniforms, and decorations of the generals, who one after another came into the room and sat down on the broad benches in the corner under the icons. “Granddad” himself, as Malásha in her own mind called Marshal Kutuzov, sat apart in a dark corner behind the oven. Marshal Kutuzov sat, sunk deep in a folding armchair, and continually cleared his throat and pulled at the collar of his coat which, though it was unbuttoned, still seemed to pinch his neck. Those who entered went up one by one to Marshal Kutuzov; he pressed the hands of some and nodded to others. Marshal Kutuzov’s adjutant Kaysárov was about to draw back the curtain of the window facing Marshal Kutuzov, but Marshal Kutuzov moved his hand angrily and Kaysárov understood that his Serene Highness did not wish his face to be seen.

Round the peasant’s table, on which lay maps, plans, pencils, and papers, so many people gathered that the orderlies brought in another bench and put it beside the table. General Ermólov, Kaysárov, and Toll, who had just arrived, sat down on this bench. In the foremost place, immediately under the icons, sat Barclay, his high forehead merging into his bald crown. Barclay had a St. George’s Cross round his neck and looked pale and ill. He had been feverish for two days and was now shivering and in pain. Beside him sat Uvárov, who with rapid gesticulations was giving him some information, speaking in low tones as they all did. Chubby little General Dokhtúrov was listening attentively with eyebrows raised and arms folded on his stomach. On the other side sat General Ostermann, seemingly absorbed in his own thoughts. His broad head with its bold features and glittering eyes was resting on his hand. Raévski, twitching forward the black hair on his temples as was his habit, glanced now at Marshal Kutuzov and now at the door with a look of impatience. Konovnítsyn’s firm,

handsome, and kindly face was lit up by a tender, sly smile. Konovnítsyn's glance met Malásha's, and the expression of his eyes caused the little girl to smile.

They were all waiting for General Bennigsen, who on the pretext of inspecting the position was finishing his savory dinner. They waited for him from four till six o'clock and did not begin their deliberations all that time but talked in low tones of other matters.

Only when General Bennigsen had entered the hut did Marshal Kutuzov leave his corner and draw toward the table, but not near enough for the candles that had been placed there to light up his face.

General Bennigsen opened the council with the question: "Are we to abandon Russia's ancient and sacred capital without a struggle, or are we to defend it?" A prolonged silence followed. There was a frown on every face and only Marshal Kutuzov's angry grunts and occasional cough broke the silence. All eyes were gazing at him. Malásha too looked at "Granddad." She was nearest to Marshal Kutuzov and saw how his face puckered; he seemed about to cry, but this did not last long.

"Russia's ancient and sacred capital!" Marshal Kutuzov suddenly said, repeating General Bennigsen's words in an angry voice and thereby drawing attention to the false note in them. "Allow me to tell you, your excellency, that that question has no meaning for a Russian." (He lurched his heavy body forward.) "Such a question cannot be put; it is senseless! The question I have asked these gentlemen to meet to discuss is a military one. The question is that of saving Russia. Is it better to give up Moscow without a battle, or by accepting battle to risk losing the army as well as Moscow? That is the question on which I want your opinion," and he sank back in his chair.

The discussion began. General Bennigsen did not yet consider his game lost. Admitting the view of Barclay and others that a defensive battle at Filí was impossible, but imbued with Russian patriotism and the love of

Moscow, General Bennigsen proposed to move troops from the right to the left flank during the night and attack the French right flank the following day. Opinions were divided, and arguments were advanced for and against that project. General Ermólov, General Dokhtúrov, and Raévski agreed with General Bennigsen. Whether feeling it necessary to make a sacrifice before abandoning the capital or guided by other, personal considerations, these generals seemed not to understand that this council could not alter the inevitable course of events and that Moscow was in effect already abandoned. The other generals, however, understood it and, leaving aside the question of Moscow, spoke of the direction the army should take in its retreat. Malásha, who kept her eyes fixed on what was going on before her, understood the meaning of the council differently. It seemed to her that it was only a personal struggle between “Granddad” and “Long-coat” as she termed General Bennigsen. She saw that they grew spiteful when they spoke to one another, and in her heart she sided with “Granddad.” In the midst of the conversation Malásha noticed “Granddad” give General Bennigsen a quick, subtle glance, and then to her joys she saw that “Granddad” said something to “Long-coat” which settled him. General Bennigsen suddenly reddened and paced angrily up and down the room. What so affected him was Marshal Kutuzov’s calm and quiet comment on the advantage or disadvantage of General Bennigsen’s proposal to move troops by night from the right to the left flank to attack the French right wing.

“Gentlemen,” said Marshal Kutuzov, “I cannot approve of General Bennigsen’s plan. Moving troops in close proximity to an enemy is always dangerous, and military history supports that view. For instance...” Marshal Kutuzov seemed to reflect, searching for an example, then with a clear, naive look at General Bennigsen he added: “Oh yes; take the battle of Friedland, which I think General Bennigsen well remembers, and which

was... not fully successful, only because our troops were rearranged too near the enemy..."

There followed a momentary pause, which seemed very long to them all.

The discussion recommenced, but pauses frequently occurred and they all felt that there was no more to be said.

During one of these pauses Marshal Kutuzov heaved a deep sigh as if preparing to speak. They all looked at him.

"Well, gentlemen, I see that it is I who will have to pay for the broken crockery," said Marshal Kutuzov, and rising slowly he moved to the table. "Gentlemen, I have heard your views. Some of you will not agree with me. But I," Marshal Kutuzov paused, "by the authority entrusted to me by my Sovereign and country, order a retreat."

After that the generals began to disperse with the solemnity and circumspect silence of people who are leaving, after a funeral.

Some of the generals, in low tones and in a strain very different from the way they had spoken during the council, communicated something to Marshal Kutuzov.

Malásha, who had long been expected for supper, climbed carefully backwards down from the oven, her bare little feet catching at its projections, and slipping between the legs of the generals she darted out of the room.

When Marshal Kutuzov had dismissed the generals, he sat a long time with his elbows on the table, thinking always of the same terrible question: "When, when did the abandonment of Moscow become inevitable? When was that done which settled the matter? And who was to blame for it?"

"I did not expect this," said Marshal Kutuzov to his adjutant Schneider when the latter came in late that night. "I did not expect this! I did not think this would happen."

"You should take some rest, your Serene Highness," replied Schneider.

“But no! The French shall eat horseflesh yet, like the Turks!” exclaimed Marshal Kutuzov without replying, striking the table with his podgy fist. “They shall too, if only...”

At that very time, in circumstances even more important than retreating without a battle, namely the evacuation and burning of Moscow, Mayor Rostopchin, who is usually represented as being the instigator of that event, acted in an altogether different manner from Marshal Kutuzov.

After the battle of Borodinó the abandonment and burning of Moscow was as inevitable as the retreat of the army beyond Moscow without fighting.

Every Russian might have predicted it, not by reasoning but by the feeling implanted in each of us and in our fathers.

The same thing that took place in Moscow had happened in all the towns and villages on Russian soil beginning with Smolénsk, without the participation of Mayor Rostopchin and his broadsheets. The people awaited the enemy unconcernedly, did not riot or become excited or tear anyone to pieces, but faced its fate, feeling within it the strength to find what it should do at that most difficult moment. And as soon as the enemy drew near the wealthy classes went away abandoning their property, while the poorer remained and burned and destroyed what was left.

The consciousness that this would be so and would always be so was and is present in the heart of every Russian. And a consciousness of this, and a foreboding that Moscow would be taken, was present in Russian Moscow society in 1812. Those who had quitted Moscow already in July and at the beginning of August showed that they expected this. Those who went away, taking what they could and abandoning their houses and half their belongings, did so from the latent patriotism which expresses itself not by phrases or by giving one's children to save the fatherland and similar unnatural exploits, but unobtrusively, simply, organically, and therefore in the way that always produces the most powerful results.

“It is disgraceful to run away from danger; only cowards are running away from Moscow,” those who had left Moscow were told. In his broadsheets Mayor Rostopchin impressed on them that to leave Moscow was shameful. They were ashamed to be called cowards, ashamed to leave, but still they left, knowing it had to be done. Why did they go? It is impossible to suppose that Mayor Rostopchin had scared them by his accounts of horrors Napoleon had committed in conquered countries. The first people to go away were the rich educated people who knew quite well that Vienna and Berlin had remained intact and that during Napoleon’s occupation the inhabitants had spent their time pleasantly in the company of the charming Frenchmen whom the Russians, and especially the Russian ladies, then liked so much.

Moscow residents went away because for Russians there could be no question as to whether things would go well or ill under French rule in Moscow. It was out of the question to be under French rule, it would be the worst thing that could happen. They went away even before the battle of Borodinó and still more rapidly after it, despite Mayor Rostopchin’s calls to defend Moscow or the announcement of his intention to take the wonder-working icon of the Iberian Mother of God and go to fight, or of the balloons that were to destroy the French, and despite all the nonsense Mayor Rostopchin wrote in his broadsheets. Moscow residents knew that it was for the army to fight, and that if it could not succeed it would not do to take young ladies and house serfs to the Three Hills quarter of Moscow to fight Napoleon, and that they must go away, sorry as they were to abandon their property to destruction. They went away without thinking of the tremendous significance of that immense and wealthy city being given over to destruction, for a great city with wooden buildings was certain when abandoned by its inhabitants to be burned. They went away each on his own account, and yet it was only in consequence of their going away that the momentous event was accomplished that will always remain the greatest

glory of the Russian people. The lady who, afraid of being stopped by Mayor Rostopchin's orders, had already in June moved with her Negroes and her women jesters from Moscow to her Sarátov estate, with a vague consciousness that she was not Napoleon's servant, was really, simply, and truly carrying out the great work which saved Russia. But Mayor Rostopchin, who now taunted those who left Moscow and now had the government offices removed; now distributed quite useless weapons to the drunken rabble; now had processions displaying the icons, and now forbade Father Augustin to remove icons or the relics of saints; now seized all the private carts in Moscow and on one hundred and thirty-six of them removed the balloon that was being constructed by Leppich; now hinted that he would burn Moscow and related how he had set fire to his own house; now wrote a proclamation to the French solemnly upbraiding them for having destroyed his Orphanage; now claimed the glory of having hinted that he would burn Moscow and now repudiated the deed; now ordered the people to catch all spies and bring them to him, and now reproached them for doing so; now expelled all the French residents from Moscow, and now allowed Madame Aubert-Chalmé (the center of the whole French colony in Moscow) to remain, but ordered the venerable old Postmaster Klyucharëv to be arrested and exiled for no particular offense; now assembled the people at the Three Hills to fight the French and now, to get rid of them, handed over to them a man to be killed and himself drove away by a back gate; now declared that he would not survive the fall of Moscow, and now wrote French verses in albums concerning his share in the affair—this man did not understand the meaning of what was happening but merely wanted to do something himself that would astonish people, to perform some patriotically heroic feat; and like a child he made sport of the momentous, and unavoidable event—the abandonment and burning of Moscow—and tried with his puny hand now to speed and now to stay the enormous, popular tide that bore him along with it.

Helene, having returned with the court from Vίlna to St. Petersburg, found herself in a difficult position.

In St. Petersburg Helene had enjoyed the special protection of an elderly grandee who occupied one of the highest posts in the Empire. In Vίlna, Helene had formed an intimacy with a young foreign Baron. When she returned to St. Petersburg both the elderly grandee and the foreign Baron were there, and both claimed their rights. Helene was faced by a new problem—how to preserve her intimacy with both without offending either.

What would have seemed difficult or even impossible to another woman did not cause the least embarrassment to Helene, who evidently deserved her reputation of being a very clever woman. Had she attempted concealment from either the elderly grandee or the young foreign Baron, or tried to extricate herself from her awkward position by cunning, Helene would have spoiled her case by acknowledging herself guilty. But Helene, like a really great man who can do whatever he pleases, at once assumed her own position to be correct, as she sincerely believed it to be, and that everyone else was to blame.

The first time the young Baron allowed himself to reproach Helene, she lifted her beautiful head and, half turning to him, said firmly: “That’s just like a man—selfish and cruel! I expected nothing else. A woman sacrifices herself for you, she suffers, and this is her reward! What right have you, monseigneur, to demand an account of my attachments and friendships? The grandee is a man who has been more than a father to me!” The foreign Baron was about to say something, but Helene interrupted him.

“Well, yes,” said Helene, “it may be that the grandee has other sentiments for me than those of a father, but that is not a reason for me to shut my door on him. I am not a man, that I should repay kindness with ingratitude! Know, monseigneur, that in all that relates to my intimate feelings I render account only to God and to my conscience,” Helene

concluded, laying her hand on her beautiful, fully expanded bosom and looking up to heaven.

“But for heaven’s sake listen to me!”

“Marry me, and I will be your slave!”

“But that’s impossible.”

“You won’t deign to demean yourself by marrying me, you...” said Helene, beginning to cry.

The foreign Baron tried to comfort her, but Helene, as if quite distraught, said through her tears that there was nothing to prevent her marrying, that there were precedents (there were up to that time very few, but she mentioned Napoleon and some other exalted personages), that she had never been her husband’s wife, and that she had been sacrificed.

“But the law, religion...” said the foreign Baron, already yielding.

“The law, religion... What have they been invented for if they can’t arrange that?” said Helene.

The foreign Baron was surprised that so simple an idea had not occurred to him, and he applied for advice to the holy brethren of the Society of Jesus, with whom he was on intimate terms.

A few days later at one of those enchanting fetes which Helene gave at her country house on the Stone Island, the charming Monsieur de Jobert, a man no longer young, with snow white hair and brilliant black eyes, a Jesuit *lay member of the Society of Jesus* was presented to her, and in the garden by the light of the illuminations and to the sound of music talked to her for a long time of the love of God, of Christ, of the Sacred Heart, and of the consolations the one true Catholic religion affords in this world and the next. Helene was touched, and more than once tears rose to her eyes and to those of Monsieur de Jobert and their voices trembled. A dance, for which her partner came to seek her, put an end to her discourse with Monsieur de Jobert, her future *director of conscience* but the next evening Monsieur de

Jobert came to see Helene when she was alone, and after that often came again.

One day Monsieur de Jobert took Helene to a Roman Catholic church, where she knelt down before the altar to which she was led. The enchanting, middle-aged Monsieur de Jobert laid his hands on her head and, as Helene herself afterward described it, she felt something like a fresh breeze wafted into her soul. It was explained to her that this was *the grace of God*.

After that, a long-froaked abbot was brought to Helene. She confessed to the abbot, and he absolved her from her sins. The next day, Helene received a box containing the Sacred Host, which was left at her house for her to partake of. A few days later, Helene learned with pleasure that she had now been admitted to the true Catholic Church and that in a few days the Pope himself would hear of her and would send her a certain document.

All that was done around Helene and to Helene at this time, all the attention devoted to her by so many clever men and expressed in such pleasant, refined ways, and the state of dove-like purity she was now in (she wore only white dresses and white ribbons all that time) gave her pleasure, but Helene's pleasure did not cause her for a moment to forget her aim. And as it always happens in contests of cunning that a stupid person gets the better of cleverer ones, Helene—having realized that the main object of all these words and all this trouble was, after converting her to Catholicism, to obtain money from her for Jesuit institutions (as to which she received indications)—before parting with her money insisted that the various operations necessary to free Helene from her husband, Pierre, should be performed. In Helene's view the aim of every religion was merely to preserve certain proprieties while affording satisfaction to human desires. And with this aim, in one of her talks with the abbot, Helene insisted on an answer to the question, in how far was she bound by her marriage?

Helene and the abbot were sitting in the twilight by a window in the drawing room. The scent of flowers came in at the window. Helene was wearing a white dress, transparent over her shoulders and bosom. The abbot, a well-fed man with a plump, clean-shaven chin, a pleasant firm mouth, and white hands meekly folded on his knees, sat close to Helene and, with a subtle smile on his lips and a peaceful look of delight at her beauty, occasionally glanced at her face as he explained his opinion on the subject. Helene with an uneasy smile looked at the abbot's curly hair and his plump, clean-shaven, blackish cheeks and every moment expected the conversation to take a fresh turn. But the abbot, though he evidently enjoyed the beauty of his companion, was absorbed in his mastery of the matter.

The course of the abbot's arguments ran as follows: "Ignorant of the import of what you, Helene, were undertaking, you made a vow of conjugal fidelity to a man who on his part, by entering the married state without faith in the religious significance of marriage, committed an act of sacrilege. That marriage lacked the dual significance it should have had. Yet in spite of this your vow was binding. You swerved from it. What did you commit by so acting? A venial, or a mortal, sin? A venial sin, for you acted without evil intention. If now you married again with the object of bearing children, your sin might be forgiven. But the question is again a twofold one: firstly..."

But suddenly Helene, who was getting bored, said with one of her bewitching smiles: "But I think that having espoused the true religion I cannot be bound by what a false religion laid upon me."

The abbot, the director of her conscience was astounded at having the case presented to him thus with the simplicity of Columbus' egg. He was delighted at the unexpected rapidity of his pupil's progress, but could not abandon the edifice of argument he had laboriously constructed.

“Let us understand one another, Helene,” said the abbot with a smile, and began refuting her arguments.

Helene understood that the question was very simple and easy from the ecclesiastical point of view, and that the abbot and her other directors were making difficulties only because they were apprehensive as to how the matter would be regarded by the secular authorities.

So Helene decided that it was necessary to prepare the opinion of society. Helene provoked the jealousy of the elderly grandee and told him what she had told her other suitor, the young foreign Baron; that is, she put the matter so that the only way for the elderly grandee to obtain a right over her was to marry her. The elderly grandee was at first as much taken aback by this suggestion of marriage with a woman whose husband, Pierre, was alive as the younger foreign Baron had been, but Helene’s imperturbable conviction that it was as simple and natural as marrying a maiden had its effect on him too. Had Helene herself shown the least sign of hesitation, shame, or secrecy, her cause would certainly have been lost; but not only did Helene show no signs of secrecy or shame, on the contrary, with good-natured naivete she told her intimate friends (and these were all St. Petersburg) that both the foreign Baron and the elderly grandee had proposed to her and that she loved both and was afraid of grieving either.

A rumor immediately spread in St. Petersburg, not that Helene wanted to be divorced from her husband, Pierre, (had such a report spread many would have opposed so illegal an intention) but simply that the unfortunate and interesting Helene was in doubt which of the two men she should marry, the elderly grandee or the young foreign Baron. The question was no longer whether this was possible, but only which was the better match and how the matter would be regarded at court. There were, it is true, some rigid individuals unable to rise to the height of such a question, who saw in the project a desecration of the sacrament of marriage, but there were not many such and they remained silent, while the majority were interested in

Helene's good fortune and in the question which match would be the more advantageous. Whether it was right or wrong to remarry while one had a husband living they did not discuss, for that question had evidently been settled by people "wiser than you or me," as they said, and to doubt the correctness of that decision would be to risk exposing one's stupidity and incapacity to live in society.

Only Mary Dmitrievna, who had come to St. Petersburg that summer to see one of her sons, allowed herself plainly to express an opinion contrary to the general one. Meeting Helene at a ball, Mary Dmitrievna stopped her in the middle of the room and, amid general silence, said in her gruff voice: "So wives of living men have started marrying again! Perhaps you think you have invented a novelty? You have been forestalled, my dear! It was thought of long ago. It is done in all the brothels," and with these words Mary Dmitrievna, turning up her wide sleeves with her usual threatening gesture and glancing sternly round, moved across the room.

Though people were afraid of Mary Dmitrievna she was regarded in St. Petersburg as a buffoon, and so of what she had said they only noticed, and repeated in a whisper, the one coarse word she had used, supposing the whole sting of her remark to lie in that word.

Baron Vasili, who of late very often forgot what he had said and repeated one and the same thing a hundred times, remarked to Helene whenever he chanced to see her:

"Helene, I have a word to say to you," and Baron Vasili would lead her aside, drawing her hand downward. "I have heard of certain projects concerning... you know. Well my dear Helene, you know how your father's heart rejoices to know that you... You have suffered so much... But, my dear Helene, consult only your own heart. That is all I have to say," and concealing his unvarying emotion he would press his cheek against his daughter's and move away.

Adjutant Bilibin, who had not lost his reputation of an exceedingly clever man, and who was one of the disinterested friends so brilliant a woman as Helene always has—men friends who can never change into lovers—once gave her his view of the matter at a small and intimate gathering.

“Listen, Adjutant Bilibin,” said Helene (she always called friends of that sort by their surnames), and she touched his coat sleeve with her white, fingers covered with rings. “Tell me, as you would a sister, what I ought to do. Which of the two men, the elderly grandee or the young foreign Baron?”

Adjutant Bilibin wrinkled up the skin over his eyebrows and pondered, with a smile on his lips.

“You are not taking me unawares, you know,” said Adjutant Bilibin. “As a true friend, I have thought and thought again about your affair. You see, if you marry the foreign Baron”—Adjutant Bilibin meant the younger man—and he crooked one finger, “you forever lose the chance of marrying the elderly grandee, and you will displease the court besides. (You know there is some kind of connection.) But if you marry the elderly grandee you will make his last days happy, and when he dies, then as widow ... the young foreign Baron would no longer be making a *mésalliance* by marrying you,” and Adjutant Bilibin smoothed out his forehead.

“That’s a true friend!” said Helene beaming, and again touching Adjutant Bilibin’s sleeve. “But I love them, you know, and don’t want to distress either of them. I would give my life for the happiness of them both.”

Adjutant Bilibin shrugged his shoulders, as much as to say that not even he could help in that difficulty.

“A *masterly woman*! That’s what is called putting things squarely. Helene would like to be married to all three at the same time,” thought he.

“But tell me, how will your husband, Pierre, look at the matter?” Adjutant Bilibin asked, his reputation being so well established that he did not fear to ask so naive a question. “Will he agree?”

“Oh, he loves me so!” said Helene, who for some reason imagined that Pierre too loved her. “He will do anything for me.”

Adjutant Bilibin puckered his skin in preparation for something witty.

“Even divorce you?” said he.

Helene laughed.

Among those who ventured to doubt the justifiability of the proposed marriage was Helene’s mother. She was continually tormented by jealousy of her daughter, and now that jealousy concerned a subject near to her own heart, she could not reconcile herself to the idea. Helene’s mother consulted a Russian priest as to the possibility of divorce and remarriage during a husband’s lifetime, and the priest told her that it was impossible, and to her delight showed her a text in the Gospel which (as it seemed to him) plainly forbids remarriage while the husband is alive.

Armed with these arguments, which appeared to her unanswerable, Helene’s mother drove to her daughter’s early one morning so as to find her alone.

Having listened to her mother’s objections, Helene smiled blandly and ironically.

“But it says plainly: ‘Whosoever shall marry her that is divorced...’” said Helene’s mother.

“*Oh, Mamma, don’t talk nonsense! You don’t understand anything. In my position I have obligations,*” said Helene changing from Russian, in which language she always felt that her case did not sound quite clear, into French which suited it better.

“But, my dear Helene...”

“Oh, Mamma, how is it you don’t understand that the Holy Father, who has the right to grant dispensations...”

Just then the lady companion who lived with Helene came in to announce that Baron Vasili was in the ballroom and wished to see her.

“No, tell him I don’t wish to see him, I am furious with him for not keeping his word to me.”

“There is mercy for every sin,” said a fair-haired young man with a long face and nose, as he entered the room.

Helene’s mother rose respectfully and curtsied. The young man who had entered took no notice of her. Helene’s mother nodded to her daughter and sidled out of the room.

“Yes, she is right,” thought Helene’s mother, all her convictions dissipated by the appearance of Baron Vasili. “She is right, but how is it that we in our irrecoverable youth did not know it? Yet it is so simple,” she thought as she got into her carriage.

By the beginning of August, Helene’s affairs were clearly defined and she wrote a letter to Pierre—who, as she imagined, loved her very much—informing him of her intention to marry the elderly grandee and of her having embraced the one true faith, and asking Pierre to carry out all the formalities necessary for a divorce, which would be explained to him by the bearer of the letter.

And so I pray God to have you, my friend Pierre, in His holy and powerful keeping—Your friend Helene.

This letter was brought to Pierre’s house when he was on the field of Borodinó.

Toward the end of the battle of Borodinó, Pierre, having run down from Raévski’s battery a second time, made his way through a gully to Knyazkóvo with a crowd of soldiers, reached the dressing station, and seeing blood and hearing cries and groans hurried on, still entangled in the crowds of soldiers.

The one thing Pierre now desired with his whole soul was to get away quickly from the terrible sensations amid which he had lived that day and return to ordinary conditions of life and sleep quietly in a room in his own bed. He felt that only in the ordinary conditions of life would he be able to understand himself and all he had seen and felt. But such ordinary conditions of life were nowhere to be found.

Though shells and bullets did not whistle over the road along which Pierre was going, still on all sides there was what there had been on the field of battle. There were still the same suffering, exhausted, and sometimes strangely indifferent faces, the same blood, the same soldiers' overcoats, the same sounds of firing which, though distant now, still aroused terror, and besides this there were the foul air and the dust.

Having gone a couple of miles along the Mozháysk road, Pierre sat down by the roadside.

Dusk had fallen, and the roar of guns died away. Pierre lay leaning on his elbow for a long time, gazing at the shadows that moved past him in the darkness. He was continually imagining that a cannon ball was flying toward him with a terrific whizz, and then he shuddered and sat up. He had no idea how long he had been there. In the middle of the night three soldiers, having brought some firewood, settled down near him and began lighting a fire.

The soldiers, who threw sidelong glances at Pierre, got the fire to burn and placed an iron pot on it into which they broke some dried bread and put a little dripping. The pleasant odor of greasy viands mingled with the smell of smoke. Pierre sat up and sighed. The three soldiers were eating and talking among themselves, taking no notice of him.

"And who may you be?" one of them suddenly asked Pierre, evidently meaning what Pierre himself had in mind, namely: "If you want to eat we'll give you some food, only let us know whether you are an honest man."

“I, I...” said Pierre, feeling it necessary to minimize his social position as much as possible so as to be nearer to the soldiers and better understood by them. “By rights I am a militia officer, but my men are not here. I came to the battle and have lost them.”

“There now!” said one of the soldiers.

Another shook his head.

“Would you like a little mash?” the first soldier asked, and handed Pierre a wooden spoon after licking it clean.

Pierre sat down by the fire and began eating the mash, as they called the food in the cauldron, and he thought it more delicious than any food he had ever tasted. As he sat bending greedily over it, helping himself to large spoonfuls and chewing one after another, his face was lit up by the fire and the soldiers looked at him in silence.

“Where have you to go to? Tell us!” said one of them.

“To Mozháysk.”

“You’re a gentleman, aren’t you?”

“Yes.”

“And what’s your name?”

“Pierre.”

“Well then, Pierre, come along with us, we’ll take you there.”

In the total darkness the soldiers walked with Pierre to Mozháysk.

By the time they got near Mozháysk and began ascending the steep hill into the town, the cocks were already crowing. Pierre went on with the soldiers, quite forgetting that his inn was at the bottom of the hill and that he had already passed it. He would not soon have remembered this, such was his state of forgetfulness, had he not halfway up the hill stumbled upon his groom, who had been to look for him in the town and was returning to the inn. Pierre’s groom recognized him in the darkness by his white hat.

“Your excellency, Pierre!” his groom said. “Why, we were beginning to despair! How is it you are on foot? And where are you going, please?”

“Oh, yes!” said Pierre.

The soldiers stopped.

“So you’ve found your folk?” said one of them. “Well, good-by, Pierre— isn’t it?”

“Good-by, Pierre!” Pierre heard the other voices repeat.

“Good-by!” Pierre said and turned with his groom toward the inn.

“I ought to give them something!” he thought, and felt in his pocket. “No, better not!” said another, inner voice.

There was not a room to be had at the inn, they were all occupied. Pierre went out into the yard and, covering himself up head and all, lay down in his carriage.

Scarcely had Pierre laid his head on the pillow before he felt himself falling asleep, but suddenly, almost with the distinctness of reality, he heard the *boom, boom, boom* of firing, the thud of projectiles, groans and cries, and smelled blood and powder, and a feeling of horror and dread of death seized him. Filled with fright he opened his eyes and lifted his head from under his cloak. All was tranquil in the yard. Only someone’s orderly passed through the gateway, splashing through the mud, and talked to the innkeeper. Above Pierre’s head some pigeons, disturbed by the movement he had made in sitting up, fluttered under the dark roof of the penthouse. The whole courtyard was permeated by a strong peaceful smell of stable yards, delightful to Pierre at that moment. He could see the clear starry sky between the dark roofs of two penthouses.

“Thank God, there is no more of that!” Pierre thought, covering up his head again. “Oh, what a terrible thing is fear, and how shamefully I yielded to it! But they... *they* were steady and calm all the time, to the end...” thought he.

They, in Pierre’s mind, were the soldiers, those who had been at the battery, those who had given him food, and those who had prayed before

the icon. *They*, those strange men he had not previously known, stood out clearly and sharply from everyone else.

“To be a soldier, just a soldier!” thought Pierre as he fell asleep, “to enter communal life completely, to be imbued by what makes them what they are. But how to cast off all the superfluous, devilish burden of my outer man? There was a time when I could have done it. I could have run away from my father, as I wanted to. Or I might have been sent to serve as a soldier after the duel with Dolokhov.” And the memory of the dinner at the English Club when he had challenged Dolokhov flashed through Pierre’s mind, and then he remembered his benefactor, Mason Bazdéev. And now a picture of a solemn meeting of the lodge presented itself to Pierre’s mind. It was taking place at the English Club and someone near and dear to him sat at the end of the table. “Yes, that is he! It is my benefactor, Mason Bazdéev. But he died!” thought Pierre. “Yes, he died, and I did not know he was alive. How sorry I am that he died, and how glad I am that he is alive again!” On one side of the table sat Anatole, Dolokhov, Sergeant Nesvitski, Denisov, and others like them (in his dream the category to which these men belonged was as clearly defined in his mind as the category of those he termed *they*), and he heard those people, Anatole and Dolokhov, shouting and singing loudly; yet through their shouting the voice of his benefactor was heard speaking all the time and the sound of his words was as weighty and uninterrupted as the booming on the battlefield, but pleasant and comforting. Pierre did not understand what Mason Bazdéev was saying, but he knew (the categories of thoughts were also quite distinct in his dream) that he was talking of goodness and the possibility of being what *they* were. And *they* with their simple, kind, firm faces surrounded his benefactor on all sides. But though they were kindly they did not look at Pierre and did not know him. Wishing to speak and to attract their attention, Pierre got up, but at that moment his legs grew cold and bare.

Pierre felt ashamed, and with one arm covered his legs from which his cloak had in fact slipped. For a moment as he was rearranging his cloak, Pierre opened his eyes and saw the same penthouse roofs, posts, and yard, but now they were all bluish, lit up, and glittering with frost or dew.

“It is dawn,” thought Pierre. “But that’s not what I want. I want to hear and understand Mason Bazdév’s words.” Again he covered himself up with his cloak, but now neither the lodge nor his benefactor was there. There were only thoughts clearly expressed in words, thoughts that someone was uttering or that he himself was formulating.

Afterwards when Pierre recalled those thoughts, he was convinced that someone outside himself had spoken them, though the impressions of that day had evoked them. He had never, it seemed to him, been able to think and express his thoughts like that when awake.

“To endure war is the most difficult subordination of man’s freedom to the law of God,” the voice had said. “Simplicity is submission to the will of God; you cannot escape from Him. And *they* are simple. *They* do not talk, but act. The spoken word is silver but the unspoken is golden. Man can be master of nothing while he fears death, but he who does not fear it possesses all. If there were no suffering, man would not know his limitations, would not know himself. The hardest thing (Pierre went on thinking, or hearing, in his dream) is to be able in your soul to unite the meaning of all. To unite all?” he asked himself. “No, not to unite. Thoughts cannot be united, but to *harness* all these thoughts together is what we need! Yes, one *must harness* them, *must harness* them!” he repeated to himself with inward rapture, feeling that these words and they alone expressed what he wanted to say and solved the question that tormented him.

“Yes, one must harness, it is time to harness.”

“Time to harness, time to harness, your excellency, Pierre! Your excellency!” some voice was repeating. “We must harness, it is time to

harness...”

It was the voice of Pierre’s groom, trying to wake him. The sun shone straight into Pierre’s face. He glanced at the dirty yard of the inn in the middle of which soldiers were watering their lean horses at the pump while carts were passing out of the gate. Pierre turned away with repugnance, and closing his eyes quickly fell back on the carriage seat. “No, I don’t want that, I don’t want to see and understand that. I want to understand what was revealing itself to me in my dream. One second more and I should have understood it all! But what am I to do? Harness, but how can I harness everything?” and Pierre felt with horror that the meaning of all he had seen and thought in the dream had been destroyed.

The groom, the coachman, and the innkeeper told Pierre that an officer had come with news that the French were already near Mozháysk and that our men were leaving it.

Pierre got up and, having told them to harness and overtake him, went on foot through the town.

The troops were moving on, leaving about ten thousand wounded behind them. There were wounded in the yards, at the windows of the houses, and the streets were crowded with them. In the streets, around carts that were to take some of the wounded away, shouts, curses, and blows could be heard. Pierre offered the use of his carriage, which had overtaken him, to a wounded general he knew, and drove with him to Moscow. On the way Pierre was told of the death of his brother-in-law Anatole and of that of Andrei.

On the thirtieth of August, Pierre reached Moscow. Close to the gates of the city he was met by Mayor Rostopchin’s adjutant.

“We have been looking for you everywhere,” said the adjutant. “Mayor Rostopchin wants to see you particularly. He asks you to come to him at once on a very important matter.”

Without going home, Pierre took a cab and drove to see the mayor.

Mayor Rostopchin had only that morning returned to town from his summer villa at Sokólniki. The anteroom and reception room of his house were full of officials who had been summoned or had come for orders. Vasílchikov and General Platov had already seen Mayor Rostopchin and explained to him that it was impossible to defend Moscow and that it would have to be surrendered. Though this news was being concealed from the inhabitants, the officials—the heads of the various government departments—knew that Moscow would soon be in the enemy's hands, just as Mayor Rostopchin himself knew it, and to escape personal responsibility they had all come to Mayor Rostopchin to ask how they were to deal with their various departments.

As Pierre was entering the reception room, a courier from the army came out of Mayor Rostopchin's private room.

In answer to questions with which he was greeted, the courier made a despairing gesture with his hand and passed through the room.

While waiting in the reception room Pierre with weary eyes watched the various officials, old and young, military and civilian, who were there. They all seemed dissatisfied and uneasy. Pierre went up to a group of men, one of whom he knew. After greeting Pierre they continued their conversation.

"If they're sent out and brought back again later on it will do no harm, but as things are now one can't answer for anything."

"But you see what Mayor Rostopchin writes..." said another, pointing to a printed sheet he held in his hand.

"That's another matter. That's necessary for the people," said the first.

"What is it?" asked Pierre.

"Oh, it's a fresh broadsheet."

Pierre took it and began reading.

The Tzar has passed through Mozháysk in order to join up with the troops moving toward him and has taken up a strong position where the enemy will not soon attack him. Forty-eight guns with ammunition have

been sent him from here, and Marshal Kutuzov says he will defend Moscow to the last drop of blood and is even ready to fight in the streets. Do not be upset, brothers, that the law courts are closed; things have to be put in order, and we will deal with villains in our own way! When the time comes I shall want both town and peasant lads and will raise the cry a day or two beforehand, but they are not wanted yet so I hold my peace. An ax will be useful, a hunting spear not bad, but a three-pronged fork will be best of all: a French soldier is no heavier than a sheaf of rye. Tomorrow after dinner I shall take the Iberian icon of the Mother of God to the wounded in the Catherine the Great Hospital where we will have some water blessed. That will help them to get well quicker. I, too, am well now: one of my eyes was sore but now I am on the lookout with both.

“But military men have told me that it is impossible to fight in the town,” said Pierre, “and that the position...”

“Well, of course! That’s what we were saying,” replied the first speaker.

“And what does t Mayor Rostopchin mean by ‘One of my eyes was sore but now I am on the lookout with both’?” asked Pierre.

“Mayor Rostopchin had a sty,” replied the adjutant smiling, “and was very much upset when I told him people had come to ask what was the matter with him. By the by, Pierre,” he added suddenly, addressing Pierre with a smile, “we heard that you have family troubles and that Helene, your wife...”

“I have heard nothing,” Pierre replied unconcernedly. “But what have you heard?”

“Oh, well, you know people often invent things. I only say what I heard.”

“But what did you hear?”

“Well, they say,” continued the adjutant with the same smile, “that Helene is preparing to go abroad. I expect it’s nonsense...”

“Possibly,” remarked Pierre, looking about him absent-mindedly. “And who is that?” he asked, indicating a short old man in a clean blue peasant overcoat, with a big snow-white beard and eyebrows and a ruddy face.

“He? That’s a tradesman, that is to say, he’s the restaurant keeper, Vereshchágín. Perhaps you have heard of that affair with the proclamation.”

“Oh, so that is Vereshchágín!” said Pierre, looking at the firm, calm face of the old man and seeking any indication of his being a traitor.

“That’s not Vereshchágín himself, that’s the father of the fellow who wrote the proclamation,” said the adjutant. “Vereshchágín is in prison and I expect it will go hard with him.”

An old gentleman wearing a star and another official, a German wearing a cross round his neck, approached the speaker.

“It’s a complicated story, you know,” said the adjutant. “That proclamation appeared about two months ago. Mayor Rostopchin was informed of it. He gave orders to investigate the matter. Gabriel Ivanovich here made the inquiries. The proclamation had passed through exactly sixty-three hands. He asked one, ‘From whom did you get it?’ ‘From so-and-so.’ He went to the next one. ‘From whom did you get it?’ and so on till he reached Vereshchágín, a half educated tradesman, you know, ‘a pet of a trader,’” said the adjutant smiling. “They asked him, ‘Who gave it you?’ And the point is that we knew whom he had it from. Vereshchágín could only have had it from the Postmaster. But evidently they had come to some understanding. Vereshchágín replied: ‘From no one; I made it up myself.’ They threatened and questioned him, but he stuck to that: ‘I made it up myself.’ And so it was reported to Mayor Rostopchin, who sent for Vereshchágín. ‘From whom did you get the proclamation?’ ‘I wrote it myself.’ Well, you know the mayor,” said the adjutant cheerfully, with a smile of pride, “he flared up dreadfully—and just think of the fellow’s audacity, lying, and obstinacy!”

“And Mayor Rostopchin wanted him to say it was from Postmaster Klyucharëv? I understand!” said Pierre.

“Not at all,” rejoined the adjutant in dismay. “Postmaster Klyucharëv had his own sins to answer for without that and that is why he has been banished. But the point is that Mayor Rostopchin was much annoyed. ‘Vereshchágin, how could you have written it yourself?’ said Mayor Rostopchin, and he took up the *Hamburg Gazette* that was lying on the table. ‘Here it is! You did not write it yourself but translated it, and translated it abominably, because you don’t even know French, you fool.’ And what do you think? ‘No,’ said Vereshchágin, ‘I have not read any papers, I made it up myself.’ ‘If that’s so, you’re a traitor and I’ll have you tried, and you’ll be hanged! Say from whom you had it.’ ‘I have seen no papers, I made it up myself.’ And that was the end of it. Mayor Rostopchin had the father fetched, but Vereshchágin stuck to it. He was sent for trial and condemned to hard labor, I believe. Now Vereshchágin’s father has come to intercede for him. But he’s a good-for-nothing lad! You know that sort of tradesman’s son, a dandy and lady-killer. Vereshchágin attended some lectures somewhere and imagines that the devil is no match for him. That’s the sort of fellow he is. Vereshchágin’s father keeps a shop providing food here by the Stone Bridge, and you know there was a large icon of God Almighty painted with a scepter in one hand and an orb in the other. Well, Vereshchágin’s father took that icon home with him for a few days and what did he do? He found some scoundrel of a painter...”

In the middle of this fresh tale, Pierre was summoned to Mayor Rostopchin.

When Pierre entered the private room, Mayor Rostopchin, puckering his face, was rubbing his forehead and eyes with his hand. A short man was saying something, but when Pierre entered he stopped speaking and went out.

“Ah, how do you do, great warrior Pierre?” said Mayor Rostopchin as soon as the short man had left the room. “We have heard of your prowess. But that’s not the point. Between ourselves, *my dear*, do you belong to the Masons?” Mayor Rostopchin went on severely, as though there were something wrong about it which he nevertheless intended to pardon. Pierre remained silent. “I am well informed, my friend Pierre, but I am aware that there are Masons and I hope that you are not one of those who on the pretense of saving mankind wish to ruin Russia.”

“Yes, I am a Mason,” Pierre replied.

“There, you see, *my dear!* I expect you know that Secretary of State Speransky and Magnítski have been deported to their proper place. Postmaster Klyucharëv has been treated in the same way, and so have others who on the plea of building up the temple of Solomon have tried to destroy the temple of their fatherland. You can understand that there are reasons for this and that I could not have exiled the Postmaster had he not been a harmful person. It has now come to my knowledge that you lent the Postmaster your carriage for his removal from town and that you have even accepted papers from him for safe custody. I like you and don’t wish you any harm and—as you are only half my age—I advise you, as a father would, to cease all communication with men of that stamp and to leave here as soon as possible.”

“But what did Postmaster Klyucharëv do wrong, Mayor Rostopchin?” asked Pierre.

“That is for me to know, but not for you to ask,” shouted Mayor Rostopchin.

“If Postmaster Klyucharëv is accused of circulating Napoleon’s proclamation it is not proved that he did so,” said Pierre without looking at Mayor Rostopchin, “and Vereshchágin...”

“There we are!” Mayor Rostopchin shouted at Pierre louder than before, frowning suddenly. “Vereshchágin is a renegade and a traitor who will be

punished as he deserves,” said he with the vindictive heat with which people speak when recalling an insult. “But I did not summon you to discuss my actions, but to give you advice—or an order if you prefer it. I beg you to leave the town and break off all communication with such men as Postmaster Klyucharëv. And I will knock the nonsense out of anybody”—but probably realizing that he was shouting at Pierre who so far was not guilty of anything, he added, taking Pierre’s hand in a friendly manner, “We are on the eve of a public disaster and I haven’t time to be polite to everybody who has business with me. My head is sometimes in a whirl. Well, *my dear*, what are you doing personally?”

“Why, nothing,” answered Pierre without raising his eyes or changing the thoughtful expression on his face.

Mayor Rostopchin frowned.

“A word of friendly advice, *my dear* Pierre. Be off as soon as you can, that’s all I have to tell you. Happy he who has ears to hear. Good-by, my dear fellow. Oh, by the by!” he shouted through the doorway after Pierre, “is it true that your wife Helene has fallen into the clutches of the holy fathers of the Society of Jesus?”

Pierre did not answer and left Mayor Rostopchin’s room more sullen and angry than he had ever before shown himself.

When Pierre reached home it was already getting dark. Some eight people had come to see him that evening: the secretary of a committee, the colonel of his battalion, his steward, his majordomo, and various petitioners. They all had business with Pierre and wanted decisions from him. Pierre did not understand and was not interested in any of these questions and only answered them in order to get rid of these people. When left alone at last he opened and read his wife’s letter.

“*They*, the soldiers at the battery, Andrei killed... that old man... Simplicity is submission to God. Suffering is necessary... the meaning of all... one must harness... my wife is getting married... One must forget and

understand..." And going to his bed, Pierre threw himself on it without undressing and immediately fell asleep.

When Pierre awoke the next morning, the majordomo came to inform him that a special messenger, a police officer, had come from Mayor Rostopchin to know whether Pierre had left or was leaving the town.

A dozen persons who had business with Pierre were awaiting him in the drawing room. Pierre dressed hurriedly and, instead of going to see them, went to the back porch and out through the gate.

From that time till the end of the destruction of Moscow no one in Pierre's household, despite all the searches they made, saw Pierre again or knew where he was.

The Rostovs remained in Moscow till the first of September, that is, till the eve of the enemy's entry into the city.

After Petya had joined Obolénski's regiment of Cossacks and left for Bélaya Tsérkov where that regiment was forming, Countess Rostov was seized with terror. The thought that both Nicholas and Petya were at the war, had both gone from under her wing, that today or tomorrow either or both of them might be killed like the three sons of one of her acquaintances, struck her that summer for the first time with cruel clearness. Countess Rostov tried to get Nicholas back and wished to go herself to join Petya, or to get him an appointment somewhere in St. Petersburg, but neither of these proved possible. Petya could not return unless his regiment did so or unless he was transferred to another regiment on active service. Nicholas was somewhere with the army and had not sent a word since his last letter, in which he had given a detailed account of his meeting with Marya. Countess Rostov did not sleep at night, or when she did fall asleep dreamed that she saw her sons lying dead. After many consultations and conversations, Count Rostov at last devised means to tranquilize her. Count Rostov got Petya transferred from Obolénski's regiment to Pierre's, which was in training near Moscow. Though Petya would remain in the service, this

transfer would give Countess Rostov the consolation of seeing at least one of her sons under her wing, and she hoped to arrange matters for her Petya so as not to let him go again, but always get him appointed to places where he could not possibly take part in a battle. As long as Nicholas alone was in danger Countess Rostov imagined that she loved her first-born, Nicholas, more than all her other children and even reproached herself for it; but when her youngest, nosed: the scapegrace who had been bad at lessons, was always breaking things in the house and making himself a nuisance to everybody, that snub-nosed Petya with his merry black eyes and fresh rosy cheeks where soft down was just beginning to show—when he was thrown amid those big, dreadful, cruel men who were fighting somewhere about something and apparently finding pleasure in it—then Countess Rostov thought she loved him more, much more than all her other children. The nearer the time came for Petya to return, the more uneasy grew Countess Rostov. She began to think she would never live to see such happiness. The presence of Sonya, of her beloved Natasha, or even of Count Rostov irritated her. “What do I want with them? I want no one but Petya,” she thought.

At the end of August, the Rostovs received another letter from Nicholas. Nicholas wrote from the province of Vorónezh where he had been sent to procure remounts, but that letter did not set Countess Rostov at ease. Knowing that one son was out of danger she became more anxious about Petya.

Though by the twentieth of August, nearly all the Rostovs’ acquaintances had left Moscow, and though everybody tried to persuade Countess Rostov to get away as quickly as possible, she would not hear of leaving before her treasure, her adored Petya, returned. On the twenty-eighth of August, Petya arrived. The passionate tenderness with which his mother received him did not please the sixteen-year-old officer. Though Countess Rostov concealed from him her intention of keeping him under

her wing, Petya guessed her designs, and instinctively fearing that he might give way to emotion when with her—might “become womanish” as he termed it to himself— Petya treated her coldly, avoided her, and during his stay in Moscow attached himself exclusively to Natasha for whom he had always had a particularly brotherly tenderness, almost lover-like.

Owing to Count Rostov’s customary carelessness, nothing was ready for their departure by the twenty-eighth of August and the carts that were to come from their Ryazán and Moscow estates to remove their household belongings did not arrive till the thirtieth.

From the twenty-eighth till the thirty-first all of Moscow was in a bustle and commotion. Every day thousands of men wounded at Borodinó were brought in by the Dorogomílov gate and taken to various parts of Moscow, and thousands of carts conveyed the inhabitants and their possessions out by the other gates. In spite of Mayor Rostopchin’s broadsheets, or because of them or independently of them, the strangest and most contradictory rumors were current in the town. Some rumors said that no one was to be allowed to leave the city, others on the contrary said that all the icons had been taken out of the churches and everybody was to be ordered to leave. Some rumors said there had been another battle after Borodinó at which the French had been routed, while others on the contrary reported that the Russian army had been destroyed. Some rumors talked about the Moscow militia which, preceded by the clergy, would go to the Three Hills; others whispered that Augustin had been forbidden to leave, that traitors had been seized, that the peasants were rioting and robbing people on their way from Moscow, and so on. But all this was only talk; in reality (though the Council of Filí, at which it was decided to abandon Moscow, had not yet been held) both those who went away and those who remained behind felt, though they did not show it, that Moscow would certainly be abandoned, and that they ought to get away as quickly as possible and save their belongings. It was felt that everything would suddenly break up and change,

but up to the first of September, nothing had done so. As a criminal who is being led to execution knows that he must die immediately, but yet the criminal looks about him and straightens the cap that is awry on his head, so Moscow involuntarily continued its wonted life, though it knew that the time of its destruction was near when the conditions of life to which its people were accustomed to submit would be completely upset.

During the three days preceding the occupation of Moscow, the whole Rostov family was absorbed in various activities. The head of the family, Count Rostov, continually drove about the city collecting the current rumors from all sides and gave superficial and hasty orders at home about the preparations for their departure.

Countess Rostov watched the things being packed, was dissatisfied with everything, was constantly in pursuit of Petya who was always running away from her, and was jealous of Natasha with whom Petya spent all his time. Sonya alone directed the practical side of matters by getting things packed. But of late, Sonya had been particularly sad and silent. Nicholas' letter in which he mentioned Marya had elicited, in Sonya's presence, joyous comments from Countess Rostov, who saw an intervention of Providence in this meeting of Marya and Nicholas.

"I was never pleased with Andrei's engagement to Natasha," said Countess Rostov, "but I always wanted Nicholas to marry Marya, and had a presentiment that it would happen. What a good thing it would be!"

Sonya felt that this was true: that the only possibility of restoring the Rostovs' affairs was by Nicholas marrying a rich woman, and that Marya was a good match. It was very bitter for Sonya. But despite her grief, or perhaps just because of it, Sonya took on herself all the difficult work of directing the storing and packing of their things and was busy for whole days. Count and Countess Rostov turned to Sonya when they had any orders to give. Petya and Natasha on the contrary, far from helping their parents, were generally a nuisance and a hindrance to everyone. Almost all

day long the house resounded with their running feet, their cries, and their spontaneous laughter. Petya and Natasha laughed and were gay not because there was any reason to laugh, but because gaiety and mirth were in their hearts and so everything that happened was a cause for gaiety and laughter to them. Petya was in high spirits because having left home a boy he had returned (as everybody told him) a fine young man because he was at home because he had left Bélaya Tsérkov where there was no hope of soon taking part in a battle and had come to Moscow where there was to be fighting in a few days, and chiefly because Natasha, whose lead Petya always followed, was in high spirits. Natasha was gay because she had been sad too long and now nothing reminded her of the cause of her sadness, and because she was feeling well. Natasha was also happy because she had someone to adore her: the adoration of others was a lubricant the wheels of her machine needed to make them run freely—and Petya adored her. Above all, Petya and Natasha were gay because there was a war near Moscow, there would be fighting at the town gates, arms were being given out, everybody was escaping—going away somewhere, and something extraordinary was happening, and that is always exciting, especially to the young.

On Saturday, the thirty-first of August, everything in the Rostovs' house seemed topsy-turvy. All the doors were open, all the furniture was being carried out or moved about, and the mirrors and pictures had been taken down. There were trunks in the rooms, and hay, wrapping paper, and ropes were scattered about. The peasants and house serfs carrying out the things were treading heavily on the parquet floors. The yard was crowded with peasant carts, some loaded high and already corded up, others still empty.

The voices and footsteps of the many servants and of the peasants who had come with the carts resounded as they shouted to one another in the yard and in the house. Count Rostov had been out since morning. Countess Rostov had a headache brought on by all the noise and turmoil and was lying down in the new sitting room with a vinegar compress on her head.

Petya was not at home, he had gone to visit a friend with whom he meant to obtain a transfer from the militia to the active army. Sonya was in the ballroom looking after the packing of the glass and china. Natasha was sitting on the floor of her dismantled room with dresses, ribbons, and scarves strewn all about her, gazing fixedly at the floor and holding in her hands the old ball dress (already out of fashion) that she had worn at her first St. Petersburg ball.

Natasha was ashamed of doing nothing when everyone else was so busy, and several times that morning had tried to set to work, but her heart was not in it, and she could not and did not know how to do anything except with all her heart and all her might. For a while, Natasha had stood beside Sonya while the china was being packed and tried to help, but soon gave it up and went to her room to pack her own things. At first, Natasha found it amusing to give away dresses and ribbons to the maids, but when that was done and what was left had still to be packed, she found it dull.

“You pack! You will, won’t you, dear?” And when the maid willingly promised to do it all for her, Natasha sat down on the floor, took her old ball dress, and fell into a reverie quite unrelated to what ought to have occupied her thoughts now. Natasha was roused from her reverie by the talk of the maids in the next room (which was theirs) and by the sound of their hurried footsteps going to the back porch. Natasha got up and looked out of the window. An enormously long row of carts full of wounded men had stopped in the street.

The housekeeper, the old nurse, the cooks, coachmen, maids, footmen, postilions, and scullions stood at the gate, staring at the wounded.

Natasha, throwing a clean pocket handkerchief over her hair and holding an end of it in each hand, went out into the street.

The former housekeeper had stepped out of the crowd by the gate, gone up to a cart with a hood constructed of bast mats, and was speaking to a pale young officer who lay inside. Natasha moved a few steps forward and

stopped shyly, still holding her handkerchief, and listened to what the housekeeper was saying.

“Then you have nobody in Moscow?” the housekeeper was saying. “You would be more comfortable somewhere in a house... in ours, for instance... the family is leaving.”

“I don’t know if it would be allowed,” replied the officer in a weak voice. “Here is our commanding officer... ask him,” and he pointed to a stout major who was walking back along the street past the row of carts.

Natasha glanced with frightened eyes at the face of the wounded officer and at once went to meet the major.

“May the wounded men stay in our house?” Natasha asked.

The major raised his hand to his cap with a smile.

“Which one do you want, Ma’am’selle?” said the major, screwing up his eyes and smiling.

Natasha quietly repeated her question, and her face and whole manner were so serious, though she was still holding the ends of her handkerchief, that the major ceased smiling and after some reflection—as if considering how far the thing was possible—replied in the affirmative.

“Oh yes, why not? They may,” the major said.

With a slight inclination of her head, Natasha stepped back quickly to the housekeeper, who stood talking compassionately to the officer.

“They may. The major says they may!” whispered Natasha.

The cart in which the officer lay was turned into the Rostovs’ yard, and dozens of carts with wounded men began at the invitation of the townsfolk to turn into the yards and to draw up at the entrances of the houses in Povarskáya Street. Natasha was evidently pleased to be dealing with new people outside the ordinary routine of her life. She and the housekeeper tried to get as many of the wounded as possible into their yard.

“Count Rostov must be told, though,” said Mávra Kuzmínichna.

“Never mind, never mind, what does it matter? For one day we can move into the drawing room. They can have all our half of the house.”

“There now, Natasha, you do take things into your head! Even if we put them into the wing, the men’s room, or the nurse’s room, we must ask permission.”

“Well, I’ll ask.”

Natasha ran into the house and went on tiptoe through the half-open door into the sitting room, where there was a smell of vinegar and Hoffman’s drops.

“Are you asleep, Mamma?”

“Oh, what sleep—?” said Countess Rostov, waking up just as she was dropping into a doze.

“Mamma darling!” said Natasha, kneeling by her mother and bringing her face close to her mother’s, “I am sorry, forgive me, I’ll never do it again; I woke you up! The housekeeper has sent me: they have brought some wounded here—officers. Will you let them come? They have nowhere to go. I knew you’d let them come!” Natasha said quickly all in one breath.

“What officers? Whom have they brought? I don’t understand anything about it,” said Countess Rostov.

Natasha laughed, and Countess Rostov too smiled slightly.

“I knew you’d give permission... so I’ll tell them,” and, having kissed her mother, Natasha got up and went to the door.

In the hall, she met Count Rostov, who had returned with bad news.

“We’ve stayed too long!” said Count Rostov with involuntary vexation. “The Club is closed and the police are leaving.”

“Papa, is it all right—I’ve invited some of the wounded into the house?” said Natasha.

“Of course, it is,” Count Rostov answered absently. “That’s not the point. I beg you not to indulge in trifles now, but to help to pack, and tomorrow we must go, go, go!...”

And Count Rostov gave a similar order to the majordomo and the servants.

At dinner, Petya, having returned home told them the news he had heard. Petya said the people had been getting arms in the Krémelin, and that though Mayor Rostopchin's broadsheet had said that he would sound a call two or three days in advance, the order had certainly already been given for everyone to go armed to the Three Hills tomorrow, and that there would be a big battle there.

Countess Rostov looked with timid horror at Petya's eager, excited face as he said this. Countess Rostov realized that if she said a word about Petya's not going to the battle (she knew Petya enjoyed the thought of the impending engagement), he would say something about men, honor, and the fatherland—something senseless, masculine, and obstinate which there would be no contradicting, and her plans would be spoiled; and so, hoping to arrange to leave before then and take Petya with her as their protector and defender, Countess Rostov did not answer him, but after dinner called Count Rostov aside and implored him with tears to take her away quickly, that very night if possible. With a woman's involuntary loving cunning Countess Rostov, who till then had not shown any alarm, said that she would die of fright if they did not leave that very night. Without any pretense, Countess Rostov was now afraid of everything.

Madame Schoss, who had been out to visit her daughter, increased Countess Rostov's fears still more by telling what she had seen at a spirit dealer's in Myasnitski Street. When returning by that street Madame Schoss had been unable to pass because of a drunken crowd rioting in front of the shop. She had taken a cab and driven home by a side street and the cabman had told her that the people were breaking open the barrels at the drink store, having received orders to do so.

After dinner, the whole Rostov household set to work with enthusiastic haste packing their belongings and preparing for their departure. Count

Rostov, suddenly setting to work, kept passing from the yard to the house and back again, shouting confused instructions to the hurrying people, and flurrying them still more. Petya directed things in the yard. Sonya, owing to Count Rostov's contradictory orders, lost her head and did not know what to do. The servants ran noisily about the house and yard, shouting and disputing. Natasha, with the ardor characteristic of all she did, suddenly set to work, too. At first, Natasha's intervention in the business of packing was received skeptically. Everybody expected some prank from her and did not wish to obey her; but Natasha resolutely and passionately demanded obedience, grew angry, and nearly cried because they did not heed her, and at last succeeded in making them believe her. Natasha's first exploit, which cost her immense effort and established her authority, was the packing of the carpets. Count Rostov had valuable Gobelin tapestries and Persian carpets in the house. When Natasha set to work two cases were standing open in the ballroom, one almost full up with crockery, the other with carpets. There was also much china standing on the tables, and still more was being brought in from the storeroom. A third case was needed and servants had gone to fetch it.

"Sonya, wait a bit—we'll pack everything into these," said Natasha.

"You can't, Natasha, we have tried to," said the butler's assistant.

"No, wait a minute, please."

And Natasha began rapidly taking out of the case dishes and plates wrapped in paper.

"The dishes must go in here among the carpets," said she.

"Why, it's a mercy if we can get the carpets alone into three cases," said the butler's assistant.

"Oh, wait, please!" And Natasha began rapidly and deftly sorting out the things. "These aren't needed," said she, putting aside some plates of Kiev ware. "These—yes, these must go among the carpets," Natasha said, referring to the Saxony china dishes.

“Don’t, Natasha! Leave it alone! We’ll get it all packed,” urged Sonya reproachfully.

“What a young lady Natasha is!” remarked the majordomo.

But Natasha would not give in. She turned everything out and began quickly repacking, deciding that the inferior Russian carpets and unnecessary crockery should not be taken at all. When everything had been taken out of the cases, they recommenced packing, and it turned out that when the cheaper things not worth taking had nearly all been rejected, the valuable ones really did all go into the two cases. Only the lid of the case containing the carpets would not shut down. A few more things might have been taken out, but Natasha insisted on having her own way. She packed, repacked, pressed, made the butler’s assistant and Petya—whom Natasha had drawn into the business of packing—press on the lid, and made desperate efforts herself.

“That’s enough, Natasha,” said Sonya. “I see you were right, but just take out the top one.”

“I won’t!” cried Natasha, with one hand holding back the hair that hung over her perspiring face, while with the other she pressed down the carpets. “Now press, Petya! Press, Petya, press hard!” she cried.

The carpets yielded and the lid closed; Natasha, clapping her hands, screamed with delight and tears fell from her eyes. But this only lasted a moment. Natasha at once set to work afresh and they now trusted her completely. Count Rostov was not angry even when they told him that Natasha had countermanded an order of his, and the servants now came to her to ask whether a cart was sufficiently loaded and whether it might be corded up. Thanks to Natasha’s directions, the work now went on expeditiously, unnecessary things were left, and the most valuable items were packed as compactly as possible.

But hard as they all worked till quite late that night, they could not get everything packed. Countess Rostov had fallen asleep and Count Rostov,

having put off their departure till the next morning, went to bed.

Sonya and Natasha slept in the sitting room without undressing.

That night another wounded man was driven down the Povarskáya, and the housekeeper, who was standing at the gate, had him brought into the Rostovs' yard. The housekeeper concluded that he was a very important man. He was being conveyed in a *carriage* with a raised hood and was quite covered by an apron. On the box beside the driver sat a venerable old attendant. A doctor and two soldiers followed the carriage in a cart.

"Please come in here. The masters are going away and the whole house will be empty," said the housekeeper to the old attendant.

"Well, perhaps," said the old attendant with a sigh. "We don't expect to get him home alive! We have a house of our own in Moscow, but it's a long way from here, and there's nobody living in it."

"Do us the honor to come in, there's plenty of everything in the master's house. Come in," said the housekeeper. "Is he very ill?" she asked.

The attendant made a hopeless gesture.

"We don't expect to get him home! We must ask the doctor."

And the old servant got down from the box and went up to the cart.

"All right!" said the doctor.

The old servant returned to the *carriage*, looked into it, shook his head disconsolately, told the driver to turn into the yard, and stopped beside the housekeeper.

"Oh, Lord Jesus Christ!" the housekeeper murmured.

She invited them to take the wounded man into the house.

"The masters won't object..." the housekeeper said.

But they had to avoid carrying the man upstairs, so they took him into the wing and put him in the room that had been Madame Schoss's.

This wounded man was Andrei.

Moscow's last day had come. It was a clear bright autumn day, a Sunday. The church bells everywhere were ringing for service, just as usual

on Sundays. Nobody seemed yet to realize what awaited the city.

Only two things indicated the social condition of Moscow—the rabble, that is the poor people, and the price of commodities. An enormous crowd of factory hands, house serfs, and peasants, with whom some officials, seminarists, and gentry were mingled, had gone early that morning to the Three Hills. Having waited there for Mayor Rostopchin who did not turn up, they became convinced that Moscow would be surrendered, and then dispersed all about the town to the public houses and shops providing food. Prices that day also indicated the state of affairs. The price of weapons, gold, carts, and horses, all kept rising, but the value of paper money and city articles kept falling so that by midday there were instances of carters removing valuable goods such as cloth and receiving in payment half of what they carted, while peasant horses were fetching five hundred rubles each, and furniture, mirrors, and bronzes were being given away for nothing.

In the Rostovs' staid old-fashioned house the dissolution of former conditions of life was but little noticeable. As to the serfs, the only indication was that three out of their huge retinue disappeared during the night, but nothing was stolen; and as to the value of their possessions, the thirty peasant carts that had come in from their estates and which many people envied proved to be extremely valuable and they were offered enormous sums of money for them. Not only were huge sums offered for Rostov's horses and carts, but on the previous evening and early in the morning of the first of September, orderlies and servants sent by wounded officers came to the Rostovs' and wounded men dragged themselves there from the Rostovs' and from neighboring houses where they were accommodated, entreating the servants to try to get them a lift out of Moscow. The majordomo to whom these entreaties were addressed, though he was sorry for the wounded, resolutely refused, saying that he dare not even mention the matter to Count Rostov. Pity these wounded men as one

might, it was evident that if they were given one cart there would be no reason to refuse another, or all the carts and one's own carriages as well. Thirty carts could not save all the wounded and in the catastrophe, one could not disregard oneself and one's own family. So thought the majordomo on his master's behalf.

On waking up that morning Count Rostov left his bedroom softly, so as not to wake Countess Rostov who had fallen asleep only toward morning, and came out to the porch in his lilac silk dressing gown. In the yard stood the carts ready corded. The carriages were on the front porch. The majordomo stood at the porch talking to an elderly orderly and to a pale young officer with a bandaged arm. On seeing Count Rostov, the majordomo made a significant and stern gesture to them both to go away.

"Well, majordomo, is everything ready?" asked Count Rostov, and stroking his bald head he looked good-naturedly at the officer and the orderly and nodded to them. (He liked to see new faces.)

"We can harness at once, Count Rostov."

"Well, that's right. As soon as Countess Rostov wakes we'll be off, God willing! What is it, gentlemen?" he added, turning to the officer. "Are you staying in my house?"

The officer came nearer and suddenly his face flushed crimson.

"Count, be so good as to allow me... for God's sake, to get into some corner of one of your carts! I have nothing here with me... I shall be all right on a loaded cart..."

Before the officer had finished speaking the orderly made the same request on behalf of his master.

"Oh, yes, yes, yes!" said Count Rostov hastily. "I shall be very pleased, very pleased. Officer, you'll see to it. Just unload one or two carts. Well, what of it... do what's necessary..." said Count Rostov, muttering some indefinite order.

But at the same moment, an expression of warm gratitude on the officer's face had already sealed the order. Count Rostov looked around him. In the yard, at the gates, at the window of the wings, wounded officers and their orderlies were to be seen. They were all looking at Count Rostov and moving toward the porch.

"Please step into the gallery, your excellency," said the majordomo. "What are your orders about the pictures?"

Count Rostov went into the house with him, repeating his order not to refuse the wounded who asked for a lift.

"Well, never mind, some of the things can be unloaded," Count Rostov added in a soft, confidential voice, as though afraid of being overheard.

At nine o'clock Countess Rostov woke up, and Matrëna Timoféevna, who had been her lady's maid before her marriage and now performed a sort of chief gendarme's duty for her, came to say that Madame Schoss was much offended and the young ladies' summer dresses could not be left behind. On inquiry, Countess Rostov learned that Madame Schoss was offended because her trunk had been taken down from its cart, and all the loads were being untied and the luggage taken out of the carts to make room for wounded men whom Count Rostov in the simplicity of his heart had ordered that they should take with them. Countess Rostov sent for her husband.

"What is this, my dear? I hear that the luggage is being unloaded."

"You know, love, I wanted to tell you... Countess dear... an officer came to me to ask for a few carts for the wounded. After all, ours are things that can be bought but think what being left behind means to them!... Really now, in our own yard—we asked them in ourselves and there are officers among them... You know, I think, my dear... let them be taken... where's the hurry?"

Count Rostov spoke timidly, as he always did when talking of money matters. Countess Rostov was accustomed to this tone as a precursor of

news of something detrimental to the children's interests, such as the building of a new gallery or conservatory, or the inauguration of a private theater or an orchestra. Countess Rostov was accustomed always to opposing anything announced in that timid tone and considered it her duty to do so.

Countess Rostov assumed her dolefully submissive manner and said to her husband: "Listen to me, Count, you have managed matters so that we are getting nothing for the house, and now you wish to throw away all our—all *the children's* property! You said yourself that we have a hundred thousand rubles' worth of things in the house. I don't consent, my dear, I don't! Do as you please! It's the government's business to look after the wounded; they know that. Look at the Lopukhíns opposite, they cleared out everything two days ago. That's what other people do. It's only we who are such fools. If you have no pity on me, have some for the children."

Flourishing his arms in despair, Count Rostov left the room without replying.

"Papa, what are you doing that for?" asked Natasha, who had followed him into her mother's room.

"Nothing! What business is it of yours?" muttered Count Rostov angrily.

"But I heard," said Natasha. "Why does Mamma object?"

"What business is it of yours?" cried Count Rostov.

Natasha stepped up to the window and pondered.

"Papa! Here's Berg coming to see us," said Natasha, looking out of the window.

Berg, the Rostovs' son-in-law, was already a colonel wearing the orders of Vladímir and Anna, and he still filled the quiet and agreeable post of assistant to the head of the staff of the assistant commander of the first division of the Second Army.

On the first of September, Berg had come to Moscow from the army.

Berg had nothing to do in Moscow, but he had noticed that everyone in the army was asking for leave to visit Moscow and had something to do there. So he considered it necessary to ask for a leave of absence for family and domestic reasons.

Berg drove up to Count Rostov's house in his spruce little carriage with a pair of sleek roans, exactly like those of a certain Baron. He looked attentively at the carts in the yard and while going up to the porch took out a clean pocket handkerchief and tied a knot in it.

From the anteroom, Berg ran with smooth though impatient steps into the drawing-room, where he embraced Count Rostov, kissed the hands of Natasha and Sonya, and hastened to inquire after "Mamma's" health.

"Health, at a time like this?" said Count Rostov. "Come, tell us the news! Is the army retreating or will there be another battle?"

"God Almighty alone can decide the fate of Russia, Papa," said Berg. "The army is burning with a spirit of heroism and the leaders, so to say, have now assembled in council. No one knows what is coming. But in general, I can tell you, Papa, that such a heroic spirit, the truly antique valor of the Russian army, which they—which it" (he corrected himself) "has shown or displayed in the battle of the twenty-sixth—there are no words worthy to do it justice! I tell you, Papa" (Berg smote himself on the breast as a general he had heard speaking had done, but he did it a trifle late for he should have struck his breast at the words "Russian army"), "I tell you frankly that we, the commanders, far from having to urge the men on or anything of that kind, could hardly restrain those... those... yes, those exploits of antique valor," he went on rapidly. "General Barclay risked his life everywhere at the head of the troops, I can assure you. Our corps was stationed on a hillside. You can imagine!"

And Berg related all that he remembered of the various tales he had heard those days. Natasha watched him with an intent gaze that confused Berg as if she were trying to find in his face the answer to some question.

“Altogether such heroism as was displayed by the Russian warriors cannot be imagined or adequately praised!” said Berg, glancing round at Natasha, and as if anxious to conciliate her, replying to her intent look with a smile. “‘Russia is not in Moscow, Russia lives in the hearts of her sons!’ Isn’t it so, Papa?” said he.

Just then Countess Rostov came in from the sitting room with a weary and dissatisfied expression. Berg hurriedly jumped up, kissed her hand, asked about her health, and, swaying his head from side to side to express sympathy, remained standing beside her.

“Yes, Countess Rostov, I tell you sincerely that these are hard and sad times for every Russian. But why are you so anxious? You have still time to get away...”

“I can’t think what the servants are about,” said Countess Rostov, turning to her husband. “I have just been told that nothing is ready yet. Somebody after all must see to things. One misses Account Manager Míténka at such times. There won’t be any end to it.”

Count Rostov was about to say something but evidently restrained himself. He got up from his chair and went to the door.

At that moment Berg drew out his handkerchief as if to blow his nose and, seeing the knot in it, pondered, shaking his head sadly and significantly.

“And I have a great favor to ask of you, Count Rostov,” said Berg.

“Hm...” said Count Rostov, and stopped.

“I was driving past Yusúpov’s house just now,” said Berg with a laugh, “when the steward, a man I know, ran out and asked me whether I wouldn’t buy something. I went in out of curiosity, you know, and there is a small chiffonier and a dressing table. You know how dear Vera wanted a chiffonier like that and how we had a dispute about it.” (At the mention of the chiffonier and dressing table Berg involuntarily changed his tone to one of pleasure at his admirable domestic arrangements.) “And it’s such a

beauty! It pulls out and has a secret English drawer, you know! And dear Vera has long wanted one. I wish to give her a surprise, you see. I saw so many of those peasant carts in your yard. Please let me have one, I will pay the man well, and..."

Count Rostov frowned and coughed.

"Ask Countess Rostov, I don't give orders."

"If it's inconvenient, please don't," said Berg. "Only I so wanted it, for dear Vera's sake."

"Oh, go to the devil, all of you! To the devil, the devil, the devil..." cried Count Rostov. "My head's in a whirl!"

And Count Rostov left the room. Countess Rostov began to cry.

"Yes, Mamma! Yes, these are very hard times!" said Berg.

Natasha left the room with Count Rostov and, as if finding it difficult to reach some decision, first followed him and then ran downstairs.

Petya was on the porch, engaged in giving out weapons to the servants who were to leave Moscow. The loaded carts were still standing in the yard. Two of them had been uncorded and a wounded officer was climbing into one of them helped by an orderly.

"Do you know what it's about?" Petya asked Natasha.

Natasha understood that he meant what were their parents quarreling about. She did not answer.

"It's because Papa wanted to give up all the carts to the wounded," said Petya. "The housekeeper told me. I consider..."

"I consider," Natasha suddenly almost shouted, turning her angry face to Petya, "I consider it so horrid, so abominable, so... I don't know what. Are we despicable Germans?"

Natasha's throat quivered with convulsive sobs and, afraid of weakening and letting the force of her anger run to waste, she turned and rushed headlong up the stairs.

Berg was sitting beside Countess Rostov consoling her with the respectful attention of a relative. Count Rostov, pipe in hand, was pacing up and down the room, when Natasha, her face distorted by anger, burst in like a tempest and approached her mother with rapid steps.

“It’s horrid! It’s abominable!” Natasha screamed. “You can’t possibly have ordered it!”

Berg and Countess Rostov looked at Natasha, perplexed and frightened. Count Rostov stood still at the window and listened.

“Mamma, it’s impossible: see what is going on in the yard!” Natasha cried. “They will be left!...”

“What’s the matter with you? Who are ‘they’? What do you want?”

“Why, the wounded! It’s impossible, Mamma. It’s monstrous!... No, Mamma darling, it’s not the thing. Please forgive me, darling... Mamma, what does it matter what we take away? Only look what is going on in the yard... Mamma!... It’s impossible!”

Count Rostov stood by the window and listened without turning round. Suddenly Count Rostov sniffed and put his face closer to the window.

Countess Rostov glanced at Natasha, saw her face full of shame for her mother, saw her agitation, and understood why Count Rostov did not turn to look at her now, and she glanced round quite disconcerted.

“Oh, do as you like! Am I hindering anyone?” Countess Rostov said, not surrendering at once.

“Mamma, darling, forgive me!”

But Countess Rostov pushed Natasha away and went up to her husband.

“My dear husband, you order what is right... You know I don’t understand about it,” said Countess Rostov, dropping her eyes shamefacedly.

“The eggs... the eggs are teaching the hen,” muttered Count Rostov through tears of joy, and he embraced his wife who was glad to hide her look of shame on his breast.

“Papa! Mamma! May I see to it? May I?...” asked Natasha. “We will still take all the most necessary things.”

Count Rostov nodded affirmatively, and Natasha, at the rapid pace at which she used to run when playing tag, ran through the ballroom to the anteroom and downstairs into the yard.

The servants gathered around Natasha, but could not believe the strange order she brought them until Count Rostov himself, in Countess Rostov’s name, confirmed the order to give up all the carts to the wounded and take the trunks to the storerooms. When they understood that order the servants set to work at this new task with pleasure and zeal. It no longer seemed strange to them but on the contrary, it seemed the only thing that could be done, just as a quarter of an hour before it had not seemed strange to anyone that the wounded should be left behind and the goods carted away but that had seemed the only thing to do.

The whole household, as if to atone for not having done it sooner, set eagerly to work at the new task of placing the wounded in the carts. The wounded dragged themselves out of their rooms and stood with pale but happy faces around the carts. The news that carts were to be had spread to the neighboring houses, from which wounded men began to come into the Rostovs’ yard. Many of the wounded asked them not to unload the carts but only to let them sit on top of the things. But the work of unloading, once started, could not be arrested. It seemed not to matter whether all or only half the things were left behind. Cases full of china, bronzes, pictures, and mirrors that had been so carefully packed the night before now lay about the yard, and still, they went on searching for and finding possibilities of unloading this or that and letting the wounded have another and yet another cart.

“We can take four more men,” said the steward. “They can have my carriage, or else what is to become of them?”

“Let them have my wardrobe cart,” said Countess Rostov. “Vasilich can go with me in the carriage.”

They unloaded the wardrobe cart and sent it to take wounded men from a house two doors off. The whole household, servants included, was bright and animated. Natasha was in a state of rapturous excitement such as she had not known for a long time.

“What could we fasten this onto?” asked the servants, trying to fix a trunk on the narrow footboard behind a carriage. “We must keep at least one cart.”

“What’s in it?” asked Natasha.

“Count Rostov’s books.”

“Leave it, the housekeeper will put it away. It’s not wanted.”

The phaeton was full of people and there was doubt as to where Petya could sit.

“On the box. You’ll sit on the box, won’t you, Petya?” cried Natasha.

Sonya too was busy all this time, but the aim of her efforts was quite different from Natasha’s. Sonya was putting away the things that had to be left behind and making a list of them as Countess Rostov wished, and she tried to get as much taken away with them as possible.

Before two o’clock in the afternoon, the Rostovs’ four carriages, packed full and with the horses harnessed, stood at the front door. One by one the carts with the wounded had moved out of the yard.

The *carriage* in which Andrei was being taken attracted Sonya’s attention as it passed the front porch. With the help of a maid, Natasha was arranging a seat for Countess Rostov in the huge high coach that stood at the entrance.

“Whose *carriage* is that?” Natasha inquired, leaning out of the carriage window.

“Why, didn’t you know, Natasha?” replied the maid. “The wounded Baron: he spent the night in our house and is going with us.”

“But who is it? What’s his name?”

“It’s our intended that was—Andrei himself! They say he is dying,” replied the maid with a sigh.

Sonya jumped out of the coach and ran to Countess Rostov. Countess Rostov, tired out and already dressed in shawl and bonnet for her journey, was pacing up and down the drawing room, waiting for the household to assemble for the usual silent prayer with closed doors before starting. Natasha was not in the room.

“Mamma,” said Sonya, “Andrei is here, mortally wounded. He is going with us.”

Countess Rostov opened her eyes in dismay and, seizing Sonya’s arm, glanced around.

“Natasha?” she murmured.

At that moment this news had only one significance for both of them. Countess Rostov and Sonya knew their Natasha, and their alarm as to what would happen if Natasha heard this news stifled all sympathy for the man they both liked.

“Natasha does not know yet, but Andrei is going with us,” said Sonya.

“You say he is dying?”

Sonya nodded.

Countess Rostov put her arms around Sonya and began to cry.

“The ways of God are past finding out!” Countess Rostov thought, feeling that the Almighty Hand, hitherto unseen, was becoming manifest in all that was now taking place.

“Well, Mamma? Everything is ready. What’s the matter?” asked Natasha, and with an animated face, she ran into the room.

“Nothing,” answered Countess Rostov. “If everything is ready let us start.”

And Countess Rostov bent over her reticule to hide her agitated face. Sonya embraced Natasha and kissed her.

Natasha looked at Sonya inquiringly.

“What is it? What has happened?”

“Nothing... No...”

“Is it something very bad for me? What is it?” persisted Natasha with her quick intuition.

Sonya sighed and made no reply. Count Rostov, Petya, Madame Schoss, the housekeeper, and Vasilich came into the drawing-room, and, having closed the doors, they all sat down and remained for some moments silently seated without looking at one another.

Count Rostov was the first to rise, and with a loud sigh crossed himself before the icon. All the others did the same. Then Count Rostov embraced the housekeeper and Vasilich, who were to remain in Moscow, and while they caught at his hand and kissed his shoulder he patted their backs lightly with some vaguely affectionate and comforting words. Countess Rostov went into the oratory and there Sonya found her on her knees before the icons that had been left here and there hanging on the wall. (The most precious ones, with which some family tradition was connected, were being taken with them.)

In the porch and in the yard, the men whom Petya had armed with swords and daggers, with trousers tucked inside their high boots and with belts and girdles tightened, were taking leave of those remaining behind.

As is always the case at a departure, much had been forgotten or put in the wrong place, and for a long time two menservants stood one on each side of the open door and the carriage steps waiting to help Countess Rostov in, while maids rushed with cushions and bundles from the house to the carriages, the *carriage*, the phaeton, and back again.

“They always will forget everything!” said Countess Rostov. “Don’t you know I can’t sit like that?”

And the maid, with clenched teeth, without replying but with an aggrieved look on her face, hastily got into the coach to rearrange the seat.

“Oh, those servants!” said Count Rostov, swaying his head.

The Rostov's old coachman was the only one Countess Rostov trusted to drive her and he sat perched up high on the box. He did not so much as glance around at what was going on behind him. From thirty years' experience, the coachman knew it would be some time yet before the order, “Be off, in God's name!” would be given him: and he knew that even when it was said he would be stopped once or twice more while they sent back to fetch something that had been forgotten, and even after that the coachman would again be stopped and Countess Rostov herself would lean out of the window and beg him for the love of heaven to drive carefully down the hill. The coachman knew all this and therefore waited calmly for what would happen, with more patience than the horses, especially the near one, the chestnut Falcon, who was pawing the ground and champing his bit. At last, all were seated, the carriage steps were folded and pulled up, the door was shut, somebody was sent for a traveling case, and Countess Rostov leaned out and said what she had to say. Then the coachman deliberately doffed his hat and began crossing himself. The postilion and all the other servants did the same. “Off, in God's name!” said the coachman, putting on his hat. “Start!” The postilion started the horses, the off-pole horse tugged at his collar, the high springs creaked, and the body of the coach swayed. The footman sprang onto the box of the moving coach which jolted as it passed out of the yard onto the uneven roadway; the other vehicles jolted in their turn, and the procession of carriages moved up the street. In the carriages, the *carriage*, and the phaeton, all crossed themselves as they passed the church opposite the house. Those who were to remain in Moscow walked on either side of the vehicles seeing the travelers off.

Rarely had Natasha experienced so joyful a feeling as now, sitting in the carriage beside Countess Rostov and gazing at the slowly receding walls of forsaken, agitated Moscow. Occasionally Natasha leaned out of the carriage window and looked back and then forward at the long train of wounded in

front of them. Almost at the head of the line, she could see the raised hood of Andrei's *carriage*. Natasha did not know who was in it, but each time she looked at the procession her eyes sought that *carriage*. She knew it was right in front.

In Kúdrino, from Nikítski, Présnya, and Podnovínsk Streets came several other trains of vehicles similar to the Rostovs', and as they passed along Sadóvaya Street the carriages and carts formed two rows abreast.

As they were going around the Súkharev water tower Natasha, who was inquisitively and alertly scrutinizing the people driving or walking past, suddenly cried out in joyful surprise:

"Dear me! Mamma, Sonya, look, it's he!"

"Who? Who?"

"Look! Yes, on my word, it's Pierre!" said Natasha, putting her head out of the carriage and staring at a tall, stout man in a coachman's long coat, who from his manner of walking and moving was evidently a gentleman in disguise, and who was passing under the arch of the Súkharev tower accompanied by a small, sallow-faced, beardless old man in a frieze coat.

"Yes, it really is Pierre in a coachman's coat, with a queer-looking old boy. Really," said Natasha, "look, look!"

"No, it's not Pierre. How can you talk such nonsense?"

"Mamma," screamed Natasha, "I'll stake my head it's Pierre! I assure you! Stop, stop!" she cried to the coachman.

But the coachman could not stop, for from Meshchánski Street came more carts and carriages, and the Rostovs were being shouted at to move on and not block the way.

In fact, however, though now much farther off than before, the Rostovs all saw Pierre—or someone extraordinarily like him—in a coachman's coat, going down the street with head bent and a serious face beside a small, beardless old man who looked like a footman. That old man noticed a face thrust out of the carriage window gazing at them, and respectfully touching

Pierre's elbow said something to him and pointed to the carriage. Pierre, evidently engrossed in thought, could not at first understand him. At length when Pierre had understood and looked in the direction the old man indicated, he recognized Natasha, and following his first impulse stepped instantly and rapidly toward the coach. But having taken a dozen steps, Pierre seemed to remember something and stopped.

Natasha's face, leaning out of the window, beamed with quizzical kindness.

"Darling Pierre, come here! We have recognized you! This is wonderful!" Natasha cried, holding out her hand to him. "What are you doing? Why are you like this?"

Pierre took her outstretched hand and kissed it awkwardly as he walked along beside her while the coach still moved on.

"What is the matter, Pierre?" asked Countess Rostov in a surprised and commiserating tone.

"What? What? Why? Don't ask me," said Pierre, and looked round at Natasha whose radiant, happy expression—of which he was conscious without looking at her—filled him with enchantment.

"Are you remaining in Moscow, then?"

Pierre hesitated.

"In Moscow?" Pierre said in a questioning tone. "Yes, in Moscow. Good-by!"

"Ah, if only I were a man! I'd certainly stay with you. How splendid!" said Natasha. "Mamma, if you'll let me, I'll stay!"

Pierre glanced absently at Natasha and was about to say something, but Countess Rostov interrupted him.

"You were at the battle, we heard."

"Yes, I was," Pierre answered. "There will be another battle tomorrow..." he began, but Natasha interrupted him.

"But what is the matter with you, Pierre? You are not like yourself..."

“Oh, don’t ask me, don’t ask me! I don’t know myself. Tomorrow... But no! Good-bye, good-bye!” Pierre muttered. “It’s an awful time!” and dropping behind the carriage he stepped onto the pavement.

Natasha continued to lean out of the window for a long time, beaming at Pierre with her kindly, slightly quizzical, happy smile.

For the last two days, ever since leaving home, Pierre had been living in the empty house of his deceased benefactor, Mason Bazdéev. This is how it happened.

When Pierre woke up on the morning after his return to Moscow and his interview with Mayor Rostopchin, he could not for some time make out where he was and what was expected of him. When Pierre was informed that among others awaiting him in his reception room there was a Frenchman who had brought a letter from his wife, Helene, he felt suddenly overcome by that sense of confusion and hopelessness to which he was apt to succumb. Pierre felt that everything was now at an end, all was in confusion and crumbling to pieces, that nobody was right or wrong, the future held nothing, and there was no escape from this position. Smiling unnaturally and muttering to himself, Pierre first sat down on the sofa in an attitude of despair, then rose, went to the door of the reception room and peeped through the crack, returned flourishing his arms, and took up a book. His majordomo came in a second time to say that the Frenchman who had brought the letter from Helene was very anxious to see him if only for a minute and that someone from Mason Bazdéev’s widow had called to ask Pierre to take charge of her husband’s books, as she herself was leaving for the country.

“Oh, yes, in a minute; wait... or no! No, of course... go and say I will come directly,” Pierre replied to the majordomo.

But as soon as the man had left the room, Pierre took up his hat which was lying on the table, and went out of his study by the other door. There was no one in the passage. Pierre went along the whole length of this

passage to the stairs and, frowning and rubbing his forehead with both hands, went down as far as the first landing. The hall porter was standing at the front door. From the landing where Pierre stood there was a second staircase leading to the back entrance. He went down that staircase and out into the yard. No one had seen him. But there were some carriages waiting, and as soon as Pierre stepped out of the gate the coachmen and the yard porter noticed him and raised their caps to him. When Pierre felt he was being looked at he behaved like an ostrich that hides its head in a bush in order not to be seen: he hung his head and quickening his pace went down the street.

Of all the affairs awaiting, Pierre that day the sorting of the Mason Bazdéev's books and papers appeared to him the most necessary.

Pierre hired the first cab he met and told the driver to go to the Patriarch's Ponds, where the widow Bazdéev's house was.

Continually turning round to look at the rows of loaded carts that were making their way from all sides out of Moscow, and balancing his bulky body so as not to slip out of the ramshackle old vehicle, Pierre, experiencing the joyful feeling of a boy escaping from school, began to talk to his driver.

The man told Pierre that arms were being distributed today at the Krémelin and that tomorrow everyone would be sent out beyond the Three Hills gates and a great battle would be fought there.

Having reached the Patriarch's Ponds Pierre found the Mason Bazdéev's house, where he had not been for a long time past. He went up to the gate. Gerásim, that sallow and beardless old man Pierre had seen at Torzhók five years before with the Mason Bazdéev, came out in answer to his knock.

"At home?" asked Pierre.

"Owing to the present state of things Sophia Danílovna has gone to the Torzhók estate with the children, your excellency."

“I will come in, but all the same, I have to look through the books,” said Pierre.

“Be so good as to step in. Makár Alexéevich, the brother of my late master—may the kingdom of heaven be his—has remained here, but he is in a weak state as you know,” said the old servant.

Pierre knew that Makár Alexéevich was the Mason Bazdéev’s half-insane brother and a hard drinker.

“Yes, yes, I know. Let us go in...” said Pierre and entered the house.

A tall, bald-headed old man with a red nose, wearing a dressing gown and with galoshes on his bare feet, stood in the anteroom. On seeing Pierre, Makár Alexéevich muttered something angrily and went away along the passage.

“Makár Alexéevich was a very clever man but has now grown quite feeble, as your honor sees,” said Gerásim. “Will you step into the study?” Pierre nodded. “As it was sealed up so it has remained, but Sophia Danílovna gave orders that if anyone should come from you they were to have the books.”

Pierre went into that gloomy study that he had entered with such trepidation in his benefactor’s lifetime. The room, dusty and untouched since the death of the Mason Bazdéev was now even gloomier.

Gerásim opened one of the shutters and left the room on tiptoe. Pierre went round the study, approached the cupboard in which the manuscripts were kept, and took out what had once been one of the most important, the holy of holies of the order. This was the authentic Scotch Acts with Mason Bazdéev’s notes and explanations. He sat down at the dusty writing table, and, having laid the manuscripts before him, opened them out, closed them, finally pushed them away, and resting his head on his hand sank into meditation.

Gerásim looked cautiously into the study several times and saw Pierre always sitting with the same attitude.

More than two hours passed and Gerásim took the liberty of making a slight noise at the door to attract his attention, but Pierre did not hear him.

“Is the cabman to be discharged, your honor?”

“Oh yes!” said Pierre, rousing himself and rising hurriedly. “Look here,” Pierre added, taking Gerásim by a button of his coat and looking down at the old man with moist, shining, and ecstatic eyes, “I say, do you know that there is going to be a battle tomorrow?”

“We heard so,” replied the man.

“I beg you not to tell anyone who I am, and to do what I ask you.”

“Yes, your excellency,” replied Gerásim. “Will you have something to eat?”

“No, but I want something else. I want peasant clothes and a pistol,” said Pierre, unexpectedly blushing.

“Yes, your excellency,” said Gerásim after thinking for a moment.

All the rest of that day Pierre spent alone in his Mason Bazdéev’s study, and Gerásim heard him pacing restlessly from one corner to another and talking to himself. And he spent the night on a bed made up for him there.

Gerásim, being a servant who in his time had seen many strange things, accepted Pierre’s taking up his residence in the house without surprise, and seemed pleased to have someone to wait on. That same evening—without even asking himself what they were wanted for—he procured a coachman’s coat and cap for Pierre and promised to get him the pistol the next day. Makár Alexéevich, Mason Bazdéev’s drunk brother, came twice that evening shuffling along in his galoshes as far as the door and stopped and looked ingratiatingly at Pierre. But as soon as Pierre turned toward him Makár Alexéevich wrapped his dressing gown around him with a shamefaced and angry look and hurried away. It was when Pierre (wearing the coachman’s coat that Gerásim had procured for him and had disinfected by steam) was on his way with the old man to buy the pistol at the Súkharev market that he met the Rostovs.

Marshal Kutuzov's order to retreat through Moscow to the Ryazán road was issued at night on the first of September.

The first troops started at once, and during the night they marched slowly and steadily without hurry. At daybreak, however, those nearing the town at the Dorogomílov bridge saw ahead of them masses of soldiers crowding and hurrying across the bridge, ascending on the opposite side and blocking the streets and alleys, while endless masses of troops were bearing down on them from behind, and an unreasoning hurry and alarm overcame them. They all rushed forward to the bridge, onto it, and to the fords and the boats. Marshal Kutuzov himself had driven round by side streets to the other side of Moscow.

By ten o'clock in the morning of the second of September, only the rear guard remained in the Dorogomílov suburb, where they had ample room. The main army was on the other side of Moscow or beyond it.

At that very time, at ten in the morning of the second of September, Napoleon was standing among his troops on the Poklónny Hill looking at the panorama spread out before him. From the twenty-sixth of August to the second of September, that is from the battle of Borodinó to the entry of the French into Moscow, during the whole of that agitating, memorable week, there had been the extraordinary autumn weather that always comes as a surprise, when the sun hangs low and gives more heat than in spring, when everything shines so brightly in the rare clear atmosphere that the eyes smart, when the lungs are strengthened and refreshed by inhaling the aromatic autumn air, when even the nights are warm, and when in those dark warm nights, golden stars startle and delight us continually by falling from the sky.

At ten in the morning of the second of September, this weather still held.

The brightness of the morning was magical. Moscow seen from the Poklónny Hill lay spaciouly spread out with her river, her gardens, and her

churches, and she seemed to be living her usual life, her cupolas glittering like stars in the sunlight.

The view of the strange city with its peculiar architecture, such as he had never seen before, filled Napoleon with the rather envious and uneasy curiosity men feel when they see an alien form of life that has no knowledge of them. This city was evidently living with the full force of its own life. By the indefinite signs which, even at a distance, distinguish a living body from a dead one, Napoleon from the Poklónny Hill perceived the throb of life in the town and felt, as it were, the breathing of that great and beautiful body.

Every Russian looking at Moscow feels her to be a mother; every foreigner who sees her, even if ignorant of her significance as the mother city, must feel her feminine character, and Napoleon felt it.

“That Asiatic city of the innumerable churches, holy Moscow! Here it is then, at last, that famous city. It was high time,” said he, and dismounting he ordered a plan of Moscow to be spread out before him, and summoned the interpreter.

“A town captured by the enemy is like a maid who has lost her honor,” thought Napoleon (he had said so to Túchkov at Smolénsk). From that point of view, he gazed at the Oriental beauty he had not seen before. It seemed strange to him that his long-felt wish, which had seemed unattainable, had at last been realized. In the clear morning light, he gazed now at the city and now at the plan, considering its details, and the assurance of possessing it agitated and awed him.

“But could it be otherwise?” Napoleon thought. “Here is this capital at my feet. Where is The Tzar now, and what is he thinking? A strange, beautiful, and majestic city; and a strange and majestic moment! In what light must I appear to them!” thought he, thinking of his troops. “Here she is, the reward for all those fainthearted men,” he reflected, glancing at those near him and at the troops who were approaching and forming up. “One

word from me, one movement of my hand, and that ancient capital of the Tzars would perish. But my clemency is always ready to descend upon the vanquished. I must be magnanimous and truly great. But no, it can't be true that I am in Moscow," he suddenly thought. "Yet here she is lying at my feet, with her golden domes and crosses scintillating and twinkling in the sunshine. But I shall spare her. On the ancient monuments of barbarism and despotism, I will inscribe great words of justice and mercy... It is just this which The Tzar will feel most painfully, I know him." (It seemed to Napoleon that the chief import of what was taking place lay in the personal struggle between himself and The Tzar.) "From the height of the Krémelin—yes, there is the Krémelin, yes—I will give them just laws; I will teach them the meaning of true civilization, I will make generations of boyars remember their conqueror with love. I will tell the deputation that I did not, and do not, desire war, that I have waged war only against the false policy of their court; that I love and respect the Tzar, and that in Moscow I will accept terms of peace worthy of myself and of my people. I do not wish to utilize the fortunes of war to humiliate an honored monarch. 'Boyars,' I will say to them, 'I do not desire war, I desire the peace and welfare of all my subjects.' However, I know their presence will inspire me, and I shall speak to them as I always do: clearly, impressively, and majestically. But can it be true that I am in Moscow? Yes, there she lies."

"Bring the boyars to me," said Napoleon to his suite.

A general with a brilliant suite galloped off at once to fetch the boyars.

Two hours passed. Napoleon had lunched and was again standing in the same place on the Poklónny Hill awaiting the deputation. His speech to the boyars had already taken definite shape in his imagination. That speech was full of dignity and greatness as Napoleon understood it.

He was himself carried away by the tone of magnanimity he intended to adopt toward Moscow. In his imagination, he appointed days for assemblies at the palace of the Tzars, at which Russian notables and his own would

minge. He mentally appointed a governor, one who would win the hearts of the people. Having learned that there were many charitable institutions in Moscow he mentally decided that he would shower favors on them all. He thought that as in Africa he had to put on a burnoose and sit in a mosque, so in Moscow, he must be beneficent like the Tzars. And in order finally to touch the hearts of the Russians—and being like all Frenchmen unable to imagine anything sentimental without a reference to *my dear, my tender one, my poor mother*—he decided that he would place an inscription on all these establishments in large letters: “This establishment is dedicated to my dear mother.” Or no, it should be simply: *House of my Mother*, he concluded. “But am I really in Moscow? Yes, here it lies before me, but why is the deputation from the city so long in appearing?” he wondered.

Meanwhile, an agitated consultation was being carried on in whispers among his generals at the rear of his suite. Those sent to fetch the deputation had returned with the news that Moscow was empty, that everyone had left it. The faces of those who were not conferring together were pale and perturbed. They were not alarmed by the fact that Moscow had been abandoned by its inhabitants (grave as that fact seemed), but by the question of how to tell the Tzar—without putting him in the terrible position of appearing ridiculous—that he had been awaiting the boyars so long in vain: that there were drunken mobs left in Moscow but no one else. Some said that a deputation of some sort must be scraped together, others disputed that opinion and maintained that the Tzar should first be carefully and skillfully prepared, and then told the truth.

“He will have to be told, all the same,” said some gentlemen of the suite. “But, gentlemen...”

The position was the more awkward because the Tzar, meditating upon his magnanimous plans, was pacing patiently up and down before the outspread map, occasionally glancing along the road to Moscow from under his lifted hand with a bright and proud smile.

“But it’s impossible...” declared the gentlemen of the suite, shrugging their shoulders but not venturing to utter the implied word—*le ridicule*...

At last, the Tzar, tired of futile expectation, his actor’s instinct suggesting to him that the sublime moment having been too long drawn out was beginning to lose its sublimity, gave a sign with his hand. A single report of a signaling gun followed, and the troops, who were already spread out on different sides of Moscow, moved into the city through the Tver, Kalúga, and Dorogomílov gates. Faster and faster, vying with one another, they moved at the double or at a trot, vanishing amid the clouds of dust they raised and making the air ring with a deafening roar of mingling shouts.

Drawn on by the movement of his troops Napoleon rode with them as far as the Dorogomílov gate, but there again stopped and, dismounting from his horse, paced for a long time by the Kámmer-Kollézski rampart, awaiting the deputation.

Meanwhile, Moscow was empty. There were still people in it, perhaps a fiftieth part of its former inhabitants had remained, but it was empty. It was empty in the sense that a dying queen-less hive is empty.

In a queen-less hive, no life is left though to a superficial glance it seems as much alive as other hives.

The bees circle around a queen-less hive in the hot beams of the midday sun as gaily as around the living hives; from a distance, it smells of honey like the others, and bees fly in and out in the same way. But one has only to observe that hive to realize that there is no longer any life in it. The bees do not fly in the same way, the smell and the sound that meet the beekeeper are not the same. To the beekeeper’s tap on the wall of the sick hive, instead of the former instant unanimous humming of tens of thousands of bees with their abdomens threateningly compressed, and producing by the rapid vibration of their wings an aerial living sound, the only reply is a disconnected buzzing from different parts of the deserted hive. From the alighting board, instead of the former spirituous fragrant smell of honey and

venom, and the warm whiffs of crowded life comes an odor of emptiness and decay mingling with the smell of honey. There are no longer sentinels sounding the alarm with their abdomens raised, and ready to die in defense of the hive. There is no longer the measured quiet sound of throbbing activity, like the sound of boiling water, but diverse discordant sounds of disorder. In and out of the hive long black robber bees smeared with honey fly timidly and shiftily. They do not sting but crawl away from danger. Formerly only bees laden with honey flew into the hive, and they flew out empty; now they fly out laden. The beekeeper opens the lower part of the hive and peers in. Instead of black, glossy bees—tamed by toil, clinging to one another's legs and drawing out the wax, with a ceaseless hum of labor—that used to hang in long clusters down to the floor of the hive, drowsy shriveled bees crawl about separately in various directions on the floor and walls of the hive. Instead of a neatly glued floor, swept by the bees with the fanning of their wings, there is a floor littered with bits of wax, excrement, dying bees scarcely moving their legs, and dead ones that have not been cleared away.

The beekeeper opens the upper part of the hive and examines the super. Instead of serried rows of bees sealing up every gap in the combs and keeping the brood warm, he sees the skillful complex structures of the combs, but no longer in their former state of purity. All is neglected and foul. Black robber bees are swiftly and stealthily prowling about the combs, and the short home bees, shriveled and listless as if they were old, creep slowly about without trying to hinder the robbers, having lost all motive and all sense of life. Drones, bumblebees, wasps, and butterflies knock awkwardly against the walls of the hive in their flight. Here and there among the cells containing dead brood and honey, an angry buzzing can sometimes be heard. Here and there a couple of bees, by force of habit and custom cleaning out the brood cells, with efforts beyond their strength laboriously drag away a dead bee or bumblebee without knowing why they

do it. In another corner, two old bees are languidly fighting, cleaning themselves, or feeding one another, without themselves knowing whether they do it with friendly or hostile intent. In a third place a crowd of bees, crushing one another, attack some victim and fight and smother it, and the victim, enfeebled or killed, drops from above slowly and lightly as a feather, among the heap of corpses. The keeper opens the two center partitions to examine the brood cells. In place of the former close dark circles formed by thousands of bees sitting back to back and guarding the high mystery of generation, he sees hundreds of dull, listless, and sleepy shells of bees. They have almost all died unawares, sitting in the sanctuary they had guarded and which is now no more. They reek of decay and death. Only a few of them still move, rise, and feebly fly to settle on the enemy's hand, lacking the spirit to die stinging him; the rest are dead and fall as lightly as fish scales. The beekeeper closes the hive, chalks a mark on it, and when he has time tears out its contents and burns it clean.

So, in the same way, Moscow was empty when Napoleon, weary, uneasy, and morose, paced up and down in front of the Kámmer-Kollézski rampart, awaiting what to his mind was a necessary, if but formal, observance of the proprieties—a deputation.

In various corners of Moscow, there still remained a few people aimlessly moving about, following their old habits and hardly aware of what they were doing.

When with due circumspection Napoleon was informed that Moscow was empty, he looked angrily at his informant, turned away, and silently continued to walk to and fro.

“My carriage!” he said.

He took his seat beside the aide-de-camp on duty and drove into the suburb. “Moscow deserted!” he said to himself. “What an incredible event!”

He did not drive into the town, but put up at an inn in the Dorogomílov suburb.

The *spectacular turn of events* had not come off.

The Russian troops were passing through Moscow from two o'clock at night till two in the afternoon and bore away with them the wounded and the last of the inhabitants who were leaving.

The greatest crush during the movement of the troops took place at the Stone, Moskvá, and Yaúza bridges.

While the troops, dividing into two parts when passing around the Krémlin, were thronging the Moskvá and the Stone bridges, a great many soldiers, taking advantage of the stoppage and congestion, turned back from the bridges and slipped stealthily and silently past the church of Vasili the Beatified and under the Borovítski gate, back up the hill to the Red Square where some instinct told them they could easily take things not belonging to them. Crowds of the kind seen at cheap sales filled all the passages and alleys of the Bazaar. But there were no dealers with voices of ingratiating affability inviting customers to enter; there were no hawkers, nor the usual motley crowd of female purchasers—but only soldiers, in uniforms and overcoats though without muskets, entering the Bazaar empty-handed and silently making their way out through its passages with bundles. Tradesmen and their assistants (of whom there were but few) moved about among the soldiers quite bewildered. They unlocked their shops and locked them up again, and themselves carried goods away with the help of their assistants. On the square in front of the Bazaar were drummers beating the muster call. But the roll of the drums did not make the looting soldiers run in the direction of the drum as formerly, but made them, on the contrary, run farther away. Among the soldiers in the shops and passages, some men were to be seen in gray coats, with closely shaven heads. Two officers, one with a scarf over his uniform and mounted on a lean, dark-gray horse, the

other in an overcoat and on foot, stood at the corner of Ilyínka Street, talking. A third officer galloped up to them.

“The general orders them all to be driven out at once, without fail. This is outrageous! Half the men have dispersed.”

“Where are you off to?... Where?...” he shouted to three infantrymen without muskets who, holding up the skirts of their overcoats, were slipping past him into the Bazaar passage. “Stop, you rascals!”

“But how are you going to stop them?” replied another officer. “There is no getting them together. The army should push on before the rest bolt, that’s all!”

“How can one push on? They are stuck there, wedged on the bridge, and don’t move. Shouldn’t we put a cordon around to prevent the rest from running away?”

“Come, go in there and drive them out!” shouted the senior officer.

The officer in the scarf dismounted, called up a drummer, and went with him into the arcade. Some soldiers started running away in a group. A shopkeeper with red pimples on his cheeks near the nose, and a calm, persistent, calculating expression on his plump face, hurriedly and ostentatiously approached the officer, swinging his arms.

“Your honor!” said he. “Be so good as to protect us! We won’t grudge trifles, you are welcome to anything—we shall be delighted! Pray!... I’ll fetch a piece of cloth at once for such an honorable gentleman, or even two pieces with pleasure. For we feel how it is; but what’s all this—sheer robbery! If you please, could not guards be placed if only to let us close the shop...”

Several shopkeepers crowded around the officer.

“Eh, what twaddle!” said one of them, a thin, stern-looking man. “When one’s head is gone one doesn’t weep for one’s hair! Take what any of you like!” And flourishing his arm energetically he turned sideways to the officer.

“It’s all very well for you to talk,” said the first tradesman angrily. “Please step inside, your honor!”

“Talk indeed!” cried the thin one. “In my three shops here I have a hundred thousand rubles’ worth of goods. Can they be saved when the army has gone? Eh, what people! ‘Against God’s might, our hands can’t fight.’”

“Come inside, your honor!” repeated the tradesman, bowing.

The officer stood perplexed and his face showed indecision.

“It’s not my business!” he exclaimed and strode on quickly down one of the passages.

From one open shop came the sound of blows and vituperation, and just as the officer came up to it a man in a gray coat with a shaven head was flung out violently.

This man, bent double, rushed past the tradesman and the officer. The officer pounced on the soldiers who were in the shops, but at that moment fearful screams reached them from the huge crowd on the Moskvá bridge and the officer ran out into the square.

“What is it? What is it?” he asked, but his comrade was already galloping off past Vasili the Beatified in the direction from which the screams came.

The officer mounted his horse and rode after him. When he reached the bridge he saw two unlimbered guns, the infantry crossing the bridge, several overturned carts, and frightened and laughing faces among the troops. Beside the cannon, a cart was standing to which two horses were harnessed. Four borzois with collars were pressing close to the wheels. The cart was loaded high, and at the very top, beside a child’s chair with its legs in the air, sat a peasant woman uttering piercing and desperate shrieks. He was told by his fellow officers that the screams of the crowd and the shrieks of the woman were due to the fact that General Ermólov, coming up to the crowd and learning that soldiers were dispersing among the shops while crowds of civilians blocked the bridge, had ordered two guns to be

unlimbered and made a show of firing at the bridge. The crowd, crushing one another, upsetting carts, and shouting and squeezing desperately, had cleared off the bridge and the troops were now moving forward.

Meanwhile, the city itself was deserted. There was hardly anyone in the streets. The gates and shops were all closed, only here and there round the taverns solitary shouts or drunken songs could be heard. Nobody drove through the streets and footsteps were rarely heard. The Povarskáya was quite still and deserted. The huge courtyard of the Rostovs' house was littered with wisps of hay and with dung from the horses, and not a soul was to be seen there. In the great drawing room of the house, which had been left with all it contained, were two people. They were the yard porter and his grandson who had stayed in Moscow with his grandfather. The boy had opened the clavichord and was strumming on it with one finger. The yard porter, his arms akimbo, stood smiling with satisfaction before the large mirror.

"Isn't it fine, eh?" said the boy, suddenly beginning to strike the keyboard with both hands.

"Only fancy!" answered the yard porter, surprised at the broadening grin on his face in the mirror.

"Impudence! Impudence!" they heard behind them the voice of Mávra Kuzmínichna who had entered silently. "How he's grinning, the fat mug! Is that what you're here for? Nothing's cleared away down there and the yard porter is worn out. Just you wait a bit!"

The yard porter left off smiling, adjusted his belt, and went out of the room with meekly downcast eyes.

"Aunt, I did it gently," said the boy.

"I'll give you something gently, you monkey you!" cried Mávra Kuzmínichna, raising her arm threateningly. "Go and get the samovar to boil for your grandfather."

Mávra Kuzmínichna flicked the dust off the clavichord and closed it, and with a deep sigh left the drawing room and locked its main door.

Going out into the yard she paused to consider where she should go next—to drink tea in the servants' wing with the yard porter, or into the storeroom to put away what still lay about.

She heard the sound of quick footsteps in the quiet street. Someone stopped at the gate, and the latch rattled as someone tried to open it. Mávra Kuzmínichna went to the gate.

“Who do you want?” said Mávra Kuzmínichna.

“Count Rostov.”

“And who are you?”

“An officer, I have to see him,” came the reply in a pleasant, well-bred Russian voice.

Mávra Kuzmínichna opened the gate and an officer of eighteen, with the round face of a Rostov, entered the yard.

“They have gone away, sir. Went away yesterday at vesper time,” said Mávra Kuzmínichna cordially.

The young officer standing in the gateway, as if hesitating whether to enter or not, clicked his tongue.

“Ah, how annoying!” he muttered. “I should have come yesterday... Ah, what a pity.”

Meanwhile, Mávra Kuzmínichna was attentively and sympathetically examining the familiar Nicholas features of the young man's face, his tattered coat, and trodden-down boots.

“What did you want to see Count Rostov for?” she asked.

“Oh well... it can't be helped!” said he in a tone of vexation and placed his hand on the gate as if to leave.

He again paused in indecision.

“You see,” he suddenly said, “I am a kinsman of Count Rostov's and he has been very kind to me. As you see” (he glanced with an amused air and

good-natured smile at his coat and boots) “my things are worn out and I have no money, so I was going to ask Count Rostov...”

Mávra Kuzmínichna did not let him finish.

“Just wait a minute, sir. One little moment” said she.

And as soon as the officer let go of the gate handle she turned and, hurrying away on her old legs, went through the backyard to the servants’ quarters.

While Mávra Kuzmínichna was running to her room the officer walked about the yard gazing at his worn-out boots with lowered head and a faint smile on his lips. “What a pity I’ve missed Uncle! What a nice old woman! Where has she run off to? And how am I to find the nearest way to overtake my regiment, which must by now be getting near the Rogózhski gate?” thought he. Just then Mávra Kuzmínichna appeared from behind the corner of the house with a frightened yet resolute look, carrying a rolled-up check kerchief in her hand. While still a few steps from the officer she unfolded the kerchief and took out of it a white twenty-five-ruble bill and hastily handed it to him.

“If his excellency had been at home, as a kinsman he would of course... but as it is...”

Mávra Kuzmínichna grew abashed and confused. The officer did not decline, but took the note quietly and thanked her.

“If Count Rostov had been at home...” Mávra Kuzmínichna went on apologetically. “Christ be with you, sir! May God preserve you!” said she, bowing as she saw him out.

Swaying his head and smiling as if amused at himself, the officer ran almost at a trot through the deserted streets toward the Yaúza bridge to overtake his regiment.

But Mávra Kuzmínichna stood at the closed gate for some time with moist eyes, pensively swaying her head and feeling an unexpected flow of motherly tenderness and pity for the unknown young officer.

From an unfinished house on the Varvarka, the ground floor of which was a dramshop came drunken shouts and songs. On benches round the tables in a dirty little room sat some ten factory hands. Tipsy and perspiring, with dim eyes and wide-open mouths, they were all laboriously singing some song or other. They were singing discordantly, arduously, and with great effort, evidently not because they wished to sing, but because they wanted to show they were drunk and on a spree. One, a tall, fair-haired lad in a clean blue coat, was standing over the others. His face with its fine straight nose would have been handsome had it not been for his thin, compressed, twitching lips and dull, gloomy, fixed eyes. Evidently possessed by some idea, he stood over those who were singing, and solemnly and jerkily flourished above their heads his white arm with the sleeve turned up to the elbow, trying unnaturally to spread out his dirty fingers. The sleeve of his coat kept slipping down and he always carefully rolled it up again with his left hand, as if it were most important that the sinewy white arm he was flourishing should be bare. In the midst of the song cries were heard, and fighting and blows in the passage and porch. The tall lad waved his arm.

“Stop it!” he exclaimed peremptorily. “There’s a fight, lads!” And, still rolling up his sleeve, he went out to the porch.

The factory hands followed him. These men, who under the leadership of the tall lad were drinking in the pub that morning, had brought the publican some skins from the factory and for this had had drink served them. The blacksmiths from a neighboring smithy, hearing the sounds of revelry in the tavern and supposing it to have been broken into, wished to force their way in too and a fight on the porch had resulted.

The publican was fighting one of the smiths at the door, and when the workmen came out the smith, wrenching himself free from the tavern keeper, fell face downward on the pavement.

Another smith tried to enter the doorway, pressing against the publican with his chest.

The lad with the turned-up sleeve gave the smith a blow in the face and cried wildly: “They’re fighting us, lads!”

At that moment the first smith got up and, scratching his bruised face to make it bleed, shouted in a tearful voice: “Police! Murder!... They’ve killed a man, lads!”

“Oh, gracious me, a man beaten to death—killed!...” screamed a woman coming out of a gate close by.

A crowd gathered around the bloodstained smith.

“Haven’t you robbed people enough—taking their last shirts?” said a voice addressing the publican. “What have you killed a man for, you thief?”

The tall lad, standing on the porch, turned his bleared eyes from the publican to the smith and back again as if considering whom he ought to fight now.

“Murderer!” he shouted suddenly to the publican. “Bind him, lads!”

“I daresay you would like to bind me!” shouted the publican, pushing away the men advancing on him, and snatching his cap from his head he flung it on the ground.

As if this action had some mysterious and menacing significance, the workmen surrounding the publican paused in indecision.

“I know the law very well, mates! I’ll take the matter to the captain of the police. Do you think I won’t get to him? Robbery is not permitted to anybody nowadays!” shouted the publican, picking up his cap.

“Come along then! Come along then!” the publican and the tall young fellow repeated one after the other, and they moved up the street together.

The bloodstained smith went beside them. The factory hands and others followed behind, talking and shouting.

At the corner of the Morosýka, opposite a large house with closed shutters and bearing a cobbler’s signboard, stood a score of thin, worn-out,

gloomy-faced cobblers, wearing overalls and long tattered coats.

“He should pay folks off properly,” a thin workingman, with frowning brows and a straggly beard, was saying.

“But he’s sucked our blood and now he thinks he’s quit of us. He’s been misleading us all the week and now that he’s brought us to this pass he’s made off.”

On seeing the crowd and the bloodstained man the workman ceased speaking, and with eager curiosity all the cobblers joined the moving crowd.

“Where are all the folks going?”

“Why, to the police, of course!”

“I say, is it true that we have been beaten?” “And what did you think? Look what folks are saying.”

Questions and answers were heard. The publican, taking advantage of the increased crowd, dropped behind and returned to his tavern.

The tall youth, not noticing the disappearance of his foe, waved his bare arm and went on talking incessantly, attracting attention to himself. It was around him that the people chiefly crowded, expecting answers from him to the questions that occupied all their minds.

“He must keep order, keep the law, that’s what the government is there for. Am I not right, good Christians?” said the tall youth, with a scarcely perceptible smile. “He thinks there’s no government! How can one do without government? Or else there would be plenty who’d rob us.”

“Why talk nonsense?” rejoined voices in the crowd. “Will they give up Moscow like this? They told you that for fun, and you believed it! Aren’t there plenty of troops on the march? Let *him* in, indeed! That’s what the government is for. You’d better listen to what people are saying,” said some of the mob pointing to the tall youth.

By the wall of China-Town, a smaller group of people were gathered around a man in a frieze coat who held a paper in his hand.

“An edict, they are reading a government edict! Reading an edict!” cried voices in the crowd, and the people rushed toward the reader.

The man in the frieze coat was reading the broadsheet of August 31. When the crowd collected around him he seemed confused, but at the demand of the tall lad who had pushed his way up to him, he began in a rather tremulous voice to read the sheet from the beginning.

“Early tomorrow I shall go to his Serene Highness,” he read (“*Sirin Highness*,” said the tall fellow with a triumphant smile on his lips and a frown on his brow), “to consult with him to act, and to aid the army to exterminate these scoundrels. We too will take part...” the reader went on, and then paused (“Do you see,” shouted the youth victoriously, “he’s going to clear up the whole affair for you...”), “in destroying them, and will send these visitors to the devil. I will come back to dinner, and we’ll set to work. We will do, completely do, and undo these scoundrels.”

The last words were read out in the midst of complete silence. The tall lad hung his head gloomily. It was evident that no one had understood the last part. In particular, the words “I will come back to dinner,” evidently displeased both the reader and audience. The people’s minds were tuned to a high pitch and this was too simple and needlessly comprehensible—it was what any one of them might have said and therefore was what an edict emanating from the highest authority should not say.

They all stood despondent and silent. The tall youth moved his lips and swayed from side to side.

“We should ask him... that’s he himself?” “Yes, ask him indeed!... Why not? He’ll explain!” voices in the rear of the crowd were suddenly heard saying, and their attention turned to the police superintendent’s carriage which drove into the square attended by two mounted dragoons.

The superintendent of police, who had gone that morning by Mayor Rostopchin’s orders to burn the barges and had in connection with that matter acquired a large sum of money which was at that moment in his

pocket, on seeing a crowd bearing down upon him told his coachman to stop.

“What people are these?” he shouted to the men, who were moving singly and timidly in the direction of his carriage.

“What people are these?” he shouted again, receiving no answer.

“Your honor...” replied the shopman in the frieze coat, “your honor, in accord with the proclamation of his highest excellency Count Rostov, they desire to serve, not sparing their lives, and it is not any kind of riot, but as his highest excellence said...”

“Count Rostov has not left, he is here, and an order will be issued concerning you,” said the superintendent of police. “Go on!” he ordered his coachman.

The crowd halted, pressing around those who had heard what the superintendent had said, and looking at the departing carriage.

The superintendent of police turned round at that moment with a scared look, said something to his coachman, and his horses increased their speed.

“It’s a fraud, lads! Lead the way to him, himself!” shouted the tall youth. “Don’t let him go, lads! Let him answer us! Keep him!” shouted different people and the people dashed in pursuit of the carriage.

Following the superintendent of police and talking loudly the crowd went in the direction of Lubyánka Street.

“There now, the gentry and merchants have gone away and left us to perish. Do they think we’re dogs?” voices in the crowd were heard saying more and more frequently.

On the evening of the first of September, after his interview with Marshal Kutuzov, Mayor Rostopchin had returned to Moscow mortified and offended because he had not been invited to attend the council of war and because Marshal Kutuzov had paid no attention to his offer to take part in the defense of the city; amazed also at the novel outlook revealed to him at the camp, which treated the tranquility of the capital and its patriotic

fervor as not merely secondary but quite irrelevant and unimportant matters. Distressed, offended, and surprised by all this, Mayor Rostopchin had returned to Moscow. After supper, he lay down on a sofa without undressing and was awakened soon after midnight by a courier bringing him a letter from Marshal Kutuzov. This letter requested the count to send police officers to guide the troops through the town, as the army was retreating to the Ryazán road beyond Moscow. This was not news to Mayor Rostopchin. He had known that Moscow would be abandoned not merely since his interview the previous day with Marshal Kutuzov on the Poklónny Hill but ever since the battle of Borodinó, for all the generals who came to Moscow after that battle had said unanimously that it was impossible to fight another battle, and since then the government property had been removed every night, and half the inhabitants had left the city with Mayor Rostopchin's own permission. Yet all the same this information astonished and irritated the count, coming as it did in the form of a simple note with an order from Marshal Kutuzov, and received at night, breaking in on his beauty sleep.

When later on in his memoirs Mayor Rostopchin explained his actions at this time, he repeatedly says that he was then actuated by two important considerations: to maintain tranquility in Moscow and expedite the departure of the inhabitants. If one accepts this twofold aim all of Mayor Rostopchin's actions appear irreproachable. "Why were the holy relics, the arms, ammunition, gunpowder, and stores of corn not removed? Why were thousands of inhabitants deceived into believing that Moscow would not be given up—and thereby ruined?" "To preserve the tranquility of the city," explains Mayor Rostopchin. "Why were bundles of useless papers from the government offices, and Leppich's balloon and other articles removed?" "To leave the town empty," explains Mayor Rostopchin. One need only admit that public tranquility is in danger and any action finds a justification.

All the horrors of the reign of terror were based only on solicitude for public tranquility.

On what, then, was Mayor Rostopchin's fear for the tranquility of Moscow based in 1812? What reason was there for assuming any probability of an uprising in the city? The inhabitants were leaving it and the retreating troops were filling it. Why should that cause the masses to riot?

Neither in Moscow nor anywhere in Russia did anything resembling an insurrection ever occur when the enemy entered a town. More than ten thousand people were still in Moscow on the first and second of September, and except for a mob in the governor's courtyard, assembled there at his bidding, nothing happened. It is obvious that there would have been even less reason to expect a disturbance among the people if after the battle of Borodinó when the surrender of Moscow became certain or at least probable, Mayor Rostopchin instead of exciting the people by distributing arms and broadsheets had taken steps to remove all the holy relics, the gunpowder, munitions, and money, and had told the population plainly that the town would be abandoned.

Mayor Rostopchin, though he had patriotic sentiments, was a sanguine and impulsive man who had always moved in the highest administrative circles and had no understanding at all of the people he supposed himself to be guiding. Ever since the enemy's entry into Smolénsk he had in his imagination been playing the role of director of the popular feeling of "the heart of Russia." Not only did it seem to him (as to all administrators) that he controlled the external actions of Moscow's inhabitants, but he also thought he controlled their mental attitude by means of his broadsheets and posters, written in a coarse tone which the people despise in their own class and do not understand from those in authority. Mayor Rostopchin was so pleased with the fine role of leader of popular feeling and had grown so used to it, that the necessity of relinquishing that role and abandoning

Moscow without any heroic display took him unawares and he suddenly felt the ground slip away from under his feet so that he positively did not know what to do. Though he knew it was coming, he did not till the last moment wholeheartedly believe that Moscow would be abandoned and did not prepare for it. The inhabitants left against his wishes. If the government offices were removed, this was only done at the demand of officials to whom the count yielded reluctantly. He was absorbed in the role he had created for himself. As is often the case with those gifted with an ardent imagination, though he had long known that Moscow would be abandoned he knew it only with his intellect, he did not believe it in his heart and did not adapt himself mentally to this new position of affairs.

All his painstaking and energetic activity (in how far it was useful and had any effect on the people is another question) had been simply directed toward arousing in the masses his own feeling of patriotic hatred of the French.

But when events assumed their true historical character, when expressing hatred for the French in words proved insufficient, when it was not even possible to express that hatred by fighting a battle when self-confidence was of no avail in relation to the one question before Moscow, when the whole population streamed out of Moscow as one man, abandoning their belongings and proving by that negative action all the depth of their national feeling, then the role chosen by Mayor Rostopchin suddenly appeared senseless. He unexpectedly felt himself ridiculous, weak, and alone, with no ground to stand on.

When awakened from his sleep, he received that cold, peremptory note from Marshal Kutuzov, he felt more irritated the more he felt himself to blame. All that he had been specially put in charge of, the state property which he should have removed, was still in Moscow and it was no longer possible to take the whole of it away.

“Who is to blame for it? Who has let things come to such a pass?” he ruminated. “Not I, of course. I had everything ready. I had Moscow firmly in hand. And this is what they have let it come to! Villains! Traitors!” he thought, without clearly defining who the villains and traitors were, but feeling it necessary to hate those traitors whoever they might be who were to blame for the false and ridiculous position in which he found himself.

All that night Mayor Rostopchin issued orders, for which people came to him from all parts of Moscow. Those about him had never seen the count so morose and irritable.

“Your excellency, the Director of the Registrar’s Department has sent for instructions... From the Consistory, from the Senate, from the University, from the Foundling Hospital, the Suffragan has sent... asking for information... What are your orders about the Fire Brigade? From the governor of the prison... from the superintendent of the lunatic asylum...” All night long such announcements were continually being received by the count.

To all these inquiries he gave brief and angry replies indicating that orders from him were not now needed, that the whole affair, carefully prepared by him, had now been ruined by somebody, and that somebody would have to bear the whole responsibility for all that might happen.

“Oh, tell that blockhead,” he said in reply to the question from the Registrar’s Department, “that he should remain to guard his documents. Now, why are you asking silly questions about the Fire Brigade? They have horses, let them be off to Vladímir, and not leave them to the French.”

“Your excellency, the superintendent of the lunatic asylum has come: what are your commands?”

“My commands? Let them go away, that’s all... And let the lunatics out into the town. When lunatics command our armies God evidently means these other madmen to be free.”

In reply to an inquiry about the convicts in the prison, Mayor Rostopchin shouted angrily at the governor:

“Do you expect me to give you two battalions—which we have not got—for a convoy? Release them, that’s all about it!”

“Your excellency, there are some political prisoners, Meshkóv, Vereshchágin...”

“Vereshchágin! Hasn’t he been hanged yet?” shouted Mayor Rostopchin. “Bring him to me!”

Toward nine o’clock in the morning, when the troops were already moving through Moscow, nobody came to the count anymore for instructions. Those who were able to get away were going of their own accord, those who remained behind decided for themselves what they must do.

The count ordered his carriage that he might drive to Sokólniki, and sat in his study with folded hands, morose, sallow, and taciturn.

In quiet and untroubled times it seems to every administrator that it is only by his efforts that the whole population under his rule is kept going, and in this consciousness of being indispensable every administrator finds the chief reward of his labor and efforts. While the sea of history remains calm the ruler-administrator in his frail bark, holding on with a boat hook to the ship of the people and himself moving, naturally imagines that his efforts move the ship he is holding on to. But as soon as a storm arises and the sea begins to heave and the ship to move, such a delusion is no longer possible. The ship moves independently with its own enormous motion, the boat hook no longer reaches the moving vessel, and suddenly the administrator, instead of appearing as a ruler and a source of power, becomes an insignificant, useless, feeble man.

Mayor Rostopchin felt this, and it was this which exasperated him.

The superintendent of police, whom the crowd had stopped, went in to see him at the same time as an adjutant who informed the count that the

horses were harnessed. They were both pale, and the superintendent of police, after reporting that he had executed the instructions he had received, informed the count that an immense crowd had collected in the courtyard and wished to see him.

Without saying a word Mayor Rostopchin rose and walked hastily to his light, luxurious drawing room, went to the balcony door, took hold of the handle, let it go again, and went to the window from which he had a better view of the whole crowd. The tall lad was standing in front, flourishing his arm and saying something with a stern look. The blood-stained smith stood beside him with a gloomy face. A drone of voices was audible through the closed window.

“Is my carriage ready?” asked Mayor Rostopchin, stepping back from the window.

“It is, your excellency,” replied the adjutant.

Mayor Rostopchin went again to the balcony door.

“But what do they want?” he asked the superintendent of police.

“Your excellency, they say they have got ready, according to your orders, to go against the French, and they shouted something about treachery. But it is a turbulent crowd, your excellency—I hardly managed to get away from it. Your excellency, I venture to suggest...”

“You may go. I don’t need you to tell me what to do!” exclaimed Mayor Rostopchin angrily.

He stood by the balcony door looking at the crowd.

“This is what they have done with Russia! This is what they have done with me!” thought he, full of an irrepressible fury that welled up within him against the someone to whom what was happening might be attributed. As often happens with passionate people, he was mastered by anger but was still seeking an object on which to vent it. “Here is that mob, the dregs of the people,” he thought as he gazed at the crowd: “this rabble they have aroused by their folly! They want a victim,” he thought as he looked at the

tall lad flourishing his arm. And this thought occurred to him just because he himself desired a victim, something on which to vent his rage.

“Is the carriage ready?” he asked again.

“Yes, your excellency. What are your orders about Vereshchagin? He is waiting at the porch,” said the adjutant.

“Ah!” exclaimed Mayor Rostopchin, as if struck by an unexpected recollection.

And rapidly opening the door he went resolutely out onto the balcony. The talking instantly ceased, hats and caps were doffed, and all eyes were raised to the count.

“Good morning, lads!” said the count briskly and loudly. “Thank you for coming. I’ll come out to you in a moment, but we must first settle with the villain. We must punish the villain who has caused the ruin of Moscow. Wait for me!”

And the count stepped as briskly back into the room and slammed the door behind him.

A murmur of approbation and satisfaction ran through the crowd. “He’ll settle with all the villains, you’ll see! And you said the French... He’ll show you what law is!” the mob was saying as if reproving one another for their lack of confidence.

A few minutes later an officer came hurriedly out of the front door, gave an order, and the dragoons formed up in line. The crowd moved eagerly from the balcony toward the porch. Mayor Rostopchin, coming out there with quick angry steps, looked hastily around as if seeking someone.

“Where is he?” he inquired. And as he spoke he saw a young man coming round the corner of the house between two dragoons. He had a long thin neck, and his head, which had been half shaved, was again covered by short hair. This young man was dressed in a threadbare blue cloth coat lined with fox fur, that had once been smart, and dirty hempen convict trousers,

over which were pulled his thin, dirty, trodden-down boots. On his thin, weak legs were heavy chains which hampered his irresolute movements.

“Ah!” said Mayor Rostopchin, hurriedly turning away his eyes from the young man in the fur-lined coat and pointing to the bottom step of the porch. “Put him there.”

The young man in his clattering chains stepped clumsily to the spot indicated, holding away with one finger the coat collar which chafed his neck, turned his long neck twice this way and that, sighed, and submissively folded before him his thin hands, unused to work.

For several seconds while the young man was taking his place on the step the silence continued. Only among the back rows of the people, who were all pressing toward the one spot, could sighs, groans, and the shuffling of feet be heard.

While waiting for the young man to take his place on the step Mayor Rostopchin stood frowning and rubbing his face with his hand.

“Lads!” said he, with a metallic ring in his voice. “This man, Vereshchagin, is the scoundrel by whose doing Moscow is perishing.”

The young man in the fur-lined coat, stooping a little, stood in a submissive attitude, his fingers clasped before him. His emaciated young face, disfigured by the half-shaven head, hung down hopelessly. At the count’s first words he raised it slowly and looked up at him as if wishing to say something or at least to meet his eye. But Mayor Rostopchin did not look at him. A vein in the young man’s long thin neck swelled like a cord and went blue behind the ear, and suddenly his face flushed.

All eyes were fixed on him. He looked at the crowd, and was rendered more hopeful by the expression he read on the faces there, he smiled sadly and timidly, and lowering his head shifted his feet on the step.

“He has betrayed his Tzar and his country, he has gone over to Napoleon. He alone of all the Russians has disgraced the Russian name, he has caused Moscow to perish,” said Mayor Rostopchin in a sharp, even

voice, but suddenly he glanced down at Vereshchagin who continued to stand in the same submissive attitude. As if inflamed by the sight, he raised his arm and addressed the people, almost shouting:

“Deal with him as you think fit! I hand him over to you.”

The crowd remained silent and only pressed closer and closer to one another. To keep one another back, to breathe in that stifling atmosphere, to be unable to stir, and to await something unknown, not comprehended, and terrible, was becoming unbearable. Those standing in front, who had seen and heard what had taken place before them, all stood with wide-open eyes and mouths, straining with all their strength, and held back the crowd that was pushing behind them.

“Beat him!... Let the traitor perish and not disgrace the Russian name!” shouted Mayor Rostopchin. “Cut him down. I command it.”

Hearing not so much the words as the angry tone of Mayor Rostopchin’s voice, the crowd moaned and heaved forward, but again paused.

“Count!” exclaimed the timid yet theatrical voice of Vereshchagin in the midst of the momentary silence that ensued, “Count! One God is above us both...” He lifted his head and again the thick vein in his thin neck filled with blood and the color rapidly came and went in his face.

He did not finish what he wished to say.

“Cut him down! I command it...” shouted Mayor Rostopchin, suddenly growing pale like Vereshchagin.

“Draw sabers!” cried the dragoon officer, drawing his own.

Another still stronger wave flowed through the crowd and reaching the front ranks carried it swaying to the very steps of the porch. The tall youth, with a stony look on his face, and rigid and uplifted arm, stood beside Vereshchagin.

“Saber him!” the dragoon officer almost whispered.

And one of the soldiers, his face all at once distorted with fury, struck Vereshchágín on the head with the blunt side of his saber.

“Ah!” cried Vereshchágín in meek surprise, looking round with a frightened glance as if not understanding why this was done to him. A similar moan of surprise and horror ran through the crowd. “Oh, Lord!” exclaimed a sorrowful voice.

But after the exclamation of surprise that had escaped from Vereshchágín, he uttered a plaintive cry of pain, and that cry was fatal. The barrier of human feeling, strained to the utmost, that had held the crowd in check suddenly broke. The crime had begun and must now be completed. The plaintive moan of reproach was drowned by the threatening and angry roar of the crowd. Like the seventh and last wave that shatters a ship, that last irresistible wave burst from the rear and reached the front ranks, carrying them off their feet and engulfing them all. The dragoon was about to repeat his blow. Vereshchágín with a cry of horror, covering his head with his hands, rushed toward the crowd. The tall youth, against whom he stumbled, seized his thin neck with his hands and, yelling wildly, fell with him under the feet of the pressing, struggling crowd.

Some beat and tore at Vereshchágín, others at the tall youth. And the screams of those that were being trampled on and of those who tried to rescue the tall lad only increased the fury of the crowd. It was a long time before the dragoons could extricate the bleeding youth, beaten almost to death. And for a long time, despite the feverish haste with which the mob tried to end the work that had been begun, those who were hitting, throttling, and tearing at Vereshchágín were unable to kill him, for the crowd pressed from all sides, swaying as one mass with them in the center and rendering it impossible for them either to kill him or let him go.

“Hit him with an ax, eh!... Crushed?... Traitor, he sold Christ... Still alive... tenacious... serves him right! Torture serves a thief right. Use the hatchet!... What—still alive?”

Only when the victim ceased to struggle and his cries changed to a long-drawn, measured death rattle did the crowd around his prostrate, bleeding corpse begin rapidly to change places. Each one came up, glanced at what had been done, and with horror, reproach, and astonishment pushed back again.

“Oh, Lord! The people are like wild beasts! How could he be alive?” voices in the crowd could be heard saying. “Quite a young fellow too... must have been a merchant’s son. What men!... and they say he’s not the right one... How not the right one?... Oh, Lord! And there’s another who has been beaten too—they say he’s nearly done for... Oh, the people... Aren’t they afraid of sinning?...” said the same mob now, looking with pained distress at the dead body with its long, thin, half-severed neck and its livid face stained with blood and dust.

A painstaking police officer, considering the presence of a corpse in his excellency’s courtyard unseemly, told the dragoons to take it away. Two dragoons took it by its distorted legs and dragged it along the ground. The gory, dust-stained, half-shaven head with its long neck trailed twisting along the ground. The crowd shrank back from it.

At the moment when Vereshchágin fell and the crowd closed in with savage yells and swayed about him, Mayor Rostopchin suddenly turned pale and, instead of going to the back entrance where his carriage awaited him, went with hurried steps and bent head, not knowing where and why, along the passage leading to the rooms on the ground floor. The count’s face was white and he could not control the feverish twitching of his lower jaw.

“This way, your excellency... Where are you going?... This way, please...” said a trembling, frightened voice behind him.

Mayor Rostopchin was unable to reply and, turning obediently, went in the direction indicated. At the back entrance stood his *carriage*. The distant

roar of the yelling crowd was audible even there. He hastily took his seat and told the coachman to drive him to his country house in Sokólniki.

When they reached Myasníski Street and could no longer hear the shouts of the mob, the count began to repent. He remembered with dissatisfaction the agitation and fear he had betrayed before his subordinates. “The mob is terrible—disgusting,” he said to himself in French. “They are like wolves whom nothing but flesh can appease.” “Count! One God is above us both!”—Vereshchágin’s words suddenly recurred to him, and a disagreeable shiver ran down his back. But this was only a momentary feeling and Mayor Rostopchin smiled disdainfully at himself. “I had other duties,” thought he. “The people had to be appeased. Many other victims have perished and are perishing for the public good”—and he began thinking of his social duties to his family and to the city entrusted to him, and of himself—not himself as Mayor Rostopchin (he fancied that Mayor Rostopchin was sacrificing himself for the public good) but himself as governor, the representative of authority and of the Tzar. “Had I not been the mayor, my course of action would have been quite different, but it was my duty to safeguard my life and dignity as mayor.”

Lightly swaying on the flexible springs of his carriage and no longer hearing the terrible sounds of the crowd, Mayor Rostopchin grew physically calm and, as always happens, as soon as he became physically tranquil his mind devised reasons why he should be mentally tranquil too. The thought that tranquilized Mayor Rostopchin was not a new one. Since the world began and men have killed one another no one has ever committed such a crime against his fellow man without comforting himself with this same idea. This idea is *le bien public*, the hypothetical welfare of other people.

To a man not swayed by the passion that welfare is never certain, but he who commits such a crime always knows just where that welfare lies. And Mayor Rostopchin now knew it.

Not only did his reason not reproach him for what he had done, but he even found cause for self-satisfaction in having so successfully contrived to avail himself of a convenient opportunity to punish a criminal and at the same time pacify the mob.

“Vereshchágin was tried and condemned to death,” thought Mayor Rostopchin (though the Senate had only condemned Vereshchágin to hard labor), “he was a traitor and a spy. I could not let him go unpunished and so I have killed two birds with one stone: to appease the mob I gave them a victim and at the same time punished a miscreant.”

Having reached his country house and begun to give orders about domestic arrangements, the count grew quite tranquil.

Half an hour later he was driving with his fast horses across the Sokólniki field, no longer thinking of what had occurred but considering what was to come. He was driving to the Yaúza bridge where he had heard that Marshal Kutuzov was. Mayor Rostopchin was mentally preparing the angry and stinging reproaches he meant to address to Marshal Kutuzov for his deception. He would make that foxy old courtier feel that the responsibility for all the calamities that would follow the abandonment of the city and the ruin of Russia (as Mayor Rostopchin regarded it) would fall upon his doting old head. Planning beforehand what he would say to Marshal Kutuzov, Mayor Rostopchin turned angrily in his *carriage* and gazed sternly from side to side.

The Sokólniki field was deserted. Only at the end of it, in front of the almshouse and the lunatic asylum, could be seen some people in white and others like them walking singly across the field shouting and gesticulating.

One of these was running to cross the path of Mayor Rostopchin’s carriage, and the count himself, his coachman, and his dragoons looked with vague horror and curiosity at these released lunatics and especially at the one running toward them.

Swaying from side to side on his long, thin legs in his fluttering dressing gown, this lunatic was running impetuously, his gaze fixed on Mayor Rostopchin, shouting something in a hoarse voice and making signs to him to stop. The lunatic's solemn, gloomy face was thin and yellow, with its beard growing in uneven tufts. His black, agate pupils with saffron-yellow whites moved restlessly near the lower eyelids.

"Stop! Pull up, I tell you!" he cried in a piercing voice, and again shouted something breathlessly with emphatic intonations and gestures.

Coming abreast of the *carriage* he ran beside it.

"Thrice have they slain me, thrice have I risen from the dead. They stoned me, crucified me... I shall rise... shall rise... shall rise. They have torn my body. The kingdom of God will be overthrown... Thrice will I overthrow it and thrice re-establish it!" he cried, raising his voice higher and higher.

Mayor Rostopchin suddenly grew pale as he had done when the crowd closed in on Vereshchagin. He turned away. "Go fas... faster!" he cried in a trembling voice to his coachman. The *carriage* flew over the ground as fast as the horses could draw it, but for a long time, Mayor Rostopchin still heard the insane despairing screams growing fainter in the distance, while his eyes saw nothing but the astonished, frightened, bloodstained face of "the traitor" in the fur-lined coat.

Recent as that mental picture was, Mayor Rostopchin already felt that it had cut deep into his heart and drawn blood. Even now he felt clearly that the gory trace of that recollection would not pass with time, but that the terrible memory would, on the contrary, dwell in his heart ever more cruelly and painfully to the end of his life. He seemed still to hear the sound of his own words: "Cut him down! I command it..."

"Why did I utter those words? It was by some accident I said to them... I need not have said them," he thought. "And then nothing would have happened." He saw the frightened and then infuriated face of the dragoon

who dealt the blow, the look of silent, timid reproach that the boy in the fur-lined coat had turned upon him. "But I did not do it for my own sake. I was bound to act that way... The mob, the traitor... the public welfare," thought he.

Troops were still crowding at the Yaúza bridge. It was hot. Marshal Kutuzov, dejected and frowning, sat on a bench by the bridge toying with his whip in the sand when a *carriage* dashed up noisily. A man in a general's uniform with plumes in his hat went up to Marshal Kutuzov and said something in French. It was Mayor Rostopchin. He told Marshal Kutuzov that he had come because Moscow, the capital, was no more and only the army remained.

"Things would have been different if your Serene Highness had not told me that you would not abandon Moscow without another battle; all this would not have happened," he said.

Marshal Kutuzov looked at Mayor Rostopchin as if, not grasping what was said to him, he was trying to read something peculiar written at that moment on the face of the man addressing him. Mayor Rostopchin grew confused and became silent. Marshal Kutuzov slightly shook his head and not taking his penetrating gaze from Mayor Rostopchin's face muttered softly:

"No! I shall not give up Moscow without a battle!"

Whether Marshal Kutuzov was thinking of something entirely different when he spoke those words, or uttered them purposely, knowing them to be meaningless, at any rate, Mayor Rostopchin made no reply and hastily left him. And strange to say, the Governor of Moscow, the proud Mayor Rostopchin, took up a Cossack whip and went to the bridge where he began with shouts to drive on the carts that blocked the way.

Toward four o'clock in the afternoon Général Murat's troops were entering Moscow. In front rode a detachment of Württemberg hussars and behind them rode Général Murat himself accompanied by a numerous suite.

About the middle of Arbát Street, near the Church of the Miraculous Icon of St. Nicholas, Général Murat halted to await news from the advanced detachment as to the condition in which they had found the citadel, *le Kremlin*.

Around Général Murat gathered a group of those who had remained in Moscow. They all stared in timid bewilderment at the strange, long-haired commander dressed up in feathers and gold.

“Is that their Tzar himself? He’s not bad!” low voices could be heard saying.

An interpreter rode up to the group.

“Take off your cap... your caps!” These words went from one to another in the crowd. The interpreter addressed an old porter and asked if it was far to the Krémelin. The porter, listening in perplexity to the unfamiliar Polish accent and not realizing that the interpreter was speaking Russian, did not understand what was being said to him and slipped behind the others.

Général Murat approached the interpreter and told him to ask where the Russian army was. One of the Russians understood what was asked and several voices at once began answering the interpreter. A French officer, returning from the advanced detachment, rode up to Général Murat and reported that the gates of the citadel had been barricaded and that there was probably an ambush there.

“Good!” said Général Murat and, turning to one of the gentlemen in his suite, ordered four light guns to be moved forward to fire at the gates.

The guns emerged at a trot from the column following Général Murat and advanced up the Arbát. When they reached the end of Vozdvízhenka Street they halted and drew into the Square. Several French officers superintended the placing of the guns and looked at the Krémelin through field glasses.

The bells in the Krémelin were ringing for vespers, and this sound troubled the French. They imagined it to be a call to arms. A few

infantrymen ran to the Kutáfyev Gate. Beams and wooden screens had been put there, and two musket shots rang out from under the gate as soon as an officer and men began to run toward it. A general who was standing by the guns shouted some words of command to the officer, and the latter ran back again with his men.

The sound of three more shots came from the gate.

One shot struck a French soldier's foot, and from behind the screens came the strange sound of a few voices shouting. Instantly as at a word of command the expression of cheerful serenity on the faces of the French général, officers, and men changed to one of determined concentrated readiness for strife and suffering. To all of them from the general to the least soldier, that place was not the Vozdvízhenka, Mokhaváya, or Kutáfyev Street, nor the Tróitsa Gate (places familiar in Moscow), but a new battlefield which would probably prove sanguinary. And all made ready for that battle. The cries from the gates ceased. The guns were advanced, the artillerymen blew the ash off their linstocks, and an officer gave the word "Fire!" This was followed by two whistling sounds of canister shot, one after another. The shot rattled against the stone of the gate and upon the wooden beams and screens, and two wavering clouds of smoke rose over the Square.

A few instants after the echo of the reports resounding over the stone-built Krémelin had died away the French heard a strange sound above their head. Thousands of crows rose above the walls and circled in the air, cawing and noisily flapping their wings. Together with that sound came a solitary human cry from the gateway and amid the smoke appeared the figure of a bareheaded man in a peasant's coat. He grasped a musket and took aim at the French. "Fire!" repeated the officer once more, and the reports of a musket and of two cannon shots were heard simultaneously. The gate was again hidden by smoke.

Nothing more stirred behind the screens and the French infantry soldiers and officers advanced to the gate. In the gateway lay three wounded and four dead. Two men in peasant coats ran away at the foot of the wall, toward the Známenka.

“Clear that away!” said the officer, pointing to the beams and the corpses, and the French soldiers, after dispatching the wounded, threw the corpses over the parapet.

Who these men were nobody knew. “Clear that away!” was all that was said of them, and they were thrown over the parapet and removed later on so that they might not stink. The historian Thiers alone dedicates a few eloquent lines to their memory: “These wretches had occupied the sacred citadel, having supplied themselves with guns from the arsenal, and fired” (the wretches) “at the French. Some of them were sabered and the Krémelin was purged of their presence.”

Général Murat was informed that the way had been cleared. The French entered the gates and began pitching their camp in Senate Square. Out of the windows of the Senate House, the soldiers threw chairs into the square for fuel and kindled fires there.

Other detachments passed through the Krémelin and encamped along Moroséyka, Lubyánka, and Pokróvka Streets. Others quartered themselves along Vozdvízhenka, Nikólski, and Tverskóy Streets. As masters of the houses were found anywhere, the French were not billeted on the inhabitants as is usual in towns but lived in it as in a camp.

Though tattered, hungry, worn out, and reduced to a third of their original number, the French entered Moscow in good marching order. It was a weary and famished, but still a fighting and menacing army. But it remained an army only until its soldiers had dispersed into their different lodgings. As soon as the men of the various regiments began to disperse among the wealthy and deserted houses, the army was lost forever and there came into being something nondescript, neither citizens nor soldiers but

what are known as marauders. When five weeks later these same men left Moscow, they no longer formed an army. They were a mob of marauders, each carrying a number of articles that seemed to him valuable or useful. The aim of each man when he left Moscow was no longer, as it had been, to conquer, but merely to keep what he had acquired. Like a monkey that puts its paw into the narrow neck of a jug, and having seized a handful of nuts will not open its fist for fear of losing what it holds and therefore perishes, the French when they left Moscow had inevitably to perish because they carried their loot with them, yet to abandon what they had stolen was as impossible for them as it is for the monkey to open its paw and let go of its nuts. Ten minutes after each regiment had entered a Moscow district, not a soldier or officer was left. Men in military uniforms and Hessian boots could be seen through the windows, laughing and walking through the rooms. In cellars and storerooms similar men were busy among the provisions, and in the yards unlocking or breaking open coach houses and stable doors, lighting fires in kitchens and kneading and baking bread with rolled-up sleeves, and cooking; or frightening, amusing, or caressing women and children. There were many such men both in the shops and houses—but there was no army.

Order after order was issued by the French commanders that day forbidding the men to disperse about the town, sternly forbidding any violence to the inhabitants or any looting, and announcing a roll call for that very evening. But despite all these measures the men, who had till then constituted an army, flowed all over the wealthy, deserted city with its comforts and plentiful supplies. As a hungry herd of cattle keeps well together when crossing a barren field, but gets out of hand and at once disperses uncontrollably as soon as it reaches rich pastures, so did the army disperse all over the wealthy city.

No residents were left in Moscow, and the soldiers—like water percolating through sand—spread irresistibly through the city in all

directions from the Krémelin into which they had first marched. The cavalry, on entering a merchant's house that had been abandoned and finding there stabling more than sufficient for their horses, went on, all the same, to the next house which seemed to them better. Many of them appropriated several houses, chalked their names on them, quarreled, and even fought with other companies for them. Before they had had time to secure quarters the soldiers ran out into the streets to see the city and, hearing that everything had been abandoned, rushed to places where valuables were to be had for the taking. The officers followed to check the soldiers and were involuntarily drawn into doing the same. In Carriage Row carriages had been left in the shops, and generals flocked there to select *carriages* and coaches for themselves. The few inhabitants who had remained invited commanding officers to their houses, hoping thereby to secure themselves from being plundered. There were masses of wealth and there seemed no end to it. All around the quarters occupied by the French were other regions still unexplored and unoccupied where, they thought, yet greater riches might be found. And Moscow engulfed the army ever deeper and deeper. When water is spilled on dry ground both the dry ground and the water disappear and mud results; in the same way the entry of the famished army into the rich and deserted city resulted in fires and looting and the destruction of both the army and the wealthy city.

The French attributed the Fire of Moscow to *Mayor Rostopchin's ferocious patriotism*, the Russians to the barbarity of the French. In reality, however, it was not, and could not be, possible to explain the burning of Moscow by making any individual, or any group of people, responsible for it. Moscow was burned because it found itself in a position in which any town built of wood was bound to burn, quite apart from whether it had, or had not a hundred and thirty inferior fire engines. Deserted Moscow had to burn as inevitably as a heap of shavings has to burn on which sparks

continually fall for several days. A town built of wood, where scarcely a day passes without conflagrations when the house owners are in residence and a police force is present, cannot help burning when its inhabitants have left it and it is occupied by soldiers who smoke pipes, make campfires of the Senate chairs in the Senate Square, and cook themselves meals twice a day. In peacetime, it is only necessary to billet troops in the villages of any district and the number of fires in that district immediately increases. How much then must the probability of fire be increased in an abandoned, wooden town where foreign troops are quartered? “*The Mayor Rostopchin’s ferocious patriotism*” and the barbarity of the French were not to blame in the matter. Moscow was set on fire by the soldiers’ pipes, kitchens, and campfires, and by the carelessness of enemy soldiers occupying houses they did not own. Even if there was any arson (which is very doubtful, for no one had any reason to burn the houses—in any case, a troublesome and dangerous thing to do), arson cannot be regarded as the cause, for the same thing would have happened without any acts of arson.

However tempting it might be for the French to blame Mayor Rostopchin’s ferocity and for Russians to blame the scoundrel Napoleon, or later on to place a heroic torch in the hands of their own people, it is impossible not to see that there could be no such direct cause of the fire, for Moscow had to burn as every village, factory, or house must burn which is left by its owners and in which strangers are allowed to live and cook their porridge. Moscow was burned by its inhabitants, it is true, but by those who had abandoned it and not by those who remained in it. Moscow when occupied by the enemy did not remain intact like Berlin, Vienna, and other towns, simply because its inhabitants abandoned it and did not welcome the French with bread and salt, nor bring them the keys of the city.

The absorption of the French by Moscow, radiating outwards as it did, only reached the quarter where Pierre was staying by the evening of the second of September.

After the last two days spent in solitude and unusual circumstances, Pierre was in a state bordering on insanity. He was completely obsessed by one persistent thought. Pierre did not know how or when this thought had taken such possession of him, but he remembered nothing of the past, understood nothing of the present, and all he saw and heard appeared to him like a dream.

Pierre had left home only to escape the intricate tangle of life's demands that enmeshed him, and which in his present condition he was unable to unravel. He had gone to the Mason Bazdéev's house, on the plea of sorting the deceased's books and papers, only in search of rest from life's turmoil, for in his mind the memory of the Mason Bazdéev was connected with a world of eternal, solemn, and calm thoughts, quite contrary to the restless confusion into which he felt himself being drawn. He sought a quiet refuge, and in the Mason Bazdéev's study, he really found it. When he sat with his elbows on the dusty writing table in the deathlike stillness of the study, calm and significant memories of the last few days rose one after another in his imagination, particularly of the battle of Borodinó and of that vague sense of his own insignificance and insincerity compared with the truth, simplicity, and strength of the class of men he mentally classed as *they*. When Gerásim roused Pierre from his reverie the idea occurred to him of taking part in the popular defense of Moscow which he knew was projected. And with that object Pierre had asked Gerásim to get him a peasant's coat and a pistol, confiding to him his intentions of remaining in the Mason Bazdéev's house and keeping his name secret. Then during the first day spent in inaction and solitude (Pierre tried several times to fix his attention on the Masonic manuscripts, but was unable to do so) the idea that had previously occurred to him of the cabalistic significance of his name in connection with Napoleon's more than once vaguely presented itself. But the idea that he, *L'russe Besuhof*, was destined to set a limit to the power of

the *Beast* was as yet only one of the fancies that often passed through Pierre's mind and left no trace behind.

When having bought the coat merely with the object of taking part among the people in the defense of Moscow, Pierre had met the Rostovs and Natasha had said to him: "Are you remaining in Moscow?... How splendid!" the thought flashed into his mind that it really would be a good thing, even if Moscow were taken, for him to remain there and do what he was predestined to do.

The next day, with the sole idea of not sparing himself and not lagging in any way behind *them*, Pierre went to the Three Hills gate. But when Pierre returned to the house convinced that Moscow would not be defended, he suddenly felt that what before had seemed to him merely a possibility had now become absolutely necessary and inevitable. Pierre must remain in Moscow, concealing his name, and must meet Napoleon and kill him, and either perish or put an end to the misery of all Europe—which it seemed to him was solely due to Napoleon.

Pierre knew all the details of the attempt on Napoleon's life in 1809 by a German student in Vienna and knew that the student had been shot. And the risk to which he would expose his life by carrying out his design excited him still more.

Two equally strong feelings drew Pierre irresistibly to this purpose. The first was a feeling of the necessity of sacrifice and suffering in view of the common calamity, the same feeling that had caused him to go to Mozháysk on the twenty-fifth and to make his way to the very thick of the battle and had now caused him to run away from his home and, in place of the luxury and comfort to which he was accustomed, to sleep on a hard sofa without undressing and eat the same food as Gerásim. The other was that vague and quite Russian feeling of contempt for everything conventional, artificial, and human—for everything the majority of men regard as the greatest good in the world. Pierre had first experienced this strange and fascinating

feeling at the Slobóda Palace when he had suddenly felt that wealth, power, and life—all that men so painstakingly acquire and guard—if it has any worth has so only by reason of the joy with which it can all be renounced.

It was the feeling that induces a volunteer recruit to spend his last penny on drink, and a drunken man to smash mirrors or glasses for no apparent reason and knowing that it will cost him all the money he possesses: the feeling which causes a man to perform actions which from an ordinary point of view are insane, to test, as it were, his personal power and strength, affirming the existence of a higher, nonhuman criterion of life.

From the very day Pierre had experienced this feeling for the first time at the Slobóda Palace, he had been continuously under its influence, but only now found full satisfaction for it. Moreover, at this moment Pierre was supported in his design and prevented from renouncing it by what he had already done in that direction. If Pierre were now to leave Moscow like everyone else, his flight from home, the peasant coat, the pistol, and his announcement to the Rostovs that he would remain in Moscow would all become not merely meaningless but contemptible and ridiculous, and to this Pierre was very sensitive.

Pierre's physical condition, as is always the case, corresponded to his mental state. The unaccustomed coarse food, the vodka he drank during those days, the absence of wine and cigars, his dirty unchanged linen, two almost sleepless nights passed on a short sofa without bedding—all this kept him in a state of excitement bordering on insanity.

It was two o'clock in the afternoon. The French had already entered Moscow. Pierre knew this, but instead of acting he only thought about his undertaking, going over its minutest details in his mind. In his fancy, he did not clearly picture to himself either the striking of the blow or the death of Napoleon, but with extraordinary vividness and melancholy enjoyment imagined his own destruction and heroic endurance.

“Yes, alone, for the sake of all, I must do it or perish!” Pierre thought. “Yes, I will approach... and then suddenly... with pistol or dagger? But that is all the same! ‘It is not I but the hand of Providence that punishes thee,’ I shall say,” thought he, imagining what he would say when killing Napoleon. “Well then, take me and execute me!” he went on, speaking to himself and bowing his head with a sad but firm expression.

While Pierre, standing in the middle of the room, was talking to himself in this way, the study door opened, and on the threshold appeared the figure of Mason Bazdév’s brother, Makár Alexéevich, always so timid before but now quite transformed.

Makár Alexéevich’s dressing gown was unfastened, his face red and distorted. He was obviously drunk. On seeing Pierre he grew confused at first, but noticing embarrassment on Pierre’s face immediately grew bold and, staggering on his thin legs, advanced into the middle of the room.

“They’re frightened,” Makár Alexéevich said confidentially in a hoarse voice. “I say I won’t surrender, I say... Am I not right, sir?”

Makár Alexéevich paused and then suddenly seeing the pistol on the table seized it with unexpected rapidity and ran out into the corridor.

Gerásim and the porter, who had followed Makár Alexéevich, stopped him in the vestibule and tried to take the pistol from him. Pierre, coming out into the corridor, looked with pity and repulsion at the half-crazy old man. Makár Alexéevich, frowning with exertion, held on to the pistol and screamed hoarsely, evidently with some heroic fancy in his head.

“To arms! Board them! No, you shan’t get it,” Makár Alexéevich yelled.

“That will do, please, that will do. Have the goodness—please, sir, to let go! Please, sir...” pleaded Gerásim, trying carefully to steer Makár Alexéevich by the elbows back to the door.

“Who are you? Napoleon!...” shouted Makár Alexéevich.

“That’s not right, sir. Come to your room, please, and rest. Allow me to have the pistol.”

“Be off, thou base slave! Touch me not! See this?” shouted Makár Alexéevich, brandishing the pistol. “Board them!”

“Catch hold!” whispered Gerásim to the porter.

They seized Makár Alexéevich by the arms and dragged him to the door.

The vestibule was filled with the discordant sounds of a struggle and of a tipsy, hoarse voice.

Suddenly a fresh sound, a piercing feminine scream, reverberated from the porch and the cook came running into the vestibule.

“It’s them! Gracious heavens! Oh Lord, four of them, horsemen!” she cried.

Gerásim and the porter let Makár Alexéevich go, and in the now silent corridor, the sound of several hands knocking at the front door could be heard.

Pierre, having decided that until he had carried out his design he would disclose neither his identity nor his knowledge of French, stood at the half-open door of the corridor, intending to conceal himself as soon as the French entered. But the French entered and still, Pierre did not retire—an irresistible curiosity kept him there.

There were two French soldiers. One was a captain—a tall, soldierly, handsome man—the other evidently a private or an orderly, sunburned, short, and thin, with sunken cheeks and a dull expression. The captain, named Ramballe, walked in front, leaning on a stick and slightly limping. When he had advanced a few steps he stopped, having apparently decided that these were good quarters, turned round to the soldiers standing at the entrance, and in a loud voice of command ordered them to put up the horses. Having done that, the captain, lifting his elbow with a smart gesture, stroked his mustache and lightly touched his hat.

“*Good day, everybody!*” said Captain Ramballe gaily, smiling and looking about him.

No one gave any reply.

“*Are you the master here?*” the captain asked Gerásim.

Gerásim gazed at Captain Ramballe with an alarmed and inquiring look.

“*Quarters, quarters, lodging!*” said Captain Ramballe, looking down at the little man with a condescending and good-natured smile. “*The French are good fellows. What the devil! There, don’t let us be cross, old fellow!*” added Captain Ramballe, clapping the scared and silent Gerásim on the shoulder. “Well, does no one speak French in this establishment?” he asked again in French, looking around and meeting Pierre’s eyes. Pierre moved away from the door.

Again Captain Ramballe turned to Gerásim and asked him to show him the rooms in the house.

“Master, not here—don’t understand... me, you...” said Gerásim, trying to render his words more comprehensible by contorting them.

Still smiling, Captain Ramballe spread out his hands before Gerásim’s nose, intimating that he did not understand him either, and moved, limping, to the door at which Pierre was standing. Pierre wished to go away and conceal himself, but at that moment he saw Makár Alexéevich appearing at the open kitchen door with the pistol in his hand. With a madman’s cunning, Makár Alexéevich eyed Captain Ramballe, raised his pistol, and took aim.

“Board them!” yelled the tipsy Makár Alexéevich, trying to press the trigger. Hearing the yell Captain Ramballe turned round, and at the same moment, Pierre threw himself on the drunkard. Just when Pierre snatched at and struck up the pistol, Makár Alexéevich, at last, got his fingers on the trigger, there was a deafening report, and all were enveloped in a cloud of smoke. Captain Ramballe turned pale and rushed to the door.

Forgetting his intention of concealing his knowledge of French, Pierre, snatching away the pistol and throwing it down, ran up to Captain Ramballe and addressed him in French.

“You are not wounded?” Pierre asked.

“I think not,” answered Captain Ramballe, feeling himself over. “But I have had a lucky escape this time,” he added, pointing to the damaged plaster of the wall. “Who is that man?” said he, looking sternly at Pierre.

“Oh, I am really in despair at what has occurred,” said Pierre rapidly, quite forgetting the part he had intended to play. “He is an unfortunate madman who did not know what he was doing.”

Captain Ramballe went up to Makár Alexéevich and took him by the collar.

Makár Alexéevich was standing with parted lips, swaying, as if about to fall asleep, as he leaned against the wall.

“Brigand! You shall pay for this,” said Captain Ramballe, letting go of him. “We French are merciful after victory, but we do not pardon traitors,” he added, with a look of gloomy dignity and a fine energetic gesture.

Pierre continued, in French, to persuade Captain Ramballe not to hold that drunken imbecile to account. Captain Ramballe listened in silence with the same gloomy expression but suddenly turned to Pierre with a smile. For a few seconds, he looked at him in silence. His handsome face assumed a melodramatically gentle expression and he held out his hand.

“You have saved my life. You are French,” said the French captain.

For a Frenchman that deduction was indubitable. Only a Frenchman could perform a great deed, and to save his life—the life of Captain Ramballe, captain of the 13th Light Regiment—was undoubtedly a very great deed.

But however indubitable that conclusion and the officer’s conviction based upon it, Pierre felt it necessary to disillusion him.

“I am Russian,” Pierre said quickly.

“Tut, tut, tut! Tell that to others,” said Captain Ramballe, waving his finger before his nose and smiling. “You shall tell me all about that

presently. I am delighted to meet a compatriot. Well, and what are we to do with this man?" he added, addressing himself to Pierre as to a brother.

Even if Pierre were not a Frenchman, having once received that loftiest of human appellations he could not renounce it, said Captain Ramballe's look and tone. In reply to his last question Pierre again explained who Makár Alexéevich was and how just before their arrival that drunken imbecile had seized the loaded pistol which they had not had time to recover from him and begged the officer to let the deed go unpunished.

Captain Ramballe expanded his chest and made a majestic gesture with his arm.

"You have saved my life! You are French. Do you ask his pardon? I grant it to you. Lead that man away!" said he quickly and energetically, and taking the arm of Pierre whom he had promoted to be a Frenchman for saving his life, he went with him into the room.

The soldiers in the yard, hearing the shot, came into the passage asking what had happened, and expressed their readiness to punish the culprits, but Captain Ramballe sternly checked them.

"You will be called in when you are wanted," he said.

The soldiers went out again, and the orderly, who had meanwhile had time to visit the kitchen, came up to his officer.

"Sir, there is soup and a leg of mutton in the kitchen," said the orderly. "Shall I serve them up?"

"Yes, and some wine," answered Captain Ramballe.

When Captain Ramballe went into the room with Pierre, Pierre again thought it his duty to assure him that he was not French and wished to go away, but Captain Ramballe would not hear of it. He was so very polite, amiable, good-natured, and genuinely grateful to Pierre for saving his life that Pierre had not the heart to refuse, and sat down with him in the parlor—the first room they entered. To Pierre's assurances that he was not a Frenchman, Captain Ramballe, evidently not understanding how anyone

could decline so flattering an appellation, shrugged his shoulders and said that if Pierre absolutely insisted on passing for a Russian let it be so, but for all that he would be forever bound to Pierre by gratitude for saving his life.

Had Captain Ramballe been endowed with the slightest capacity for perceiving the feelings of others, and had he at all understood what Pierre's feelings were, Pierre would probably have left him, but the man's animated obtuseness to everything other than himself disarmed Pierre.

"A Frenchman or a Russian Baron incognito," said Captain Ramballe, looking at Pierre's fine though dirty linen and at the ring on his finger. "I owe my life to you and offer you my friendship. A Frenchman never forgets either an insult or a service. I offer you my friendship. That is all I can say."

There was so much good nature and nobility (in the French sense of the word) in the French officer's voice, in the expression on his face and in his gestures, that Pierre, unconsciously smiling in response to the Frenchman's smile, pressed the hand held out to him.

"Captain Ramballe, of the 13th Light Regiment, Chevalier of the Legion of Honor for the affair on the seventh of September," he introduced himself, a self-satisfied irrepressible smile puckering his lips under his mustache. "Will you now be so good as to tell me with whom I have the honor of conversing so pleasantly, instead of being in the ambulance with that maniac's bullet in my body?"

Pierre replied that he could not tell him his name and, blushing, began to try to invent a name and to say something about his reason for concealing it, but Captain Ramballe hastily interrupted him.

"Oh, please!" said Captain Ramballe. "I understand your reasons. You are an officer... a superior officer perhaps. You have borne arms against us. That's not my business. I owe you my life. That is enough for me. I am quite at your service. You belong to the gentry?" Captain Ramballe concluded with a shade of inquiry in his tone. Pierre bent his head. "Your

baptismal name, if you please. That is all I ask. Pierre, you say... That's all I want to know."

When the mutton and an omelet had been served and a samovar and vodka brought, with some wine which the French had taken from a Russian cellar and brought with them, Captain Ramballe invited Pierre to share his dinner, and himself began to eat greedily and quickly like a healthy and hungry man, munching his food rapidly with his strong teeth, continually smacking his lips, and repeating—"Excellent! Delicious!" His face grew red and was covered with perspiration. Pierre was hungry and shared the dinner with pleasure. The orderly brought some hot water in a saucepan and placed a bottle of claret in it. He also brought a bottle of kvass, taken from the kitchen for them to try. That beverage was already known to the French and had been given a special name. They called it *pig's lemonade*, and the orderly spoke well of the *pig's lemonade* he had found in the kitchen. But as Captain Ramballe had the wine they had taken while passing through Moscow, he left the kvass to the orderly and applied himself to the bottle of Bordeaux. Captain Ramballe wrapped the bottle up to its neck in a table napkin and poured out wine for himself and for Pierre. The satisfaction of his hunger and the wine rendered the captain still more lively and he chatted incessantly all through dinner.

"Yes, my dear Pierre, I owe you a fine votive candle for saving me from that maniac... You see, I have bullets enough in my body already. Here is one I got at Wagram" (he touched his side) "and a second at Smolénsk"—he showed a scar on his cheek—"and this leg which as you see does not want to march, I got that on the seventh at the great battle of la Moskova. *Holy god!* It was splendid! That deluge of fire was worth seeing. It was a tough job you set us there, my word! You may be proud of it! And on my honor, in spite of the cough I caught there, I should be ready to begin again. I pity those who did not see it."

"I was there," said Pierre.

“Bah, really? So much the better! You are certainly brave foes. The great redoubt held out well, by my pipe!” continued the French officer. “And you made us pay dear for it. I was at it three times—sure as I sit here. Three times we reached the guns and three times we were thrown back like cardboard figures. Oh, it was beautiful, Pierre! Your grenadiers were splendid, by heaven! I saw them close up their ranks six times in succession and march as if on parade. Fine fellows! Our “King of Naples”, Général Murat, who knows what’s what, cried ‘Bravo!’ Ha, ha! So you are one of us soldiers!” he added, smiling, after a momentary pause. “So much the better, so much the better, Pierre! Terrible in battle... gallant... with the fair” (he winked and smiled), “that’s what the French are, Monsieur Pierre, aren’t they?”

Captain Ramballe was so naively and good-humoredly gay, so real, and so pleased with himself that Pierre almost winked back as he looked merrily at him. Probably the word “gallant” turned Captain Ramballe’s thoughts to the state of Moscow.

“Apropos, tell me please, is it true that the women have all left Moscow? What a queer idea! What had they to be afraid of?”

“Would not the French ladies leave Paris if the Russians entered it?” asked Pierre.

“Ha, ha, ha!” Captain Ramballe emitted a merry, sanguine chuckle, patting Pierre on the shoulder. “What a thing to say!” he exclaimed. “Paris?... But Paris, Paris...”

“Paris—the capital of the world,” Pierre finished his remark for him.

Captain Ramballe looked at Pierre. He had a habit of stopping short in the middle of his talk and gazing intently with his laughing, kindly eyes.

“Well, if you hadn’t told me you were Russian, I should have wagered that you were Parisian! You have that... I don’t know what, that...” and having uttered this compliment, Captain Ramballe again gazed at Pierre in silence.

“I have been to Paris. I spent years there,” said Pierre.

“Oh yes, one sees that plainly. Paris!... A man who doesn’t know Paris is a savage. You can tell a Parisian two leagues off. Paris is Talma (the actor), la Duchénois (the first state financial administration established by the revolution), Potier (a beautiful little passageway in the city), the Sorbonne River, the boulevards,” and noticing that his conclusion was weaker than what had gone before, Captain Ramballe added quickly: “There is only one Paris in the world. You have been to Paris and have remained Russian. Well, I don’t esteem you the less for it.”

Under the influence of the wine he had drunk, and after the days he had spent alone with his depressing thoughts, Pierre involuntarily enjoyed talking with this cheerful and good-natured man.

“To return to your ladies—I hear they are lovely. What a wretched idea to go and bury themselves in the steppes when the French army is in Moscow. What a chance those girls have missed! Your peasants, now—that’s another thing; but you civilized people, you ought to know us better than that. We took Vienna, Berlin, Madrid, Naples, Rome, Warsaw, all the world’s capitals... We are feared, but we are loved. We are nice to know. And then Napoleon...” he began, but Pierre interrupted him.

“Napoleon,” Pierre repeated, and his face suddenly became sad and embarrassed, “is Napoleon...?”

“Napoleon? He is generous, mercy, justice, order, and genius—that’s what Napoleon is! It is I who tell you so... I assure you I was Napoleon’s enemy eight years ago. My father was an emigrant count... But that man has vanquished me. He has taken hold of me. I could not resist the sight of the grandeur and glory with which he has covered France. When I understood what Napoleon wanted—when I saw that he was preparing a bed of laurels for us, you know, I said to myself: ‘That is a monarch,’ and I devoted myself to him! So there! Oh yes, *my dear*, he is the greatest man of the ages past or future.”

“Is Napoleon in Moscow?” Pierre stammered with a guilty look.

Captain Ramballe looked at his guilty face and smiled.

“No, Napoleon will make his entry tomorrow,” he replied and continued his talk.

Their conversation was interrupted by the cries of several voices at the gate and by the orderly, who came to say that some Württemberg hussars had come and wanted to put up their horses in the yard where the captain’s horses were. This difficulty had arisen chiefly because the hussars did not understand what was said to them in French.

Captain Ramballe had their senior sergeant called in, and in a stern voice asked him to what regiment he belonged, who was his commanding officer, and by what right he allowed himself to claim quarters that were already occupied. The German who knew little French, answered the two first questions by giving the names of his regiment and of his commanding officer, but in reply to the third question which he did not understand said, introducing broken French into his own German, that he was the quartermaster of the regiment and his commander had ordered him to occupy all the houses one after another. Pierre, who knew German, translated what the German said to the French officer and gave his reply to the Württemberg hussar in German. When the German had understood what was said to him, he submitted and took his men elsewhere. Captain Ramballe went out into the porch and gave some orders in a loud voice.

When Captain Ramballe returned to the room Pierre was sitting in the same place as before, with his head in his hands. Pierre’s face expressed suffering. He really was suffering at that moment. When Captain Ramballe went out and was left alone, suddenly he came to himself and realized the position he was in. It was not that Moscow had been taken or that the happy conquerors were masters in it and were patronizing him. Painful as that was, it was not that which tormented Pierre at the moment. He was tormented by the consciousness of his own weakness. The few glasses of

wine he had drunk and the conversation with this good-natured Captain Ramballe had destroyed the mood of concentrated gloom in which he had spent the last few days and which was essential for the execution of his design. The pistol, dagger, and peasant coat were ready. Napoleon was to enter the town the next day. Pierre still considered that it would be a useful and worthy action to slay the evildoer, but now Pierre felt that he would not do it. He did not know why, but he felt a foreboding that he would not carry out his intention. Pierre struggled against the confession of his weakness but dimly felt that he could not overcome it and that his former gloomy frame of mind, concerning vengeance, killing, and self-sacrifice, had been dispersed like dust by contact with the first man he met.

Captain Ramballe returned to the room, limping slightly and whistling a tune.

Captain Ramballe's chatter which had previously amused Pierre now repelled him. The tune he was whistling, his gait, and the gesture with which he twirled his mustache, all now seemed offensive. "I will go away immediately. I won't say another word to him," thought Pierre. He thought this but still sat in the same place. A strange feeling of weakness tied him to the spot; Pierre wished to get up and go away, but could not do so.

Captain Ramballe, on the other hand, seemed very cheerful. He paced up and down the room twice. His eyes shone and his mustache twitched as if he were smiling to himself at some amusing thought.

"The colonel of those Württembergers is delightful," Captain Ramballe suddenly said. "He's a German, but a nice fellow all the same... But he's a German." He sat down facing Pierre. "By the way, you know German, then?"

Pierre looked at Captain Ramballe in silence.

"What is the German for 'shelter'?"

"Shelter?" Pierre repeated. "The German for shelter is *Unterkunft*."

"How do you say it?" Captain Ramballe asked quickly and doubtfully.

“*Unterkunft*,” Pierre repeated.

“*Onterkoff*,” said Captain Ramballe and looked at Pierre for some seconds with laughing eyes. “These Germans are first-rate fools, don’t you think so, Pierre?” he concluded.

“Well, let’s have another bottle of this Moscow Bordeaux, shall we? My orderly will warm us up another little bottle. Another bottle!” Captain Ramballe called out gaily.

The orderly brought candles and a bottle of wine. The French officer looked at Pierre by the candlelight and was evidently struck by the troubled expression on his companion’s face. Captain Ramballe, with genuine distress and sympathy on his face, went up to Pierre and bent over him.

“There now, we’re sad,” said Captain Ramballe, touching Pierre’s hand. “Have I upset you? No, really, have you anything against me?” he asked Pierre. “Perhaps it’s the state of affairs?”

Pierre did not answer but looked cordially into Captain Ramballe’s eyes whose expression of sympathy was pleasing to him.

“Honestly, without speaking of what I owe you, I feel friendship for you. Can I do anything for you? Dispose of me. It is for life and death. I say it with my hand on my heart!” said Captain Ramballe, striking his chest.

“Thank you,” said Pierre.

Captain Ramballe gazed intently at him as he had done when he learned that “shelter” was *Unterkunft* in German, and his face suddenly brightened.

“Well, in that case, I drink to our friendship!” Captain Ramballe cried gaily, filling two glasses with wine.

Pierre took one of the glasses and emptied it. Captain Ramballe emptied his too, again pressed Pierre’s hand, and leaned his elbows on the table in a pensive attitude.

“Yes, my dear friend,” Captain Ramballe began, “such is fortune’s caprice. Who would have said that I should be a soldier and a captain of dragoons in the service of Napoleon, as we used to call him? Yet here I am

in Moscow with him. I must tell you, *my dear*,” he continued in the sad and measured tones of a man who intends to tell a long story, “that our name is one of the most ancient in France.”

And with a Frenchman’s easy and naive frankness Captain Ramballe told Pierre the story of his ancestors, his childhood, youth, and manhood, and all about his relations and his financial and family affairs, “*my poor mother*” playing of course an important part in the story.

“But all that is only life’s setting, the real thing is love—love! Am I not right, Pierre?” said Captain Ramballe, growing animated. “Another glass?”

Pierre again emptied his glass and poured himself out a third.

“Oh, women, women!” and Captain Ramballe, looking with glistening eyes at Pierre, began talking of love and of his love affairs.

There were very many of these, as one could easily believe, looking at Captain Ramballe’s handsome, self-satisfied face, and noting the eager enthusiasm with which he spoke of women. Though all of Captain Ramballe’s love stories had the sensual character which Frenchmen regard as the special charm and poetry of love, he told his story with such sincere conviction that he alone had experienced and known all the charm of love and he described women so alluringly that Pierre listened to him with curiosity.

It was plain that the *love* which the Frenchman was so fond of was not that low and simple kind that Pierre had once felt for Helene, nor was it the romantic love stimulated by himself that Pierre experienced for Natasha. (Captain Ramballe despised both these kinds of love equally: the one he considered the “love of clodhoppers” and the other the “love of simpletons.”) *Love* which the Frenchman worshiped consisted principally in the unnaturalness of his relation to the woman and in a combination of incongruities giving the chief charm to the feeling.

Thus Captain Ramballe touchingly recounted the story of his love for a fascinating marquise of thirty-five and at the same time for a charming,

innocent child of seventeen, daughter of the bewitching marquise. The conflict of magnanimity between the mother and the daughter, ending in the mother's sacrificing herself and offering her daughter in marriage to her lover, even now agitated the captain, though it was the memory of a distant past. Then Captain Ramballe recounted an episode in which the husband played the part of the lover, and he—the lover—assumed the role of the husband, as well as several droll incidents from his recollections of Germany, where “shelter” is called *Unterkunft* and where the husbands eat sauerkraut and the young girls are “too blonde.”

Finally, the latest episode in Poland still fresh in Captain Ramballe's memory, and which he narrated with rapid gestures and glowing face, was of how he had saved the life of a Pole (the saving of life continually occurred in the captain's stories) and the Pole had entrusted to him his enchanting wife (*Parisian at heart*) while himself entering the French service. Captain Ramballe was happy, the enchanting Polish lady wished to elope with him, but, prompted by magnanimity, the captain restored the wife to the husband, saying as he did so: “I have saved your life, and I save your honor!” Having repeated these words Captain Ramballe wiped his eyes and gave himself a shake as if driving away the weakness which assailed him at this touching recollection.

Listening to Captain Ramballe's tales, Pierre—as often happens late in the evening and under the influence of wine—followed all that was told him, understood it all, and at the same time followed a train of personal memories which, he knew not why, suddenly arose in his mind. While listening to these love stories his own love for Natasha unexpectedly rose to his mind and going over the pictures of that love in his imagination he mentally compared them with Captain Ramballe's tales. Listening to the story of the struggle between love and duty, Pierre saw before his eyes every minutest detail of his last meeting with the object of his love at the Súkharev water tower. At the time of that meeting it had not produced an

effect upon him—he had not even once recalled it. But now it seemed to him that that meeting had had in it something very important and poetic.

“Pierre darling, come here! We have recognized you,” Pierre now seemed to hear the words Natasha had uttered and to see before him her eyes, her smile, her traveling hood, and a stray lock of her hair... and there seemed to him something pathetic and touching in all this.

Having finished his tale about the enchanting Polish lady, Captain Ramballe asked Pierre if he had ever experienced a similar impulse to sacrifice himself for love and a feeling of envy of the legitimate husband.

Challenged by this question Pierre raised his head and felt a need to express the thoughts that filled his mind. Pierre began to explain that he understood the love for a woman somewhat differently. He said that in all his life he had loved and still loved only one woman and that she could never be his.

“Hello!” said Captain Ramballe.

Pierre then explained that he had loved Natasha from his earliest years, but that he had not dared to think of her because she was too young and because he had been an illegitimate son without a name. Afterward, when Pierre had received a name and wealth he dared not think of her because he loved her too well, placing her far above everything in the world, and especially therefore above himself.

When Pierre had reached this point, he asked Captain Ramballe whether he understood that.

Captain Ramballe made a gesture signifying that even if he did not understand it he begged Pierre to continue.

“Platonic love, clouds...” he muttered.

Whether it was the wine he had drunk, or an impulse of frankness, or the thought that this man did not, and never would, know any of those who played a part in his story, or whether it was all these things together, something loosened Pierre’s tongue. Speaking thickly and with a faraway

look in his shining eyes, he told the whole story of his life: his marriage, Natasha's love for his best friend, her betrayal of him, and all his own simple relations with her. Urged on by Captain Ramballe's questions Pierre also told what he had at first concealed—his own position and even his name.

More than anything else in Pierre's story, Captain Ramballe was impressed by the fact that Pierre was very rich, had two mansions in Moscow, and had abandoned everything and not left the city, but remained there concealing his name and station.

When it was late at night Pierre and Captain Ramballe went out together into the street. The night was warm and light. To the left of the house on the Pokróvka, a fire glowed—the first of those that were beginning in Moscow. To the right and high up in the sky was the sickle of the waning moon and opposite to it hung that bright comet which was connected in Pierre's heart with his love. At the gate stood Gerásim, the cook, and two Frenchmen. Their laughter and their mutually incomprehensible remarks in two languages could be heard. They were looking at the glow seen in the town.

There was nothing terrible in the one small, distant fire in the immense city.

Gazing at the high starry sky, at the moon, at the comet, and at the glow from the fire, Pierre experienced a joyful emotion. "There now, how good it is, what more does one need?" thought he. And suddenly remembering his intention he grew dizzy and felt so faint that he leaned against the fence to save himself from falling.

Without taking leave of his new friend, Captain Ramballe, Pierre left the gate with unsteady steps and returning to his room lay down on the sofa and immediately fell asleep.

The glow of the first fire that began on the second of September was watched from the various roads by the fugitive Muscovites and by the retreating troops, with many different feelings.

The Rostov party spent the night at the town of Mytishchi, fourteen miles from Moscow. They had started so late on the first of September, the road had been so blocked by vehicles and troops, so many things had been forgotten for which servants were sent back, that they had decided to spend that night at a place three miles out of Moscow. The next morning they woke late and were again delayed so often that they only got as far as the town of Great Mytishchi. At ten o'clock that evening the Rostov family and the wounded traveling with them were all distributed in the yards and huts of that large village. The Rostovs' servants and coachmen and the orderlies of the wounded officers, after attending to their masters, had supper, fed the horses, and came out into the porches.

In a neighboring hut lay a soldier with a fractured wrist. The awful pain he suffered made him moan incessantly and piteously, and his moaning sounded terrible in the darkness of the autumn night. He had spent the first night in the same yard as the Rostovs. Countess Rostov said she had been unable to close her eyes on account of his moaning, and at Mytishchi she moved into a worse hut simply to be farther away from the wounded man.

In the darkness of the night, one of the servants noticed, above the high body of a coach standing before the porch, the small glow of another fire. One glow had long been visible and everybody knew that the town of Little Mytishchi was burning—set on fire by Mamónov's Cossacks.

"But look here, brothers, there's another fire!" remarked an orderly.

All turned their attention to the glow.

"But they told us the town of Little Mytishchi had been set on fire by Mamónov's Cossacks."

"But that's not the town of Mytishchi, it's farther away."

"Look, it must be in Moscow!"

Two of the gazers went round to the other side of the coach and sat down on its steps.

“It’s more to the left, why, the town of Little Mytishchi is over there, and this is right on the other side.”

Several men joined the first two.

“See how it’s flaring,” said one. “That’s a fire in Moscow: either in the Sushchévski or the Rogózhski quarter.”

No one replied to this remark and for some time they all gazed silently at the spreading flames of the second fire in the distance.

Count Rostov’s valet came up to the group and shouted at them.

“What are you staring at, you good-for-nothing?... Count Rostov will be calling and there’s nobody there; go and gather the clothes together.”

“I only ran out to get some water,” said another valet.

“But what do you think? Doesn’t it look as if that glow were in Moscow?” remarked one of the footmen.

The valet made no reply, and again for a long time they were all silent. The glow spread, rising and falling, farther and farther still.

“God have mercy... It’s windy and dry...” said another voice.

“Just look! See what it’s doing now. Oh, Lord! You can even see the crows flying. Lord have mercy on us sinners!”

“They’ll put it out, no fear!”

“Who’s to put it out?” the valet, who had hitherto been silent, was heard to say. His voice was calm and deliberate. “Moscow it is, brothers,” said he. “Mother Moscow, the white...” the valet’s voice faltered, and he gave way to an old man’s sob.

And it was as if they had all only waited for this to realize the significance for them of the glow they were watching. Sighs were heard, words of prayer, and the sobbing of Count Rostov’s old valet.

The valet, returning to the cottage, informed Count Rostov that Moscow was burning. Count Rostov donned his dressing gown and went out to look. Sonya and Madame Schoss, who had not yet undressed, went out with him. Only Natasha and Countess Rostov remained in the room. Petya was no

longer with the family, he had gone on with his regiment which was making for Tróitsa.

Countess Rostov, on hearing that Moscow was on fire, began to cry. Natasha, pale, with a fixed look, was sitting on the bench under the icons just where she had sat down on arriving and paid no attention to her father's words. She was listening to the ceaseless moaning of the adjutant, three houses off.

"Oh, how terrible," said Sonya returning from the yard chilled and frightened. "I believe the whole of Moscow will burn, there's an awful glow! Natasha, do look! You can see it from the window," Sonya said to her cousin, evidently wishing to distract her mind.

But Natasha looked at Sonya as if not understanding what was said to her and again fixed her eyes on the corner of the stove. Natasha had been in this condition of stupor since the morning, when Sonya, to the surprise and annoyance of Countess Rostov, had for some unaccountable reason found it necessary to tell Natasha of Andrei's wound and of his being with their party. Countess Rostov had seldom been so angry with anyone as she was with Sonya. Sonya had cried and begged to be forgiven and now, as if trying to atone for her fault, paid unceasing attention to Natasha.

"Look, Natasha, how dreadfully it is burning!" said Sonya.

"What's burning?" asked Natasha. "Oh, yes, Moscow."

And as if in order not to offend Sonya and to get rid of her, Natasha turned her face to the window, looked out in such a way that it was evident that she could not see anything, and again settled down in her former attitude.

"But you didn't see it!"

"Yes, really I did," Natasha replied in a voice that pleaded to be left in peace.

Both Countess Rostov and Sonya understood that, naturally, neither Moscow nor the burning of Moscow nor anything else could seem of

importance to Natasha.

Count Rostov returned and lay down behind the partition. Countess Rostov went up to Natasha and touched her head with the back of her hand as she was wont to do when Natasha was ill, then touched her forehead with her lips as if to feel whether she was feverish, and finally kissed her.

“You are cold. You are trembling all over. You’d better lie down,” said Countess Rostov.

“Lie down? All right, I will. I’ll lie down at once,” said Natasha.

When Natasha had been told that morning that Andrei was seriously wounded and was traveling with their party, she had at first asked many questions: Where was he going? How was he wounded? Was it serious? And could she see him? But after she had been told that she could not see Andrei, that he was seriously wounded but that his life was not in danger, she ceased to ask questions or to speak at all, evidently disbelieving what they told her, and convinced that say what she might she would still be told the same. All the way Natasha had sat motionless in a corner of the coach with wide-open eyes, and the expression in them that Countess Rostov knew so well and feared so much, and now she sat in the same way on the bench where she had seated herself on arriving. She was planning something and either deciding or had already decided something in her mind. Countess Rostov knew this, but what it might be she did not know, and this alarmed and tormented her.

“Natasha, undress, darling; lie down on my bed.”

A bed had been made on a bedstead for Countess Rostov only. Madame Schoss, Natasha, and Sonya were to sleep on some hay on the floor.

“No, Mamma, I will lie down here on the floor,” Natasha replied irritably and she went to the window and opened it. Through the open window, the moans of the adjutant could be heard more distinctly. Natasha put her head out into the damp night air, and Countess Rostov saw her slim neck shaking with sobs and throbbing against the window frame. Natasha

knew it was not Andrei who was moaning. She knew Andrei was in the same yard as themselves and in a part of the hut across the passage, but this dreadful incessant moaning made her sob. Countess Rostov exchanged a look with Sonya.

“Lie down, darling Natasha; lie down, my pet,” said Countess Rostov, softly touching Natasha’s shoulders. “Come, lie down.”

“Oh, yes... I’ll lie down at once,” said Natasha, and began hurriedly undressing, tugging at the tapes of her petticoat.

When Natasha had thrown off her dress and put on a dressing jacket, she sat down with her foot under her on the bed that had been made up on the floor, jerked her thin and short plait of hair to the front, and began replaiting it. Natasha’s long, thin, practiced fingers rapidly unplaited, replaited, and tied up her plait. Her head moved from side to side from habit, but her eyes, feverishly wide, looked fixedly before her. When her toilet for the night was finished, Natasha sank gently onto the sheet spread over the hay on the side nearest the door.

“Natasha, you’d better lie in the middle,” said Sonya.

“I’ll stay here,” muttered Natasha. “Do lie down,” she added crossly and buried her face in the pillow.

Countess Rostov, Madame Schoss, and Sonya undressed hastily and lay down. The small lamp in front of the icons was the only light left in the room. But in the yard, there was a light from the fire at the town of Little Mytishchi a mile and a half away, and through the night came the noise of people shouting at a tavern that Mamónov’s Cossacks had set up across the street, and the adjutant’s unceasing moans could still be heard.

For a long time, Natasha listened attentively to the sounds that reached her from inside and outside the room and did not move. First, she heard Countess Rostov praying and sighing and the creaking of her bed under her, then Madame Schoss’s familiar whistling snore and Sonya’s gentle breathing. Then Countess Rostov called to Natasha. Natasha did not answer.

“I think Natasha’s asleep, Mamma,” said Sonya softly.

After a short silence Countess Rostov spoke again but this time no one replied.

Soon after that, Natasha heard her mother’s even breathing. Natasha did not move, though her little bare foot, thrust out from under the quilt, was growing cold on the bare floor.

As if to celebrate a victory over everybody, a cricket chirped in a crack in the wall. A cock crowed far off and another replied nearby. The shouting in the tavern had died down; only the moaning of the adjutant was heard. Natasha sat up.

“Sonya, are you asleep? Mamma?” Natasha whispered.

No one replied. Natasha rose slowly and carefully, crossed herself, and stepped cautiously on the cold and dirty floor with her slim, supple, bare feet. The boards of the floor creaked. Stepping cautiously from one foot to the other she ran like a kitten the few steps to the door and grasped the cold door handle.

It seemed to Natasha that something heavy was beating rhythmically against all the walls of the room: it was her own heart, sinking with alarm and terror and overflowing with love.

Natasha opened the door and stepped across the threshold and onto the cold, damp earthen floor of the passage. The cold she felt refreshed her. With her bare feet, she touched a sleeping man, stepped over him, and opened the door into the part of the hut where Andrei lay. It was dark in there. In the farthest corner, on a bench beside a bed on which something was lying, stood a tallow candle with a long, thick, and smoldering wick.

From the moment Natasha had been told that morning of Andrei’s wound and his presence there, she had resolved to see him. She did not know why she had to, she knew the meeting would be painful, but felt more convinced that it was necessary.

All day Natasha had lived only in hope of seeing him that night. But now that the moment had come she was filled with dread of what she might see. How was Andrei maimed? What was left of him? Was he like that incessant moaning of the adjutant's? Yes, he was altogether like that. In her imagination, he was that terrible moaning personified. When she saw an indistinct shape in the corner and mistook his knees raised under the quilt for his shoulders, she imagined a horrible body there and stood still in terror. But an irresistible impulse drew her forward. Natasha cautiously took one step and then another, and found herself in the middle of a small room containing baggage. Another man—Captain Timokhin—was lying in a corner on the benches beneath the icons, and two others—the doctor and a valet—lay on the floor.

The valet sat up and whispered something. Captain Timokhin, kept awake by the pain in his wounded leg, gazed with wide-open eyes at this strange apparition of a girl in a white chemise, dressing jacket, and nightcap. The valet's sleepy, frightened exclamation, "What do you want? What's the matter?" made Natasha approach more swiftly to what was lying in the corner. Horribly unlike a man as that body looked, she must see Andrei. She passed the valet, the snuff fell from the candle wick, and she saw Andrei clearly with his arms outside the quilt, and such as she had always seen him.

Andrei was the same as ever, but the feverish color of his face, his glittering eyes rapturously turned toward her, and especially his neck, delicate as a child's, revealed by the turn-down collar of his shirt, gave him a peculiarly innocent, childlike look, such as she had never seen on him before. Natasha went up to him and with a swift, flexible, youthful movement dropped to her knees.

Andrei smiled and held out his hand to her.

Seven days had passed since Andrei found himself in the ambulance station on the field of Borodinó. His feverish state and the inflammation of

his bowels, which were injured, were in the doctor's opinion sure to carry him off. But on the seventh day, Andrei ate with pleasure a piece of bread with some tea, and the doctor noticed that his temperature was lower. He had regained consciousness that morning. The first night after they left Moscow had been fairly warm and he had remained in the *carriage*, but at the town of Mytishchi, the wounded man himself asked to be taken out and given some tea. The pain caused by Andrei's removal into the hut had made him groan aloud and again lose consciousness. When he had been placed on his camp bed he lay for a long time motionless with closed eyes. Then he opened them and whispered softly: "And the tea?" Andrei's remembering such a small detail of everyday life astonished the doctor. The doctor felt Andrei's pulse, and to his surprise and dissatisfaction found it had improved. The doctor was dissatisfied because he knew by experience that if his patient did not die now, he would do so a little later with greater suffering. Captain Timokhin, the red-nosed major of Andrei's regiment, had joined him in Moscow and was being taken along with him, having been wounded in the leg at the battle of Borodinó. They were accompanied by a doctor, Andrei's valet, his coachman, and two orderlies.

They gave Andrei some tea. He drank it eagerly, looking with feverish eyes at the door in front of him as if trying to understand and remember something.

"I don't want any more. Is Captain Timokhin here?" Andrei asked.

Captain Timokhin crept along the bench to him.

"I am here, your excellency."

"How's your wound?"

"Mine, sir? All right. But how about you?"

Andrei again pondered as if trying to remember something.

"Couldn't one get a book?" Andrei asked.

"What book?"

"The Gospels. I haven't one."

The doctor promised to procure it for him and began to ask how he was feeling. Andrei answered all his questions reluctantly but reasonably, and then said he wanted a bolster placed under him as he was uncomfortable and in great pain. The doctor and valet lifted the cloak with which he was covered and, making wry faces at the noisome smell of mortifying flesh that came from the wound, began examining that dreadful place. The doctor was very much displeased about something and made a change in the dressings, turning the wounded man over so that he groaned again and grew unconscious and delirious from the agony. Andrei kept asking them to get him the book and put it under him.

“What trouble would it be to you?” Andrei said. “I have not got one. Please get it for me and put it under for a moment,” he pleaded in a piteous voice.

The doctor went into the passage to wash his hands.

“You fellows have no conscience,” said Andrei to the valet who was pouring water over his hands. “For just one moment I didn’t look after you... It’s such pain, you know, that I wonder how he can bear it.”

“By the Lord Jesus Christ, I thought we had put something under him!” said the valet.

The first time Andrei understood where he was and what was the matter with him and remembered being wounded and how was when he asked to be carried into the hut after his *carriage* had stopped at the town of Mytishchi. After growing confused from pain while being carried into the hut, Andrei again regained consciousness, and while drinking tea once more recalled all that had happened to him, and above all vividly remembered the moment at the ambulance station when, at the sight of the sufferings of a man he disliked, those new thoughts had come to him which promised him happiness. And those thoughts, though now vague and indefinite, again possessed his soul. Andrei remembered that he had now a new source of happiness and that this happiness had something to do with the Gospels.

That was why he asked for a copy of them. The uncomfortable position in which they had put him and turned him over again confused his thoughts, and when he came to himself a third time it was in the complete stillness of the night. Everybody near him was sleeping. A cricket chirped from across the passage; someone was shouting and singing in the street; cockroaches rustled on the table, on the icons, and on the walls, and a big fly flopped at the head of the bed and around the candle beside him, the wick of which was charred and had shaped itself like a mushroom.

Andrei's mind was not in a normal state. A healthy man usually thinks of, feels, and remembers innumerable things simultaneously, but has the power and will to select one sequence of thoughts or events on which to fix his whole attention. A healthy man can tear himself away from the deepest reflections to say a civil word to someone who comes in and can then return again to his own thoughts. But Andrei's mind was not in a normal state in that respect. All the powers of his mind were more active and clearer than ever, but they acted apart from his will. Most diverse thoughts and images occupied him simultaneously. At times his brain suddenly began to work with a vigor, clearness, and depth it had never reached when he was in health, but suddenly in the midst of its work it would turn to some unexpected idea and he had not the strength to turn it back again.

"Yes, a new happiness was revealed to me of which man cannot be deprived," Andrei thought as he lay in the semidarkness of the quiet hut, gazing fixedly before him with feverish wide open eyes. "A happiness lying beyond material forces, outside the material influences that act on man—a happiness of the soul alone, the happiness of loving. Every man can understand it, but to conceive it and enjoin it was possible only for God. But how did God enjoin that law? And why was the Son...?"

And suddenly the sequence of these thoughts broke off, and Andrei heard (without knowing whether it was a delusion or reality) a soft whispering voice incessantly and rhythmically repeating "piti-piti-piti," and

then “titi,” and then again “piti-piti-piti,” and “ti-ti” once more. At the same time, Andrei felt that above his face, above the very middle of it, some strange airy structure was being erected out of slender needles or splinters, to the sound of this whispered music. Andrei felt that he had to balance carefully (though it was difficult) so that this airy structure should not collapse; but nevertheless, it kept collapsing and again slowly rising to the sound of whispered rhythmic music—“it stretches, stretches, spreading out and stretching,” said Andrei to himself. While listening to this whispering and feeling the sensation of this drawing out and the construction of this edifice of needles, he also saw by glimpses a red halo around the candle and heard the rustle of the cockroaches and the buzzing of the fly that flopped against his pillow and his face. Each time the fly touched his face it gave him a burning sensation and yet to his surprise it did not destroy the structure, though it knocked against the very region of his face where it was rising. But besides this, there was something else of importance. It was something white by the door—the statue of a sphinx, which also oppressed him.

“But perhaps that’s my shirt on the table,” Andrei thought, “and that’s my legs, and that is the door, but why is it always stretching and drawing itself out, and ‘piti-piti-piti’ and ‘ti-ti’ and ‘piti-piti-piti’...? That’s enough, please leave off!” Andrei painfully entreated someone. And suddenly thoughts and feelings again swam to the surface of his mind with peculiar clearness and force.

“Yes—love,” Andrei thought again quite clearly. “But not love which loves for something, for some quality, for some purpose, or for some reason, but the love which I—while dying—first experienced when I saw my enemy and yet loved him. I experienced that feeling of love which is the very essence of the soul and does not require an object. Now again I feel that bliss. To love one’s neighbors, to love one’s enemies, to love everything, to love God in all His manifestations. It is possible to love

someone dear to you with human love, but an enemy can only be loved by divine love. That is why I experienced such joy when I felt that I loved that man. What has become of him? Is he alive?...

“When loving with human love one may pass from love to hatred, but divine love cannot change. No, neither death nor anything else can destroy it. It is the very essence of the soul. Yet how many people have I hated in my life? And of them all, I loved and hated none as I did her.” And Andrei vividly pictured to himself Natasha, not as he had done in the past with nothing but her charms which gave him delight, but for the first time picturing to himself her soul. And Andrei understood Natasha’s feelings, her sufferings, shame, and remorse. He now understood for the first time all the cruelty of his rejection of her, the cruelty of his rupture with her. “If only it were possible for me to see her once more! Just once, looking into those eyes to say...”

“Piti-piti-piti and ti-ti and piti-piti-piti boom!” flopped the fly... And Andrei’s attention was suddenly carried into another world, a world of reality and delirium in which something particular was happening. In that world some structure was still being erected and did not fall, something was still stretching out, and the candle with its red halo was still burning, and the same shirt-like sphinx lay near the door; but besides all this something creaked, there was a whiff of fresh air, and a new white sphinx appeared, standing at the door. And that sphinx had the pale face and shining eyes of the very Natasha of whom he had just been thinking.

“Oh, how oppressive this continual delirium is,” thought Andrei, trying to drive that face from his imagination. But the face remained before him with the force of reality and drew nearer. Andrei wished to return to that former world of pure thought, but he could not, and delirium drew him back into its domain. The soft whispering voice continued its rhythmic murmur, something oppressed him and stretched out, and the strange face was before him. Andrei collected all his strength in an effort to recover his senses, he

moved a little, and suddenly there was a ringing in his ears, a dimness in his eyes, and like a man plunged into water he lost consciousness. When he came to himself, Natasha, that same living Natasha whom of all people he most longed to love with this new pure divine love that had been revealed to him, was kneeling before him. Andrei realized that it was the real living Natasha, and he was not surprised but quietly happy. Natasha, motionless on her knees (she was unable to stir), with frightened eyes riveted on him, was restraining her sobs. Her face was pale and rigid. Only in the lower part of it, something quivered.

Andrei sighed with relief, smiled, and held out his hand.

“You?” Andrei said. “How fortunate!”

With a rapid but careful movement, Natasha drew nearer to him on her knees and, taking his hand carefully, bent her face over it and began kissing it, just touching it lightly with her lips.

“Forgive me!” Natasha whispered, raising her head and glancing at him. “Forgive me!”

“I love you,” said Andrei.

“Forgive...!”

“Forgive what?” he asked.

“Forgive me for what I ha-ve do-ne!” faltered Natasha in a scarcely audible, broken whisper, and began kissing his hand more rapidly, just touching it with her lips.

“I love you more, better than before,” said Andrei, lifting her face with his hand so as to look into her eyes.

Those eyes, filled with happy tears, gazed at him timidly, compassionately, and with joyous love. Natasha’s thin pale face, with its swollen lips, was more than plain—it was dreadful. But Andrei did not see that, he saw her shining eyes which were beautiful. They heard the sound of voices behind them.

The valet, who was now wide awake, had roused the doctor. Captain Timokhin, who had not slept at all because of the pain in his leg, had long been watching all that was going on, carefully covering his bare body with the sheet as he huddled up on his bench.

“What’s this?” said the doctor, rising from his bed. “Please go away, madam!”

At that moment a maid sent by Countess Rostov, who had noticed Natasha’s absence, knocked at the door.

Like a somnambulist aroused from her sleep, Natasha went out of the room and, returning to her hut, fell sobbing on her bed.

From that time, during all the rest of the Rostovs’ journey, at every halting place and wherever they spent a night, Natasha never left the wounded Andrei, and the doctor had to admit that he had not expected from a young girl either such firmness or such skill in nursing a wounded man.

Dreadful as Countess Rostov imagined it would be should Andrei die in Natasha’s arms during the journey—as, judging by what the doctor said, it seemed might easily happen—she could not oppose Natasha. Though with the intimacy now established between the wounded Andrei and Natasha the thought occurred that should he recover their former engagement would be renewed, no one—least of all Natasha and Andrei—spoke of this: the unsettled question of life and death, which hung not only over Andrei but over all of Russia, shut out all other considerations.

On the third of September, Pierre awoke late. His head was aching, the clothes in which he had slept without undressing felt uncomfortable on his body, and his mind had a dim consciousness of something shameful he had done the day before. That something shameful was his yesterday’s conversation with Captain Ramballe.

It was eleven by the clock, but it seemed peculiarly dark out of doors. Pierre rose, rubbed his eyes, and seeing the pistol with an engraved stock

which Gerásim had replaced on the writing table, Pierre remembered where he was and what lay before him that very day.

“Am I not too late?” Pierre thought. “No, probably *he* won’t make his entry into Moscow before noon.”

Pierre did not allow himself to reflect on what lay before him but hastened to act.

After arranging his clothes, Pierre took the pistol and was about to go out. But it then occurred to him for the first time that he certainly could not carry the weapon in his hand through the streets. It was difficult to hide such a big pistol even under his wide coat. Pierre could not carry it unnoticed in his belt or under his arm. Besides, it had been discharged, and he had not had time to reload it. “No matter, the dagger will do,” he said to himself, though when planning his design he had more than once come to the conclusion that the chief mistake made by the student in 1809 had been to try to kill Napoleon with a dagger. But as Pierre’s chief aim consisted not in carrying out his design, but in proving to himself that he would not abandon his intention and was doing all he could to achieve it, Pierre hastily took the blunt jagged dagger in a green sheath which he had bought at the Súkharev market with the pistol and hid it under his waistcoat.

Having tied a girdle over his coat and pulled his cap low on his head, Pierre went down the corridor, trying to avoid making a noise or meeting the captain, and passed out into the street.

The conflagration, at which Pierre had looked with so much indifference the evening before, had greatly increased during the night. Moscow was on fire in several places. The buildings in Carriage Row, across the river, in the Bazaar and the Povarskóy, as well as the barges on the Moskvá River and the timber yards by the Dorogomílov Bridge, were all ablaze.

Pierre’s way led through side streets to the Povarskóy and from there to the church of St. Nicholas on the Arbát, where he had long before decided

that the deed should be done. The gates of most of the houses were locked and the shutters were up. The streets and lanes were deserted. The air was full of smoke and the smell of burning. Now and then Pierre met Russians with anxious and timid faces, and French soldiers with an air not of the city but of the camp, walking in the middle of the streets. Both the Russians and the French looked at Pierre with surprise. Besides his height and stoutness, and the strange morose look of suffering on his face and whole figure, the Russians stared at Pierre because they could not make out to what class he could belong. The French followed him with astonishment in their eyes chiefly because Pierre, unlike all the other Russians who gazed at the French with fear and curiosity, paid no attention to them. At the gate of one house three Frenchmen, who were explaining something to some Russians who did not understand them, stopped Pierre asking if he knew French.

Pierre shook his head and went on. In another side street, a sentinel standing beside a green caisson shouted at him, but only when the shout was threateningly repeated and he heard the click of the man's musket as he raised it did Pierre understand that he had to pass on the other side of the street. He heard nothing and saw nothing of what went on around him. Pierre carried his resolution within himself in terror and haste, like something dreadful and alien to him, for, after the previous night's experience, he was afraid of losing it. But he was not destined to bring his mood safely to his destination. And even had he not been hindered by anything on the way, his intention could not now have been carried out, for Napoleon had passed the Arbát River more than four hours previously on his way from the Dorogomílov suburb to the Krémelin, and was now sitting in a very gloomy frame of mind in a royal study in the Krémelin, giving detailed and exact orders as to measures to be taken immediately to extinguish the fire, to prevent looting, and to reassure the inhabitants. But Pierre did not know this; he was entirely absorbed in what lay before him and was tortured—as those are who obstinately undertake a task that is

impossible for them not because of its difficulty but because of its incompatibility with their natures—by the fear of weakening at the decisive moment and so losing his self-esteem.

Though Pierre heard and saw nothing around him he found his way by instinct and did not go wrong in the side streets that led to the Povarskóy.

As Pierre approached that street the smoke became denser and denser—he even felt the heat of the fire. Occasionally curly tongues of flame rose from under the roofs of the houses. He met more people in the streets and they were more excited. But Pierre, though he felt that something unusual was happening around him, did not realize that he was approaching the fire. As he was going along a footpath across a wide-open space adjoining the Povarskóy on one side and the gardens of Baron Gruzínski's house on the other, Pierre suddenly heard the desperate weeping of a woman close to him. He stopped as if awakening from a dream and lifted his head.

By the side of the path, on the dusty dry grass, all sorts of household goods lay in a heap: featherbeds, a samovar, icons, and trunks. On the ground, beside the trunks, sat a thin woman no longer young, with long, prominent upper teeth, and wearing a black cloak and cap. This woman, swaying to and fro and muttering something, was choking with sobs. Two girls of about ten and twelve, dressed in dirty short frocks and cloaks, were staring at their mother with a look of stupefaction on their pale frightened faces. The youngest child, a boy of about seven, who wore an overcoat and an immense cap evidently not his own, was crying in his old nurse's arms. A dirty, barefooted maid was sitting on a trunk, and, having undone her pale-colored plait, was pulling it straight and sniffing at her singed hair. The woman's husband, a short, round-shouldered man in the undress uniform of a civilian official, with sausage-shaped whiskers and showing under his square-set cap the hair smoothly brushed forward over his temples, with an expressionless face was moving the trunks, which were placed one on another, and was dragging some garments from under them.

As soon as she saw Pierre, the woman almost threw herself at his feet.

“Dear people, good Christians, save me, help me, dear friends... help us, somebody,” she muttered between her sobs. “My girl... My daughter! My youngest daughter is left behind. She’s burned! Ooh! Was it for this I nursed you... Ooh!”

“Don’t, my dear!” said her husband to her in a low voice, evidently only to justify himself before the stranger. “Sister must have taken her, or where else can she be?” he added.

“Monster! Villain!” shouted the woman angrily, suddenly ceasing to weep. “You have no heart, you don’t feel for your own child! Another man would have rescued her from the fire. But this is a monster and neither a man nor a father! You, honored sir, are a noble man,” she went on, addressing Pierre rapidly between her sobs. “The fire broke out alongside, and blew our way, the maid called out ‘Fire!’ and we rushed to collect our things. We ran out just as we were... This is what we have brought away... The icons, and my dowry bed, all the rest is lost. We seized the children. But not Katie! Ooh! Oh, Lord!...” And again she began to sob. “My child, my dear one! Burned, burned!”

“But where was she left?” asked Pierre.

From the expression on his animated face, the woman saw that Pierre might help her.

“Oh, dear sir!” the frightened mother cried, seizing him by the legs. “My benefactor, set my heart at ease... Aníska, go, you horrid girl, show him the way!” she cried to the maid, angrily opening her mouth and still further exposing her long teeth.

“Show me the way, show me, I... I’ll do it,” gasped Pierre rapidly.

The dirty maidservant stepped from behind the trunk, put up her plait, sighed, and went on her short, bare feet along the path. Pierre felt as if he had come back to life after a heavy swoon. He held his head higher, his eyes shone with the light of life, and with swift steps, he followed the maid,

overtook her, and came out on the Povarskóy. The whole street was full of clouds of black smoke. Tongues of flame here and there broke through that cloud. A great number of people crowded in front of the conflagration. In the middle of the street stood a French général saying something to those around him. Pierre, accompanied by the maid, was advancing to the spot where the general stood, but the French soldiers stopped him.

“You can’t pass!” cried a voice.

“This way, sir,” cried the maid. “We’ll pass through the side street, by the Nikúlins’ house!”

Pierre turned back, giving a spring now and then to keep up with the maid. She ran across the street, turned down a side street to the left, and, passing three houses, turned into a yard on the right.

“It’s here, close by,” said the maid, and, running across the yard, opened a gate in a wooden fence and, stopping, pointed out to him a small wooden wing of the house, which was burning brightly and fiercely. One of the house sides had fallen in, another was on fire, and bright flames issued from the openings of the windows and from under the roof.

As Pierre passed through the fence gate, he was enveloped by hot air, and involuntarily, he stopped.

“Which is it? Which is your house?” Pierre asked.

“Ooh!” wailed the maid, pointing to the wing of the house. “That’s it, that was our lodging. You’ve burned to death, our treasure, Katie, my precious little missy! Ooh!” lamented the girl, who at the sight of the fire felt that she too must give expression to her feelings.

Pierre rushed to the wing of the house, but the heat was so great that he involuntarily passed around in a curve and came upon a side that was as yet burning only at one end, just below the roof, and around which swarmed a crowd of French soldiers. At first, Pierre did not realize what these men, who were dragging something out, were about; but seeing before him a French soldier hitting a peasant with a blunt saber and trying to take from

him a fox-fur coat, Pierre vaguely understood that looting was going on there, but he had no time to dwell on that idea.

The sounds of crackling and the din of falling walls and ceilings, the whistle and hiss of the flames, the excited shouts of the people, and the sight of the swaying smoke, now gathering into thick black clouds and now soaring up with glittering sparks, with here and there dense sheaves of flame (now red and now like golden fish scales creeping along the walls), and the heat and smoke and rapidity of motion, produced on Pierre the usual animating effects of a conflagration. It had a peculiarly strong effect on him because at the sight of the fire he felt suddenly freed from the ideas that had weighed him down. Pierre felt young, bright, adroit, and resolute. He ran round to the other side of the lodge and was about to dash into that part of it which was still standing when just above his head he heard several voices shouting and then a cracking sound and the ring of something heavy falling close beside him.

Pierre looked up and saw at a window of the large house some French soldiers who had just thrown out the drawer of a chest, filled with metal articles. Other French soldiers standing below went up to the drawer.

“What does this fellow want?” shouted one of them, referring to Pierre.

“There’s a child in that burning house. Haven’t you seen a child?” cried Pierre.

“What’s he talking about? Get along!” said several voices, and one of the French soldiers, evidently afraid that Pierre might want to take from them some of the plate and bronzes that were in the drawer, moved threateningly toward him.

“A child?” shouted a French soldier from above. “I did hear something squealing in the garden. Perhaps it’s his brat that the fellow is looking for. After all, one must be human, you know...”

“Where is it? Where?” said Pierre.

“There! There!” shouted the French soldier at the window, pointing to the garden at the back of the house. “Wait a bit—I’m coming down.”

And a minute or two later the French soldier, a black-eyed fellow with a spot on his cheek, in shirt sleeves, jumped out of a window on the ground floor and clapping Pierre on the shoulder ran with him into the garden.

“Hurry up, you others!” the French soldier called out to his comrades. “It’s getting hot.”

When they reached a gravel path behind the house, the French soldier pulled Pierre by the arm and pointed to a round, graveled space where a three-year-old girl in a pink dress was lying under a seat.

“There is your child! Oh, a girl, so much the better!” said the French soldier. “Good-by, Fatty. We must be human, we are all mortal you know!” and the French soldier with the spot on his cheek ran back to his comrades.

Breathless with joy, Pierre ran to the little girl and was going to take her in his arms. But seeing a stranger, the sickly, scrofulous-looking child, unattractively like her mother, began to yell and run away. Pierre, however, seized her and lifted her in his arms. The little girl screamed desperately and angrily and tried with her little hands to pull Pierre’s hands away and bite them with her slobbering mouth. Pierre was seized by a sense of horror and repulsion such as he had experienced when touching some nasty little animal. But Pierre made an effort not to throw the child down and ran with her to the large house. It was now, however, impossible to get back the way he had come; the maid was no longer there, and Pierre with a feeling of pity and disgust pressed the wet, painfully sobbing child to himself as tenderly as he could and ran with her through the garden seeking another way out.

Having run through different yards and side streets, Pierre got back with his little burden to the Gruzinski garden at the corner of the Povarskóy. Pierre did not at first recognize the place from which he had set out to look for the child, so crowded was it now with people and goods that had been dragged out of the houses. Besides Russian families who had taken refuge

here from the fire with their belongings, there were several French soldiers in a variety of clothing. Pierre took no notice of them. He hurried to find the family of that civil servant in order to restore the daughter to her mother and go to save someone else. Pierre felt that he had still much to do and to do quickly. Glowing with the heat and from running, he felt at that moment more strongly than ever the sense of youth, animation, and determination that had come on him when he ran to save the child. The little girl had now become quiet and, clinging with her little hands to Pierre's coat, sat on his arm gazing about her like some little wild animal. He glanced at her occasionally with a slight smile. He fancied he saw something pathetically innocent in that frightened, sickly little face.

Pierre did not find the civil servant or his wife where he had left them. He walked among the crowd with rapid steps, scanning the various faces he met. Involuntarily he noticed a Georgian or Armenian family consisting of a very handsome old man of Oriental type, wearing a new, cloth-covered, sheepskin coat and new boots, an old woman of similar type, and a young woman. That very young woman seemed to Pierre the perfection of Oriental beauty, with her sharply outlined, arched, black eyebrows and the extraordinarily soft, bright color of her long, beautiful, expressionless face. Amid the scattered property and the crowd in the open space, she, in her rich satin cloak with a bright lilac shawl on her head, suggested a delicate exotic plant thrown out onto the snow. She was sitting on some bundles a little behind the old woman and looked from under her long lashes with motionless, large, almond-shaped eyes at the ground before her. Evidently, she was aware of her beauty and fearful because of it. Her face struck Pierre and, hurrying along by the fence, he turned several times to look at her. When he had reached the fence, still without finding those he sought, he stopped and looked about him.

With the child in his arms, Pierre's figure was now more conspicuous than before, and a group of Russians, both men and women, gathered about

him.

“Have you lost anyone, my dear fellow? You’re of the gentry yourself, aren’t you? Whose child is it?” they asked him.

Pierre replied that the child belonged to a woman in a black coat who had been sitting there with her other children, and he asked whether anyone knew where she had gone.

“Why, that must be the Anférovs,” said an old deacon, addressing a pockmarked peasant woman. “Lord have mercy, Lord have mercy!” the deacon added in his customary bass.

“The Anférovs? No,” said the woman. “They left in the morning. That must be either Marya Nikoláevna’s or the Ivánovs’!”

“He says ‘a woman,’ and Marya Nikoláevna is a lady,” remarked a house serf.

“Do you know her? The woman is thin, with long teeth,” said Pierre.

“That’s Marya Nikoláevna! They went inside the garden when these wolves swooped down,” said the woman, pointing to the French soldiers.

“Oh, Lord, have mercy!” added the deacon.

“Go over that way, they’re there. It’s the girl’s mother! She kept on lamenting and crying,” continued the woman. “It’s she. Here, this way!”

But Pierre was not listening to the woman. He had for some seconds been intently watching what was going on a few steps away. Pierre was looking at the Armenian family and at two French soldiers who had gone up to them. One of the soldiers, a nimble little man, was wearing a blue coat tied around the waist with a rope. He had a nightcap on his head and his feet were bare. The other soldier, whose appearance particularly struck Pierre, was a long, lank, round-shouldered, fair-haired man, slow in his movements, with an idiotic expression of face, wearing blue trousers, large torn Hessian boots, and, oddly, a woman’s frieze gown. The barefoot soldier went up to the Armenians and, saying something, immediately seized the old man by his legs, and the old man at once began pulling off his boots.

The other soldier in the frieze gown stopped in front of the beautiful Armenian girl and with his hands in his pockets stood staring at her, motionless and silent.

“Here, take the child!” said Pierre peremptorily and hurriedly to the woman, handing the little girl to her. “Give her back to them, give her back!” Pierre almost shouted, putting the child, who began screaming, on the ground, and again looking at the Frenchman and the Armenian family.

The old man was already sitting, unshod. The barefoot soldier had stolen the boots and was slapping one boot against the other. The old man was saying something in a voice broken by sobs, but Pierre caught but a glimpse of this because his whole attention was directed to the soldier in the frieze gown who, meanwhile, swaying slowly from side to side, had drawn nearer to the young woman and, taking his hands from his pockets, had seized her by the neck.

The beautiful Armenian still sat motionless and in the same attitude, with her long lashes drooping as if she did not see or feel what the soldier in the frieze gown was doing to her.

While Pierre was running the few steps that separated him from the soldier in the frieze gown, the soldier was already tearing from her neck the necklace the young Armenian was wearing, and the young woman, clutching at her neck, screamed piercingly.

“Let that woman alone!” exclaimed Pierre hoarsely in a furious voice, seizing the soldier in the frieze gown by his round shoulders and throwing him aside.

The soldier in the frieze gown fell, got up, and ran away. But his barefoot comrade, throwing down the boots and drawing his sword, moved threateningly toward Pierre.

“Look here, no nonsense!” the barefoot soldier yelled.

Pierre was in such a transport of rage that he remembered nothing and his strength increased tenfold. Pierre rushed at the barefooted Frenchman

and, before the latter had time to draw his sword, knocked the soldier off his feet and hammered him with his fists. Shouts of approval were heard from the crowd around, and at the same moment, a mounted patrol of French light cavalry appeared from round the corner. The light cavalry came up at a trot to Pierre and the barefoot French soldier and surrounded them. Pierre remembered nothing of what happened after that. He only remembered beating someone and being beaten and finally feeling that his hands were bound and that a crowd of French soldiers stood around him and were searching him.

“Lieutenant, he has a dagger,” were the first words Pierre understood.

“Ah, a weapon?” said the officer and turned to the barefooted soldier who had been arrested with Pierre. “All right, you can tell all about it at the court-martial.” Then the officer turned to Pierre. “Do you speak French?”

Pierre looked around him with bloodshot eyes and did not reply. Pierre’s face probably looked very terrible, for the officer said something in a whisper and four more light cavalry left the ranks and placed themselves on both sides of Pierre.

“Do you speak French?” the officer asked again, keeping at a distance from Pierre. “Call the interpreter.”

A little man in Russian civilian clothes rode out from the ranks, and by his clothes and manner of speaking Pierre at once knew him to be a French salesman from one of the Moscow shops.

“He does not look like a common man,” said the interpreter, after a searching look at Pierre.

“Ah, he looks very much like an arsonist,” remarked the officer. “And ask him who he is,” he added.

“Who are you?” asked the interpreter in poor Russian. “You must answer the chief.”

“I will not tell you who I am. I am your prisoner—take me!” Pierre suddenly replied in French.

“Ah, ah!” muttered the officer with a frown. “Well then, march!”

A crowd had collected around the light cavalry. Nearest to Pierre stood the pockmarked peasant woman with the little girl, and when the patrol started she moved forward.

“Where are they taking you to, you poor dear?” said the peasant woman. “And the little girl, the little girl, what am I to do with her if she’s not theirs?” said the woman.

“What does that peasant woman want?” asked the officer.

Pierre was as if intoxicated. His elation increased at the sight of the little girl he had saved.

“What does she want?” Pierre murmured. “She is bringing me my daughter whom I have just saved from the flames,” said he. “Goodbye!” And without knowing how this aimless lie had escaped him, Pierre went along with resolute and triumphant steps between the French soldiers.

The French patrol was one of those sent out through the various streets of Moscow by Durosnel’s order to put a stop to the pillage, and especially to catch the arsonists who, according to the opinion which had that day originated among the higher French officers, were the cause of the conflagrations. After marching through a number of streets the patrol arrested five more Russian suspects: a small shopkeeper, two seminary students, a peasant, and a house serf, besides several looters. But of all these various suspected characters, Pierre was considered to be the most suspicious of all. When the suspects had all been brought for the night to a large house on the Zúbov Rampart that was being used as a guardhouse, Pierre was placed apart under strict guard.

BOOK 12: 1812



*I*n St. Petersburg at that time, a complicated struggle was being carried on with greater heat than ever in the highest circles, drowned as usual by the buzzing of the court drones. But the calm, luxurious life of St. Petersburg, concerned only about phantoms and reflections of real life, went on in its old way and made it hard, except by a great effort, to realize the danger and the difficult position of the Russian people. There were the same receptions and balls, the same French theater, the same court interests and service interests and intrigues as usual. Only in the very highest circles were attempts made to keep in mind the difficulties of the actual position. Stories were whispered of how differently the Mother of the Tzar and the Wife of the Tzar behaved in these difficult circumstances. The Mother of the Tzar, concerned for the welfare of the charitable and educational institutions under her patronage, had given directions that they should all be removed to Kazán, and the things belonging to these institutions had already been packed up. The Wife of the Tzar, however, when asked what instructions she would be pleased to give—with her characteristic Russian patriotism had replied that she could give no directions about state institutions for that was the affair of the sovereign, but as far as she personally was concerned she would be the last to quit St. Petersburg.

At Anna Pavlovna's on the twenty-sixth of August, the very day of the battle of Borodinó, there was a soiree, the chief feature of which was to be the reading of a letter the Bishop included when sending to the Tzar an icon of the Venerable Sergius. It was regarded as a model of ecclesiastical, patriotic eloquence. Baron Vasili himself, famed for his elocution, was to read it. (He used to read at the Mother of the Tzar's.) The art of Baron Vasili's reading was supposed to lie in rolling out the words of the Bishop's letter, quite independently of their meaning, in a loud and singsong voice alternating between a despairing wail and a tender murmur, so that the wail fell quite at random on one word and the murmur on another. This reading, as was always the case at Anna Pavlovna's soirees, had a political significance. That evening Anna Pavlovna expected several important personages who had to be made ashamed of their visits to the French theater and aroused to a patriotic temper. A good many people had already arrived, but Anna Pavlovna, not yet seeing all those whom she wanted in her drawing room, did not let the reading begin but wound up the springs of a conversation.

The news of the day in St. Petersburg was the illness of Helene. She had fallen ill unexpectedly a few days previously, had missed several gatherings of which she was usually the ornament, and Helene was said to be receiving no one, and instead of the celebrated St. Petersburg doctors who usually attended her had entrusted herself to some Italian doctor who was treating her in some new and unusual way.

They all knew very well that the enchanting Helene's illness arose from an inconvenience resulting from marrying two husbands at the same time, and that the Italian's cure consisted in removing such inconvenience, but in Anna Pavlovna's presence, no one dared to think of this or even appear to know it.

"They say the poor Helene is very ill. The doctor says it is angina pectoris."

“Angina? Oh, that’s a terrible illness!”

“They say that the rivals are reconciled, thanks to the angina...” and the word *angina* was repeated with great satisfaction.

“Pierre is pathetic, they say. He cried like a child when the doctor told him the case was dangerous.”

“Oh, it would be a terrible loss, she is an enchanting woman.”

“You are speaking of poor Helene?” said Anna Pavlovna, coming up just then. “I sent to ask for news, and hear that she is a little better. Oh, she is certainly the most charming woman in the world,” she went on, with a smile at her own enthusiasm. “We belong to different camps, but that does not prevent my esteeming her as she deserves. She is very unfortunate!” added Anna Pavlovna.

Supposing that by these words Anna Pavlovna was somewhat lifting the veil from the secret of Helene’s malady, an unwary young man ventured to express surprise that well-known doctors had not been called in and that Helene was being attended by a charlatan who might employ dangerous remedies.

“Your information may be better than mine,” Anna Pavlovna suddenly and venomously retorted on the inexperienced young man, “but I know on good authority that this doctor is a very learned and able man. He is the private physician to the Queen of Spain.”

And having thus demolished the young man, Anna Pavlovna turned to another group where Adjutant Bilibin was talking about the Austrians: having wrinkled up his face he was evidently preparing to smooth it out again and utter one of his mots.

“I think it is delightful,” Adjutant Bilibin said, referring to a diplomatic note that had been sent to Vienna with some Austrian banners captured from the French by Wittgenstein, “the hero of Petropol” as he was then called in St. Petersburg.

“What? What’s that?” asked Anna Pavlovna, securing silence for the mot, which she had heard before.

And Adjutant Bilibin repeated the actual words of the diplomatic dispatch, which he had himself composed.

“The Tzar returns these Austrian banners,” said Adjutant Bilibin, “friendly banners gone astray and found on a wrong path,” and his brow became smooth again.

“Charming, charming!” observed Baron Vasili.

“The path to Warsaw, perhaps,” Hippolyte remarked loudly and unexpectedly. Everybody looked at him, understanding what he meant. Hippolyte himself glanced around with amused surprise. He knew no more than the others what his words meant. During his diplomatic career, he had more than once noticed that such utterances were received as very witty, and at every opportunity, he uttered in that way the first words that entered his head. “It may turn out very well,” Hippolyte thought, “but if not, they’ll know how to arrange matters.” And really, during the awkward silence that ensued, that insufficiently patriotic person entered whom Anna Pavlovna had been waiting for and wished to convert, and she, smiling and shaking a finger at Hippolyte, invited Baron Vasili to the table and bringing him two candles and the letter from the Bishop to the Tzar, begged Baron Vasili to begin. Everyone became silent.

“Most Gracious Sovereign and Tzar!” Baron Vasili sternly declaimed, looking round at his audience as if to inquire whether anyone had anything to say to the contrary. But no one said anything. “Moscow, our ancient capital, the New Jerusalem, receives *her* Christ”—Baron Vasili placed a sudden emphasis on the word *her*—“as a mother receives her zealous sons into her arms, and through the gathering mists, foreseeing the brilliant glory of thy rule, sings in exultation, ‘Hosanna, blessed is he that cometh!’”

Baron Vasili pronounced these last words in a tearful voice.

Adjutant Bilibin attentively examined his nails, and many of those present appeared intimidated as if asking what they were to blame. Anna Pavlovna whispered the next words in advance, like an old woman muttering the prayer at Communion: "Let the bold and insolent Goliath, Napoleon..." she whispered.

Baron Vasili continued.

"Let the bold and insolent Goliath, Napoleon, from the borders of France encompass the realms of Russia with death-bearing terrors; humble Faith, the sling of the Russian David, shall suddenly smite his head in his bloodthirsty pride. This icon of the Venerable Sergius, the servant of God and zealous champion of old of our country's weal, is offered to Your Imperial Majesty the Tzar. I grieve that my waning strength prevents rejoicing in the sight of your most gracious presence. I raise fervent prayers to Heaven that the Almighty may exalt the race of the just, and mercifully fulfill the desires of Your Majesty, the Tzar."

"What force! What a style!" was uttered in approval by both the reader and the author.

Animated by that address Anna Pavlovna's guests talked for a long time about the state of Russia and offered various conjectures as to the result of the battle to be fought in a few days.

"You will see," said Anna Pavlovna, "that tomorrow, on the Tzar's birthday, we shall receive news. I have a favorable presentiment!"

Anna Pavlovna's favorable presentiment was in fact fulfilled. The next day, during the service at the palace church in honor of the Tzar's birthday, Baron Volkónski was called out of the church and received a dispatch from Marshal Kutuzov. It was Marshal Kutuzov's report, written from Tatárinova on the day of the battle. Marshal Kutuzov wrote that the Russians had not retreated a step, that the French losses were much heavier than ours, and that Marshal Kutuzov was writing in haste from the field of battle before collecting full information. It followed that there must have been a victory.

And at once, without leaving the church, thanks were rendered to the Creator for His help and for the victory.

Anna Pavlovna's presentiment was justified, and all that morning a joyously festive mood reigned in the city. Everyone believed the victory to have been complete, and some even spoke of Napoleon's having been captured, of his deposition, and of the choice of a new ruler for France.

It is very difficult for events to be reflected in their real strength and completeness amid the conditions of court life and far from the scene of action. Events involuntarily group themselves around some particular incident. So now the courtiers' pleasure was based as much on the fact that the news had arrived on the Tzar's birthday as on the fact of the victory itself. It was like a successfully arranged surprise. Mention was made in Marshal Kutuzov's report of the Russian losses, among which figured the names of Túchkov, Major-General Bagration, and Kutáysov. In the St. Petersburg world this sad side of the affair again involuntarily centered around a single incident: Kutáysov's death. Everybody knew him, the Tzar liked him, and he was young and interesting. That day everyone met with the words:

"What a wonderful coincidence! Just during the service. But what a loss Kutáysov is! How sorry I am!"

"What did I tell about Marshal Kutuzov?" Baron Vasili now said with a prophet's pride. "I always said he was the only man capable of defeating Napoleon."

But the next day no news arrived from the army and the public mood grew anxious. The courtiers suffered because of the suffering the suspense occasioned the Tzar.

"Fancy the Tzar's position!" said the courtiers, and instead of extolling Marshal Kutuzov as they had done the day before, they condemned him as the cause of the Tzar's anxiety. That day Baron Vasili no longer boasted of his protégé Marshal Kutuzov but remained silent when Marshal Kutuzov

was mentioned. Moreover, toward evening, as if everything conspired to make St. Petersburg society anxious and uneasy, a terrible piece of news was added. Helene had suddenly died of that terrible malady it had been so agreeable to mention. Officially, at large gatherings, everyone said that Helene had died of a terrible attack of angina pectoris, but in intimate circles, details were mentioned of how the private physician of the Queen of Spain had prescribed small doses of a certain drug to produce a certain effect; but Helene, tortured by the fact that the elderly grandee suspected her and that her husband to whom she had written (that wretched, profligate Pierre) had not replied, had suddenly taken a very large dose of the drug, and had died in agony before assistance could be rendered her. It was said that Baron Vasili and the elderly grandee had turned upon the foreign Baron, but the foreign Baron had produced such letters from the unfortunate deceased Helena that they had immediately let the matter drop.

The talk centered around three melancholy facts: the Tzar's lack of news, the loss of Kutáysov, and the death of Helene.

On the third day after Marshal Kutuzov's report, a country gentleman arrived from Moscow, and news of the surrender of Moscow to the French spread through the whole town. This was terrible! What a position for the Tzar to be in! Marshal Kutuzov was a traitor, and Baron Vasili during the visits of condolence paid to him on the occasion of Helene's death said of Marshal Kutuzov, whom he had formerly praised (it was excusable for him in Baron Vasili's grief to forget what he had said), that it was impossible to expect anything else from a blind and depraved old man like Marshal Kutuzov.

Baron Vasili said, "I only wonder that the fate of Russia could have been entrusted to such a man such as Marshal Kutuzov."

As long as this news of the surrender of Moscow remained unofficial it was possible to doubt it, but then the next day the following communication was received from Mayor Rostopchin:

Marshal Kutuzov's adjutant has brought me a letter in which he demands police officers to guide the army to the Ryazán road. He writes that he is regretfully abandoning Moscow. Sire! Marshal Kutuzov's action decides the fate of the capital and of your empire! Russia will shudder to learn of the abandonment of the city in which her greatness is centered and in which lie the ashes of your ancestors! I shall follow the army. I have had everything removed, and it only remains for me to weep over the fate of my fatherland.

On receiving this dispatch the Tzar sent Baron Volkónski to Marshal Kutuzov with the following rescript:

Marshal Kutuzov! Since the twenty-ninth of August, I have received no communication from you, yet on the first of September, I received from Moscow's Mayor Rostopchin, via Yaroslávl, the sad news that you, Marshal Kutuzov, along with the army, have decided to abandon Moscow. You can imagine the effect this news has had on me, and your silence increases my astonishment. I am sending this by Baron Volkónski, to hear from you about the situation of the army and the reasons that have induced you to take this melancholy decision.

Nine days after the abandonment of Moscow, a messenger from Marshal Kutuzov reached St. Petersburg with the official announcement of that event. This messenger was Colonel Michaud, a Frenchman who did not know Russian, but who was *though a foreigner, Russian in heart and soul*, as he said of himself.

The Tzar at once received this messenger in his study at the palace on Stone Island. Michaud, who had never seen Moscow before the campaign and who did not know Russian, yet felt deeply moved (as he wrote) when he appeared before *our most gracious sovereign the Tzar* with the news of the burning of Moscow, *whose flames illuminated his route*.

Though the source of Colonel Michaud's chagrin must have been different from that which caused Russians to grieve, he had such a sad face

when shown into the Tzar's study that the latter at once asked:

"Have you brought me sad news, Colonel Michaud?"

"Very sad, sire," replied Colonel Michaud, lowering his eyes with a sigh. "The abandonment of Moscow."

"Have they surrendered my ancient capital without a battle?" asked the Tzar quickly, his face suddenly flushing.

Colonel Michaud respectfully delivered the message Marshal Kutuzov had entrusted to him, which was that it had been impossible to fight before Moscow and that as the only remaining choice was between losing the army as well as Moscow, or losing Moscow alone, Marshal Kutuzov had to choose the latter.

The Tzar listened in silence, not looking at Colonel Michaud.

"Has the enemy entered the city?" the Tzar asked.

"Yes, sire, and Moscow is now in ashes. I left it all in flames," replied Colonel Michaud in a decided tone, but glancing at the Tzar he was frightened by what he had done.

The Tzar began to breathe heavily and rapidly, his lower lip trembled, and tears instantly appeared in his fine blue eyes.

But this lasted only a moment. The Tzar suddenly frowned, as if blaming himself for his weakness, and raising his head addressed Colonel Michaud in a firm voice:

"I see, Colonel Michaud, from all that is happening, that Providence requires great sacrifices of us... I am ready to submit myself in all things to His will; but tell me, Michaud, how did you leave the army when it saw my ancient capital abandoned without a battle? Did you not notice discouragement?..."

Seeing that his most gracious ruler the Tzar was calm once more, Colonel Michaud also grew calm but was not immediately ready to reply to the Tzar's direct and relevant question which required a direct answer.

“Sire, will you allow me to speak frankly as befits a loyal soldier?” Colonel Michaud asked to gain time.

“Colonel Michaud, I always require it,” replied the Tzar. “Conceal nothing from me, I wish to know absolutely how things are.”

“Sire!” said Colonel Michaud with a subtle, scarcely perceptible smile on his lips, having now prepared a well-phrased reply, “sire, I left the whole army, from its chiefs to the lowest soldier, without exception in desperate and agonized terror...”

“How is that?” the Tzar interrupted him, frowning sternly. “Would misfortune make my Russians lose heart?... Never!”

Colonel Michaud had only waited for this to bring out the phrase he had prepared.

“Sire,” Colonel Michaud said, with respectful playfulness, “they are only afraid lest Your Majesty, in the goodness of your heart, should allow yourself to be persuaded to make peace. The Russian soldiers are burning for the combat,” declared this representative of the Russian nation, “and to prove to Your Majesty by the sacrifice of their lives how devoted they are...”

“Ah!” said the Tzar reassured, and with a kindly gleam in his eyes, he patted Colonel Michaud on the shoulder. “You set me at ease, Colonel Michaud.”

The Tzar bent his head and was silent for some time.

“Well, then, go back to the army,” the Tzar said, drawing himself up to his full height and addressing Colonel Michaud with a gracious and majestic gesture, “and tell our brave men and all my good subjects wherever you go that when I have not a soldier left I shall put myself at the head of my beloved nobility and my good peasants and so use the last resources of my empire. It still offers me more than my enemies suppose,” said the Tzar growing more and more animated; “but should it ever be ordained by Divine Providence,” he continued, raising to heaven his fine

eyes shining with emotion, “that my dynasty should cease to reign on the throne of my ancestors, then after exhausting all the means at my command, I shall let my beard grow to here” (the Tzar pointed halfway down his chest) “and go and eat potatoes with the meanest of my peasants, rather than sign the disgrace of my country and of my beloved people whose sacrifices I know how to appreciate.”

Having uttered these words in an agitated voice the Tzar suddenly turned away as if to hide from Colonel Michaud the tears that rose to his eyes, and went to the further end of his study. Having stood there a few moments, the Tzar strode back to Colonel Michaud and pressed his arm below the elbow with a vigorous movement. The Tzar’s mild and handsome face was flushed and his eyes gleamed with resolution and anger.

“Colonel Michaud, do not forget what I say to you here, perhaps we may recall it with pleasure someday... Napoleon or I,” said the Tzar, touching his breast. “We can no longer both reign together. I have learned to know Napoleon, and he will not deceive me anymore...”

And the Tzar paused, with a frown.

When he heard these words and saw the expression of firm resolution in the Tzar’s eyes, Colonel Michaud— *though foreign, Russian in heart and soul*,—at that solemn moment felt himself enraptured by all that he had heard (as he used afterward to say), and gave expression to his own feelings and those of the Russian people whose representative he considered himself to be, in the following words:

“Sire!” said Colonel Michaud, “Your Majesty the Tzar is at this moment signing the glory of the nation and the salvation of Europe!”

With an inclination of his head, the Tzar dismissed Colonel Michaud.

It is natural for us who were not living in those days to imagine that when half of Russia had been conquered and the inhabitants were fleeing to distant provinces, and one levy after another was being raised for the defense of the fatherland, all Russians from the greatest to the least were

solely engaged in sacrificing themselves, saving their fatherland, or weeping over its downfall. The tales and descriptions of that time without exception speak only of the self-sacrifice, patriotic devotion, despair, grief, and heroism of the Russians. But it was not really so. It appears so to us because we see only the general historic interest of that time and do not see all the personal human interests that people had. Yet in reality, those personal interests of the moment so much transcend the general interests that they always prevent the public interest from being felt or even noticed. Most of the people at that time paid no attention to the general progress of events but were guided only by their private interests, and they were the very people whose activities at that period were most useful.

Those who tried to understand the general course of events and to take part in it by self-sacrifice and heroism were the most useless members of society, they saw everything upside down, and all they did for the common good turned out to be useless and foolish—like Pierre's and Mamónov's regiments which looted Russian villages, and the lint the young ladies prepared and that never reached the wounded, and so on. Even those, fond of intellectual talk and of expressing their feelings, who discussed Russia's position at the time involuntarily introduced into their conversation either a shade of pretense and falsehood or useless condemnation and anger directed against people accused of actions no one could possibly be guilty of. In historic events, the rule forbidding us to eat of the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge is especially applicable. Only unconscious action bears fruit, and he who plays a part in a historic event never understands its significance. If he tries to realize it his efforts are fruitless.

The more closely a man was engaged in the events then taking place in Russia the less did he realize their significance. In St. Petersburg and in the provinces at a distance from Moscow, ladies, and gentlemen in militia uniforms, wept for Russia and its ancient capital and talked of self-sacrifice and so on; but in the army which retired beyond Moscow there was little

talk or thought of Moscow, and when they caught sight of its burned ruins no one swore to be avenged on the French, but they thought about their next pay, their next quarters, of Matrëshka the female provision seller, and like matters.

As the war had caught him in the service, Nicholas took a close and prolonged part in the defense of his country, but did so casually, without any aim at self-sacrifice, and he, therefore, looked at what was going on in Russia without despair and without dismally racking his brains over it. Had Nicholas been asked what he thought of the state of Russia, he would have said that it was not his business to think about it, that Marshal Kutuzov and others were there for that purpose, but that he had heard that the regiments were to be made up to their full strength, that fighting would probably go on for a long time yet, and that things being so it was quite likely he might be in command of a regiment in a couple of years' time.

As Nicholas looked at the matter in this way, he learned that he was being sent to Vorónezh to buy remounts for his division, not only without regret at being prevented from taking part in the coming battle but with the greatest pleasure—which he did not conceal and which his comrades fully understood.

A few days before the battle of Borodinó, Nicholas received the necessary money and warrants, and having sent some hussars on in advance, he set out with post horses for Vorónezh.

Only a man who has experienced it—that is, has passed some months continuously in an atmosphere of campaigning and war—can understand the delight Nicholas felt when he escaped from the region covered by the army's foraging operations, provision trains, and hospitals. When—free from soldiers, wagons, and the filthy traces of a camp—Nicholas saw villages with peasants and peasant women, gentlemen's country houses, fields where cattle were grazing, and posthouses with stationmasters asleep in them, he rejoiced as though seeing all this for the first time. What for a

long while specially surprised and delighted him were the women, young and healthy, without a dozen officers making up to each of them; women, too, who were pleased and flattered that a passing officer should joke with them.

In the highest spirits, Nicholas arrived at night at a hotel in Vorónezh, ordered things he had long been deprived of in camp, and the next day, very clean-shaven and in a full-dress uniform he had not worn for a long time, went to present himself to the authorities.

The commander of the militia was a civilian general, an old man who was evidently pleased with his military designation and rank. The commander of the militia received Nicholas brusquely (imagining this to be characteristically military) and questioned him with an important air as if considering the general progress of affairs and approving and disapproving with full right to do so. Nicholas was in such good spirits that this merely amused him.

From the commander of the militia, Nicholas drove to the governor. The governor was a brisk little man, very simple and affable. He indicated the stud farms at which Nicholas might procure horses, recommended to him a horse dealer in the town and a landowner fourteen miles out of town who had the best horses and promised to assist him in every way.

“You are Count Rostov’s son? My wife was a great friend of your mother’s. We are at home on Thursdays—today is Thursday, so please come and see us quite informally,” said the governor, taking leave of Nicholas.

Immediately on leaving the governor’s, Nicholas hired post horses and, taking his squadron quartermaster with him, drove at a gallop to the landowner, fourteen miles away, who had the stud. Everything seemed to Nicholas pleasant and easy during that first part of his stay in Vorónezh and, as usually happens when a man is in a pleasant state of mind, everything went well and easily.

The landowner to whom Nicholas went was a bachelor, an old hussar, a horse fancier, a sportsman, the possessor of some century-old brandy and some old Hungarian wine, who had a snugger where he smoked, and who owned some splendid horses.

In very few words Nicholas bought seventeen picked stallions for six thousand rubles—to serve, as he said, as samples of his remounts. After dining and taking rather too much of the Hungarian wine, Nicholas—having exchanged kisses with the landowner, with whom he was already on the friendliest terms—galloped back over abominable roads, in the brightest frame of mind, continually urging on the driver so as to be in time for the governor’s party.

When Nicholas had changed, poured water over his head, and scented himself, he arrived at the governor’s rather late, but with the phrase “better late than never” on his lips.

It was not a ball, nor had dancing been announced, but everyone knew that valse and the *Scottish dance* would be played on the clavichord and that there would be dancing, and so everyone had come as to a ball.

Provincial life in 1812 went on very much as usual, but with this difference, that it was livelier in the towns as a consequence of the arrival of many wealthy families from Moscow, and as in everything that went on in Russia at that time a special recklessness was noticeable, an “in for a penny, in for a pound—who cares?” spirit, and the inevitable small talk, instead of turning on the weather and mutual acquaintances, now turned on Moscow, the army, and Napoleon.

The society gathered together at the governor’s was the best in Vorónezh.

There were a great many ladies and some of Nicholas’ Moscow acquaintances, but there were no men who could at all vie with the cavalier of St. George, the hussar remount officer, the good-natured and well-bred Nicholas. Among the men was an Italian prisoner, an officer of the French

army; and Nicholas felt that the presence of that prisoner enhanced his own importance as a Russian hero. The Italian was, as it were, a war trophy. Nicholas felt this, it seemed to him that everyone regarded the Italian in the same light, and he treated him cordially though with dignity and restraint.

As soon as Nicholas entered in his hussar uniform, diffusing around him a fragrance of perfume and wine, and had uttered the words “better late than never” and heard them repeated several times by others, people clustered around him; all eyes turned on him, and he felt at once that he had entered into his proper position in the province—that of a universal favorite: a very pleasant position, and intoxicatingly so after his long privations. At posting stations, at inns, and in the landowner’s snugger, maidservants had been flattered by his notice, and here too at the governor’s party, there were (as it seemed to Nicholas) an inexhaustible number of pretty young women, married and unmarried, impatiently awaiting his notice. The women and girls flirted with him and, from the first day, the people concerned themselves to get this fine young daredevil of a hussar married and settled down. Among these was the governor’s wife herself, who welcomed Nicholas as a near relative and called him “Nicholas.”

Valses and the *Scottish dance* were played, and dancing began in which Nicholas still further captivated the provincial society with his agility. His particularly free manner of dancing even surprised them all. Nicholas was himself rather surprised at the way he danced that evening. He had never danced like that in Moscow and would even have considered such a very free and easy manner improper and in bad form, but here he felt it incumbent on him to astonish them all with something unusual, something they would have to accept as the regular thing in the capital though new to them in the provinces.

All the evening Nicholas paid attention to a blue-eyed, plump, and pleasing little blonde, the wife of one of the provincial officials. With the naive conviction of young men in a merry mood that other men’s wives

were created for them, Nicholas did not leave the lady's side and treated her husband in a friendly and conspiratorial style, as if, without speaking of it, they knew how capitally Nicholas and the lady would get on together. The husband, however, did not seem to share that conviction and tried to behave morosely with Nicholas. But Nicholas's good-natured naivete was so boundless that sometimes even he involuntarily yielded to Nicholas' good humor. Toward the end of the evening, however, as the wife's face grew more flushed and animated, the husband's became more and more melancholy and solemn, as though there were but a given amount of animation between them and as the wife's share increased the husband's diminished.

Nicholas sat leaning slightly forward in an armchair, bending closely over the wife of the provincial official and paying her mythological compliments with a smile that never left his face. Jauntily shifting the position of his legs in their tight riding breeches, diffusing an odor of perfume, and admiring his partner, himself, and the fine outlines of his legs in their well-fitting Hessian boots, Nicholas told her that he wished to run away with a certain lady here in Vorónezh.

"Which lady?"

"A charming lady, a divine one. Her eyes" (Nicholas looked at his partner) "are blue, her mouth coral and ivory; her figure" (he glanced at her shoulders) "like Diana's..."

The husband came up and sullenly asked his wife what she was talking about.

"Ah, Nikíta Iványch!" cried Nicholas, rising politely, and as if wishing Nikíta Iványch to share his joke, Nicholas began to tell him of his intention to elope with his wife.

The husband smiled gloomily, the wife gaily. The governor's good-natured wife came up with a look of disapproval.

“Anna Ignátyevna wants to see you, Nicholas,” said she, pronouncing the name so that Nicholas at once understood that she was a very important person. “Come, Nicholas! You know you let me call you so?”

“Oh, yes. Who is she?”

“Anna Ignátyevna. She has heard from her niece how you rescued her... Can you guess who?”

“I rescued such a lot of them!” said Nicholas.

“Her niece, Marya. Marya is here in Vorónezh with her aunt. Oho! How you blush. Why, are...?”

“Not a bit! Please don’t!”

“Very well, very well!... Oh, what a fellow you are!”

The governor’s wife led him up to a tall and very stout old lady with a blue headdress, who had just finished her game of cards with the most important personages of the town. This was Marya’s Aunt Ignátyevna, her aunt on her mother’s side, a rich, childless widow who always lived in Vorónezh. When Nicholas approached her she was standing settling up for the game. She looked at him and, screwing up her eyes sternly, continued to upbraid the general who had won from her.

“Very pleased, *my dear*,” Marya’s Aunt Ignátyevna then said, holding out her hand to Nicholas. “Pray come and see me.”

After a few words about Marya and her late father, whom Marya’s aunt Ignátyevna had evidently not liked, and having asked what Nicholas knew of Andrei, who also was evidently no favorite of hers, the important old lady dismissed Nicholas after repeating her invitation to come to see her.

Nicholas promised to come and blushed again as he bowed. At the mention of Marya, Nicholas experienced a feeling of shyness and even fear, which he himself did not understand.

When he had parted from Marya’s Aunt Ignátyevna, Nicholas wished to return to the dancing, but the governor’s little wife placed her plump hand on his sleeve and, saying that she wanted to have a talk with him, led him to

her sitting room, from which those who were there immediately withdrew so as not to be in her way.

“Do you know, Nicholas,” began the governor’s wife with a serious expression on her kind little face, “Marya really would be the match for you: would you like me to arrange it?”

“Whom do you mean?” asked Nicholas.

“I will make a match for you with Marya. Others speak of Lily, but I say, no—Marya is the one! Do you want me to do it? I am sure your mother, Countess Rostov, will be grateful to me. What a charming girl Marya is, really! And she is not at all so plain, either.”

“Not at all,” replied Nicholas as if offended at the idea. “As befits a soldier, I don’t force myself on anyone or refuse anything,” he said before he had time to consider what he was saying.

“Well then, remember, this is not a joke!”

“Of course not!”

“Yes, yes,” the governor’s wife said as if talking to herself. “But, my dear Nicholas, among other things you are too attentive to the other, the blonde wife of the provincial official. One is sorry for the husband, really...”

“Oh no, we are good friends with him,” said Nicholas in the simplicity of his heart; it did not enter his head that a pastime so pleasant to himself might not be pleasant to someone else.

“But what nonsense I have been saying to the governor’s wife!” thought Nicholas suddenly at supper. “She will really begin to arrange a match... and Sonya...?” And on taking leave of the governor’s wife, when she again smilingly said to him, “Well then, remember!” Nicholas drew her aside.

“But see here, to tell the truth...”

“What is it, my dear? Come, let’s sit down here,” said she.

Nicholas suddenly felt a desire and need to tell his most intimate thoughts (which he would not have told to his mother, his sister, or his friend) to the governor’s wife who was almost a stranger. When Nicholas

afterward recalled that impulse to unsolicited and inexplicable frankness which had very important results for him, it seemed to him—as it seems to everyone in such cases—that it was merely some silly whim that seized him: yet that burst of frankness, together with other trifling events, had immense consequences for him and for all his family.

“You see, my mother has long wanted me to marry an heiress, but the very idea of marrying for money is repugnant to me.”

“Oh yes, I understand,” said the governor’s wife.

“But Marya—that’s another matter. I will tell you the truth. In the first place, I like her very much and I feel drawn to her; and then, after I met her under such circumstances—so strangely, the idea often occurred to me: ‘This is fate.’ Especially if you remember that my mother had long been thinking of it; but I had never happened to meet her before, somehow it had always happened that we did not meet. And as long as my sister Natasha was engaged to Marya’s brother, Andrei, it was of course out of the question for me to think of marrying her. And if it happens that I should meet Marya just when Natasha’s engagement had been broken off... and then everything... So you see... I never told this to anyone and never will, only to you.”

The governor’s wife pressed his elbow gratefully.

“You know Sonya, my cousin? I love her, and promised to marry her, and will do so... So you see there can be no question about—” said Nicholas incoherently and blushing.

“My dear Nicholas, what a way to look at it! You know Sonya has nothing and you yourself say your Papa’s affairs are in a very bad way. And what about your mother? It would kill her, that’s one thing. And what sort of life would it be for Sonya—if she’s a girl with a heart? Your mother in despair, and you are all ruined... No, my dear, you and Sonya ought to understand that.”

Nicholas remained silent. It comforted him to hear these arguments.

“All the same, it is impossible,” Nicholas rejoined with a sigh, after a short pause. “Besides, would Marya have me? And besides, she is now in mourning. How can one think of it!”

“But you don’t suppose I’m going to get you married at once? There is always a right way of doing things,” replied the governor’s wife.

“What a matchmaker you are...” said Nicholas, kissing her plump little hand.

On reaching Moscow after her meeting with Nicholas, Marya found her nephew, Nikolenka, there with his tutor, and a letter from Andrei giving Marya instructions on how to get to her Aunt Ignátyevna at Vorónezh. That feeling akin to temptation which had tormented her during her father’s illness, since his death, and especially since her meeting with Nicholas was smothered by arrangements for the journey, anxiety about her brother, settling in a new house, meeting new people, and attending to her nephew’s education. Marya was sad. Now, after a month passed in quiet surroundings, she felt more and more deeply the loss of her father which was associated in her mind with the ruin of Russia. She was agitated and incessantly tortured by the thought of the dangers to which her brother, the only intimate person now remaining to her, was exposed. Marya was worried too about her nephew Nicolai’s education for which she had always felt incompetent, but in the depths of her soul, she felt at peace—a peace arising from a consciousness of having stifled those personal dreams and hopes that had been on the point of awakening within her and were related to her meeting with Nicholas.

The day after her party the governor’s wife came to see Marya’s aunt Ignátyevna and, after discussing her plan with the aunt, remarked that though under present circumstances a formal betrothal was, of course, not to be thought of, all the same, the young people might be brought together and could get to know one another. Aunt Ignátyevna expressed approval, and the governor’s wife began to speak of Nicholas in Marya’s presence,

praising him and telling how he had blushed when Marya's name was mentioned. But Marya experienced a painful rather than a joyful feeling—her mental tranquility was destroyed, and desires, doubts, self-reproach, and hopes re-awoke.

During the two days that elapsed before Nicholas called, Marya continually thought of how she ought to behave to him. First, she decided not to come to the drawing-room when he called to see her aunt—that it would not be proper for her, in her deep mourning, to receive visitors; then she thought this would be rude after what he had done for her; then it occurred to her that Aunt Ignátyevna and the governor's wife had intentions concerning herself and Nicholas—their looks and words at times seemed to confirm this supposition—then she told herself that only she, with her sinful nature, could think this of them: they could not forget that situated as she was, while still wearing deep mourning, such matchmaking would be an insult to her and to her father's memory. Assuming that she did go down to see him, Marya imagined the words he would say to her and what she would say to him, and these words sometimes seemed undeservedly cold and then to mean too much. More than anything she feared lest the confusion she felt might overwhelm her and betray her as soon as she saw him.

But when on Sunday after church the footman announced in the drawing room that Count Rostov had called, Marya showed no confusion, only a slight blush suffused her cheeks and her eyes lit up with a new and radiant light.

“You have met him, Aunt Ignátyevna?” said Marya in a calm voice, unable herself to understand that she could be outwardly so calm and natural.

When Nicholas entered the room, Marya dropped her eyes for an instant, as if to give the visitor time to greet Aunt Ignátyevna, and then just as Nicholas turned to her she raised her head and met his look with shining

eyes. With a movement full of dignity and grace, Marya half rose with a smile of pleasure, held out her slender, delicate hand to him, and began to speak in a voice in which for the first time new deep womanly notes vibrated. Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, who was in the drawing room, looked at Marya in bewildered surprise. Herself a consummate coquette, she could not have maneuvered better on meeting a man she wished to attract.

“Either black is particularly becoming to her or she really has greatly improved without my having noticed it. And above all, what tact and grace!” thought Lady-in-waiting Bourienne.

Had Marya been capable of reflection at that moment, she would have been more surprised than Lady-in-waiting Bourienne at the change that had taken place in herself. From the moment she recognized that dear, loved face, a new life force took possession of her and compelled her to speak and act apart from her own will. From the time Nicholas entered, Marya’s face became suddenly transformed. It was as if a light had been kindled in a carved and painted lantern and the intricate, skillful, artistic work on its sides, which previously seemed dark, coarse, and meaningless, was suddenly shown up in unexpected and striking beauty. For the first time, all that pure, spiritual, inward travail through which she had lived appeared on the surface. All her inward labor, her dissatisfaction with herself, her sufferings, her strivings after goodness, her meekness, love, and self-sacrifice—all this now shone in those radiant eyes, in her delicate smile, and in every trait of her gentle face.

Nicholas saw all this as clearly as if he had known her whole life. He felt that the being before him was quite different from, and better than, anyone he had met before, and above all better than himself.

Their conversation was very simple and unimportant. They spoke of the war, and like everyone else unconsciously exaggerated their sorrow about it; they spoke of their last meeting—Nicholas trying to change the subject—

they talked of the governor's kind wife, of Nicholas' relations, and of Marya's.

Marya did not talk about Andrei, diverting the conversation as soon as Aunt Ignátyevna mentioned Andrei. Evidently, Marya could speak of Russia's misfortunes with a certain artificiality, but Andrei was too near her heart and she neither could nor would speak lightly of him. Nicholas noticed this, as he noticed every shade of Marya's character with an observation unusual to him, and everything confirmed his conviction that she was a quite an unusual and extraordinary being. Nicholas blushed and was confused when people spoke to him about Marya (as she did when he was mentioned) and even when he thought of her, but in her presence, he felt quite at ease and said not at all what he had prepared, but what, quite appropriately, occurred to him at the moment.

When a pause occurred during his short visit, Nicholas, as is usual when there are children, turned to Andrei's little son, Nikolenka, caressing him and asking whether he would like to be a hussar. Nicholas took the boy on his knee, played with him, and looked round at Marya. With a softened, happy, timid look, Marya watched the boy she loved in the arms of the man she loved. Nicholas also noticed that look and, as if understanding it, flushed with pleasure and began to kiss Nikolenka with good-natured playfulness.

As Marya was in mourning, she did not go out into society, and Nicholas did not think it the proper thing to visit her again; but all the same, the governor's wife went on with her matchmaking, passing on to Nicholas the flattering things Marya said of him and vice versa, and insisting on his declaring himself to Marya. For this purpose, the governor's wife arranged a meeting between Nicholas and Marya at the bishop's house before Mass.

Though Nicholas told the governor's wife that he would not make any declaration to Marya, Nicholas promised to go.

As at Tilsit, Nicholas had not allowed himself to doubt that what everybody considered right was right, so now, after a short but sincere struggle between his effort to arrange his life by his own sense of justice, and in obedient submission to circumstances, he chose the latter and yielded to the power he felt irresistibly carrying him he knew not where. Nicholas knew that after his promise to Sonya it would be what he deemed base to declare his feelings to Marya. And he knew that he would never act basely. But he also knew (or rather felt at the bottom of his heart) that by resigning himself now to the force of circumstances and to those who were guiding him, he was not only doing anything wrong but was doing something very important—more important than anything he had ever done in his life.

After meeting Marya, though the course of his life went on externally as before, all Nicholas' former amusements lost their charm for him and he often thought about Marya. But Nicholas never thought about her as he had thought of all the young ladies without exception whom he had met in society, nor as he had for a long time, and at one time rapturously, thought about Sonya. Nicholas had pictured each of those young ladies as almost all honest-hearted young men do, that is, as a possible wife, adapting her in his imagination to all the conditions of married life: a white dressing gown, his wife at the tea table, his wife's carriage, little ones, Mamma and Papa, their relations to her, and so on—and these pictures of the future had given him pleasure. But with Marya, to whom they were trying to get him engaged, Nicholas could never picture anything of future married life. If he tried, his pictures seemed incongruous and false. It made him afraid.

The dreadful news of the battle of Borodinó, of our losses in killed and wounded, and the still more terrible news of the loss of Moscow reached Vorónezh in the middle of September. Marya, having learned of Andrei's wound only from the *Gazette* and having no definite news of him, prepared (so Nicholas heard, he had not seen Marya again himself) to set off in search of Andrei.

When Nicholas received the news of the battle of Borodinó and the abandonment of Moscow, he was not seized with despair, anger, the desire for vengeance, or any feeling of that kind, but everything in Vorónezh suddenly seemed to him dull and tiresome, and he experienced an indefinite feeling of shame and awkwardness. The conversations he heard seemed to him insincere; Nicholas did not know how to judge all these affairs and felt that only in the regiment would everything again become clear to him. He made haste to finish buying the horses and often became unreasonably angry with his servant and squadron quartermaster.

A few days before Nicholas's departure, a special thanksgiving, at which Nicholas was present, was held in the cathedral for the Russian victory. He stood a little behind the governor and held himself with military decorum through the service, meditating on a great variety of subjects. When the service was over the governor's wife beckoned him to her.

"Have you seen Marya?" the governor's wife asked, indicating with a movement of her head a lady standing on the opposite side, beyond the choir.

Nicholas immediately recognized Marya not so much by the profile he saw under her bonnet as by the feeling of solicitude, timidity, and pity that immediately overcame him. Marya, evidently engrossed by her thoughts, was crossing herself for the last time before leaving the church.

Nicholas looked at Marya's face with surprise. It was the same face he had seen before, there was the same expression of refined, inner, spiritual labor, but now it was quite differently lit up. There was a pathetic expression of sorrow, prayer, and hope in it. As had occurred before when she was present, Nicholas went up to Marya without waiting to be prompted by the governor's wife and not asking himself whether or not it was right and proper to address her here in church and told her he had heard of her trouble and sympathized with his whole soul. As soon as she heard his

voice a vivid glow kindled in her face, lighting up both her sorrow and her joy.

“There is one thing I wanted to tell you, Marya,” said Nicholas. “It is that if your brother, Andrei, were not living, it would have been at once announced in the *Gazette*, as he is a colonel.”

Marya looked at him, not grasping what Nicholas was saying, but cheered by the expression of regretful sympathy on his face.

“And I have known so many cases of a splinter wound” (the *Gazette* said it was a shell) “either proving fatal at once or being very slight,” continued Nicholas. “We must hope for the best, and I am sure...”

Marya interrupted him.

“Oh, that would be so dread...” Marya began and, prevented by agitation from finishing, she bent her head with a movement as graceful as everything she did in his presence and, looking up at him gratefully, went out, following Aunt Ignátyevna.

That evening Nicholas did not go out but stayed at home to settle some accounts with the horse dealers. When he had finished that business it was already too late to go anywhere but still too early to go to bed, and for a long time, he paced up and down the room, reflecting on his life, a thing he rarely did.

Marya had made an agreeable impression on him when he had met her in Smolénsk province. His having encountered her in such exceptional circumstances, and his mother having at one time mentioned her to him as a good match, had drawn his particular attention to her. When Nicholas met her again in Vorónezh the impression she made on him was not merely pleasing but powerful. Nicholas had been struck by the peculiar moral beauty he observed in her at this time. He was, however, preparing to go away and it had not entered his head to regret that he was thus depriving himself of chances of meeting her. But that day’s encounter in the church had, he felt, sunk deeper than was desirable for his peace of mind. That

pale, sad, refined face, that radiant look, those gentle graceful gestures, and especially the deep and tender sorrow expressed in all her features agitated him and evoked his sympathy. In men, Nicholas could not bear to see the expression of a higher spiritual life (that was why he did not like Andrei) and he referred to it contemptuously as philosophy and dreaminess, but in Marya, that very sorrow which revealed the depth of a whole spiritual world foreign to him was an irresistible attraction.

“Marya must be a wonderful woman. A real angel!” he said to himself. “Why am I not free? Why was I in such a hurry with Sonya?” And Nicholas involuntarily compared the two: the lack of spirituality in Sonya and the abundance of it in Marya—a spirituality he himself lacked and therefore valued most highly. Nicholas tried to picture what would happen were he free. How he would propose to her and how she would become his wife. But no, he could not imagine that. He felt awed, and no clear picture presented itself to his mind. He had long ago pictured to himself a future with Sonya, and that was all clear and simple just because it had all been thought out and he knew all there was in Sonya, but it was impossible to picture a future with Marya because he did not understand her but simply loved her.

Reveries about Sonya had had something merry and playful in them, but to dream of Marya was always difficult and a little frightening.

“How Marya prayed!” Nicholas thought. “It was plain that her whole soul was in her prayer. Yes, that was the prayer that moves mountains, and I am sure her prayer will be answered. Why don’t I pray for what I want?” Nicholas suddenly thought. “What do I want? To be free, released from Sonya... She was right,” he thought, remembering what the governor’s wife had said: “Nothing but misfortune can come of marrying Sonya. Muddles, grief for Mamma... business difficulties... muddles, terrible muddles! Besides, I don’t love Sonya—not as I should. Oh, God! Release me from this dreadful, inextricable position!” Nicholas suddenly began to pray. “Yes,

prayer can move mountains, but one must have faith and not pray as Natasha and I used to as children, that the snow might turn into sugar—and then run out into the yard to see whether it had done so. No, but I am not praying for trifles now,” Nicholas thought as he put his pipe down in a corner, and folding his hands placed himself before the icon. Softened by memories of Marya, he began to pray as he had not done for a long time. Tears were in his eyes and in his throat when the door opened and Lavrúshka came in with some papers.

“Blockhead! Why do you come in without being called?” cried Nicholas, quickly changing his attitude.

“From the governor,” said Lavrúshka in a sleepy voice. “A courier has arrived and there’s a letter for you.”

“Well, all right, thanks. You can go!”

Nicholas took the two letters, one of which was from his mother and the other from Sonya. Nicholas recognized them by the handwriting and opened Sonya’s first. He had read only a few lines when he turned pale and his eyes opened wide with fear and joy.

“No, it’s not possible!” he cried aloud.

Unable to sit still, Nicholas paced up and down the room holding the letter and reading it. He glanced through it, then read it again, and then again, and standing still in the middle of the room he raised his shoulders, stretching out his hands, with his mouth wide open and his eyes fixed. What he had just been praying for with confidence that God would hear him had come to pass, but Nicholas was as much astonished as if it were something extraordinary and unexpected, and as if the very fact that it had happened so quickly proved that it had not come from God to whom he had prayed but by some ordinary coincidence.

This unexpected and, as it seemed to Nicholas, quite voluntary letter from Sonya freed him from the knot that fettered him and from which there had seemed no escape. Sonya wrote that the last unfortunate events—the

loss of almost the whole of the Rostovs' Moscow property—and Countess Rostov's repeatedly expressed wish that Nicholas should marry Marya, together with his silence and coldness of late, had all combined to make Sonya decide to release him from his promise and set him completely free.

It would be too painful to me to think that I might be a cause of sorrow or discord in the family that has been so good to me (Sonya wrote), and my love has no aim but the happiness of those I love; so, Nicholas, I beg you to consider yourself free, and to be assured that, in spite of everything, no one can love you more than does

Your Sonya

Both letters were written from Tróitsa. The other, from Countess Rostov, described their last days in Moscow, their departure, the fire, and the destruction of all their property. In this letter, Countess Rostov also mentioned that Andrei was among the wounded traveling with them; his state was very critical, but the doctor said there was now more hope. Sonya and Natasha were nursing him.

The next day, Nicholas took his mother's letter and went to see Marya. Neither Nicholas nor Marya said a word about what "Natasha nursing him" might mean, but thanks to this letter Nicholas suddenly became almost as intimate with Marya as if they were relations.

The following day Nicholas saw Marya off on her journey to Yaroslávl, and a few days later left to rejoin his regiment.

Sonya's letter written from Tróitsa, which had come as an answer to Nicholas' prayer, was prompted by this: the thought of getting Nicholas married to an heiress occupied Count Rostov's mind more and more. Countess Rostov knew that Sonya was the chief obstacle to this happening, and Sonya's life in Countess Rostov's house had grown harder and harder, especially after they had received a letter from Nicholas telling of his meeting with Marya in Boguchárovo. Countess Rostov let no occasion slip of making humiliating or cruel allusions to Sonya.

But a few days before they left Moscow, moved and excited by all that was going on, Countess Rostov called Sonya to her and, instead of reproaching and making demands on her, tearfully implored Sonya to sacrifice herself and repay all that the family had done for her by breaking off her engagement with Nicholas.

“I shall not be at peace till you promise me this.”

Sonya burst into hysterical tears and replied through her sobs that she would do anything and was prepared for anything, but gave no actual promise and could not bring herself to decide to do what was demanded of her. Sonya must sacrifice herself for the family that had reared and brought her up. To sacrifice herself for others was Sonya’s habit. Her position in the house was such that only by sacrifice could she show her worth, and she was accustomed to this and loved doing it. But in all Sonya’s former acts of self-sacrifice, she had been happily conscious that they raised her in her own esteem and in that of others, and so made her more worthy of Nicholas whom she loved more than anything in the world. But now they wanted her to sacrifice the very thing that constituted the whole reward for her self-sacrifice and the whole meaning of her life. And for the first time, Sonya felt bitterness against those who had been her benefactors only to torture her the more painfully; she felt jealous of Natasha who had never experienced anything of this sort, had never needed to sacrifice herself but made others sacrifice themselves for her and yet was beloved by everybody. And for the first time, Sonya felt that out of her pure, quiet love for Nicholas a passionate feeling was beginning to grow up which was stronger than principle, virtue, or religion. Under the influence of this feeling Sonya, whose life of dependence had taught her involuntarily to be secretive, having answered Countess Rostov in vague terms, avoided talking with her and resolved to wait till she should see Nicholas, not in order to set him free but, on the contrary, at that meeting to bind him to her forever.

The bustle and terror of the Rostovs' last days in Moscow stifled the gloomy thoughts that oppressed Sonya. She was glad to find an escape from them through practical activity. But when Sonya heard of Andrei's presence in their house, despite her sincere pity for him and for Natasha, she was seized by a joyful and superstitious feeling that God did not intend her to be separated from Nicholas. Sonya knew that Natasha loved no one but Andrei and had never ceased to love him. She knew that being thrown together again under such terrible circumstances they would again fall in love with one another and that Nicholas would then not be able to marry Marya as they would be within the prohibited degrees of affinity. Despite all the terror of what had happened during those last days and during the first days of their journey, this feeling that Providence was intervening in her personal affairs cheered Sonya.

At the Tróitsa monastery, the Rostovs first broke their journey for a whole day.

Three large rooms were assigned to them in the monastery hostelry, one of which was occupied by Andrei. The wounded man was much better that day and Natasha was sitting with him. In the next room sat Count and Countess Rostov respectfully conversing with the prior, who was calling on them as old acquaintances and benefactors of the monastery. Sonya was there too, tormented by curiosity as to what Andrei and Natasha were talking about. She heard the sound of their voices through the door. That door opened and Natasha came out, looking excited. Not noticing the monk, who had risen to greet her and was drawing back the wide sleeve on his right arm, she went up to Sonya and took her hand.

"Natasha, what are you about? Come here!" said Countess Rostov.

Natasha went up to the monk for his blessing, and he advised her to pray for aid from God and His saint.

As soon as the monk withdrew, Natasha took Natasha by the hand and went with her into the unoccupied room.

“Sonya, will Andrei live?” Natasha asked. “Sonya, how happy I am, and how unhappy!... Sonya, my dove, everything is as it used to be. If only he lives! Andrei cannot... because... because... of...” Natasha burst into tears.

“Yes! I knew it! Thank God!” murmured Sonya. “He will live.”

Sonya was not less agitated than Natasha by the latter’s fear and grief and by her own personal feelings which she shared with no one. Sobbing, Sonya kissed and comforted Natasha. “If only Andrei lives!” she thought. Having wept, talked, and wiped away their tears, the two friends went together to Andrei’s door. Natasha opened it cautiously and glanced into the room, Sonya standing beside her at the half-open door.

Andrei was lying raised high on three pillows. His pale face was calm, his eyes closed, and they could see his regular breathing.

“Oh, Natasha!” Sonya suddenly almost screamed, catching her companion’s arm and stepping back from the door.

“What? What is it?” asked Natasha.

“It’s that, that...” said Sonya, with a white face and trembling lips.

Natasha softly closed the door and went with Sonya to the window, not yet understanding what the latter was telling her.

“You remember,” said Sonya with a solemn and frightened expression. “You remember when I looked in the mirror for you... at Otrádnœ at Christmas? Do you remember what I saw?”

“Yes, yes!” cried Natasha opening her eyes wide, and vaguely recalling that Sonya had told her something about Andrei whom she had seen lying down.

“You remember?” Sonya went on. “I saw it then and told everybody, you and the maid. I saw Andrei lying on a bed,” said Sonya, making a gesture with her hand and a lifted finger at each detail, “and that he had his eyes closed and was covered just with a pink quilt, and that his hands were folded,” she concluded, convincing herself that the details she had just seen were exactly what she had seen in the mirror.

Sonya had in fact seen nothing then but had mentioned the first thing that came into her head, but what she had invented then seemed to her now as real as any other recollection. She not only remembered what she had then said—that he turned to look at her and smiled and was covered with something red—but was firmly convinced that she had then seen and said that he was covered with a pink quilt and that his eyes were closed.

“Yes, yes, it really was pink!” cried Natasha, who now thought she too remembered the word pink being used and saw in this the most extraordinary and mysterious part of the prediction.

“But what does it mean?” Natasha added meditatively.

“Oh, I don’t know, it is all so strange,” replied Sonya, clutching at her head.

A few minutes later, Andrei rang and Natasha went to him, but Sonya, feeling unusually excited and touched, remained at the window thinking about the strangeness of what had occurred.

They had an opportunity that day to send letters to the army, and Countess Rostov was writing to her son, Nicholas.

“Sonya!” said Countess Rostov, raising her eyes from her letter as her niece passed, “Sonya, won’t you write to Nicholas?” Countess Rostov spoke in a soft, tremulous voice, and in the weary eyes that looked over her spectacles, Sonya read all that Countess Rostov meant to convey with these words. Those eyes expressed entreaty, shame at having to ask, fear of a refusal, and readiness for relentless hatred in case of such refusal.

Sonya went up to Countess Rostov and, kneeling down, kissed her hand.

“Yes, Mamma, I will write,” said Sonya.

Sonya was softened, excited, and touched by all that had occurred that day, especially by the mysterious fulfillment she had just seen in her vision. Now that Sonya knew that the renewal of Natasha’s relations with Andrei

would prevent Nicholas from marrying Marya, she was joyfully conscious of a return of that self-sacrificing spirit in which she was accustomed to live and loved to live. So with a joyful consciousness of performing a magnanimous deed—interrupted several times by the tears that dimmed her velvety black eyes—Sonya wrote that touching letter the arrival of which had so amazed Nicholas.

The officer and soldiers who had arrested Pierre treated him with hostility but yet with respect, in the guardhouse to which he was taken. In their attitude toward Pierre could still be felt both uncertainty as to who he might be—perhaps a very important person—and hostility as a result of their recent personal conflict with him.

But when the guard was relieved the next morning, Pierre felt that for the new guard—both officers and men—he was not as interesting as he had been to his captors; and in fact, this new guard of the second day did not recognize in this big, stout man in a peasant coat the vigorous person who had fought so desperately with the marauder and the convoy and had uttered those solemn words about saving a child; they saw in Pierre only No. 17 of the captured Russians, arrested and detained for some reason by order of the Higher Command. If they noticed anything remarkable about Pierre, it was only his unabashed, meditative concentration and thoughtfulness, and the way he spoke French, which struck them as surprisingly good. In spite of this, Pierre was placed that day with the other arrested suspects, as the separate room he had occupied was required by an officer.

All the Russians confined with Pierre were men of the lowest class and, recognizing him as a gentleman, they all avoided him, more especially as he spoke French. Pierre felt sad at hearing them making fun of him.

That evening Pierre learned that all these prisoners (he, probably, among them) were to be tried for arson. On the third day, he was taken with the others to a house where a French général with a white mustache sat with

two colonels and other Frenchmen with scarves on their arms. With the precision and definiteness customary in addressing prisoners, which is supposed to preclude human frailty, Pierre like the others was questioned as to who he was, where he had been, with what object, and so on.

These questions, like questions put at trials generally, left the essence of the matter aside, shut out the possibility of that essence's being revealed and were designed only to form a channel through which the judges wished the answers of the accused to flow so as to lead to the desired result, namely a conviction. As soon as Pierre began to say anything that did not fit in with that aim, the channel was removed and the water could flow to waste. Pierre felt, moreover, what the accused always feel at their trial, perplexity as to why these questions were put to him. Pierre had a feeling that it was only out of condescension or a kind of civility that this device of placing a channel was employed. He knew he was in these men's power, that only by force had they brought him there, that force alone gave them the right to demand answers to their questions, and that the sole object of that assembly was to inculcate him. And so, as they had the power and wish to inculcate him, this expedient of an inquiry and trial seemed unnecessary. It was evident that any answer would lead to a conviction. When asked what he was doing when he was arrested, Pierre replied in a rather tragic manner that he was restoring to her parents a child he had saved from the flames. Why had he fought the marauder? Pierre answered that he "was protecting a woman," and that "to protect a woman who was being insulted was the duty of every man; that..." They interrupted him, for this was not to the point. Why was he in the yard of a burning house where witnesses had seen him? Pierre replied that he had gone out to see what was happening in Moscow. Again they interrupted him: they had not asked where he was going, but why he was found near the fire? Who was he? they asked, repeating their first question, which he had declined to answer. Again he replied that he could not answer it.

“Put that down, that’s bad... very bad,” sternly remarked the French général with the white mustache and red flushed face.

On the fourth day, fires broke out on the Zúbovski rampart.

Pierre and thirteen others were moved to the coach house of a merchant’s house near the Crimean bridge. On his way through the streets, Pierre felt stifled by the smoke which seemed to hang over the whole city. Fires were visible on all sides. He did not then realize the significance of the burning of Moscow and looked at the fires with horror.

Pierre passed four days in the coach house near the Crimean bridge and during that time learned, from the talk of the French soldiers, that all those confined there were awaiting a decision that might come any day from the general. What general this was, Pierre could not learn from the soldiers. Evidently for them “the general” represented a very high and rather mysterious power.

These first days, before the eighth of September when the prisoners were had up for a second examination, were the hardest of all for Pierre.

On the eighth of September, an officer—a very important one judging by the respect the guards showed him—entered the coach house where the prisoners were. This officer, probably someone on the staff, was holding a paper in his hand, and called over all the Russians there, naming Pierre as “the man who does not give his name.” Glancing indolently and indifferently at all the prisoners, the officer ordered the guard in charge to have the prisoners decently dressed and tidied up before taking them to the general. An hour later, a squad of soldiers arrived and Pierre with thirteen others was led to the Virgin’s Field. It was a fine day, sunny after rain, and the air was unusually pure. The smoke did not hang low as on the day when Pierre had been taken from the guardhouse on the Zúbovski rampart but rose through the pure air in columns. No flames were seen, but columns of smoke rose on all sides, and all Moscow as far as Pierre could see was one

vast charred ruin. On all sides, there were waste spaces with only stoves and chimney stacks still standing, and here and there the blackened walls of some brick houses. Pierre gazed at the ruins and did not recognize districts he had known well. Here and there he could see churches that had not been burned. The Krémlin, which was not destroyed, gleamed white in the distance with its towers and the belfry of Iván the Great. The domes of the New Convent of the Virgin glittered brightly and its bells were ringing particularly clearly. These bells reminded Pierre that it was Sunday and the feast of the Nativity of the Virgin. But there seemed to be no one to celebrate this holiday: everywhere were blackened ruins, and the few Russians to be seen were tattered and frightened people who tried to hide when they saw the French.

It was plain that the Russian nest was ruined and destroyed, but in place of the Russian order of life that had been destroyed, Pierre unconsciously felt that a quite different, firm, French order had been established over this ruined nest. Pierre felt this in the looks of the soldiers who, marching in regular ranks briskly and gaily, were escorting him and the other criminals; he felt it in the looks of an important French official in a carriage and pair driven by a soldier, whom they met on the way. Pierre felt it in the merry sounds of regimental music he heard from the left side of the field and felt and realized it especially from the list of prisoners the French officer had read out when he came that morning. Pierre had been taken by one set of soldiers and led first to one and then to another place with dozens of other men, and it seemed that they might have forgotten him, or confused him with the others. But no: the answers he had given when questioned had come back to him in his designation as “the man who does not give his name,” and under that appellation, which to Pierre seemed terrible, they were now leading him somewhere with unhesitating assurance on their faces that he and all the other prisoners were exactly the ones they wanted and that they were being taken to the proper place. Pierre felt himself to be

an insignificant chip fallen among the wheels of a machine whose action he did not understand but which was working well.

Pierre and the other prisoners were taken to the right side of the Virgin's Field, to a large white house with an immense garden not far from the convent. This was Baron Shcherbátov's house, where Pierre had often been in other days, and which, as he learned from the talk of the soldiers, was now occupied by the general (War Minister Davout).

The prisoners were taken to the entrance and led into the house one by one. Pierre was the sixth to enter. He was conducted through a glass gallery, an anteroom, and a hall, which were familiar to him, into a long low study at the door of which stood an adjutant.

War Minister Davout, spectacles on nose, sat bent over a table at the further end of the room. Pierre went close up to him, but War Minister Davout, evidently consulting a paper that lay before him, did not look up. Without raising his eyes, he said in a low voice:

“Who are you?”

Pierre was silent because he was incapable of uttering a word. To him, War Minister Davout was not merely a French général, but a man notorious for his cruelty. Looking at his cold face, as he sat like a stern schoolmaster who was prepared to wait a while for an answer, Pierre felt that every instant of delay might cost him his life; but he did not know what to say. He did not venture to repeat what he had said at his first examination, yet to disclose his rank and position was dangerous and embarrassing. So Pierre was silent. But before he had decided what to do, War Minister Davout raised his head, pushed his spectacles back on his forehead, screwed up his eyes, and looked intently at him.

“I know that man,” War Minister Davout said in a cold, measured tone, evidently calculated to frighten Pierre.

The chill that had been running down Pierre's back now seized his head as in a vise.

“You cannot know me, general, I have never seen you...”

“He is a Russian spy,” War Minister Davout interrupted, addressing another general who was present, but whom Pierre had not noticed.

War Minister Davout turned away. With an unexpected reverberation in his voice Pierre rapidly began:

“No, monseigneur,” Pierre said, suddenly remembering that War Minister Davout was a duke. “No, monseigneur, you cannot have known me. I am a militia officer and have not quitted Moscow.”

“Your name?” asked War Minister Davout.

“Pierre.”

“What proof have I that you are not lying?”

“Monseigneur!” exclaimed Pierre, not in an offended but in a pleading voice.

War Minister Davout looked up and gazed intently at him. For some seconds they looked at one another, and that look saved Pierre. Apart from conditions of war and law, that look established human relations between the two men. At that moment an immense number of things passed dimly through both their minds, and they realized that they were both children of humanity and were brothers.

At the first glance, when War Minister Davout had only raised his head from the papers where human affairs and lives were indicated by numbers, Pierre was merely a circumstance, and War Minister Davout could have shot him without burdening his conscience with an evil deed, but now he saw in him a human being. He reflected for a moment.

“How can you show me that you are telling the truth?” said War Minister Davout coldly.

Pierre remembered Captain Ramballe, the French officer who he had saved from the drunken Mason Bazdév, and named Captain Ramballe and his regiment and the street where the house was.

“You are not what you say,” returned War Minister Davout.

In a trembling, faltering voice Pierre began adducing proofs of the truth of his statements.

But at that moment an adjutant entered and reported something to War Minister Davout.

War Minister Davout brightened up at the news the adjutant brought, and began buttoning up his uniform. It seemed that he had quite forgotten Pierre.

When the adjutant reminded him of the prisoner, he jerked his head in Pierre's direction with a frown and ordered him to be led away. But where they were to take him Pierre did not know: back to the coach house or to the place of execution his companions had pointed out to him as they crossed the Virgin's Field.

Pierre turned his head and saw that the adjutant was putting another question to War Minister Davout.

"Yes, of course!" replied War Minister Davout, but what this "yes" meant, Pierre did not know.

Pierre could not afterward remember how he went, whether it was far, or in which direction. His faculties were quite numbed, he was stupefied, and noticing nothing around him went on moving his legs as the others did till they all stopped and he stopped too. The only thought in his mind at that time was: who was it that had really sentenced him to death? Not the men on the commission that had first examined him—not one of them wished to or, evidently, could have done it. It was not War Minister Davout, who had looked at him in so human a way. In another moment War Minister Davout would have realized that he was doing wrong, but just then the adjutant had come in and interrupted him. The adjutant, also, had evidently had no evil intent though he might have refrained from coming in. Then who was executing him, killing him, depriving him of life—him, Pierre, with all his memories, aspirations, hopes, and thoughts? Who was doing this? And Pierre felt that it was no one.

It was a system—a concurrence of circumstances.

A system of some sort was killing him—Pierre—depriving him of life, of everything, annihilating him.

From Baron Shcherbátov's house, the prisoners were led straight down the Virgin's Field, to the left of the nunnery, as far as a kitchen garden in which a post had been set up. Beyond that post, a fresh pit had been dug in the ground, and near the post and the pit, a large crowd stood in a semicircle. The crowd consisted of a few Russians and many of Napoleon's soldiers who were not on duty—Germans, Italians, and Frenchmen, in a variety of uniforms. To the right and left of the post stood rows of French troops in blue uniforms with red epaulets and high boots and shakos.

The prisoners were placed in a certain order, according to the list (Pierre was sixth), and were led to the post. Several drums suddenly began to beat on both sides of them, and at that sound, Pierre felt as if part of his soul had been torn away. He lost the power of thinking or understanding. Pierre could only hear and see. And he had only one wish—that the frightful thing that had to happen should happen quickly. Pierre looked round at his fellow prisoners and scrutinized them.

The first two prisoners were convicts with shaven heads. One was tall and thin, the other dark, shaggy, and sinewy, with a flat nose. The third was a domestic serf, about forty-five years old, with grizzled hair and a plump, well-nourished body. The fourth was a peasant, a very handsome man with a broad, light-brown beard and black eyes. The fifth was a factory hand, a thin, sallow-faced lad of eighteen in a loose coat.

Pierre heard the French consulting whether to shoot the prisoners separately or two at a time. "In pairs," replied the officer in command in a calm voice. There was a stir in the ranks of the soldiers and it was evident that they were all hurrying—not as men hurry to do something they understand, but as people hurry to finish a necessary but unpleasant and incomprehensible task.

A French official wearing a scarf came up to the right of the row of prisoners and read out the sentence in Russian and in French.

Then two pairs of Frenchmen approached the prisoners and at the officer's command, they took the two prisoners who stood first in the row. The prisoners stopped when they reached the post and, while sacks were being brought, looked dumbly around as a wounded beast looks at an approaching huntsman. One prisoner crossed himself continually, the other scratched his back and made a movement of the lips resembling a smile. With hurried hands the soldiers blindfolded them, drawing the sacks over their heads, and bound them to the post.

Twelve sharpshooters with muskets stepped out of the ranks with a firm regular tread and halted eight paces from the post. Pierre turned away to avoid seeing what was going to happen. Suddenly a crackling, rolling noise was heard which seemed to him louder than the most terrific thunder, and Pierre looked around. There was some smoke, and the French soldiers were doing something near the pit, with pale faces and trembling hands. Two more prisoners were led up. In the same way and with similar looks, these two prisoners glanced vainly at the onlookers with only a silent appeal for protection in their eyes, evidently unable to understand or believe what was going to happen to them. The prisoners could not believe it because they alone knew what their life meant to them, and so they neither understood nor believed that it could be taken from them.

Again Pierre did not wish to look and again turned away; but again the sound of a frightful explosion struck his ear, and at the same moment he saw smoke, blood, and the pale, scared faces of the French soldiers who were again doing something by the post, their trembling hands impeding one another. Pierre, breathing heavily, looked around as if asking what it meant. The same question was expressed in all the looks that met his.

On the faces of all the Russians and of the French soldiers and officers without exception, Pierre read the same dismay, horror, and conflict that

were in his own heart. “But who, after all, is doing this? They are all suffering as I am. Who then is it? Who?” flashed for an instant through his mind.

“Sharpshooters of the 86th, forward!” shouted someone. The fifth prisoner, the one next to Pierre, was led away—alone. Pierre did not understand that he was saved, that he and the rest had been brought there only to witness the execution. With ever-growing horror and no sense of joy or relief, Pierre gazed at what was taking place. The fifth prisoner was the factory lad in the loose cloak. The moment they laid hands on him he sprang aside in terror and clutched at Pierre. (Pierre shuddered and shook himself free.) The factory lad was unable to walk. They dragged him along, holding him up under the arms, and he screamed. When they got him to the post the factory lad grew quiet as if he suddenly understood something. Whether he understood that screaming was useless or whether he thought it incredible that men should kill him, at any rate, he took his stand at the post, waiting to be blindfolded like the others, and like a wounded animal looked around him with glittering eyes.

Pierre was no longer able to turn away and close his eyes. His curiosity and agitation, like that of the whole crowd, reached the highest pitch at this fifth murder. Like the others, this fifth prisoner seemed calm; the factory lad wrapped his loose cloak closer and rubbed one bare foot with the other.

When the soldiers began to blindfold the factory lad, he himself adjusted the knot which hurt the back of his head; then when they propped him against the bloodstained post, he leaned back and, not being comfortable in that position, straightened himself, adjusted his feet, and leaned back again more comfortably. Pierre did not take his eyes from the factory lad and did not miss his slightest movement.

Probably a word of command was given and was followed by the reports of eight muskets; but try as he would, Pierre could not afterward remember having heard the slightest sound of the shots. Pierre only saw

how the factory lad suddenly sank down on the cords that held him, how blood showed itself in two places, how the ropes slackened under the weight of the hanging body, and how the factory lad sat down, his head hanging unnaturally and one leg bent under him. Pierre ran up to the post. No one hindered him. Pale, frightened people were doing something around the workman. The lower jaw of an old Frenchman with a thick mustache trembled as he untied the ropes. The body collapsed. The soldiers dragged the body awkwardly from the post and began pushing it into the pit.

They all plainly and certainly knew that they were criminals who must hide the traces of their guilt as quickly as possible.

Pierre glanced into the pit and saw that the factory lad was lying with his knees close up to his head and one shoulder higher than the other. That shoulder rose and fell rhythmically and convulsively, but spadefuls of earth were already being thrown over the whole body. One of the soldiers, evidently suffering, shouted gruffly and angrily at Pierre to go back. But Pierre did not understand him and remained near the post, and no one drove him away.

When the pit had been filled up a command was given. Pierre was taken back to his place, and the rows of troops on both sides of the post made a half turn and went past it at a measured pace. The twenty-four soldiers with discharged muskets, standing in the center of the circle, ran back to their places as the companies passed by.

Pierre gazed now with dazed eyes at these soldiers who ran in couples out of the circle. All but one rejoined their companies. This one, a young soldier, his face deadly pale, his shako pushed back, and his musket resting on the ground, still stood near the pit at the spot from which he had fired. The young soldier swayed like a drunken man, taking some steps forward and back to save himself from falling. An old, noncommissioned officer ran out of the ranks and taking the young soldier by the elbow dragged him to

his company. The crowd of Russians and Frenchmen began to disperse. They all went away silently and with drooping heads.

“That will teach them to start fires,” said one of the French soldiers.

Pierre glanced round at the speaker and saw that it was a soldier who was trying to find some relief after what had been done but was not able to do so. Without finishing what he had begun to say the soldier made a hopeless movement with his arm and went away.

After the execution, Pierre was separated from the rest of the prisoners and placed alone in a small, ruined, and befouled church.

Toward evening a noncommissioned officer entered with two soldiers and told him that Pierre had been pardoned and would now go to the barracks for the prisoners of war. Without understanding what was said to him, Pierre got up and went with the soldiers. They took him to the upper end of the field, where there were some sheds built of charred planks, beams, and battens, and led him into one of them. In the darkness some twenty different men surrounded Pierre. Pierre looked at them without understanding who they were, why they were there, or what they wanted of him. He heard what they said, but did not understand the meaning of the words and made no kind of deduction from or application of them. Pierre replied to questions they put to him but did not consider who was listening to his replies, nor how they would understand them. He looked at their faces and figures, but they all seemed to him equally meaningless.

From the moment Pierre had witnessed those terrible murders committed by men who did not wish to commit them, it was as if the mainspring of his life, on which everything depended and which made everything appear alive, had suddenly been wrenched out and everything had collapsed into a heap of meaningless rubbish. Though Pierre did not acknowledge it to himself, his faith in the right ordering of the universe, in humanity, in his own soul, and in God, had been destroyed. Pierre had experienced this before, but never so strongly as now. When similar doubts

had assailed him before, they had been the result of his own wrongdoing, and at the bottom of his heart, he had felt that relief from his despair and from those doubts was to be found within himself. But now Pierre felt that the universe had crumbled before his eyes and only meaningless ruins remained, and this not by any fault of his own. He felt that it was not in his power to regain faith in the meaning of life.

Around Pierre in the darkness, men were standing and evidently, something about him interested them greatly. They were telling him something and asking him something. Then they led him away somewhere, and at last, he found himself in a corner of the shed among men who were laughing and talking on all sides.

“Well, then, mates... that very Baron *who*...” some voice at the other end of the shed was saying, with a strong emphasis on the word *who*.

Sitting silent and motionless on a heap of straw against the wall, Pierre sometimes opened and sometimes closed his eyes. But as soon as he closed them he saw before him the dreadful face of the factory lad—especially dreadful because of its simplicity—and the faces of the murderers, even more dreadful because of their disquiet. And he opened his eyes again and stared vacantly into the darkness around him.

Beside Pierre in a stooping position sat a small man of whose presence he was first made aware by a strong smell of perspiration which came from him every time he moved. This little man was doing something to his legs in the darkness, and though Pierre could not see his face he felt that the man continually glanced at him. On growing used to the darkness Pierre saw that the man was taking off his leg bands, and the way he did it aroused Pierre’s interest.

Having unwound the string that tied the band on one leg, the little man carefully coiled it up and immediately set to work on the other leg, glancing up at Pierre. While one hand hung up the first string the other was already unwinding the band on the second leg. In this way, having carefully

removed the leg bands by deft circular motions of his arm following one another uninterruptedly, the man hung the leg bands up on some pegs fixed above his head. Then the little man took out a knife, cut something, closed the knife, placed it under the head of his bed, and, seating himself comfortably, clasped his arms around his lifted knees and fixed his eyes on Pierre. Pierre was conscious of something pleasant, comforting, and well-rounded in these deft movements, in the man's well-ordered arrangements in his corner, and even in his very smell, and he looked at the man without taking his eyes from him.

"You've seen a lot of trouble, sir, eh?" the little man suddenly said.

And there was so much kindness and simplicity in his singsong voice that Pierre tried to reply, but his jaw trembled and he felt tears rising to his eyes. The little man, giving Pierre no time to betray his confusion, instantly continued in the same pleasant tones:

"Eh, lad, don't fret!" said the little man, in the tender singsong caressing voice old Russian peasant women employ. "Don't fret, friend—'suffer an hour, live for an age!' that's how it is, my dear fellow. And here we live, thank heaven, without offense. Among these folk, too, there are good men as well as bad," said he, and still speaking, he turned on his knees with a supple movement, got up, coughed, and went off to another part of the shed.

"Eh, you rascal!" Pierre heard the same kind voice saying at the other end of the shed. "So you've come, you rascal? She remembers... Now, now, that'll do!"

And the little man, pushing away a little dog that was jumping up at him, returned to his place and sat down. In his hands, he had something wrapped in a rag.

"Here, eat a bit, sir," said the little man, resuming his former respectful tone as he unwrapped and offered Pierre some baked potatoes. "We had soup for dinner and the potatoes are grand!"

Pierre had not eaten all day and the smell of the potatoes seemed extremely pleasant to him. Pierre thanked the little man and began to eat.

“Well, are they all right?” said the little man with a smile. “You should do like this.”

The little man took a potato, drew out his clasp knife, cut the potato into two equal halves on the palm of his hand, sprinkled some salt on it from the rag, and handed it to Pierre.

“The potatoes are grand!” the little man said once more. “Eat some like that!”

Pierre thought he had never eaten anything that tasted better.

“Oh, I’m all right,” said Pierre, “but why did they shoot those poor prisoners? The last one was hardly twenty.”

“Tss, tt...!” said the little man. “Ah, what a sin... what a sin!” he added quickly, and as if his words were always waiting ready in his mouth and flew out involuntarily he went on: “How was it, sir, that you stayed in Moscow?”

“I didn’t think the French would come so soon. I stayed accidentally,” replied Pierre.

“And how did the French soldiers arrest you, dear lad? At your house?”

“No, I went to look at the fire, and they arrested me there, and tried me as an arsonist.”

“Where there’s law there’s injustice,” put in the little man.

“And have you been here long?” Pierre asked as he munched the last of the potato.

“I? It was last Sunday they took me, out of a hospital in Moscow.”

“Why, are you a Russian soldier then?”

“Yes, we are soldiers of the Ápsheron regiment. I was dying of fever. We weren’t told anything. There were some twenty of us lying there. We had no idea, never guessed at all.”

“And do you feel sad here?” Pierre inquired.

“How can one help it, lad? My name is Platón, and the surname is Karatáev,” he added, evidently wishing to make it easier for Pierre to address him. “They call me ‘little falcon’ in the regiment. How is one to help feeling sad? Moscow—she’s the mother of cities. How can one see all this and not feel sad? But ‘the maggot gnaws the cabbage, yet dies first’; that’s what the old folks used to tell us,” Platón added rapidly.

“What? What did you say?” asked Pierre.

“Who? I?” said Platón. “I say things happen not as we plan but as God judges,” he replied, thinking that he was repeating what he had said before, and immediately continued:

“Well, and you, have you a family estate, sir? And a house? So you have abundance, then? And a housewife? And your old parents, are they still living?” he asked.

And though it was too dark for Pierre to see, he felt that a suppressed smile of kindness puckered Platón’s lips as he put these questions. Platón seemed grieved that Pierre had no parents, especially since he had no mother.

“A wife for counsel, a mother-in-law for welcome, but there’s none as dear as one’s own mother!” said Platón. “Well, and have you little ones?” he went on asking.

Again Pierre’s negative answer seemed to distress him, and Platón hastened to add:

“Never mind! You’re young folks yet, and please God may still have some. The great thing is to live in harmony...”

“But it’s all the same now,” Pierre could not help saying.

“Ah, my dear fellow!” rejoined Platón, “never decline a prison or a beggar’s sack!”

Platón seated himself more comfortably and coughed, evidently preparing to tell a long story.

“Well, my dear fellow, I was still living at home,” Platón began. “We had a well-to-do homestead, plenty of land, we peasants lived well and our house was one to thank God for. When Father and I went out mowing there were seven of us. We lived well. We were real peasants. It so happened...”

And Platón told a long story of how he had gone into someone’s grove of trees to take wood, how he had been caught by the keeper, had been tried, flogged, and sent to serve as a soldier.

“Well, lad,” and a smile changed the tone of Platón’s voice, “we thought it was a misfortune but it turned out a blessing! If it had not been for my sin, my brother would have had to go as a soldier. But he, my younger brother, had five little ones, while I, you see, only left a wife behind. We had a little girl, but God took her before I went as a soldier. I come home on leave and I’ll tell you how it was, I look and see that they are living better than before. The yard was full of cattle, the women at home, two brothers away earning wages, and only Michael the youngest, at home. Father, he says, ‘All my children are the same to me: it hurts the same whichever finger gets bitten. But if Platón hadn’t been shaved for a soldier, Michael would have had to go.’ called us all to him and, will you believe it, placed us in front of the icons. ‘Michael,’ he says, ‘come here and bow down to Platón’s feet; and you, young woman, you bow down too; and you, grandchildren, also bow down before him! Do you understand?’ he says. That’s how it is, dear fellow. Fate looks for a head. But we are always judging, ‘that’s not well—that’s not right!’ Our luck is like water in a dragnet: you pull at it and it bulges, but when you’ve drawn it out it’s empty! That’s how it is.”

And Platón shifted his seat on the straw.

After a short silence, he rose.

“Well, I think you must be sleepy,” said Platón, and began rapidly crossing himself and repeating:

“Lord Jesus Christ, holy Saint Nicholas, Frola, and Lavra! Lord Jesus Christ, holy Saint Nicholas, Frola, and Lavra! Lord Jesus Christ, have mercy on us and save us!” he concluded, then bowed to the ground, got up, sighed, and sat down again on his heap of straw. “That’s the way. Lay me down like a stone, Oh, God, and raise me up like a loaf,” he muttered as he lay down, pulling his coat over him.

“What prayer was that you were saying?” asked Pierre.

“Eh?” murmured Platón, who had almost fallen asleep. “What was I saying? I was praying. Don’t you pray?”

“Yes, I do,” said Pierre. “But what was that you said: Frola and Lavra?”

“Well, of course,” replied Platón quickly, “the horses’ saints. One must pity the animals too. Eh, the rascal! Now you’ve curled up and got warm, you daughter of a bitch!” said Platón, touching the dog that lay at his feet, and again turning over he fell asleep immediately.

Sounds of crying and screaming came from somewhere in the distance outside, and flames were visible through the cracks of the shed, but inside it was quiet and dark. For a long time, Pierre did not sleep, but lay with eyes open in the darkness, listening to the regular snoring of Platón who lay beside him, and he felt that the world that had been shattered was once more stirring in his soul with a new beauty and on new and unshakable foundations.

Twenty-three soldiers, three officers, and two officials were confined in the shed in which Pierre had been placed and where he remained for four weeks.

When Pierre remembered them afterward they all seemed misty figures to him except Platón, who always remained in his mind a most vivid and precious memory and the personification of everything Russian, kindly, and round. When Pierre saw his neighbor next morning at dawn the first impression of him, as of something round, was fully confirmed: Platón’s whole figure—in a French overcoat girdled with a cord, a soldier’s cap, and

bast shoes—was round. His head was quite round, his back, chest, shoulders, and even his arms, which he held as if ever ready to embrace something, were rounded, and his pleasant smile and his large, gentle brown eyes were also round.

Platón must have been fifty, judging by his stories of campaigns he had been in, told as by an old soldier. He did not know his age and was quite unable to determine it. But Platón's brilliantly white, strong teeth which showed in two unbroken semicircles when he laughed—as he often did—were all sound and good, there was not a gray hair in his beard or on his head, and his whole body gave an impression of suppleness and especially of firmness and endurance.

Platón's face, despite its fine, rounded wrinkles, had an expression of innocence and youth, his voice was pleasant and musical. But the chief peculiarity of his speech was its directness and appositeness. It was evident that he never considered what he had said or was going to say, and consequently, the rapidity and justice of his intonation had an irresistible persuasiveness.

Platón's physical strength and agility during the first days of his imprisonment were such that he seemed not to know what fatigue and sickness meant. Every night before lying down, he said: "Lord, lay me down as a stone and raise me up as a loaf!" and every morning on getting up, he said: "I lay down and curled up, I get up and shake myself." And indeed Platón only had to lie down, to fall asleep like a stone, and he only had to shake himself, to be ready without a moment's delay for some work, just as children are ready to play directly they awake. He could do everything, not very well but not badly. He baked, cooked, sewed, planed, and mended boots. He was always busy, and only at night allowed himself conversation—of which he was fond—and songs. Platón did not sing like a trained singer who knows he is listened to, but like the birds, evidently giving vent to the sounds in the same way that one stretches oneself or

walks about to get rid of stiffness, and the sounds were always high-pitched, mournful, delicate, and almost feminine, and his face at such times was very serious.

Having been taken prisoner and allowed his beard to grow, Platón seemed to have thrown off all that had been forced upon him—everything military and alien to himself—and had returned to his former peasant habits.

“A soldier on leave—a shirt outside breeches,” Platón would say.

Platón did not like talking about his life as a soldier, though he did not complain, and often mentioned that he had not been flogged once during the whole of his army service. When he related anything it was generally some old and evidently precious memory of his “Christian” life, as he called his peasant existence. The proverbs, of which his talk was full, were for the most part, not the coarse and indecent saws soldiers employ, but those folk sayings which taken without a context seem so insignificant, but when used appositely suddenly acquire a significance of profound wisdom.

Platón would often say the exact opposite of what he had said on a previous occasion, yet both would be right. He liked to talk and he talked well, adorning his speech with terms of endearment and with folk sayings which Pierre thought Platón invented himself, but the chief charm of his talk lay in the fact that the commonest events—sometimes just such as Pierre had witnessed without taking notice of them—assumed in Platón’s a character of solemn fitness. He liked to hear the folk tales one of the soldiers used to tell of an evening (they were always the same), but most of all he liked to hear stories of real life. He would smile joyfully when listening to such stories, now and then putting in a word or asking a question to make the moral beauty of what he was told clear to himself. Platón had no attachments, friendships, or love, as Pierre understood them, but loved and lived affectionately with everything life brought him in contact with, particularly with man—not any particular man, but those with

whom he happened to be. He loved his dog, his comrades, the French, and Pierre who was his neighbor, but Pierre felt that in spite of Platón's affectionate tenderness for him (by which he unconsciously gave Pierre's spiritual life its due) he would not have grieved for a moment at parting from him. And Pierre began to feel the same way toward Platón.

To all the other prisoners Platón seemed a most ordinary soldier. They called him "little falcon" or "Platósha," chaffed him good-naturedly, and sent him on errands. But to Pierre, he always remained what he had seemed that first night: an unfathomable, rounded, eternal personification of the spirit of simplicity and truth.

Platón knew nothing by heart except his prayers. When he began to speak he seemed not to know how he would conclude.

Sometimes Pierre, struck by the meaning of his words, would ask him to repeat them, but Platón could never recall what he had said a moment before, just as he never could repeat to Pierre the words of his favorite song: *native and birch tree and my heart is sick* occurred in it, but when spoken and not sung, no meaning could be got out of it. Platón did not, and could not, understand the meaning of words apart from their context. Every word and action of his was the manifestation of an activity unknown to him, which was his life. But his life, as he regarded it, had no meaning as a separate thing. It had meaning only as part of a whole of which he was always conscious. His words and actions flowed from him as evenly, inevitably, and spontaneously as fragrance exhales from a flower. He could not understand the value or significance of any word or deed taken separately.

When Marya heard from Nicholas that her brother was with the Rostovs at Yaroslávl she at once prepared to go there, in spite of her aunt's efforts to dissuade her—and not merely to go herself but to take her nephew with her. Whether it was difficult or easy, possible or impossible, Marya did not ask and did not want to know: it was her duty, not only to herself, to be near her

brother who was perhaps dying but to do everything possible to take his son to him, and so she prepared to set off. That she had not heard from Andrei himself, Marya attributed to his being too weak to write or to his considering the long journey too hard and too dangerous for her and his son.

In a few days, Marya was ready to start. Her equipages were the huge family coach in which she had traveled to Vorónezh, a semi-open carriage, and a baggage cart. With Marya traveled Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, Nikolenka and his tutor Desalles, her old nurse, three maids, Butler Tikhon, and a young footman and courier her aunt had sent to accompany her.

The usual route through Moscow could not be thought of, and the roundabout way Marya was obliged to take through Lípetsk, Ryazán, Vladímir, and Shúya was very long and, as post-horses were not everywhere obtainable, very difficult, and near Ryazán where the French were said to have shown themselves was even dangerous.

During this difficult journey Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, the tutor Desalles, and Marya's servants were astonished at her energy and firmness of spirit. She went to bed later and rose earlier than any of them, and no difficulties daunted her. Thanks to her activity and energy, which infected her fellow travelers, they approached Yaroslávl by the end of the second week.

The last days of her stay in Vorónezh had been the happiest of Marya's life. Her love for Nicholas no longer tormented or agitated her. It filled her whole soul, had become an integral part of herself, and she no longer struggled against it. Latterly she had become convinced that she loved and was beloved, though she never said this definitely to herself in words. Marya had become convinced of it at her last interview with Nicholas when he had come to tell her that her brother was with the Rostovs. Not by a single word had Nicholas alluded to the fact that Andrei's relations with

Natasha might, if he recovered, be renewed, but Marya saw by his face that he knew and thought of this.

Yet in spite of that, Nicholas's relation to Mary—considerate, delicate, and loving—not only remained unchanged, but it sometimes seemed to her that Nicholas was even glad that the family connection between them allowed him to express his friendship more freely. She knew that she loved for the first and only time in her life and felt that she was beloved, and was happy in regard to it.

But this happiness on one side of Marya's spiritual nature did not prevent her from feeling grief for Andrei with full force; on the contrary, that spiritual tranquility on the one side made it more possible for her to give full play to her feeling for her brother. That feeling was so strong at the moment of leaving Vorónezh that those who saw her off, as they looked at her careworn, despairing face, felt sure Marya would fall ill on the journey. But the very difficulties and preoccupations of the journey, which she took so actively in hand, saved her for a while from her grief and gave her strength.

As always happens when traveling, Marya thought only of the journey itself, forgetting its object. But as she approached Yaroslávl the thought of what might await her there—not after many days, but that very evening—again presented itself to her and her agitation increased to its utmost limit.

The courier who had been sent on in advance to find out where the Rostovs were staying in Yaroslávl, and in what condition Andrei was when he met the big coach just entering the town gates was appalled by the terrible pallor of Marya's face that looked out at him from the window.

"I have found out everything, your excellency: the Rostovs are staying at the merchant Brónnikov's house, in the Square not far from here, right above the Vólga," said the courier.

Marya looked at him with frightened inquiry, not understanding why he did not reply to what she chiefly wanted to know: how was her brother

Andrei? Lady-in-waiting Bourienne put that question for her.

“How is Andrei?” she asked.

“His excellency is staying in the same house with them.”

“Then Andrei is alive,” thought Marya, and asked in a low voice: “How is he?”

“The servants say he is still the same.”

What “still the same” might mean Marya did not ask, but with an unnoticed glance at little seven-year-old Nikolenka, who was sitting in front of her looking with pleasure at the town, Marya bowed her head and did not raise it again till the heavy coach, rumbling, shaking and swaying, came to a stop. The carriage steps clattered as they were let down.

The carriage door was opened. On the left, there was water—a great river—and on the right a porch. There were people at the entrance: servants, and a rosy girl with a large plait of black hair, smiling as it seemed to Marya in an unpleasantly affected way. (This was Sonya.) Marya ran up the steps. “This way, this way!” said the girl, with the same artificial smile, and Marya found herself in the hall facing an elderly woman of Oriental type, who came rapidly to meet her with a look of emotion. This was Countess Rostov. She embraced Marya and kissed her.

“*My child!*” she muttered, “*I love you and have known you a long time.*”

Despite her excitement, Marya realized that this was Countess Rostov and that it was necessary to say something to her. Hardly knowing how she did it, Marya contrived to utter a few polite phrases in French in the same tone as those that had been addressed to her, and asked: “How is he?”

“The doctor says that Andrei is not in danger,” said Countess Rostov, but as she spoke she raised her eyes with a sigh, and her gesture conveyed a contradiction of her words.

“Where is he? Can I see him—can I?” asked Marya.

“One moment, Marya, one moment, my dear! Is this his son, Nikolenka?” said Countess Rostov, turning to Nikolenka who was coming in with the tutor Desalles. “There will be room for everybody, this is a big house. Oh, what a lovely boy!”

Countess Rostov took Marya into the drawing room, where Sonya was talking to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne. Countess Rostov caressed Nikolia, and Count Rostov came in and welcomed Marya. Count Rostov had changed very much since Marya had last seen him. Then he had been a brisk, cheerful, self-assured old man; now Count Rostov seemed a pitiful, bewildered person. While talking to Marya he continually looked around as if asking everyone whether he was doing the right thing. After the destruction of Moscow and of his property, thrown out of his accustomed groove, Count Rostov seemed to have lost the sense of his own significance and to feel that there was no longer a place for him in life.

In spite of Marya’s one desire to see Andrei as soon as possible, and her vexation that at the moment when all she wanted was to see him they should be trying to entertain her and pretending to admire her nephew, Marya noticed all that was going on around her and felt the necessity of submitting, for a time, to this new order of things which she had entered. She knew it to be necessary, and though it was hard for her she was not vexed with these people.

“This is my niece,” said Count Rostov, introducing Sonya—“You don’t know her, Marya?”

Marya turned to Sonya and, trying to stifle the hostile feeling that arose in her toward the girl, kissed her. But Marya felt oppressed by the fact that the mood of everyone around her was so far from what was in her own heart.

“Where is Andrei?” Marya asked again, addressing them all.

“He is downstairs. Natasha is with him,” answered Sonya, flushing. “We have sent to ask. I think you must be tired, Marya.”

Tears of vexation showed themselves in Marya's eyes. She turned away and was about to ask Countess Rostov again how to go to Andrei, when light, impetuous, and seemingly buoyant steps were heard at the door. Marya looked round and saw Natasha coming in, almost running—that Natasha whom she had liked so little at their meeting in Moscow long since.

But hardly had Marya looked at Natasha's face before she realized that here was a real comrade in her grief, and consequently a friend. Marya ran to meet Natasha, embraced her, and began to cry on her shoulder.

As soon as Natasha, sitting at the head of Andrei's bed, heard of Marya's arrival, she softly left his room and hastened to her with those swift steps that had sounded buoyant to Marya.

There was only one expression on Natasha's agitated face when she ran into the drawing room—that of love—boundless love for Andrei, for Marya, and for all that was near to the man she loved; and of pity, suffering for others, and passionate desire to give herself entirely to helping them. It was plain that at that moment there was in Natasha's heart no thought of herself or of her own relations with Andrei.

Marya, with her acute sensibility, understood all this at the first glance at Natasha's face and wept on her shoulder with sorrowful pleasure.

"Come, come to him, Marya," said Natasha, leading her into the other room.

Marya raised her head, dried her eyes, and turned to Natasha. She felt that from her she would be able to understand and learn everything.

"How..." Marya began her question but stopped short.

Marya felt that it was impossible to ask or to answer, in words. Natasha's face and eyes would have to tell her all more clearly and profoundly.

Natasha was gazing at Marya but seemed afraid and in doubt whether to say all she knew or not; she seemed to feel that before those luminous eyes

which penetrated into the very depths of her heart, it was impossible not to tell the whole truth which she saw. And suddenly, Natasha's lips twitched, ugly wrinkles gathered around her mouth, and covering her face with her hands she burst into sobs.

Marya understood.

But she still hoped, and asked, in words she herself did not trust:

"But how is Andrei's wound? What is his general condition?"

"You, you... will see," was all Natasha could say.

They sat a little while downstairs near his room till they had left off crying and were able to go to him with calm faces.

"How has Andrei's whole illness gone? Is it long since he grew worse? When did this happen?" Marya inquired.

Natasha told Marya that at first there had been danger from Andrei's feverish condition and the pain he suffered, but at Tróitsa that had passed and the doctor had only been afraid of gangrene. That danger had also passed. When they reached Yaroslávl the wound had begun to fester (Natasha knew all about such things as festering) and the doctor had said that the festering might take a normal course. Then a fever set in, but the doctor said the fever was not very serious.

"But two days ago *this* suddenly happened," said Natasha, struggling with her sobs. "I don't know why, but you will see what he is like."

"Is he weaker? Thinner?" asked Marya.

"No, it's not that, but worse. You will see. Oh, Marya, Andrei is too good, he cannot, cannot live, because..."

When Natasha opened Andrei's door with a familiar movement and let Marya pass into the room before her, Marya felt the sobs in her throat. Hard as she had tried to prepare herself, and now tried to remain tranquil, she knew that she would be unable to look at him without tears.

Marya understood what Natasha had meant by the words: "two days ago *this* suddenly happened." Marya understood those words to mean that

Andrei had suddenly softened and that this softening and gentleness were signs of approaching death. As she stepped to the door she already saw in her imagination Andrei's face as she remembered it in childhood, a gentle, mild, sympathetic face that he had rarely shown, and which therefore affected her very strongly. Marya was sure he would speak soft, tender words to her such as her father had uttered before his death, and that she would not be able to bear it and would burst into sobs in his presence. Yet sooner or later it had to be, and she went in. The sobs rose higher and higher in her throat as she more and more clearly distinguished his form and her shortsighted eyes tried to make out his features, and then she saw his face and met his gaze.

Andrei was lying in a squirrel-fur dressing gown on a divan, surrounded by pillows. He was thin and pale. In one thin, translucently white hand he held a handkerchief, while with the other he stroked the delicate mustache he had grown, moving his fingers slowly. His eyes gazed at them as they entered.

On seeing Andrei's face and meeting his eyes Marya's pace suddenly slackened, she felt her tears dry up and her sobs ceased. She suddenly felt guilty and grew timid on catching the expression on his face and eyes.

"But in what am I to blame?" Marya asked herself. And his cold, stern look replied: "Because you are alive and thinking of the living, while I..."

In the deep gaze that seemed to look not outwards but inwards there was an almost hostile expression as Andrei slowly regarded his sister and Natasha.

Andrei kissed Marya, holding her hand in his as was their wont.

"How are you, Marya? How did you manage to get here?" said he in a voice as calm and aloof as his look.

Had Andrei screamed in agony, that scream would not have struck such horror into Marya's heart as the tone of his voice.

“And have you brought Nikolenka?” Andrei asked in the same slow, quiet manner and with an obvious effort to remember.

“How are you now?” said Marya, herself surprised at what she was saying.

“That, my dear Marya, you must ask the doctor,” he replied, and again making an evident effort to be affectionate, he said with his lips only (his words clearly did not correspond to his thoughts):

“Thank you for coming, my dear.”

Marya pressed Andrei’s hand. The pressure made him wince just perceptibly. He was silent, and Marya did not know what to say. She now understood what had happened to him two days before. In Andrei’s words, his tone, and especially in that calm, almost antagonistic look could be felt an estrangement from everything belonging to this world, terrible in one who is alive. Evidently only with an effort did he understand anything living; but it was obvious that he failed to understand, not because he lacked the power to do so but because he understood something else—something the living did not and could not understand—and which wholly occupied his mind.

“There, you see how strangely fate has brought us together,” said Andrei, breaking the silence and pointing to Natasha. “She looks after me all the time.”

Marya heard Andrei and did not understand how he could say such a thing. He, the sensitive, tender Andrei, how could he say that, before her whom he loved and who loved him? Had he expected to live he could not have said those words in that offensively cold tone. If he had not known that he was dying, how could he have failed to pity her and how could he speak like that in her presence? The only explanation was that he was indifferent, because something else, much more important, had been revealed to him.

The conversation was cold and disconnected and continually broke off.

“Marya came by way of Ryazán,” said Natasha.

Andrei did not notice that Natasha called his sister *Marya*, and only after calling her so in his presence did Natasha notice it herself.

“Really?” Andrei asked.

“They told her that all Moscow has been burned down, and that...”

Natasha stopped. It was impossible to talk. It was plain that he was making an effort to listen, but could not do so.

“Yes, they say it’s burned,” Andrei said. “It’s a great pity,” and he gazed straight before him, absently stroking his mustache with his fingers.

“And so you have met Nicholas, Marya?” Andrei suddenly said, evidently wishing to speak pleasantly to them. “Nicholas wrote here that he took a great liking to you,” Andrei went on simply and calmly, evidently unable to understand all the complex significance his words had for living people. “If you liked him too, it would be a good thing for you to get married,” he added rather more quickly as if pleased at having found words he had long been seeking.

Marya heard his words but they had no meaning for her, except as proof of how far away he now was from everything living.

“Why talk of me?” Marya said quietly and glanced at Natasha.

Natasha, who felt her glance, did not look at her. All three were again silent.

“Andrei, would you like...” Marya suddenly said in a trembling voice, “would you like to see Nikolenka? He is always talking about you!”

Andrei smiled just perceptibly and for the first time, but Marya, who knew his face so well, saw with horror that he did not smile with pleasure or affection for his son, but with quiet, gentle irony because he thought she was trying what she believed to be the last means of arousing him.

“Yes, I shall be very glad to see him. Is he quite well?”

When Nikolenka was brought into Andrei’s room he looked at his father with frightened eyes but did not cry, because no one else was crying. Andrei

kissed him and evidently did not know what to say to him.

When Nicholas had been led away, Marya again went up to Andrei, kissed him, and unable to restrain her tears any longer began to cry.

Andrei looked at her attentively.

“Is it about Nicholas?” he asked.

Marya nodded her head, weeping.

“Marya, you know the Gosp...” but he broke off.

“What did you say?”

“Nothing. You mustn’t cry here,” Andrei said, looking at her with the same cold expression.

When Marya began to cry, Andrei understood that she was crying at the thought that Nikolenka would be left without a father. With great effort, he tried to return to life and see things from their point of view.

“Yes, to them it must seem sad!” Andrei thought. “But how simple it is.

“The fowls of the air sow not, neither do they reap, yet your Father feedeth them,” he said to himself and wished to say to Marya; “but no, they will take it their own way, they won’t understand! They can’t understand that all those feelings they prize so—all our feelings, all those ideas that seem so important to us, are *unnecessary*. We cannot understand one another,” and Andrei remained silent.

Andrei’s little son, Nikolenka, was seven. Nikolenka could scarcely read and knew nothing. After that day he lived through many things, gaining knowledge, observation, and experience, but had he possessed all the faculties he afterward acquired, he could not have had a better or more profound understanding of the meaning of the scene he had witnessed between his father, Marya, and Natasha, than he had then. Nikolenka understood it completely, and, leaving the room without crying, went silently up to Natasha who had come out with him and looked shyly at her

with his beautiful, thoughtful eyes, then his uplifted, rosy upper lip trembled and leaning his head against Natasha, Nikolenka began to cry.

After that, Nikolenka avoided the tutor Desalles and Countess Rostov who caressed him and either sat alone or came timidly to Marya, or to Natasha of whom he seemed even fonder than of his aunt, and clung to them quietly and shyly.

When Marya had left Andrei, Marya fully understood what Natasha's face had told her. She did not speak anymore to Natasha of hopes of saving his life. Marya took turns with Natasha beside Andrei's sofa, and did not cry anymore, but prayed continually, turning in soul to that Eternal and Unfathomable, whose presence above the dying man was now so evident.

Not only did Andrei know he would die, but he felt that he was dying and was already half dead. He was conscious of an aloofness from everything earthly and a strange and joyous lightness of existence. Without haste or agitation, he awaited what was coming. That inexorable, eternal, distant, and unknown presence of which he had felt continually all his life—was now near to him and, by the strange lightness he experienced, almost comprehensible and palpable...

Formerly Andrei had feared the end. He had twice experienced that terribly tormenting fear of death—the end—but now he no longer understood that fear.

Andrei had felt it for the first time when the shell spun like a top before him, and he looked at the fallow field, the bushes, and the sky, and knew that he was face to face with death. When he came to himself after being wounded and the flower of eternal, unfettered love had instantly unfolded itself in his soul as if freed from the bondage of life that had restrained it, he no longer feared death and ceased to think about it.

During the hours of solitude, suffering, and partial delirium Andrei spent after he was wounded, the more deeply he penetrated into the new

principle of eternal love revealed to him, the more he unconsciously detached himself from earthly life. To love everything and everybody and always to sacrifice oneself for love meant not to love anyone, not to live this earthly life. And the more imbued he became with that principle of love, the more he renounced life and the more completely he destroyed that dreadful barrier which—in the absence of such love—stands between life and death. When during those first days he remembered that he would have to die, he said to himself: “Well, what of it? So much the better!”

But after the night in the town of Mytishchi when, half delirious, Andrei had seen Natasha, for whom he longed, appear before him and, having pressed her hand to his lips, had shed gentle, happy tears, love for a particular woman again crept unobserved into his heart and once more bound him to life. And joyful and agitating thoughts began to occupy his mind. Recalling the moment at the ambulance station when he had seen Anatole, he could not now regain the feeling he then had, but was tormented by the question of whether Anatole was alive. And he dared not inquire.

Andrei’s illness pursued its normal physical course, but what Natasha referred to when she said: “*This* suddenly happened,” had occurred two days before Marya arrived. It was the last spiritual struggle between life and death, in which death gained victory. It was the unexpected realization of the fact that Andrei still valued life as presented to him in the form of his love for Natasha, and a last, though ultimately vanquished, attack of terror before the unknown.

It was evening. As usual, after dinner, Andrei was slightly feverish, and his thoughts were preternaturally clear. Sonya was sitting by the table. He began to doze. Suddenly a feeling of happiness seized him.

“Ah, she has come!” thought Andrei.

And so it was: in Sonya’s place sat Natasha who had just come in noiselessly.

Since Natasha had begun looking after him, Andrei had always experienced this physical consciousness of her nearness. She was sitting in an armchair placed sideways, screening the light of the candle from him, and was knitting a stocking. She had learned to knit stockings since Andrei had casually mentioned that no one nursed the sick so well as old nurses who knit stockings and that there is something soothing in the knitting of stockings. The needles clicked lightly in her slender, rapidly moving hands, and he could clearly see the thoughtful profile of her drooping face. Natasha moved, and the ball rolled off her knees. She started, glanced round at him, and screening the candle with her hand stooped carefully with a supple and exact movement, picked up the ball, and regained her former position.

Andrei looked at Natasha without moving and saw that she wanted to draw a deep breath after stooping, but refrained from doing so and breathed cautiously.

At the Tróitsa monastery, they had spoken of the past, and he had told her that if he lived he would always thank God for his wound which had brought them together again, but after that, they never spoke of the future.

“Can it or can it not be?” Andrei now thought as he looked at her and listened to the light click of the steel needles. “Can fate have brought me to Natasha so strangely only for me to die?... Is it possible that the truth of life has been revealed to me only to show me that I have spent my life in falsity? I love her more than anything in the world! But what am I to do if I love her?” Andrei thought, and he involuntarily groaned, from a habit acquired during his sufferings.

On hearing that sound Natasha put down the stocking, leaned nearer to him, and suddenly, noticing his shining eyes, stepped lightly up to him and bent over him.

“You are not asleep?”

“No, I have been looking at you a long time. I felt you come in. No one else gives me that sense of soft tranquility that you do... that light. I want to

weep for joy.”

Natasha drew closer to Andrei. Her face shone with rapturous joy.

“Natasha, I love you too much! More than anything in the world.”

“And I!”—She turned away for an instant. “Why too much?” she asked.

“Why too much?... Well, what do you, what do you feel in your soul, your whole soul—shall I live? What do you think?”

“I am sure of it, sure!” Natasha almost shouted, taking hold of both his hands with a passionate movement.

Andrei remained silent awhile.

“How good it would be!” and taking her hand he kissed it.

Natasha felt happy and agitated, but at once remembered that this would not do and that he had to be quiet.

“But you have not slept,” Natasha said, repressing her joy. “Try to sleep... please!”

Andrei pressed Natasha’s hand and released it, and she went back to the candle and sat down again in her former position. Twice she turned and looked at him, and her eyes met his beaming at her. She set herself a task on her stocking and resolved not to turn around till it was finished.

Soon Andrei really shut his eyes and fell asleep. He did not sleep long and suddenly awoke with a start and in a cold perspiration.

As he fell asleep he had still been thinking of the subject that now always occupied his mind—about life and death, and chiefly about death. He felt himself nearer to it.

“Love? What is love?” Andrei thought.

“Love hinders death. Love is life. All, everything that I understand, I understand only because I love. Everything is, everything exists, only because I love. Everything is united by it alone. Love is God, and to die means that I, a particle of love, shall return to the eternal source.” These thoughts seemed to him comforting. But they were only thoughts. Something was lacking in them, they were not clear, and they were too one-

sidedly personal and brain-spun. And there was the former agitation and obscurity. He fell asleep.

Andrei dreamed that he was lying in the room he really was in, but that he was quite well and unwounded. Many various, indifferent, and insignificant people appeared before him. He talked to them and discussed something trivial. They were preparing to go away somewhere. Andrei dimly realized that all this was trivial and that he had more important cares, but he continued to speak, surprising them with empty witticisms. Gradually, unnoticed, all these persons began to disappear and a single question, that of the closed door, superseded all else. He rose and went to the door to bolt and lock it. Everything depended on whether he was, or was not, in time to lock it. He went and tried to hurry, but his legs refused to move and he knew he would not be in time to lock the door though he painfully strained all his powers. Andrei was seized by an agonizing fear. And that fear was the fear of death. *It* stood behind the door. But just when he was clumsily creeping toward the door, that dreadful something on the other side was already pressing against it and forcing its way in. Something not human—death—was breaking in through that door, and had to be kept out. He seized the door, making a final effort to hold it back—to lock it was no longer possible—but his efforts were weak and clumsy and the door, pushed from behind by that terror, opened and closed again.

Once again *it* pushed from outside. Andrei's last superhuman efforts were vain and both halves of the door noiselessly opened. *It* entered, and it was *death*, and Andrei died.

But at the instant Andrei died, he remembered that he was asleep, and at the very instant he died, having made an effort, he awoke.

"Yes, it was death! I died—and woke up. Yes, death is an awakening!" And all at once, it grew light in Andrei's soul, and the veil that had till then concealed the unknown was lifted from his spiritual vision. Andrei felt as if

powers till then confined within him had been liberated, and that strange lightness did not again leave him.

When waking in a cold perspiration, Andrei moved on the divan, Natasha went up and asked him what was the matter. He did not answer and looked at her strangely, not understanding.

That was what had happened to him two days before Marya's arrival. From that day, as the doctor expressed it, the wasting fever assumed a malignant character, but what the doctor said did not interest Natasha, she saw the terrible moral symptoms which to her were more convincing.

From that day, an awakening from life came to Andrei together with his awakening from sleep. And compared to the duration of life it did not seem to him slower than an awakening from sleep compared to the duration of a dream.

There was nothing terrible or violent in this comparatively slow awakening.

Andrei's last days and hours passed in an ordinary and simple way. Both Marya and Natasha, who did not leave him, felt this. Marya and Natasha did not weep or shudder and during these last days, they themselves felt that they were not attending on Andrei (he was no longer there, he had left them) but on what reminded them most closely of him—his body. Both Marya and Natasha felt this so strongly that the outward and terrible side of death did not affect them and they did not feel it necessary to foment their grief. Neither in Andrei's presence nor out of it did they weep, nor did they ever talk to one another about him. They felt that they could not express in words what they understood.

Marya and Natasha both saw that Andrei was sinking slowly and quietly, deeper and deeper, away from them, and they both knew that this had to be so and that it was right.

Andrei confessed, and received communion: everyone came to take leave of him. When they brought Nikolenka to him, Andrei pressed his lips

to the boy's and turned away, not because he felt it hard and sad (Marya and Natasha understood that) but simply because he thought it was all that was required of him, but when they told him to bless the boy, he did what was demanded and looked round as if asking whether there was anything else he should do.

When the last convulsions of the body, which the spirit was leaving, occurred, Marya and Natasha were present.

"Is it over?" said Marya when Andrei's body had for a few minutes lain motionless, growing cold before them. Natasha went up, looked at the dead eyes, and hastened to close them. Natasha closed them but did not kiss them, but clung to that which reminded her most nearly of him—Andrei's body.

"Where has he gone? Where is he now?..."

When the body, washed and dressed, lay in the coffin on a table, everyone came to take leave of him and they all wept.

Nikolenka cried because his heart was rent by painful perplexity. Countess Rostov and Sonya cried from pity for Natasha and because Andrei was no more. Count Rostov cried because he felt that before long, he, too, must take the same terrible step.

Natasha and Marya also wept now, but not because of their own personal grief; they wept with a reverent and softening emotion that had taken possession of their souls at the consciousness of the simple and solemn mystery of death that had been accomplished in their presence.

BOOK 13: 1812



Man's mind cannot grasp the causes of events in their completeness, but the desire to find those causes is implanted in man's soul. And without considering the multiplicity and complexity of the conditions any one of which taken separately may seem to be the cause, he snatches at the first approximation to a cause that seems to him intelligible and says: "This is the cause!" In historical events (where the actions of men are the subject of observation) the first and most primitive approximation to present itself was the will of the gods and, after that, the will of those who stood in the most prominent position—the heroes of history. But we need only penetrate to the essence of any historic event—which lies in the activity of the mass of men who take part in it—to be convinced that the will of the historic hero does not control the actions of the mass but is itself continually controlled. It may seem to be a matter of indifference whether we understand the meaning of historical events this way or that; yet there is the same difference between a man who says that the people of the West moved to the East because Napoleon wished it and a man who says that this happened because it had to happen, as there is between those who declared that the earth was stationary and that the planets moved round it and those who admitted that they did not know what upheld the earth, but knew there were laws directing its movement and that of the other planets. There is,

and can be, no cause of a historical event except the one cause of all causes. But there are laws directing events, and some of these laws are known to us while we are conscious of others we cannot comprehend. The discovery of these laws is only possible when we have quite abandoned the attempt to find the cause in the will of some one man, just as the discovery of the laws of the motion of the planets was possible only when men abandoned the conception of the fixity of the earth.

The historians consider that, next to the battle of Borodinó and the occupation of Moscow by the enemy and its destruction by fire, the most important episode of the war of 1812 was the movement of the Russian army from the Ryazána to the Kalúga road and to the Tarútino camp—the so-called flank march across the Krásnaya Pakhrá River. They ascribe the glory of that achievement of genius to different men and dispute as to whom the honor is due. Even foreign historians, including the French, acknowledge the genius of the Russian commanders when they speak of that flank march. But it is hard to understand why military writers, and following them others, consider this flank march to be the profound conception of some one man who saved Russia and destroyed Napoleon. In the first place, it is hard to understand where the profundity and genius of this movement lay, for not much mental effort was needed to see that the best position for an army when it is not being attacked is where there are most provisions; and even a dull boy of thirteen could have guessed that the best position for an army after its retreat from Moscow in 1812 was on the Kalúga road. So it is impossible to understand by what reasoning the historians reach the conclusion that this maneuver was a profound one. And it is even more difficult to understand just why they think that this maneuver was calculated to save Russia and destroy the French; for this flank march, had it been preceded, accompanied, or followed by other circumstances, might have proved ruinous to the Russians and salutary for the French. If the position of the Russian army really began to improve

from the time of that march, it does not at all follow that the march was the cause of it.

That flank march might not only have failed to give any advantage to the Russian army but might in other circumstances have led to its destruction. What would have happened had Moscow not burned down? If Général Murat had not lost sight of the Russians? If Napoleon had not remained inactive? If the Russian army at Krásnaya Pakhrá had given battle as General Bennigsen and Barclay advised? What would have happened had the French attacked the Russians while they were marching beyond the Pakhrá? What would have happened if on approaching Tarútino, Napoleon had attacked the Russians with but a tenth of the energy he had shown when he attacked them at Smolénsk? What would have happened had the French moved on St. Petersburg?... In any of these eventualities, the flank march that brought salvation might have proved disastrous.

The third and most incomprehensible thing is that people studying history deliberately avoid seeing that this flank march cannot be attributed to any one man, that no one ever foresaw it, and that in reality, like the retreat from Filí, it did not suggest itself to anyone in its entirety, but resulted—moment by moment, step by step, event by event—from an endless number of most diverse circumstances and was only seen in its entirety when it had been accomplished and belonged to the past.

At the council at Filí, the prevailing thought in the minds of the Russian commanders was the one naturally suggesting itself, namely, a direct retreat by the Nízхни road. As proof of this, there is the fact that the majority of the council voted for such a retreat, and above all, there is the well-known conversation after the council, between the Marshal and Lanský, who was in charge of the commissariat department. Lanský informed the Marshal that the army supplies were for the most part stored along the Oká in the Túla and Ryazán provinces and that if they retreated on Nízхни the army would be separated from its supplies by the broad river Oká, which cannot

be crossed early in winter. This was the first indication of the necessity of deviating from what had previously seemed the most natural course—a direct retreat on Nízхни-Nóvgorod. The army turned more to the south, along the Ryazán road and nearer to its supplies. Subsequently, the inactivity of the French (who even lost sight of the Russian army), concern for the safety of the arsenal at Túla, and especially the advantages of drawing nearer to its supplies caused the army to turn still further south to the Túla road. Having crossed over, by a forced march, to the Túla road beyond the Pakhrá, the Russian commanders intended to remain at Podólsk and had no thought of the Tarútino position; but innumerable circumstances and the reappearance of French troops who had for a time lost touch with the Russians, and projects of giving battle, and above all the abundance of provisions in Kalúga province, obliged our army to turn still more to the south and to cross from the Túla to the Kalúga road and go to Tarútino, which was between the roads along which those supplies lay. Just as it is impossible to say when it was decided to abandon Moscow, so it is impossible to say precisely when, or by whom, it was decided to move to Tarútino. Only when the army had got there, as the result of innumerable and varying forces, did people begin to assure themselves that they had desired this movement and long ago foreseen its result.

The famous flank movement merely consisted of this: after the advance of the French had ceased, the Russian army, which had been continually retreating straight back from the invaders, deviated from that direct course and, not finding itself pursued, was naturally drawn toward the district where supplies were abundant.

If instead of imagining ourselves commanders of genius leading the Russian army, we picture that army without any leaders, it could not have done anything but make a return movement toward Moscow, describing an arc in the direction where most provisions were to be found and where the country was richest.

That movement from the Nízхни to the Ryazán, Túla, and Kalúga roads was so natural that even the Russian marauders moved in that direction, and demands were sent from St. Petersburg for Marshal Kutuzov to take his army that way. At Tarútino, Marshal Kutuzov received what was almost a reprimand from the Tzar for having moved his army along the Ryazán road, and the Tzar's letter indicated to him the very position he had already occupied near Kalúga.

Having rolled like a ball in the direction of the impetus given by the whole campaign and by the battle of Borodinó, the Russian army—when the strength of that impetus was exhausted and no fresh push was received—assumed the position natural to it.

Marshal Kutuzov's merit lay, not in any strategic maneuver of genius, as it is called, but in the fact that he alone understood the significance of what had happened. He alone then understood the meaning of the French army's inactivity, he alone continued to assert that the battle of Borodinó had been a victory, he alone—who as Marshal might have been expected to be eager to attack—employed his whole strength to restrain the Russian army from useless engagements.

The beast wounded at Borodinó was lying where the fleeing hunter had left him; but whether he was still alive, whether he was strong and merely lying low, the hunter did not know. Suddenly the beast was heard to moan.

The moan of that wounded beast (the French army) which betrayed its calamitous condition was the sending of Lauriston to Marshal Kutuzov's camp with overtures for peace.

Napoleon, with his usual assurance that whatever entered his head was right, wrote to Marshal Kutuzov the first words that occurred to him, though they were meaningless.

MONSIEUR KUTUZOV: I am sending one of my adjutants-general to discuss several interesting questions with you. I beg your Highness to credit

what he says to you, *especially when he expresses the sentiment of esteem and special regard I have long entertained for your person. This letter having no other object, I pray God, monsieur le Baron Kutuzov, to keep you in His holy and gracious protection!*

NAPOLEON

MOSCOW, OCTOBER 30, 1812

Marshal Kutuzov replied: “I should be cursed by posterity were I looked on as the initiator of a settlement of any sort. *Such is the present spirit of my nation.*” But Marshal Kutuzov continued to exert all his powers to restrain his troops from attacking.

During the month that the French troops were pillaging in Moscow and the Russian troops were quietly encamped at Tarútino, a change had taken place in the relative strength of the two armies—both in spirit and in number—as a result of which the superiority had passed to the Russian side. Though the condition and numbers of the French army were unknown to the Russians, as soon as that change occurred the need of attacking at once showed itself by countless signs. These signs were: Lauriston’s mission; the abundance of provisions at Tarútino; the reports coming in from all sides of the inactivity and disorder of the French; the flow of recruits to our regiments; the fine weather; the long rest the Russian soldiers had enjoyed, and the impatience to do what they had been assembled for, which usually shows itself in an army that has been resting; curiosity as to what the French army, so long lost sight of, was doing; the boldness with which our outposts now scouted close up to the French stationed at Tarútino; the news of easy successes gained by peasants and guerrilla troops over the French, the envy aroused by this; the desire for revenge that lay in the heart of every Russian as long as the French were in Moscow, and (above all) a dim consciousness in every soldier’s mind that the relative strength of the armies had changed and that the advantage was now on our side. There was

a substantial change in the relative strength, and an advance had become inevitable. And at once, as a clock begins to strike and chime as soon as the minute hand has completed a full circle, this change was shown by increased activity, whirring, and chiming in the higher spheres.

The Russian army was commanded by Marshal Kutuzov and his staff, and also by the Tzar from St. Petersburg. Before the news of the abandonment of Moscow had been received in St. Petersburg, a detailed plan of the whole campaign had been drawn up and sent to Marshal Kutuzov for his guidance. Though this plan had been drawn up on the supposition that Moscow was still in our hands, it was approved by the staff and accepted as a basis for action. Marshal Kutuzov only replied that movements arranged from a distance were always difficult to execute. So fresh instructions were sent for the solution to difficulties that might be encountered, as well as fresh people who were to watch Marshal Kutuzov's actions and report upon them.

Besides this, the whole staff of the Russian army was now reorganized. The posts left vacant by Major-General Bagration, who had been killed, and by Barclay, who had gone away in his sickness, had to be filled. Very serious consideration was given to the question of whether it would be better to put A in B's place and B in D's, or on the contrary to put D in A's place, and so on—as if anything more than A's or B's satisfaction depended on this.

As a result of the hostility between Marshal Kutuzov and General Bennigsen, his Chief of Staff, the presence of confidential representatives of the Tzar, and these transfers, a more than usually complicated play of parties was going on among the staff of the army. A was undermining B, D was undermining C, and so on in all possible combinations and permutations. In all these plans the subject of intrigue was generally the conduct of the war, which all these men believed they were directing; but this affair of the war went on independently of them, as it had to go: that is,

never in the way people devised, but flowing always from the essential attitude of the masses. Only in the highest spheres did all these schemes, crossings, and interminglings appear to be a true reflection of what had to happen.

Marshal Kutuzov! (wrote the Tzar on the second of October in a letter that reached Marshal Kutuzov after the battle at Tarútino) Since September 2 Moscow has been in the hands of the enemy. Your last reports were written on the twentieth, and during all this time not only has no action been taken against the enemy or for the relief of the ancient capital, but according to your last report you have even retreated farther. Sérpukhov is already occupied by an enemy detachment and Túla with its famous arsenal, so indispensable to the army, is in danger. From General Wintzingerode's reports, I see that an enemy corps of ten thousand men is moving on the St. Petersburg road. Another corps of several thousand men is moving on Dmítrov. A third has advanced along the Vladímir road, and a fourth, rather considerable detachment is stationed between Rúza and Mozháysk. Napoleon himself was in Moscow as late as the twenty-fifth. In view of all this information, when the enemy has scattered his forces in large detachments, and with Napoleon and his Guards in Moscow, is it possible that the enemy's forces confronting you are so considerable as not to allow your taking the offensive? On the contrary, Napoleon is probably pursuing you with detachments, or at most with an army corps much weaker than the army entrusted to you. It would seem that availing yourself of these circumstances, you might advantageously attack a weaker one and annihilate him, or at least oblige him to retreat, retaining in our hands an important part of the provinces now occupied by the enemy, and thereby averting danger from Túla and other towns in the interior. You will be responsible if the enemy is able to direct a force of any size against St. Petersburg to threaten this capital in which it has not been possible to retain

many troops; for with the army entrusted to you, and acting with resolution and energy, you have ample means to avert this fresh calamity. Remember that you have still to answer to our offended country for the loss of Moscow. You have experienced my readiness to reward you. That readiness will not weaken in me, but I and Russia have a right to expect from you all the zeal, firmness, and success that your intellect, military talent, and the courage of the troops you command justify us in expecting.

But by the time the Tzar's letter, which proved that the real relation of the forces had already made itself felt in St. Petersburg, was dispatched, Marshal Kutuzov had found himself unable any longer to restrain the army he commanded from attacking and a battle had taken place.

On the second of October, a Cossack who was out scouting, killed one hare and wounded another. Following the wounded hare, the Cossack made his way far into the forest and came upon the left flank of Général Murat's army, encamped there without any precautions. The Cossack laughingly told his comrades how he had almost fallen into the hands of the French. A cornet, hearing the story, informed his commander.

The Cossack was sent for and questioned. The Cossack officers wished to take advantage of this chance to capture some horses, but one of the superior officers, who was acquainted with the higher authorities, reported the incident to a general on the staff. The state of things on the staff had of late been exceedingly strained. General Ermólov had been to see General Bennigsen a few days previously and had entreated him to use his influence with Marshal Kutuzov to induce him to take the offensive.

"If I did not know you I should think you did not want what you are asking for. I need only advise anything and Marshal Kutuzov is sure to do the opposite," replied General Bennigsen.

The Cossack's report, confirmed by horse patrols who were sent out, was the final proof that events had matured. The tightly coiled spring was

released, the clock began to whirr and the chimes to play. Despite all his supposed power, his intellect, his experience, and his knowledge of men, Marshal Kutuzov—having taken into consideration the Cossack's report, a note from General Bennigsen who sent personal reports to the Tzar, the wishes Marshal Kutuzov supposed the Tzar to hold, and the fact that all the generals expressed the same wish—could no longer check the inevitable movement, and gave the order to do what he regarded as useless and harmful— Marshal Kutuzov gave his approval, that is, to the accomplished fact.

General Bennigsen's note and the Cossack's information that the left flank of the French was unguarded were merely final indications that it was necessary to order an attack, and it was fixed for the fifth of October.

On the morning of the fourth of October, Marshal Kutuzov signed the dispositions. Toll read them to General Ermólov, asking him to attend to the further arrangements.

"All right—all right. I haven't time just now," replied General Ermólov, and left the hut.

The dispositions drawn up by Toll were very good. As in the Austerlitz dispositions, it was written—though not in German this time:

"The First Column will march here and here," "the Second Column will march there and there," and so on; and on paper, all these columns arrived at their places at the appointed time and destroyed the enemy. Everything had been admirably thought out as is usual in dispositions, and as is always the case, not a single column reached its place at the appointed time.

When the necessary number of copies of the dispositions had been prepared, an officer was summoned and sent to deliver them to General Ermólov to deal with. A young officer of the Horse Guards, Marshal Kutuzov's orderly, pleased at the importance of the mission entrusted to him, went to General Ermólov's quarters.

"Gone away," said General Ermólov's orderly.

Marshal Kutuzov's orderly went to a general with whom General Ermólov was often to be found.

"No, and the general's out too."

Marshal Kutuzov's orderly, mounting his horse, rode off to someone else.

"No, he's gone out."

"If only they don't make me responsible for this delay! What a nuisance it is!" thought Marshal Kutuzov's orderly, and he rode around the whole camp. One man said he had seen General Ermólov ride past with some other generals, others said he must have returned home. Marshal Kutuzov's orderly searched till six o'clock in the evening without even stopping to eat. General Ermólov was nowhere to be found and no one knew where he was. Marshal Kutuzov's orderly snatched a little food at a comrade's and rode again to the vanguard to find General Milorádovich. The general was too was away, but here he was told that he had gone to a ball at General Kíkin's and that General Ermólov was probably there too.

"But where is it?"

"Why, there, over at Échkino," said a Cossack officer, pointing to a country house in the far distance.

"What, outside our line?"

"They've put two regiments as outposts, and they're having such a spree there, it's awful! Two bands and three sets of singers!"

Marshal Kutuzov's orderly rode out beyond our lines to Échkino. While still at a distance he heard as he rode the merry sounds of a soldier's dance song proceeding from the house.

"In the meadows... in the meadows!" Marshal Kutuzov's orderly heard, accompanied by whistling and the sound of a *horn*, drowned every now and then by shouts. These sounds made his spirits rise, but at the same time, he was afraid that he would be blamed for not having executed sooner the important order entrusted to him. It was already past eight o'clock. He

dismounted and went up into the porch of a large country house that had remained intact between the Russian and French forces. In the refreshment room and the hall, footmen were bustling about with wine and viands. Groups of singers stood outside the windows. Marshal Kutuzov's orderly was admitted and immediately saw all the chief generals of the army together, and among them General Ermólov's big imposing figure. They all had their coats unbuttoned and were standing in a semicircle with flushed and animated faces, laughing loudly. In the middle of the room, a short handsome general with a red face was dancing *a Russian folk dance* with much spirit and agility.

"Ha, ha, ha! Bravo, Nicholas Iványch! Ha, ha, ha!"

Marshal Kutuzov's orderly felt that by arriving with important orders at such a moment he was doubly to blame, and he would have preferred to wait; but one of the generals saw him and, hearing what he had come about, informed General Ermólov.

General Ermólov came forward with a frown on his face and, hearing what *trepák* had to say, took the papers from him without a word.

"You think he went off just by chance?" said a comrade, who was on the staff that evening, to the officer of the Horse Guards, referring to General Ermólov. "It was a trick. It was done on purpose to get General Konovnítsyn into trouble. You'll see what a mess there'll be tomorrow."

The next day, the decrepit Marshal Kutuzov, having given orders to be called early, said his prayers, dressed, and, with an unpleasant consciousness of having to direct a battle he did not approve of, got into his *carriage* and drove from Letashóvka (a village three and a half miles from Tarútino) to the place where the attacking columns were to meet. Marshal Kutuzov sat in the *carriage*, dozing and waking up by turns, and listening for any sound of firing on the right as an indication that the action had begun. But all was still quiet. A damp dull autumn morning was just

dawning. On approaching Tarútino Marshal Kutuzov noticed cavalymen leading their horses to water across the road along which he was driving. Marshal Kutuzov looked at them searchingly, stopped his carriage, and inquired what regiment they belonged to. They belonged to a column that should have been far in front and in ambush long before then. “It may be a mistake,” thought Marshal Kutuzov. But a little further on he saw infantry regiments with their arms piled and the soldiers, only partly dressed, eating their rye porridge and carrying fuel. He sent for an officer. The officer reported that no order to advance had been received.

“How! Not rec...” Marshal Kutuzov began, but checked himself immediately and sent for a senior officer. Getting out of his *carriage*, he waited with a drooping head and breathing heavily, pacing silently up and down. When Eýkhen, the officer of the general staff whom he had summoned, appeared, Marshal Kutuzov went purple in the face, not because that officer was to blame for the mistake, but because he was an object of sufficient importance for him to vent his wrath on. Trembling and panting, Marshal Kutuzov fell into that state of fury in which he sometimes used to roll on the ground, and he fell upon Eýkhen, threatening him with his hands, shouting, and loading him with gross abuse. Another man, Captain Brózin, who happened to turn up and who was not at all to blame, suffered the same fate.

“What sort of another blackguard are you? I’ll have you shot! Scoundrels!” yelled Marshal Kutuzov in a hoarse voice, waving his arms and reeling.

Marshal Kutuzov was suffering physically. He, the Marshal, a Serene Highness who everybody said possessed powers such as no man had ever had in Russia, to be placed in this position—made the laughingstock of the whole army! “I needn’t have been in such a hurry to pray about today, or have kept awake thinking everything over all night,” thought he to himself. “When I was a chit of an officer no one would have dared to mock me so...

and now!” Marshal Kutuzov was in a state of physical suffering as if from corporal punishment, and could not avoid expressing it with cries of anger and distress. But his strength soon began to fail him, and looking about him, conscious of having said much that was amiss, he again got into his *carriage* and drove back in silence.

Marshal Kutuzov’s wrath, once expended, did not return, and blinking feebly he listened to excuses and self-justifications (General Ermólov did not come to see him till the next day) and to the insistence of General Bennigsen, Konovnítsyn, and Toll that the movement that had miscarried should be executed the next day. And once more Marshal Kutuzov had to consent.

The next day, the Russian troops assembled in their appointed places in the evening and advanced during the night. It was an autumn night with dark purple clouds, but no rain. The ground was damp but not muddy, and the troops advanced noiselessly, only occasionally a jingling of the artillery could be faintly heard. The men were forbidden to talk out loud, to smoke their pipes, or to strike a light, and they tried to prevent their horses’ neighing. The secrecy of the undertaking heightened its charm and they marched gaily. Some columns, supposing they had reached their destination, halted, piled arms, and settled down on the cold ground, but the majority marched all night and arrived at places where they evidently should not have been.

Only Commander Orlóv with his Cossacks (the least important detachment of all) got to his appointed place at the right time. This detachment halted at the outskirts of a forest, on the path leading from the village of Stromílova to Dmítrovsk.

Toward dawn, Denisov, who had dozed off, was awakened by a deserter from the French army being brought to him. This was a Polish sergeant of Poniatowski’s corps, who explained in Polish that he had come over because he had been slighted in the service: that he ought long ago to have

been made an officer, that he was braver than any of them, and so he had left them and wished to pay them out. The Polish sergeant said that Général Murat was spending the night less than a mile from where they were and that if they would let him have a convoy of a hundred men he would capture him alive. Commander Orlóv consulted his fellow officers.

The offer was too tempting to be refused. Everyone volunteered to go and everybody advised making the attempt. After much disputing and arguing, General Grekov with two Cossack regiments decided to go with the Polish sergeant.

“Now, remember,” said Commander Orlóv to the sergeant at parting, “if you have been lying I’ll have you hanged like a dog, but if it’s true you shall have a hundred gold pieces!”

Without replying, the sergeant, with a resolute air, mounted and rode away with General Grekov whose men had quickly assembled. They disappeared into the forest, and Commander Orlóv, having seen General Grekov off, returned, shivering from the freshness of the early dawn and excited by what he had undertaken on his own responsibility, and began looking at the enemy camp, now just visible in the deceptive light of dawn and the dying campfires. Our columns ought to have begun to appear on an open declivity to his right. He looked in that direction, but though the columns would have been visible quite far off, they were not to be seen. It seemed to the count that things were beginning to stir in the French camp, and his keen-sighted adjutant confirmed this.

“Oh, it is really too late,” said Commander Orlóv, looking at the camp.

As often happens when someone we have trusted is no longer before our eyes, it suddenly seemed quite clear and obvious to him that the sergeant was an impostor, that he had lied, and that the whole Russian attack would be ruined by the absence of those two regiments, which he would lead away heaven only knew where. How could one capture a Marshal from among such a mass of troops?

“I am sure that rascal was lying,” said the count.

“They can still be called back,” said one of his suite, who like Commander Orlóv felt distrustful of the adventure when he looked at the enemy’s camp.

“Eh? Really... what do you think? Should we let them go on or not?”

“Will you have them fetched back?”

“Fetch them back, fetch them back!” said Commander Orlóv with sudden determination, looking at his watch. “It will be too late. It is quite light.”

And the adjutant galloped through the forest after General Grekov. When General Grekov returned, Commander Orlóv, excited both by the abandoned attempt and by vainly awaiting the infantry columns that still did not appear, as well as by the proximity of the enemy, resolved to advance. All his men felt the same excitement.

“Mount!” Commander Orlóv commanded in a whisper. The men took their places and crossed themselves... “Forward, with God’s aid!”

“Hurrah-ah-ah!” reverberated in the forest, and the Cossack companies, trailing their lances and advancing one after another as if poured out of a sack, dashed gaily across the brook toward the camp.

One desperate, frightened yell from the first French soldier who saw the Cossacks, and all who were in the camp, undressed and only just waking up, ran off in all directions, abandoning cannons, muskets, and horses.

Had the Cossacks pursued the French, without heeding what was behind and around them, they would have captured Général Murat and everything there. That was what the officers desired. But it was impossible to make the Cossacks budge when once they had got booty and prisoners. None of them listened to orders. Fifteen hundred prisoners and thirty-eight guns were taken on the spot, besides standards and (what seemed most important to the Cossacks) horses, saddles, horsecloths, and the like. All this had to be dealt with, the prisoners and guns secured, the booty divided—not without

some shouting and even a little fighting among themselves—and it was on this that the Cossacks all busied themselves.

The French, not being further pursued, began to recover themselves: they formed into detachments and began firing. Commander Orlóv, still waiting for the other columns to arrive, advanced no further.

Meantime, according to the dispositions which said that “the First Column will march” and so on, the infantry of the belated columns, commanded by General Bennigsen and directed by Toll, had started in due order and, as always happens, had got somewhere, but not to their appointed places. As always happens the men, starting cheerfully, began to halt; murmurs were heard, there was a sense of confusion, and finally a backward movement. Adjutants and generals galloped about, shouted, grew angry, quarreled, said they had come quite wrong and were late, gave vent to a little abuse, and at last gave it all up and went forward, simply to get somewhere. “We shall get somewhere or other!” And they did indeed get somewhere, though not to their right places; a few eventually even got to their right place, but too late to be of any use and only in time to be fired at. Toll, who in this battle played the part of General Weyrother at Austerlitz, galloped assiduously from place to place, finding everything upside down everywhere. Thus he stumbled on Bagovút’s corps in a wood when it was already broad daylight, though the corps should long before have joined Commander Orlóv. Excited and vexed by the failure and supposing that someone must be responsible for it, Toll galloped up to the commander of the corps and began upbraiding him severely, saying that he ought to be shot. General Bagovút, a fighting old soldier of placid temperament, being also upset by all the delay, confusion, and cross-purposes, fell into a rage to everybody’s surprise and quite contrary to his usual character and said disagreeable things to Toll.

“I prefer not to take lessons from anyone, but I can die with my men as well as anybody,” General Bagovút said and advanced with a single

division.

Coming out onto a field under the enemy's fire, this brave General Bagovút went straight ahead, leading his men under fire, without considering in his agitation whether going into action now, with a single division, would be of any use or not. Danger, cannonballs, and bullets were just what he needed in his angry mood. One of the first bullets killed General Bagovút, and other bullets killed many of his men. And his division remained under fire for some time quite uselessly.

Meanwhile, another column was to have attacked the French from the front, but Marshal Kutuzov accompanied that column. He well knew that nothing but confusion would come of this battle undertaken against his will, and as far as was in his power held the troops back. He did not advance.

Marshal Kutuzov rode silently on his small gray horse, indolently answering suggestions that they should attack.

"The word *attack* is always on your tongue, but you don't see that we are unable to execute complicated maneuvers," said Marshal Kutuzov to a general who asked permission to advance.

"We couldn't take Général Murat prisoner this morning or get to the place in time, and nothing can be done now!" Marshal Kutuzov replied to someone else.

When Marshal Kutuzov was informed that at the French rear—where according to the reports of the Cossacks there had previously been nobody—there were now two battalions of Poles, Marshal Kutuzov gave a sidelong glance at General Ermólov who was behind him and to whom he had not spoken since the previous day.

"You see! They are asking to attack and making plans of all kinds, but as soon as one gets to business nothing is ready, and the enemy, forewarned, takes measures accordingly."

General Ermólov screwed up his eyes and smiled faintly on hearing these words. General Ermólov understood that for him the storm had blown

over and that Marshal Kutuzov would content himself with that hint.

“He’s having a little fun at my expense,” said General Ermólov softly, nudging with his knee Raévski who was at his side.

Soon after this, General Ermólov moved up to Marshal Kutuzov and respectfully remarked:

“It is not too late yet, Marshal Kutuzov —the enemy has not gone away—if you were to order an attack! If not, the Guards will not so much as see a little smoke.”

Marshal Kutuzov did not reply, but when they reported to him that Général Murat’s troops were in retreat he ordered an advance, though at every hundred paces he halted for three-quarters of an hour.

The whole battle consisted in what Commander Orlov’s Cossacks had done: the rest of the army merely lost some hundreds of men uselessly.

In consequence of this battle, Marshal Kutuzov received a diamond decoration, and General Bennigsen some diamonds and a hundred thousand rubles, others also received pleasant recognitions corresponding to their various grades, and following the battle fresh changes were made in the staff.

“That’s how everything is done with us, all topsy-turvy!” said the Russian officers and generals after the Tarútino battle, letting it be understood that some fool there is doing things all wrong but that we ourselves should not have done so, just as people speak today. But people who talk like that either do not know what they are talking about or deliberately deceive themselves. No battle—Tarútino, Borodinó, or Austerlitz—takes place as those who planned it anticipated. That is an essential condition.

A countless number of free forces (for nowhere is man freer than during a battle, where it is a question of life and death) influence the course taken by the fight, and that course never can be known in advance and never coincides with the direction of any one force.

If many simultaneously and variously directed forces act on a given body, the direction of its motion cannot coincide with any one of those forces, but will always be a mean—what in mechanics is represented by the diagonal of a parallelogram of forces.

If in the descriptions given by historians, especially French ones, we find their wars and battles carried out in accordance with previously formed plans, the only conclusion to be drawn is that those descriptions are false.

The battle of Tarútino obviously did not attain the aim Toll had in view—to lead the troops into action in the order prescribed by the dispositions; nor that which Commander Orlov may have had in view—to take Général Murat prisoner; nor the result of immediately destroying the whole corps, which General Bennigsen and others may have had in view; nor the aim of the officer who wished to go into action to distinguish himself; nor that of the Cossack who wanted more booty than he got, and so on. But if the aim of the battle was what actually resulted and what all the Russians of that day desired—to drive the French out of Russia and destroy their army—it is quite clear that the battle of Tarútino, just because of its incongruities, was exactly what was wanted at that stage of the campaign. It would be difficult and even impossible to imagine any result more opportune than the actual outcome of this battle. With a minimum of effort and insignificant losses, despite the greatest confusion, the most important results of the whole campaign were attained: the transition from retreat to advance, an exposure of the weakness of the French, and the administration of that shock which Napoleon's army had only awaited to begin its flight.

Napoleon enters Moscow after the brilliant victory *over Moscow*; there can be no doubt about the French victory because the battlefield remains in the hands of the French. The Russians retreat and abandon their ancient capital. Moscow, abounding in provisions, arms, munitions, and incalculable wealth, is in Napoleon's hands. The Russian army, only half the strength of the French, does not make a single attempt to attack for a

whole month. Napoleon's position is most brilliant. Napoleon can either fall on the Russian army with double its strength and destroy it; negotiate an advantageous peace, or in case of a refusal, make a menacing move on St. Petersburg, or even, in the case of a reverse, return to Smolénsk or Vílna; or remain in Moscow; in short, no special genius would seem to be required to retain the brilliant position the French held at that time. For that, only very simple and easy steps were necessary: not to allow the troops to loot, to prepare winter clothing—of which there was sufficient in Moscow for the whole army—and methodically to collect the provisions, of which (according to the French historians) there were enough in Moscow to supply the whole army for six months. Yet Napoleon, that greatest of all geniuses, who the historians declare had control of the army, took none of these steps.

Napoleon not merely did nothing of the kind, but on the contrary, he used his power to select the most foolish and ruinous of all the courses open to him. Of all that Napoleon might have done: wintering in Moscow, advancing on St. Petersburg or on Nízхни-Nóvgorod, or retiring by a more northerly or more southerly route (say by the road Marshal Kutuzov afterward took), nothing more stupid or disastrous can be imagined than what he actually did. Napoleon remained in Moscow till October, letting the troops plunder the city; then, hesitating whether to leave a garrison behind him, he left Moscow, approached Marshal Kutuzov without joining battle, turned to the right and reached Málo-Yaroslávets, again without attempting to break through and take the road Marshal Kutuzov took, but retiring instead to Mozháysk along the devastated Smolénsk road. Nothing more stupid than that could have been devised, or more disastrous for the French army, as the sequel showed. Had Napoleon's aim been to destroy his army, the most skillful strategist could hardly have devised any series of actions that would so completely have accomplished that purpose, independently of anything the Russian army might do.

Napoleon, the man of genius, did this! But to say that Napoleon destroyed his army because he wished to, or because he was very stupid, would be as unjust as to say that Napoleon had brought his troops to Moscow because he wished to and because he was very clever and a genius.

In both cases Napoleon's personal activity, having no more force than the personal activity of any soldier, merely coincided with the laws that guided the event.

The historians quite falsely represent Napoleon's faculties as having weakened in Moscow, and do so only because the results did not justify his actions. Napoleon employed all his ability and strength to do the best he could for himself and his army, as he had done previously and as he did subsequently in 1813. His activity at that time was no less astounding than it was in Egypt, in Italy, in Austria, and in Prussia. We do not know for certain in how far Napoleon's genius was genuine in Egypt—where forty centuries looked down upon his grandeur—for his great exploits there are all told us by Frenchmen. We cannot accurately estimate his genius in Austria or Prussia, for we have to draw our information from French or German sources, and the incomprehensible surrender of the whole corps without fighting and of fortresses without a siege must incline Germans to recognize his genius as the only explanation of the war carried on in Germany. But we, thank God, have no need to recognize Napoleon's genius in order to hide our shame. We have paid for the right to look at the matter plainly and simply, and we will not abandon that right.

Napoleon's activity in Moscow was as amazing and as full of genius as elsewhere. Order after order and plan after plan were issued by him from the time he entered Moscow till the time he left it. The absence of citizens and of a deputation, and even the burning of Moscow, did not disconcert him. Napoleon did not lose sight either of the welfare of his army or of the doings of the enemy, or of the welfare of the people of Russia, or of the

direction of affairs in Paris, or of diplomatic considerations concerning the terms of the anticipated peace.

With regard to military matters, Napoleon immediately on his entry into Moscow gave General Sabastiani strict orders to observe the movements of the Russian army, sent army corps out along the different roads, and charged Général Murat to find Marshal Kutuzov. Then Napoleon gave careful directions about the fortification of the Krémelin and drew up a brilliant plan for a future campaign over the whole map of Russia.

With regard to diplomatic questions, Napoleon summoned Russian prisoner of war Captain Yákovlev, who had been robbed and was in rags and did not know how to get out of Moscow, minutely explained to him his whole policy and his magnanimity, and having written a letter to the Tzar in which Napoleon considered it his duty to inform his Friend and Brother that Mayor Rostopchin had managed affairs badly in Moscow, Napoleon dispatched Yákovlev to St. Petersburg.

Having similarly explained his views and his magnanimity to French Diplomat Tutólmin, he dispatched that old man also to St. Petersburg to negotiate.

With regard to legal matters, immediately after the fires, Napoleon gave orders to find and execute the arsonists. And the scoundrel Mayor Rostopchin was punished by an order to burn down his houses.

With regard to administrative matters, Moscow was granted a constitution. A municipality was established and the following announcement was issued:

INHABITANTS OF MOSCOW!

Your misfortunes are cruel, but His Majesty Napoleon desires to arrest their course. Terrible examples have taught you how he punishes disobedience and crime. Strict measures have been taken to put an end to disorder and to re-establish public security. A paternal administration,

chosen from among yourselves, will form your municipality or city government. It will take care of you, your needs, and your welfare. Its members will be distinguished by a red ribbon worn across the shoulder, and the mayor of the city will wear a white belt as well. But when not on duty they will only wear a red ribbon around the left arm.

The city police is established on its former footing, and better order already prevails as a consequence of its activity. The government has appointed two chiefs of police, and twenty captains of wards have been appointed to the different wards of the city. You will recognize them by the white ribbon they will wear on the left arm. Several churches of different denominations are open, and divine service is performed in them unhindered. Your fellow citizens are returning every day to their homes and orders have been given that they should find in them help and protection due to their misfortunes. These are the measures the government has adopted to re-establish order and relieve your condition. But to achieve this aim it is necessary that you should add your efforts and should, if possible, forget the misfortunes you have suffered, should entertain the hope of a less cruel fate, should be certain that inevitable and ignominious death awaits those who make any attempt on your persons or on what remains of your property, and finally that you should not doubt that these will be safeguarded, since such is the will of the greatest and most just of monarchs. Soldiers and citizens, of whatever nation you may be, re-establish public confidence, the source of the welfare of a state, live like brothers, render mutual aid and protection one to another, unite to defeat the intentions of the evil-minded, obey the military and civil authorities, and your tears will soon cease to flow!

With regard to supplies for the army, Napoleon decreed that all the troops in turn should enter Moscow *as looters* to obtain provisions for themselves, so that the army might have its future provided for.

With regard to religion, Napoleon ordered the priests to be brought back and services to be again performed in the churches.

With regard to commerce and to provisioning the army, the following was placarded everywhere:

PROCLAMATION

You, peaceful inhabitants of Moscow, artisans, and workmen whom misfortune has driven from the city, and you scattered tillers of the soil, still kept out in the fields by groundless fear, listen! Tranquility is returning to this capital and order is being restored in it. Your fellow countrymen are emerging boldly from their hiding places on finding that they are respected. Any violence to them or to their property is promptly punished. His Majesty Napoleon protects them and considers no one among you his enemy except those who disobey his orders. Napoleon desires to end your misfortunes and restore you to your homes and families. Respond, therefore, to his benevolent intentions and come to us without fear. Inhabitants, return with confidence to your abodes! You will soon find means of satisfying your needs. Craftsmen and industrious artisans, return to your work, your houses, and your shops, where the protection of guards awaits you! You shall receive proper pay for your work. And lastly you too, peasants, come from the forests where you are hiding in terror, return to your huts without fear, in full assurance that you will find protection! Markets are established in the city where peasants can bring their surplus supplies and the products of the soil. The government has taken the following steps to ensure freedom of sale for them: (1) From today, peasants, husbandmen, and those living in the neighborhood of Moscow may without any danger bring their supplies of all kinds to two appointed markets, of which one is on the Mokhováya Street and the other at the Provision Market. (2) Such supplies will be bought from them at such prices as the seller and buyer may agree on, and if a seller is unable to obtain a fair price he will be free to take his goods back to his village and no one may hinder him under any pretense. (3)

Sunday and Wednesday of each week are appointed as the chief market days and to that end, a sufficient number of troops will be stationed along the highroads on Tuesdays and Saturdays at such distances from the town as to protect the carts. (4) Similar measures will be taken so that peasants with their carts and horses may meet with no hindrance on their return journey. (5) Steps will immediately be taken to re-establish ordinary trading.

Inhabitants of the city and villages, and you, workingmen and artisans, to whatever nation you belong, you are called on to carry out the paternal intentions of His Majesty Napoleon and to cooperate with him for the public welfare! Lay your respect and confidence at his feet and do not delay to unite with us!

With the object of raising the spirits of the troops and of the people, reviews were constantly held and rewards distributed. Napoleon rode through the streets to comfort the inhabitants, and, despite his preoccupation with state affairs, himself visited the theaters that were established by his order.

In regard to philanthropy, the greatest virtue of crowned heads, Napoleon also did all in his power. He caused the words *My Mother's House* to be inscribed on the charitable institutions, thereby combining tender filial affection with the majestic benevolence of a monarch. Napoleon visited the Foundling Hospital and, allowing the orphans saved by him to kiss his white hands, graciously conversed with the French Diplomat Tutólmín. Then, as the historian Thiers eloquently recounts, Napoleon ordered his soldiers to be paid in forged Russian money which he had prepared: "Raising the use of these means by an act worthy of himself and of the French army, he let relief be distributed to those who had been burned out. But as food was too precious to be given to foreigners, who were for the most part enemies, Napoleon preferred to supply his soldiers

with money with which to purchase food from outside, and had paper rubles distributed to them.”

With reference to army discipline, orders were continually being issued to inflict severe punishment for the nonperformance of military duties and to suppress robbery.

But strange to say, all these measures, efforts, and plans—which were not at all worse than others issued in similar circumstances—did not affect the essence of the matter but, like the hands of a clock detached from the mechanism, swung about in an arbitrary and aimless way without engaging the cogwheels.

With reference to the military side—the plan of campaign—that work of genius of which the historian Thiers remarks that “Napoleon’s genius never devised anything more profound, more skillful, or more admirable,” and enters into a polemic with M. Fain to prove that this work of genius must be referred not to the fourth but to the fifteenth of October—that plan never was or could be executed, for it was quite out of touch with the facts of the case. The fortifying of the Krémelin, for which *la Mosquée* (as Napoleon termed the church of Basil the Beatified) was to have been razed to the ground, proved quite useless. The mining of the Krémelin only helped toward fulfilling Napoleon’s wish that it should be blown up when he left Moscow—as a child wants the floor on which he has hurt himself to be beaten. The pursuit of the Russian army, about which Napoleon was so concerned, produced an unheard-of result. The French généraux lost touch with the Russian army of sixty thousand men, and according to the historian Thiers it was only eventually found, like a lost pin, by the skill—and apparently the genius—of Général Murat.

With reference to diplomacy, all Napoleon’s arguments as to his magnanimity and justice, both to the French Diplomat Tutólmín and to the Russian prisoner of war Yákovlev (whose chief concern was to obtain a

greatcoat and a conveyance), proved useless; The Tzar did not receive these envoys and did not reply to their embassy.

With regard to legal matters, after the execution of the supposed arsonists, the rest of Moscow burned down.

With regard to administrative matters, the establishment of a municipality did not stop the robberies and was only of use to certain people who formed part of that municipality and under the pretext of preserving order looted Moscow or saved their own property from being looted.

With regard to religion, as to which in Egypt matters had so easily been settled by Napoleon's visit to a mosque, no results were achieved. Two or three priests who were found in Moscow did try to carry out Napoleon's wish, but one of them was slapped in the face by a French soldier while conducting service, and a French official reported of another that: "The priest whom I found and invited to say Mass cleaned and locked up the church. That night the doors were again broken open, the padlocks smashed, the books mutilated, and other disorders perpetrated."

With reference to commerce, the proclamation to industrious workmen and to peasants evoked no response. There were no industrious workmen, and the peasants caught the commissaries who ventured too far out of town with the proclamation and killed them.

As to the theaters for the entertainment of the people and the troops, these did not meet with success either. The theaters set up in the Krémlin and in Posnyákov's house were closed again at once because the actors and actresses were robbed.

Even philanthropy did not have the desired effect. The genuine, as well as the false paper money which flooded Moscow, lost its value. The French, collecting booty, cared only for gold. Not only was the paper money valueless which Napoleon so graciously distributed to the unfortunate, but even silver lost its value in relation to gold.

But the most amazing example of the ineffectiveness of the orders given by the authorities at that time was Napoleon's attempt to stop the looting and re-establish discipline.

This is what the army authorities were reporting:

"Looting continues in the city despite the decrees against it. Order is not yet restored and not a single merchant is carrying on trade in a lawful manner. The civilian merchants who sell provisions to the army alone venture to trade, and they sell stolen goods."

"The neighborhood of my ward continues to be pillaged by soldiers of the 3rd Corps who, not satisfied with taking from the unfortunate inhabitants hiding in the cellars the little they have left, even have the ferocity to wound them with their sabers, as I have repeatedly witnessed."

"Nothing new, except that the soldiers are robbing and pillaging—October 9."

"Robbery and pillaging continue. There is a band of thieves in our district who ought to be arrested by a strong force—October 11."

"Napoleon is extremely displeased that despite the strict orders to stop pillage, parties of marauding Guards are continually seen returning to the Krémelin. Among the Old Guard disorder and pillage were renewed more violently than ever yesterday evening, last night, and today. Napoleon sees with regret that the picked soldiers appointed to guard his person, who should set an example of discipline, carry disobedience to such a point that they break into the cellars and stores containing army supplies. Others have disgraced themselves to the extent of disobeying sentinels and officers, and have abused and beaten them."

"The supervisor of the palace," wrote the governor, "complains bitterly that in spite of repeated orders, the soldiers continue to commit nuisances in all the courtyards and even under the very windows of the Tzar."

That army, like a herd of cattle, run wild and trampling underfoot the provender which might have saved it from starvation, disintegrated and

perished with each additional day it remained in Moscow. But it did not go away.

It began to run away only when suddenly seized by a panic caused by the capture of transport trains on the Smolénsk road, and by the battle of Tarútino. The news of that battle of Tarútino, unexpectedly received by Napoleon at a review, evoked in him a desire to punish the Russians (the historian Thiers says), and he issued the order for departure which the whole army was demanding.

Fleeing from Moscow, the soldiers took with them everything they had stolen. Napoleon, too, carried away his own personal *treasure*, but on seeing the baggage trains that impeded the army, he was (the historian Thiers says) horror-struck. And yet with his experience of war, Napoleon did not order all the superfluous vehicles to be burned, as he had done with those of a certain general when approaching Moscow. He gazed at the *carriages* in which soldiers were riding and remarked that it was a very good thing, as those vehicles could be used to carry provisions, the sick, and the wounded.

The plight of the whole army resembled that of a wounded animal that feels it is perishing and does not know what it is doing. Studying the skillful tactics and aims of Napoleon and his army from the time it entered Moscow till it was destroyed is like studying the dying leaps and shudders of a mortally wounded animal. Very often a wounded animal, hearing a rustle, rushes straight at the hunter's gun, runs forward and back again, and hastens its own end. Napoleon, under pressure from his whole army, did the same thing. The rustle of the battle of Tarútino frightened the beast, and it rushed forward onto the hunter's gun, reached him, turned back, and finally—like any wild beast—ran back along the most disadvantageous and dangerous path, where the old scent was familiar.

During the whole of that period, Napoleon, who seems to us to have been the leader of all these movements—as the figurehead of a ship may

seem to a savage to guide the vessel—acted like a child who, holding a couple of strings inside a carriage, thinks he is driving it.

Early in the morning of the sixth of October, Pierre went out of the shed, and on returning stopped by the door to play with a little blue-gray dog, with a long body and short bandy legs, that jumped about him. This little dog lived in their shed, sleeping beside Platón at night; it sometimes made excursions into the town but always returned again. Probably it had never had an owner, and it still belonged to nobody and had no name. The French called the dog Azor; the soldier who told stories called it Femgálka; Platón and others called it Gray, or sometimes Flabby. The dog's lack of a master, a name, or even a breed or any definite color did not seem to trouble the blue-gray dog in the least. Its furry tail stood up firm and round as a plume, its bandy legs served it so well that it would often gracefully lift a hind leg and run very easily and quickly on three legs as if disdaining to use all four. Everything pleased the dog. Now it would roll on its back, yelping with delight, now bask in the sun with a thoughtful air of importance, and now frolic about playing with a chip of wood or a straw.

Pierre's attire by now consisted of a dirty torn shirt (the only remnant of his former clothing), a pair of soldier's trousers which by Platón's advice he tied with string round the ankles for warmth, and a peasant coat and cap. Physically Pierre had changed much during this time. He no longer seemed stout, though he still had the appearance of solidity and strength hereditary in his family. A beard and mustache covered the lower part of his face, and a tangle of hair, infested with lice, curled around his head like a cap. The look of his eyes was resolute, calm, and animatedly alert, as never before. The former slackness which had shown itself even in his eyes was now replaced by an energetic readiness for action and resistance. His feet were bare.

Pierre first looked down the field across which vehicles and horsemen were passing that morning, then into the distance across the river, then at

the dog who was pretending to be in earnest about biting him, and then at his bare feet which he placed with pleasure in various positions, moving his dirty thick big toes. Every time he looked at his bare feet a smile of animated self-satisfaction flitted across his face. The sight of them reminded him of all he had experienced and learned during these weeks and this recollection was pleasant to him.

For some days the weather had been calm and clear with slight frosts in the mornings—what is called an “old wives’ summer.”

In the sunshine the air was warm, and that warmth was particularly pleasant with the invigorating freshness of the morning frost still in the air.

On everything—far and near—lay the magic crystal glitter seen only at that time of autumn. The Sparrow Hills were visible in the distance, with the village, the church, and the large white house. The bare trees, the sand, the bricks and roofs of the houses, the green church spire, and the corners of the white house in the distance, all stood out in the transparent air in the most delicate outline and with unnatural clearness. Nearby could be seen the familiar ruins of a half-burned mansion occupied by the French, with lilac bushes still showing dark green beside the fence. And even that ruined and befouled house—which in dull weather was repulsively ugly—seemed quietly beautiful now, in the clear, motionless brilliance.

A French corporal, with coat unbuttoned in a homely way, a skullcap on his head, and a short pipe in his mouth, came from behind a corner of the shed and approached Pierre with a friendly wink.

“What sunshine, Monsieur Kiril!” (The French guards’ name for Pierre.) “Eh? Just like spring!”

And the French corporal leaned against the door and offered Pierre his pipe, though whenever he offered it Pierre always declined it.

“To be on the march in such weather...” the French corporal began.

Pierre inquired what was being said about leaving, and the French corporal told him that nearly all the troops were starting and there ought to

be an order about the prisoners that day. One of the Russian soldiers in the shed with Pierre was dying, and Pierre told the corporal that something should be done about him. The French corporal replied that Pierre need not worry about that as they had an ambulance and a permanent hospital and arrangements would be made for the sick and that everything that could happen had been foreseen by the authorities.

“Besides, you have only to say a word to our captain, you know. He is a man who never forgets anything. Speak to the captain when he makes his round, he will do anything for you.”

(Captain Ramballe of whom the French corporal spoke often had long chats with Pierre and showed him all sorts of favors.)

“‘You see, corporal,’ the captain said to me the other day. ‘Pierre is a man of education, who speaks French. He is a Russian seigneur who has had misfortunes, but he is a man. Pierre knows what’s what... If he wants anything and asks me, he won’t get a refusal. When one has studied, you see, one likes education and well-bred people.’ It is for your sake I mention it, Pierre. The other day if it had not been for you that affair would have ended ill.”

And after chatting a while longer, the French corporal went away. (The affair he had alluded to had happened a few days before—a fight between the prisoners and the French soldiers, in which Pierre had succeeded in pacifying his comrades.) Some of the prisoners who had heard Pierre talking to the corporal immediately asked what the French corporal had said. While Pierre was repeating what he had been told about the army leaving Moscow, a thin, sallow, tattered French soldier came up to the door of the shed. Rapidly and timidly raising his fingers to his forehead by way of greeting, he asked Pierre whether the soldier Platón to whom he had given a shirt to sew was in that shed.

A week before the French had had boot leather and linen issued to the prisoners, which they had given out to the prisoners to make up into boots

and shirts for the French guards.

“Ready, ready, dear fellow!” said Platón, coming out with a neatly folded shirt.

Platón, on account of the warm weather and for convenience at work, was wearing only trousers and a tattered shirt as black as soot. His hair was bound round, workman fashion, with a wisp of lime-tree bast, and his round face seemed rounder and pleasanter than ever.

“A promise is own brother to performance! I said Friday and here it is, ready,” said Platón, smiling and unfolding the shirt he had sewn.

The French soldier glanced around uneasily and then as if overcoming his hesitation, rapidly threw off his uniform and put on the shirt. He had a long, greasy, flowered silk waistcoat next to his sallow, thin bare body, but no shirt. He was evidently afraid the prisoners looking on would laugh at him, and thrust his head into the shirt hurriedly. None of the prisoners said a word.

“See, it fits well!” Platón kept repeating, pulling the shirt straight.

The French soldier, having pushed his head and hands through, without raising his eyes, looked down at the shirt and examined the seams.

“You see, dear man, this is not a sewing shop, and I had no proper tools; and, as they say, one needs a tool even to kill a louse,” said Platón with one of his round smiles, obviously pleased with his work.

“It’s good, quite good, thank you,” said the French soldier, in French, “but there must be some linen left over.”

“It will fit better still when it sets to your body,” said Platón, still admiring his handiwork. “You’ll be nice and comfortable...”

“Thanks, thanks, old fellow... But the bits left over?” said the French soldier again and smiled. He took out a ruble note and gave it to Platón. “But give me the pieces that are over.”

Pierre saw that Platón did not want to understand what the Frenchman was saying, and he looked on without interfering. Platón thanked the

Frenchman for the money and went on admiring his own work. The French soldier insisted on having the pieces returned that were left over and asked Pierre to translate what he said.

“What does he want the bits for?” said Platón. “They’d make fine leg bands for us. Well, never mind.”

And Platón, with a suddenly changed and saddened expression, took a small bundle of scraps from inside his shirt and gave it to the French soldier without looking at him. “Oh dear!” muttered Platón and went away. The French soldier looked at the linen, considered for a moment, then looked inquiringly at Pierre and, as if Pierre’s look had told him something, suddenly blushed and shouted in a squeaky voice:

“Platón! Eh, Platón! Keep them yourself!” And handing back the odd bits the French soldier turned and went out.

“There, look at that,” said Platón, swaying his head. “People said they were not Christians, but they too have souls. It’s what the old folk used to say: ‘A sweating hand’s an open hand, a dry hand’s close.’ He’s naked, but yet he’s given it back.”

Platón smiled thoughtfully and was silent awhile looking at the pieces.

“But they’ll make grand leg bands, dear friend,” Platón said and went back into the shed.

Four weeks had passed since Pierre had been taken prisoner and though the French had offered to move him from the men’s to the officers’ shed, he had stayed in the shed where he was first put.

In burned and devastated Moscow Pierre experienced almost the extreme limits of privation a man can endure; but thanks to his physical strength and health, of which he had till then been unconscious, and thanks especially to the fact that the privations came so gradually that it was impossible to say when they began, he endured his position not only lightly but joyfully. And just at this time, he obtained the tranquility and ease of mind he had formerly striven in vain to reach. He had long sought in

different ways that tranquility of mind, that inner harmony that had so impressed him in the soldiers at the battle of Borodinó. Pierre had sought it in philanthropy, in Freemasonry, in the dissipations of town life, in wine, in heroic feats of self-sacrifice, and in romantic love for Natasha; he had sought it by reasoning—and all these quests and experiments had failed him. And now without thinking about it he had found that peace and inner harmony only through the horror of death, through privation, and through what he recognized in Platón.

Those dreadful moments Pierre had lived through at the executions had forever washed away from his imagination and memory the agitating thoughts and feelings that had formerly seemed so important. It did not now occur to him to think of Russia, or the war, or politics, or Napoleon. It was plain to him that all these things were no business of his, and that he was not called on to judge concerning them and therefore could not do so. “Russia and summer weather are not bound together,” he thought, repeating words of Platón’s which he found strangely consoling. Pierre’s intention of killing Napoleon and his calculations of the cabalistic number of the beast of the Apocalypse now seemed to him meaningless and even ridiculous. His anger with Helene and anxiety that his name should not be smirched now seemed not merely trivial but even amusing. What concern was it of his that somewhere or other that woman was leading the life she preferred? What did it matter to anybody, and especially to him, whether or not they found out that their prisoner’s name was Pierre?

Pierre now often remembered his conversation with Andrei and quite agreed with him, though he understood Andrei’s thoughts somewhat differently. Andrei had thought and said that happiness could only be negative, but had said it with a shade of bitterness and irony as though he was really saying that all desire for positive happiness is implanted in us merely to torment us and never be satisfied. But Pierre believed it without any mental reservation. The absence of suffering, the satisfaction of one’s

needs, and consequent freedom in the choice of one's occupation, that is, of one's way of life, now seemed to Pierre to be indubitably man's highest happiness. Here and now for the first time, he fully appreciated the enjoyment of eating when he wanted to eat, drinking when he wanted to drink, sleeping when he wanted to sleep, of warmth when he was cold, of talking to a fellow man when he wished to talk and to hear a human voice. The satisfaction of one's needs—good food, cleanliness, and freedom—now that he was deprived of all this, seemed to Pierre to constitute perfect happiness; and the choice of occupation, that is, of his way of life—now that that was so restricted—seemed to him such an easy matter that he forgot that a superfluity of the comforts of life destroys all joy in satisfying one's needs, while great freedom in the choice of occupation—such freedom as his wealth, his education, and his social position had given him in his own life—is just what makes the choice of occupation insolubly difficult and destroys the desire and possibility of having an occupation.

All Pierre's daydreams now turned on the time when he would be free. Yet subsequently, and for the rest of his life, he thought and spoke with enthusiasm of that month of captivity, of those irrecoverable, strong, joyful sensations, and chiefly of the complete peace of mind and inner freedom that he experienced only during those weeks.

When on the first day he got up early, went out of the shed at dawn, and saw the cupolas and crosses of the New Convent of the Virgin still dark at first, the hoarfrost on the dusty grass, the Sparrow Hills, and the wooded banks above the winding river vanishing in the purple distance, when he felt the contact of the fresh air and heard the noise of the crows flying from Moscow across the field, and when afterward light gleamed from the east and the sun's rim appeared solemnly from behind a cloud, and the cupolas and crosses, the hoarfrost, the distance and the river, all began to sparkle in the glad light—Pierre felt a new joy and strength in life such as he had never before known. And this not only stayed with him during the whole of

his imprisonment but even grew in strength as the hardships of his position increased.

That feeling of alertness and of readiness for anything was still further strengthened in him by the high opinion his fellow prisoners formed of him soon after his arrival at the shed. With his knowledge of languages, the respect shown him by the French, his simplicity, his readiness to give anything asked of him (he received the allowance of three rubles a week made to officers); with his strength, which he showed to the soldiers by pressing nails into the walls of the hut; his gentleness to his companions, and his capacity for sitting still and thinking without doing anything (which seemed to them incomprehensible), he appeared to them a rather mysterious and superior being. The very qualities that had been a hindrance, if not actually harmful, to him in the world he had lived in—his strength, his disdain for the comforts of life, his absent-mindedness and simplicity—here among these people gave him almost the status of a hero. And Pierre felt that their opinion placed responsibilities upon him.

The French evacuation of Moscow began on the night between the sixth and seventh of October: kitchens and sheds were dismantled, carts loaded, and troops and baggage trains started.

At seven in the morning, a French convoy in marching trim, wearing shakos and carrying muskets, knapsacks, and enormous sacks, stood in front of the sheds, and animated French talk mingled with curses sounded all along the lines.

In the prisoners' shed, everyone was ready, dressed, belted, shod, and only awaited the order to start. The sick soldier, pale and thin with dark shadows around his eyes, alone sat in his place barefoot and not dressed. His eyes, prominent from the emaciation of his face, gazed inquiringly at his comrades who were paying no attention to him, and he moaned regularly and quietly. It was evidently not so much his sufferings that

caused him to moan (he had dysentery) as his fear and grief at being left alone.

Pierre, girt with a rope round his waist and wearing shoes Platón had made for him from some leather that a French soldier had torn off a tea chest and brought to have his boots mended with, went up to the sick man and squatted down beside him.

“You know, the French soldiers are not all going away! They have a hospital here. You may be better off than we others,” said Pierre.

“Oh, Lord! Oh, it will be the death of me! Oh Lord!” moaned the sick man in a louder voice.

“I’ll go and ask them again directly,” said Pierre, rising and going to the door of the shed.

Just as Pierre reached the door, the French corporal who had offered him a pipe the day before came up to it with two soldiers. The corporal and soldiers were in marching kit with knapsacks and shakos that had metal straps, and this headwear changed their familiar faces.

The French corporal came, according to orders, to shut the door. The prisoners had to be counted before being let out.

“Corporal, what will they do with the sick man?...” Pierre began.

But even as Pierre spoke, he began to doubt whether this was the French corporal he knew or a stranger, so unlike himself did the French corporal seem at that moment. Moreover, just as Pierre was speaking a sharp rattle of drums was suddenly heard from both sides. The corporal frowned at Pierre’s words and, uttering some meaningless oaths, slammed the door. The shed became semi-dark, and the sharp rattle of the drums on two sides drowned the sick man’s groans.

“There it is!... *It* again!...” said Pierre to himself, and an involuntary shudder ran down his spine. In the French corporal’s changed face, in the sound of his voice, in the stirring and deafening noise of the drums, Pierre recognized that mysterious, callous force which compelled people against

their will to kill their fellow men—that force the effect of which he had witnessed during the executions. To fear or to try to escape that force, to address entreaties or exhortations to those who served as its tools, was useless. Pierre knew this now. One had to wait and endure. He did not again go to the sick man, nor turn to look at him, but stood frowning by the door of the hut.

When that door was opened and the prisoners, crowding against one another like a flock of sheep, squeezed into the exit, Pierre pushed his way forward and approached that very French captain who as the French corporal had assured him was ready to do anything for him. Captain Ramballe was also in marching kit, and on his cold face appeared that same *it* which Pierre had recognized in the French corporal's words and in the roll of the drums.

“Pass on, pass on!” Captain Ramballe reiterated, frowning sternly, and looking at the prisoners who thronged past him.

Pierre went up to him, though he knew his attempt would be vain.

“What now?” Captain Ramballe asked with a cold look as if not recognizing Pierre.

Pierre told him about the sick man.

“He'll manage to walk, devil take him!” said Captain Ramballe. “Pass on, pass on!” he continued without looking at Pierre.

“But he is dying,” Pierre again began.

“Be so good...” shouted Captain Ramballe, frowning angrily.

“*Dram-da-da-dam, dam-dam...*” rattled the drums, and Pierre understood that this mysterious force completely controlled these men and that it was now useless to say any more.

The prisoners who were officers were separated from the enlisted soldiers and told to march in front. There were about thirty officers, with Pierre among them, and about three hundred men.

The officer prisoners, who had come from the other sheds, were all strangers to Pierre and much better dressed than he. They looked at him and at his shoes mistrustfully, as at an alien. Not far from him walked a fat major with a sallow, bloated, angry face, who was wearing a Kazán dressing gown tied around with a towel, and who evidently enjoyed the respect of his fellow prisoners. He kept one hand, in which he clasped his tobacco pouch, inside the bosom of his dressing gown and held the stem of his pipe firmly with the other. Panting and puffing, the major grumbled and growled at everybody because he thought he was being pushed and that they were all hurrying when they had nowhere to hurry to and were all surprised at something when there was nothing to be surprised at. Another, a thin little officer, was speaking to everyone, conjecturing where they were now being taken and how far they would get that day. An official in felt boots and wearing a commissariat uniform ran around from side to side and gazed at the ruins of Moscow, loudly announcing his observations as to what had been burned down and what this or that part of the city was that they could see. A third officer, who by his accent was a Pole, disputed with the commissariat officer, arguing that he was mistaken in his identification of the different wards of Moscow.

“What are you disputing about?” said the major angrily. “What does it matter whether it is St. Nicholas or St. Blasius? You see it’s burned down, and there’s an end to it... What are you pushing for? Isn’t the road wide enough?” said he, turning to a man behind him who was not pushing him at all.

“Oh, oh, oh! What have they done?” the prisoners on one side and another were heard saying as they gazed at the charred ruins. “All beyond the river, and Zúbova, and in the Krémelin... Just look! There’s not half of it left. Yes, I told you—the whole quarter beyond the river, and so it is.”

“Well, you know it’s burned, so what’s the use of talking?” said the major.

As they passed near a church in the Khamóvníki (one of the few unburned quarters of Moscow) the whole mass of prisoners suddenly started to one side and exclamations of horror and disgust were heard.

“Ah, the villains! What heathens! Yes; dead, dead, so he is... And smeared with something!”

Pierre drew near the church where the thing was that evoked these exclamations, and dimly made out something leaning against the palings surrounding the church. From the words of his comrades who saw better than he did, he found that this was the body of a man, set upright against the palings with its face smeared with soot.

“Go on! What the devil... Go on! Thirty thousand devils!...” the convoy guards began cursing and the French soldiers, with fresh virulence, drove away with their swords the crowd of prisoners who were gazing at the dead man.

Through the cross streets of the Khamóvníki quarter, the prisoners marched, followed only by their escort and the vehicles and wagons belonging to that escort, but when they reached the supply stores they came among a huge and closely packed train of artillery mingled with private vehicles.

At the bridge they all halted, waiting for those in front to get across. From the bridge, they had a view of endless lines of moving baggage trains before and behind them. To the right, where the Kalúga road turns near Neskúchny, endless rows of troops and carts stretched away into the distance. These were troops of Beauharnais’ corps which had started before any of the others. Behind, along the riverside and across the Stone Bridge, were Général Ney’s troops and transport.

War Minister Davout’s troops, in whose charge were the prisoners, were crossing the Crimean bridge and some were already debouching into the Kalúga road. But the baggage trains stretched out so that the last of Beauharnais’ train had not yet got out of Moscow and reached the Kalúga

road when the vanguard of Général Ney's army was already emerging from the Great Ordýnka Street.

When the prisoners had crossed the Crimean bridge they moved a few steps forward, halted, and again moved on, and from all sides, vehicles and men crowded closer and closer together. They advanced the few hundred paces that separated the bridge from the Kalúga road, taking more than an hour to do so, and came out upon the square where the streets of the Transmoskvá ward and the Kalúga road converge, and the prisoners jammed close together had to stand for some hours at that crossway. From all sides, like the roar of the sea, were heard the rattle of wheels, the tramp of feet, and incessant shouts of anger and abuse. Pierre stood pressed against the wall of a charred house, listening to that noise that mingled in his imagination with the roll of the drums.

To get a better view, several officer prisoners climbed onto the wall of the half-burned house against which Pierre was leaning.

"What crowds! Just look at the crowds!... They've loaded goods even on the cannon! Look there, those are furs!" they exclaimed. "Just see what the blackguards have looted... There! See what that one has behind in the cart... Why, those are settings taken from some icons, by heaven!... Oh, the rascals!... See how that fellow has loaded himself up, he can hardly walk! Good lord, they've even grabbed those chaises!... See that fellow there sitting on the trunks... Heavens! They're fighting."

"That's right, hit him on the snout—on his snout! Like this, we shan't get away before evening. Look, look there... Why, that must be Napoleon's own. See what horses! And the monograms with a crown! It's like a portable house... That fellow's dropped his sack and doesn't see it. Fighting again... A woman with a baby, and not bad-looking either! Yes, I dare say, that's the way they'll let you pass... Just look, there's no end to it. Russian wenches, by heaven, so they are! In carriages—see how comfortably they've settled themselves!"

Again, as at the church in Khamóvniki, a wave of curiosity bore all the prisoners forward onto the road, and Pierre, thanks to his stature, saw over the heads of the others what so attracted their curiosity. In three carriages involved among the munition carts, closely squeezed together, sat women with rouged faces, dressed in glaring colors, who were shouting something in shrill voices.

From the moment Pierre had recognized the appearance of the mysterious force nothing had seemed to him strange or dreadful: neither the corpse smeared with soot for fun nor these women hurrying away nor the burned ruins of Moscow. All that he now witnessed scarcely made an impression on him—as if his soul, making ready for a hard struggle, refused to receive impressions that might weaken it.

The women's vehicles drove by. Behind them came more carts, soldiers, wagons, soldiers, gun carriages, carriages, soldiers, ammunition carts, more soldiers, and now and then women.

Pierre did not see the people as individuals but saw their movement.

All these people and horses seemed driven forward by some invisible power. During the hour Pierre watched them they all came flowing from the different streets with one and the same desire to get on quickly; they all jostled one another, began to grow angry and to fight, white teeth gleamed, brows frowned, ever the same words of abuse flew from side to side, and all the faces bore the same swaggeringly resolute and coldly cruel expression that had struck Pierre that morning on the corporal's face when the drums were beating.

It was not till nearly evening that the French officer commanding the escort collected his men and with shouts and quarrels forced his way in among the baggage trains, and the prisoners, hemmed in on all sides, emerged onto the Kalúga road.

The prisoners marched very quickly, without resting, and halted only when the sun began to set. The baggage carts drew up close together and

the men began to prepare for their night's rest. They all appeared angry and dissatisfied. For a long time, oaths, angry shouts, and fighting could be heard from all sides. A carriage that followed the escort ran into one of the carts and knocked a hole in it with its pole. Several soldiers ran toward the cart from different sides: some beat the carriage horses on their heads, turning them aside, others fought among themselves, and Pierre saw that one German was badly wounded on the head by a sword.

It seemed that all these men, now that they had stopped amid fields in the chill dusk of the autumn evening, experienced one and the same feeling of unpleasant awakening from the hurry and eagerness to push on that had seized them at the start. Once at a standstill they all seemed to understand that they did not yet know where they were going and that much that was painful and difficult awaited them on this journey.

During this halt, the French guards treated the prisoners even worse than they had done at the start. It was here that the prisoners for the first time received horseflesh for their meat ration.

From the officer down to the lowest soldier, they showed what seemed like personal spite against each of the prisoners, in unexpected contrast to their former friendly relations.

This spite increased still more when, on calling over the roll of prisoners, it was found that in the bustle of leaving Moscow one Russian prisoner, who had pretended to suffer from colic, had escaped. Pierre saw a French soldier beat a Russian prisoner cruelly for straying too far from the road, and heard his friend Captain Ramballe reprimand and threaten to court-martial a noncommissioned officer on account of the escape of the Russian prisoner. To the noncommissioned officer's excuse that the prisoner was ill and could not walk, the French captain replied that the order was to shoot those prisoners who lagged behind. Pierre felt that that fatal force that had crushed him during the executions, but which he had not felt during his imprisonment, now again controlled his existence. It was terrible, but he felt

that in proportion to the efforts of that fatal force to crush him, there grew and strengthened in his soul a power of life independent of it.

Pierre ate his supper of buckwheat soup with horseflesh and chatted with his comrades.

Neither Pierre nor any of the others spoke of what they had seen in Moscow, or of the roughness of their treatment by the French, or of the order to shoot them which had been announced to them. As if in reaction to the worsening of their position, the prisoners were all particularly animated and gay. They spoke of personal reminiscences, of amusing scenes they had witnessed during the campaign and avoided all talk of their present situation.

The sun had set long since. Bright stars shone out here and there in the sky. A red glow as of a conflagration spread above the horizon from the rising full moon, and that vast red ball swayed strangely in the gray haze. It grew light. The evening was ending, but the night had not yet come. Pierre got up and left his new companions, crossing between the campfires to the other side of the road where he had been told the common soldier prisoners were stationed. He wanted to talk to them. On the road, he was stopped by a French sentinel who ordered him back.

Pierre turned back, not to his companions by the campfire, but to an unharnessed cart where there was nobody. Tucking his legs under him and dropping his head he sat down on the cold ground by the wheel of the cart and remained motionless for a long while sunk in thought. Suddenly Pierre burst out into a fit of his broad, good-natured laughter, so loud that men from various sides turned with surprise to see what this strange and evidently solitary laughter could mean.

“Ha-ha-ha!” laughed Pierre. And he said aloud to himself: “The French soldier did not let me pass. They took me and shut me up. They hold me captive. What, me? Me? My immortal soul? Ha-ha-ha! Ha-ha-ha!...” and he laughed till tears started to his eyes.

A prisoner got up and came to see what this queer big fellow was laughing at all by himself. Pierre stopped laughing, got up, went farther away from the inquisitive prisoner, and looked around him.

The huge, endless bivouac that had previously resounded with the crackling of campfires and the voices of many men had grown quiet, the red campfires were growing paler and dying down. High up in the light sky hung the full moon. Forests and fields beyond the camp, unseen before, were now visible in the distance. And farther still, beyond those forests and fields, the bright, oscillating, limitless distance lured one to itself. Pierre glanced up at the sky and the twinkling stars in its faraway depths. "And all that is me, all that is within me, and it is all I!" thought Pierre. "And they caught all that and put it into a shed boarded up with planks!" He smiled and went and lay down to sleep beside his companions.

In the early days of October, another envoy came to Marshal Kutuzov with a letter from Napoleon proposing peace and falsely dated from Moscow, though Napoleon was already not far from Marshal Kutuzov on the old Kalúga road. Marshal Kutuzov replied to this letter as he had done to the one formerly brought by Lauriston, saying that there could be no question of peace.

Soon after that, a report was received from General Dórokhov's guerrilla detachment operating to the left of Tarútino that troops of the Général Broussier's division had been seen at Formínsk and that being separated from the rest of the French army they might easily be destroyed. The soldiers and officers again demanded action. Generals on the staff, excited by the memory of the easy victory at Tarútino, urged Marshal Kutuzov to carry out General Dórokhov's suggestion. Marshal Kutuzov did not consider any offensive necessary. The result was a compromise that was inevitable: a small detachment was sent to Formínsk to attack the Général Broussier.

By a strange coincidence, this task, which turned out to be a most difficult and important one, was entrusted to General Dokhtúrov—that same modest little General Dokhtúrov whom no one had described to us as drawing up plans of battles, dashing about in front of regiments, showering crosses on batteries, and so on, and who was thought to be and was spoken of as undecided and undiscerning—but whom we find commanding wherever the position was most difficult all through the Russo-French wars from Austerlitz to the year 1813. At Austerlitz, General Dokhtúrov remained last at the Augeszd dam, rallying the regiments, saving what was possible when all were flying and perishing and not a single general was left in the rear guard. Ill with fever, General Dokhtúrov went to Smolénsk with twenty thousand men to defend the town against Napoleon's whole army. In Smolénsk, at the Malákhov Gate, General Dokhtúrov had hardly dozed off in a paroxysm of fever before he was awakened by the bombardment of the town—and Smolénsk held out all day long. At the battle of Borodinó, when Major-General Bagration was killed and nine-tenths of the men of our left flank had fallen and the full force of the French artillery fire was directed against it, the man sent there was this same irresolute and undiscerning General Dokhtúrov—Marshal Kutuzov hastening to rectify a mistake he had made by sending someone else there first. And the quiet little General Dokhtúrov rode thither, and Borodinó became the greatest glory of the Russian army. Many heroes have been described to us in verse and prose, but of General Dokhtúrov scarcely a word has been said.

It was General Dokhtúrov again whom they sent to Formínsk and from there to Málo-Yaroslávets, the place where the last battle with the French was fought and where the obvious disintegration of the French army began; and we are told of many geniuses and heroes of that period of the campaign, but of General Dokhtúrov nothing or very little is said and that dubiously.

And this silence about General Dokhtúrov is the clearest testimony to his merit.

It is natural for a man who does not understand the workings of a machine to imagine that a shaving that has fallen into it by chance and is interfering with its action and tossing about in it is its most important part. The man who does not understand the construction of the machine cannot conceive that the small connecting cogwheel which revolves quietly is one of the most essential parts of the machine and not the shaving which merely harms and hinders the working.

On the tenth of October when General Dokhtúrov had stopped at the village of Aristóvo, preparing faithfully to execute the orders he had received, the whole French army having, in its convulsive movement, reached Général Murat's position apparently in order to give battle—suddenly without any reason turned off to the left and began to enter Formínsk, where only Général Broussier had been till then. At that time General Dokhtúrov had under his command, besides his own detachment, the two small guerrilla detachments.

On the evening of October 11, a Russian officer came to the Aristóvo headquarters with a French prisoner. The prisoner said that the French troops that had entered Formínsk that day were the vanguard of the whole army, that Napoleon was there and the whole French army had left Moscow four days previously. That same evening, a house serf who had come from Bórovsk said he had seen an immense army entering the town. Some Cossacks of General Dokhtúrov's detachment reported having sighted the French Guards marching along the road to Bórovsk. From all these reports it was evident that where the Russians had expected to meet a single division, there was now the whole French army marching from Moscow in an unexpected direction—along the Kalúga road. General Dokhtúrov was unwilling to undertake any action, as it was not clear to him now what he ought to do because he had been ordered to attack at Formínsk. But only

one French regiment had been there at that time and now the whole French army was there. While General Ermólov wished to act on his own judgment, General Dokhtúrov insisted that he must have Marshal Kutuzov's instructions. So it was decided to send a dispatch to the staff.

For this purpose, a capable officer, Captain Bolkhovítinov, was chosen, who was to explain the whole affair by word of mouth, besides delivering a written report. Toward midnight Captain Bolkhovítinov, having received the dispatch and verbal instructions, galloped off to the General Staff accompanied by a Cossack with spare horses.

It was a warm, dark, autumn night. It had been raining for four days. Having changed horses twice and galloped twenty miles in an hour and a half over a sticky, muddy road, Captain Bolkhovítinov reached the town of Litashëvka after one o'clock at night. Dismounting at a cottage on whose wattle fence hung a signboard that said General Staff, and throwing down his reins, he entered a dark passage.

"Bring me to General Konovnítsyn, quick! It's very important!" said Captain Bolkhovítinov to someone who had risen and was sniffing in the dark passage.

"General Konovnítsyn has been very unwell since the evening and this is the third night he has not slept," said the orderly pleadingly in a whisper. "You should wake the captain first."

"But this is very important, it's from General Dokhtúrov," said Captain Bolkhovítinov, entering the open door which he had found by feeling in the dark.

The orderly had gone in before him and began waking somebody.

"Your honor, your honor! A courier."

"What? What's that? From whom?" came a sleepy voice.

"The message is from General Dokhtúrov. Napoleon is at Formínsk," said Captain Bolkhovítinov, unable to see in the dark who was speaking but guessing by the voice that it was not General Konovnítsyn.

The man who had wakened yawned and stretched himself.

“I don’t like waking General Konovnýtsyn,” he said, fumbling for something. “He is very ill. Perhaps this is only a rumor.”

“Here is the dispatch,” said Captain Bolkhovítinov. “My orders are to give it at once to the general on duty.”

“Wait a moment, I’ll light a candle. You damned rascal, where do you always hide it?” said the voice of the man who was stretching himself, to the orderly. (This was Shcherbínin, General Konovnýtsyn’s adjutant.) “I’ve found it, I’ve found it!” he added.

The orderly was striking a light and Adjutant Shcherbínin was fumbling for something on the candlestick.

“Oh, the nasty beasts!” said Adjutant Shcherbínin with disgust.

By the light of the sparks, Captain Bolkhovítinov saw Adjutant Shcherbínin’s youthful face as he held the candle and the face of another man who was still asleep. This was General Konovnýtsyn.

When the flame of the sulfur splinters kindled by the tinder burned up, first blue and then red, Adjutant Shcherbínin lit the tallow candle from the candlestick of which the cockroaches that had been gnawing it were running away, and looked at the messenger. Captain Bolkhovítinov was bespattered all over with mud and had smeared his face by wiping it with his sleeve.

“Who gave the report?” inquired Adjutant Shcherbínin, taking the envelope.

“The news is reliable,” said Captain Bolkhovítinov. “Prisoners, Cossacks, and the scouts all say the same thing.”

“There’s nothing to be done, we’ll have to wake him,” said Adjutant Shcherbínin, rising and going up to the man in the nightcap who lay covered by a greatcoat. “General Konovnýtsyn!” said he. (General Konovnýtsyn did not stir.) “To the General Staff!” Adjutant Shcherbínin

said with a smile, knowing that those words would be sure to arouse the general.

And in fact, the head in the nightcap was lifted at once. On General Konovnýtsyn's handsome, resolute face with cheeks flushed by fever, there still remained for an instant a faraway dreamy expression remote from present affairs, but then he suddenly started and his face assumed its habitual calm and firm appearance.

"Well, what is it? From whom?" General Konovnýtsyn asked immediately but without hurry, blinking at the light.

While listening to Captain Bolkhovítinov's report, General Konovnýtsyn broke the seal and read the dispatch. Hardly had he done so before he lowered his legs in their woolen stockings to the earthen floor and began putting on his boots. Then he took off his nightcap, combed his hair over his temples, and donned his cap.

"Did you get here quickly? Let us go to Marshal Kutuzov."

General Konovnýtsyn had understood at once that the news brought was of great importance and that no time must be lost. He did not consider or ask himself whether the news was good or bad. That did not interest him. General Konovnýtsyn regarded the whole business of the war not with his intelligence or his reason but by something else. There was within him a deep unexpressed conviction that all would be well, but that one must not trust to this and still less speak about it, but must only attend to one's own work. And he did his work, giving his whole strength to the task.

General Konovnýtsyn, like General Dokhtúrov, seems to have been included merely for propriety's sake in the list of the so-called heroes of 1812—the Barclays, Raévskis, General Ermólovs, General Platovs, and Milorádoviches. Like General Dokhtúrov, General Konovnýtsyn had the reputation of being a man of very limited capacity and information, and like General Dokhtúrov, he never made plans of battle but was always found where the situation was most difficult. Since his appointment as general on

duty, he had always slept with his door open, giving orders that every messenger should be allowed to wake him up. In battle, he was always under fire, so that Marshal Kutuzov reproved him for it and feared to send him to the front, and like General Dokhtúrov he was one of those unnoticed cogwheels that, without clatter or noise, constitute the most essential part of the machine.

Coming out of the hut into the damp, dark night General Konovnítsyn frowned—partly from increased pain in his head and partly at the unpleasant thought that occurred to him, of how all that nest of influential men on the staff would be stirred up by this news, especially General Bennigsen, who ever since Tarútino had been at daggers drawn with Marshal Kutuzov; and how they would make suggestions, quarrel, issue orders, and rescind them. And this premonition was disagreeable to him though he knew it could not be helped.

And in fact, Toll, to whom he went to communicate the news, immediately began to expound his plans to a general sharing his quarters, until General Konovnítsyn, who listened in weary silence, reminded him that they must go to see Marshal Kutuzov.

Marshal Kutuzov like all old people did not sleep much at night. He often fell asleep unexpectedly in the daytime, but at night, lying on his bed without undressing, he generally remained awake thinking.

So Marshal Kutuzov lay now on his bed, supporting his large, heavy, scarred head on his plump hand, with his one eye open, meditating and peering into the darkness.

Since General Bennigsen, who corresponded with the Tzar and had more influence than anyone else on the staff, had begun to avoid him, Marshal Kutuzov was more at ease as to the possibility of himself and his troops being obliged to take part in useless aggressive movements. The lesson of the Tarútino battle and of the day before it, which Marshal

Kutuzov remembered with pain, must, he thought, have some effect on others too.

“They must understand that we can only lose by taking the offensive. Patience and time are my warriors, my champions,” thought Marshal Kutuzov. He knew that an apple should not be plucked while it is green. It will fall off itself when ripe, but if picked unripe the apple is spoiled, the tree is harmed, and your teeth are set on edge. Like an experienced sportsman he knew that the beast was wounded, and wounded as only the whole strength of Russia could have wounded it, but whether it was mortally wounded or not was still an undecided question. Now by the fact of Lauriston and Barthélemi having been sent, and by the reports of the guerrillas, Marshal Kutuzov was almost sure that the wound was mortal. But he needed further proof and it was necessary to wait.

“They want to run to see how they have wounded it. Wait and we shall see! Continual maneuvers, continual advances!” thought Marshal Kutuzov. “What for? Only to distinguish themselves! As if fighting were fun. They are like children from whom one can’t get any sensible account of what has happened because they all want to show how well they can fight. But that’s not what is needed now.

“And what ingenious maneuvers they all propose to me! It seems to them that when they have thought of two or three contingencies” (he remembered the plan sent him from St. Petersburg) “they have foreseen everything. But the contingencies are endless.”

The undecided question as to whether the wound inflicted on the French at Borodinó was mortal or not had hung over Marshal Kutuzov’s head for a whole month. On the one hand, the French had occupied Moscow. On the other hand, Marshal Kutuzov felt assured with all his being that the terrible blow into which he and all the Russians had put their whole strength must have been mortal. But in any case, proofs were needed; he had waited a whole month for them and grew more impatient the longer he waited. Lying

on his bed during those sleepless nights Marshal Kutuzov did just what he reproached those younger generals for doing. He imagined all sorts of possible contingencies, just like the younger men, but with this difference, he saw thousands of contingencies instead of two or three and based nothing on them. The longer he thought the more contingencies presented themselves. He imagined all sorts of movements of the Napoleonic army as a whole or in sections—against St. Petersburg, or against him, or to outflank him. He thought too of the possibility (which he feared most of all) that Napoleon might fight him with his own weapon and remain in Moscow awaiting him. Marshal Kutuzov even imagined that Napoleon's army might turn back through Medýn and Yukhnów, but the one thing he could not foresee was what happened—the insane, convulsive stampede of Napoleon's army during its first eleven days after leaving Moscow: a stampede which made possible what Marshal Kutuzov had not yet even dared to think of—the complete extermination of the French. General Dórokhov's report about Général Broussier's division, the guerrillas' reports of distress in Napoleon's army, and rumors of preparations for leaving Moscow, all confirmed the supposition that the French army was beaten and preparing for flight. But these were only suppositions, which seemed important to the younger men but not to Marshal Kutuzov. With his sixty years' experience, he knew what value to attach to rumors, knew how apt people who desire anything are to group all news so that it appears to confirm what they desire, and he knew how readily in such cases they omit all that makes for the contrary. And the more he desired it the less Marshal Kutuzov allowed himself to believe it. This question absorbed all his mental powers. All else was to him only life's customary routine. To such customary routine belonged his conversations with the staff, the letters he wrote to Madame de Staël, the reading of novels, the distribution of awards, his correspondence with St. Petersburg, and so on. But the destruction of

the French, which Marshal Kutuzov alone foresaw, was his heart's one desire.

On the night of the eleventh of October, Marshal Kutuzov lay leaning on his arm and thinking of that.

There was a stir in the next room and he heard the steps of Toll, General Konovnitsyn, and Bolkhovitinov.

"Eh, who's there? Come in, come in! What news?" Marshal Kutuzov called out to them.

While a footman was lighting a candle, Toll communicated the substance of the news.

"Who brought it?" asked Marshal Kutuzov with a look which, when the candle was lit, struck Toll by its cold severity.

"There can be no doubt about it, Marshal Kutuzov."

"Call him in, call him here."

Marshal Kutuzov sat up with one leg hanging down from the bed and his big paunch resting against the other which was doubled under him. He screwed up his seeing eye to scrutinize Captain Bolkhovitinov more carefully as if wishing to read in his face what preoccupied his own mind.

"Tell me, tell me, friend," said Marshal Kutuzov to Captain Bolkhovitinov in his low, aged voice, as he pulled together the shirt which gaped open on his chest, "come nearer—nearer. What news have you brought me? Eh? That Napoleon has left Moscow? Are you sure? Eh?"

Captain Bolkhovitinov gave a detailed account from the beginning of all he had been told to report.

"Speak quicker, quicker! Don't torture me!" Marshal Kutuzov interrupted him.

Captain Bolkhovitinov told him everything and was then silent, awaiting instructions. Toll was beginning to say something but Marshal Kutuzov checked him. He tried to say something, but his face suddenly puckered and wrinkled; Marshal Kutuzov waved his arm at Toll and turned

to the opposite side of the room, to the corner darkened by the icons that hung there.

“Oh Lord, my Creator, Thou has heard our prayer...” said Marshal Kutuzov in a tremulous voice with folded hands. “Russia is saved. I thank Thee, Oh, Lord!” and he wept.

From the time he received this news to the end of the campaign, all of Marshal Kutuzov’s activity was directed toward restraining his troops, by authority, by guile, and by entreaty, from useless attacks, maneuvers, or encounters with the perishing enemy. General Dokhtúrov went to Málo-Yaroslávets, but Marshal Kutuzov lingered with the main army and gave orders for the evacuation of Kalúga—a retreat beyond which town seemed to him quite possible.

Everywhere Marshal Kutuzov retreated, but the enemy without waiting for his retreat fled in the opposite direction.

Napoleon’s historians describe to us his skilled maneuvers at Tarútino and Málo-Yaroslávets and make conjectures as to what would have happened had Napoleon been in time to penetrate into the rich southern provinces.

But not to speak of the fact that nothing prevented Napoleon from advancing into those southern provinces (for the Russian army did not bar his way), the historians forget that nothing could have saved Napoleon’s army, for then already it bore within itself the germs of inevitable ruin. How could the French army—which had found abundant supplies in Moscow and had trampled them underfoot instead of keeping them, and on arriving at Smolénsk had looted provisions instead of storing them—how could the French army recuperate in Kalúga province, which was inhabited by Russians such as those who lived in Moscow, and where a fire had the same property of consuming what was set ablaze?

The French army could not recover anywhere. Since the battle of Borodinó and the pillage of Moscow it had borne within itself, as it were,

the chemical elements of dissolution.

The members of what had once been an army—Napoleon himself and all his soldiers—fled without knowing whither, each concerned only to make his escape as quickly as possible from this position, of the hopelessness of which they were all more or less vaguely conscious.

So it came about that at the council at Málo-Yaroslávets, when the French généraux pretending to confer together expressed various opinions, all mouths were closed by the opinion uttered by the simple-minded soldier Mouton who, speaking last, said what they all felt: that the one thing needful was to get away as quickly as possible; and no one, not even Napoleon, could say anything against that truth which they all recognized.

But though they all realized that it was necessary to get away, there still remained a feeling of shame at admitting that they must flee. An external shock was needed to overcome that shame, and this shock came in due time. It was what the French called “*the cheer of Napoleon.*”

The day after the council at Málo-Yaroslávets, Napoleon rode out early in the morning amid the lines of his army with his suite of generals and an escort, on the pretext of inspecting the army and the scene of the previous and of the impending battle. Some Cossacks on the prowl for booty fought with Napoleon and very nearly captured him. If the Cossacks did not capture Napoleon then, what saved Napoleon was the very thing that was destroying the French army, the booty on which the Cossacks fell. Here as at Tarútino, the Russian Cossacks went after plunder, leaving the French soldiers. Disregarding Napoleon they rushed after the plunder and Napoleon managed to escape.

When *children of the Don* might so easily have taken Napoleon himself in the midst of his army, it was clear that there was nothing for it but to fly as fast as possible along the nearest, familiar road. Napoleon with his forty-year-old stomach understood that hint, not feeling his former agility and boldness, and under the influence of the fright the Cossacks had given him,

Napoleon at once agreed with Mouton and issued orders—as the historians tell us—to retreat by the Smolénsk road.

That Napoleon agreed with Mouton, and that the French army retreated, does not prove that Napoleon caused the army to retreat, but that the forces which influenced the whole army and directed it along the Mozháysk (that is, the Smolénsk) road acted simultaneously on him also.

A man in motion always devises an aim for that motion. To be able to go a thousand miles he must imagine that something good awaits him at the end of those thousand miles. One must have the prospect of a promised land to have the strength to move.

The promised land for the French during their advance had been Moscow and during their retreat the promised land was their native land. But that native land was too far off, and for a man going a thousand miles it is absolutely necessary to set aside his final goal and to say to himself: “Today I shall get to a place twenty-five miles off where I shall rest and spend the night,” and during the first day’s journey that resting place eclipses his ultimate goal and attracts all his hopes and desires. And the impulses felt by a single person are always magnified in a crowd.

For the French retreating along the old Smolénsk road, the final goal—their native land—was too remote, and their immediate goal was Smolénsk, toward which all their desires and hopes, enormously intensified in the mass, urged them on. It was not that they knew that much food and fresh troops awaited them in Smolénsk, nor that they were told so (on the contrary their superior officers, and Napoleon himself, knew that provisions were scarce there), but because this alone could give them strength to move on and endure their present privations. So both those who knew and those who did not know deceived themselves and pushed on to Smolénsk as to a promised land.

Coming out onto the high road, the French fled with surprising energy and unheard-of rapidity toward the goal they had fixed on. Besides the

common impulse which bound the whole crowd of French into one mass and supplied them with a certain energy, there was another cause binding them together—their great numbers. As with the physical law of gravity, their enormous mass drew the individual human atoms to itself. In their hundreds of thousands, they moved like a whole nation.

Each of the French soldiers desired nothing more than to give himself up as a prisoner to escape from all this horror and misery; but on the one hand, the force of this common attraction to Smolénsk, their goal, drew each of them in the same direction; on the other hand an army corps could not surrender to a company, and though the French availed themselves of every convenient opportunity to detach themselves and to surrender on the slightest decent pretext, such pretexts did not always occur. Their very numbers and their crowded and swift movement deprived them of that possibility and rendered it not only difficult but impossible for the Russians to stop this movement, to which the French were directing all their energies. Beyond a certain limit, no mechanical disruption of the body could hasten the process of decomposition.

A lump of snow cannot be melted instantaneously. There is a certain limit of time in less than which no amount of heat can melt the snow. On the contrary the greater the heat the more solidified the remaining snow becomes.

Of the Russian commanders, Marshal Kutuzov alone understood this. When the flight of the French army along the Smolénsk road became well-defined, what General Konovnítsyn had foreseen on the night of the eleventh of October began to occur. The superior officers all wanted to distinguish themselves, to cut off, to seize, to capture, and to overthrow the French, and all clamored for action.

Marshal Kutuzov alone used all his power (and such power is very limited in the case of any Marshal) to prevent an attack.

Marshal Kutuzov could not tell them what we say now: “Why fight, why block the road, losing our own men and inhumanly slaughtering unfortunate wretches? What is the use of that, when a third of their army has melted away on the road from Moscow to Vyázma without any battle?” But drawing from his aged wisdom what they could understand, he told them of the golden bridge, and they laughed at and slandered him, flinging themselves on, rending and exulting over the dying beast.

General Ermólov, General Milorádovich, General Platov, and others in proximity to the French near Vyázma could not resist their desire to cut off and break up two French corps, and by way of reporting their intention to Marshal Kutuzov, they sent him a blank sheet of paper in an envelope.

And try as Marshal Kutuzov might to restrain the troops, our men attacked, trying to bar the road. Russian infantry regiments, we are told, advanced to the attack with music and with drums beating, and killed and lost thousands of men.

But the Russian troops did not cut off or overthrow anybody and the French army, closing up more firmly at the danger, continued, while steadily melting away, to pursue its fatal path to Smolénsk.

BOOK 14: 1812



The Battle of Borodinó, with the occupation of Moscow that followed it and the flight of the French without further conflicts, is one of the most instructive phenomena in history.

All historians agree that the external activity of states and nations in their conflicts with one another is expressed in wars and that as a direct result of greater or less success in war the political strength of states and nations increases or decreases.

Strange as may be the historical account of how some king or Tzar, having quarreled with another, collects an army, fights his enemy's army, gains a victory by killing three, five, or ten thousand men, and subjugates a kingdom and an entire nation of several million, all the facts of history (as far as we know it) confirm the truth of the statement that the greater or lesser success of one army against another is the cause, or at least an essential indication, of an increase or decrease in the strength of the nation—even though it is unintelligible why the defeat of an army—a hundredth part of a nation—should oblige that whole nation to submit. An army gains a victory, and at once the rights of the conquering nation have increased to the detriment of the defeated. An army has suffered defeat, and at once a people loses its rights in proportion to the severity of the reverse, and if its army suffers a complete defeat the nation is quite subjugated.

So according to history, it has been found from the most ancient times, and so it is to our own day. All of Napoleon's wars serve to confirm this rule. In proportion to the defeat of the Austrian army Austria loses its rights, and the rights and strength of France increase. The victories of the French at Jena and Auerstädt destroy the independent existence of Prussia.

But then, in 1812, the French gained a victory near Moscow. Moscow is taken and after that, with no further battles, it is not Russia that ceases to exist, but the French army of six hundred thousand, and then Napoleonic France itself. To strain the facts to fit the rules of history: to say that the field of battle at Borodinó remained in the hands of the Russians, or that after Moscow there were other battles that destroyed Napoleon's army, is impossible.

After the French victory at Borodinó, there was no general engagement nor any that were at all serious, yet the French army ceased to exist. What does this mean? If it were an example taken from the history of China, we might say that it was not a historic phenomenon (which is the historians' usual expedient when anything does not fit their standards); if the matter concerned some brief conflict in which only a small number of troops took part, we might treat it as an exception; but this event occurred before our fathers' eyes, and for them, it was a question of the life or death of their fatherland, and it happened in the greatest of all known wars.

The period of the campaign of 1812 from the battle of Borodinó to the expulsion of the French proved that winning a battle does not produce a conquest and is not even an invariable indication of conquest; it proved that the force which decides the fate of peoples lies not in the conquerors, nor even in armies and battles, but in something else.

The French historians, describing the condition of the French army before it left Moscow, affirm that all was in order in the French army, except the cavalry, the artillery, and the transport—there was no forage for

the horses or the cattle. That was a misfortune no one could remedy, for the peasants of the district burned their hay rather than let the French have it.

The victory that the French gained did not bring the usual results because the peasants Karp and Vlas (who after the French had evacuated Moscow drove in their carts to pillage the town and personally failed to manifest any heroic feelings), and the whole innumerable multitude of such peasants, did not bring their hay to Moscow for the high price offered them, but burned it instead.

Let us imagine two men who have come out to fight a duel with rapiers according to all the rules of the art of fencing. The fencing has gone on for some time; suddenly one of the combatants, feeling himself wounded and understanding that the matter is no joke but concerns his life, throws down his rapier, and seizing the first cudgel that comes to hand begins to brandish it. Then let us imagine that the combatant with the cudgel, who so sensibly employed the best and simplest means to attain his end, was at the same time influenced by traditions of chivalry and, desiring to conceal the facts of the case, insisted that he had gained his victory with the rapier according to all the rules of art. One can imagine what confusion and obscurity would result from such an account of the duel.

The fencer who demanded a contest according to the rules of fencing was the French army; his opponent who threw away the rapier and snatched up the cudgel was the Russian people; those who try to explain the matter according to the rules of fencing are the historians who have described the event.

After the burning of Smolénsk, a war began which did not follow any previous traditions of war. The burning of towns and villages, the retreats after battles, the blow dealt at Borodinó and the renewed retreat, the burning of Moscow, the capture of marauders, the seizure of transports, and the guerrilla war were all departures from the rules.

Napoleon felt this, and from the time he took up the correct fencing attitude in Moscow and instead of his opponent's rapier, saw a cudgel raised above his head, Napoleon did not cease to complain to Marshal Kutuzov and to the Tzar that the war was being carried on contrary to all the rules—as if there were any rules for killing people. In spite of the complaints of the French as to the nonobservance of the rules, in spite of the fact that to some highly placed Russians it seemed rather disgraceful to fight with a cudgel and they wanted to assume a pose *in fourth* or *in third* according to all the fencing rules and to make an adroit thrust *in first*, and so on—the cudgel of the people's war was lifted with all its menacing and majestic strength, and without consulting anyone's tastes or rules and regardless of anything else, it rose and fell with stupid simplicity, but consistently, and belabored the French till the whole invasion had perished.

And it is well for a people who do not—as the French did in 1813—salute according to all the rules of art, and, presenting the hilt of their rapier gracefully and politely, hand it to their magnanimous conqueror, but at the moment of trial, without asking what rules others have adopted in similar cases, simply and easily pick up the first cudgel that comes to hand and strike with it till the feeling of resentment and revenge in their soul yields to a feeling of contempt and compassion.

One of the most obvious and advantageous departures from the so-called laws of war is the action of scattered groups against men pressed together in a mass. Such action always occurs in wars that take on a national character. In such actions, instead of two crowds opposing each other, the men disperse, attack singly, run away when attacked by stronger forces, but again attack when opportunity offers. This was done by the guerrillas in Spain, by the mountain tribes in the Caucasus, and by the Russians in 1812.

People have called this kind of war “guerrilla warfare” and assume that by so calling it they have explained its meaning. But such a war does not fit

in under any rule and is directly opposed to a well-known rule of tactics that is accepted as infallible. That rule says that an attacker should concentrate his forces in order to be stronger than his opponent in the moment of conflict.

Guerrilla war (always successful, as history shows) directly infringes that rule.

This contradiction arises from the fact that military science assumes the strength of an army to be identical to its numbers. Military science says that the more troops the greater the strength. *Large battalions are always victorious.*

For military science to say this is like defining momentum in mechanics by reference to the mass only: stating that momenta are equal or unequal to each other simply because the masses involved are equal or unequal.

Momentum (quantity of motion) is the product of mass and velocity.

In military affairs, the strength of an army is the product of its mass and some unknown x .

Military science, seeing in history innumerable instances of the fact that the size of any army does not coincide with its strength and that small detachments defeat larger ones, obscurely admits the existence of this unknown factor and tries to discover it—now in a geometric formation, now in the equipment employed, now, and most usually, in the genius of the commanders. But the assignment of these various meanings to the factor does not yield results that accord with the historic facts.

Yet it is only necessary to abandon the false view (adopted to gratify the “heroes”) of the efficacy of the directions issued in wartime by commanders, in order to find this unknown quantity.

That unknown quantity is the spirit of the army, that is to say, the greater or lesser readiness to fight and face danger felt by all the men composing an army, quite independently of whether they are, or are not, fighting under the command of a genius, in two—or three-line formation, with cudgels or with

rifles that repeat thirty times a minute. Men who want to fight will always put themselves in the most advantageous conditions for fighting.

The spirit of an army is the factor which multiplied by the mass gives the resulting force. Defining and expressing the significance of this unknown factor—the spirit of an army—is a problem for science.

This problem is only solvable if we cease arbitrarily to substitute for the unknown x itself the conditions under which that force becomes apparent—such as the commands of the general, the equipment employed, and so on—mistaking these for the real significance of the factor, and if we recognize this unknown quantity in its entirety as being the greater or lesser desire to fight and to face danger. Only then, by expressing known historic facts by equations and comparing the relative significance of this factor, can we hope to define the unknown.

Ten men, battalions, or divisions, fighting fifteen men, battalions, or divisions, conquer—that is, kill or take captive—all the others, while themselves losing four, so that on the one side four and on the other fifteen were lost. Consequently, the four were equal to the fifteen, and therefore $4x = 15y$. Consequently $x/y = 15/4$. This equation does not give us the value of the unknown factor but gives us a ratio between two unknowns. And by bringing variously selected historic units (battles, campaigns, periods of war) into such equations, a series of numbers could be obtained in which certain laws should exist and might be discovered.

The tactical rule that an army should act in masses when attacking, and in smaller groups in retreat, unconsciously confirms the truth that the strength of an army depends on its spirit. To lead men forward under fire more discipline (obtainable only by movement in masses) is needed than is needed to resist attacks. But this rule which leaves out of account the spirit of the army continually proves incorrect and is in particularly striking contrast to the facts when some strong rise or fall in the spirit of the troops occurs, as in all national wars.

The French, retreating in 1812—though according to tactics they should have separated into detachments to defend themselves—congregated into a mass because the spirit of the army had so fallen that only the mass held the army together. The Russians, on the contrary, ought according to tactics to have attacked in mass, but in fact, they split up into small units, because their spirit had so risen that separate individuals, without orders, dealt blows at the French without needing any compulsion to induce them to expose themselves to hardships and dangers.

The so-called partisan war began with the entry of the French into Smolénsk.

Before partisan warfare had been officially recognized by the government, thousands of enemy stragglers, marauders, and foragers had been destroyed by the Cossacks and the peasants, who killed them off as instinctively as dogs worry a stray mad dog to death. Captain Davýdov, with his Russian instinct, was the first to recognize the value of this terrible cudgel which regardless of the rules of military science destroyed the French, and to him belongs the credit for taking the first step toward regularizing this method of warfare.

On August 24, Captain Davýdov's first partisan detachment was formed and then others were recognized. The further the campaign progressed the more numerous these detachments became.

The irregulars destroyed the great army piecemeal. They gathered the fallen leaves that dropped of themselves from that withered tree—the French army—and sometimes shook that tree itself. By October, when the French were fleeing toward Smolénsk, there were hundreds of such companies, of various sizes and characters. There were some that adopted all the army methods and had infantry, artillery, staff, and the comforts of life. Others consisted solely of Cossack cavalry. There were also small scratch groups of foot and horse, and groups of peasants and landowners that remained unknown. A sacristan commanded one party which captured

several hundred prisoners in the course of a month; and there was Vasilisa, the wife of a village elder, who slew hundreds of the French.

The partisan warfare flamed up most fiercely in the latter days of October. Its first period had passed: when the partisans themselves, amazed at their own boldness, feared every minute to be surrounded and captured by the French, and hid in the forests without unsaddling, hardly daring to dismount and always expecting to be pursued. By the end of October, this kind of warfare had taken definite shape: it had become clear to all what could be ventured against the French and what could not. Now only the commanders of detachments with staffs, and moving according to rules at a distance from the French, still regarded many things as impossible. The small bands that had started their activities long before and had already observed the French closely considered things possible that the commanders of the big detachments did not dare to contemplate. The Cossacks and peasants who crept in among the French now considered everything possible.

On October 22, Denisov (who was one of the irregulars) was with his group at the height of the guerrilla enthusiasm. Since early morning he and his party had been on the move. All day long he had been watching from the forest that skirted the highroad a large French convoy of cavalry baggage and Russian prisoners separated from the rest of the army, which—as was learned from spies and prisoners—was moving under a strong escort to Smolénsk. Besides Denisov and Dolokhov (who also led a small party and moved in Denisov's vicinity), the commanders of some large divisions with staffs also knew of this convoy and, as Denisov expressed it, were sharpening their teeth for it. Two of the commanders of large parties—one a Pole and the other a German—sent invitations to Denisov almost simultaneously, requesting him to join up with their divisions to attack the convoy.

“No, bwother, I have gwown mustaches myself,” said Denisov on reading these documents, and he wrote to the German that, despite his heartfelt desire to serve under so valiant and renowned a general, he had to forgo that pleasure because he was already under the command of the Polish general. To the Polish general, he replied to the same effect, informing him that he was already under the command of the German.

Having arranged matters thus, Denisov and Dolokhov intended, without reporting matters to the higher command, to attack and seize that convoy with their own small forces. On October 22 it was moving from the village of Mikúline to that of Shámshevo. To the left of the road between the village of Mikúline and Shámshevo, there were large forests, extending in some places up to the road itself though in others a mile or more back from it. Through these forests Denisov and his party rode all day, sometimes keeping well back in them and sometimes coming to the very edge, but never losing sight of the moving French. That morning, Cossacks of Denisov’s party had seized and carried off into the forest two wagons loaded with cavalry saddles, which had stuck in the mud not far from the village of Mikúline where the forest ran close to the road. Since then, and until evening, the party had watched the movements of the French without attacking. It was necessary to let the French reach Shámshevo quietly without alarming them and then, after joining Dolokhov who was to come that evening to a consultation at a watchman’s hut in the forest less than a mile from Shámshevo, to surprise the French at dawn, falling like an avalanche on their heads from two sides, and rout and capture them all at one blow.

In their rear, more than a mile from the village of Mikúline where the forest came right up to the road, six Cossacks were posted to report if any fresh columns of French should show themselves.

Beyond Shámshevo, Dolokhov was to observe the road in the same way, to find out at what distance there were other French troops. They

reckoned that the convoy had fifteen hundred men. Denisov had two hundred, and Dolokhov might have as many more, but the disparity of numbers did not deter Denisov. All that he now wanted to know was what troops these were and to learn that he had to capture a “tongue”—that is, a man from the enemy column. That morning’s attack on the wagons had been made so hastily that the Frenchmen with the wagons had all been killed; only a little drummer boy had been taken alive, and as he was a straggler he could tell them nothing definite about the troops in that column.

Denisov considered it dangerous to make a second attack for fear of putting the whole column on the alert, so he sent a peasant named Shcherbáty to Shámshevo to try and seize at least one of the French quartermasters who had been sent on in advance.

It was a warm rainy autumn day. The sky and the horizon were both the color of muddy water. At times a sort of mist descended, and then suddenly heavy slanting rain came down.

Denisov in a felt cloak and a sheepskin cap from which the rain ran down was riding a thin thoroughbred horse with sunken sides. Like his horse, which turned its head and laid its ears back, he shrank from the driving rain and gazed anxiously before him. His thin face with its short, thick black beard looked angry.

Beside Denisov rode *a Cossack captain*, Denisov’s fellow worker, also in a felt cloak and sheepskin cap, and riding a large sleek Don horse.

The *Cossack captain* was a tall man as straight as an arrow, pale-faced, fair-haired, with narrow light eyes and with calm self-satisfaction in his face and bearing. Though it was impossible to say in what the peculiarity of the horse and rider lay, at first glance at the *Cossack captain* and Denisov one saw that Denisov was wet and uncomfortable and was a man mounted on a horse, while looking at the *Cossack captain* one saw that the *Cossack captain* was as comfortable and as much at ease as always and that the

Cossack captain was not a man who had mounted a horse, but a man who was one with his horse, a being consequently possessed of twofold strength.

A little ahead of them walked a peasant guide, wet to the skin and wearing a gray peasant coat and a white knitted cap.

A little behind, on a poor, small, lean Kirghíz horse with an enormous tail and mane and a bleeding mouth, rode a young officer in a blue French overcoat.

Beside him rode a hussar, with a boy in a tattered French uniform and blue cap behind him on the crupper of his horse. The boy held on to the hussar with cold, red hands, and raising his eyebrows gazed about him with surprise. This was the French drummer boy captured that morning.

Behind them along the narrow, sodden, cut-up forest road came hussars in threes and fours, and then Cossacks: some in felt cloaks, some in French greatcoats, and some with horsecloths over their heads. The horses, being drenched by the rain, all looked black whether chestnut or bay. Their necks, with their wet, close-clinging manes, looked strangely thin. Steam rose from them. Clothes, saddles, and reins were all wet, slippery, and sodden, like the ground and the fallen leaves that strewed the road. The men sat huddled up trying not to stir, so as to warm the water that had trickled to their bodies and not admit the fresh cold water that was leaking in under their seats, their knees, and at the back of their necks. In the midst of the outspread line of Cossacks two wagons, drawn by French horses and by saddled Cossack horses that had been hitched on in front, rumbled over the tree stumps and branches and splashed through the water that lay in the ruts.

Denisov's horse swerved aside to avoid a pool in the track and bumped his rider's knee against a tree.

"Oh, the devil!" exclaimed Denisov angrily, and showing his teeth he struck his horse three times with his whip, splashing himself and his comrades with mud.

Denisov was out of sorts both because of the rain and also from hunger (none of them had eaten anything since morning), and yet more because he still had no news from Dolokhov and the man sent to capture a French soldier, a “tongue”, had not returned.

“There’ll hardly be another such chance to fall on the enemy as today. It’s too risky to attack them by oneself, and if we put it off till another day one of the big guerrilla detachments will snatch the prey from under our noses,” thought Denisov, continually peering forward, hoping to see a messenger from Dolokhov.

On coming to a path in the forest along which he could see far to the right, Denisov stopped.

“There’s someone coming,” said he.

The *Cossack captain* looked in the direction Denisov indicated.

“There are two, an officer and a Cossack. But it is not *presupposable* that it is the lieutenant colonel himself,” said the *Cossack captain*, who was fond of using words the Cossacks did not know.

The approaching riders having descended a decline were no longer visible, but they reappeared a few minutes later. In front, at a weary gallop and using his leather whip, rode an officer, disheveled and drenched, whose trousers had worked up to above his knees. Behind him, standing in the stirrups, trotted a Cossack. The officer, a very young lad with a broad rosy face and keen merry eyes, galloped up to Denisov and handed him a sodden envelope.

“From the general,” said the officer. “Please excuse the envelope not being quite dry.”

Denisov, frowning, took the envelope and opened it.

“There, they kept telling us: ‘It’s dangerous, it’s dangerous,’” said the officer, addressing the *Cossack captain* while Denisov was reading the dispatch. “But Komaróv and I”—he pointed to the Cossack—“were prepared. We have each of us two pistols... But what’s this?” he asked,

noticing the French drummer boy. “A prisoner? You’ve already been in action? May I speak to him?”

“Petya!” exclaimed Denisov, having run through the dispatch. “Why didn’t you say who you were?” and turning with a smile he held out his hand to the lad.

The officer was young Petya Rostov, Nicholas’s little brother.

All the way Petya had been preparing himself to behave with Denisov as befitted a grown-up man and an officer—without hinting at their previous acquaintance. But as soon as Denisov smiled at Petya, he brightened up, blushed with pleasure, forgot the official manner he had been rehearsing, and began telling him how he had already been in a battle near Vyázma and how a certain hussar had distinguished himself there.

“Well, I am glad to see you,” Denisov interrupted him, and his face again assumed its anxious expression.

“Michael Feoklítych,” said he to the *Cossack captain*, “this is again from that German, you know. He”—he indicated Petya—“is serving under him.”

And Denisov told the *Cossack captain* that the dispatch just delivered was a repetition of the German general’s demand that he should join forces with him for an attack on the transport.

“If we don’t take it tomorrow, he’ll snatch it from under our noses,” he added.

While Denisov was talking to the *Cossack captain*, Petya—abashed by Denisov’s cold tone and supposing that it was due to the condition of his trousers—furtively tried to pull his trousers down under his greatcoat so that no one should notice it, while maintaining as martial an air as possible.

“Will there be any orders, your honor?” Petya asked Denisov, holding his hand at the salute and resuming the game of adjutant and general for which he had prepared himself, “or shall I remain with your honor?”

“Orders?” Denisov repeated thoughtfully. “But can you stay till tomorrow?”

“Oh, please... May I stay with you?” cried Petya.

“But, just what did the genewal tell you? To weturn at once?” asked Denisov.

Petya blushed.

“He gave me no instructions. I think I could?” Petya returned, inquiringly.

“Well, all wight,” said Denisov.

And turning to his men, Denisov directed a party to go on to the halting place arranged near the watchman’s hut in the forest and told the officer on the Kirghíz horse (who performed the duties of an adjutant) to go and find out where Dolokhov was and whether he would come that evening. Denisov himself intended to go with the *Cossack captain* and Petya to the edge of the forest where it reached out to Shámshevo, to have a look at the part of the French bivouac they were to attack the next day.

“Well, old fellow,” said Denisov to the peasant guide, “lead us to Shámshevo.”

Denisov, Petya, and the *Cossack captain*, accompanied by some Cossacks and the hussar who had the prisoner drummer boy, rode to the left across a ravine to the edge of the forest.

The rain had stopped, and only the mist was falling and drops from the trees. Denisov, the *Cossack captain*, and Petya rode silently, following the peasant in the knitted cap who, stepping lightly with turned-out toes and moving noiselessly in his bast shoes over the roots and wet leaves, silently led them to the edge of the forest.

The peasant ascended an incline, stopped, looked about him, and advanced to where the screen of trees was less dense. On reaching a large oak tree that had not yet shed its leaves, he stopped and beckoned mysteriously to them with his hand.

Denisov and Petya rode up to the peasant. From the spot where the peasant was standing, they could see the French. Immediately beyond the forest, on a downward slope, lay a field of spring rye. To the right, beyond a steep ravine, was a small village and a landowner's house with a broken roof. In the village, in the house, in the garden, by the well, by the pond, over all the rising ground, and all along the road uphill from the bridge leading to the village, not more than five hundred yards away, crowds of men could be seen through the shimmering mist. Their un-Russian shouting at their horses which were straining uphill with the carts, and their calls to one another, could be clearly heard.

"Bwing the prisoner here," said Denisov in a low voice, not taking his eyes off the enemy troops.

A Cossack dismounted, lifted the drummer boy down, and took him to Denisov. Pointing to the French troops, Denisov asked him what these and those of them were. The drummer boy, thrusting his cold hands into his pockets and lifting his eyebrows, looked at Denisov in affright, but in spite of an evident desire to say all he knew, he gave confused answers, merely assenting to everything Denisov asked him. Denisov turned away from him frowning and addressed the *Cossack captain*, conveying his own conjectures to him.

Petya, rapidly turning his head, looked now at the drummer boy, now at Denisov, now at the *Cossack captain*, and now at the French in the village and along the road, trying not to miss anything of importance.

"Whether Dolokhov comes with new information or not, we must attack the enemy, eh?" said Denisov with a merry sparkle in his eyes.

"It is a very suitable spot," said the *Cossack captain*.

"We'll send the infantwy down by the swamps," Denisov continued. "They'll cweep up to the garden; you'll wide up fwom there with the Cossacks"—he pointed to a spot in the forest beyond the village—"and I with my hussars fwom here. And at the signal shot..."

“The hollow is impassable—there’s a swamp there,” said the *Cossack captain*. “The horses would sink. We must ride round more to the left...”

While they were talking in undertones the crack of a shot sounded from the low ground by the pond, a puff of white smoke appeared, then another, and the sound of hundreds of seemingly merry French voices shouting together came up from the slope. For a moment Denisov and the *Cossack captain* drew back. They were so near that they thought they were the cause of the firing and shouting. But the firing and shouting did not relate to them. Down below, a man wearing something red was running through the marsh. The French were evidently firing and shouting at him.

“Why, that’s our peasant Shcherbáty,” said the *Cossack captain*.

“So it is! It is!”

“The wascal!” said Denisov.

“He’ll get away!” said the *Cossack captain*, screwing up his eyes.

The man whom they called “our peasant Shcherbáty”, having run to the stream, plunged in so that the water splashed in the air, and, having disappeared for an instant, scrambled out on all fours, all black with the wet, and ran on. The French who had been pursuing him stopped.

“Smart, that!” said the *Cossack captain*.

“What a beast!” said Denisov with his former look of vexation. “What has he been doing all this time?”

“Who is he?” asked Petya.

“He’s our *scout*. I sent him to capture a ‘tongue.’”

“Oh, yes,” said Petya, nodding at the first words Denisov uttered as if he understood it all, though he really did not understand anything of it.

The peasant Shcherbáty was one of the most indispensable men in their band. He was from Pokróvsk, near the river Gzhat. When Denisov had come to Pokróvsk at the beginning of his operations and had as usual summoned the village elder and asked him what he knew about the French, the elder, as though shielding himself, had replied, as all village elders did,

that he had neither seen nor heard anything of them. But when Denisov explained that his purpose was to kill the French, and asked if no French had strayed that way, the elder replied that some “more-orderers” had really been at their village, but that the peasant Shcherbáty was the only man who dealt with such matters. Denisov had the peasant Shcherbáty called and, having praised him for his activity, Denisov said a few words in the elder’s presence about loyalty to the Tzar and the country and the hatred of the French that all sons of the fatherland should cherish.

“We don’t do the French any harm,” said the peasant Shcherbáty, evidently frightened by Denisov’s words. “We only fooled about with the lads for fun, you know! We killed a score or so of ‘more-orderers,’ but we did no harm else...”

The next day, when Denisov had left Pokróvsk, having quite forgotten about this peasant, it was reported to him that the peasant Shcherbáty had attached himself to their party and asked to be allowed to remain with it. Denisov gave orders to let him do so.

The peasant Shcherbáty, who at first did rough work, laying campfires, fetching water, flaying dead horses, and so on, soon showed a great liking and aptitude for partisan warfare. At night he would go out for booty and always brought back French clothing and weapons, and when told to would bring in French captives also. Denisov then relieved him from drudgery and began taking him with him when he went out on expeditions and had him enrolled among the Cossacks.

The peasant Shcherbáty did not like riding and always went on foot, never lagging behind the cavalry. He was armed with a musketoon (which he carried rather as a joke), a pike and an ax. He used the ax as a wolf uses its teeth, with equal ease picking fleas out of its fur or crunching thick bones. The peasant Shcherbáty with equal accuracy would split logs with blows at arm’s length, or holding the head of the ax would cut thin little pegs or carve spoons. In Denisov’s party, he held a peculiar and exceptional

position. When anything particularly difficult or nasty had to be done—to push a cart out of the mud with one's shoulders, pull a horse out of a swamp by its tail, skin it, slink in among the French, or walk more than thirty miles in a day—everybody pointed laughingly at the peasant Shcherbáty.

“It won't hurt that devil—he's as strong as a horse!” they said of him.

Once a Frenchman that the peasant Shcherbáty was trying to capture fired a pistol at him and shot him in the fleshy part of the back. That wound (which the peasant Shcherbáty treated only with internal and external applications of vodka) was the subject of the liveliest jokes by the whole detachment—jokes in which the peasant Shcherbáty readily joined.

“Hallo, mate! Never again? Gave you a twist?” the Cossacks would banter with him. And Butler Tikhon, purposely writhing and making faces, pretended to be angry and swore at the French with the funniest curses. The only effect of this incident on the peasant Shcherbáty was that after being wounded he seldom brought in prisoners.

The peasant Shcherbáty was the bravest and most useful man in the party. No one found more opportunities for attacking, no one captured or killed more Frenchmen, and consequently, he was made the buffoon of all the Cossacks and hussars and willingly accepted that role. Now he had been sent by Denisov overnight to Shámshevo to capture a “tongue.” But whether because he had not been content to take only one Frenchman or because he had slept through the night, he had crept by day into some bushes right among the French and, as Denisov had witnessed from above, had been detected by them.

After talking for some time with the *Cossack captain* about the next day's attack, which now, seeing how near they were to the French, Denisov seemed to have definitely decided on, he turned his horse and rode back.

“Now, my lad, we'll go and get dwy,” Denisov said to Petya.

As they approached the base camp, Denisov stopped, peering into the forest. Among the trees, a man with long legs and long, swinging arms,

wearing a short jacket, bast shoes, and a Kazán hat, was approaching with long, light steps. The man had a musketoon over his shoulder and an ax stuck in his girdle. When the man espied Denisov he hastily threw something into the bushes, removed his sodden hat by its floppy brim, and approached his commander. It was the peasant Shcherbáty. His wrinkled and pockmarked face and narrow little eyes beamed with self-satisfied merriment. He lifted his head high and gazed at Denisov as if repressing a laugh.

“Well, where did you disappear to?” inquired Denisov.

“Where did I disappear to? I went to get Frenchmen,” answered the peasant Shcherbáty boldly and hurriedly, in a husky but melodious bass voice.

“Why did you push yourself in there by daylight? You ass! Well, why haven’t you taken one?”

“Oh, I took one all right,” said the peasant Shcherbáty.

“Where is he?”

“You see, I took him first thing at dawn,” the peasant Shcherbáty continued, spreading out his flat feet with turned-out toes in their bast shoes. “I took him into the forest. Then I see he’s no good and I think I’ll go and fetch a likelier one.”

“You see?... What a wogue—it’s just as I thought,” said Denisov to the *Cossack captain*. “Why didn’t you bwing that one?”

“What was the good of bringing him?” the peasant Shcherbáty interrupted hastily and angrily—“that one wouldn’t have done for you. As if I don’t know what sort you want!”

“What a bwute you are!... Well?”

“I went for another one,” the peasant Shcherbáty continued, “and I crept like this through the wood and lay down.” (He suddenly lay down on his stomach with a supple movement to show how he had done it.) “One turned up and I grabbed him, like this.” (He jumped up quickly and lightly.)

“‘Come along to Denisov,’ I said. He starts yelling, and suddenly there were four of them. They rushed at me with their little swords. So I went for them with my ax, this way: ‘What are you up to?’ says I. ‘Christ be with you!’” shouted the peasant Shcherbáty, waving his arms with an angry scowl and throwing out his chest.

“Yes, we saw from the hill how you took to your heels through the puddles!” said the *Cossack captain*, screwing up his glittering eyes.

Petya badly wanted to laugh but noticed that they all refrained from laughing. He turned his eyes rapidly from the peasant Shcherbáty’s face to the *Cossack captain*’s and Denisov’s, unable to make out what it all meant.

“Don’t play the fool!” said Denisov, coughing angrily. “Why didn’t you bring the first one?”

The peasant Shcherbáty scratched his back with one hand and his head with the other, then suddenly his whole face expanded into a beaming, foolish grin, disclosing a gap where he had lost a tooth (that was why he was called Shcherbáty—the gap-toothed). Denisov smiled, and Petya burst into a peal of merry laughter in which the peasant Shcherbáty himself joined.

“Oh, but the French soldier was a regular good-for-nothing,” said the peasant Shcherbáty. “The clothes on him—poor stuff! How could I bring him? And so rude, your honor! Why, he says: ‘I’m a general’s son myself, I won’t go!’ he says.”

“You are a bwute!” said Denisov. “I wanted to question...”

“But I questioned him,” said the peasant Shcherbáty. “He said he didn’t know much. ‘There are a lot of us,’ he says, ‘but all poor stuff—only soldiers in name,’ he says. ‘Shout loud at them,’ he says, ‘and you’ll take them all,’” the peasant Shcherbáty concluded, looking cheerfully and resolutely into Denisov’s eyes.

“I’ll give you a hundwed sharp lashes—that’ll teach you to play the fool!” said Denisov severely.

“But why are you angry?” remonstrated the peasant Shcherbáty, “just as if I’d never seen your Frenchmen! Only wait till it gets dark and I’ll fetch you any of them you want—three if you like.”

“Well, let’s go,” said Denisov, and rode all the way to the base camp in silence and frowning angrily.

The peasant Shcherbáty followed behind and Petya heard the Cossacks laughing with him and at him, about some pair of boots he had thrown into the bushes.

When the fit of laughter that had seized him at the peasant Shcherbáty’s words and smile had passed and Petya realized for a moment that this the peasant Shcherbáty had killed a man, he felt uneasy. Petya looked round at the captive drummer boy and felt a pang in his heart. But this uneasiness lasted only a moment. He felt it necessary to hold his head higher, to brace himself, and to question the *Cossack captain* with an air of importance about tomorrow’s undertaking, that he might not be unworthy of the company in which he found himself.

The officer who had been sent to inquire met Denisov on the way with the news that Dolokhov was soon coming and that all was well with him.

Denisov at once cheered up and, calling Petya to him, said: “Well, tell me about yourself.”

Petya, having left his people after their departure from Moscow, joined his regiment and was soon taken as orderly by a general commanding a large guerrilla detachment. From the time he received his commission, and especially since he had joined the active army and taken part in the battle of Vyázma, Petya had been in a constant state of blissful excitement at being grown-up and in a perpetual ecstatic hurry not to miss any chance to do something really heroic. He was highly delighted with what he saw and experienced in the army, but at the same time, it always seemed to him that the really heroic exploits were being performed just where he did not happen to be. And he was always in a hurry to get where he was not.

When on the twenty-first of October, Petya's general expressed a wish to send somebody to Denisov's detachment, Petya begged so piteously to be sent that the general could not refuse. But when dispatching him the general recalled Petya's mad action at the battle of Vyázma, where instead of riding by the road to the place to which he had been sent, he had galloped to the advanced line under the fire of the French and had there twice fired his pistol. So now the general explicitly forbade his taking part in any action whatever of Denisov's. That was why Petya had blushed and grown confused when Denisov asked him whether he could stay. Before they had ridden to the outskirts of the forest Petya had considered he must carry out his instructions strictly and return at once. But when Petya saw the French and saw the peasant Shcherbáty and learned that there would certainly be an attack that night, he decided, with the rapidity with which young people change their views, that the general, whom he had greatly respected till then, was a rubbishy German, that Denisov was a hero, the *Cossack captain* a hero, and the peasant Shcherbáty a hero too, and that it would be shameful for him to leave them at a moment of difficulty.

It was already growing dusk when Denisov, Petya, and the *Cossack captain* rode up to the base camp. In the twilight saddled horses could be seen, and Cossacks and hussars who had rigged up rough shelters in the glade and were kindling glowing fires in a hollow of the forest where the French could not see the smoke. In the passage of the small shack, a Cossack with sleeves rolled up was chopping some mutton. In the room, three officers of Denisov's band were converting a door into a tabletop. Petya took off his wet clothes, gave them to be dried, and at once began helping the officers to fix up the dinner table.

In ten minutes the table was ready and a napkin was spread on it. On the table were vodka, a flask of rum, white bread, roast mutton, and salt.

Sitting at the table with the officers and tearing the fat savory mutton with his hands, down which the grease trickled, Petya was in an ecstatic

childish state of love for all men, and consequently of confidence that others loved him in the same way.

“So then what do you think?” said Petya to Denisov. “It’s all right my staying a day with you?” And not waiting for a reply he answered his own question: “You see I was told to find out—well, I am finding out... Only do let me into the very... into the chief... I don’t want a reward... But I want...”

Petya clenched his teeth and looked around, throwing back his head and flourishing his arms.

“Into the vewy chief...” Denisov repeated with a smile.

“Only, please let me command something, so that I may really command...” Petya went on. “What would it be to you?... Oh, you want a knife?” Petya said, turning to an officer who wished to cut himself a piece of mutton.

And Petya handed him his clasp knife. The officer admired it.

“Please keep it. I have several like it,” said Petya, blushing. “Heavens! I was quite forgetting!” he suddenly cried. “I have some raisins, fine ones; you know, seedless ones. We have a new sutler and he has such capital things. I bought ten pounds. I am used to something sweet. Would you like some?...” Petya ran out into the passage to his Cossack and brought back some bags which contained about five pounds of raisins. “Have some, gentlemen, have some!”

“You want a coffeepot, don’t you?” Petya asked the *Cossack captain*. “I bought a capital one from our civilian provisioner! He has splendid things. And he’s very honest, that’s the chief thing. I’ll be sure to send it to you. Or perhaps your flints are giving out, or are worn out—that happens sometimes, you know. I have brought some with me, here they are”—and he showed a bag—“a hundred flints. I bought them very cheap. Please take as many as you want, or all if you like...”

Then suddenly, dismayed lest he had said too much, Petya stopped and blushed.

Petya tried to remember whether he had not done anything else that was foolish. And running over the events of the day he remembered the French drummer boy. "It's capital for us here, but what of him? Where have they put him? Have they fed him? Haven't they hurt his feelings?" he thought. But having caught himself saying too much about the flints, he was now afraid to speak out.

"I might ask," Petya thought, "but they'll say: 'Petya is a boy himself and so he pities the French drummer boy.' I'll show them tomorrow whether I'm a boy. Will it seem odd if I ask?" Petya thought. "Well, never mind!" and immediately, blushing and looking anxiously at the officers to see if they appeared ironical, he said:

"May I call in that French drummer boy who was taken prisoner and give him something to eat?... Perhaps..."

"Yes, he's a poor little fellow," said Denisov, who evidently saw nothing shameful in this reminder. "Call him in. His name is Vincent. Have him fetched."

"I'll call him," said Petya.

"Yes, yes, call him. A poor little fellow," Denisov repeated.

Petya was standing at the door when Denisov said this. Petya slipped in between the officers, came close to Denisov, and said:

"Let me kiss you, dear old Denisov! Oh, how fine, how splendid!"

And having kissed Denisov he ran out of the hut.

"Vincent!" Petya cried, stopping outside the door.

"Who do you want, sir?" asked a voice in the darkness.

Petya replied that he wanted the French lad who had been captured that day.

"Ah, Vincent?" said a Cossack.

Vincent, the boy's name, had already been changed by the Cossacks into *Vesénny* (vernal) and into *Vesénya* by the peasants and soldiers. In both

these adaptations the reference to spring (*vesná*) matched the impression made by the young lad.

“Vincent is warming himself there by the bonfire. Ho, Vesénja! Vesénja!—Vesénny!” laughing voices were heard calling to one another in the darkness.

“Vincent is a smart lad,” said a hussar standing near Petya. “We gave him something to eat a while ago. He was awfully hungry!”

The sound of bare feet splashing through the mud was heard in the darkness, and the drummer boy came to the door.

“Ah, it’s you!” said Petya. “*Do you want something to eat? Don’t be afraid, they won’t hurt you,*” Petya added shyly and affectionately, touching the French drummer boy’s hand. “*Enter, enter.*”

“*Thank you, sir,*” said the French drummer boy in a trembling almost childish voice, and he began scraping his dirty feet on the threshold.

There were many things Petya wanted to say to the French drummer boy but did not dare to. Petya stood irresolutely beside him in the passage. Then in the darkness, he took the French drummer boy’s hand and pressed it.

“Come in, come in!” Petya repeated in a gentle whisper. “Oh, what can I do for him?” he thought, and opening the door he let the boy pass in first.

When the French drummer boy had entered the hut, Petya sat down at a distance from him, considering it beneath his dignity to pay attention to him. But he fingered the money in his pocket and wondered whether it would seem ridiculous to give some to the French drummer boy.

The arrival of Dolokhov diverted Petya’s attention from the French drummer boy, to whom Denisov had had some mutton and vodka given, and whom he had dressed in a Russian coat so that he might be kept with their band and not sent away with the other prisoners. Petya had heard in the army many stories of Dolokhov’s extraordinary bravery and of his cruelty to the French, so from the moment Dolokhov entered the hut Petya

did not take his eyes from him, but braced himself up more and more and held his head high, that he might not be unworthy even of such company.

Dolokhov's appearance amazed Petya with its simplicity.

While Denisov wore a Cossack coat, had a beard, had an icon of Nicholas the Wonder-Worker on his breast, and his way of speaking and everything he did indicated his unusual position, Dolokhov, though, who in Moscow had worn a Persian costume, had now the appearance of a most correct officer of the Guards. Dolokhov was clean-shaven and wore a Guardsman's padded coat with an Order of St. George at his buttonhole and a plain forage cap set straight on his head. Dolokhov took off his wet felt cloak in a corner of the room, and without greeting anyone went up to Denisov and began questioning him about the matter in hand. Denisov told him of the designs the large detachments had on the transport, of the message Petya had brought, and his own replies to both generals. Then Denisov told him all he knew of the French detachment.

"That's so. But we must know what troops they are and their numbers," said Dolokhov. "It will be necessary to go there. We can't start the affair without knowing for certain how many there are. I like to work accurately. Here now—wouldn't one of these gentlemen like to ride over to the French camp with me? I have brought a spare uniform."

"I, I... I'll go with you!" cried Petya.

"There's no need for you to go at all," said Denisov, addressing Dolokhov, "and as for Petya, I won't let him go on any account."

"I like that!" exclaimed Petya. "Why shouldn't I go?"

"Because it's useless."

"Well, you must excuse me, because... because... I shall go, and that's all. You'll take me, won't you?" Petya said, turning to Dolokhov.

"Why not?" Dolokhov answered absently, scrutinizing the face of the French drummer boy. "Have you had that French drummer boy with you long?" he asked Denisov.

“He was taken today but he knows nothing. I’m keeping him with me.”

“Yes, and where do you put the others?” inquired Dolokhov.

“Where? I send them away and take a weceipt for them,” shouted Denisov, suddenly flushing. “And I say boldly that I have not a single man’s life on my conscience. Would it be difficult for you to send thirty or thwee hundwed men to town under escort, instead of staining—I speak bluntly—staining the honor of a soldier?”

“That kind of amiable talk would be suitable from this Petya of sixteen years of age,” said Dolokhov with cold irony, “but it’s time for you to drop it.”

“Why, I’ve not said anything! I only say that I’ll certainly go with you,” said Petya shyly.

“But for you and me, Denisov, it’s time to drop these amenities,” continued Dolokhov, as if he found particular pleasure in speaking of this subject which irritated Denisov. “Now, why have you kept this French drummer boy?” he went on, swaying his head. “Because you are sorry for him! Don’t we know those ‘receipts’ of yours? You send a hundred men away, and thirty get there. The rest either starve or get killed. So isn’t it all the same not to send them?”

The *Cossack captain*, screwing up his light-colored eyes, nodded approvingly.

“That’s not the point,” said Denisov. I’m not going to discuss the matter. I do not wish to take it on my conscience. You say they’ll die. All wight. Only not by my fault!”

Dolokhov began laughing.

“Who has told them not to capture me these twenty times over? But if they did catch me they’d string me up to an aspen tree, and with all your chivalry just the same.” Dolokhov paused. “However, we must get to work. Tell the Cossack to fetch my kit. I have two French uniforms in it. Well, are you coming with me?” Dolokhov asked Petya.

“I? Yes, yes, certainly!” cried Petya, blushing almost to tears and glancing at Denisov.

While Dolokhov had been disputing with Denisov what should be done with prisoners, Petya had once more felt awkward and restless; but again he had no time to grasp fully what they were talking about. “If grown-up, distinguished men think so, it must be necessary and right,” thought Petya. “But above all, Denisov must not dare to imagine that I’ll obey him and that he can order me about. I will certainly go to the French camp with Dolokhov. If he can, so can I!”

And to all Denisov’s persuasions, Petya replied that he too was accustomed to doing everything accurately and not just anyhow and that he never considered personal danger.

“For you’ll admit that if we don’t know for sure how many of the French soldiers there are... hundreds of lives may depend on it, while there are only two of us. Besides, I want to go very much and certainly will go, so don’t hinder me,” said Dolokhov. “It will only make things worse...”

Having put on French greatcoats and shakos, Petya and Dolokhov rode to the clearing from which Denisov had reconnoitered the French camp, and emerging from the forest in pitch darkness they descended into the hollow. On reaching the bottom, Dolokhov told the Cossacks accompanying him to await him there and rode on at a quick trot along the road to the bridge. Petya, his heart in his mouth with excitement, rode by his side.

“If we’re caught, I won’t be taken alive! I have a pistol,” whispered Petya.

“Don’t talk Russian,” said Dolokhov in a hurried whisper, and at that very moment they heard through the darkness the challenge from a French sentinel: “*Who goes there?*” and the click of a musket.

The blood rushed to Petya’s face and he grasped his pistol.

“*Lanciers of the 6th Regiment,*” replied Dolokhov, neither hastening nor slackening his horse’s pace.

The black figure of a sentinel stood on the bridge.

"Password."

Dolokhov reined in his horse and advanced at a walk.

"Tell me, is Colonel Gerard here?" Dolokhov asked.

"Password," repeated the sentinel, barring the way and not replying.

"I am asking you if the colonel is..." cried Dolokhov suddenly flaring up and riding straight at the sentinel. *"I am asking you if the colonel is here."*

And without waiting for an answer from the sentinel, who had stepped aside, Dolokhov rode up the incline at a walk.

Noticing the black outline of a man crossing the road, Dolokhov stopped the man and inquired where the commander and officers were. The man, a soldier with a sack over his shoulder, stopped, came close up to Dolokhov's horse, touched it with his hand, and explained simply and in a friendly way that the commander and the officers were higher up the hill to the right in the courtyard of the farm, as he called the landowner's house.

Having ridden up the road, on both sides of which French talk could be heard around the campfires, Dolokhov turned into the courtyard of the landowner's house. Having ridden in, Dolokhov dismounted and approached a big blazing campfire, around which sat several men talking noisily. Something was boiling in a small cauldron at the edge of the fire and a soldier in a peaked cap and blue overcoat, lit up by the fire, was kneeling beside it stirring its contents with a ramrod.

"Oh, he's a hard nut to crack," said one of the French officers who was sitting in the shadow at the other side of the fire.

"He'll make them get a move on, those fellows!" said another, laughing.

Both fell silent, peering out through the darkness at the sound of Dolokhov's and Petya's steps as they advanced to the fire leading their horses.

"Good day, gentlemen!" said Dolokhov loudly and clearly.

There was a stir among the French officers in the shadow beyond the fire, and one tall, long-necked officer, walking around the fire, came up to Dolokhov.

“Is that you, Clément?” he asked. “Where the devil...?” But, noticing his mistake, he broke off short and, with a frown, greeted Dolokhov as a stranger, asking what he could do for him.

Dolokhov said that he and his companion were trying to overtake their regiment, and addressing the company asked whether they knew anything of the 6th Regiment. None of them knew anything, and Petya thought the officers were beginning to look at him and Dolokhov with hostility and suspicion. For some seconds all were silent.

“If you were counting on the evening soup, you have come too late,” said a voice from behind the fire with a repressed laugh.

Dolokhov replied that they were not hungry and must push on farther that night.

Dolokhov handed the horses over to the soldier who was stirring the pot and squatted down on his heels by the fire beside the officer with the long neck. That officer did not take his eyes from Dolokhov and again asked to what regiment he belonged. Dolokhov, as if he had not heard the question, did not reply, but lighting a short French pipe that he took from his pocket began asking the officer how far the road before them was safe from Cossacks.

“Those brigands are everywhere,” replied an officer from behind the fire.

Dolokhov remarked that the Cossacks were a danger only to stragglers such as his companion and himself, “but probably they would not dare to attack large detachments?” he added inquiringly. No one replied.

“Well, now Dolokhov will come away,” Petya thought every moment as he stood by the campfire listening to the talk.

But Dolokhov restarted the conversation which had dropped and began putting direct questions as to how many men there were in the battalion, how many battalions, and how many prisoners. Asking about the Russian prisoners with that detachment, Dolokhov said:

“A horrid business dragging these corpses about with one! It would be better to shoot such rabble,” and burst into loud laughter, so strange that Petya thought the French would immediately detect their disguise, and Petya involuntarily took a step back from the campfire.

No one replied a word to Dolokhov’s laughter, and a French officer whom they could not see (he lay wrapped in a greatcoat) rose and whispered something to a companion. Dolokhov got up and called to the soldier who was holding their horses.

“Will these French soldiers bring our horses or not?” thought Petya, instinctively drawing nearer to Dolokhov.

The horses were brought.

“Good evening, gentlemen,” said Dolokhov.

Petya wished to say “Good night” but could not utter a word. The officers were whispering together. Dolokhov was a long time mounting his horse which would not stand still, then he rode out of the yard at a footpace. Petya rode beside Dolokhov, longing to look around to see whether or not the French were running after them, but not daring to.

Coming out onto the road Dolokhov did not ride back across the open country but through the village. At one spot Dolokhov stopped and listened. “Do you hear?” he asked. Petya recognized the sound of Russian voices and saw the dark figures of Russian prisoners around their campfires. When they had descended to the bridge Petya and Dolokhov rode past the sentinel, who without saying a word paced morosely up and down it, then they descended into the hollow where the Cossacks awaited them.

“Well now, goodbye. Tell Denisov, ‘at the first shot at daybreak,’” said Dolokhov and was about to ride away, but Petya seized hold of him.

“Really!” Petya cried, “you are such a hero! Oh, how fine, how splendid! How I love you!”

“All right, all right!” said Dolokhov. But Petya did not let go of him and Dolokhov saw through the gloom that Petya was bending toward him and wanted to kiss him. Dolokhov kissed him, laughed, turned his horse, and vanished into the darkness.

Having returned to the watchman’s hut, Petya found Denisov in the passage. Denisov was awaiting Petya’s return in a state of agitation, anxiety, and self-reproach for having let him go.

“Thank God!” Denisov exclaimed. “Yes, thank God!” he repeated, listening to Petya’s rapturous account. “But, devil take you, I haven’t slept because of you! Well, thank God. Now lie down. We can still get a nap before morning.”

“But... no,” said Petya, “I don’t want to sleep yet. Besides, I know myself. If I fall asleep it’s finished. And then I am used to not sleeping before a battle.”

Petya sat awhile in the hut joyfully recalling the details of his expedition and vividly picturing to himself what would happen the next day.

Then, noticing that Denisov was asleep, Petya rose and went outdoors.

It was still quite dark outside. The rain was over, but drops were still falling from the trees. Near the watchman’s hut, the black shapes of the Cossacks’ shanties and of horses tethered together could be seen. Behind the hut the dark shapes of the two wagons with their horses beside them were discernible, and in the hollow, the dying campfire gleamed red. Not all the Cossacks and hussars were asleep; here and there, amid the sounds of falling drops and the munching of the horses nearby, could be heard low voices which seemed to be whispering.

Petya came out, peered into the darkness, and went up to the wagons. Someone was snoring under them, and around them stood saddled horses

munching their oats. In the dark Petya recognized his own horse, which he called “Karabákh” though it was of Ukranian breed, and went up to it.

“Well, Karabákh! We’ll do some service tomorrow,” said Petya, sniffing its nostrils and kissing it.

“Why aren’t you asleep, sir?” said a Cossack who was sitting under a wagon.

“No, ah... Likhachëv—isn’t that your name? Do you know I have only just come back! We’ve been into the French camp.”

And Petya gave the Cossack a detailed account not only of his ride but also of his object, and why he considered it better to risk his life than to act “just anyhow.”

“Well, you should get some sleep now,” said the Cossack.

“No, I am used to this,” said Petya. “I say, aren’t the flints in your pistols worn out? I brought some with me. Don’t you want any? You can have some.”

The Cossack bent forward from under the wagon to get a closer look at Petya.

“Because I am accustomed to doing everything accurately,” said Petya. “Some fellows do things just anyhow, without preparation, and then they’re sorry for it afterward. I don’t like that.”

“Just so,” said the Cossack.

“Oh yes, another thing! Please, my dear fellow, will you sharpen my saber for me? It’s got bl...” (Petya feared to tell a lie, and the saber never had been sharpened.) “Can you do it?”

“Of course I can.”

Likhachëv got up, rummaged in his pack, and soon Petya heard the warlike sound of steel on a whetstone. He climbed onto the wagon and sat on its edge. The Cossack was sharpening the saber under the wagon.

“I say! Are the lads asleep?” asked Petya.

“Some are, and some aren’t—like us.”

“Well, and that French drummer boy?”

“Vesénny? Oh, he’s thrown himself down there in the passage. Fast asleep after his fright. He was that glad!”

After that Petya remained silent for a long time, listening to the sounds. He heard footsteps in the darkness and a black figure appeared.

“What are you sharpening?” asked a man coming up to the wagon.

“Why, this gentleman’s saber.”

“That’s right,” said the man, whom Petya took to be a hussar. “Was the cup left here?”

“There, by the wheel!”

The hussar took the cup.

“It must be daylight soon,” said he, yawning, and went away.

Petya ought to have known that he was in a forest with Denisov’s guerrilla band, less than a mile from the road, sitting on a wagon captured from the French beside which horses were tethered, that under it Likhachëv was sitting sharpening a saber for him, that the big dark blotch to the right was the watchman’s hut, and the red blotch below to the left was the dying embers of a campfire, that the man who had come for the cup was a hussar who wanted a drink; but he neither knew nor waited to know anything of all this. He was in a fairy kingdom where nothing resembled reality. The big dark blotch might really be the watchman’s hut or it might be a cavern leading to the very depths of the earth. Perhaps the red spot was a fire, or it might be the eye of an enormous monster. Perhaps he was really sitting on a wagon, but it might very well be that he was not sitting on a wagon but on a terribly high tower from which, if he fell, he would have to fall for a whole day or a whole month, or go on falling and never reach the bottom. Perhaps it was just the Cossack, Likhachëv, who was sitting under the wagon, but it might be the kindest, bravest, most wonderful, most splendid man in the world, whom no one knew of. It might really have been that the hussar

came for water and went back into the hollow, but perhaps he had simply vanished—disappeared altogether and dissolved into nothingness.

Nothing Petya could have seen now would have surprised him. He was in a fairy kingdom where everything was possible.

Petya looked up at the sky. And the sky was a fairy realm like the earth. It was clearing, and over the tops of the trees, clouds were swiftly sailing as if unveiling the stars. Sometimes it looked as if the clouds were passing, and a clear black sky appeared. Sometimes it seemed as if the black spaces were clouds. Sometimes the sky seemed to be rising high, high overhead, and then it seemed to sink so low that one could touch it with one's hand.

Petya's eyes began to close and he swayed a little.

The trees were dripping. Quiet talking was heard. The horses neighed and jostled one another. Someone snored.

"*Ozheg-zheg, Ozheg-zheg...*" hissed the saber against the whetstone, and suddenly Petya heard a harmonious orchestra playing some unknown, sweetly solemn hymn. Petya was as musical as Natasha and more so than Nicholas, but had never learned music or thought about it, and so the melody that unexpectedly came to his mind seemed to him particularly fresh and attractive. The music became more and more audible. The melody grew and passed from one instrument to another. And what was played was a fugue—though Petya had not the least conception of what a fugue is. Each instrument—now resembling a violin and now a horn, but better and clearer than violin or horn—played its own part, and before it had finished the melody merged with another instrument that began almost the same air, and then with a third and a fourth; and they all blended into one and again became separate and again blended, now into solemn church music, now into something dazzlingly brilliant and triumphant.

"Oh—why, that was in a dream!" Petya said to himself, as he lurched forward. "It's in my ears. But perhaps it's a music of my own. Well, go on, my music! Now!..."

Petya closed his eyes, and, from all sides as if from a distance, sounds fluttered, grew into harmonies, separated, blended, and again all mingled into the same sweet and solemn hymn. “Oh, this is delightful! As much as I like and as I like!” said Petya to himself. He tried to conduct that enormous orchestra.

“Now softly, softly die away!” and the sounds obeyed him. “Now fuller, more joyful. Still more and more joyful!” And from an unknown depth rose increasingly triumphant sounds. “Now voices join in!” ordered Petya. And at first from afar he heard men’s voices and then women’s. The voices grew in harmonious triumphant strength, and Petya listened to their surpassing beauty in awe and joy.

With a solemn triumphal march there mingled a song, the drip from the trees, and the hissing of the saber, “*Ozheg-zheg-zheg...*” and again the horses jostled one another and neighed, not disturbing the choir but joining in it.

Petya did not know how long this lasted: he enjoyed himself all the time, wondered at his enjoyment, and regretted that there was no one to share it. He was awakened by Likhachëv’s kind voice.

“It’s ready, Petya you can split a Frenchman in half with it!”

Petya woke up.

“It’s getting light, it’s really getting light!” he exclaimed.

The horses that had previously been invisible could now be seen to their very tails, and a watery light showed itself through the bare branches. Petya shook himself, jumped up, took a ruble from his pocket, and gave it to Likhachëv; then he flourished the saber, tested it, and sheathed it. The Cossacks were untying their horses and tightening their saddle girths.

“And here’s Denisov,” said Likhachëv.

Denisov came out of the watchman’s hut and, having called Petya, gave orders to get ready.

The men rapidly picked out their horses in the semidarkness, tightened their saddle girths, and formed companies. Denisov stood by the watchman's hut giving final orders. The infantry of the detachment passed along the road and quickly disappeared amid the trees in the mist of early dawn, hundreds of feet splashing through the mud. The *Cossack captain* gave some orders to his men. Petya held his horse by the bridle, impatiently awaiting the order to mount. His face, having been bathed in cold water, was all aglow, and his eyes were particularly brilliant. Cold shivers ran down his spine and his whole body pulsed rhythmically.

"Well, is ev'wything weady?" asked Denisov. "Bwing the horses."

The horses were brought. Denisov was angry with the Cossack because the saddle girths were too slack, reproved him, and mounted. Petya put his foot in the stirrup. Petya's horse by habit made as if to nip his leg, but Petya leaped quickly into the saddle unconscious of his own weight and, turning to look at the hussars starting in the darkness behind him, rode up to Denisov.

"Denisov, entrust me with some commission! Please... for God's sake...!" said he.

Denisov seemed to have forgotten Petya's very existence. He turned to glance at him.

"I ask one thing of you," Denisov said sternly, "to obey me and not shove yourself forward anywhere."

Denisov did not say another word to Petya but rode in silence all the way. When they had come to the edge of the forest it was noticeably growing light over the field. Denisov talked in whispers with the *Cossack captain* and the Cossacks rode past Petya and Denisov. When they had all ridden by, Denisov touched his horse and rode down the hill. Slipping onto their haunches and sliding, the horses descended with their riders into the ravine. Petya rode beside Denisov, the pulsation of his body constantly increasing. It was getting lighter and lighter, but the mist still hid distant

objects. Having reached the valley, Denisov looked back and nodded to a Cossack beside him.

“The signal!” said Denisov.

The Cossack raised his arm and a shot rang out. In an instant the tramp of horses galloping forward was heard, shouts came from various sides, and then more shots.

At the first sound of trampling hoofs and shouting, Petya lashed his horse and loosening his rein galloped forward, not heeding Denisov who shouted at him. It seemed to Petya that at the moment the shot was fired it suddenly became as bright as noon. He galloped to the bridge. Cossacks were galloping along the road in front of him. On the bridge, he collided with a Cossack who had fallen behind, but he galloped on. In front of him soldiers, probably Frenchmen, were running from right to left across the road. One of them fell in the mud under his horse’s feet.

Cossacks were crowding about a hut, busy with something. From the midst of that crowd, terrible screams arose. Petya galloped up, and the first thing he saw was the pale face and trembling jaw of a Frenchman, clutching the handle of a lance that had been aimed at him.

“Hurrah!... Lads!... ours!” shouted Petya, and giving rein to his excited horse he galloped forward along the village street.

Petya could hear shooting ahead of him. Cossacks, hussars, and ragged Russian prisoners, who had come running from both sides of the road, were shouting something loudly and incoherently. A gallant-looking Frenchman, in a blue overcoat, bareheaded, and with a frowning red face, had been defending himself against the hussars. When Petya galloped up the Frenchman had already fallen. “Too late again!” flashed through Petya’s mind and he galloped on to the place from which the rapid firing could be heard. The shots came from the yard of the landowner’s house he had visited the night before with Dolokhov. The French were making a stand there behind a wattle fence in a garden thickly overgrown with bushes and

were firing at the Cossacks who crowded at the gateway. Through the smoke, as he approached the gate, Petya saw Dolokhov, whose face was of a pale-greenish tint, shouting to his men. "Go round! Wait for the infantry!" Dolokhov exclaimed as Petya rode up to him.

"Wait?... Hurrah-ah-ah!" shouted Petya, and without pausing a moment galloped to the place whence came the sounds of firing and where the smoke was thickest.

A volley was heard, and some bullets whistled past, while others plashed against something. The Cossacks and Dolokhov galloped after Petya into the gateway of the courtyard. In the dense wavering smoke, some of the French threw down their arms and ran out of the bushes to meet the Cossacks, while others ran down the hill toward the pond. Petya was galloping along the courtyard, but instead of holding the reins, he waved both his arms about rapidly and strangely, slipping farther and farther to one side in his saddle. His horse, having galloped up to a campfire that was smoldering in the morning light, stopped suddenly, and Petya fell heavily onto the wet ground. The Cossacks saw that Petya's arms and legs jerked rapidly though his head was quite motionless. A bullet had pierced Petya's skull.

After speaking to the senior French officer, who came out of the house with a white handkerchief tied to his sword and announced that they surrendered, Dolokhov dismounted and went up to Petya, who lay motionless with outstretched arms.

"Done for!" Dolokhov said with a frown and went to the gate to meet Denisov who was riding toward him.

"Killed?" cried Denisov, recognizing from a distance the unmistakably lifeless attitude—very familiar to him—in which Petya's body was lying.

"Done for!" repeated Dolokhov as if the utterance of these words afforded him pleasure, and he went quickly up to the prisoners, who were

surrounded by Cossacks who had hurried up. "We won't take them!" Dolokhov called out to Denisov.

Denisov did not reply; he rode up to Petya, dismounted, and with trembling hands turned toward himself the bloodstained, mud-bespattered face which had already gone white.

"I am used to something sweet. Raisins, fine ones... take them all!" Denisov recalled Petya's words. And the Cossacks looked round in surprise at the sound, like the yelp of a dog, with which Denisov turned away, walked to the wattle fence, and seized hold of it.

Among the Russian prisoners rescued by Denisov and Dolokhov was Pierre.

During the whole of their march from Moscow no fresh orders had been issued by the French authorities concerning the party of prisoners among whom was Pierre. On the twenty-second of October, that party was no longer with the same troops and baggage trains with which it had left Moscow. Half the wagons laden with hardtack that had traveled the first stages with them had been captured by Cossacks, the other half had gone on ahead. Not one of those dismounted cavalymen who had marched in front of the prisoners was left; they had all disappeared. The artillery the prisoners had seen in front of them during the first days was now replaced by General Junot's enormous baggage train, convoyed by Westphalians. Behind the prisoners came a cavalry baggage train.

From Vyázma onwards the French army, which had till then moved in three columns, went on as a single group. The symptoms of a disorder that Pierre had noticed at their first halting place after leaving Moscow had now reached the utmost limit.

The road along which they moved was bordered on both sides by dead horses; ragged men who had fallen behind from various regiments continually changed about, now joining the moving column, now again lagging behind it.

Several times during the march false alarms had been given and the French soldiers of the escort had raised their muskets, fired, and run headlong, crushing one another, but had afterward reassembled and abused each other for their causeless panic.

These three groups traveling together—the cavalry stores, the convoy of prisoners, and Junot's baggage train—still constituted a separate and united whole, though each of the groups was rapidly melting away.

Of the artillery baggage train which had consisted of a hundred and twenty wagons, not more than sixty now remained; the rest had been captured or left behind. Some of Junot's wagons also had been captured or abandoned. Three wagons had been raided and robbed by stragglers from War Minister Davout's corps. From the talk of the Germans, Pierre learned that a larger number of guards had been allotted to that baggage train than to the prisoners, and that one of the guards' comrades, a German soldier, had been shot by the general's own order because a silver spoon belonging to the general had been found in his possession.

The group of prisoners had melted away most of all. Of the three hundred and thirty men who had set out from Moscow fewer than a hundred now remained. The prisoners were more burdensome to the escort than even the cavalry saddles or Junot's baggage. They understood that the saddles and Junot's spoon might be of some use, but that cold and hungry soldiers should have to stand and guard equally cold and hungry Russians who froze and lagged behind on the road (in which case the order was to shoot them) was not merely incomprehensible but revolting. And the escort, as if afraid, in the grievous condition they themselves were in, of giving way to the pity they felt for the prisoners and so rendering their own plight still worse, treated them with particular moroseness and severity.

At Dorogobúzh while the soldiers of the convoy, after locking the prisoners in a stable, had gone off to pillage their own stores, several of the

soldier prisoners tunneled under the wall and ran away, but were recaptured by the French and shot.

The arrangement adopted when they started, that the officer prisoners should be kept separate from the rest, had long since been abandoned. All who could walk went together, and after the third stage, Pierre had rejoined Platón and the gray-blue bandy-legged dog that had chosen Platón for its master.

On the third day after leaving Moscow, Platón again fell ill with the fever he had suffered from in the hospital in Moscow, and as he grew gradually weaker Pierre kept away from him. Pierre did not know why, but since Platón had begun to grow weaker it had cost him an effort to go near him. When Pierre did so and heard the subdued moaning with which Platón generally lay down at the halting places, and when he smelled the odor emanating from him which was now stronger than before, Pierre moved farther away and did not think about him.

While imprisoned in the shed, Pierre had learned not with his intellect but with his whole being, by life itself, that man is created for happiness, that happiness is within him, in the satisfaction of simple human needs, and that all unhappiness arises not from privation but from superfluity. And now during these last three weeks of the march he had learned still another new, consolatory truth—that nothing in this world is terrible. Pierre had learned that as there is no condition in which man can be happy and entirely free, so there is no condition in which he need be unhappy and lack freedom. He learned that suffering and freedom have their limits and that those limits are very near together; that the person in a bed of roses with one crumpled petal suffered as keenly as he now, sleeping on the bare damp earth with one side growing chilled while the other was warming; and that when he had put on tight dancing shoes he had suffered just as he did now when he walked with bare feet that were covered with sores—his footgear having long since fallen to pieces. Pierre discovered that when he had married his wife—of

his own free will as it had seemed to him—he had been no more free than now when they locked him up at night in a stable. Of all that he himself subsequently termed his sufferings, but which at the time he scarcely felt, the worst was the state of his bare, raw, and scab-covered feet. (The horseflesh was appetizing and nourishing, the saltpeter flavor of the gunpowder they used instead of salt was even pleasant; there was no great cold, it was always warm walking in the daytime, and at night there were the campfires; the lice that devoured him warmed his body.) The one thing that was at first hard to bear was his feet.

After the second day's march Pierre, having examined his feet by the campfire, thought it would be impossible to walk on them; but when everybody got up he went along, limping, and, when he had warmed up, walked without feeling the pain, though at night his feet were more terrible to look at than before. However, he did not look at them now but thought of other things.

Only now did Pierre realize the full strength of life in man and the saving power he has of transferring his attention from one thing to another, which is like the safety valve of a boiler that allows superfluous steam to blow off when the pressure exceeds a certain limit.

He did not see and did not hear how they shot the prisoners who lagged behind, though more than a hundred perished in that way. He did not think of Platón who grew weaker every day and evidently would soon have to share that fate. Still less did Pierre think about himself. The harder his position became and the more terrible the future, the more independent of that position in which he found himself were the joyful and comforting thoughts, memories, and imaginings that came to him.

At midday on the twenty-second of October, Pierre was going uphill along the muddy, slippery road, looking at his feet and at the roughness of the way. Occasionally he glanced at the familiar crowd around him and then again at his feet. The former and the latter were alike familiar and his own.

The blue-gray bandy-legged dog ran merrily along the side of the road, sometimes in proof of its agility and self-satisfaction lifting one hind leg and hopping along on three, and then again going on all four and rushing to bark at the crows that sat on the carrion. The dog was merrier and sleeker than it had been in Moscow. All around lay the flesh of different animals—from men to horses—in various stages of decomposition; and as the wolves were kept off by the passing men the dog could eat all it wanted.

It had been raining since morning and had seemed as if at any moment it might cease and the sky clear, but after a short break it began raining harder than before. The saturated road no longer absorbed the water, which ran along the ruts in streams.

Pierre walked along, looking from side to side, counting his steps in threes, and reckoning them off on his fingers. Mentally addressing the rain, Pierre repeated: “Now then, now then, go on! Pelt harder!”

It seemed to Pierre that he was thinking of nothing, but far down and deep within him, his soul was occupied with something important and comforting. This something was a most subtle spiritual deduction from a conversation with Platón the day before.

At their yesterday’s halting place, feeling chilly by a dying campfire, Pierre had got up and gone to the next one, which was burning better. There Platón was sitting covered up—head and all—with his greatcoat as if it were a vestment, telling the soldiers in his effective and pleasant though now feeble voice a story Pierre knew. It was already past midnight, the hour when Platón was usually free of his fever and particularly lively. When Pierre reached the fire and heard Platón’s voice enfeebled by illness, and saw his pathetic face brightly lit up by the blaze, he felt a painful prick at his heart. Pierre’s feeling of pity for this man frightened him and he wished to go away, but there was no other fire, and Pierre sat down, trying not to look at Platón.

“Well, how are you?” Pierre asked.

“How am I? If we grumble at sickness, God won’t grant us death,” replied Platón, and at once resumed the story he had begun.

“And so, brother,” Platón continued, with a smile on his pale emaciated face and a particularly happy light in his eyes, “you see, brother...”

Pierre had long been familiar with that story. Platón had told it to him alone some half-dozen times and always with a specially joyful emotion. But well as he knew it, Pierre now listened to that tale as to something new, and the quiet rapture Platón evidently felt as he told it communicated itself also to Pierre. The story was of an old merchant who lived a good and God-fearing life with his family, and who went once to the Nízхни fair with a companion—a rich merchant.

Having put up at an inn both merchants both went to sleep, and the next morning the rich merchant was found robbed and with his throat cut. A bloodstained knife was found under the old merchant’s pillow. The old merchant was tried, knouted, and his nostrils having been torn off, “all in due form” as Platón put it, he was sent to hard labor in Siberia.

“And so, brother” (it was at this point that Pierre came up), “ten years or more passed by. The old merchant was living as a convict, submitting as he should and doing no wrong. Only he prayed to God for death. Well, one night the convicts were gathered just as we are, with the old man among them. And they began telling what each was suffering for, and how they had sinned against God. One told how he had taken a life, another had taken two, a third had set a house on fire, while another had simply been a vagrant and had done nothing. So they asked the old merchant: ‘What are you being punished for, Daddy?’—‘I, my dear brothers,’ said he, ‘am being punished for my own and other men’s sins. But I have not killed anyone or taken anything that was not mine but have only helped my poorer brothers. I was a merchant, my dear brothers, and had much property. ‘And he went on to tell them all about it in due order. ‘I don’t grieve for myself,’ he says, ‘God, it seems, has chastened me. Only I am sorry for my old wife and the

children,’ and the old man began to weep. Now it happened that in the group was the very man who had killed the other merchant. ‘Where did it happen, Daddy?’ he said. ‘When, and in what month?’ He asked all about it and his heart began to ache. So he comes up to the old merchant like this, and falls down at his feet! ‘You are perishing because of me, Daddy,’ he says. ‘It’s quite true, lads, that this man,’ he says, ‘is being tortured innocently and for nothing! I,’ he says, ‘did that deed, and I put the knife under your head while you were asleep. Forgive me, Daddy,’ he says, ‘for Christ’s sake!’”

Platón paused, smiling joyously as he gazed into the fire, and drew the logs together.

“And the old merchant said, ‘God will forgive you, we are all sinners in His sight. I suffer for my own sins,’ and he wept bitter tears. Well, and what do you think, dear friends?” Platón continued, his face brightening more and more with a rapturous smile as if what he now had to tell contained the chief charm and the whole meaning of his story: “What do you think, dear fellows? That murderer confessed to the authorities. ‘I have taken six lives,’ he says (he was a great sinner), ‘but what I am most sorry for is this old merchant. Don’t let him suffer because of me.’ So he confessed and it was all written down and the papers were sent off in due form. The place was a long way off, and while they were judging, what with one thing and another, filling in the papers all in due form—the authorities I mean—time passed. The affair reached the Tzar. After a while, the Tzar’s decree came: to set the merchant free and give him compensation that had been awarded. The paper arrived and they began to look for the old merchant. ‘Where is the old merchant who has been suffering innocently and in vain? A paper has come from the Tzar!’ so they began looking for him,” here Platón’s lower jaw trembled, “but God had already forgiven him—he was dead! That’s how it was, dear fellows!” Platón concluded and sat for a long time silent, gazing before him with a smile.

And Pierre's soul was dimly but joyfully filled not by the story itself but by its mysterious significance: by the rapturous joy that lit up Platón's face as he told it, and the mystic significance of that joy.

"To your places!" suddenly cried a voice.

A pleasant feeling of excitement and an expectation of something joyful and solemn was aroused among the French guards of the convoy and the prisoners. From all sides came shouts of command, and from the left came smartly dressed cavalymen on good horses, passing the prisoners at a trot. The expression on all faces showed the tension people feel at the approach of those in authority. The prisoners thronged together and were pushed off the road. The convoy formed up.

"The general!" and hardly had the sleek cavalry passed, before a carriage drawn by six gray horses rattled by. Pierre caught a glimpse of a man in a three-cornered hat with a tranquil look on his handsome, plump, white face. It was one of the generals. His eye fell on Pierre's large and striking figure, and in the expression with which he frowned and looked away, Pierre thought he detected sympathy and a desire to conceal that sympathy.

The general in charge of the stores galloped after the carriage with a red and frightened face, whipping up his skinny horse. Several officers formed a group and some soldiers crowded around them. Their faces all looked excited and worried.

"What did he say? What did he say?" Pierre heard them ask.

While the general was passing, the prisoners had huddled together in a crowd, and Pierre saw the peasant Platón whom he had not yet seen that morning. Platón sat in his short overcoat leaning against a birch tree. On his face, besides the look of joyful emotion it had worn yesterday while telling the tale of the merchant who suffered innocently, there was now an expression of quiet solemnity.

Platón looked at Pierre with his kindly round eyes now filled with tears, evidently wishing him to come near that he might say something to him. But Pierre was not sufficiently sure of himself. Pierre made as if he did not notice that look and moved hastily away.

When the prisoners again went forward Pierre looked around. Platón was still sitting at the side of the road under the birch tree and two Frenchmen were talking over his head. Pierre did not look around again but went limping up the hill.

From behind, where Platón had been sitting, came the sound of a shot. Pierre heard it plainly, but at that moment he remembered that he had not yet finished reckoning up how many stages still remained to Smolénsk—a calculation he had begun before the general went by. And Pierre again started reckoning. Two French soldiers ran past Pierre, one of whom carried a lowered and smoking gun. They both looked pale, and in the expression on their faces—one of them glanced timidly at Pierre—there was something resembling what he had seen on the face of the young soldier at the execution. Pierre looked at the soldier and remembered that two days before, that man had burned his shirt while drying it at the fire and how they had laughed at him.

Behind him, where Platón had been sitting, the dog began to howl. “What a stupid beast! Why is it howling?” thought Pierre.

Pierre’s comrades, the prisoner soldiers walking beside him, avoided looking back at the place where the shot had been fired and the dog was howling, just as Pierre did, but there was a set look on all the prisoners’ faces.

The supplies, the prisoners, and the general’s baggage train stopped at the village of Shámshevo. The men crowded together around the campfires. Pierre went up to the fire, ate some roast horseflesh, lay down with his back to the fire, and immediately fell asleep. Pierre again slept as he had done at Mozháysk after the battle of Borodinó.

Again real events mingled with dreams and again someone, he or another, gave expression to his thoughts, and even to the same thoughts that had been expressed in his dream at Mozháysk.

“Life is everything. Life is God. Everything changes and moves and that movement is God. And while there is life there is joy in the consciousness of the divine. To love life is to love God. Harder and more blessed than all else is to love this life in one’s sufferings, in innocent sufferings.”

“Platón!” came to Pierre’s mind.

And suddenly Pierre saw vividly before him a long-forgotten, kindly old man who had given him geography lessons in Switzerland. “Wait a bit,” said the old man, and showed Pierre a globe. This globe was alive—a vibrating ball without fixed dimensions. Its whole surface consisted of drops closely pressed together, and all these drops moved and changed places, sometimes several of them merging into one, sometimes one dividing into many. Each drop tried to spread out and occupy as much space as possible, but others striving to do the same compressed it, sometimes destroyed it, and sometimes merged with it.

“That is life,” said the old teacher.

“How simple and clear it is,” thought Pierre. “How is it I did not know it before?”

“God is in the midst, and each drop tries to expand so as to reflect Him to the greatest extent. And it grows, merges, disappears from the surface, sinks to the depths, and again emerges. There now, Platón has spread out and disappeared. Do you understand, my child?” said the teacher.

“Do you understand, damn you?” shouted a voice, and Pierre woke up.

Pierre lifted himself and sat up. A French soldier who had just pushed a Russian soldier away was squatting by the fire, engaged in roasting a piece of meat stuck on a ramrod. The French soldier's sleeves were rolled up and his sinewy, hairy, red hands with their short fingers deftly turned the

ramrod. His brown morose face with frowning brows was clearly visible by the glow of the charcoal.

“It’s all the same to him,” the French soldier muttered, turning quickly to a soldier who stood behind him. “Brigand! Get away!”

And twisting the ramrod the French soldier looked gloomily at Pierre, who turned away and gazed into the darkness. A prisoner, the Russian soldier the Frenchman had pushed away, was sitting near the fire patting something with his hand. Looking more closely Pierre recognized the blue-gray dog, sitting beside the French soldier, wagging its tail.

“Ah, he’s come?” said Pierre. “And Plat—” he began, but did not finish.

Suddenly and simultaneously a crowd of memories awoke in his fancy—of the look Platón had given him as he sat under the tree, of the shot heard from that spot, of the dog’s howl, of the guilty faces of the two French soldiers as they ran past him, of the lowered and smoking gun, and of Platón’s absence at this halt—and Pierre was on the point of realizing that Platón had been killed, but just at that instant, he knew not why, the recollection came to his mind of a summer evening he had spent with a beautiful Polish lady on the veranda of his house in Kiev. And without linking up the events of the day or drawing a conclusion from them, Pierre closed his eyes, seeing a vision of the country in summertime mingled with memories of bathing and of the liquid, vibrating globe, and he sank into the water so that it closed over his head.

Before sunrise, Pierre was awakened by shouts and loud and rapid firing. French soldiers were running past him.

“The Cossacks!” one of them shouted, and a moment later a crowd of Russians surrounded Pierre.

For a long time, Pierre could not understand what was happening to him. All around he heard his comrades sobbing with joy.

“Brothers! Dear fellows! Darlings!” old prisoners exclaimed, weeping, as they embraced Cossacks and hussars.

The hussars and Cossacks crowded around the prisoners; one offered them clothes, another boots, and a third bread. Pierre sobbed as he sat among them and could not utter a word. He hugged the first soldier who approached him and kissed him, weeping.

Dolokhov stood at the gate of the ruined house, letting a crowd of disarmed Frenchmen pass by. The French, excited by all that had happened, were talking loudly among themselves, but as they passed Dolokhov who gently switched his boots with his whip and watched them with cold glassy eyes that boded no good, the French became silent. On the opposite side stood Dolokhov's Cossack, counting the prisoners and marking off each hundred with a chalk line on the gate.

"How many Russian prisoners?" Dolokhov asked the Cossack.

"The second hundred," replied the Cossack.

"*Get along, get along!*" Dolokhov kept saying, having adopted this expression from the French, and when his eyes met those of the prisoners they flashed with a cruel light.

Denisov, bareheaded and with a gloomy face, walked behind some Cossacks who were carrying the body of Petya to a hole that had been dug in the garden.

After the twenty-eighth of October when the frosts began, the flight of the French assumed a still more tragic character, with men freezing, or roasting themselves to death at the campfires, while carriages with people dressed in furs continued to drive past, carrying away the property that had been stolen by the Tzar, kings, and dukes; but the process of the flight and disintegration of the French army went on essentially as before.

From Moscow to Vyázma the French army of seventy-three thousand men not reckoning the Guards (who did nothing during the whole war but pillage) was reduced to thirty-six thousand, though not more than five thousand had fallen in battle. From this beginning, the succeeding terms of the progression could be determined mathematically. The French army

melted away and perished at the same rate from Moscow to Vyázma, from Vyázma to Smolénsk, from Smolénsk to the Berězina, and from the Berězina to Vílna—independently of the greater or lesser intensity of the cold, the pursuit, the barring of the way, or any other particular conditions. Beyond Vyázma the French army instead of moving in three columns huddled together into one mass, and so went on to the end. Chief of Staff Berthier wrote to Napoleon (we know how far commanding officers allow themselves to diverge from the truth in describing the condition of an army) and this is what he said:

I deem it my duty to report to Your Majesty the condition of the various corps I have had occasion to observe during different stages of the last two or three days' march. They are almost disbanded. Scarcely a quarter of the soldiers remain with the standards of their regiments, the others go off by themselves in different directions hoping to find food and escape discipline. In general, they regard Smolénsk as the place where they hope to recover. During the last few days, many of the men have been seen throwing away their cartridges and their arms. In such a state of affairs, whatever your ultimate plans may be, the interest of Your Majesty's service demands that the army should be rallied at Smolénsk and should first of all be freed from ineffectiveness, such as dismounted cavalry, unnecessary baggage, and artillery material that is no longer in proportion to the present forces. The soldiers, who are worn out with hunger and fatigue, need these supplies as well as a few days' rest. Many have died these last days on the road or at the bivouacs. This state of things is continually becoming worse and makes one fear that unless a prompt remedy is applied the troops will no longer be under control in case of an engagement.

November 9: twenty miles from Smolénsk.

After staggering into Smolénsk which seemed to them a promised land, the French, searching for food, killed one another, sacked their own stores, and when everything had been plundered fled farther.

They all went without knowing whither or why they were going. Still less did that genius, Napoleon, know it, for no one issued any orders to him. But still, Napoleon and those about him retained their old habits: wrote commands, letters, reports, and orders of the day; called one another *sir*, *my cousin*, *King of Naples*, and so on. But these orders and reports were only on paper, nothing in them was acted upon for they could not be carried out, and though they entitled one another Majesties, Highnesses, or cousins, they all felt that they were miserable wretches who had done much evil for which they had now to pay. And though they pretended to be concerned about the army, each was thinking only of himself and of how to get away quickly and save himself.

The movements of the Russian and French armies during the campaign from Moscow back to the Niemen River were like those in a game of Russian blindman's buff, in which two players are blindfolded and one of them occasionally rings a little bell to inform the catcher of his whereabouts. First, the player rings his bell fearlessly, but when he gets into a tight place he runs away as quietly as he can, and often thinking to escape runs straight into his opponent's arms.

At first, while they were still moving along the Kalúga road, Napoleon's armies made their presence known, but later when they reached the Smolénsk road they ran holding the clapper of their bell tight—and often thinking they were escaping ran right into the Russians.

Owing to the rapidity of the French flight and the Russian pursuit and the consequent exhaustion of the horses, the chief means of approximately ascertaining the enemy's position—by cavalry scouting—was not available. Besides, as a result of the frequent and rapid change of position by each army, even what information was obtained could not be delivered in time. If

news was received one day that the enemy had been in a certain position the day before, by the third day when something could have been done, that army was already two days' march farther on and in quite another position.

One army fled and the other pursued. Beyond Smolénsk there were several different roads available for the French, and one would have thought that during their stay of four days they might have learned where the enemy was, might have arranged some more advantageous plan and undertaken something new. But after a four days halt the mob, with no maneuvers or plans, again began running along the beaten track, neither to the right nor to the left but along the old—the worst—road, through Krásnoe and Orshá.

Expecting the enemy from behind and not in front, the French separated in their flight and spread out over a distance of twenty-four hours. In front of them all fled Napoleon, then the kings, then the dukes. The Russian army, expecting Napoleon to take the road to the right beyond the Dnieper—which was the only reasonable thing for him to do—turned to the right and came out onto the high road at Krásnoe. And here as in a game of blindman's buff, the French ran into our vanguard. Seeing their enemy unexpectedly, the French fell into confusion and stopped short from the sudden scare, but then they resumed their flight, abandoning their comrades who were farther behind. Then for three days separate portions of the French army—first Général Murat's, then War Minister Davout's, and then Général Ney's—ran, as it were, the gauntlet of the Russian army. The French troops abandoned one another, abandoned all their heavy baggage, their artillery, and half their men, and fled, getting past the Russians by night by making semicircles to the right.

Général Ney, who came last, had been busying himself blowing up the walls of Smolénsk which were in nobody's way, because despite the unfortunate plight of the French or because of it, they wished to punish the floor against which they had hurt themselves. Général Ney, who had had a corps of ten thousand men, reached Napoleon at Orshá with only one

thousand men left, having abandoned all the rest and all his cannon, and having crossed the Dnieper at night by stealth at a wooded spot.

From Orshá they fled farther along the road to Vílna, still playing at blindman's buff with the pursuing army. At the Berëzina they again became disorganized, many were drowned and many surrendered, but those who got across the river fled farther. Their supreme chief donned a fur coat and, having seated himself in a sleigh, galloped on alone, abandoning his companions. The others who could do so drove away too, leaving those who could not to surrender or die.

This French campaign consisted in a flight during which they did all they could to destroy themselves. From the time they turned onto the Kalúga road to the day their leader fled from the army, none of the movements of the crowd had any sense. So one might have thought that regarding this period of the campaign the historians, who attributed the actions of the mass to the will of one man, would have found it impossible to make the story of the retreat fit their theory. But no! Mountains of books have been written by historians about this campaign, and everywhere are described Napoleon's arrangements, the maneuvers, and his profound plans which guided the army, as well as the military genius shown by his generals.

The retreat from Málo-Yaroslávets when Napoleon had a free road into a well-supplied district and the parallel road was open to him along which Marshal Kutuzov afterward pursued him—this unnecessary retreat along a devastated road—is explained to us as being due to profound considerations. Similarly, profound considerations are given for Napoleon's retreat from Smolénsk to Orshá. Then his heroism at Krásnoe is described, where Napoleon is reported to have been prepared to accept battle and take personal command and to have walked about with a birch stick and said:

"I have acted the sovereign long enough; it is time to act the général," but nevertheless, Napoleon immediately ran away again, abandoning to its

fate the scattered fragments of the army he left behind.

Then we are told of the greatness of soul of the général, especially of Général Ney—a greatness of soul consisting in this: that Général Ney ran away at night through the forest and across the Dnieper and escaped to Orshá, abandoning standards, artillery, and nine-tenths of his men.

And lastly, the final departure of Napoleon from his heroic army is presented to us by historians as something great and characteristic of genius. Even that final running away, described in ordinary language as the lowest depth of baseness which every child is taught to be ashamed of—even that act finds justification in the historians' language.

When it is impossible to stretch the very elastic threads of historical ratiocination any farther, when actions are clearly contrary to all that humanity calls right or even just, the historians produce a saving conception of "greatness." "Greatness," it seems, excludes the standards of right and wrong. For the "great" man nothing is wrong, there is no atrocity for which a "great" man can be blamed.

"*It is grand!*" say the historians, and there no longer exists either good or evil but only "*grand*" and "*not grand*." *Grand* is good, *not grand* is bad. *Grand* is the characteristic, in their conception, of some special animals called "heroes." And Napoleon, escaping home in a warm fur coat and leaving to perish those who were not merely his comrades but were (in his opinion) men he had brought there, feels *that is grand*, and his soul is tranquil.

"*Du sublime* (Napoleon saw something sublime in himself), *from the sublime to the ridiculous is but a step*," said Napoleon. And the whole world for fifty years has been repeating: "*Sublime! Grand! Napoleon the Grand!*" *From the sublime to the ridiculous is but a step.*"

And it occurs to no one that to admit a greatness not commensurable with the standard of right and wrong is merely to admit one's own nothingness and immeasurable meanness.

For us with the standard of good and evil given us by Christ, no human actions are incommensurable. And there is no greatness where simplicity, goodness, and truth are absent.

What Russian, reading the account of the last part of the campaign of 1812, has not experienced an uncomfortable feeling of regret, dissatisfaction, and perplexity? Who has not asked himself how it is that the French were not all captured or destroyed when our three armies surrounded them in superior numbers, when the disordered French, hungry and freezing, surrendered in crowds, and when (as the historians relate) the aim of the Russians was to stop the French, to cut them off, and capture them all?

How was it that the Russian army, which when numerically weaker than the French had given battle at Borodinó, did not achieve its purpose when it had surrounded the French on three sides and when its aim was to capture them? Can the French be so enormously superior to us that when we had surrounded them with superior forces we could not beat them? How could that happen?

History (or what is called by that name) replying to these questions says that this occurred because Marshal Kutuzov and Tormásov and General Chichagóv, and this man and that man, did not execute such and such maneuvers...

But why did they not execute those maneuvers? And why if they were guilty of not carrying out a prearranged plan were they not tried and punished? But even if we admitted that Marshal Kutuzov, General Chichagóv, and others were the cause of the Russian failures, it is still incomprehensible why, the position of the Russian army being what it was at Krásnoe and at the Berězina (in both cases we had superior forces), the French army with its generals, kings, and Tzar was not captured, if that was what the Russians aimed at.

The explanation of this strange fact given by Russian military historians (to the effect that Marshal Kutuzov hindered an attack) is unfounded, for we know that he could not restrain the troops from attacking at Vyázma and Tarútino.

Why was the Russian army—which with inferior forces had withstood the enemy in full strength at Borodinó—defeated at Krásnoe and the Berězina by the disorganized crowds of the French when it was numerically superior?

If the aim of the Russians consisted in cutting off and capturing Napoleon and his generals—and that aim was not merely frustrated but all attempts to attain it were most shamefully baffled—then this last period of the campaign is quite rightly considered by the French to be a series of victories, and quite wrongly considered victorious by Russian historians.

The Russian military historians in so far as they submit to claims of logic must admit that conclusion, and in spite of their lyrical rhapsodies about valor, devotion, and so forth, must reluctantly admit that the French retreat from Moscow was a series of victories for Napoleon and defeats for Marshal Kutuzov.

But putting national vanity entirely aside one feels that such a conclusion involves a contradiction, since the series of French victories brought the French complete destruction, while the series of Russian defeats led to the total destruction of their enemy and the liberation of their country.

The source of this contradiction lies in the fact that the historians studying the events from the letters of the sovereigns and the generals, from memoirs, reports, projects, and so forth, have attributed to this last period of the war of 1812 an aim that never existed, namely that of cutting off and capturing Napoleon with his generals and his army.

There never was or could have been such an aim, for it would have been senseless and its attainment quite impossible.

It would have been senseless, first because Napoleon's disorganized army was flying from Russia with all possible speed, that is to say, was doing just what every Russian desired. So what was the use of performing various operations on the French who were running away as fast as they possibly could?

Secondly, it would have been senseless to block the passage of men whose whole energy was directed to flight.

Thirdly, it would have been senseless to sacrifice one's own troops in order to destroy the French army, which without external interference was destroying itself at such a rate that, though its path was not blocked, it could not carry across the frontier more than it actually did in December, namely a hundredth part of the original army.

Fourthly, it would have been senseless to wish to take captive the Tzar, kings, and dukes—whose capture would have been in the highest degree embarrassing for the Russians, as the most adroit diplomatists of the time (Joseph de Maistre and others) recognized. Still more senseless would have been the wish to capture the army corps of the French, when our own army had melted away to half before reaching Krásnoe and a whole division would have been needed to convoy the corps of prisoners, and when our men were not always getting full rations and the prisoners already taken were perishing of hunger.

All the profound plans about cutting off and capturing Napoleon and his army were like the plan of a market gardener who, when driving out of his garden a cow that had trampled down the beds he had planted, should run to the gate and hit the cow on the head. The only thing to be said in excuse of that gardener would be that he was very angry. But not even that could be said for those who drew up this project, for it was not they who had suffered from the trampled beds.

But besides the fact that cutting off Napoleon with his army would have been senseless, it was impossible.

It was impossible first because—as experience shows that a three-mile movement of columns on a battlefield never coincides with the plans—the probability of General Chichagóv, Marshal Kutuzov, and Wittgenstein effecting a junction on time at an appointed place was so remote as to be tantamount to impossibility, as in fact thought Marshal Kutuzov, who when he received the plan remarked that diversions planned over great distances do not yield the desired results.

Secondly it was impossible because to paralyze the momentum with which Napoleon's army was retiring, incomparably greater forces than the Russians possessed would have been required.

Thirdly it was impossible because the military term “to cut off” has no meaning. One can cut off a slice of bread, but not an army. To cut off an army—to bar its road—is quite impossible, for there is always plenty of room to avoid capture and there is the night when nothing can be seen, as the military scientists might convince themselves by the example of Krásnoe and of the Berëzina. It is only possible to capture prisoners if they agree to be captured, just as it is only possible to catch a swallow if it settles on one's hand. Men can only be taken prisoners if they surrender according to the rules of strategy and tactics, as the Germans did. But the French troops quite rightly did not consider that this suited them since death by hunger and cold awaited them in flight or captivity alike.

Fourthly and chiefly it was impossible, because never since the world began has a war been fought under such conditions as those that obtained in 1812, and the Russian army in its pursuit of the French strained its strength to the utmost and could not have done more without destroying itself.

During the movement of the Russian army from Tarútino to Krásnoe, it lost fifty thousand sick or stragglers, which is a number equal to the population of a large provincial town. Half the men fell out of the army without a battle.

And it is of this period of the campaign—when the army lacked boots and sheepskin coats, was short of provisions and without vodka, and was camping out at night for months in the snow with fifteen degrees of frost, when there were only seven or eight hours of daylight and the rest was night in which the influence of discipline cannot be maintained, when men were taken into that region of death where discipline fails, not for a few hours only as in a battle, but for months, where they were every moment fighting death from hunger and cold, when half the army perished in a single month—it is of this period of the campaign that the historians tell us how General Milorádovich should have made a flank march to such and such a place, Tormásov to another place, and General Chichagóv should have crossed (more than knee-deep in snow) to somewhere else, and how so-and-so “routed” and “cut off” the French and so on and so on.

The Russians, half of whom died, did all that could and should have been done to attain an end worthy of the nation, and they are not to blame because other Russians, sitting in warm rooms, proposed that they should do what was impossible.

All that strange contradiction is now difficult to understand between the facts and the historical accounts only arises because the historians dealing with the matter have written the history of the beautiful words and sentiments of various generals, and not the history of the events.

To them the words of General Milorádovich seem very interesting, and so do their surmises and the rewards this or that general received; but the question of those fifty thousand men who were left in hospitals and in graves does not even interest them, for it does not come within the range of their investigation.

Yet one need only discard the study of the reports and plans and consider the movement of those hundreds of thousands of men who took a direct part in the events, and all the questions that seemed insoluble easily and simply receive an immediate and certain solution.

The aim of cutting off Napoleon and his army never existed except in the imaginations of a dozen people. It could not exist because it was senseless and unattainable.

The people had a single aim: to free their land from invasion. That aim was attained in the first place of itself, as the French ran away, and so it was only necessary not to stop their flight. Secondly it was attained by the guerrilla warfare which was destroying the French, and thirdly by the fact that a large Russian army was following the French, ready to use its strength in case their movement stopped.

The Russian army had to act like a whip to a running animal. And the experienced driver knew it was better to hold the whip raised as a menace than to strike the running animal on the head.

BOOK 15: 1812 - 13



When seeing a dying animal, a man feels a sense of horror: a substance similar to his own is perishing before his eyes. But when it is a beloved and intimate human being that is dying, besides this horror at the extinction of life there is a severance, a spiritual wound, which like a physical wound is sometimes fatal and sometimes heals, but always aches and shrinks at any external irritating touch.

After Andrei's death, Natasha and Marya alike felt this. Drooping in spirit and closing their eyes before the menacing cloud of death that overhung them, they dared not look life in the face. They carefully guarded their open wounds against any rough and painful contact. Everything: a carriage passing rapidly in the street, a summons to dinner, the maid's inquiry about what dress to prepare, or worse still any word of insincere or feeble sympathy, seemed an insult, painfully irritated the wound, interrupting that necessary quiet in which they both tried to listen to the stern and dreadful choir that still resounded in their imagination, and hindered their gazing into those mysterious limitless vistas that for an instant had opened out before them.

Only when alone together were Natasha and Marya free from such outrage and pain. They spoke little even to one another, and when they did it was of very unimportant matters.

Both Natasha and Marya avoided any allusion to the future. To admit the possibility of a future seemed to them to insult his memory. Still more carefully did they avoid anything relating to him who was dead. It seemed to them that what they had lived through and experienced could not be expressed in words and that any reference to the details of his life infringed the majesty and sacredness of the mystery that had been accomplished before their eyes.

Continued abstention from speech, and constant avoidance of everything that might lead up to the subject—this halting on all sides at the boundary of what they might not mention—brought before their minds with still greater purity and clearness what they were both feeling.

But pure and complete sorrow is as impossible as pure and complete joy. Marya, in her position as an absolute and independent arbiter of her own fate and guardian and instructor of her nephew, was the first to be called back to life from that realm of sorrow in which she had dwelt for the first fortnight. Marya received letters from her relations to which she had to reply; the room in which Nikolenka had been put was damp and he began to cough; Overseer Alpatych came to Marya with reports on the state of their affairs and with advice and suggestions that they should return to Moscow to the house on the Vozdvízhenka Street, which had remained uninjured and needed only slight repairs. Life did not stand still and it was necessary to live. Hard as it was for Marya to emerge from the realm of secluded contemplation in which she had lived till then, and sorry and almost ashamed as she felt to leave Natasha alone, yet the cares of life demanded her attention and she involuntarily yielded to them. She went through the accounts with Overseer Alpatych, conferred with the tutor Desalles about Nikolenka, gave orders, and made preparations for the journey to Moscow.

Natasha remained alone and, from the time Marya began making preparations for departure, held aloof from her too.

Marya asked Countess Rostov to let Natasha go with her to Moscow, and both Count and Countess Rostov gladly accepted this offer, for they saw Natasha losing strength every day and thought that a change of scene and the advice of Moscow doctors would be good for her.

“I am not going anywhere,” Natasha replied when this was proposed to her. “Do please just leave me alone!” And she ran out of the room, with difficulty refraining from tears of vexation and irritation rather than of sorrow.

After Natasha felt herself deserted by Marya and alone in her grief, she spent most of the time in her room by herself, sitting huddled up feet and all in the corner of the sofa, tearing and twisting something with her slender nervous fingers and gazing intently and fixedly at whatever her eyes chanced to fall on. This solitude exhausted and tormented her but she was in absolute need of it. As soon as anyone entered she got up quickly, changed her position and expression, and picked up a book or some sewing, evidently waiting impatiently for the intruder to go.

Natasha felt all the time as if she might at any moment penetrate that on which—with a terrible questioning too great for her strength—her spiritual gaze was fixed.

One day toward the end of December, Natasha, pale and thin, dressed in a black woolen gown, her plaited hair negligently twisted into a knot, was crouched feet and all in the corner of her sofa, nervously crumpling and smoothing out the end of her sash while she looked at a corner of the door.

Natasha was gazing in the direction in which Andrei had gone—to the other side of life. And that other side of life, of which she had never before thought and which had formerly seemed to her so far away and improbable, was now nearer and more akin and more comprehensible than this side of life, where everything was either emptiness and desolation or suffering and indignity.

Natasha was gazing where she knew Andrei to be, but she could not imagine him otherwise than as he had been here. She now saw him again as he had been at Mytishchi, at Tróitsa, and at Yaroslavl.

Natasha saw Andrei's face, heard his voice, repeated his words and her own, and sometimes devised other words they might have spoken.

There Andrei is lying back in an armchair in his velvet cloak, leaning his head on his thin pale hand. His chest is dreadfully hollow and his shoulders are raised. His lips are firmly closed, his eyes glitter, and a wrinkle comes and goes on his pale forehead. One of his legs twitches just perceptibly, but rapidly. Natasha knows that he is struggling with terrible pain. "What is that pain like? Why does he have that pain? What does he feel? How does it hurt him?" thought Natasha. He noticed her watching him, raised his eyes, and began to speak seriously:

"One thing would be terrible," said Andrei: "to bind oneself forever to a suffering man. It would be continual torture." And he looked searchingly at her. Natasha as usual answered before she had time to think what she would say. She said: "This can't go on—it won't. You will get well—quite well."

Natasha now saw Andrei from the commencement of that scene and relived what she had then felt. She recalled his long sad and severe look at those words and understood the meaning of the rebuke and despair in that protracted gaze.

"I agreed," Natasha now said to herself, "that it would be dreadful if Andrei always continued to suffer. I said it then only because it would have been dreadful for him, but he understood it differently. He thought it would be dreadful for me. He then still wished to live and feared death. And I said it so awkwardly and stupidly! I did not say what I meant. I thought quite differently. Had I said what I thought, I should have said: even if he had to go on dying, to die continually before my eyes, I should have been happy compared with what I am now. Now there is nothing... nobody. Did he know that? No, he did not and never will know it. And now it will never,

never be possible to put it right.” And now Andrei again seemed to be saying the same words to her, only in her imagination Natasha this time gave him a different answer. She stopped him and said: “Terrible for you, but not for me! You know that for me there is nothing in life but you, and to suffer with you is the greatest happiness for me,” and he took her hand and pressed it as he had pressed it that terrible evening four days before his death. And in her imagination she said other tender and loving words which she might have said then but only spoke now: “I love thee!... thee! I love, love...” she said, convulsively pressing her hands and setting her teeth with a desperate effort...

Natasha was overcome by sweet sorrow and tears were already rising in her eyes; then she suddenly asked herself to whom she was saying this. Again everything was shrouded in hard, dry perplexity, and again with a strained frown, she peered toward the world where he was. And now, it seemed to her she was penetrating the mystery... But at the instant when it seemed that the incomprehensible was revealing itself to her a loud rattle of the door handle struck painfully on her ears. Her maid entered the room quickly and abruptly with a frightened look on her face and showing no concern for her mistress.

“Come to Count Rostov at once, please!” said the maid with a strange, excited look. “A misfortune... about Petya... a letter,” she finished with a sob.

Besides a feeling of aloofness from everybody, Natasha was feeling a special estrangement from the members of her own family. All of them—her father, mother, and Sonya—were so near to her, so familiar, so commonplace, that all their words and feelings seemed an insult to the world in which she had been living of late, and she felt not merely indifferent to them but regarded them with hostility. Natasha heard the maid’s words about their youngest son, Petya, and misfortune, but did not grasp them.

“What misfortune? What misfortune can happen to them? They just live their own old, quiet, and commonplace life,” thought Natasha.

As Natasha entered the ballroom, Count Rostov was hurriedly coming out of her mother’s room. His face was puckered up and wet with tears. He had run out of that room to give vent to the sobs that were choking him. When Count Rostov saw Natasha he waved his arms despairingly and burst into convulsively painful sobs that distorted his soft round face.

“Pe... Petya... Go, go, Countess Rostov... is calling...” and weeping like a child and quickly shuffling on his feeble legs to a chair, he almost fell into it, covering his face with his hands.

Suddenly an electric shock seemed to run through Natasha’s whole being. Terrible anguish struck her heart, she felt a dreadful ache as if something was being torn inside her and she was dying. But the pain was immediately followed by a feeling of release from the oppressive constraint that had prevented her from taking part in life. The sight of Count Rostov, and the wild cries of her mother that she heard through the door, made her immediately forget herself and her grief.

Natasha ran to her father, but he feebly waved his arm, pointing to her mother’s door. Marya, pale and with a quivering chin, came out from that room and taking Natasha by the arm said something to her. Natasha neither saw nor heard her. She went in with rapid steps, pausing at the door for an instant as if struggling with herself and then ran to her mother.

Countess Rostov was lying in an armchair in a strange and awkward position, stretching out and beating her head against the wall. Sonya and the maids were holding her arms.

“Natasha! Natasha!...” cried Countess Rostov. “It’s not true... it’s not true... He’s lying... Natasha!” she shrieked, pushing those around her away. “Go away, all of you; it’s not true! Killed!... ha, ha, ha!... It’s not true!”

Natasha put one knee on the armchair, stooped over her mother, embraced her, and with unexpected strength raised her, turned her face

toward herself, and clung to her.

“Mummy!... darling!... I am here, my dearest Mummy,” she kept on whispering, not pausing an instant.

Natasha did not let go of her mother but struggled tenderly with her, demanded a pillow and hot water, and unfastened and tore open her mother’s dress.

“My dearest darling... Mummy, my precious!...” Natasha whispered incessantly, kissing her head, her hands, her face, and feeling her own irrepressible and streaming tears tickling her nose and cheeks.

Countess Rostov pressed Natasha’s hand, closed her eyes, and became quiet for a moment. Suddenly she sat up with unaccustomed swiftness, glanced vacantly around her, and seeing Natasha began to press her daughter’s head with all her strength. Then she turned toward her daughter’s face which was wincing with pain and gazed long at it.

“Natasha, you love me?” Countess Rostov said in a soft trustful whisper. “Natasha, you would not deceive me? You’ll tell me the whole truth?”

Natasha looked at her with eyes full of tears and in her look there was nothing but love and an entreaty for forgiveness.

“My darling Mummy!” Natasha repeated, straining all the power of her love to find some way of taking on herself the excess of grief that crushed her mother.

And again in a futile struggle with reality, Countess Rostov, refusing to believe that she could live when her beloved boy was killed in the bloom of life, escaped from reality into a world of delirium.

Natasha did not remember how that day passed nor that night, nor the next day and night. She did not sleep and did not leave her mother. Her persevering and patient love seemed completely to surround Countess Rostov every moment, not explaining or consoling, but recalling her to life.

During the third night, Countess Rostov kept very quiet for a few minutes, and Natasha rested her head on the arm of her chair and closed her eyes, but opened them again on hearing the bedstead creak. Countess Rostov was sitting up in bed and speaking softly.

“How glad I am you have come. You are tired. Won’t you have some tea?” Natasha went up to Countess Rostov. “You have improved in looks and grown more manly,” continued Countess Rostov, taking her daughter’s hand.

“Mamma! What are you saying...”

“Natasha, Petya is no more, no more!”

And embracing Natasha, Countess Rostov began to weep for the first time.

Marya postponed her departure. Sonya and Count Rostov tried to replace Natasha but could not. They saw that Natasha alone was able to restrain Countess Rostov from unreasoning despair. For three weeks Natasha remained constantly at her mother’s side, sleeping on a lounge chair in her room, making her eat and drink, and talking to her incessantly because the mere sound of her tender, caressing tones soothed her mother.

The mother’s wounded spirit could not heal. Petya’s death had torn from Countess Rostov half her life. When the news of Petya’s death had come she had been a fresh and vigorous woman of fifty, but a month later Countess Rostov left her room a listless old woman taking no interest in life. But the same blow that almost killed Countess Rostov, this second blow, restored Natasha to life.

A spiritual wound produced by a rending of the spiritual body is like a physical wound and, strange as it may seem, just as a deep wound may heal and its edges join, physical and spiritual wounds alike can yet heal completely only as the result of a vital force from within.

Natasha’s wound healed in that way. She thought her life was ended, but her love for her mother unexpectedly showed her that the essence of life—

love—was still active within her. Love awoke and so did life.

Andrei's last days had bound Marya and Natasha together; this new sorrow brought them still closer to one another. Marya put off her departure, and for three weeks looked after Natasha as if she had been a sick child. The last weeks passed in her mother's bedroom had strained Natasha's physical strength.

One afternoon noticing Natasha shivering with fever, Marya took her to her room and made her lie down on the bed. Natasha lay down, but when Marya had drawn the blinds and was going away she called her back.

"I don't want to sleep, Marya, sit by me a little."

"You are tired—try to sleep."

"No, no. Why did you bring me away? Countess Rostov will be asking for me."

"She is much better. She spoke so well today," said Marya.

Natasha lay on the bed and in the semidarkness of the room scanned Marya's face.

"Is Marya like Andrei?" thought Natasha. "Yes, like and yet not like. But Marya is quite original, strange, new, and unknown. And she loves me. What is in her heart? All that is good. But how? What is her mind like? What does she think about me? Yes, she is splendid!"

"Marya," Natasha said timidly, drawing Marya's hand to herself, "Marya, you mustn't think me wicked. No? Marya darling, how I love you! Let us be quite, quite friends."

And Natasha, embracing her, began kissing her face and hands, making Marya feel shy but happy by this demonstration of her feelings.

From that day a tender and passionate friendship such as exists only between women was established between Marya and Natasha. They were continually kissing and saying tender things to one another and spent most of their time together. When one went out the other became restless and hastened to rejoin her. Together they felt more in harmony with one another

than either of them felt with herself when alone. A feeling stronger than friendship sprang up between them; an exclusive feeling of life being possible only in each other's presence.

Sometimes Marya and Natasha were silent for hours; sometimes after they were already in bed they would begin talking and go on till morning. They spoke most of what was long past. Marya spoke of her childhood, of her mother, her father, and her daydreams; and Natasha, who with a passive lack of understanding had formerly turned away from that life of devotion, submission, and the poetry of Christian self-sacrifice, now feeling bound to Marya by affection, learned to love her past too and to understand a side of life previously incomprehensible to her. She did not think of applying submission and self-abnegation to her own life, for she was accustomed to seeking other joys, but she understood and loved in another those previously incomprehensible virtues. For Marya, listening to Natasha's tales of childhood and early youth, there also opened out a new and hitherto side of life not comprehended: belief in life and its enjoyment.

Just as before, they never mentioned *him* so as not to lower (as they thought) their exalted feelings by words; but this silence about Andrei had the effect of making them gradually begin to forget him without being conscious of it.

Natasha had grown thin and pale and physically so weak that they all talked about her health, and this pleased her. But sometimes she was suddenly overcome by fear not only of death but of sickness, weakness, and loss of good looks, and involuntarily she examined her bare arm carefully, surprised at its thinness, and in the morning noticed her drawn and, as it seemed to her, piteous face in her glass. It seemed to her that things must be so, and yet it was dreadfully sad.

One day Natasha went quickly upstairs and found herself out of breath. Unconsciously she immediately invented a reason for going down, and then, testing her strength, ran upstairs again, observing the result.

Another time when Natasha called the maid, Natasha's voice trembled, so she called again—though she could hear the maid coming—called her in the deep chest tones in which she had been wont to sing, and listened attentively to herself.

Natasha did not know and would not have believed it, but beneath the layer of slime that covered her soul and seemed to her impenetrable, delicate young shoots of grass were already sprouting, which taking root would so cover with their living verdure the grief that weighed her down that it would soon no longer be seen or noticed. The wound had begun to heal from within.

At the end of January, Marya left for Moscow, and Count Rostov insisted on Natasha's going with her to consult the doctors.

After the encounter at Vyázma, where Marshal Kutuzov had been unable to hold back his troops in their anxiety to overwhelm and cut off the enemy and so on, the farther movement of the fleeing French, and of the Russians who pursued them, continued as far as Krásnoe without a battle. The flight was so rapid that the Russian army pursuing the French could not keep up with them; cavalry and artillery horses broke down, and the information received about the movements of the French was never reliable.

The men in the Russian army were so worn out by this continuous marching at the rate of twenty-seven miles a day that they could not go any faster.

To realize the degree of exhaustion of the Russian army it is only necessary to grasp the meaning of the fact that, while not losing more than five thousand killed and wounded after Tarútino and less than a hundred prisoners, the Russian army which left that place a hundred thousand strong reached Krásnoe with only fifty thousand.

The rapidity of the Russian pursuit was just as destructive to our army as the flight of the French was to theirs. The only difference was that the Russian army moved voluntarily, with no such threat of destruction as hung

over the French, and that the sick Frenchmen were left behind in enemy hands while the sick Russians left behind were among their own people. The chief cause of the wastage of Napoleon's army was the rapidity of its movement, and convincing proof of this is the corresponding decrease in the Russian army.

Marshal Kutuzov as far as was in his power, instead of trying to check the movement of the French as was desired in St. Petersburg and by the Russian army generals, directed his whole activity here, as he had done at Tarútino and Vyázma, to hastening it on while easing the movement of our army.

But besides this, since the exhaustion and enormous diminution of the army caused by the rapidity of the advance had become evident, another reason for slackening the pace and delaying presented itself to Marshal Kutuzov. The Russian army aimed to pursue the French. The road the French would take was unknown, and so the closer our troops trod on their heels the greater distance they had to cover. Only by following at some distance could one cut across the zigzag path of the French. All the artful maneuvers suggested by our generals meant fresh movements of the army and a lengthening of its marches, whereas the only reasonable aim was to shorten those marches. To that end Marshal Kutuzov's activity was directed during the whole campaign from Moscow to Vílna—not casually or intermittently but so consistently that he never once deviated from it.

Marshal Kutuzov felt and knew—not by reasoning or science but with the whole of his Russian being—what every Russian soldier felt: that the French were beaten, that the enemy was flying and must be driven out; but at the same time, he like the soldiers realized all the hardship of this march, the rapidity of which was unparalleled for such a time of the year.

But to the generals, especially the foreign ones in the Russian army, who wished to distinguish themselves, to astonish somebody, and for some reason to capture a king or a duke—it seemed that now—when any battle

must be horrible and senseless—was the very time to fight and conquer somebody. Marshal Kutuzov merely shrugged his shoulders when one after another they presented projects of maneuvers to be made with those soldiers—ill-shod, insufficiently clad, and half-starved—who within a month and without fighting a battle had dwindled to half their number, and who at the best if the flight continued would have to go a greater distance than they had already traversed before they reached the frontier.

This longing to distinguish themselves, to maneuver, to overthrow, and to cut off showed itself particularly whenever the Russians stumbled on the French army.

So it was at Krásnoe, where they expected to find one of the three French columns and stumbled instead on Napoleon himself with sixteen thousand men. Despite all Marshal Kutuzov's efforts to avoid that ruinous encounter and to preserve his troops, the massacre of the broken mob of French soldiers by worn-out Russians continued at Krásnoe for three days.

Toll wrote a disposition: "The first column will march to so and so," etc. And as usual, nothing happened in accord with the disposition. Baron Eugène of Württemberg fired from a hill over the French crowds that were running past, and he demanded reinforcements which did not arrive. The French, avoiding the Russians, dispersed and hid in the forest by night, making their way around as best they could, and continued their flight.

Russian General Milorádovich, who said he did not want to know anything about the commissariat affairs of his detachment, and could never be found when he was wanted—that *knight without fear and without reproach* as he styled himself—who was fond of parleys with the French, sent envoys demanding their surrender, wasted time, and did not do what he was ordered to do.

"I give you that column, lads," General Milorádovich said, riding up to the troops and pointing out the French to the cavalry.

And the cavalry, with spurs and sabers urging on horses that could scarcely move, trotted with much effort to the column presented to them—that is to say, to a crowd of Frenchmen stark with cold, frost-bitten, and starving—and the column that had been presented to them threw down its arms and surrendered as it had long been anxious to do.

At Krásnoe, the Russians took twenty-six thousand prisoners, several hundred cannons, and a stick called a “general’s staff,” and disputed as to who had distinguished himself and were pleased with their achievement—though they much regretted not having taken Napoleon, or at least a general or a hero of some sort, and reproached one another and especially Marshal Kutuzov for having failed to do so.

These Russian men, carried away by their passions, were but blind tools of the most melancholy law of necessity, but considered themselves heroes and imagined that they were accomplishing a most noble and honorable deed. They blamed Marshal Kutuzov and said that from the very beginning of the campaign he had prevented their vanquishing Napoleon, that Marshal Kutuzov thought of nothing but satisfying his passions and would not advance from the Linen Factories because he was comfortable there, that at Krásnoe, Marshal Kutuzov checked the advance because on learning that Napoleon was there he had quite lost his head, and that it was probable that Marshal Kutuzov had an understanding with Napoleon and had been bribed by him, and so on, and so on.

Not only did Marshal Kutuzov’s contemporaries, carried away by their passions, talk in this way, but posterity and history have acclaimed Napoleon as *grand*, while Marshal Kutuzov is described by foreigners as a crafty, dissolute, weak old courtier, and by Russians as something indefinite—a sort of puppet useful only because he had a Russian name.

In 1812 and 1813, Marshal Kutuzov was openly accused of blundering. The Tzar was dissatisfied with him. And in a history recently written by order of the Highest Authorities, it is said that Marshal Kutuzov was a

cunning court liar, frightened of the name of Napoleon, and that by his blunders at Krásnoe and the Berězina he deprived the Russian army of the glory of complete victory over the French.

Such is the fate not of great men (*grands hommes*) whom the Russian mind does not acknowledge, but of those rare and always solitary individuals who, discerning the will of Providence, submit their will to it. The hatred and contempt of the crowd punish such men for discerning the higher laws.

For Russian historians, strange and terrible to say, Napoleon—that most insignificant tool of history who never anywhere, even in exile, showed human dignity—Napoleon is the object of adulation and enthusiasm; he is *grand*. But Marshal Kutuzov—the man who from the beginning to the end of his activity in 1812, never once swerving by word or deed from Borodinó to Vílna, presented an example exceptional in history of self-sacrifice and a present consciousness of the future importance of what was happening—Marshal Kutuzov seems to them something indefinite and pitiful, and when speaking of him and of the year 1812 they always seem a little ashamed.

And yet it is difficult to imagine a historical character whose activity was so unswervingly directed to a single aim than Marshal Kutuzov's, and it would be difficult to imagine any aim more worthy or more consonant with the will of the whole people. Still more difficult would it be to find an instance in history of the aim of a historical personage being so completely accomplished as that to which all of Marshal Kutuzov's efforts were directed in 1812.

Marshal Kutuzov never talked of “forty centuries looking down from the Pyramids,” of the sacrifices he offered for the fatherland, or of what he intended to accomplish or had accomplished; he said nothing about himself, adopted no pose, always appeared to be the simplest and most ordinary of men, and said the simplest and most ordinary things. Marshal Kutuzov

wrote letters to his daughters and to Madame de Staël, read novels, liked the society of pretty women, jested with generals, officers, and soldiers, and never contradicted those who tried to prove anything to him. When Mayor Rostopchin at the Yaúza bridge galloped up to Marshal Kutuzov with personal reproaches for having caused the destruction of Moscow, and said: “How was it you promised not to abandon Moscow without a battle?” Marshal Kutuzov replied: “And I shall not abandon Moscow without a battle,” though Moscow was then already abandoned. When War Minister Arakchéev, coming to him from the Tzar, said that General Ermólov ought to be appointed chief of the artillery, Marshal Kutuzov replied: “Yes, I was just saying so myself,” though a moment before he had said quite the contrary. What did it matter to him—who then alone amid a senseless crowd understood the whole tremendous significance of what was happening—what did it matter to him whether Mayor Rostopchin attributed the calamities of Moscow to him or to himself? Still less could it matter to him who was appointed chief of the artillery.

Not merely in these cases but continually did that old man Marshal Kutuzov—who by his experience of life had reached the conviction that thoughts and the words serving as their expression are not what move people—use quite meaningless words that happened to enter his head.

But Marshal Kutuzov, so heedless of his words, did not once during the whole time of his activity utter one word inconsistent with the single aim toward which he moved throughout the whole war. Obviously in spite of himself, in very diverse circumstances, he repeatedly expressed his real thoughts with the bitter conviction that he would not be understood. Beginning with the battle of Borodinó, from which time his disagreement with those about him began, he alone said that *the battle of Borodinó was a victory*, and repeated this both verbally and in his dispatches and reports up to the time of his death. Marshal Kutuzov alone said that *the loss of Moscow is not the loss of Russia*. In reply to Lauriston’s proposal of peace,

he said: *There can be no peace, for such is the people's will.* He alone during the retreat of the French said that *all our maneuvers are useless, everything is being accomplished of itself better than we could desire; that the enemy must be offered "a golden bridge"; that neither the Tarútino, the Vyázma, nor the Krásnoe battles were necessary; that we must keep some force to reach the frontier with, and that he would not sacrifice a single Russian for ten Frenchmen.*

And this courtier Marshal Kutuzov, as he is described to us, who lies to War Minister Arakchéev to please the Tzar, he alone—incurring thereby the Tzar's displeasure—said in Vílna that *to carry the war beyond the frontier is useless and harmful.*

Nor do words alone prove that only Marshal Kutuzov understood the meaning of the events. His actions—without the smallest deviation—were all directed to the same threefold end: (1) to brace all his strength for conflict with the French, (2) to defeat them, and (3) to drive them out of Russia, minimizing as far as possible the sufferings of our people and of our army.

This procrastinator Marshal Kutuzov, whose motto was "Patience and Time," this enemy of decisive action, gave battle at Borodinó, investing the preparations for it with unparalleled solemnity. This Marshal Kutuzov who before the battle of Austerlitz began said that it would be lost, he alone, in contradiction to everyone else, declared till his death that Borodinó was a victory, despite the assurance of generals that the battle was lost and despite the fact that for an army to have to retire after winning a battle was unprecedented. He alone during the whole retreat insisted that battles, which were useless then, should not be fought, and that a new war should not be begun nor the frontiers of Russia crossed.

It is easy now to understand the significance of these events—if only we abstain from attributing to the activity of the mass aims that existed only in

the heads of a dozen individuals—for the events and results now lie before us.

But how did that old man Marshal Kutuzov, alone, in opposition to the general opinion, so truly discern the importance of the people's view of the events that in all his activity he was never once untrue to it?

The source of that extraordinary power of penetrating the meaning of the events then occurring lay in the national feeling that he possessed in full purity and strength.

Only the recognition of the fact that Marshal Kutuzov possessed this feeling caused the people in so strange a manner, contrary to the Tzar's wish, to select him—an old man in disfavor—to be their representative in the national war. And only that feeling placed him on that highest human pedestal from which he, the Marshal, devoted all his powers not to slaying and destroying men but to saving and showing pity on them.

That simple, modest, and therefore truly great, figure of Marshal Kutuzov could not be cast in the false mold of a European hero—the supposed ruler of men—that history has invented.

To a lackey, no man can be great, for a lackey has his own conception of greatness.

The fifth of November was the first day of what is called the battle of Krásnoe. Toward evening—after much disputing and many mistakes made by generals who did not go to their proper places, and after adjutants had been sent about with counterorders—when it had become plain that the enemy was everywhere in flight and that there could and would be no battle, Marshal Kutuzov left Krásnoe and went to Dóbroe whither his headquarters had that day been transferred.

The day was clear and frosty. Marshal Kutuzov rode to Dóbroe on his plump little white horse, followed by an enormous suite of discontented generals who whispered among themselves behind his back. All along the road groups of French prisoners captured that day (there were seven

thousand of them) were crowding to warm themselves at campfires. Near Dóbroe an immense crowd of tattered prisoners, buzzing with talk and wrapped and bandaged in anything they had been able to get hold of, were standing in the road beside a long row of unharnessed French guns. At the approach of the Marshal, the buzz of talk ceased and all eyes were fixed on Marshal Kutuzov who, wearing a white cap with a red band and a padded overcoat that bulged on his round shoulders, moved slowly along the road on his white horse. One of the generals was reporting to him where the guns and prisoners had been captured.

Marshal Kutuzov seemed preoccupied and did not listen to what the general was saying. He screwed up his eyes with a dissatisfied look as he gazed attentively and fixedly at these prisoners, who presented a specially wretched appearance. Most of them were disfigured by frost-bitten noses and cheeks, and nearly all had red, swollen, and festering eyes.

One group of the French stood close to the road, and two of them, one of whom had his face covered with sores, were tearing a piece of raw flesh with their hands. There was something horrible and bestial in the fleeting glance they threw at the riders and in the malevolent expression with which, after a glance at Marshal Kutuzov, the soldier with the sores immediately turned away and went on with what he was doing.

Marshal Kutuzov looked long and intently at these two soldiers. He puckered his face, screwed up his eyes, and pensively swayed his head. At another spot he noticed a Russian soldier laughingly patting a Frenchman on the shoulder, saying something to him in a friendly manner, and Marshal Kutuzov with the same expression on his face again swayed his head.

“What were you saying?” Marshal Kutuzov asked the general, who continuing his report directed Marshal Kutuzov’s attention to some standards captured from the French and standing in front of the Preobrazhénsk regiment.

“Ah, the standards!” said Marshal Kutuzov, evidently detaching himself with difficulty from the thoughts that preoccupied him.

Marshal Kutuzov looked about him absently. Thousands of eyes were looking at him from all sides awaiting a word from him.

Marshal Kutuzov stopped in front of the Preobrazhénsk regiment, sighed deeply, and closed his eyes. One of his suite beckoned to the soldiers carrying the standards to advance and surround Marshal Kutuzov with them. He was silent for a few seconds and then, submitting with evident reluctance to the duty imposed by his position, raised his head and began to speak. A throng of officers surrounded him. He looked attentively around at the circle of officers, recognizing several of them.

“I thank you all!” Marshal Kutuzov said, addressing the soldiers and then again the officers. In the stillness around him, his slowly uttered words were distinctly heard. “I thank you all for your hard and faithful service. The victory is complete and Russia will not forget you! Honor to you forever.”

Marshal Kutuzov paused and looked around.

“Lower its head, lower it!” Marshal Kutuzov said to a soldier who had accidentally lowered the French eagle he was holding before the Preobrazhénsk standards. “Lower, lower, that’s it. Hurrah lads!” he added, addressing the men with a rapid movement of his chin.

“Hur-r-rah!” roared thousands of voices.

While the soldiers were shouting Marshal Kutuzov leaned forward in his saddle and bowed his head, and his eye lit up with a mild and ironic gleam.

“You see, brothers...” said Marshal Kutuzov when the shouts had ceased... and all at once his voice and the expression of his face changed. It was no longer the Marshal speaking but an ordinary old man who wanted to tell his comrades something very important.

There was a stir among the throng of officers and in the ranks of the soldiers, who moved that they might hear better what he was going to say.

“You see, brothers, I know it’s hard for you, but it can’t be helped! Bear up; it won’t be for long now! We’ll see our visitors off and then we’ll rest. The Tzar won’t forget your service. It is hard for you, but still, you are at home while they—you see what they have come to,” said he, pointing to the prisoners. “Worse off than our poorest beggars. While they were strong we didn’t spare ourselves, but now we may even pity them. They are human beings too. Isn’t it so, lads?”

Marshal Kutuzov looked around, and in the direct, respectful, wondering gaze fixed upon him, he read sympathy with what he had said. His face grew brighter and brighter with an old man’s mild smile, which drew the corners of his lips and eyes into a cluster of wrinkles. He ceased speaking and bowed his head as if in perplexity.

“But after all who asked them here? Serves them right, the bloody bastards!” Marshal Kutuzov cried, suddenly lifting his head.

And flourishing his whip, Marshal Kutuzov rode off at a gallop for the first time during the whole campaign, and left the broken ranks of the soldiers laughing joyfully and shouting “Hurrah!”

Marshal Kutuzov’s words were hardly understood by the troops. No one could have repeated his address, begun solemnly and then changing into an old man’s simplehearted talk; but the hearty sincerity of that speech, the feeling of majestic triumph combined with pity for the foe and consciousness of the justice of our cause, exactly expressed by that old man’s good-natured expletives, was not merely understood but lay in the soul of every soldier and found expression in their joyous and long-sustained shouts. Afterward, when one of the generals addressed Marshal Kutuzov asking whether he wished his *carriage* to be sent for, Marshal Kutuzov in answering unexpectedly sobbed, being greatly moved.

When the Russian troops reached their night's halting place on the eighth of November, the last day of the Krásnoe battles, it was already growing dusk. All day it had been calm and frosty with occasional lightly falling snow and toward evening it began to clear. Through the falling snow, a purple-black and starry sky showed itself and the frost grew keener.

An infantry regiment that had left Tarútino three thousand strong but now numbered only nine hundred was one of the first to arrive that night at its halting place—a village on the high road. The quartermasters who met the regiment announced that all the huts were full of sick and dead Frenchmen, cavalymen, and members of the staff. There was only one hut available for the regimental commander.

The Russian commander rode up to his hut. The regiment passed through the village and stacked its arms in front of the last huts.

Like some huge many-limbed animal, the regiment began to prepare its lair and its food. One part of it dispersed and waded knee-deep through the snow into a birch forest to the right of the village, and immediately the sound of axes and swords, the crashing of branches, and merry voices could be heard from there. Another section amid the regimental wagons and horses which were standing in a group was busy getting out caldrons and rye biscuits and feeding the horses. A third section scattered through the village arranging quarters for the staff officers, carrying out the French corpses that were in the huts, and dragging away boards, dry wood, and thatch from the roofs, for the campfires, or wattle fences to serve as shelter.

Some fifteen men with merry shouts were shaking down the high wattle wall of a shed, the roof of which had already been removed.

“Now then, all together—shove!” cried the voices, and the huge surface of the wall, sprinkled with snow and creaking with frost, was seen swaying in the gloom of the night. The lower stakes cracked more and more and at last, the wall fell, and with it the men who had been pushing it. Loud, coarse laughter and joyous shouts ensued.

“Now then, catch hold in twos! Hand up the lever! That’s it... Where are you shoving to?”

“Now, all together! But wait a moment, boys... With a song!”

All stood silent, and a soft, pleasant velvety voice began to sing. At the end of the third verse, as the last note died away, twenty voices roared out at once: “Oo-oo-oo-oo! That’s it. All together! Heave away, boys!...” but despite their united efforts the wattle hardly moved, and in the silence that followed the heavy breathing of the men was audible.

“Here, you of the Sixth Company! Devils that you are! Lend a hand... will you? You may want us one of these days.”

Some twenty men of the Sixth Company who were on their way into the village joined the haulers, and the wattle wall, which was about thirty-five feet long and seven feet high, moved forward along the village street, swaying, pressing upon and cutting the shoulders of the gasping men.

“Get along... Falling? What are you stopping for? There now...”

Merry senseless words of abuse flowed freely.

“What are you up to?” suddenly came the authoritative voice of a sergeant major who came upon the men who were hauling their burden. “There are gentry here; the general himself is in that hut, and you foul-mouthed devils, you brutes, I’ll give it to you!” shouted he, hitting the first man who came in his way a swinging blow on the back. “Can’t you make less noise?”

The men became silent. The soldier who had been struck groaned and wiped his face, which had been scratched till it bled by his falling against the wattle.

“There, how that devil hits out! He’s made my face all bloody,” said he in a frightened whisper when the sergeant major had passed on.

“Don’t you like it?” said a laughing voice, and moderating their tones the men moved forward.

When they were out of the village they began talking again as loud as before, interlarding their talk with the same aimless expletives.

In the hut which the men had passed, the chief officers had gathered and were in animated talk over their tea about the events of the day and the maneuvers suggested for tomorrow. It was proposed to make a flank march to the left, cut off Général Murat, and capture him.

By the time the soldiers had dragged the wattle fence to its place the campfires were blazing on all sides ready for cooking, the wood crackled, the snow was melting, and black shadows of soldiers flitted to and fro all over the occupied space where the snow had been trodden down.

Axes and choppers were plied all around. Everything was done without any orders being given. Stores of wood were brought for the night, shelters were rigged up for the officers, caldrons were being boiled, and muskets and accouterments were put in order.

The wattle wall the men had brought was set up in a semicircle by the Eighth Company as a shelter from the north, propped up by musket rests, and a campfire was built before it. They beat the tattoo, called the roll, had supper, and settled down round the fires for the night—some repairing their footgear, some smoking pipes, and some stripping themselves naked to steam the lice out of their shirts.

One would have thought that under the almost incredibly wretched conditions the Russian soldiers were in at that time—lacking warm boots and sheepskin coats, without a roof over their heads, in the snow with eighteen degrees of frost, and without even full rations (the commissariat did not always keep up with the troops)—they would have presented a very sad and depressing spectacle.

On the contrary, the Russian army had never under the best material conditions presented a more cheerful and animated aspect. This was because all who began to grow depressed or who lost strength were sifted out of the army day by day. All the physically or morally weak had long

since been left behind and only the flower of the army—physically and mentally—remained.

More men collected behind the wattle fence of the Eighth Company than anywhere else. Two sergeants major were sitting with them and their campfire blazed brighter than others. For leave to sit by their wattle they demanded contributions of fuel.

“Eh, Makéev! What has become of you, you son of a bitch? Are you lost or have the wolves eaten you? Fetch some more wood!” shouted a red-haired and red-faced man, screwing up his eyes and blinking because of the smoke but not moving back from the fire. “And you, Jackdaw, go and fetch some wood!” said he to another soldier.

This red-haired man was neither a sergeant nor a corporal, but being robust he ordered about those weaker than himself. The soldier they called “Jackdaw,” a thin little fellow with a sharp nose, rose obediently and was about to go but at that instant there came into the light of the fire the slender, handsome figure of a young soldier carrying a load of wood.

“Bring it here—that’s fine!”

They split up the wood, pressed it down on the fire, blew at it with their mouths, and fanned it with the skirts of their greatcoats, making the flames hiss and crackle. The men drew nearer and lit their pipes. The handsome young soldier who had brought the wood, setting his arms akimbo, began stamping his cold feet rapidly and deftly on the spot where he stood.

“Mother! The dew is cold but clear... It’s well that I’m a musketeer...” he sang, pretending to hiccough after each syllable.

“Look out, your soles will fly off!” shouted the red-haired man, noticing that the sole of the dancer’s boot was hanging loose. “What a fellow you are for dancing!”

The dancer stopped, pulled off the loose piece of leather, and threw it on the fire.

“Right enough, friend,” said he, and, having sat down, took out of his knapsack a scrap of blue French cloth, and wrapped it around his foot. “It’s the steam that spoils them,” he added, stretching out his feet toward the fire.

“They’ll soon be issuing us new ones. They say that when we’ve finished hammering *them*, we’re to receive double kits!”

“And that son of a bitch Petróv has lagged behind after all, it seems,” said one sergeant major.

“I’ve had an eye on him this long while,” said the other.

“Well, he’s a poor sort of soldier...”

“But in the Third Company, they say nine men were missing yesterday.”

“Yes, it’s all very well, but when a man’s feet are frozen how can he walk?”

“Eh? Don’t talk nonsense!” said a sergeant major.

“Do you want to be doing the same?” said an old soldier, turning reproachfully to the man who had spoken of frozen feet.

“Well, you know,” said the sharp-nosed man they called Jackdaw in a squeaky and unsteady voice, raising himself at the other side of the fire, “a plump man gets thin, but for a thin one it’s death. Take me, now! I’ve got no strength left,” he added, with sudden resolution turning to the sergeant major. “Tell them to send me to a hospital; I’m aching all over; anyway I shan’t be able to keep up.”

“That’ll do, that’ll do!” replied the sergeant major quietly.

The soldier said no more and the talk went on.

“What a lot of those Frenchies were taken today, and the fact is that not one of them had what you might call real boots on,” said a soldier, starting a new theme. “They were no more than make-believes.”

“The Cossacks have taken their boots. They were clearing the hut for the colonel and carried them out. It was pitiful to see them, boys,” put in the dancer. “As they turned them over one seemed still alive and, would you believe it, he jabbered something in their lingo.”

“But they’re a clean folk, lads,” the first man went on; “he was white—as white as birchbark—and some of them are such fine fellows, you might think they were nobles.”

“Well, what do you think? They make soldiers of all classes there.”

“But they don’t understand our talk at all,” said the dancer with a puzzled smile. “I asked him whose subject he was, and he jabbered in his own way. A queer lot!”

“But it’s strange, friends,” continued the man who had wondered at their whiteness, “the peasants at Mozháysk were saying that when they began burying the dead—where the battle was you know—well, those dead had been lying there for nearly a month, and says the peasant, ‘they lie as white as paper, clean, and not as much smell as a puff of powder smoke.’”

“Was it from the cold?” asked someone.

“You’re a clever fellow! From the cold indeed! Why, it was hot. If it had been from the cold, ours would not have rotted either. ‘But,’ he says, ‘go up to ours and they are all rotten and maggoty. So,’ he says, ‘we tie our faces up with kerchiefs and turn our heads away as we drag them off: we can hardly do it. But theirs,’ he says, ‘are white as paper and not so much smell as a whiff of gunpowder.’”

All were silent.

“It must be from their food,” said the sergeant major. “They used to gobble the same food as the gentry.”

No one contradicted him.

“That peasant near Mozháysk where the battle was said the men were all called up from ten villages around and they carted for twenty days and still didn’t finish carting the dead away. And as for the wolves, he says...”

“That was a real battle,” said an old soldier. “It’s the only one worth remembering, but since that... it’s only been tormenting folk.”

“And do you know, the day before yesterday we ran at them and, my word, they didn’t let us get near before they just threw down their muskets

and went on their knees. ‘Pardon!’ they say. That’s only one case. They say General Platov took ‘Poleon himself twice. But he didn’t know the right charm. He catches him and catches him—no good! He turns into a bird in his hands and flies away. And there’s no way of killing him either.”

“You’re a first-class liar, Kiselëv, when I come to look at you!”

“Liar, indeed! It’s the real truth.”

“If he fell into my hands, when I’d caught him I’d bury him in the ground with an aspen stake to fix him down. What a lot of men he’s ruined!”

“Well, anyhow we’re going to end it. He won’t come here again,” remarked the old soldier, yawning.

The conversation flagged, and the soldiers began settling down to sleep.

“Look at the stars. It’s wonderful how they shine! You would think the women had spread out their linen,” said one of the men, gazing with admiration at the Milky Way.

“That’s a sign of a good harvest next year.”

“We shall want some more wood.”

“You warm your back and your belly gets frozen. That’s queer.”

“Oh, Lord!”

“What are you pushing for? Is the fire only for you? Look how he’s sprawling!”

In the silence that ensued, the snoring of those who had fallen asleep could be heard. Others turned over and warmed themselves, now and again exchanging a few words. From a campfire, a hundred paces off came a sound of merry laughter.

“Hark at them roaring there in the Fifth Company!” said one of the soldiers, “and what a lot of them there are!”

One of the men got up and went over to the Fifth Company.

“They’re having such fun,” said he, coming back. “Two Frenchies have turned up. One’s quite frozen and the other’s an awful swaggerer. He’s

singing songs...”

“Oh, I’ll go across and have a look...”

And several of the men went over to the Fifth Company.

The Russian Fifth company was bivouacking at the very edge of the forest. A huge campfire was blazing brightly in the midst of the snow, lighting up the branches of trees heavy with hoarfrost.

About midnight they heard the sound of steps in the snow of the forest, and the crackling of dry branches.

“A bear, lads,” said one of the men.

They all raised their heads to listen, and out of the forest into the bright firelight stepped two strangely clad human figures clinging to one another.

These were two Frenchmen who had been hiding in the forest. They came up to the fire, hoarsely uttering something in a language our soldiers did not understand. One was taller than the other; he wore an officer’s hat and seemed quite exhausted. On approaching the fire he had been going to sit down, but fell. The other, a short sturdy soldier with a shawl tied around his head, was stronger. He raised his companion and said something, pointing to his mouth. The soldiers surrounded the Frenchmen, spread a greatcoat on the ground for the sick man, and brought some buckwheat porridge and vodka for both of them.

The exhausted French officer was Captain Ramballe, the man who was so good to Pierre back in Moscow, and the man with his head wrapped in the shawl was his orderly.

When Captain Ramballe’s orderly had drunk some vodka and finished his bowl of porridge he suddenly became unnaturally merry and chattered incessantly to the soldiers, who could not understand him. Captain Ramballe refused food and resting his head on his elbow lay silent beside the campfire, looking at the Russian soldiers with red and vacant eyes. Occasionally he emitted a long-drawn groan and then again became silent. Captain Ramballe’s orderly, pointing to his shoulders, tried to impress on

the soldiers the fact that Captain Ramballe was an officer and ought to be warmed. A Russian officer who had come up to the fire sent to ask his colonel whether he would not take a French officer into his hut to warm him, and when the messenger returned and said that the colonel wished the officer to be brought to him, Captain Ramballe was told to go. He rose and tried to walk, but staggered and would have fallen had not a soldier standing by held him up.

“You won’t do it again, eh?” said one of the soldiers, winking and turning mockingly to Captain Ramballe.

“Oh, you fool! Why talk rubbish, lout that you are—a real peasant!” came rebukes from all sides addressed to the jesting soldier.

They surrounded Captain Ramballe, lifted him on the crossed arms of two soldiers, and carried him to the hut. Captain Ramballe put his arms around their necks while they carried him and began wailing plaintively:

“Oh, you fine fellows, my kind, kind friends! These are men! Oh, my brave, kind friends,” and he leaned his head against the shoulder of one of the men like a child.

Meanwhile Captain Ramballe’s orderly was sitting in the best place by the fire, surrounded by the soldiers.

Captain Ramballe’s orderly, a short sturdy Frenchman with inflamed and streaming eyes, was wearing a woman’s cloak and had a shawl tied woman fashion around his head over his cap. He was tipsy and was singing a French song in a hoarse broken voice, with an arm thrown around the nearest soldier. The soldiers simply held their sides as they watched him.

“Now then, now then, teach us how it goes! I’ll soon pick it up. How is it?” said the man—a singer and a wag—whom Captain Ramballe’s orderly was embracing.

“Long live Henry the Fourth, that valiant king! That rowdy devil...”

“Vivarika! Vif-seruvaru! Sedyablyaka!” repeated the soldier, flourishing his arm and catching the tune.

“Bravo! Ha, ha, ha!” rose their rough, joyous laughter from all sides. Captain Ramballe’s orderly, wrinkling up his face, laughed too.

“Well, go on, go on!”

Captain Ramballe’s orderly sang,

“Who had a triple talent

For drinking, for fighting,

And for being a gallant old boy...

“It goes smoothly, too. Well, now, Zaletáev!”

“Ke...” Zaletáev brought out with effort: “ke-e-e-e,” he drawled, laboriously pursing his lips, “le-trip-ta-la-de-bu-de-ba, e de-tra-va-ga-la” he sang.

“Fine! Just like the Frenchie! Oh, ho ho! Do you want some more to eat?”

“Give him some porridge: it takes a long time to get filled up after starving.”

They gave him some more porridge and Captain Ramballe’s orderly with a laugh set to work on his third bowl. All the young soldiers smiled gaily as they watched him. The older men, who thought it undignified to amuse themselves with such nonsense, continued to lie at the opposite side of the fire, but one would occasionally raise himself on an elbow and glance at Captain Ramballe’s orderly with a smile.

“They are men too,” said one of the older soldiers as he wrapped himself up in his coat. “Even wormwood grows on its own root.”

“Oh Lord, Oh Lord! How starry it is! Tremendous! That means a hard frost...”

They all grew silent. The stars, as if knowing that no one was looking at them, began to disport themselves in the dark sky: now flaring up, now vanishing, now trembling, they were busy whispering something gladsome and mysterious to one another.

The French army melted away at the uniform rate of a mathematical progression, and that crossing of the Berëzina River about which so much has been written was only one intermediate stage in its destruction, and not at all the decisive episode of the campaign. If so much has been and still is written about the Berëzina River, on the French side this is only because at the broken bridge across that river the calamities their army had been previously enduring were suddenly concentrated at one moment into a tragic spectacle that remained in every memory, and on the Russian side merely because in St. Petersburg—far from the seat of war—a plan (again one of General Pfuel's) had been devised to catch Napoleon in a strategic carriage at the Berëzina River. Everyone assured himself that all would happen according to plan, and therefore insisted that it was just the crossing of the Berëzina River that destroyed the French army. In reality, the results of the crossing were much less disastrous to the French—in guns and men lost—than Krásnoe had been, as the figures show.

The sole importance of the crossing of the Berëzina River lies in the fact that it plainly and indubitably proved the fallacy of all the plans for cutting off the enemy's retreat and the soundness of the only possible line of action—the one Marshal Kutuzov and the mass of the army demanded—namely, simply to follow the enemy up. The French crowd fled at a continually increasing speed and all its energy was directed towards reaching its goal. It fled like a wounded animal and it was impossible to block its path. This was shown not so much by the arrangements it made for crossing as by what took place at the bridges. When the bridges broke down, unarmed soldiers, people from Moscow, and women with children who were with the French transport, all—carried on by *inertia*—pressed forward into boats and into the ice-covered water and did not surrender.

That impulse was reasonable. The condition of fugitives and pursuers was equally bad. As long as they remained with their own people each might hope for help from his fellows and the definite place he held among

them. But those who surrendered, while remaining in the same pitiful plight, would be on a lower level to claim a share in the necessities of life. The French did not need to be informed of the fact that half the prisoners—with whom the Russians did not know what to do—perished of cold and hunger despite their captors' desire to save them; they felt that it could not be otherwise. The most compassionate Russian commanders, those favorable to the French—and even the Frenchmen in the Russian service—could do nothing for the prisoners. The French perished from the conditions to which the Russian army was itself exposed. It was impossible to take bread and clothes from our hungry and indispensable soldiers to give to the French who, though not harmful, or hated, or guilty, were simply unnecessary. Some Russians even did that, but they were exceptions.

Certain destruction lay behind the French but in front there was hope. Their ships had been burned, there was no salvation save in collective flight, and on that, the whole strength of the French was concentrated.

The farther they fled the more wretched became the plight of the remnant, especially after the Berëzina River, on which (in consequence of the St. Petersburg plan) special hopes had been placed by the Russians, and the keener grew the passions of the Russian commanders, who blamed one another and Marshal Kutuzov most of all. Anticipation that the failure of the Berëzina River plan would be attributed to Marshal Kutuzov led to dissatisfaction, contempt, and ridicule, more and more strongly expressed. The ridicule and contempt were of course expressed in a respectful form, making it impossible for him to ask wherein he was to blame. They did not talk seriously to him; when reporting to him or asking for his sanction they appeared to be fulfilling a regrettable formality, but they winked behind his back and tried to mislead him at every turn.

Because they could not understand him all these people assumed that it was useless to talk to t Marshal Kutuzov; that he would never grasp the profundity of their plans, that he would answer with his phrases (which they

thought were mere phrases) about a “golden bridge,” about the impossibility of crossing the frontier with a crowd of tatterdemalions, and so forth. They had heard all that before. And all Marshal Kutuzov said—that it was necessary to await provisions, or that the men had no boots—was so simple, while what they proposed was so complicated and clever, that it was evident that he was old and stupid and that they, though not in power, were commanders of genius.

After the junction with the army of the brilliant admiral and St. Petersburg hero Wittgenstein, this mood and the gossip of the staff reached their maximum. Marshal Kutuzov saw this and merely sighed and shrugged his shoulders. Only once, after the affair of the Berëzina, did Marshal Kutuzov get angry and write to General Bennigsen (who reported separately to the Tzar) the following letter:

“On account of your spells of ill health, will your excellency please be so good as to set off for Kalúga on receipt of this, and there await further commands and appointments from the Tzar.”

But after General Bennigsen’s departure, the Tzar’s son joined the army. He had taken part at the beginning of the campaign but had subsequently been removed from the army by Marshal Kutuzov. Now having come to the army, the Tzar’s son informed Marshal Kutuzov of the Tzar’s displeasure at the poor success of our forces and the slowness of their advance. The Tzar intended to join the army personally in a few days.

Marshal, experienced in court as well as in military affairs—this same Marshal Kutuzov who in August had been chosen Marshal against the Tzar’s wishes and who had removed the Grand Duke Pávlovich and heir-apparent from the army—who on his own authority and contrary to the Tzar’s will had decided on the abandonment of Moscow, now realized at once that his day was over, that his part was played, and that the power Marshal Kutuzov was supposed to hold was no longer his. And Marshal Kutuzov understood this not merely from the attitude of the court. He saw

on the one hand that the military business in which he had played his part was ended and felt that his mission was accomplished, and at the same time, he began to be conscious of the physical weariness of his aged body and the necessity of physical rest.

On the twenty-ninth of November Marshal Kutuzov entered Vίlna—his “dear Vίlna” as he called it. Twice during his career Marshal Kutuzov had been governor of Vίlna. In that wealthy town, which had not been injured, he found old friends and associations, besides the comforts of life of which he had so long been deprived. And Marshal Kutuzov suddenly turned from the cares of army and state and, as far as the passions that seethed around him allowed, immersed himself in the quiet life to which he had formerly been accustomed, as if all that was taking place and all that had still to be done in the realm of history did not concern him at all.

General Chichagόv, one of the most zealous “cutters-off” and “breakers-up,” who had first wanted to effect a diversion in Greece and then in Warsaw but never wished to go where he was sent: General Chichagόv, noted for the boldness with which he spoke to the Tzar, and who considered Marshal Kutuzov to be under an obligation to him because when he was sent to make peace with Turkey in 1811 independently of Marshal Kutuzov and found that peace had already been concluded, General Chichagόv admitted to the Tzar that the merit of securing that peace was really Marshal Kutuzov’s; this General Chichagόv was the first to meet Marshal Kutuzov at the castle where the latter was to stay. In undress naval uniform, with a dirk, and holding his cap under his arm, General Chichagόv handed Marshal Kutuzov a garrison report and the keys of the town. The contemptuously respectful attitude of the younger men to Marshal Kutuzov in his dotage was expressed in the highest degree by the behavior of General Chichagόv, who knew of the accusations that were being directed against Marshal Kutuzov.

When speaking to General Chichagóv, Marshal Kutuzov incidentally mentioned that the vehicles packed with china that had been captured from him at Borisov had been recovered and would be restored to him.

“You mean to imply that I have nothing to eat out of for you... On the contrary, I can supply you with everything even if you want to give dinner parties,” warmly replied General Chichagóv, who tried by every word he spoke to prove his rectitude and therefore imagined Marshal Kutuzov to be animated by the same desire.

Marshal Kutuzov, shrugging his shoulders, replied with his subtle penetrating smile: “I meant merely to say what I said.”

Contrary to the Tzar’s wish, Marshal Kutuzov detained the greater part of the army at Vílna. Those about him said that he became extraordinarily slack and physically feeble during his stay in that town. Marshal Kutuzov attended to army affairs reluctantly, left everything to his generals, and while awaiting the Tzar’s arrival led a dissipated life.

Having left St. Petersburg on the seventh of December with his suite—Grand Marshal of the Court Count Tolstóy, Baron Volkónski, War Minister Arakchéev, and others—the Tzar reached Vílna on the eleventh, and in his traveling sleigh drove straight to the castle. Despite the severe frost some hundred generals and staff officers in full parade uniform stood in front of the castle, as well as a guard of honor of the Semënov regiment.

A courier who galloped to the castle in advance, in a sleigh with three foam-flecked horses, shouted “The Tzar is coming!” and Konovnítsyn rushed into the vestibule to inform Marshal Kutuzov, who was waiting in the hall porter’s little lodge.

A minute later, Kutuzov’s large stout figure in full-dress uniform, his chest covered with orders and a scarf drawn round his stomach, waddled out into the porch. He put on his hat with its peaks to the sides and, holding his gloves in his hand and walking with an effort sideways down the steps

to the level of the street, took in his hand the report he had prepared for the Tzar.

There was running to and fro and whispering; another sleigh flew furiously up, and then all eyes were turned on an approaching sleigh in which the figures of the Tzar and Volkónski could already be seen.

From the habit of fifty years, all this had a physically agitating effect on Kutuzov. He carefully and hastily felt himself all over, readjusted his hat, and pulling himself together drew himself up and, at the very moment when the Tzar, having alighted from the sleigh, lifted his eyes to him, handed him the report and began speaking in his smooth, ingratiating voice.

The Tzar with a rapid glance scanned Marshal Kutuzov from head to foot, frowned for an instant, but immediately mastering himself went up to the old man, extended his arms, and embraced him. And this embrace too, owing to a long-standing impression related to his innermost feelings, had its usual effect on Marshal Kutuzov and he sobbed.

The Tzar greeted the officers and the Semënov guard and again pressing the old man's hand went with him into the castle.

When alone with Kutuzov, the Tzar expressed his dissatisfaction at the slowness of the pursuit and at the mistakes made at Krásnoe and the Berëzina and informed him of his intentions for a future campaign abroad. Marshal Kutuzov made no rejoinder or remark. The same submissive, expressionless look with which he had listened to the Tzar's commands on the field of Austerlitz seven years before settled on his face now.

When Marshal Kutuzov came out of the study and with a lowered head was crossing the ballroom with his heavy waddling gait, he was arrested by someone's voice saying:

“Your Serene Highness!”

Marshal Kutuzov raised his head and looked for a long while into the eyes of Grand Marshal of the Court Count Tolstóy, who stood before him

holding a silver salver on which lay a small object. Marshal Kutuzov seemed not to understand what was expected of him.

Suddenly Marshal Kutuzov seemed to remember; a scarcely perceptible smile flashed across his puffy face and bowing low and respectfully he took the object that lay on the salver. It was the Order of St. George of the First Class.

The next day, Marshal Kutuzov gave a dinner and ball which the Tzar honored by his presence. Marshal Kutuzov had received the Order of St. George of the First Class and the Tzar showed him the highest honors, but everyone knew of the imperial dissatisfaction with him. The proprieties were observed and the Tzar was the first to set that example, but everybody understood that Marshal Kutuzov was blameworthy and good for nothing. When Marshal Kutuzov, conforming to a custom of Catherine the Great's day, ordered the standards that had been captured to be lowered at the Tzar's feet on his entering the ballroom, the Tzar made a wry face and muttered something in which some people caught the words, "the old comedian."

The Tzar's displeasure with Marshal Kutuzov was specially increased at Vilna by the fact that Marshal Kutuzov evidently could not or would not understand the importance of the coming campaign.

When on the following morning, the Tzar said to the officers assembled about him: "You have not only saved Russia, you have saved Europe!", they all understood that the war was not ended.

Marshal Kutuzov alone would not see this and openly expressed his opinion that no fresh war could improve the position or add to the glory of Russia, but could only spoil and lower the glorious position that Russia had gained. Marshal Kutuzov tried to prove to the Tzar the impossibility of levying fresh troops, spoke of the hardships already endured by the people, of the possibility of failure, and so forth.

This being Marshal Kutuzov's frame of mind, he was naturally regarded as merely a hindrance and obstacle to the impending war.

To avoid unpleasant encounters with Marshal Kutuzov, the natural method was to do what had been done with him at Austerlitz and with Barclay at the beginning of the Russian campaign—to transfer the authority to the Tzar himself, thus cutting the ground from under Kutuzov's feet without upsetting the old man by informing him of the change.

With this object, Marshal Kutuzov's staff was gradually reconstructed and its real strength was removed and transferred to the Tzar. Toll, Konovnitsyn, and General Ermólov received fresh appointments. Everyone spoke loudly of Marshal Kutuzov's great weakness and failing health.

Marshal Kutuzov's health had to be bad for his power to be taken away. And in fact, his health was very poor.

So naturally, simply, and gradually—just as Kutuzov had come from Turkey to the Treasury in St. Petersburg to recruit the militia, and then Kutuzov had come to the army when he was needed there—now when his part was played out, Marshal Kutuzov was slowly relieved of power.

The war of 1812, besides its national significance dear to every Russian heart, was now to assume another, a European, significance.

The movement of peoples from west to east was to be succeeded by a movement of peoples from east to west, and for this fresh war, another leader was necessary, having qualities and views differing from Marshal Kutuzov's and animated by different motives.

The Tzar was as necessary for the movement of the peoples from east to west and for the redrawing of national frontiers as Marshal Kutuzov had been for the salvation and glory of Russia.

Marshal Kutuzov did not understand what Europe, the balance of power, or Napoleon meant. Marshal Kutuzov could not understand it. For the representative of the Russian people, after the enemy had been destroyed and Russia had been liberated and raised to the summit of her

glory, there was nothing left to do as a Russian. Nothing remained for the representative of the national war but to die, and so Marshal Kutuzov died.

As generally happens, Pierre did not feel the full effects of the physical privation and strain he had suffered as a prisoner until after they were over. After Pierre's liberation, he reached Orël, and on the third day there, when preparing to go to Kiev, he fell ill and was laid up for three months. He had what the doctors termed "bilious fever." But despite the fact that the doctors treated him, bled him, and gave him medicines to drink, he recovered.

Scarcely any impression was left on Pierre's mind by all that happened to him from the time of his rescue till his illness. He remembered only the dull gray weather now rainy and now snowy, internal physical distress, and pains in his feet and side. Pierre remembered a general impression of the misfortunes and sufferings of people and of being worried by the curiosity of officers and generals who questioned him, he also remembered his difficulty in procuring a conveyance and horses, and above all, he remembered his incapacity to think and feel all that time. On the day of his rescue, he had seen the body of Petya. That same day he had learned that Andrei, after surviving the battle of Borodinó for more than a month had recently died in the Rostovs' house at Yaroslávl, and Denisov who told him this news also mentioned Helene's death, supposing that Pierre had heard of it long before. All this at the time seemed merely strange to Pierre: he felt he could not grasp its significance. Just then Pierre was only anxious to get away as quickly as possible from places where people were killing one another, to some peaceful refuge where he could recover himself, rest, and think over all the strange new facts he had learned; but on reaching Orël he immediately fell ill. When Pierre came to himself after his illness he saw in attendance on him two of his servants, Terénty and Váška, who had come from Moscow; and also his cousin Katerina, who had been living on his estate at Eléts and hearing of his rescue and illness had come to look after him.

It was only gradually during his convalescence that Pierre lost the impressions he had become accustomed to during the last few months and got used to the idea that no one would oblige him to go anywhere tomorrow, that no one would deprive him of his warm bed, and that he would be sure to get his dinner, tea, and supper. But for a long time in his dreams, Pierre still saw himself in the conditions of captivity. In the same way little by little he came to understand the news he had been told after his rescue, about the death of Andrei, the death of his wife, and the destruction of the French.

A joyous feeling of freedom—that complete inalienable freedom natural to man which he had first experienced at the first halt outside Moscow—filled Pierre's soul during his convalescence. He was surprised to find that this inner freedom, which was independent of external conditions, now had as it were an additional setting of external liberty. Pierre was alone in a strange town, without acquaintances. No one demanded anything of him or sent him anywhere. He had all he wanted: the thought of his wife which had been a continual torment to him was no longer there since she was no more.

“Oh, how good! How splendid!” said Pierre to himself when a cleanly laid table was moved up to him with savory beef tea, or when he lay down for the night on a soft clean bed, or when he remembered that the French had gone and that his wife was no more. “Oh, how good, how splendid!”

And by old habit, Pierre asked himself the question: “Well, and what then? What am I going to do?” And he immediately gave himself the answer: “Well, I shall live. Ah, how splendid!”

The very question that had formerly tormented him, the thing he had continually sought to find—the aim of life—no longer existed for him now. That search for the aim of life had not merely disappeared temporarily—he felt that it no longer existed for him and could not present itself again. And this very absence of an aim gave him the complete, joyous sense of freedom which constituted his happiness at this time.

Pierre could not see an aim, for he now had faith—not faith in any kind of rule, or words, or ideas, but faith in an ever-living, ever-manifest God. Formerly he had sought Him in aims he set himself. That search for an aim had been simply a search for God, and suddenly in his captivity, he had learned not by words or reasoning but by direct feeling what his nurse had told him long ago: that God is here and everywhere. In his captivity, he had learned that in Platón, God was greater, more infinite, and unfathomable than in the Architect of the Universe recognized by the Freemasons. Pierre felt like a man who after straining his eyes to see into the far distance finds what he sought at his very feet. All his life he had looked over the heads of the men around him when he should have merely looked in front of him without straining his eyes.

In the past, Pierre had never been able to find that great inscrutable infinite *something*. He had only felt that it must exist somewhere and had looked for it. In everything near and comprehensible he had seen only what was limited, petty, commonplace, and senseless. He had equipped himself with a mental telescope and looked into remote space, where petty worldliness hiding in misty distance had seemed to him great and infinite merely because it was not clearly seen. And such had European life, politics, Freemasonry, philosophy, and philanthropy seemed to him. But even then, at moments of weakness, as Pierre had accounted them, his mind had penetrated to those distances and he had there seen the same pettiness, worldliness, and senselessness. Now, however, he had learned to see the great, eternal, and infinite in everything, and therefore—to see it and enjoy its contemplation—he naturally threw away the telescope through which he had till now gazed over men’s heads, and gladly regarded the ever-changing, eternally great, unfathomable, and infinite life around him. And the closer he looked the more tranquil and happy he became. That dreadful question, “What for?” which had formerly destroyed all his mental edifices, no longer existed for him. To that question, “What for?” a simple answer

was now always ready in Pierre's soul: "Because there is a God, that God without whose will not one hair falls from a man's head."

In external ways, Pierre had hardly changed at all. In appearance, he was just what he used to be. As before he was absent-minded and seemed occupied not with what was before his eyes but with something special of his own. The difference between his former and present self was that formerly when he did not grasp what lay before him or was said to him, he had puckered his forehead painfully as if vainly seeking to distinguish something at a distance. At present Pierre still forgot what was said to him and still did not see what was before his eyes, but he now looked with a scarcely perceptible and seemingly ironic smile at what was before him and listened to what was said, though seeing and hearing something quite different. Formerly Pierre had appeared to be a kindhearted but unhappy man, and so people had been inclined to avoid him. Now a smile at the joy of life always played around his lips, and sympathy for others shone in his eyes with a questioning look as to whether they were as contented as he was, and people felt pleased by his presence.

Previously Pierre had talked a great deal, grew excited when he talked, and seldom listened; now he was seldom carried away in conversation and knew how to listen so that people readily told him their most intimate secrets.

Marya, who had never liked Pierre and had been particularly hostile to him since she had felt herself under obligations to him after Petya's death, now after staying a short time in Orël—where she had come intending to show Pierre that in spite of his ingratitude she considered it her duty to nurse him—felt to her surprise and vexation that she had become fond of him. Pierre did not in any way seek Marya's approval, he merely studied her with interest. Formerly Marya had felt that Pierre regarded her with indifference and irony, and so had shrunk into herself as she did with others and had shown him only the combative side of her nature; but now he

seemed to be trying to understand the most intimate places of her heart, and, mistrustfully at first but

The most cunning man could not have crept into Marya's confidence more successfully, evoking memories of the best times of her youth and showing sympathy with them. Yet Pierre's cunning consisted simply in finding pleasure in drawing out the human qualities of the embittered, hard, and (in her own way) proud Marya.

"Yes, Pierre is a very, very kind man when he is not under the influence of bad people but of people such as myself," thought she.

Pierre's servants too—Terénty and Váška—in their own way noticed the change that had taken place in Pierre. They considered that he had become much "simpler." Terénty, when he had helped him undress and wished him good night, often lingered with his master's boots in his hands and clothes over his arm, to see whether he would not start a talk. And Pierre, noticing that Terénty wanted a chat, generally kept him there.

"Well, tell me... now, how did you get food?" Pierre would ask.

And Terénty would begin talking of the destruction of Moscow, and of Count Rostov, and would stand for a long time holding the clothes and talking, or sometimes listening to Pierre's stories, and then would go out into the hall with a pleasant sense of intimacy with his master and affection for him.

The doctor who attended to Pierre and visited him every day, though he considered it his duty as a doctor to pose as a man whose every moment was of value to suffering humanity, would sit for hours with Pierre telling him his favorite anecdotes and his observations on the characters of his patients, and especially of the ladies.

"It's a pleasure to talk to a man like Pierre; he is not like our provincials," the doctor would say.

There were several prisoners from the French army in Orël, and the doctor brought one of them, an Italian officer, to see Pierre.

This young Italian officer began visiting Pierre, and Marya used to make fun of the tenderness the Italian expressed for him.

The Italian officer seemed happy only when he could come to see Pierre, talk with him, tell him about his past, his life at home, and his love, and pour out to him his indignation against the French and especially against Napoleon.

“If all Russians are in the least like you, it is sacrilege to fight such a nation,” the Italian officer said to Pierre. “You, who have suffered so from the French, do not even feel animosity toward them.”

Pierre had evoked the passionate affection of the Italian officer merely by evoking the best side of his nature and taking pleasure in so doing.

During the last days of Pierre’s stay in Orël, his old Masonic acquaintance Willarski, who had introduced him to the lodge in 1807, came to see him. Willarski was married to a Russian heiress who had a large estate in Orël province, and he occupied a temporary post in the commissariat department in that town.

Hearing that Pierre was in town, Willarski, though they had never been intimate, came to him with the professions of friendship and intimacy that people who meet in a desert express for one another. Willarski felt dull in Orël and was pleased to meet a man of his own circle and, as he supposed, of similar interests.

But to his surprise, Willarski soon noticed that Pierre had lagged much behind the times, and had sunk, as he expressed it to himself, into apathy and egotism.

“You are letting yourself go, my dear Pierre,” Willarski said.

But for all that Willarski found it pleasanter now than it had been formerly to be with Pierre, and came to see him every day. To Pierre, as he looked at and listened to Willarski, it seemed strange to think that he had been like that himself but a short time before.

Willarski was a married man with a family, busy with his family affairs, his wife's affairs, and his official duties. He regarded all these occupations as hindrances to life and considered that they were all contemptible because their aim was the welfare of himself and his family. Military, administrative, political, and Masonic interests continually absorbed his attention. And Pierre, without trying to change the other's views and without condemning him, but with the quiet, joyful, and amused smile now habitual to him, was interested in this strange though very familiar phenomenon.

There was a new feature in Pierre's relations with Willarski, with Marya, with the doctor, and with all the people he now met, which gained him general goodwill. This was his acknowledgment of the impossibility of changing a man's convictions by words, and his recognition of the possibility of everyone thinking, feeling, and seeing things each from his own point of view. This legitimate peculiarity of each individual which used to excite and irritate Pierre now became a basis of the sympathy he felt for, and the interest he took in, other people. The difference, and sometimes complete contradiction, between men's opinions and their lives, and between one man and another, pleased him and drew from him an amused and gentle smile.

In practical matters, Pierre unexpectedly felt within himself a center of gravity he had previously lacked. Formerly all pecuniary questions, especially requests for money to which, as an extremely wealthy man, he was very exposed, produced in him a state of hopeless agitation and perplexity. "To give or not to give?" Pierre had asked himself. "I have it and he needs it. But someone else needs it still more. Who needs it most? And perhaps they are both impostors?" In the old days, he had been unable to find a way out of all these surmises and had given to all who asked as long as he had anything to give. Formerly he had been in a similar state of perplexity concerning every question concerning his property, when one person advised one thing and another something else.

Now to Pierre's surprise, he found that he no longer felt either doubt or perplexity about these questions. There was now within him a judge who by some rule unknown to him decided what should or should not be done.

Pierre was as indifferent as heretofore to money matters, but now he felt certain of what ought and what ought not to be done. The first time he had recourse to his new judge was when a French prisoner, a colonel, came to him and, after talking a great deal about his exploits, concluded by making what amounted to a demand that Pierre should give him four thousand francs to send to his wife and children. Pierre refused without the least difficulty or effort and was afterward surprised how simple and easy had been what used to appear so insurmountably difficult. At the same time that he refused the colonel's demand, he made up his mind that he must have recourse to artifice when leaving Orël, to induce the Italian officer to accept some money of which he was evidently in need. Further proof to Pierre of his own more settled outlook on practical matters was furnished by his decision concerning his wife's debts and to the rebuilding of his houses in and near Moscow.

Pierre's head steward came to him at Orël and Pierre reckoned up with him his diminished income. The burning of Moscow had cost him, according to the head steward's calculation, about two million rubles.

To console Pierre for these losses the head steward gave him an estimate showing that despite these losses his income would not be diminished but would even be increased if he refused to pay his wife's debts which he was under no obligation to meet, and did not rebuild his Moscow house and the country house on his Moscow estate, which had cost him eighty thousand rubles a year and brought in nothing.

"Yes, of course, that's true," said Pierre with a cheerful smile. "I don't need all that at all. By being ruined I have become much richer."

But in January, Steward Savélich came from Moscow and gave him an account of the state of things there, and spoke of the estimate an architect

had made of the cost of rebuilding the town and country houses, speaking of this as a settled matter. At about the same time Pierre received letters from Baron Vasili and other St. Petersburg acquaintances speaking of Helene's debts. And Pierre decided that the steward's proposals which had so pleased him were wrong and that he must go to St. Petersburg and settle Helene's affairs and must rebuild in Moscow. Why this was necessary Pierre did not know, but he knew for certain that it was necessary. His income would be reduced by three-fourths, but he felt it must be done.

Willarski was going to Moscow and they agreed to travel together.

During the whole time of his convalescence in Orël, Pierre had experienced a feeling of joy, freedom, and life; but when during his journey he found himself in the open world and saw hundreds of new faces, that feeling was intensified. Throughout his journey, Pierre felt like a schoolboy on holiday. Everyone—the stagecoach driver, the post-house overseers, the peasants on the roads and in the villages—had a new significance for him. The presence and remarks of Willarski who continually deplored the ignorance and poverty of Russia and its backwardness compared with Europe only heightened Pierre's pleasure. Where Willarski saw deadness, Pierre saw an extraordinary strength and vitality—the strength which in that vast space amid the snows maintained the life of this original, peculiar, and unique people. He did not contradict Willarski and even seemed to agree with him—an apparent agreement being the simplest way to avoid discussions that could lead to nothing—and he smiled joyfully as he listened to him.

It would be difficult to explain why and whither ants whose heap has been destroyed are hurrying: some from the heap dragging bits of rubbish, larvae, and corpses, others back to the heap, or why they jostle, overtake one another, and fight, and it would be equally difficult to explain what caused the Russians after the departure of the French to throng to the place that had formerly been Moscow. But when we watch the ants round their

ruined heap, the tenacity, energy, and an immense number of the delving insects prove that despite the destruction of the heap, something indestructible, which though intangible is the real strength of the colony, still exists; and similarly, though in Moscow in October there was no government and no churches, shrines, riches, or houses—it was still the Moscow it had been in August. All was destroyed, except something intangible yet powerful and indestructible.

The motives of those who thronged from all sides to Moscow after it had been cleared of the enemy were most diverse and personal, and at first for the most part savage and brutal. One motive only they all had in common: a desire to get to the place that had been called Moscow, to apply their activities there.

Within a week, Moscow already had fifteen thousand inhabitants, in a fortnight twenty-five thousand, and so on. By the autumn of 1813 the number, ever-increasing, exceeded what it had been in 1812.

The first Russians to enter Moscow were the Cossacks of Wintzingerode's detachment, peasants from the adjacent villages, and residents who had fled from Moscow and had been hiding in its vicinity. The Russians who entered Moscow, finding it plundered, plundered it in their turn. The Russians continued what the French had begun. Trains of peasant carts came to Moscow to carry off to the villages what had been abandoned in the ruined houses and the streets. The Cossacks carried off what they could to their camps, and the householders seized all they could find in other houses and moved it to their own, pretending that it was their property.

But the first plunderers were followed by a second and a third contingent, and with increasing numbers plundering became more and more difficult and assumed more definite forms.

The French found Moscow abandoned but with all the organizations of regular life, with diverse branches of commerce and craftsmanship, with

luxury, and governmental and religious institutions. These forms were lifeless but still existed. There were bazaars, shops, warehouses, market stalls, granaries—for the most part still stocked with goods—and there were factories and workshops, palaces and wealthy houses filled with luxuries, hospitals, prisons, government offices, churches, and cathedrals. The longer the French remained the more these forms of town life perished, until finally all was merged into one confused, lifeless scene of plunder.

The more the plundering by the French continued, the more both the wealth of Moscow and the strength of its plunderers were destroyed. But plundering by the Russians, with which the reoccupation of the city began, had an opposite effect: the longer it continued and the greater the number of people taking part in it the more rapidly was the wealth of the city and its regular life restored.

Besides the plunderers, very various people, some drawn by curiosity, some by official duties, some by self-interest—house owners, clergy, officials of all kinds, tradesmen, artisans, and peasants—streamed into Moscow as blood flows to the heart.

Within a week the peasants who came with empty carts to carry off plunder were stopped by the authorities and made to cart the corpses out of the town. Other peasants, having heard of their comrades' discomfiture, came to town bringing rye, oats, and hay, and beat down one another's prices to below what they had been in former days. Gangs of carpenters hoping for high pay arrived in Moscow every day, and on all sides, logs were being hewn, new houses built, and old, charred ones repaired. Tradesmen began trading in booths. Taverns and shops providing food were opened in partially burned houses. The clergy resumed the services in many churches that had not been burned. Donors contributed towards replacing Church property that had been stolen. Government clerks set up their baize-covered tables and their pigeonholes of documents in small rooms. The higher authorities and the police organized the distribution of goods left

behind by the French. The owners of houses in which much property had been left, brought there from other houses, complained of the injustice of taking everything to the Faceted Palace in the Krémelin; others insisted that as the French had gathered things from different houses into this or that house, it would be unfair to allow its owner to keep all that was found there. They abused the police and bribed them, made out estimates at ten times their value for government stores that had perished in the fire, and demanded relief. And Mayor Rostopchin wrote proclamations.

At the end of January, Pierre went to Moscow and stayed in an annex of his house which had not been burned. Pierre called on Mayor Rostopchin and on some acquaintances who were back in Moscow, and he intended to leave for St. Petersburg two days later. Everybody was celebrating the victory, everything was bubbling with life in the ruined but reviving city. Everyone was pleased to see Pierre, everyone wished to meet him, and everyone questioned him about what he had seen. Pierre felt particularly well disposed toward them all but was now instinctively on his guard for fear of binding himself in any way. To all questions put to him—whether important or quite trifling—such as: Where would he live? Was he going to rebuild? When was he going to St. Petersburg and would he mind taking a parcel for someone?—he replied: “Yes, perhaps,” or, “I think so,” and so on.

Pierre had heard that the Rostovs were at Kostromá but the thought of Natasha seldom occurred to him. If it did it was only as a pleasant memory of the distant past. He felt himself not only free from social obligations but also from that feeling which, it seemed to him, he had aroused in himself.

On the third day after his arrival, Pierre heard from the Drubetskoys that Marya was in Moscow. The death, sufferings, and last days of Andrei had often occupied Pierre’s thoughts and now recurred to him with fresh vividness. Having heard at dinner that Marya was in Moscow and living in

her house—which had not been burned—in Vozdvízhenka Street, Pierre drove that same evening to see her.

On his way to the house, Pierre kept thinking of Andrei, of their friendship, of his various meetings with him, and especially of the last one at Borodinó.

“Is it possible that he died in the bitter frame of mind he was then in? Is it possible that the meaning of life was not disclosed to him before he died?” thought Pierre. He recalled Platón and his death and involuntarily began to compare these two men, so different, and yet so similar in that they had both lived and both died and in the love he felt for both of them.

Pierre drove up to the house of Baron Bolkonski in a most serious mood. The house had escaped the fire; it showed signs of damage but its general aspect was unchanged. The old footman, who met Pierre with a stern face as if wishing to make the visitor feel that the absence of Baron Bolkonski had not disturbed the order of things in the house, informed him that Marya had gone to her apartments and that she received on Sundays.

“Announce me. Perhaps Marya will see me,” said Pierre.

“Yes, sir,” said the man. “Please step into the portrait gallery.”

A few minutes later the footman returned with the tutor Desalles, who brought word from Marya that she would be very glad to see Pierre if he would excuse her want of ceremony and come upstairs to her apartment.

In a rather low room lit by one candle sat Marya and a companion dressed in black. Pierre remembered that Marya always had lady companions, but who they were and what they were like Pierre never knew or remembered. “This must be one of her companions,” Pierre thought, glancing at the lady in the black dress.

Marya rose quickly to meet him and held out her hand.

“Yes,” Marya said, looking at his altered face after he had kissed her hand, “so this is how we meet again. Andrei spoke of you even at the very

end,” Marya went on, turning her eyes from Pierre to her companion with a shyness that surprised him for an instant.

“I was so glad to hear of your safety. It was the first piece of good news we had received for a long time.”

Again Marya glanced round at her companion with even more uneasiness in her manner and was about to add something, but Pierre interrupted her.

“Just imagine—I knew nothing about Andrei!” said Pierre. “I thought he had been killed. All I know I heard at second hand from others. I only know that Andrei fell in with the Rostovs... What a strange coincidence!”

Pierre spoke rapidly and with animation. He glanced once at Marya’s companion’s face, saw her attentive and kindly gaze fixed on him, and, as often happens when one is talking, felt somehow that this companion in the black dress was a good, kind, excellent creature who would not hinder his conversing freely with Marya.

But when Pierre mentioned the Rostovs, Marya’s face expressed still greater embarrassment. She again glanced rapidly from Pierre’s face to that of the companion in the black dress and said:

“Do you really not recognize her?”

Pierre looked again at the companion’s pale, delicate face with its black eyes and peculiar mouth, and something near to him, long forgotten and more than sweet, looked at him from those attentive eyes.

“But no, it can’t be!” Pierre thought. “This stern, thin, pale face that looks so much older! It cannot be Natasha. It merely reminds me of her.” But at that moment Marya said, “Natasha!” And with difficulty, effort, and stress, like the opening of a door grown rusty on its hinges, a smile appeared on Natasha’s face with attentive eyes, and from that opening door came a breath of fragrance which suffused Pierre with a happiness he had long forgotten and of which he had not even been thinking—especially at that moment. It suffused him, seized him, and enveloped him completely.

When she smiled doubt was no longer possible, it was Natasha and he loved her.

At that moment Pierre involuntarily betrayed to her, to Marya, and above all to himself, a secret of which he had been unaware. Pierre flushed joyfully yet with painful distress. He tried to hide his agitation. But the more he tried to hide it the more clearly—clearer than any words could have done—did he betray to himself, to her, and to Marya that he loved Natasha.

“No, it’s only the unexpectedness of it,” thought Pierre. But as soon as he tried to continue the conversation he had begun with Marya he again glanced at Natasha, and a still-deeper flush suffused his face and a still-stronger agitation of mingled joy and fear seized his soul. Pierre became confused in his speech and stopped in the middle of what he was saying.

Pierre had failed to notice Natasha because he did not at all expect to see her there, but he had failed to recognize her because the change in her since he last saw her was immense. Natasha had grown thin and pale, but that was not what made her unrecognizable; she was unrecognizable at the moment he entered because on that face whose eyes had always shone with a suppressed smile of the joy of life, now when he first entered and glanced at her there was not the least shadow of a smile: only her eyes were kindly attentive and sadly interrogative.

Pierre’s confusion was not reflected by any confusion on Natasha’s part, but only by the pleasure that just perceptibly lit up her whole face.

“Natasha has come to stay with me,” said Marya. “Count and Countess Rostov will be here in a few days. Countess Rostov has been in a dreadful state since Petya’s death, but it was necessary for Natasha herself to see a doctor. They insisted on Natasha coming with me.”

“Yes, is there a family free from sorrow now?” said Pierre, addressing Natasha. “You know it happened the very day we were rescued. I saw Petya just before he died. What a delightful boy he was!”

Natasha looked at Pierre, and by way of answer to his words, her eyes widened and lit up.

“What can one say or think of as a consolation?” said Pierre. “Nothing! Why had such a splendid boy, so full of life, to die?”

“Yes, in these days it would be hard to live without faith...” remarked Marya.

“Yes, yes, that is true,” Pierre hastily interrupted her.

“Why is it true?” Natasha asked, looking attentively into Pierre’s eyes.

“How can you ask why?” said Marya. “The thought alone of what awaits...”

Natasha without waiting for Marya to finish again looked inquiringly at Pierre.

“And because,” Pierre continued, “only one who believes that there is a God ruling us can bear a loss such as hers and... yours.”

Natasha had already opened her mouth to speak but suddenly stopped. Pierre hurriedly turned away from her and again addressed Marya, asking about Andrei’s last days.

Pierre’s confusion had now almost vanished, but at the same time, he felt that his freedom had also completely gone. He felt that there was now a judge of his every word and action whose judgment mattered more to him than that of all the rest of the world. As Pierre spoke now he was considering what impression his words would make on Natasha. He did not purposely say things to please her, but whatever he was saying he regarded from her standpoint.

Marya—reluctantly as is usual in such cases—began telling of the condition in which she had found Andrei. But Pierre’s face quivering with emotion, his questions and his eager restless expression, gradually compelled her to go into details that she feared to recall for her own sake.

“Yes, yes, and so...?” Pierre kept saying as he leaned toward her with his whole body and eagerly listened to her story. “Yes, yes... so Andrei grew

tranquil and softened? With all his soul he had always sought one thing—to be perfectly good—so he could not be afraid of death. The faults he had—if he had any—were not of his making. So he did soften?... What a happy thing that he saw you again,” Pierre added, suddenly turning to Natasha and looking at her with eyes full of tears.

Natasha’s face twitched. She frowned and lowered her eyes for a moment. She hesitated for an instant whether to speak or not.

“Yes, that was happiness,” Natasha then said in her quiet voice with deep chest notes. “For me it certainly was happiness.” She paused. “And Andrei... he... he said he was wishing for it at the very moment I entered the room...”

Natasha’s voice broke. She blushed, pressed her clasped hands on her knees, and then controlling herself with an evident effort lifted her head and began to speak rapidly.

“We knew nothing of Andrei being alive when we started from Moscow. I did not dare to ask about him. Then suddenly Sonya told me Andrei was traveling with us. I had no idea and could not imagine what state he was in, all I wanted was to see him and be with him,” she said, trembling, and breathing quickly.

And not letting them interrupt her, Natasha went on to tell what she had never yet mentioned to anyone—all she had lived through during those three weeks of their journey and life at Yaroslavl.

Pierre listened to Natasha with lips parted and eyes fixed upon her full of tears. As he listened he did not think of Andrei, nor of death, nor of what she was telling. He listened to her and felt only pity for her, for what she was suffering now while she was speaking.

Marya, frowning in her effort to hold back her tears, sat beside Natasha, and heard for the first time the story of those last days of her brother’s and Natasha’s love.

Evidently, Natasha needed to tell that painful yet joyful tale.

Natasha spoke, mingling most trifling details with the intimate secrets of her soul, and it seemed as if she could never finish. Several times she repeated the same thing twice.

The tutor Desalles' voice was heard outside the door asking whether Nikolenka might come in to say good night.

"Well, that's all—everything," said Natasha.

Natasha got up quickly just as Nikolenka entered, almost ran to the door which was hidden by curtains, struck her head against it, and rushed from the room with a moan either of pain or sorrow.

Pierre gazed at the door through which Natasha had disappeared and did not understand why he suddenly felt all alone in the world.

Marya roused him from his abstraction by drawing his attention to Nikolenka who had entered the room.

At that moment of emotional tenderness young Nikolenka's face, which resembled his father's, affected Pierre so much that when he had kissed the boy he got up quickly, took out his handkerchief, and went to the window. Pierre wished to take leave of Marya, but she would not let him go.

"No, Natasha and I sometimes don't go to sleep till after two, so please don't go. I will order supper. Go downstairs, we will come immediately."

Before Pierre left the room, Marya told him: "This is the first time Natasha has talked of Andrei like that."

Pierre was shown into the large, brightly lit dining room; a few minutes later he heard footsteps and Marya entered with Natasha. Natasha was calm, though a severe and grave expression had again settled on her face. All three of them now experienced that feeling of awkwardness which usually follows after a serious and heartfelt talk. It is impossible to go back to the same conversation, to talk of trifles is awkward, and yet the desire to speak is there and silence seems like an affectation. They went silently to the table. The footmen drew back the chairs and pushed them up again. Pierre unfolded his cold table napkin and, resolving to break the silence, looked at

Natasha and Marya. They had evidently both formed the same resolution; the eyes of both shone with satisfaction and a confession that besides sorrow life also has joy.

“Do you take vodka, Pierre?” asked Marya, and those words suddenly banished the shadows of the past. “Now tell us about yourself,” said Marya. “One hears such improbable wonders about you.”

“Yes,” replied Pierre with the smile of mild irony now habitual to him. “They even tell me wonders I never dreamed of! Marya Abrámovna invited me to her house and kept telling me what had happened, or ought to have happened, to me. Another friend also instructed me how I ought to tell of my experiences. I have noticed that it is very easy to be an interesting man (I am an interesting man now); people invite me out and tell me all about myself.”

Natasha smiled and was on the point of speaking.

“We have been told,” Marya interrupted her, “that you lost two million in Moscow. Is that true?”

“But I am three times as rich as before,” returned Pierre.

Though the position was now altered by his decision to pay Helene’s debts and rebuild his houses, Pierre still maintained that he had become three times as rich as before.

“What I have certainly gained is freedom,” Pierre began seriously but did not continue, noticing that this theme was too egotistic.

“And are you building?”

“Yes. Steward Savélich says I must!”

“Tell me, you did not know of Helene’s death when you decided to remain in Moscow?” asked Marya and immediately blushed, noticing that her question, following his mention of freedom, ascribed to his words a meaning he had perhaps not intended.

“No,” answered Pierre, evidently not considering awkward the meaning Marya had given to his words. “I heard of it in Orël and you cannot imagine

how it shocked me. We were not an exemplary couple,” he added quickly, glancing at Natasha and noticing on her face curiosity as to how he would speak of his wife, “but Helene’s death shocked me terribly. When two people quarrel they are always both at fault, and one’s own guilt suddenly becomes terribly serious when the other is no longer alive. And then such a death... without friends and consolation! I am very, very sorry for Helene,” he concluded and was pleased to notice a look of glad approval on Natasha’s face.

“Yes, and so you are once more an eligible bachelor,” said Marya.

Pierre suddenly flushed crimson and for a long time tried not to look at Natasha. When Pierre ventured to glance her way again her face was cold, stern, and he fancied even contemptuous.

“And did you really see and speak to Napoleon, as we have been told?” said Marya.

Pierre laughed.

“No, not once! Everybody seems to imagine that being taken prisoner means being Napoleon’s guest. Not only did I never see him but I heard nothing about him—I was in much lower company!”

Supper was over, and Pierre who at first declined to speak about his captivity was gradually led on to do so.

“But it’s true that you remained in Moscow to kill Napoleon?” Natasha asked with a slight smile. “I guessed it then when we met at the Súkharev tower, do you remember?”

Pierre admitted that it was true, and from that was gradually led by Marya’s questions and especially by Natasha’s into giving a detailed account of his adventures.

At first, Pierre spoke with the amused and mild irony now customary with him toward everybody and especially toward himself, but when he came to describe the horrors and sufferings he had witnessed he was unconsciously carried away and began speaking with the suppressed

emotion of a man re-experiencing in recollection strong impressions he has lived through.

Marya with a gentle smile looked now at Pierre and now at Natasha. In the whole narrative, she saw only Pierre and his goodness. Natasha, leaning on her elbow, the expression of her face constantly changing with the narrative, watched Pierre with an attention that never wandered—herself experiencing all that he described. Not only her look, but her exclamations and the brief questions she put, showed Pierre that she understood just what he wished to convey. It was clear that she understood not only what he said but also what he wished to, but could not, express in words. The account Pierre gave of the incident with the child and the woman for protecting whom he was arrested was this: “It was an awful sight—children abandoned, some in the flames... One was snatched out before my eyes... and some women had their things snatched off and their earrings were torn out...” Pierre flushed and grew confused. “Then a patrol arrived and all the men—all those who were not looting, that is—were arrested, and I among them.”

“I am sure you’re not telling us everything; I am sure you did something...” said Natasha and pausing added, “something fine?”

Pierre continued. When he spoke of the execution he wanted to pass over the horrible details, but Natasha insisted that he should not omit anything.

Pierre began to tell about Platón but paused. By this time he had risen from the table and was pacing the room, Natasha following him with her eyes. Then Pierre added:

“No, you can’t understand what I learned from Platón, that illiterate man—that simple fellow.”

“Yes, yes, go on!” said Natasha. “Where is he?”

“They killed Platón almost before my eyes.”

And Pierre, his voice trembling continually, went on to tell of the last days of their retreat, of Platón illness and his death.

Pierre told of his adventures as he had never yet recalled them. He now, as it were, saw a new meaning in all he had gone through. Now that Pierre was telling it all to Natasha he experienced that pleasure which a man has when women listen to him—not clever women who when listening either try to remember what they hear to enrich their minds and when opportunity offers to retell it, or who wish to adopt it to some thought of their own and promptly contribute their own clever comments prepared in their little mental workshop—but the pleasure given by real women gifted with a capacity to select and absorb the very best a man shows of himself. Natasha without knowing it was all attention: she did not lose a word, no single quiver in Pierre's voice, no look, no twitch of a muscle in his face, nor a single gesture. She caught the unfinished word in its flight and took it straight into her open heart, divining the secret meaning of all Pierre's mental travail.

Marya understood Pierre's story and sympathized with him, but she now saw something else that absorbed all her attention. She saw the possibility of love and happiness between Natasha and Pierre, and the first thought of this filled her heart with gladness.

It was three o'clock in the morning. The footmen came in with sad and stern faces to change the candles, but no one noticed them.

Pierre finished his story. Natasha continued to look at him intently with bright, attentive, and animated eyes, as if trying to understand something more that he had perhaps left untold. Pierre in shamefaced and happy confusion glanced occasionally at her and tried to think what to say next to introduce a fresh subject. Marya was silent. It occurred to none of them that it was three o'clock and time to go to bed.

"People speak of misfortunes and sufferings," remarked Pierre, "but if at this moment I were asked: 'Would you rather be what you were before

you were taken prisoner, or go through all this again?’ then for heaven’s sake let me again have captivity and horseflesh! We imagine that when we are thrown out of our usual ruts all is lost, but it is only then that what is new and good begins. While there is life there is happiness. There is much, much before us. I say this to you,” he added, turning to Natasha.

“Yes, yes,” Natasha said, answering something quite different. “I too should wish nothing but to relive it all from the beginning.”

Pierre looked intently at her.

“Yes, and nothing more,” said Natasha.

“It’s not true, not true!” cried Pierre. “I am not to blame for being alive and wishing to live—nor you either.”

Suddenly Natasha bent her head, covered her face with her hands, and began to cry.

“What is it, Natasha?” said Marya.

“Nothing, nothing.” She smiled at Pierre through her tears. “Good night! It is time for bed.”

Pierre rose and took his leave.

Marya and Natasha met as usual in the bedroom. They talked of what Pierre had told them. Marya did not express her opinion of Pierre nor did Natasha speak of him.

“Well, good night, Marya!” said Natasha. “Do you know, I am often afraid that by not speaking of him” (she meant Andrei) “for fear of not doing justice to our feelings, we forget him.”

Marya sighed deeply and thereby acknowledged the justice of Natasha’s remark, but she did not express agreement in words.

“Is it possible to forget?” said Marya.

“It did me so much good to tell all about it today. It was hard and painful, but good, very good!” said Natasha. “I am sure he really loved

Andrei. That is why I told Pierre... Was it all right?" she added, suddenly blushing.

"To tell Pierre? Oh, yes. What a splendid man he is!" said Marya.

"Do you know, Marya..." Natasha suddenly said with a mischievous smile such as Marya had not seen on her face for a long time, "he has somehow grown so clean, smooth, and fresh—as if he had just come out of a Russian bath; do you understand? Out of a moral bath. Isn't it true?"

"Yes," replied Marya. "He has greatly improved."

"With a short coat and his hair cropped; just as if, well, just as if he had come straight from the bath... Papa used to..."

"I understand why *he*" (Andrei) "liked no one so much as him," said Marya.

"Yes, and yet he is quite different. They say men are friends when they are quite different. That must be true. Really he is quite unlike him—in everything."

"Yes, but he's wonderful."

"Well, good night," said Natasha.

And the same mischievous smile lingered for a long time on Natasha's face as if it had been forgotten there.

It was a long time before Pierre could fall asleep that night. He paced up and down his room, now turning his thoughts on a difficult problem and frowning, now suddenly shrugging his shoulders and wincing, and now smiling happily.

Pierre was thinking of Andrei, of Natasha, and of their love, at one moment jealous of her past, then reproaching himself for that feeling. It was already six in the morning and he still paced up and down the room.

"Well, what's to be done if it cannot be avoided? What's to be done? Evidently, it has to be so," said Pierre to himself, and hastily undressing he got into bed, happy and agitated but free from hesitation or indecision.

“Strange and impossible as such happiness seems, I must do everything that she and I may be man and wife,” he told himself.

A few days previously Pierre had decided to go to St. Petersburg on Friday. When he awoke on Thursday, Steward Savélich came to ask Pierre about packing for the journey.

“What, to St. Petersburg? What is St. Petersburg? Who is there in St. Petersburg?” Pierre asked involuntarily, though only to himself. “Oh, yes, long ago before this happened I did for some reason mean to go to St. Petersburg,” he reflected. “Why? But perhaps I shall go. What a good fellow Steward Savélich is and how attentive, and how he remembers everything,” Pierre thought, looking at Steward Savélich’s old face, “and what a pleasant smile he has!”

“Well, Steward Savélich, do you still not wish to accept your freedom, no longer to be a serf that I own?” Pierre asked him.

“What’s the good of freedom to me, your excellency? We lived under the late Count Bezukhov—the kingdom of heaven be his!—and we have lived under you too, without ever being wronged.”

“And your children?”

“The children will live just the same. With such masters, one can live.”

“But what about my heirs?” said Pierre. “Supposing I suddenly marry... it might happen,” he added with an involuntary smile.

“If I may take the liberty, your excellency, marriage would be a good thing.”

“How easy Steward Savélich thinks it,” thought Pierre. “He doesn’t know how terrible marriage is and how dangerous. Too soon or too late... it is terrible!”

“So what are your orders? Are you starting tomorrow?” asked Steward Savélich.

“No, I’ll put it off for a bit. I’ll tell you later. You must forgive the trouble I have put you to,” said Pierre, and seeing Steward Savélich smile,

Pierre thought: "But how strange it is that he should not know that now there is no St. Petersburg for me and that *that* must be settled first of all! But probably he knows it well enough and is only pretending. Shall I talk with him and see what he thinks?" Pierre reflected. "No, another time."

At breakfast, Pierre told Katerina, his cousin, that he had been to see Marya the day before and had there met—"Whom do you think? Natasha!"

Katerina seemed to see nothing more extraordinary in that than if he had seen Anna Semënovna.

"Do you know Natasha?" asked Pierre.

"I have seen Marya," Katerina replied. "I heard that they were arranging a match for her with young Nicholas. It would be a very good thing for the Rostovs, they are said to be utterly ruined."

"No; I mean do you know Natasha?"

"I heard about that affair of Natasha and Anatole at the time. It was a great pity."

"No, Katerina either doesn't understand or is pretending," thought Pierre. "Better not say anything to her either."

Katerina, too, had prepared provisions for Pierre's journey.

"How kind they all are," thought Pierre. "What is surprising is that they should trouble about these things now when it can no longer be of interest to them. And all for me!"

On the same day, the Chief of Police came to Pierre, inviting him to send a representative to the Faceted Palace to recover things that were to be returned to their owners that day.

"And this man too," thought Pierre, looking into the face of the Chief of Police. "What a fine, good-looking officer, and how kind. Fancy bothering about such trifles *now*! And they actually say he is not honest and takes bribes. What nonsense! Besides, why shouldn't he take bribes? That's the way he was brought up, and everybody does it. But what a kind, pleasant face and how he smiles as he looks at me."

Pierre went to Marya's for dinner.

As Pierre drove through the streets past the houses that had been burned down, he was surprised by the beauty of those ruins. The picturesqueness of the chimney stacks and tumble-down walls of the burned-out quarters of the town, stretching out and concealing one another, reminded him of the Rhine and the Colosseum. The cabmen he met and their passengers, the carpenters cutting the timber for new houses with axes, the women hawkers, and the shopkeepers, all looked at him with cheerful beaming eyes that seemed to say: "Ah, there he is! Let's see what will come of it!"

At the entrance to Marya's house, Pierre felt doubtful whether he had really been there the night before and really seen Natasha and talked to her. "Perhaps I imagined it; perhaps I shall go in and find no one there." But he had hardly entered the room before he felt her presence with his whole being by the loss of his sense of freedom. She was in the same black dress with soft folds and her hair was done the same way as the day before, yet she was quite different. Had she been like this when he entered the day before he could not for a moment have failed to recognize her.

Marya was as he had known her almost as a child and later on as Andrei's fiancée. A bright questioning light shone in her eyes, and on her face was a friendly and strangely roguish expression.

Pierre dined with them and would have spent the whole evening there, but Marya was going to vespers and Pierre left the house with her.

The next day, Pierre came early, dined, and stayed the whole evening. Though Marya and Natasha were evidently glad to see their visitor and though all Pierre's interest was now centered in that house, by the evening they had talked over everything and the conversation passed from one trivial topic to another and repeatedly broke off. He stayed so long that Marya and Natasha exchanged glances, evidently wondering when he would go. Pierre noticed this but could not go. He felt uneasy and embarrassed but sat because he simply could not get up and take his leave.

Marya, foreseeing no end to this, rose first, and complaining of a headache began to say good night.

“So you are going to St. Petersburg tomorrow?” Marya asked.

“No, I am not going,” Pierre replied hastily, in a surprised tone and as though offended. “Yes... no... to St. Petersburg? Tomorrow—but I won’t say goodbye yet. I will call round in case you have any commissions for me,” said Pierre, standing before Marya and turning red, but not taking his departure.

Natasha then gave him her hand and went out. Marya, on the other hand, instead of going, away sank into an armchair, and looked sternly and intently at Pierre with her deep, radiant eyes. The weariness Marya had plainly shown before had now quite passed off. With a deep and long-drawn sigh, she seemed to be prepared for a lengthy talk.

When Natasha left the room Pierre’s confusion and awkwardness immediately vanished and were replaced by eager excitement. He quickly moved an armchair toward Marya.

“Yes, I wanted to tell you,” said Pierre, answering her look as if she had spoken. “Marya, help me! What am I to do? Can I hope? Marya, my dear friend, listen! I know it all. I know I am not worthy of Natasha, I know it’s impossible to speak of it now. But I want to be a brother to her. No, not that, I don’t, I can’t...”

Pierre paused and rubbed his face and eyes with his hands.

“Well,” Pierre went on with an evident effort at self-control and coherence. “I don’t know when I began to love Natasha, but I have loved her and her alone all my life, and I love her so that I cannot imagine life without her. I cannot propose to her at present, but the thought that perhaps she might someday be my wife and that I may be missing that possibility... that possibility... is terrible. Tell me, can I hope? Tell me what I am to do, dear Marya!” Pierre added after a pause and touched her hand as she did not reply.

“I am thinking of what you have told me,” answered Marya. “This is what I will say. You are right that to speak to Natasha of love at present...”

Marya stopped. She was going to say that to speak of love was impossible, but she stopped because she had seen by the sudden change in Natasha two days before that Natasha would not only not be hurt if Pierre spoke of his love, but that it was the very thing Natasha wished for.

“To speak to Natasha now wouldn’t do,” said Marya all the same.

“But what am I to do?”

“Leave it to me,” said Marya. “I know...”

Pierre was looking into Marya’s eyes.

“Well?... Well?...” Pierre said.

“I know that Natasha loves... will love you,” Marya corrected herself.

Before Marya’s words were out, Pierre had sprung up and with a frightened expression seized Marya’s hand.

“What makes you think so? Do you think I may hope? You think...?”

“Yes, I think so,” said Marya with a smile. “Write to Natasha’s parents, and leave it to me. I will tell her when I can. I wish it to happen and my heart tells me it will.”

“No, it cannot be! How happy I am! But it can’t be... How happy I am! No, it can’t be!” Pierre kept saying as he kissed Marya’s hands.

“Go to St. Petersburg, that will be best. And I will write to you,” Marya said.

“To St. Petersburg? Go there? Very well, I’ll go. But I may come again tomorrow?”

The next day, Pierre came to say goodbye. Natasha was less animated than she had been the day before; but that day as he looked at her Pierre sometimes felt as if he was vanishing and that neither he nor she existed any longer, that nothing existed but happiness. “Is it possible? No, it can’t be,” he told himself at every look, gesture, and word that filled his soul with joy.

When on saying goodbye Pierre took Natasha's thin, slender hand, he could not help holding it a little longer in his own.

"Is it possible that this hand, that face, those eyes, all this treasure of feminine charm so strange to me now, is it possible that it will one day be mine forever, as familiar to me as I am to myself?... No, that's impossible!..."

"Good-by, Pierre," she said aloud. "I shall look forward very much to your return," she added in a whisper.

And these simple words, Natasha's look, and the expression on her face which accompanied them, formed for two months the subject of inexhaustible memories, interpretations, and happy meditations for Pierre. "'I shall look forward very much to your return...' Yes, yes, how did she say it? Yes, 'I shall look forward very much to your return.' Oh, how happy I am! What is happening to me? How happy I am!" said Pierre to himself.

There was nothing in Pierre's soul now at all like what had troubled it during his courtship of Helene.

Pierre did not repeat to himself with a sickening feeling of shame the words he had spoken, or say: "Oh, why did I not say that?" and, "Whatever made me say '*I love you?*'" On the contrary, he now repeated in imagination every word that he or Natasha had spoken and pictured every detail of her face and smile, and did not wish to diminish or add anything, but only to repeat it again and again. There was now not a shadow of doubt in his mind as to whether what he had undertaken was right or wrong. Only one terrible doubt sometimes crossed his mind: "Wasn't it all a dream? Isn't Marya mistaken? Am I not too conceited and self-confident? I believe all this—and suddenly Marya will tell her, and Natasha will be sure to smile and say: 'How strange! Pierre must be deluding himself. Doesn't Pierre know that he is a man, just a man, while I...? I am something altogether different and higher.'"

That was the only doubt often troubling Pierre. He did not now make any plans. The happiness before him appeared so inconceivable that if only he could attain it, it would be the end of all things. Everything ended with that.

A joyful, unexpected frenzy, of which Pierre had thought himself incapable, possessed him. The whole meaning of life—not for him alone but for the whole world—seemed to him centered on his love and the possibility of being loved by her. At times everybody seemed to him to be occupied with one thing only—his future happiness. Sometimes it seemed to him that other people were all as pleased as he was himself and merely tried to hide that pleasure by pretending to be busy with other interests. In every word and gesture, he saw allusions to his happiness. He often surprised those he met with his significantly happy looks and smiles which seemed to express a secret understanding between him and them. And when he realized that people might not be aware of his happiness, he pitied them with his whole heart and felt a desire somehow to explain to them that all that occupied them was a mere frivolous trifle unworthy of attention.

When it was suggested to Pierre that he should enter the civil service, or when the war or any political affairs were discussed on the assumption that everybody's welfare depended on this or that issue of events, he would listen with a mild and pitying smile and surprise people by his strange comments. But at this time he saw everybody—both those who, as he imagined, understood the real meaning of life (that is, what he was feeling) and those unfortunates who evidently did not understand it—in the bright light of the emotion that shone within himself, and at once without any effort saw in everyone he met everything good and worthy of being loved.

When dealing with the affairs and papers of his dead wife, Helene, her memory aroused in Pierre no feeling but pity that she had not known the bliss he now knew. Baron Vasili, who having obtained a new post and some

fresh decorations was particularly proud at this time, seemed to him a pathetic, kindly old man much to be pitied.

Often in later years, Pierre recalled this period of blissful insanity. All the views he formed of men and circumstances at this time remained true for him always. He not only did not renounce them subsequently, but when he was in doubt or inwardly at variance, he referred to the views he had held at this time of his madness and they always proved correct.

“I may have appeared strange and queer then,” Pierre thought, “but I was not so mad as I seemed. On the contrary, I was then wiser and had more insight than at any other time, and understood all that is worth understanding in life, because... because I was happy.”

Pierre’s insanity consisted in not waiting, as he used to do, to discover personal attributes which he termed “good qualities” in people before loving them; his heart was now overflowing with love, and by loving people without cause he discovered indubitable causes for loving them.

After Pierre’s departure that first evening, when Natasha had said to Marya with a gaily mocking smile: “Pierre looks just, yes, just as if he had come out of a Russian bath—in a short coat and with his hair cropped,” something hidden and unknown to herself, but irrepressible, awoke in Natasha’s soul.

Everything: Natasha’s face, walk, look, and voice, was suddenly altered. To her surprise, a power of life and hope of happiness rose to the surface and demanded satisfaction. From that evening, Natasha seemed to have forgotten all that had happened to her. She no longer complained about her position, did not say a word about the past, and no longer feared making happy plans for the future. She spoke little of Pierre, but when Marya mentioned him a long-extinguished light once more kindled in her eyes and her lips curved with a strange smile.

The change that took place in Natasha at first surprised Marya, but when she understood its meaning it grieved her. “Can Natasha have loved

Andrei so little as to be able to forget him so soon?" Marya thought when she reflected on the change. But when Marya was with Natasha she was not vexed with her and did not reproach her. The reawakened power of life that had seized Natasha was so evidently irrepressible and unexpected by her that in her presence Marya felt that she had no right to reproach Natasha even in her heart.

Natasha gave herself up so fully and frankly to this new feeling that she did not try to hide the fact that she was no longer sad, but bright and cheerful.

When Marya returned to her room after her nocturnal talk with Pierre, Natasha met her on the threshold.

"Pierre has spoken? Yes? He has spoken?" Natasha repeated.

And a joyful yet pathetic expression that seemed to beg forgiveness for her joy settled on Natasha's face.

"I wanted to listen at the door, but I knew you would tell me, Marya."

Understandable and touching as the look with which Natasha gazed at her seemed to Marya, and sorry as she was to see her agitation, these words pained her for a moment. She remembered her brother and his love.

"But what's to be done? Natasha can't help it," thought Marya.

And with a sad and rather stern look, Marya told Natasha all that Pierre had said. On hearing that Pierre was going to St. Petersburg Natasha was astounded.

"To St. Petersburg!" Natasha repeated as if unable to understand.

But noticing the grieved expression on Marya's face she guessed the reason for that sadness and suddenly began to cry.

"Marya," said Natasha, "tell me what I should do! I am afraid of being bad. Whatever you tell me, I will do. Tell me..."

"You love Pierre?"

"Yes," whispered Natasha.

“Then why are you crying? I am happy for your sake,” said Marya, who because of those tears quite forgave Natasha’s joy.

“It won’t be just yet—someday. Think what fun it will be when I am his wife and you marry Nicholas!”

“Natasha, I have asked you not to speak of that. Let us talk about you.”

They were silent awhile.

“But why go to St. Petersburg?” Natasha suddenly asked, and hastily replied to her own question. “But no, no, he must... Yes, Marya, He must...”

FIRST EPILOGUE: 1813 – 20



Seven years passed. The storm-tossed sea of European history had subsided within its shores and seemed to have become calm. But the mysterious forces that move humanity (mysterious because the laws of their motion are unknown to us) continued to operate.

Though the surface of the sea of history seemed motionless, the movement of humanity went on as unceasingly as the flow of time. Various groups of people formed and dissolved, and the coming formation and dissolution of kingdoms and displacement of peoples was in course of preparation.

The sea of history was not driven spasmodically from shore to shore as previously. It was seething in its depths. Historic figures were not borne by the waves from one shore to another as before. They now seemed to rotate on one spot. The historical figures at the head of armies, who formerly reflected the movement of the masses by ordering wars, campaigns, and battles, now reflected the restless movement by political and diplomatic combinations, laws, and treaties.

The historians call this activity of the historical figures “the reaction.”

In dealing with this period they sternly condemn the historical personages who, in their opinion, caused what they describe as *the reaction*. All the well-known people of that period, from the Tzar and Napoleon to

Madame de Staël, Photius, Schelling, Fichte, Chateaubriand, and the rest, pass before their stern judgment seat and are acquitted or condemned according to whether they conduced to *progress* or to *reaction*.

According to these historians' accounts, a reaction took place at that time in Russia also, and the chief culprit was the Tzar, the same man who according to them was the chief cause of the liberal movement at the commencement of his reign, being the savior of Russia.

There is no one in Russian literature now, from schoolboy essayist to learned historian, who does not throw his little stone at the Tzar for things he did wrong during this period of his reign.

"The Tzar ought to have acted in this way and in that way. In this case, he did well and in that case badly. He behaved admirably at the beginning of his reign and during 1812 but acted badly by giving a constitution to Poland, forming the Holy Alliance, entrusting power to War Minister Arakchéev, favoring Privy Councilor Golítsyn and mysticism, and afterward Shishkóv and Photius. The Tzar also acted badly by concerning himself with the active army and disbanding the Semënov regiment."

It would take a dozen pages to enumerate all the reproaches the historians address to him, based on their knowledge of what is good for humanity.

What do these reproaches mean?

Do not the very actions for which the historians praise the Tzar (the liberal attempts at the beginning of his reign, his struggle with Napoleon, the firmness he displayed in 1812, and the campaign of 1813) flow from the same sources—the circumstances of his birth, education, and life—that made his personality what it was and from which the actions for which they blame him (the Holy Alliance, the restoration of Poland, and the reaction of 1820 and later) also flowed?

In what does the substance of those reproaches lie?

It lies in the fact that a historic character like the Tzar, standing on the highest possible pinnacle of human power with the blinding light of history focused upon him; a character exposed to those strongest of all influences: the intrigues, flattery, and self-deception inseparable from power; a character who at every moment of his life felt a responsibility for all that was happening in Europe; and not a fictitious but a live character who like every man had his personal habits, passions, and impulses toward goodness, beauty, and truth—that this character—though not lacking in virtue (the historians do not accuse him of that)—had not the same conception of the welfare of humanity fifty years ago as a present-day professor who from his youth upwards has been occupied with learning: that is, with books and lectures and with taking notes from them.

But even if we assume that fifty years ago the Tzar was mistaken in his view of what was good for the people, we must inevitably assume that the historian who judges the Tzar will also after the lapse of some time turn out to be mistaken in his view of what is good for humanity. This assumption is all the more natural and inevitable because watching the movement of history, we see that every year and with each new writer, opinion as to what is good for mankind changes; so that what once seemed good, ten years later seems bad, and vice versa. And what is more, we find at one and the same time quite contradictory views as to what is bad and what is good in history: some people regard giving a constitution to Poland and forming the Holy Alliance as praiseworthy in the Tzar, while others regard it as blameworthy.

The activity of the Tzar or of Napoleon cannot be called useful or harmful, for it is impossible to say for what it was useful or harmful. If that activity displeases somebody, this is only because it does not agree with his limited understanding of what is good. Whether the preservation of my father's house in Moscow, or the glory of the Russian arms, or the prosperity of the St. Petersburg and other universities, or the freedom of

Poland or the greatness of Russia, or the balance of power in Europe, or a certain kind of European culture called “progress” appear to me to be good or bad, I must admit that besides these things the action of every historic character has other more general purposes inaccessible to me.

But let us assume that what is called science can harmonize all contradictions and possesses an unchanging standard of good and bad by which to try historic characters and events; let us say that the Tzar could have done everything differently; let us say that with guidance from those who blame him and who profess to know the ultimate aim of the movement of humanity, he might have arranged matters according to the program his present accusers would have given him—of nationality, freedom, equality, and progress (these, I think, cover the ground). Let us assume that this program was possible and had then been formulated and that the Tzar had acted on it. What would then have become of the activity of all those who opposed the tendency that then prevailed in the government—an activity that in the opinion of the historians was good and beneficent? Their activity would not have existed: there would have been no life, there would have been nothing.

If we admit that human life can be ruled by reason, the possibility of life is destroyed.

If we assume as the historians do, that great men lead humanity to the attainment of certain ends—the greatness of Russia or of France, the balance of power in Europe, the diffusion of the ideas of the Revolution, general progress, or anything else—then it is impossible to explain the facts of history without introducing the conceptions of *chance* and *genius*.

If the aim of the European wars at the beginning of the nineteenth century had been the aggrandizement of Russia, that aim might have been accomplished without all the preceding wars and without the invasion. If the aim was the aggrandizement of France, that might have been attained without the Revolution and without the Empire. If the aim was the

dissemination of ideas, the printing press could have accomplished that much better than warfare. If the aim was the progress of civilization, it is easy to see that there are other ways of diffusing civilization more expedient than by the destruction of wealth and of human lives.

Why did it happen in this and not in some other way?

Because it happened so! “*Chance* created the situation; *genius* utilized it,” says history.

But what is *chance*? What is *genius*?

The words *chance* and *genius* do not denote any really existing thing and therefore cannot be defined. Those words only denote a certain stage of understanding of phenomena. I do not know why a certain event occurs; I think that I cannot know it; so I do not try to know it and I talk about *chance*. I see a force producing effects beyond the scope of ordinary human agencies; I do not understand why this occurs and I talk of *genius*.

To a herd of rams, the ram the herdsman drives each evening into a special enclosure to feed and that becomes twice as fat as the others must seem to be a genius. And it must appear an astonishing conjunction of genius with a whole series of extraordinary chances that this ram, who instead of getting into the general fold every evening goes into a special enclosure where there are oats—that this very ram, swelling with fat, is killed for meat.

But the rams need only cease to suppose that all that happens to them happens solely for the attainment of their sheepish aims; they need only admit that what happens to them may also have purposes beyond their ken, and they will at once perceive a unity and coherence in what happened to the ram that was fattened. Even if they do not know for what purpose they are fattened, they will at least know that all that happened to the ram did not happen accidentally, and will no longer need the conceptions of *chance* or *genius*.

Only by renouncing our claim to discern a purpose immediately intelligible to us, and admitting the ultimate purpose to be beyond our ken, may we discern the sequence of experiences in the lives of historic characters and perceive the cause of the effect they produce (incommensurable with ordinary human capabilities), and then the words *chance* and *genius* become superfluous.

We need only confess that we do not know the purpose of the European convulsions and that we know only the facts—that is, the murders, first in France, then in Italy, in Africa, in Prussia, in Austria, in Spain, and in Russia—and that the movements from the west to the east and from the east to the west form the essence and purpose of these events, and not only shall we have no need to see exceptional ability and genius in Napoleon and the Tzar, but we shall be unable to consider them to be anything but like other men, and we shall not be obliged to have recourse to *chance* for an explanation of those small events which made these people what they were, but it will be clear that all those small events were inevitable.

By discarding a claim to knowledge of the ultimate purpose, we shall clearly perceive that just as one cannot imagine a blossom or seed for any single plant better suited to it than those it produces, so it is impossible to imagine any two people more completely adapted down to the smallest detail for the purpose they had to fulfill, than Napoleon and the Tzar with all their antecedents.

The fundamental and essential significance of the European events of the beginning of the nineteenth century lies in the movement of the mass of the European peoples from west to east and afterward from east to west. The commencement of that movement was the movement from west to east. For the peoples of the west to be able to make their warlike movement to Moscow, it was necessary: (1) that they should form themselves into a military group of a size able to endure a collision with the warlike military group of the east, (2) that they should abandon all established traditions and

customs, and (3) that during their military movement they should have at their head a man like Napoleon, who could justify to himself and to them the deceptions, robberies, and murders which would have to be committed during that movement.

And beginning with the French Revolution, the old inadequately large group was destroyed, as well as the old habits and traditions, and step by step a group was formed of larger dimensions with new customs and traditions, and a man, Napoleon, was produced who would stand at the head of the coming movement and bear the responsibility for all that had to be done.

Napoleon, a man without convictions, without habits, without traditions, without a name, and not even a Frenchman, emerges—by what seem the strangest chances—from among all the seething French parties, and without joining any one of them is borne forward to a prominent position.

The ignorance of Napoleon's colleagues, the weakness and insignificance of his opponents, the frankness of his falsehoods, and the dazzling and self-confident limitations of this man raise him to the head of the army. The brilliant qualities of the soldiers of the army sent to Italy, his opponents' reluctance to fight, and his own childish audacity and self-confidence secure him military fame. Innumerable so-called *chances* accompany him everywhere. The disfavor into which Napoleon falls with the rulers of France turns to his advantage. His attempts to avoid his predestined path are unsuccessful: he is not received into the Russian service, and the appointment he seeks in Turkey comes to nothing. During the war in Italy, he is several times on the verge of destruction and each time is saved in an unexpected manner. Owing to various diplomatic considerations the Russian armies—just those which might have destroyed his prestige—do not appear upon the scene till he is no longer there.

On Napoleon's return from Italy, he finds the government in Paris in a process of dissolution in which all those who are in it are inevitably wiped

out and destroyed. And by chance, an escape from this dangerous position presents itself in the form of an aimless and senseless expedition to Africa. Again so-called *chance* accompanies him. Impregnable Malta surrenders without a shot; his most reckless schemes are crowned with success. The enemy's fleet, which subsequently did not let a single boat pass, allows his entire army to elude it. In Africa, a whole series of outrages are committed against the almost unarmed inhabitants. And the men who commit these crimes, especially their leader, assure themselves that this is admirable, this is glory—it resembles Caesar and Alexander the Great and is therefore good.

This ideal of *glory* and *grandeur*—which consists not merely in considering nothing wrong that one does but in priding oneself on every crime one commits, ascribing to it an incomprehensible supernatural significance—that ideal, destined to guide Napoleon and his associates, had scope for its development in Africa. Whatever Napoleon does succeeds. The plague does not touch him. The cruelty of murdering prisoners is not imputed to him as a fault. His childishly rash, uncalled-for, and ignoble departure from Africa, leaving his comrades in distress, is set down to his credit, and again the enemy's fleet twice lets him slip past. When, intoxicated by the crimes he has committed so successfully, Napoleon reaches Paris, the dissolution of the republican government, which a year earlier might have ruined him, has reached its extreme limit, and his presence there now as a newcomer free from party entanglements can only serve to exalt him—and though he himself has no plan, he is quite ready for his new role.

Napoleon had no plan, he was afraid of everything, but the parties snatched at him and demanded his participation.

Napoleon alone—with his ideal of glory and grandeur developed in Italy and Egypt, his insane self-adulation, his boldness in crime, and frankness in lying—he alone could justify what had to be done.

Napoleon is needed for the place that awaits him, and so almost apart from his will and despite his indecision, his lack of a plan, and all his mistakes, he is drawn into a conspiracy that aims at seizing power, and the conspiracy is crowned with success.

Napoleon is pushed into a meeting of the legislature. In alarm he wishes to flee, considering himself lost. He pretends to fall into a swoon and says senseless things that should have ruined him. But the once proud and shrewd rulers of France, feeling that their part is played out, are even more bewildered than he, and do not say the words they should have said to destroy him and retain their power.

Chance, millions of *chances*, give Napoleon power, and all men as if by agreement cooperate to confirm that power. *Chance* forms the characters of the rulers of France, who submit to Napoleon; *chance* forms the character of the old Tzar Paul I of Russia who recognizes Napoleon's government; *chance* contrives a plot against Napoleon which not only fails to harm him but confirms his power. *Chance* puts the Duc d'Enghien in Napoleon's hands and unexpectedly causes Napoleon to kill him—thereby convincing the mob more forcibly than in any other way that Napoleon had the right, since he had the might. *Chance* contrives that though Napoleon directs all his efforts to prepare an expedition against England (which would inevitably have ruined him), Napoleon never carries out that intention, but unexpectedly falls upon the Austrians, who surrender without a battle. *Chance* and *genius* give Napoleon the victory at Austerlitz; and by *chance*, all men, not only the French but all of Europe—except England which does not take part in the events about to happen—despite Europe's former horror and detestation of Napoleon's crimes, now recognize his authority, the title Napoleon has given himself, and Napoleon's ideal of grandeur and glory, which seems excellent and reasonable to them all.

As if measuring themselves and preparing for the coming movement, the western forces pushed toward the east several times in 1805, 1806,

1807, and 1809, gaining strength and growing. In 1811 the group of people that had formed in France unites into one group with the peoples of Central Europe. The strength of the justification of the man who stands at the head of the movement grows with the increased size of the group. During the ten-year preparatory period this man, Napoleon, had formed relations with all the crowned heads of Europe. The discredited rulers of the world can oppose no reasonable ideal to the insensate Napoleonic ideal of *glory* and *grandeur*. One after another the rulers of the world hasten to display their insignificance before Napoleon. The King of Prussia sends his wife to seek the great man's mercy; the Emperor of Austria considers it a favor that Napoleon receives a daughter of the Caesars into his bed; the Pope, the guardian of all that the nations hold sacred, utilizes religion for the aggrandizement of Napoleon. It is not Napoleon who prepares himself for the accomplishment of his role, so much as all those around him who prepare him to take on the whole responsibility for what is happening and has to happen. There is no step, no crime or petty fraud Napoleon commits, which in the mouths of those around him is not at once represented as a great deed. The most suitable celebration the Germans can devise for Napoleon is a celebration of Jena and Auerstädt. Not only is Napoleon great, but so are his ancestors, his brothers, his stepsons, and his brothers-in-law. Everything is done to deprive Napoleon of the remains of his reason and to prepare him for his terrible part. And when Napoleon is ready, so too are the forces.

Napoleon's invasion of Russia pushes eastward and reaches its final goal—Moscow. That city is taken; the Russian army suffers heavier losses than the opposing armies had suffered in the former war from Austerlitz to Wagram. But suddenly instead of those *chances* and that *genius* which hitherto had so consistently led Napoleon by an uninterrupted series of successes to the predestined goal, an innumerable sequence of inverse *chances* occur—from the cold in his head at Borodinó to the sparks

which set Moscow on fire, and the frosts—and instead of *genius*, stupidity and immeasurable baseness become evident.

The French invaders flee, turn back, flee again, and all the chances are now not for Napoleon but always against him.

A countermovement is then accomplished from east to west with a remarkable resemblance to the preceding movement from west to east. Attempted drives from east to west—similar to the contrary movements of 1805, 1807, and 1809—precede the great westward movement; there is the same coalescence into a group of enormous dimensions; the same adhesion of the people of Central Europe to the movement; the same hesitation midway, and the same increasing rapidity as the goal is approached.

Paris, the ultimate goal, is reached. The Napoleonic government and army are destroyed. Napoleon himself is no longer of any account; all his actions are evidently pitiful and mean, but again an inexplicable *chance* occurs. The allies detest Napoleon, whom they regard as the cause of their suffering. Deprived of power and authority, Napoleon's crimes and his craft exposed, he should have appeared to them what he appeared ten years previously and one year later—an outlawed brigand. But by some strange chance, no one perceives this. Napoleon's part is not yet ended. Napoleon, the man who ten years before and a year later was considered an outlawed brigand is exiled to Elba, an island two days' sail from France, which for some reason is presented to Napoleon as his dominion, and guards are given to Napoleon and millions of money are paid him.

The flood of nations begins to subside into its normal channels. The waves of the great movement abate, and on the calm surface eddies are formed in which float the diplomatists, who imagine that they have caused the floods to abate.

But the smooth sea again suddenly becomes disturbed. The diplomatists think that their disagreements are the cause of this fresh pressure of natural

forces; they anticipate war between their sovereigns; the position seems to them insoluble. But the wave they feel to be rising does not come from the quarter they expect. It rises again from the same point as before—Paris. The last backwash of the movement from the west occurs: a backwash that serves to solve the apparently insuperable diplomatic difficulties and ends the military movement of that period of history.

Napoleon, the man who had devastated France, leaves Elba and returns to France alone, without any conspiracy and without soldiers. Any guard might arrest Napoleon, but by strange chance no one does so and all rapturously greet the man they cursed the day before and will curse again a month later.

This man, Napoleon, is still needed to justify the final collective act.

That act is performed, and again Napoleon wages war.

The last role is played, and for a second time, Napoleon loses power, and for a second time, Napoleon is exiled to a more secure site, which was St. Helena. This actor is bidden to disrobe and wash off his powder and paint: he will not be wanted anymore.

And some years pass, during which Napoleon plays a pitiful comedy to himself in solitude on St. Helena, his island of exile, justifying his actions by intrigues and lies when the justification is no longer needed, and displaying to the whole world what it was that people had mistaken for strength as long as an unseen hand directed Napoleon's actions.

The manager having brought the drama to a close and stripped the actor shows him to us.

“See what you believed in! This is he, Napoleon! Do you now see that it was not he but I who moved you?”

But dazed by the force of the movement, it was long before people understood this.

Still greater coherence and inevitability are seen in the life of the Tzar, the man who stood at the head of the countermovement from east to west.

What was needed for the Tzar who, overshadowing others, stood at the head of that movement from east to west?

What was needed was a sense of justice and a sympathy with European affairs, but a remote sympathy not dulled by petty interests; a moral superiority over those sovereigns of the day who co-operated with him; a mild and attractive personality; and a personal grievance against Napoleon. And all this was found in the Tzar; all this had been prepared by innumerable so-called *chances* in his life: the Tzar's education, his early liberalism, the advisers who surrounded him, and by Austerlitz, and Tilsit, and Erfurt.

During the national war, the Tzar was inactive because he was not needed. But as soon as the necessity for a general European war presented itself, the Tzar appeared in his place at the given moment and, uniting the nations of Europe, led them to the goal.

The goal is reached. After the final war of 1815, the Tzar possesses all possible power. How does he use it?

The Tzar—the pacifier of Europe, the man who from his early years had striven only for his people's welfare, the originator of the liberal innovations in his fatherland—now that the Tzar seemed to possess the utmost power and therefore to have the possibility of bringing about the welfare of his peoples—at the time when Napoleon in exile at Elba was drawing up childish and mendacious plans of how he would have made mankind happy had he retained power—the Tzar, having fulfilled his mission and feeling the hand of God upon him, suddenly recognizes the insignificance of that supposed power, turns away from it, and gives it into the hands of contemptible men whom he despises, saying only:

“Not unto us, not unto us, but unto Thy Name!... I too am a man like the rest of you. Let me live like a man and think of my soul and of God.”

As the sun and each atom of ether is a sphere complete in itself, and yet at the same time only a part of a whole too immense for man to

comprehend, so each individual has within himself his own aims and yet has them to serve a purpose incomprehensible to man.

A bee settling on a flower has stung a child. And the child is afraid of bees and declares that bees exist to sting people. A poet admires the bee sucking from the chalice of a flower and says it exists to suck the fragrance of flowers. A beekeeper, seeing the bee collect pollen from flowers and carry it to the hive, says that it exists to gather honey. Another beekeeper who has studied the life of the hive more closely says that the bee gathers pollen dust to feed the young bees and rear a queen, and that it exists to perpetuate its race. A botanist notices that the bee flying with the pollen of a male flower to a pistil fertilizes the latter, and sees in this the purpose of the bee's existence. Another, observing the migration of plants, notices that the bee helps in this work, and may say that in this lies the purpose of the bee. But the ultimate purpose of the bee is not exhausted by the first, the second, or any of the processes the human mind can discern. The higher the human intellect rises in the discovery of these purposes, the more obvious it becomes, that the ultimate purpose is beyond our comprehension.

All that is accessible to man is the relation of the life of the bee to other manifestations of life. And so it is with the purpose of historic characters and nations.

Natasha's wedding to Pierre, which took place in 1813, was the last happy event in the family of the old Rostovs. Count Rostov died that same year and, as always happens, after the father's death the family group broke up.

The events of the previous year: the burning of Moscow and the flight from it, the death of Andrei, Natasha's despair, Petya's death, and Count Rostov's grief fell blow after blow on Count Rostov's head. Count Rostov seemed to be unable to understand the meaning of all these events and bowed his old head in a spiritual sense as if expecting and inviting further

blows which would finish him. Count Rostov seemed now frightened and distraught and now unnaturally animated and enterprising.

The arrangements for Natasha's marriage occupied Count Rostov for a while. He ordered dinners and suppers and obviously tried to appear cheerful, but his cheerfulness was not infectious as it used to be: on the contrary, it evoked the compassion of those who knew and liked him.

When Pierre and Natasha had left after their wedding, Count Rostov grew very quiet and began to complain of depression. A few days later he fell ill and took to his bed. Count Rostov realized from the first that he would not get up again, despite the doctor's encouragement. Countess Rostov passed a fortnight in an armchair by his pillow without undressing. Every time she gave him his medicine he sobbed and silently kissed her hand. On Count Rostov's last day, sobbing, he asked her and his absent son Nicholas to forgive him for having dissipated their property—that being the chief fault of which he was conscious. After receiving communion and unction, Count Rostov quietly died; and the next day a throng of acquaintances who came to pay their last respects to the deceased filled the house rented by the Rostovs. All these acquaintances, who had so often dined and danced at his house and had so often laughed at Count Rostov, now said, with a common feeling of self-reproach and emotion, as if justifying themselves: "Well, whatever he may have been he was a most worthy man. You don't meet such men nowadays... And which of us has not weaknesses of his own?"

It was just when Count Rostov's affairs had become so involved that it was impossible to say what would happen if he lived another year that he unexpectedly died.

Nicholas was with the Russian army in Paris when the news of Count Rostov's death reached him. Nicholas at once resigned his commission, and without waiting for it to be accepted took a leave of absence and went to Moscow. The state of Count Rostov's affairs became quite obvious a month

after his death, surprising everyone with the immense total of small debts the existence of which no one had suspected. The debts amounted to double the value of the property.

Friends and relations advised Nicholas to decline the inheritance. But Nicholas regarded such a refusal as a slur on his father's memory, which he held sacred, and therefore would not hear of refusing and accepted the inheritance together with the obligation to pay the debts.

The creditors who had so long been silent, restrained by a vague but powerful influence exerted on them while he lived by Count Rostov's careless good nature, all proceeded to enforce their claims at once. As always happens in such cases, rivalry sprang up as to which should get paid first, and those who like Account Manager Míténka held promissory notes given them as presents now became the most exacting of the creditors. Nicholas was allowed no respite and no peace, and those who had seemed to pity Count Rostov—the cause of their losses (if they were losses)—now remorselessly pursued the young Nicholas who had voluntarily undertaken the debts and was obviously not guilty of contracting them.

Not one of the plans Nicholas tried succeeded; the estate was sold by auction for half its value, and half the debts still remained unpaid. Nicholas accepted thirty thousand rubles offered to him by his brother-in-law Pierre to pay off debts that Nicholas regarded as genuinely due for value received. And to avoid being imprisoned for the remainder, as the creditors threatened, Nicholas re-entered the government service.

Nicholas could not rejoin the army where he would have been made a colonel at the next vacancy, for Countess Rostov now clung to him as her one hold on life; and so despite Nicholas's reluctance to remain in Moscow among people who had known him before, and despite Nicholas's abhorrence of the civil service, he accepted a post in Moscow in that service, doffed the uniform of which he was so fond, and moved with Countess Rostov and Sonya to a small house on the Sívtsev Vrazhók.

Natasha and Pierre were living in St. Petersburg at the time and had no clear idea of Nicholas' circumstances. Having borrowed money from Pierre, Nicholas tried to hide his wretched condition from him. Nicholas's position was the more difficult because with his salary of twelve hundred rubles he had not only to keep himself, Countess Rostov, and Sonya, but had to shield Countess Rostov from knowledge of their poverty. Countess Rostov could not conceive of life without the luxurious conditions she had been used to from childhood and, unable to realize how hard it was for Nicholas, kept demanding now a carriage (which they did not keep) to send for a friend, now some expensive article of food for herself, or wine for Nicholas, or money to buy a present as a surprise for Natasha or Sonya, or for Nicholas himself.

Sonya kept house, attended to Countess Rostov, read to her, put up with her whims and secret ill-will, and helped Nicholas to conceal their poverty from Countess Rostov. Nicholas felt irredeemably indebted to Sonya for all she was doing for his mother and greatly admired her patience and devotion but tried to keep aloof from her.

Nicholas seemed in his heart to reproach Sonya for being too perfect, and because there was nothing to reproach her with. Sonya had all that people are valued for, but little that could have made Nicholas love her. Nicholas felt that the more he valued Sonya the less he loved her. Nicholas had taken her at her word when she wrote giving him his freedom and now behaved as if all that had passed between them had been long forgotten and could never in any case be renewed.

Nicholas' position became worse and worse. The idea of putting something aside out of his salary proved a dream. Not only did Nicholas not save anything, but to comply with his mother's demands he even incurred some small debts. Nicholas could see no way out of this situation. The idea of marrying some rich woman, which was suggested to him by his female relations, was repugnant to him. The other way out—his mother's death—

never entered his head. He wished for nothing and hoped for nothing, and deep in his heart experienced a gloomy and stern satisfaction in an uncomplaining endurance of his position. Nicholas tried to avoid his old acquaintances with their commiseration and offensive offers of assistance; he avoided all distraction and recreation, and even at home did nothing but play cards with his mother, pace silently up and down the room, and smoke one pipe after another. Nicholas seemed careful to cherish within himself the gloomy mood which alone enabled him to endure his position.

At the beginning of winter, Marya came to Moscow. From reports current in town she learned how the Rostovs were situated, and how “Nicholas has sacrificed himself for his mother,” as people were saying.

“I never expected anything else of Nicholas,” said Marya to herself, feeling a joyous sense of her love for him. Remembering her friendly relations with all the Rostovs which had made her almost a member of the family, Marya thought it her duty to go to see them. But remembering her relations with Nicholas in Vorónezh she was shy about doing so. Making a great effort Marya did however go to call on them a few weeks after her arrival in Moscow.

Nicholas was the first to meet Marya, as Countess Rostov’s room could only be reached through his. But instead of being greeted with pleasure as Marya had expected, at his first glance at her his face assumed a cold, stiff, proud expression she had not seen on it before. Nicholas inquired about her health, led the way to Countess Rostov, and having sat there for five minutes left the room.

When Marya came out of Countess Rostov’s room Nicholas met her again, and with marked solemnity and stiffness accompanied her to the anteroom. To Marya’s remarks about his mother’s health Nicholas made no reply. “What’s that to you? Leave me in peace,” Nicholas’s looks seemed to say.

“Why does Marya come prowling here? What does she want? I can’t bear these ladies and all these civilities!” said Nicholas aloud in Sonya’s presence, evidently unable to repress his vexation, after Marya’s carriage had disappeared.

“Oh, Nicholas, how can you talk like that?” cried Sonya, hardly able to conceal her delight. “Marya is so kind and Countess Rostov is so fond of her!”

Nicholas did not reply and tried to avoid speaking of Marya anymore. But after Marya’s visit, Countess Rostov spoke of Marya several times a day.

Countess Rostov sang Marya’s praises, insisted that Nicholas must call on Marya, and expressed a wish to see Marya often, but yet always became ill-humored when she began to talk about her.

Nicholas tried to keep silent when Countess Rostov spoke of Marya, but his silence irritated her.

“Marya is a very admirable and excellent young woman,” said Countess Rostov, “and you must go and call on her. You would at least be seeing somebody, and I think it must be dull for you only seeing us.”

“But I don’t in the least want to, Mamma.”

“You used to want to, and now you don’t. Really I don’t understand you, my dear Nicholas. One day you are dull, and the next you refuse to see anyone.”

“But I never said I was dull.”

“Why, you said yourself you don’t want even to see Marya. She is a very admirable young woman and you always liked her, but now suddenly you have got some notion or other in your head. You hide everything from me.”

“Not at all, Mamma.”

“If I were asking you to do something disagreeable now—but I only ask you to return a call. One would think mere politeness required it... Well, I

have asked you, and now I won't interfere anymore since you have secrets from your mother."

"Well, then, I'll go if you wish it."

"It doesn't matter to me. I only wish it for your sake."

Nicholas sighed, bit his mustache, and laid out the cards for patience, trying to divert Countess Rostov's attention to another topic.

The same conversation was repeated the next day, and the day after, and the day after that.

After Marya's visit to the Rostovs and her unexpectedly chilly reception by Nicholas, Marya confessed to herself that she had been right in not wishing to be the first to call.

"I expected nothing else," Marya told herself, calling her pride to her aid. "I have nothing to do with him and I only wanted to see Countess Rostov, who was always kind to me and to whom I am under many obligations."

But Marya could not pacify herself with these reflections; a feeling akin to remorse troubled her when she thought of her visit. Though she had firmly resolved not to call on the Rostovs again and to forget the whole matter, she felt herself all the time in an awkward position. And when Marya asked herself what distressed her, she had to admit that it was her relation to Nicholas. His cold, polite manner did not express his feeling for her (Marya knew that) but it concealed something, and until she could discover what that something was, she felt that she could not be at ease.

One day in midwinter when sitting in the schoolroom attending to Nikolenka's lessons, Marya was informed that Nicholas had called. With a firm resolution not to betray herself and not show her agitation, Marya sent for Lady-in-waiting Bourienne and went with her to the drawing room.

Marya's first glance at Nicholas' face told her that he had only come to fulfill the demands of politeness, and she firmly resolved to maintain the tone in which he addressed her.

They spoke of Countess Rostov's health, of their mutual friends, of the latest war news, and when the ten minutes required by propriety had elapsed after which a visitor may rise, Nicholas got up to say goodbye.

With Lady-in-waiting Bourienne's help, Marya had maintained the conversation very well, but at the very last moment, just when Nicholas rose, Marya was so tired of talking about what did not interest her, and her mind was so full of the question of why she alone was granted so little happiness in life, that in a fit of absent-mindedness she sat still, her luminous eyes gazing fixedly before her, not noticing that he had risen.

Nicholas glanced at Marya and, wishing to appear not to notice her abstraction, made some remark to Lady-in-waiting Bourienne and then again looked at Marya. She still sat motionless with a look of suffering on her gentle face. Nicholas suddenly felt sorry for her and was vaguely conscious that he might be the cause of the sadness her face expressed. He wished to help her and say something pleasant but could think of nothing to say.

"Good-by, Marya!" said Nicholas.

Marya started, flushed, and sighed deeply.

"Oh, I beg your pardon," she said as if waking up. "Are you going already, Nicholas? Well then, goodbye! Oh, but the cushion for Countess Rostov!"

"Wait a moment, I'll fetch it," said Lady-in-waiting Bourienne, and she left the room.

Nicholas and Marya both sat silent, with an occasional glance at one another.

"Yes, Marya," said Nicholas at last with a sad smile, "it doesn't seem long ago since we first met at Boguchárovo, but how much water has flowed since then! In what distress we all seemed to be then, yet I would give much to bring back that time... but there's no bringing it back."

Marya gazed intently into Nicholas's eyes with her own luminous ones as he said this. She seemed to be trying to fathom the hidden meaning of his words which would explain his feeling for her.

"Yes, yes," said Marya, "but you have no reason to regret the past, Nicholas. As I understand your present life, I think you will always recall it with satisfaction, because of the self-sacrifice that fills it now..."

"I cannot accept your praise," Nicholas interrupted her hurriedly. "On the contrary I continually reproach myself... But this is not at all an interesting or cheerful subject."

Nicholas's face again resumed its former stiff and cold expression. But Marya had caught a glimpse of the man she had known and loved, and it was to him that she now spoke.

"I thought you would allow me to tell you this," Marya said. "I had come so near to you... and to all your family that I thought you would not consider my sympathy misplaced, but I was mistaken," and suddenly her voice trembled. "I don't know why," she continued, recovering herself, "but you used to be different, and..."

"There are a thousand reasons *why*," laying special emphasis on the *why*. "Thank you, Marya," Nicholas added softly. "Sometimes it is hard."

"So that's why! That's why!" a voice whispered in Marya's soul. "No, it was not only that gay, kind, and frank look, not only that handsome exterior, that I loved in him. I divined his noble, resolute, self-sacrificing spirit too," Marya said to herself. "Yes, Nicholas is poor now and I am rich... Yes, that's the only reason... Yes, were it not for that..." And remembering Nicholas's former tenderness, and looking now at his kind, sorrowful face, she suddenly understood the cause of his coldness.

"But why, Nicholas, why?" Marya cried, unconsciously moving closer to him. "Why? Tell me. You must tell me!"

Nicholas was silent.

“I don’t understand your *why*, Nicholas,” Marya continued, “but it’s hard for me... I confess it. For some reason, you wish to deprive me of our former friendship. And that hurts me.” There were tears in Marya’s eyes and in her voice. “I have had so little happiness in life that every loss is hard for me to bear... Excuse me, goodbye!” and suddenly she began to cry and hurried from the room.

“Marya, for God’s sake!” Nicholas exclaimed, trying to stop her. “Marya!”

Marya turned round. For a few seconds Nicholas and Marya gazed silently into one another’s eyes—and what had seemed impossible and remote suddenly became possible, inevitable, and very near.

In the winter of 1813, Nicholas married Marya and moved to Bald Hills with her, Countess Rostov, and Sonya.

Within four years, Nicholas had paid off all his remaining debts without selling any of Marya’s property, and having received a small inheritance on the death of a cousin Nicholas paid his debt to Pierre, as well.

In another three years, by 1820, Nicholas had so managed his affairs that he was able to buy a small estate adjoining Bald Hills and was negotiating to buy back Otrádnœ—that being his pet dream.

Having started farming from necessity, Nicholas soon grew so devoted to it that it became his favorite and almost his sole occupation. Nicholas was a plain farmer: he did not like innovations, especially the English ones then coming into vogue. He laughed at theoretical treatises on estate management, disliked factories, the raising of expensive products, and the buying of expensive seed corn, and did not make a hobby of any particular part of the work on his estate. Nicholas always had before his mind’s eye *the estate* as a whole and not any particular part of it. The chief thing in his eyes was not the nitrogen in the soil, nor the oxygen in the air, nor manures, nor special plows, but that most important agent by which nitrogen, oxygen, manure, and plow were made effective—the peasant

laborer. When Nicholas first began farming and began to understand its different branches, it was the serf who especially attracted his attention. The serf seemed to him not merely a tool, but also a judge of farming and an end in himself. At first, Nicholas watched the serfs, trying to understand their aims and what they considered good and bad, and only pretended to direct them and give orders while in reality learning from them their methods, their manner of speech, and their judgment of what was good and bad. Only when Nicholas had understood the peasants' tastes and aspirations, had learned to talk their language, to grasp the hidden meaning of their words, and felt akin to them did he begin boldly to manage his serfs, that is, to perform toward them the duties demanded of him. And Nicholas' management produced very brilliant results.

Guided by some gift of insight, on taking up the management of the estates Nicholas at once unerringly appointed as bailiff, village elder, and delegate, the very men the serfs would themselves have chosen had they had the right to choose, and these posts never changed hands. Before analyzing the properties of manure, before entering into the *debit* and *credit* (as he ironically called it), Nicholas found out how many cattle the peasants had and increased the number by all possible means. He kept the peasant families together in the largest groups possible, not allowing the family groups to divide into separate households. Nicholas was hard alike on the lazy, the depraved, and the weak, and tried to get them expelled from the commune.

Nicholas was as careful of the sowing and reaping of the peasants' hay and corn as of his own, and few landowners had their crops sown and harvested so early and so well, or got so good a return, as did Nicholas.

Nicholas disliked having anything to do with the domestic serfs—the “drones” as he called them—and everyone said he spoiled them with his laxity. When a decision had to be taken regarding a domestic serf, especially if one had to be punished, Nicholas always felt undecided and

consulted everybody in the house; but when it was possible to have a domestic serf conscripted instead of a land worker he did so without the least hesitation. He never felt any hesitation in dealing with the peasants. He knew that his every decision would be approved by them all with very few exceptions.

Nicholas did not allow himself either to be hard on or punish a man, or to make things easy for or reward anyone, merely because he felt inclined to do so. He could not have said by what standard he judged what he should or should not do, but the standard was quite firm and definite in his own mind.

Often, speaking with vexation of some failure or irregularity, Nicholas would say: "What can one do with our Russian peasants?" and imagined that he could not bear them.

Yet Nicholas loved "our Russian peasants" and their way of life with his whole soul, and for that very reason had understood and assimilated the one way and manner of farming that produced good results.

Marya was jealous of this passion of Nicholas's and regretted that she could not share it; but Marya could not understand the joys and vexations he derived from that world, to her so remote and alien. Marya could not understand why he was so particularly animated and happy when, after getting up at daybreak and spending the whole morning in the fields or on the threshing floor, he returned from the sowing or mowing or reaping to have tea with her. Marya did not understand why he spoke with such admiration and delight of the farming of the thrifty and well-to-do peasant Ermíshin, who with his family had carted corn all night; or of the fact that his (Nicholas') sheaves were already stacked before anyone else had his harvest in. Marya did not understand why he stepped out from the window to the veranda and smiled under his mustache and winked so joyfully, when a warm steady rain began to fall on the dry and thirsty shoots of the young oats, or why when the wind carried away a threatening cloud during the hay

harvest he would return from the barn, flushed, sunburned, and perspiring, with a smell of wormwood and gentian in his hair and, gleefully rubbing his hands, would say: “Well, one more day and my grain and the peasants’ will all be under cover.”

Still less did Marya understand why Nicholas, kindhearted and always ready to anticipate her wishes, should become almost desperate when she brought him a petition from some peasant men or women who had appealed to her to be excused some work; why Nicholas, that kind man, should obstinately refuse her, angrily asking her not to interfere in what was not her business. Marya felt he had a world apart, which he loved passionately and which had laws she had not fathomed.

Sometimes when trying to understand him, Marya spoke of the good work Nicholas was doing for his serfs, he would be vexed and reply: “Not in the least; it never entered my head and I wouldn’t do *that* for their good! That’s all poetry and old wives’ talk—all that doing good to one’s neighbor! What I want is that our children should not have to go begging. I must put our affairs in order while I am alive, that’s all. And to do that, order and strictness are essential... That’s all about it!” said Nicholas, clenching his vigorous fist. “And fairness, of course,” he added, “for if the peasant is naked and hungry and has only one miserable horse, he can do no good either for himself or for me.”

And all Nicholas did was fruitful—probably just because he refused to allow himself to think that he was doing good to others for virtue’s sake. His means increased rapidly; serfs from neighboring estates came to beg him to buy them, and long after his death the memory of his administration was devoutly preserved among the serfs. “Nicholas was a master... the peasants’ affairs first and then his own. Of course, he was not to be trifled with either—in a word, Nicholas was a real master!”

One matter connected with his management sometimes worried Nicholas, and that was his quick temper together with his old hussar habit

of making free use of his fists. At first, Nicholas saw nothing reprehensible in this, but in the second year of his marriage, his view of that form of punishment suddenly changed.

Once in summer Nicholas had sent for the village elder from Boguchárovo, a man who had succeeded to the post when Dron died and who was accused of dishonesty and various irregularities. Nicholas went out onto the porch to question the elder, and immediately after the elder had given a few replies the sound of cries and blows was heard. On returning to lunch Nicholas went up to Marya, who sat with her head bent low over her embroidery frame, and as usual, began to tell her what he had been doing that morning. Among other things, he spoke of the Boguchárovo elder. Marya turned red and then pale, but continued to sit with head bowed and lips compressed and gave her husband no reply.

“Such an insolent scoundrel!” Nicholas cried, growing hot again at the mere recollection of him. “If he had told me he was drunk and did not see... But what is the matter with you, Marya?” Nicholas suddenly asked.

Marya raised her head and tried to speak, but hastily looked down again and her lips puckered.

“Why, whatever is the matter, my dearest Marya?”

The looks of the plain Marya always improved when she was in tears. Marya never cried from pain or vexation, but always from sorrow or pity, and when she wept her radiant eyes acquired an irresistible charm.

The moment Nicholas took Marya’s hand she could no longer restrain herself and began to cry.

“Nicholas, I saw it... the elder was to blame, but why do you... Nicholas!” and Marya covered her face with her hands.

Nicholas said nothing. He flushed crimson, left her side, and paced up and down the room. Nicholas understood what Marya was weeping about, but could not in his heart at once agree with her that what he had regarded from childhood as quite an everyday event was wrong. “Is it just

sentimentality, old wives' tales, or is she right?" Nicholas asked himself. Before he had solved that point he glanced again at her face filled with love and pain, and he suddenly realized that she was right and that he had long been sinning against himself.

"Marya," Nicholas said softly, going up to her, "it will never happen again; I give you my word. Never," he repeated in a trembling voice like a boy asking for forgiveness.

The tears flowed faster still from Marya's eyes. She took his hand and kissed it.

"Nicholas, when did you break your cameo?" Marya asked to change the subject, looking at his finger on which he wore a ring with a cameo of Laocoön's head.

"Today—it was the same affair. Oh, Marya, don't remind me of it!" and again Nicholas flushed. "I give you my word of honor it shan't occur again, and let this always be a reminder to me," and he pointed to the broken ring.

After that, when in discussions with Nicholas's village elders or stewards the blood rushed to his face and his fists began to clench, Nicholas would turn the broken ring on his finger and would drop his eyes before the man who was making him angry. But Nicholas did forget himself once or twice within a twelvemonth, and then he would go and confess to Marya, and would again promise that this should really be the very last time.

"Marya, you must despise me!" Nicholas would say. "I deserve it."

"You should go, go away at once, if you don't feel strong enough to control yourself," Marya would reply sadly, trying to comfort her husband.

Among the gentry of the province, Nicholas was respected but not liked. He did not concern himself with the interests of his own class, and consequently, some thought him proud and others thought him stupid. The whole summer, from spring sowing to harvest, he was busy with the work on his farm. In autumn, Nicholas gave himself up to hunting with the same business-like seriousness—leaving home for a month, or even two, with his

hunt. In winter he visited his other villages or spent his time reading. The books he read were chiefly historical, and on these, he spent a certain sum every year. Nicholas was collecting, as he said, a serious library, and he made it a rule to read through all the books he bought. He would sit in his study with a grave air, reading—a task he first imposed upon himself as a duty, but which afterward became a habit affording him a special kind of pleasure and a consciousness of being occupied with serious matters. In winter, except for business excursions, he spent most of his time at home making himself one with his family and entering into all the details of his children's relations with their mother. The harmony between him and his wife grew closer and closer and he daily discovered fresh spiritual treasures in her.

From the beginning of his marriage, Sonya lived in Nicholas's house. Before that, Nicholas had told Marya all that had passed between himself and Sonya, blaming himself and commending Sonya. Nicholas had asked Marya to be gentle and kind to Sonya. Marya thoroughly realized the wrong Nicholas had done Sonya, felt herself to blame Sonya, and imagined that Marya's wealth had influenced Nicholas' choice. Marya could not find fault with Sonya in any way and tried to be fond of her, but often felt ill-will toward her which she could not overcome.

Once Marya had a talk with Natasha about Sonya and about her own injustice toward her.

"You know," said Natasha, "you have read the Gospels a great deal—there is a passage in them that just fits Sonya."

"What?" asked Marya, surprised.

"'To him that hath shall be given, and from him that hath not shall be taken away.' Do you remember? Sonya is one that hath not; why, I don't know. Perhaps Sonya lacks egotism, I don't know, but from her is taken away, and everything has been taken away. Sometimes I am dreadfully sorry for her. Formerly I very much wanted Nicholas to marry Sonya, but I

always had a sort of presentiment that it would not come off. Sonya is a *sterile flower*, you know—like some strawberry blossoms. Sometimes I am sorry for her, and sometimes I think she doesn't feel it as you or I would."

Though Marya told Natasha that those words in the Gospel must be understood differently, yet looking at Sonya she agreed with Natasha's explanation. It really seemed that Sonya did not feel her position trying, and had grown quite reconciled to her lot as a *sterile flower*. Sonya seemed to be fond not so much of individuals as of the family as a whole. Like a cat, she had attached herself not to the people but to the home. Sonya waited on Nicholas, petted and spoiled the children, was always ready to render the small services for which she had a gift, and all this was unconsciously accepted by her with insufficient gratitude.

The country seat at Bald Hills had been rebuilt, though not on the same scale as under Baron Bolkonski.

The buildings, begun under straitened circumstances, were more than simple. The immense house on the old stone foundations was of wood, plastered only inside. It had bare deal floors and was furnished with very simple hard sofas, armchairs, tables, and chairs made by their own serf carpenters out of their own birchwood. The house was spacious and had rooms for the house serfs and apartments for visitors. Whole families of the Rostovs' and Bolkonskis' relations sometimes came to Bald Hills with sixteen horses and dozens of servants and stayed for months. Besides that, four times a year, on the name days and birthdays of the hosts, as many as a hundred visitors would gather there for a day or two. The rest of the year life pursued its unbroken routine with its ordinary occupations, and its breakfasts, lunches, dinners, and suppers, provided out of the produce of the estate.

It was the eve of St. Nicholas, the fifth of December, 1820. Natasha had been staying at Nicholas's with her husband, Pierre, and their three children since early autumn. Pierre had gone to St. Petersburg on business of his own for three weeks as he said, but had remained there nearly seven weeks and was expected back every minute.

Besides Pierre's family, Nicholas' old friend, the retired Denisov, was staying with the Rostovs this fifth of December.

On the sixth, which was Nicholas's name day when the house would be full of visitors, Nicholas knew he would have to exchange his Tartar tunic for a tailcoat, put on narrow boots with pointed toes, and drive to the new church he had built, and then receive visitors who would come to congratulate him, offer them refreshments, and talk about the elections of the nobility; but he considered himself entitled to spend the eve of that day in his usual way. Nicholas examined the bailiff's accounts of the village in Ryazán which belonged to Marya's nephew Nikolenka, wrote two business letters, and walked over to the granaries, cattle yards, and stables before dinner. Having taken precautions against the drunkenness to be expected on the morrow because it was a great saint's day, Nicholas returned to dinner, and without having time for a private talk with his wife sat down at the long table laid for twenty persons, at which the whole household had assembled. At that table were Countess Rostov, her old lady companion Belóva, Marya, their three children with their governess and tutor, Nikolenka with his tutor, Sonya, Denisov, Natasha, her three children, their governess, and old Michael Ivanovich, the late Baron's architect, who was living on in retirement at Bald Hills.

Marya sat at the other end of the table. When Nicholas took his place, Marya concluded, from the rapid manner in which after taking up his table napkin he pushed back the tumbler and wineglass standing before him, that Nicholas was out of humor, as was sometimes the case when he came in to dinner straight from the farm—especially before the soup. Marya well knew

that mood of his, and when she herself was in a good frame of mind quietly waited till he had had his soup and then began to talk to him and make him admit that there was no cause for his ill-humor. But today Marya quite forgot that and was hurt that Nicholas should be angry with her without any reason, and she felt unhappy. Marya asked him where he had been. Nicholas replied. She again inquired whether everything was going well on the farm. Her unnatural tone made him wince unpleasantly and he replied hastily.

“Then I’m not mistaken,” thought Marya. “Why is Nicholas cross with me?” She concluded from his tone that he was vexed with her and wished to end the conversation. Marya knew her remarks sounded unnatural, but could not refrain from asking some more questions.

Thanks to Denisov, the conversation at the table soon became lively, and Marya did not talk to Nicholas. When they left the table and went as usual to thank Countess Rostov, Marya held out her hand and kissed Nicholas, and asked him why he was angry with her.

“You always have such strange fancies! I didn’t even think of being angry,” Nicholas replied.

But the word *always* seemed to Marya to imply: “Yes, I am angry but I won’t tell you why.”

In general, Nicholas and Marya lived together so happily that even Sonya and Countess Rostov, who felt jealous and would have liked them to disagree, could find nothing to reproach them with; but even Marya and Nicholas had these moments of genuine antagonism. Occasionally, and it was always just after they had been happiest together, Nicholas and Marya suddenly had a feeling of estrangement and hostility, which occurred most frequently during Marya’s pregnancies, and this was such a time.

“Well, *ladies and gentlemen*,” said Nicholas loudly and with apparent cheerfulness (it seemed to Marya that he did it on purpose to vex her), “I

have been on my feet since six this morning. Tomorrow I shall have to suffer, so today I'll go and rest."

And without a word to Marya, Nicholas went to the little sitting room and lay down on the sofa.

"That's always the way," thought Marya. "Nicholas talks to everyone except me. I see... I see that I am repulsive to him, especially when I am in this condition." Marya looked down at her expanded figure and in the glass at her pale, sallow, emaciated face in which her eyes now looked larger than ever.

And everything annoyed Marya—Denisov's shouting and laughter, Natasha's talk, and especially a quick glance Sonya gave her.

Sonya was always the first excuse Marya found for feeling irritated.

Having sat awhile with her visitors without understanding anything of what they were saying, Marya softly left the room and went to the nursery.

The children were playing at "going to Moscow" in a carriage made of chairs and invited her to go with them. Marya sat down and played with them a little, but the thought of her husband and his unreasonable crossness worried her. She got up and, walking on tiptoe with difficulty, went to the small sitting room.

"Perhaps Nicholas is not asleep; I'll have an explanation with him," she said to herself. Little Andrei, her eldest boy, imitating his mother, followed her on tiptoe. She did not notice him.

"Marya, dear, I think he is asleep—he was so tired," said Sonya, meeting her in the large sitting room (it seemed to Marya that she crossed her path everywhere). "Andrei may wake him."

Marya looked round, saw little Andrei following her, felt that Sonya was right, and for that very reason flushed and with evident difficulty refrained from saying something harsh. She made no reply, but to avoid obeying Sonya beckoned to Andrei to follow her quietly and went to the door. Sonya went away by another door. From the room in which Nicholas

was sleeping came the sound of his even breathing, every slightest tone of which was familiar to his wife. As she listened to it she saw before her his smooth handsome forehead, his mustache, and his whole face, as she had so often seen it in the stillness of the night when he slept. Nicholas suddenly moved and cleared his throat. And at that moment little Andrei shouted from outside the door: "Papa! Mamma's standing here!" Marya turned pale with fright and made signs to little Andrei. Nicholas grew silent, and quiet ensued for a moment, terrible to Marya. She knew how Nicholas disliked being waked. Then through the door, Marya heard Nicholas clearing his throat again and stirring, and his voice said crossly:

"I can't get a moment's peace... Marya, is that you? Why did you bring Andrei here?"

"I only came in to look and did not notice... forgive me..."

Nicholas coughed and said no more. Marya moved away from the door and took the boy back to the nursery. Five minutes later little black-eyed three-year-old Tasha, her father's pet, having learned from her brother Andrei that Papa was asleep and Mamma was in the sitting room, ran to her father unobserved by her mother. The dark-eyed little Tasha boldly opened the creaking door, went up to the sofa with energetic steps of her sturdy little legs, and having examined the position of Nicholas, who was asleep with his back to her, rose on tiptoe and kissed the hand which lay under his head. Nicholas turned with a tender smile on his face.

"Tasha, Tasha!" came Marya's frightened whisper from the door. "Papa wants to sleep."

"No, Mamma, he doesn't want to sleep," said little Natasha with conviction. "He's laughing."

Nicholas lowered his legs, rose, and took Tasha in his arms.

"Come in, Marya," Nicholas said to his wife.

Marya went in and sat down by Nicholas.

“I did not notice him following me,” Marya said timidly. “I just looked in.”

Holding his little Tasha with one arm, Nicholas glanced at Marya and, seeing her guilty expression, put his other arm around her and kissed her hair.

“May I kiss Mamma?” Nicholas asked Tasha.

Tasha smiled bashfully.

“Again!” Tasha commanded, pointing with a peremptory gesture to the spot where Nicholas had placed the kiss.

“I don’t know why you think I am cross,” said Nicholas, replying to the question he knew was in Marya’s mind.

“You have no idea how unhappy, how lonely, I feel when you are like that. It always seems to me...”

“Marya, don’t talk nonsense. You ought to be ashamed of yourself!” Nicholas said gaily.

“It seems to be that you can’t love me, that I am so plain... always... and now... in this cond...”

“Oh, how absurd you are! It is not beauty that endears, it’s love that makes us see beauty. It is only Malvínas and women of that kind who are loved for their beauty. But do I love you, my wife? I don’t love her, but... I don’t know how to put it. Without you, or when something comes between us like this, I seem lost and can’t do anything. Now do I love my finger? I don’t love it, but just try to cut it off!”

“I’m not like that myself, but I understand. So you’re not angry with me?”

“Awfully angry!” Nicholas said, smiling and getting up. And smoothing his hair he began to pace the room.

“Do you know, Marya, what I’ve been thinking?” Nicholas began, immediately thinking aloud in Marya’s presence now that they had made it up.

Nicholas did not ask if Marya was ready to listen to him. He did not care. A thought had occurred to him and so it belonged to her also. And Nicholas told her of his intention to persuade Pierre to stay with them till spring.

Marya listened till he had finished, made some remark, and in her turn began thinking aloud. Marya's thoughts were about the children.

"You can see the woman in her already," Marya said in French, pointing to little Tasha. "You reproach us women with being illogical. Here is our logic. I say: 'Papa wants to sleep!' but Tasha says, 'No, he's laughing.' And she was right," said Marya with a happy smile.

"Yes, yes." And Nicholas, taking his little daughter Tasha in his strong hand, lifted her high, placed her on his shoulder, held her by the legs, and paced the room with her. There was an expression of carefree happiness on the faces of both father and daughter.

"But you know you may be unfair. You are too fond of Tasha," Marya whispered in French.

"Yes, but what am I to do?... I try not to show..."

At that moment they heard the sound of the door pulley and footsteps in the hall and anteroom as if someone had arrived.

"Somebody has come."

"I am sure it is Pierre. I will go and see," said Marya and left the room.

In her absence Nicholas allowed himself to give his little Tasha a gallop around the room. Out of breath, Nicholas took the laughing Tasha quickly from his shoulder and pressed her to his heart. His capers reminded him of dancing, and looking at Tasha's round happy little face he thought of what she would be like when he was an old man, taking her into society and dancing the mazurka with her as Count Rostov had danced *Daniel Cooper* with his daughter, Natasha.

"It is Pierre, it is he, Nicholas!" said Marya, re-entering the room a few minutes later. "Now Natasha has come to life. You should have seen

Natasha's ecstasy, and how Pierre caught it for having stayed away so long. Well, come along now, quick, quick! It's time you two were parted," Marya added, looking smilingly at Tasha who clung to Nicholas.

Nicholas went out holding Tasha by the hand.

Marya remained in the sitting room.

"I should never, never have believed that one could be so happy," Marya whispered to herself. A smile lit up her face but at the same time she sighed, and her deep eyes expressed a quiet sadness as though she felt, through her happiness, that there is another sort of happiness unattainable in this life and of which she involuntarily thought at that instant.

Natasha had married in the early spring of 1813, and in 1820 already had three daughters besides a son for whom she had longed and whom she was now nursing. Natasha had grown stouter and broader so that it was difficult to recognize in this robust, motherly woman the slim, lively Natasha of former days. Natasha's features were more defined and had a calm, soft, and serene expression. In her face, there was none of the ever-glowing animation that had formerly burned there and constituted its charm. Now Natasha's face and body were often all that one saw, and her soul was not visible at all. All that struck the eye was a strong, handsome, and fertile woman. The old fire very rarely kindled in her face now. That happened only when, as was the case that day, Pierre returned home, or a sick child was convalescent, or when she and Marya spoke of Andrei (she never mentioned him to Pierre, who she imagined was jealous of Andrei's memory), or on the rare occasions when something happened to induce her to sing, a practice Natasha had quite abandoned since her marriage. At the rare moments when the old fire did kindle in Natasha's handsome, fully developed body she was even more attractive than in former days.

Since their marriage, Natasha and Pierre had lived in Moscow, in St. Petersburg, on their estate near Moscow, or with Countess Rostov, that is to say, in Nicholas' house. The young Nathasha was not often seen in society,

and those who met her there were not pleased with her and found her neither attractive nor amiable. Not that Natasha liked solitude—she did not know whether she liked it or not, she even thought that she did not—but with her pregnancies, her confinements, the nursing of her children, and sharing every moment of her husband's life, she had demands on her time which could be satisfied only by renouncing society. All who had known Natasha before her marriage wondered at the change in her as at something extraordinary. Only Countess Rostov with her maternal instinct had realized that all Natasha's outbursts had been due to her need for children and a husband—as Natasha herself had once exclaimed at Otrádnœ not so much in fun as in earnest—and Countess Rostov was now surprised at the surprise expressed by those who had never understood Natasha, and she kept saying that she had always known that Natasha would make an exemplary wife and mother.

“Only Natasha lets her love of Pierre and her children overflow all bounds,” said Countess Rostov, “so that it even becomes absurd.”

Natasha did not follow the golden rule advocated by clever folk, especially by the French, which says that a girl should not let herself go when she marries, should not neglect her accomplishments, and should be even more careful of her appearance than when she was unmarried and should fascinate her husband as much as she did before he became her husband. Natasha, on the contrary, had at once abandoned all her witchery, of which her singing had been an unusually powerful part. She gave it up just because it was so powerfully seductive. Natasha took no pains with her manners or with a delicacy of speech, or with her toilet, or to show herself to her husband in her most becoming attitudes, or to avoid inconveniencing him by being too exacting. She acted in contradiction to all those rules. Natasha felt that the allurements instinct had formerly taught her to use would now be merely ridiculous in the eyes of her husband, to whom she had from the first moment given herself up entirely—that is, with her whole

soul, leaving no corner of it hidden from him. Natasha felt that her unity with Pierre was not maintained by the poetic feelings that had attracted him to her, but by something else—indefinite but firm as the bond between her own body and soul.

To fluff out her curls, put on fashionable dresses, and sing romantic songs to fascinate Pierre would have seemed as strange as to adorn herself to attract herself. To adorn herself for others might perhaps have been agreeable—Natasha did not know—but she had no time at all for it. The chief reason for devoting no time either to singing, dressing, or choosing her words was that Natasha really had no time to spare for these things.

We know that man has the faculty of becoming completely absorbed in a subject however trivial it may be, and that there is no subject so trivial that it will not grow to infinite proportions if one's entire attention is devoted to it.

The subject which wholly engrossed Natasha's attention was her family: that is, Pierre whom she had to keep so that he should belong entirely to her and to the home, and the children whom she had to bear, bring into the world, nurse, and bring up.

And the deeper Natasha penetrated, not with her mind only but with her whole soul, her whole being, into the subject that absorbed her, the larger did that subject grow and the weaker and more inadequate did her powers appear, so that Natasha concentrated them wholly on that one thing and yet was unable to accomplish all that she considered necessary.

There were then as now conversations and discussions about women's rights, the relations of husband and wife and their freedom and rights, though these themes were not yet termed *questions* as they are now; but these topics were not merely uninteresting to Natasha, she positively did not understand them.

These questions, then as now, existed only for those who see nothing in marriage but the pleasure married people get from one another, that is, only

the beginnings of marriage and not its whole significance, which lies in the family.

Discussions and questions of that kind, which are like the question of how to get the greatest gratification from one's dinner, did not then and do not now exist for those for whom the purpose of a dinner is the nourishment it affords; and the purpose of marriage is the family.

If the purpose of dinner is to nourish the body, a man who eats two dinners at once may perhaps get more enjoyment but will not attain his purpose, for his stomach will not digest the two dinners.

If the purpose of marriage is the family, the person who wishes to have many wives or husbands may perhaps obtain much pleasure, but in that case, will not have a family.

If the purpose of food is nourishment and the purpose of marriage is the family, the whole question resolves itself into not eating more than one can digest, and not having more wives or husbands than are needed for the family—that is, one wife or one husband. Natasha needed a husband. A husband was given her and he gave her a family. And Natasha not only saw no need for any other or better husband than Pierre but as all the powers of her soul were intent on serving her husband and her family, Natasha could not imagine and saw no interest in imagining how it would be if things were different.

Natasha did not care for society in general but prized the society of her relatives—Marya, and Nicholas, Countess Rostov, and Sonya. Natasha valued the company of those to whom she could come striding disheveled from the nursery in her dressing gown, and with joyful face show a yellow instead of a green stain on baby's napkin, and from whom she could hear reassuring words to the effect that baby was much better.

To such an extent had Natasha let herself go that the way she dressed and did her hair, her ill-chosen words, and her jealousy—she was jealous of Sonya, of the governess, and of every woman, pretty or plain—were

habitual subjects of jest to those about her. The general opinion was that Pierre was under Natasha's thumb, which was really true. From the very first days of their married life, Natasha had announced her demands. Pierre was greatly surprised by Natasha's view, to him a perfectly novel one, that every moment of his life belonged to her and to the family. Natasha's demands astonished him, but they also flattered him, and he submitted to them.

Pierre's subjection consisted in the fact that he not only dared not flirt with, but dared not even speak smilingly to, any other woman; did not dare dine at the Club as a pastime, did not dare spend money on a whim, and did not dare absent himself for any length of time, except on business—in which his wife included his intellectual pursuits, which she did not in the least understand but to which she attributed great importance. To make up for this, at home Pierre had the right to regulate his life and that of the whole family exactly as he chose. At home, Natasha placed herself in the position of a slave to her husband, and the whole household went on tiptoe when he was occupied—that is, was reading or writing in his study. Pierre had but to show a partiality for anything to get just what he liked done always. He had only to express a wish and Natasha would jump up and run to fulfill it.

The entire household was governed according to Pierre's supposed orders, that is, by Pierre's wishes which Natasha tried to guess. Their way of life and place of residence, their acquaintances and ties, Natasha's occupations, and the children's upbringing, were all selected not merely with regard to Pierre's expressed wishes, but to what Natasha from the thoughts he expressed in conversation supposed his wishes to be. And she deduced the essentials of his wishes quite correctly, and having once arrived at them clung to them tenaciously. When Pierre himself wanted to change his mind she would fight him with his own weapons.

Thus, in a time of trouble ever memorable to Pierre after the birth of their first child who was delicate, when they had to change the wet nurse three times and Natasha fell ill from despair, Pierre one day told Natasha of Rousseau's view, with which he quite agreed, that to have a wet nurse is unnatural and harmful. When Natasha's next baby was born, despite the opposition of her mother, the doctors, and even Pierre himself—who were all vigorously opposed to her nursing her baby herself, a thing then unheard of and considered injurious—Natasha insisted on having her own way, and after that nursed all her babies herself.

It very often happened that in a moment of irritation Pierre and Natasha would have a dispute, but long afterward Pierre, to his surprise and delight, would find in Natasha's ideas and actions the very thought against which Natasha had argued, but divested of everything superfluous that in the excitement of the dispute Pierre had added when expressing his opinion.

After seven years of marriage, Pierre had the joyous and firm consciousness that he was not a bad man, and Pierre felt this because he saw himself reflected in Natasha. Pierre felt the good and bad within himself inextricably mingled and overlapping. But only what was really good in Pierre was reflected in Natasha, all that was not quite good was rejected. And this was not the result of logical reasoning but was a direct and mysterious reflection.

Two months previously, when Pierre was already staying with the Rostovs', he had received a letter from Baron Theodore, asking him to come to St. Petersburg to confer on some important questions that were being discussed there by a society of which Pierre was one of the principal founders.

On reading that letter (Natasha always read Pierre's letters) Natasha herself suggested that Pierre should go to St. Petersburg, though Natasha would feel his absence very acutely. Natasha attributed immense importance to all of Pierre's intellectual and abstract interests though she

did not understand them, and she always dreaded being a hindrance to him in such matters. To Pierre's timid look of inquiry after reading the letter Natasha replied by asking Pierre to go, but to fix a definite date for his return. Pierre He was given four weeks' leave of absence.

Ever since that leave of absence had expired, more than a fortnight before, Natasha had been in a constant state of alarm, depression, and irritability.

Denisov, now a general on the retired list and much dissatisfied with the present state of affairs, had arrived during that fortnight. Captain (now General) Denisov looked at Natasha with sorrow and surprise as at a bad likeness of a person once dear. A dull, dejected look, random replies, and talk about the nursery was all he saw and heard from his former enchantress, Natasha.

Natasha was sad and irritable all that time, especially when Count Rostov, Nicholas, Sonya, or Marya, in their efforts to console her, tried to excuse Pierre and suggested reasons for his delay in returning.

"It's all nonsense, all rubbish—those discussions which lead to nothing and all those idiotic societies!" Natasha declared of the very affairs in the immense importance of which she firmly believed.

And Natasha would go to the nursery to nurse Peter, her only boy. No one else could tell Natasha anything so comforting or so reasonable as this little three-month-old creature when he lay at her breast and she was conscious of the movement of his lips and the snuffling of his little nose. That creature said: "You are angry, you are jealous, you would like to pay him out, you are afraid—but here am I! And I am he..." and that was unanswerable. It was more than true.

During that fortnight of anxiety, Natasha resorted to the baby for comfort so often, and fussed over him so much, that Natasha overfed him and he fell ill. She was terrified by his illness, and yet that was just what she

needed. While attending to him Natasha bore the anxiety about her husband more easily.

Natasha was nursing her boy when the sound of Pierre's sleigh was heard at the front door, and the old nurse—knowing how to please her mistress—entered the room inaudibly but hurriedly and with a beaming face.

“Has Pierre come?” Natasha asked quickly in a whisper, afraid to move lest she should rouse the dozing baby.

“He's come, ma'am,” whispered the nurse.

The blood rushed to Natasha's face and her feet involuntarily moved, but she could not jump up and run out. The baby again opened his eyes and looked at her. “You're here?” he seemed to be saying, and again lazily smacked his lips.

Cautiously withdrawing her breast, Natasha rocked the baby Peter a little, handed him to the nurse, and went with rapid steps toward the door. But at the door, Natasha stopped as if her conscience reproached her for having in her joy left the child too soon, and she glanced round. The nurse with raised elbows was lifting the infant over the rail of his cot.

“Go, ma'am! Don't worry, go!” the nurse whispered, smiling, with the kind of familiarity that grows up between a nurse and her mistress.

Natasha ran with light footsteps to the anteroom.

Denisov, who had come out of the study into the dancing room with his pipe, now for the first time recognized the old Natasha. A flood of brilliant, joyful light poured from her transfigured face.

“Pierre's come!” Natasha exclaimed as she ran past, and Denisov felt that he too was delighted that Pierre, whom he did not much care for, had returned.

On reaching the vestibule, Natasha saw a tall figure in a fur coat unwinding his scarf. “It's Pierre! It's really he! He has come!” Natasha said to herself, and rushing at Pierre embraced him, pressed his head to her

breast, and then pushed him back and gazed at his ruddy, happy face, covered with hoarfrost. "Yes, it is Pierre, happy and contented..."

Then all at once, Natasha remembered the tortures of suspense she had experienced for the last fortnight, and the joy that had lit up her face vanished; Natasha frowned and overwhelmed Pierre with a torrent of reproaches and angry words.

"Yes, it's all very well for you. You are pleased, you've had a good time... But what about me? You might at least have shown consideration for the children. I am nursing and my milk was spoiled... Peter was at death's door. But you were enjoying yourself. Yes, enjoying..."

Pierre knew he was not to blame, for he could not have come sooner; Pierre knew this outburst was unseemly and would blow over in a minute or two; above all, he knew that he himself was bright and happy. Pierre wanted to smile but dared not even think of doing so. He made a piteous, frightened face and bent down.

"I could not, on my honor. But how is Peter?"

"All right now. Come along! I wonder if you're not ashamed! If only you could see what I was like without you, how I suffered!"

"You are well?"

"Come, come!" Natasha said, not letting go of his arm. And they went to their rooms.

When Nicholas and Marya came to look for Pierre, he was in the nursery holding his baby son Peter, who was again awake, on his huge right palm and dandling him. A blissful bright smile was fixed on the baby's broad face with its toothless open mouth. The storm was long since over and there was bright, joyous sunshine on Natasha's face as she gazed tenderly at Pierre and Peter.

"And have you talked everything well over with Baron Theodore?" Natasha asked.

"Yes, capitally."

“You see, he holds it up.” (She meant the baby’s head.) “But how he did frighten me... You’ve seen the Baroness? Is it true she’s in love with that...”

“Yes, just fancy...”

At that moment Nicholas and Marya came in. Pierre with the baby in his arms stooped, kissed them, and replied to their inquiries. But in spite of much that was interesting and had to be discussed, the baby with the little cap on its unsteady head evidently absorbed all Pierre’s attention.

“How sweet!” said Marya, looking at and playing with the baby. “Now, Nicholas,” she added, turning to her husband, “I can’t understand how it is you don’t see the charm of these delicious marvels.”

“I don’t and can’t,” replied Nicholas, looking coldly at the baby. “A lump of flesh. Come along, Pierre!”

“And yet he’s such an affectionate father,” said Marya, vindicating Nicholas, “but only after they are a year old or so...”

“Now, Pierre nurses them splendidly,” said Natasha. “Pierre says his hand is just made for a baby’s seat. Just look!”

“Only not for this...” Pierre suddenly exclaimed with a laugh, and shifting the baby, Pierre gave him to the nurse.

As in every large household, there were at Bald Hills several perfectly distinct worlds which merged into one harmonious whole, though each retained its own peculiarities and made concessions to the others. Every event, joyful or sad, that took place in that house was important to all these worlds, but each had its own special reasons to rejoice or grieve over that occurrence independently of the others.

For instance, Pierre’s return was a joyful and important event and they all felt it to be so.

The servants—the most reliable judges of their masters because they judge not by their conversation or expressions of feeling but by their acts and way of life—were glad of Pierre’s return because they knew that when Pierre was there, Nicholas would cease going every day to attend to the

estate, and would be in better spirits and temper, and also because they would all receive handsome presents for the holidays.

The children and their governesses were glad of Pierre's return because no one else drew them into the social life of the household as he did. Pierre alone could play on the clavichord that *Scottish dance* (his only piece) to which, as Pierre said, all possible dances could be danced, and they felt sure Pierre had brought presents for them all.

Young Nikolenka, now a slim lad of fifteen, delicate and intelligent, with curly light-brown hair and beautiful eyes, was delighted because Uncle Pierre as he called him was the object of his rapturous and passionate affection. No one had instilled into Nikolenka this love for Pierre whom he saw only occasionally. Marya who had brought Nikolenka up had done her utmost to make him love Nicholas as she loved him, and Nikolenka did love his uncle Nicholas but loved him with just a shade of contempt. Pierre, however, he adored. Nikolenka did not want to be a hussar or a Knight of St. George like his uncle Nicholas; Nikolenka wanted to be learned, wise, and kind like Pierre. In Pierre's presence, Nikolenka's face always shone with pleasure and he flushed and was breathless when Pierre spoke to him. Nikolenka did not miss a single word Pierre uttered, and would afterward, with the tutor Desalles or by himself, recall and reconsider the meaning of everything Pierre had said. Pierre's past life and his unhappiness prior to 1812 (of which young Nicholas had formed a vague poetic picture from some words he had overheard), his adventures in Moscow, his captivity, Platón (of whom he had heard from Pierre), his love for Natasha (of whom Nikolenka was also particularly fond), and especially Pierre's friendship with Andrei, the father whom Nicholas could not remember—all this made Pierre in Nikolenka's eyes a hero and a saint.

From broken remarks about Natasha and his father, Andrei, from the emotion with which Pierre spoke of Andrei, and from the careful, reverent tenderness with which Natasha spoke of Andrei, too, so Nikolenka, who

was only just beginning to guess what love is, derived the notion that Andrei had loved Natasha and when dying had left her to his friend, Pierre. But the father, Andrei, whom Nikolenka did not remember appeared to him a divinity who could not be pictured, and of whom Nikolenka never thought without a swelling heart and tears of sadness and rapture. So Nikolenka also was happy that Pierre had arrived.

The guests welcomed Pierre because he always helped to enliven and unite any company he was in.

The grown-up members of the family, not to mention Natasha, were pleased to have back a friend whose presence made life run more smoothly and peacefully.

The old ladies were pleased with the presents Nikolenka brought them, and especially that Natasha would now be herself again.

Pierre felt the different outlooks of these various worlds and made haste to satisfy all their expectations.

Though the most absent-minded and forgetful of men, Pierre, with the aid of a list Natasha drew up, had now bought everything, not forgetting Countess Rostov's—and Nicholas's commissions, nor the dress material for a present to Countess Rostov's lady companion Belóva, nor toys for Natasha's nephews. In the early days of Pierre's marriage, it had seemed strange to him that Natasha should expect him not to forget to procure all the things he undertook to buy, and Pierre had been taken aback by Natasha's serious annoyance when on his first trip he forgot everything. But in time, Pierre grew used to this demand. Knowing that Natasha asked nothing for herself, and gave him commissions for others only when he himself had offered to undertake them, Pierre now found an unexpected and childlike pleasure in this purchase of presents for everyone in the house, and never forgot anything. If Pierre now incurred Natasha's censure it was only for buying too many and too expensive things. To Natasha's other

defects (as most people thought them, but which to Pierre were qualities) of untidiness and neglect of herself, she now added stinginess.

From the time that Pierre began life as a family man on a footing entailing heavy expenditure, he had noticed to his surprise that he spent only half as much as before and that his affairs—which had been in disorder of late, chiefly because of Helene’s debts—had begun to improve.

Life was cheaper because it was circumscribed: that most expensive luxury, the kind of life that can be changed at any moment, was no longer Pierre’s nor did he wish for it. Pierre felt that his way of life had now been settled once and for all till death and that to change it was not in his power, and so that way of life proved economical.

With a merry, smiling face, Pierre was sorting his purchases.

“What do you think of this?” said Pierre, unrolling a piece of stuff like a shopman.

Natasha, who was sitting opposite him with her eldest daughter on her lap, turned her sparkling eyes swiftly from her husband to the things he showed her.

“That’s for Countess Rostov’s lady companion, Belóva? Excellent!” Natasha felt the quality of the material. “It was a ruble a yard, I suppose?”

Pierre told her the price.

“Too expensive!” Natasha remarked. “But how pleased the children will be and Mamma too! Only you need not have bought me this,” Natasha added, unable to suppress a smile as she gazed admiringly at a gold comb set with pearls, of a kind then just coming into fashion.

“Adèle tempted me: she kept on telling me to buy it,” returned Pierre.

“When am I to wear it?” Natasha stuck it in her coil of hair. “When I take little Tasha into society? Perhaps they will be fashionable again by then. Well, let’s go now.”

And collecting the presents they went first to the nursery and then to Countess Rostov’s rooms.

Countess Rostov was sitting with her lady companion, Belóva, playing grand-patience as usual, when Pierre and Natasha came into the drawing room with parcels under their arms.

Countess Rostov was now over sixty, was quite gray, and wore a cap with a frill that surrounded her face. Her face had shriveled, her upper lip had sunk in, and her eyes were dim.

After the deaths of Petya and Count Rostov in such rapid succession, Countess Rostov felt herself a being accidentally forgotten in this world and left without aim or object for her existence. She ate, drank, slept, or kept awake, but did not *live*. Life gave her no new impressions. She wanted nothing from life but tranquility, and that tranquility only death could give her. But until death came, Countess Rostov had to go on living, that is, to use her vital forces. A peculiarity one sees in very young children and very old people was particularly evident in her. Countess Rostov's life had no external aims—only a need to exercise her various functions and inclinations was apparent. She had to eat, sleep, think, speak, weep, work, give vent to her anger, and so on, merely because she had a stomach, a brain, muscles, nerves, and a liver. She did these things not under any external impulse as people in the full vigor of life do, when behind the purpose for which they strive that of exercising their functions remains unnoticed. She talked only because she physically needed to exercise her tongue and lungs. She cried as a child does, because her nose had to be cleared, and so on. What for people in their full vigor is an aim was for her evidently merely a pretext.

Thus in the morning—especially if Countess Rostov had eaten anything rich the day before—she felt a need of being angry and would choose as the handiest pretext her lady companion Belóva's deafness.

Countess Rostov would begin to say something to Belóva in a low tone from the other end of the room.

“It seems a little warmer today, my dear,” Countess Rostov would murmur.

And when Belóva replied: “Oh yes, they’ve come,” Countess Rostov would mutter angrily: “Oh, Lord! How stupid and deaf she is!”

Another pretext would be Countess Rostov’s snuff, which would seem too dry or too damp or not rubbed fine enough. After these fits of irritability, her face would grow yellow, and her maids knew by infallible symptoms when Belóva would again be deaf, the snuff damp, and Countess Rostov’s face yellow. Just as she needed to work off her spleen so she had sometimes to exercise her still-existing faculty of thinking—and the pretext for that was a game of patience. When Countess Rostov needed to cry, the deceased Count Rostov would be the pretext. When Countess Rostov wanted to be agitated, Nicholas and his health would be the pretext, and when she felt a need to speak spitefully, the pretext would be Marya. When her vocal organs needed exercise, which was usually toward seven o’clock when she had had an after-dinner rest in a darkened room, the pretext would be the retelling of the same stories over and over again to the same audience.

Countess Rostov’s condition was understood by the whole household though no one ever spoke of it, and they all made every possible effort to satisfy her needs. Only by a rare glance exchanged with a sad smile between Nicholas, Pierre, Natasha, and Marya was the common understanding of her condition expressed.

But those glances expressed something more: they said that Countess Rostov had played her part in life, that what they now saw was not her whole self, that we must all become like her, and that they were glad to yield to her, to restrain themselves for this once precious being formerly as full of life as themselves, but now so much to be pitied. “*Remember that you must die,*” said these glances.

Only the really heartless, the stupid ones of that household, and the little children failed to understand this and avoided her.

When Pierre and Natasha entered the drawing room, Countess Rostov was in one of her customary states in which she needed the mental exertion of playing patience, and so—though by force of habit she greeted him with the words she always used when Pierre or Nicholas returned after an absence: “High time, my dear, high time! We were all weary of waiting for you. Well, thank God!” and received her presents with another customary remark: “It’s not the gift that’s precious, my dear, but that you give it to me, an old woman...”—yet it was evident that Countess Rostov was not pleased by Pierre’s arrival at that moment when it diverted her attention from the unfinished game.

Countess Rostov finished her game of patience and only then examined the presents. They consisted of a box for cards, of splendid workmanship, a bright-blue Sèvres tea cup with shepherdesses depicted on it and with a lid, and a gold snuffbox with Count Rostov’s portrait on the lid which Pierre had done by a miniaturist in St. Petersburg. Countess Rostov had long wished for such a box, but as she did not want to cry just then she glanced indifferently at the portrait and gave her attention chiefly to the box for cards.

“Thank you, my dear Pierre, you have cheered me up,” said Countess Rostov as she always did. “But best of all you have brought yourself back—for I never saw anything like it, you ought to give Natasha a scolding! What are we to do with her? She is like a mad woman when you are away. Doesn’t see anything, doesn’t remember anything,” she went on, repeating her usual phrases. “Look, Belóva,” Countess Rostov added to her companion, “see what a box for cards my son has brought us!”

Belóva admired the presents and was delighted with her dress material.

Though Pierre, Natasha, Nicholas, Marya, and Denisov had much to talk about that they could not discuss before Countess Rostov—not that

anything was hidden from her, but because she had dropped so far behind in many things that had they begun to converse in her presence they would have had to answer inopportune questions and to repeat what they had already told her many times: that so-and-so was dead and so-and-so was married, which Countess Rostov would again be unable to remember—yet they sat at tea round the samovar in the drawing room from habit, and Pierre answered Countess Rostov's questions as to whether Baron Vasili had aged and whether Marya Alexéevna had sent greetings and still thought of them, and other matters that interested no one and to which she herself was indifferent.

Conversation of this kind, interesting to no one yet unavoidable, continued all through teatime. All the grown-up members of the family were assembled near the round tea table at which Sonya presided beside the samovar. The children with their tutors and governesses had had tea and their voices were audible from the next room. At tea all sat in their accustomed places: Nicholas beside the stove at a small table where his tea was handed to him; Mílka, the old gray borzoi dog (daughter of the first Mílka), with a quite gray face and large black eyes that seemed more prominent than ever, lay on the armchair beside him; Denisov, whose curly hair, mustache, and whiskers had turned half gray, sat beside Marya with his general's tunic unbuttoned; Pierre sat between Natasha and Countess Rostov. Pierre spoke of what he knew might interest Countess Rostov and that she could understand. Pierre told her of external social events and of the people who had formed the circle of her contemporaries and had once been a real, living, and distinct group, but who were now for the most part scattered about the world and like herself were garnering the last ears of the harvests they had sown in earlier years. But to Countess Rostov, those contemporaries of hers seemed to be the only serious and real society. Natasha saw by Pierre's animation that his visit had been interesting and that he had much to tell them but dare not say it before Countess Rostov.

Denisov, not being a member of the family, did not understand Pierre's caution and being, as a malcontent, much interested in what was occurring in St. Petersburg, kept urging Pierre to tell them about what had happened in the Semënovsk regiment, then about War Minister Arakchéev, and then about the Bible Society. Once or twice Pierre was carried away and began to speak of these things, but Nicholas and Natasha always brought him back to the health of Baron Iván and Marya Alexéevna.

"Well, and all this idiocy—Gossner and Tatáwinova?" Denisov asked. "Is that weally still going on?"

"Going on?" Pierre exclaimed. "Why more than ever! The Bible Society is the whole government now!"

"What is that, *my dear friend*?" asked Countess Rostov, who had finished her tea and evidently needed a pretext for being angry after her meal. "What are you saying about the government? I don't understand."

"Well, you know, *Mother*," Nicholas interposed, knowing how to translate things into his mother's language, "Privy Councilor Golítsyn has founded a society and in consequence has great influence, they say."

"War Minister Arakchéev and Privy Councilor Golítsyn," incautiously remarked Pierre, "are now the whole government! And what a government! They see treason everywhere and are afraid of everything."

"Well, and how is the Tzar to blame? He is a most estimable man. I used to meet him at Marya Antónovna's," said Countess Rostov in an offended tone; and still more offended that they all remained silent, she went on: "Nowadays everyone finds fault. A Gospel Society! Well, and what harm is there in that?" and she rose (everybody else got up too) and with a severe expression sailed back to her table in the sitting room.

The melancholy silence that followed was broken by the sounds of the children's voices and laughter from the next room. Evidently, some jolly excitement was going on there.

"Finished, finished!" little Tasha's gleeful yell rose above them all.

Pierre exchanged glances with Marya and Nicholas (Natasha he never lost sight of) and smiled happily.

“That’s delightful music!” said Pierre.

“It means that the governess has finished Tasha's stocking,” said Marya.

“Oh, I’ll go and see,” said Pierre, jumping up. “You know,” he added, stopping at the door, “why I’m especially fond of that music? It is always the first thing that tells me all is well. When I was driving here today, the nearer I got to the house the more anxious I grew. As I entered the anteroom I heard Tasha’s peals of laughter and that meant that all was well.”

“I know! I know that feeling,” said Nicholas. “But I mustn’t go there—those stockings are to be a surprise for me.”

Pierre went to the children, and the shouting and laughter grew still louder.

“Come,” Pierre’s voice was heard saying, “come here into the middle of the room and at the word of command, ‘One, two,’ and when I say ‘three’... Peter, you stand here, and you, Tasha, in my arms—well now! One, two!...” said Pierre, and a silence followed: “three!” and a rapturously breathless cry of children’s voices filled the room. “Two, two!” they shouted.

This meant two stockings, which by a secret process known only to herself, the governess used to knit at the same time on the same needles, and which, when they were ready, the governess always triumphantly drew, one out of the other, in the children’s presence.

Soon after this, the children came in to say good night. They kissed everyone, the tutors and governesses made their bows, and they went out. Only young Nikolenka and his tutor remained. The tutor Desalles whispered to Nikolenka to come downstairs.

“No, tutor Desalles, I will ask Marya to let me stay,” replied Nikolenka also in a whisper.

“Auntie, please let me stay,” said Nikolenka, going up to Marya.

Nikolenka's face expressed entreaty, agitation, and ecstasy. Marya glanced at Nikolenka and turned to Pierre.

"When you are here, Nikolenka can't tear himself away," Marya said.

"I will bring Nikolenka to you directly, Desalles. Good night!" said Pierre, giving his hand to the Swiss tutor, and Pierre turned to young Nikolenka with a smile. "You and I haven't seen anything of one another yet... Nikolenka is growing to look just like Andrei!" Pierre added, addressing Marya.

"Like my father?" asked Nikolenka, flushing crimson and looking up at Pierre with bright, ecstatic eyes.

Pierre nodded and went on with what he had been saying when the children had interrupted. Marya sat down doing knitting; Natasha did not take her eyes off her husband. Nicholas and Denisov rose, asked for their pipes, smoked, went to fetch more tea from Sonya—who sat weary but resolute at the samovar—and questioned Pierre. The curly-headed, delicate Nikolenka sat with shining eyes unnoticed in a corner, starting every now and then and muttering something to himself, and evidently experiencing a new and powerful emotion as he turned his curly head, with his thin neck exposed by his turn-down collar, toward the place where Pierre sat.

The conversation turned on the contemporary gossip about those in power, in which most people see the chief interest of home politics. Denisov, dissatisfied with the government on account of his own disappointments in the service, heard with pleasure of the things done in St. Petersburg which seemed to him stupid, and made forcible and sharp comments on what Pierre told them.

"One used to have to be a German—now one must dance with Tatáwinova and Madame Kwüdener, and wead Ecka'tshausen and the bwethwen. Oh, they should let that fine fellow Napoleon loose—he'd knock all this nonsense out of them! Fancy giving the command of the Semënov wegiment to a fellow like that Schwa'tz!" Denisov cried.

Nicholas, though free from Denisov's readiness to find fault with everything, also thought that discussion of the government was a very serious and weighty matter, and the fact that *A* had been appointed Minister of This and *B* Governor General of That, and that the Tzar had said so-and-so and this minister so-and-so, seemed to him very important. And so Denisov thought it necessary to take an interest in these things and to question Pierre. The questions put by these two kept the conversation from changing its ordinary character of gossip about the higher government circles.

But Natasha, knowing all Pierre's ways and ideas, saw that Pierre had long been wishing but had been unable to divert the conversation to another channel and express his own deeply felt idea for the sake of which he had gone to St. Petersburg to consult with his new friend Baron Theodore, and she helped him by asking how his affairs with Baron Theodore had gone.

"What was it about?" asked Nicholas.

"Always the same thing," said Pierre, looking round at his listeners. "Everybody sees that things are going so badly that they cannot be allowed to go on so and that it is the duty of all decent men to counteract it as far as they can."

"What can decent men do?" Nicholas inquired, frowning slightly. "What can be done?"

"Why, this..."

"Come into my study," said Nicholas.

Natasha, who had long expected to be fetched to nurse her baby, now heard the nurse calling her and went to the nursery. Marya followed her. The men went into the study and Nikolenka followed them unnoticed by Pierre and sat down at the writing table in a shady corner by the window.

"Well, what would you do?" asked Denisov.

"Always some fantastic schemes," said Nicholas.

“Why this,” began Pierre, not sitting down but pacing the room, sometimes stopping short, gesticulating, and lisping: “the position in St. Petersburg is this: the Tzar does not look into anything. The Tar has abandoned himself altogether to this mysticism” (Pierre could not tolerate mysticism in anyone now). “The Tzar seeks only for peace, and only these people *without faith or law* can give it to him—people who recklessly hack at and strangle everything—Magnitski, War Minister Arakchéev, and *everyone*... You will agree that if you did not look after your estates yourself but only wanted a quiet life, the harsher your steward was the more readily your object might be attained,” Pierre said to Nicholas.

“Well, what does that lead up to?” said Nicholas.

“Well, everything is going to ruin! Robbery in the law courts, and in the army it is nothing but flogging, drilling, and Military Settlements; the people are tortured, and enlightenment is suppressed. All that is young and honest is crushed! Everyone sees that this cannot go on. Everything is strained to such a degree that it will certainly break,” said Pierre (as those who examine the actions of any government have always said since governments began). “I told them just one thing in St. Petersburg.”

“Told whom?”

“Well, you know whom,” said Pierre, with a meaningful glance from under his brows. “Baron Theodore and all those. To encourage culture and philanthropy is all very well of course. The aim is excellent but in the present circumstances something else is needed, something like the Freemasons.”

At that moment Nicholas noticed the presence of his nephew, Nikolenka. Nicholas’s face darkened and he went up to the boy.

“Why are you here?”

“Why? Let Nikolenka be,” said Pierre, taking Nicholas by the arm and continuing. “That is not enough, I told them. Something else like the Freemasons is needed. When you stand expecting the overstrained string to

snap at any moment, when everyone is expecting the inevitable catastrophe, as many as possible must join hands as closely as they can to withstand the general calamity. Everything that is young and strong is being enticed away and depraved. One is lured by women, another by honors, a third by ambition or money, and they go over to that camp. No independent men, such as you or I, are left. What I say is widen the scope of our society, let the *order* be not virtue alone but independence and action as well!”

Nicholas, who had left Nikolenka, irritably pushed up an armchair, sat down in it, and listened to Pierre, coughing discontentedly and frowning more and more.

“But action with what aim?” Nicholas cried. “And what position will this Freemason-like society adopt toward the government?”

“Why, the position of assistants. The Freemason-like society need not be secret if the government allows it. Not merely is it not hostile to government, but it is a society of true conservatives—a society of gentlemen in the full meaning of that word. It is only to prevent some insurrectionist (like Pugachëv during the time of Catherine the Great) or other from killing my children and yours, and War Minister Arakchéev from sending me off to some Military Settlement. We join hands only for the public welfare and the general safety.”

“Yes, but if it’s a secret society it’s, therefore, a hostile and harmful one which can only cause harm.”

“Why? Did the German Tugendbund League of Virtue, that Freemason-like society which saved Europe” (they did not then venture to suggest that Russia had saved Europe) “do any harm? The German Tugendbund is an alliance of virtue: it is love, mutual help... it is what Christ preached on the Cross.”

Natasha, who had come in during the conversation, looked joyfully at Pierre. It was not what he was saying that pleased her—that did not even interest Natasha, for it seemed to her that was all extremely simple and that

she had known it a long time (it seemed so to her because she knew that it sprang from Pierre's whole soul), but it was his animated and enthusiastic appearance that made her glad.

Nikolenka, the boy with the thin neck stretching out from the turn-down collar—whom everyone had forgotten—gazed at Pierre with even greater and more rapturous joy. Every word of Pierre's burned into Nikolenka's heart, and with a nervous movement of his fingers, he unconsciously broke the sealing wax and quill pens his hands came upon on his uncle's table.

"A Freemason-like society is not at all what you suppose, but that is what the German Tugendbund was, and what I am proposing."

"No, my fwiend! The German Tugendbund is all vewy well for the sausage eaters, but I don't understand it and can't even pwonounce it," interposed Denisov in a loud and resolute voice. "I agwee that ewewything here is wotten and howwible, but the *Tugendbund* I don't understand. If we're not satisfied, let us have a *society* of our own. That's all wight. *I'm your man!*"

Pierre smiled, and Natasha began to laugh, but Nicholas knitted his brows still more and began proving to Pierre that there was no prospect of any great change and that all the danger Pierre spoke of existed only in his imagination. Pierre maintained the contrary, and as his mental faculties were greater and more resourceful, Nicholas felt cornered. This made Nicholas still angrier, for he was fully convinced, not by reasoning but by something within him stronger than reason, of the justice of his opinion.

"I will tell you this," Nicholas said, rising and trying with nervously twitching fingers to prop up his pipe in a corner, but finally abandoning the attempt. "I can't prove it to you. You say that everything here is rotten and that an overthrow is coming: I don't see it. But you also say that our oath of allegiance is a conditional matter, and to that, I reply: 'You are my best friend, Pierre, as you know, but if you formed a Freemason-like secret society and began working against the government—be it what it may—I

know it is my duty to obey the government. And if War Minister Arakchéev ordered me to lead a squadron against you and cut you down, I should not hesitate an instant, but should do it.' And you may argue about that as you like!"

An awkward silence followed these words. Natasha was the first to speak, defending Pierre and attacking Nicholas. Natasha's defense was weak and inapt but she attained her object. The conversation was resumed, and no longer in the unpleasantly hostile tone of Nicholas' last remark.

When they all got up to go in to supper, Nikolenka went up to Pierre, pale and with shining, radiant eyes.

"Uncle Pierre, you... no... If my father, Andrei. were alive... would he agree with you?" he asked.

And Pierre suddenly realized what a special, independent, complex, and powerful process of thought and feeling must have been going on in Nikolenka during that conversation, and remembering all he had said, Pierre regretted that Nikolenka should have heard him. Pierre had, however, to give him an answer.

"Yes, I think so," Pierre said reluctantly and left the study.

Nikolenka looked down and seemed now for the first time to notice what he had done to the things on the table. Nikolenka flushed and went up to Nicholas.

"Uncle Nicholas, forgive me, I did that... unintentionally," Nikolenka said, pointing to the broken sealing wax and pens.

Nicholas started angrily.

"All right, all right," Nicholas said, throwing the bits under the table.

And evidently suppressing his vexation with difficulty, Nicholas turned away from Nikolenka.

"You ought not to have been here at all," Nicholas said.

The conversation at supper was not about politics or societies but turned on the subject Nicholas liked best—recollections of 1812. Denisov started

these and Pierre was particularly agreeable and amusing about them. The family separated on the most friendly terms.

After supper Nicholas, having undressed in his study and given instructions to the steward who had been waiting for him, went to the bedroom in his dressing gown, where he found Marya still at her table, writing.

“What are you writing, Marya?” Nicholas asked.

Marya blushed. She was afraid that what she was writing would not be understood or approved by Marya.

Marya had wanted to conceal what she was writing from him, but at the same time was glad Marya had surprised her with it and that she would now have to tell him.

“A diary, Nicholas,” she replied, handing him a blue exercise book filled with her firm, bold writing.

“A diary?” Nicholas repeated with a shade of irony, and he took up the book.

It was in French.

December 4. Today when Andrei (her eldest boy) woke up, he did not wish to dress and Mademoiselle Louise sent for me. Andrei was naughty and obstinate. I tried threats, but he only grew angrier. Then I took the matter in hand: I left him alone and began with the nurse’s help to get the other children up, telling him that I did not love him. For a long time, Andrei was silent, as if astonished, then he jumped out of bed, ran to me in his shirt, and sobbed so that I could not calm him for a long time. It was plain that what troubled Andrei most was that he had grieved me. Afterward in the evening when I gave him his ticket, Andrei again began crying piteously and kissing me. One can do anything with him by tenderness.

“What is a ‘ticket’?” Nicholas inquired.

“I have begun giving the elder children marks every evening, showing how they have behaved.”

Nicholas looked into Marya’s radiant eyes that were gazing at him and continued to turn over the pages and read. In the diary was set down everything in the children’s lives that seemed noteworthy to Marya as showing their characters or suggesting general reflections on educational methods. They were for the most part quite insignificant trifles but they did not seem so to Marya or to Nicholas either, now that he read this diary about his children for the first time.

Under the date “5” was entered:

Mitya was naughty at the table. Papa said he was to have no pudding. He had none, but looked so unhappily and greedily at the others while they were eating! I think that punishment by depriving children of sweets only develops their greediness. Must tell Nicholas this.

Nicholas put down the book and looked at Marya. The radiant eyes gazed at him questioningly: would he approve or disapprove of her diary? There could be no doubt not only of his approval but also of his admiration for Marya.

Perhaps it need not be done so pedantically, thought Nicholas, or even done at all, but this untiring, continual spiritual effort of which the sole aim was the children’s moral welfare delighted him. Had Marya been able to analyze his feelings he would have found that his steady, tender, and proud love of Marya rested on his feeling of wonder at her spirituality and at the lofty moral world, almost beyond his reach, in which she had her being.

Nicholas was proud of Marya’s intelligence and goodness, recognized his own insignificance beside her in the spiritual world, and rejoiced all the more that she with such a soul not only belonged to him but was part of himself.

“I quite, quite approve, my dearest Marya!” said Nicholas with a significant look, and after a short pause, he added: “And I behaved badly today. You weren’t in the study. We began disputing—Pierre and I—and I lost my temper. But Pierre is impossible: such a child! I don’t know what would become of him if Natasha didn’t keep him in hand... Have you any idea why he went to St. Petersburg? They have formed a secret Mason-like society...”

“Yes, I know,” said Marya. “Natasha told me.”

“Well, then, you know,” Nicholas went on, growing hot at the mere recollection of their discussion, “Pierre wanted to convince me that it is every honest man’s duty to go against the government, and that the oath of allegiance and duty... I am sorry you weren’t there. They all fell on me—Denisov and Natasha... Natasha is absurd. How she rules over him! And yet there need only be a discussion and Natasha has no words of her own but only repeats Pierre’s sayings...” added Nicholas, yielding to that irresistible inclination that tempts us to judge those nearest and dearest to us. Nicholas forgot that what he was saying about Natasha could have been applied word for word to himself in relation to Marya.

“Yes, I have noticed that,” said Marya.

“When I told Pierre that duty and the oath were above everything, he started proving goodness knows what! A pity you were not there—what would you have said?”

“As I see it you were quite right, and I told Natasha so. Pierre says everybody is suffering, tortured, and being corrupted, and that it is our duty to help our neighbor. Of course, Pierre is right there,” said Marya, “but he forgets that we have other duties nearer to us, duties indicated to us by God Himself, and that though we might expose ourselves to risks we must not risk our children.”

“Yes, that’s it! That’s just what I said to him,” put in Nicholas, who fancied he really had said it. “But they insisted on their own view: love of

one's neighbor and Christianity—and all this in the presence of young Nikolenka, who had gone into my study and broke all my things.”

“Ah, Nicholas, do you know I am often troubled about Nikolenka,” said Marya. “He is such an exceptional boy. I am afraid I neglect him in favor of my own: we all have children and relations while he has no one. Nikolenka is constantly alone with his thoughts.”

“Well, I don't think you need to reproach yourself on Nikolenka's account. All that the fondest mother could do for her son you have done and are doing for him, and of course, I am glad of it. Nikolenka is a fine lad, a fine lad! This evening he listened to Pierre in a sort of trance, and fancy—as we were going in to supper I looked and he had broken everything on my table to bits, and he told me of it himself at once! I never knew Nikolenka to tell an untruth. A fine lad, a fine lad!” repeated Nicholas, who at heart was not fond of Nikolenka but was always anxious to recognize that he was a fine lad.

“Still, I am not the same as his own mother,” said Marya. “I feel I am not the same and it troubles me. Nikolenka is a wonderful boy, but I am dreadfully afraid for him. It would be good for him to have companions.”

“Well, it won't be for long. Next summer I'll take him to St. Petersburg,” said Nicholas. “Yes, Pierre always was a dreamer and always will be,” Nicholas continued, returning to the talk in the study which had evidently disturbed him. “Well, what business is it of mine what goes on there—whether War Minister Arakchéev is bad, and all that? What business was it of mine when I married and was so deep in debt that I was threatened with prison, and had a mother, Countess Rostov, who could not see or understand it? And then there are you and the children and our affairs. Is it for my own pleasure that I am at the farm or in the office from morning to night? No, but I know I must work to comfort my mother, to repay you, and not to leave the children such beggars as I was.”

Marya wanted to tell him that man does not live by bread alone and that he attached too much importance to these matters. But Marya knew she must not say this and that it would be useless to do so. She only took Nicholas's hand and kissed it. He took this as a sign of approval and a confirmation of his thoughts, and after a few minutes of reflection continued to think aloud.

"You know, Marya, today Elias" (this was his overseer) "came back from the Tambóv estate and told me they are already offering eighty thousand rubles for the forest."

And with an eager face, Nicholas began to speak of the possibility of repurchasing Otrádnœ before long, and added: "Another ten years of life and I shall leave the children... in an excellent position."

Marya listened to Nicholas and understood all that he told her. She knew that when he thought aloud in this way he would sometimes ask her what he had been saying, and be vexed if he noticed that she had been thinking about something else. But Marya had to force herself to attend, for what Nicholas was saying did not interest her at all. Marya looked at him and did not think, but felt, about something different. She felt a submissive tender love for this man who would never understand all that she understood, and this seemed to make her love for him still stronger and added a touch of passionate tenderness. Besides this feeling which absorbed her altogether and hindered her from following the details of Nicholas's plans, thoughts that had no connection with what he was saying flitted through her mind. Marya thought of her nephew, Nicolai. Nicholas's account of Nikolenka's agitation while Pierre was speaking struck her forcibly, and various traits of his gentle, sensitive character recurred to her mind; and while thinking of Nikolenka she thought also of her own children. Marya did not directly compare her children with Nikolenka, but when she compared her feeling for her children with her feeling for

Nikolenka, she felt regret that there was something lacking in her feeling for young Nikolenka.

Sometimes it seemed to Marya that this difference arose from the difference in their ages, but she felt herself to blame toward Nikolenka and promised in her heart to do better and to accomplish the impossible—in this life to love her husband, her children, Nikolenka, and all her neighbors, as Christ loved mankind. Marya's soul always strove toward the infinite, the eternal, and the absolute, and could therefore never be at peace. A stern expression of the lofty, secret suffering of a soul burdened by the body appeared on her face. Nicholas gazed at Marya. "Oh, God! What will become of us if Marya dies, as I always fear when her face is like that?" thought Nicholas, and placing himself before the icon he began to say his evening prayers.

Natasha and Pierre, left alone, also began to talk as only a husband and wife can talk, that is, with extraordinary clearness and rapidity, understanding and expressing each other's thoughts in ways contrary to all rules of logic, without premises, deductions, or conclusions, and in a quite peculiar way. Natasha was so used to this kind of talk with Pierre that for her it was the surest sign of something being wrong between them if Pierre followed a line of logical reasoning. When Pierre began proving anything or talking argumentatively and calmly and Natasha, led on by his example, began to do the same, she knew that they were on the verge of a quarrel.

From the moment they were alone and Natasha came up to Pierre with wide-open happy eyes, and quickly seizing his head pressed it to her bosom, saying: "Now you are all mine, mine! You won't escape!"—from that moment this conversation began, contrary to all the laws of logic and contrary to them because quite different subjects were talked about at one and the same time. This simultaneous discussion of many topics did not prevent a clear understanding but on the contrary, was the surest sign that they fully understood one another.

Just as in a dream when all is uncertain, unreasoning, and contradictory, except the feeling that guides the dream, so in this intercourse contrary to all laws of reason, the words themselves were not consecutive and clear but only the feeling that prompted them.

Natasha spoke to Pierre about Nicholas's life and doings, of how she had suffered and lacked life during Pierre's absence, and of how she was fonder than ever of Marya, and how Marya was in every way better than herself. In saying this, Natasha was sincere in acknowledging Marya's superiority, but at the same time by saying it she made a demand on Pierre that he should, all the same, prefer her to Marya and to all other women, and that now, especially after having seen many women in St. Petersburg, Pierre should tell her so afresh.

Pierre, answering Natasha's words, told her how intolerable it had been for him to meet ladies at dinners and balls in St. Petersburg.

"I have quite lost the knack of talking to ladies," Pierre said. "It was simply dull. Besides, I was very busy."

Natasha looked intently at Pierre and went on:

"Marya is so splendid," Natasha said. "How she understands children! It is as if she saw straight into their souls. Yesterday, for instance, Mitya was naughty..."

"How like his father he is," Pierre interjected.

Natasha knew why he mentioned Mitya's likeness to Nicholas: the recollection of his dispute with his brother-in-law was unpleasant and he wanted to know what Natasha thought of it.

"Nicholas has the weakness of never agreeing with anything not generally accepted. But I understand that you value what opens up a fresh line," said Natasha, repeating words Pierre had once uttered.

"No, the chief point is that to Nicholas ideas and discussions are an amusement—almost a pastime," said Pierre. "For instance, Nicholas is collecting a library and has made it a rule not to buy a new book till he has

read what he had already bought—Sismondi and Rousseau and Montesquieu,” Pierre added with a smile. “You know how much I...” he began to soften down what he had said, but Natasha interrupted him to show that this was unnecessary.

“So you say ideas are an amusement to Nicholas...”

“Yes, and for me nothing else is serious. All the time in St. Petersburg I saw everyone as in a dream. When I am taken up by a thought, all else is mere amusement.”

“Ah, I’m so sorry I wasn’t there when you met the children,” said Natasha. “Which was most delighted? Lisa, I’m sure.”

“Yes,” Pierre replied and went on with what was on his mind. “Nicholas says we ought not to think. But I can’t help it. Besides, when I was in St. Petersburg I felt (I can say this to you) that the whole affair would go to pieces without me—everyone was pulling his own way. But I succeeded in uniting them all, and then my idea is so clear and simple. You see, I don’t say that we ought to oppose this and that. We may be mistaken. What I say is: ‘Join hands, you who love the right, and let there be but one banner—that of active virtue.’ Baron Sergéy is a fine fellow and clever.”

Natasha would have had no doubt as to the greatness of Pierre’s idea, but one thing disconcerted her. “Can a man so important and necessary to society be also my husband? How did this happen?” Natasha wished to express this doubt to him. “Now who could decide whether he is really cleverer than all the others?” Natasha asked herself and passed in review all those whom Pierre most respected. Judging by what he had said there was no one he had respected so highly as Platón.

“Do you know what I am thinking about?” Natasha asked. “About Platón. Would he have approved of you now, do you think?”

Pierre was not at all surprised at this question. He understood Natasha’s line of thought.

“Platón?” Pierre repeated, and pondered, evidently sincerely trying to imagine Platón’s opinion on the subject. “Platón would not have understood... yet perhaps he would.”

“I love you awfully!” Natasha suddenly said. “Awfully, awfully!”

“No, Platón would not have approved,” said Pierre, after reflection. “What Platón would have approved of is our family life. He was always so anxious to find seemliness, happiness, and peace in everything, and I should have been proud to let him see us. There now—you talk of my absence, but you wouldn’t believe what a special feeling I have for you after a separation...”

“Yes, I should think...” Natasha began.

“No, it’s not that. I never leave off loving you. And one couldn’t love more, but this is something special... Yes, of course—” Pierre did not finish because their eyes meeting said the rest.

“What nonsense it is,” Natasha suddenly exclaimed, “about honeymoons, and that the greatest happiness is at first! On the contrary, now is the best of all. If only you did not go away! Do you remember how we quarreled? And it was always my fault. Always mine. And what we quarreled about—I don’t even remember!”

“Always about the same thing,” said Pierre with a smile. “Jealo...”

“Don’t say it! I can’t bear it!” Natasha cried, and her eyes glittered coldly and vindictively. “Did you see her?” she added, after a pause.

“No, and if I had I shouldn’t have recognized her.”

They were silent for a while.

“Oh, do you know? While you were talking in the study I was looking at you,” Natasha began, evidently anxious to disperse the cloud that had come over them. “You are as like him as two peas—like the boy.” (She meant her little son.) “Oh, it’s time to go to him... The milk’s come... But I’m sorry to leave you.”

They were silent for a few seconds. Then suddenly turning to one another at the same time they both began to speak. Pierre began with self-satisfaction and enthusiasm, Natasha with a quiet, happy smile. Having interrupted one another they both stopped to let the other continue.

“No. What did you say? Go on, go on.”

“No, you go on, I was talking nonsense,” said Natasha.

Pierre finished what he had begun. It was the sequel to his complacent reflections on his success in St. Petersburg. At that moment it seemed to Pierre that he was chosen to give a new direction to the whole of Russian society and to the whole world.

“I only wished to say that ideas that have great results are always simple ones. My whole idea is that if vicious people are united and constitute a power, then honest folk must do the same. Now that’s simple enough.”

“Yes.”

“And what were you going to say?”

“I? Only nonsense.”

“But all the same?”

“Oh nothing, only a trifle,” said Natasha, smiling still more brightly. “I only wanted to tell you about Peter: today nurse was coming to take him from me, and he laughed, shut his eyes, and clung to me. I’m sure he thought he was hiding. Awfully sweet! There, now Peter is crying. Well, goodbye!” and Natasha left the room.

Meanwhile downstairs in young Nikolenka’s bedroom, a little lamp was burning as usual. (Nikolenka was afraid of the dark and they could not cure him of it.) The tutor Desalles slept propped up on four pillows and his Roman nose emitted sounds of rhythmic snoring. Nikolenka, who had just waked up in a cold perspiration, sat up in bed and gazed before him with wide-open eyes. He had awakened from a terrible dream. Nikolenka had dreamed that he and Pierre, wearing helmets such as were depicted in his

Plutarch, were leading a huge army. The army was made up of white slanting lines that filled the air like the cobwebs that float about in autumn and which the tutor Desalles called *the sons of the Virgin*. In front was Glory, which was similar to the other slanting lines, but rather thicker. Nikolenka and Pierre were borne along lightly and joyously, nearer and nearer to their goal. Suddenly the threads that moved them began to slacken and become entangled and it grew difficult to move. And Uncle Nicholas stood before them with a stern and threatening attitude.

“Have you done this?” Nicholas said, pointing to some broken sealing wax and pens. “I loved you, but I have orders from War Minister Arakchéev and will kill the first of you who moves forward.” Nikolenka turned to look at Pierre but Pierre was no longer there. In his place was his father—Andrei—and his father had neither shape nor form, but Andrei existed, and when Nikolenka perceived him he grew faint with love: Nikolenka felt powerless, limp, and formless. His father, Andrei, caressed and pitied Nikolenka. But Uncle Nicholas came nearer and nearer to them. Terror seized young Nicholas and he awoke.

“My father!” Nikolenka thought. (Though there were two good portraits of Andrei in the house, Nikolenka never imagined him in human form.) “My father has been with me and caressed me. He approved of me and of Uncle Pierre. Whatever he may tell me, I will do it. The ancient Roman Mucius Scaevola burned his hand to demonstrate his bravery. Why should not the same sort of thing happen to me? I know they want me to learn. And I will learn. But someday I shall have finished learning, and then I will do something. I only pray to God that something may happen to me such as what happened to Plutarch’s men, and I will act as they did. I will do better. Everyone shall know me, love me, and be delighted with me!” And suddenly Nikolenka’s bosom heaved with sobs and he began to cry.

“Are you ill?” Nikolenka heard the tutor Desalles’ voice asking.

“No,” answered Nikolenka, and lay back on his pillow.

“He is good and kind and I am fond of him!” Nikolenka thought of the tutor Desalles. “But Uncle Pierre! Oh, what a wonderful man he is! And my father? Oh, Father, Father! Yes, I will do something with which even *he* would be satisfied...”

SECOND EPILOGUE



*H*istory is the life of nations and of humanity. To seize and put into words, to describe directly the life of humanity or even of a single nation, appears impossible.

The ancient historians all employed one and the same method to describe and seize the apparently elusive—the life of a people. They described the activity of individuals who ruled the people and regarded the activity of those men as representing the activity of the whole nation.

The question: how did individuals make nations act as they wished and by what was the will of these individuals themselves guided? The ancients met by recognizing a divinity that subjected the nations to the will of a chosen man, and guided the will of that chosen man so as to accomplish ends that were predestined.

For the ancients, these questions were solved by a belief in the direct participation of the Deity in human affairs.

Modern history, in theory, rejects both these principles.

It would seem that having rejected the belief of the ancients in man's subjection to the Deity and in a predetermined aim toward which nations are led, modern history should study not the manifestations of power but the causes that produce it. But modern history has not done this. Having in

theory rejected the view held by the ancients, it still follows them in practice.

Instead of men endowed with divine authority and directly guided by the will of God, modern history has given us either heroes endowed with extraordinary, superhuman capacities, or simply men of very various kinds, from monarchs to journalists, who lead the masses. Instead of the former divinely appointed aims of the Jewish, Greek, or Roman nations, which ancient historians regarded as representing the progress of humanity, modern history has postulated its own aims—the welfare of the French, German, or English people, or, in its highest abstraction, the welfare and civilization of humanity in general, by which is usually meant that of the peoples occupying a small northwesterly portion of a large continent.

Modern history has rejected the beliefs of the ancients without replacing them with a new conception, and the logic of the situation has obliged the historians, after they had apparently rejected the divine authority of the kings and the “fate” of the ancients, to reach the same conclusion by another road, that is, to recognize (1) nations guided by individual men, and (2) the existence of a known aim to which these nations and humanity at large are tending.

At the basis of the works of all the modern historians from Gibbon to Buckle, despite their seeming disagreements and the apparent novelty of their outlooks, lie those two old, unavoidable assumptions.

In the first place, the historian describes the activity of individuals who in his opinion have directed humanity (one historian considers only monarchs, generals, and ministers as being such men, while another includes also orators, learned men, reformers, philosophers, and poets). Secondly, it is assumed that the goal toward which humanity is being led is known to the historians: to one of them this goal is the greatness of the Roman, Spanish, or French realm; to another, it is liberty, equality, and a certain kind of civilization of a small corner of the world called Europe.

In 1789 a ferment arises in Paris; it grows, spreads, and is expressed by a movement of peoples from west to east. Several times it moves eastward and collides with a countermovement from the east westward. In 1812 it reaches its extreme limit, Moscow, and then, with remarkable symmetry, a countermovement occurs from east to west, attracting to it, as the first movement had done, the nations of middle Europe. The counter-movement reaches the starting point of the first movement in the west—Paris—and subsides.

During that twenty-year period, an immense number of fields were left untilled, houses were burned, trade changed its direction, millions of men migrated, were impoverished, or were enriched, and millions of Christian men professing the law of love of their fellows slew one another.

What does all this mean? Why did it happen? What made those people burn houses and slay their fellow men? What were the causes of these events? What force made men act so? These are the instinctive, plain, and most legitimate questions humanity asks itself when it encounters the monuments and traditions of that period.

For a reply to these questions, the common sense of mankind turns to the science of history, whose aim is to enable nations and humanity to know themselves.

If history had retained the conception of the ancients it would have said that God, to reward or punish his people, gave Napoleon power and directed his will to the fulfillment of the divine ends, and that reply would have been clear and complete. One might believe or disbelieve in the divine significance of Napoleon, but for anyone believing in it there would have been nothing unintelligible in the history of that period, nor would there have been any contradictions.

But modern history cannot give that reply. Science does not admit the conception of the ancients as to the direct participation of God in human affairs, and therefore history ought to give other answers.

Modern history replying to these questions says: you want to know what this movement means, what caused it, and what force produced these events? Then listen:

“Louis XIV was a very proud and self-confident man; he had such and such mistresses and such and such ministers and he ruled France badly. His descendants were weak men and they too ruled France badly. And they had such and such favorites and such and such mistresses. Moreover, certain men wrote some books at that time. At the end of the eighteenth century, there were a couple of dozen men in Paris who began to talk about all men being free and equal. This caused people all over France to begin to slash at and drown one another. They killed the king and many other people. At that time there was in France a man of genius—Napoleon. He conquered everybody everywhere—that is, he killed many people because he was a great genius. And for some reason, Napoleon went to kill Africans, and killed them so well and was so cunning and wise that when he returned to France, Napoleon ordered everybody to obey him, and they all obeyed him. Having become an Emperor, Napoleon again went out to kill people in Italy, Austria, and Prussia. And there too he killed a great many. In Russia, there was a Tzar who decided to restore order in Europe and therefore fought against Napoleon. In 1807 the Tzar suddenly made friends with Napoleon, but in 1811 they again quarreled and again began killing many people. Napoleon led six hundred thousand men into Russia and captured Moscow; then Napoleon suddenly ran away from Moscow, and the Tzar, helped by the advice of Stein and others, united Europe to arm against the disturber of its peace. All of Napoleon’s allies suddenly became his enemies and their forces advanced against the fresh forces he raised. The Allies defeated Napoleon, entered Paris, forced Napoleon to abdicate, and sent him to the island of Elba, not depriving Napoleon of the title of Emperor, but rather, showing him every respect, though five years before and one year later they all regarded him as an outlaw and a brigand. Then Louis

XVIII, who till then had been the laughingstock both of the French and the Allies, began to reign. And Napoleon, shedding tears before his Old Guards, renounced the throne and went into exile at Elba. Then the skillful statesmen and diplomatists (especially Talleyrand, who managed to sit down in a particular chair before anyone else and thereby extended the frontiers of France) talked in Vienna, and by these conversations made the nations happy or unhappy. Suddenly the diplomatists and monarchs nearly quarreled and were on the point of again ordering their armies to kill one another, but just then Napoleon arrived back in France with a battalion, and the French, who had been hating him, immediately all submitted to him. But the Allied monarchs were angry at this and went to fight the French once more. And the Allied monarchs defeated the genius Napoleon and, suddenly recognizing him as a brigand, exiled him again, but this time, to the more secure island of St. Helena. And Napoleon, separated from the beloved France so dear to his heart, died a lingering death on St. Helena and bequeathed his great deeds to posterity. But in Europe, a reaction occurred and the sovereigns once again all began to oppress their subjects.”

It would be a mistake to think that this is ironic—a caricature of the historical accounts. On the contrary, it is a very mild expression of the contradictory replies, not meeting the questions, that *all* the historians give, from the compilers of memoirs and the histories of separate states to the writers of general histories and the new histories of the *culture* of that period.

The strangeness and absurdity of these replies arise from the fact that modern history, like a deaf man, answers questions no one has asked.

If the purpose of history is to give a description of the movement of humanity and of the peoples, the first question—in the absence of a reply to which all the rest will be incomprehensible—is: what is the power that moves peoples? To this, modern history laboriously replies either that

Napoleon was a great genius, or that Louis XIV was very proud, or that certain writers wrote certain books.

All that may be so and mankind is ready to agree with it, but it is not what was asked. All *that* would be interesting if we recognized a divine power based on itself and always consistently directing its nations through Napoleons, Louis-es, and writers; but we do not acknowledge such a power, and therefore before speaking about Napoleons, Louis-es, and authors, we ought to be shown the connection existing between these men and the movement of the nations.

If instead of a divine power some other force has appeared, it should be explained in what this new force consists, for the whole interest of history lies precisely in that force.

History seems to assume that this force is self-evident and known to everyone. But in spite of every desire to regard it as known, anyone reading many historical works cannot help doubting whether this new force, so variously understood by the historians themselves, is really quite well known to everybody.

What force moves the nations?

Biographical historians and historians of separate nations understand this force as a power inherent in heroes and rulers. In their narration, events occur solely by the will of Napoleon, or the Tzar, or in general of the persons they describe. The answers given by this kind of historian to the question of what force causes events to happen are satisfactory only as long as there is but one historian to each event. As soon as historians of different nationalities and tendencies begin to describe the same event, the replies they give immediately lose all meaning, for this force is understood by them all not only differently but often in quite contradictory ways. One historian says that an event was produced by Napoleon's power, another that it was produced by the Tzar's, and a third that it was due to the power of some other person. Besides this, historians of that kind contradict each other even

in their statement as to the force on which the authority of some particular person was based. The historian Thiers, a fan of Napoleon, says that Napoleon's power was based on his virtue and genius. Lanfrey, a Republican, says it was based on his trickery and deception of the people. So the historians of this class, by mutually destroying one another's positions, destroy the understanding of the force which produces events, and furnish no reply to history's essential question.

Writers of universal history who deal with all the nations seem to recognize how erroneous is the specialist historians' view of the force which produces events. Writers of universal history do not recognize force as a power inherent in heroes and rulers but as the result of a multiplicity of variously directed forces. In describing a war or the subjugation of a people, a general historian looks for the cause of the event not in the power of one man, but in the interaction of many persons connected with the event.

According to this view, the power of historical personages, represented as the product of many forces, can no longer, it would seem, be regarded as a force that itself produces events. Yet in most cases, universal historians still employ the conception of power as a force that itself produces events and treat it as their cause. In their exposition, an historic character is first the product of his time, and his power is only the result of various forces, and then his power is itself a force producing events. Gervinus, Schlosser, and others, for instance, at one time prove Napoleon to be a product of the Revolution, of the ideas of 1789, and so forth, and at another plainly say that the campaign of 1812 and other things they do not like were simply the product of Napoleon's misdirected will, and that the very ideas of 1789 were arrested in their development by Napoleon's caprice. The ideas of the Revolution and the temper of the age produced Napoleon's power. But Napoleon's power suppressed the ideas of the Revolution and the temper of the age.

This curious contradiction is not accidental. Not only does it occur at every step, but the universal historians' accounts are all made up of a chain of such contradictions. This contradiction occurs because after entering the field of analysis the universal historians stop halfway.

To find component forces equal to the composite or resultant force, the sum of the components must equal the resultant. This condition is never observed by the universal historians, and so to explain the resultant forces they are obliged to admit, in addition to the insufficient components, another unexplained force affecting the resultant action.

Specialist historians describing the campaign of 1813 or the restoration of the Bourbons plainly assert that these events were produced by the will of Napoleon. But the universal historian Gervinus, refuting this opinion of the specialist historian, tries to prove that the campaign of 1813 and the restoration of the Bourbons were due to other things besides Napoleon's will—such as the activity of Stein, Metternich, Madame de Staël, Talleyrand, Fichte, Chateaubriand, and others. The historian evidently decomposes Napoleon's power into the components: Talleyrand, Chateaubriand, and the rest—but the sum of the components, that is, the interactions of Chateaubriand, Talleyrand, Madame de Staël, and the others, evidently does not equal the resultant, namely the phenomenon of millions of Frenchmen submitting to the Bourbons. That Chateaubriand, Madame de Staël, and others spoke certain words to one another only affected their mutual relations but does not account for the submission of millions. And therefore to explain how from these relations of theirs the submission of millions of people resulted—that is, how component forces equal to one A gave a resultant equal to a thousand times A —the historian is again obliged to fall back on power—the force he had denied—and to recognize it as the resultant of the forces, that is, he has to admit an unexplained force acting on the resultant. And that is just what the universal historians do, and

consequently, they not only contradict the specialist historians but contradict themselves.

Peasants have no clear idea of the cause of rain, say, according to whether they want rain or fine weather: “The wind has blown the clouds away,” or, “The wind has brought up the clouds.” And in the same way, the universal historians sometimes, when it pleases them and fits in with their theory, say that power is the result of events, and sometimes, when they want to prove something else, say that power produces events.

A third class of historians—the so-called historians of culture—following the path laid down by the universal historians who sometimes accept writers and ladies as forces producing events—again take that force to be something quite different. They see it in what is called culture—in mental activity.

The historians of culture are quite consistent in regard to their progenitors, the writers of universal histories, for if historical events may be explained by the fact that certain persons treated one another in such and such ways, why not explain them by the fact that such and such people wrote such and such books? Of the immense number of indications accompanying every vital phenomenon, these historians select the indication of intellectual activity and say that this indication is the cause. But despite their endeavors to prove that the cause of events lies in intellectual activity, only by a great stretch can one admit that there is any connection between intellectual activity and the movement of peoples, and in no case can one admit that intellectual activity controls people’s actions, for that view is not confirmed by such facts as the very cruel murders of the French Revolution resulting from the doctrine of the equality of man, or the very cruel wars and executions resulting from the preaching of love.

But even admitting as correct all the cunningly devised arguments with which these histories are filled—admitting that nations are governed by some undefined force called an *idea*—history’s essential question still

remains unanswered, and to the former power of monarchs and to the influence of advisers and other people introduced by the universal historians, another, newer force—the *idea*—is added, the connection of which with the masses needs explanation. It is possible to understand that Napoleon had power and so events occurred; with some effort, one may even conceive that Napoleon together with other influences was the cause of an event; but how a book, *The Social Contract*, had the effect of making Frenchmen begin to drown one another cannot be understood without an explanation of the causal nexus of this new force with the event.

Undoubtedly some relation exists between all who live contemporaneously, and so it is possible to find some connection between the intellectual activity of men and their historical movements, just as such a connection may be found between the movements of humanity and commerce, handicraft, gardening, or anything else you please. But why intellectual activity is considered by the historians of culture to be the cause or expression of the whole historical movement is hard to understand. Only the following considerations can have led the historians to such a conclusion: (1) that history is written by learned men, and so it is natural and agreeable for them to think that the activity of their class supplies the basis of the movement of all humanity, just as a similar belief is natural and agreeable to traders, agriculturists, and soldiers (if they do not express it, that is merely because traders and soldiers do not write history), and (2) that spiritual activity, enlightenment, civilization, culture, ideas, are all indistinct, indefinite conceptions under whose banner it is very easy to use words having a still less definite meaning, and which can therefore be readily introduced into any theory.

But not to speak of the intrinsic quality of histories of this kind (which may possibly even be of use to someone for something) the histories of culture, to which all general histories tend more and more to approximate, are significant from the fact that after seriously and minutely examining

various religious, philosophic, and political doctrines as causes of events, as soon as they have to describe an actual historic event such as the campaign of 1812 for instance, they involuntarily describe it as resulting from an exercise of power—and say plainly that that was the result of Napoleon’s will. Speaking so, the historians of culture involuntarily contradict themselves and show that the new force they have devised does not account for what happens in history, and that history can only be explained by introducing a power that they apparently do not recognize.

A locomotive is moving. Someone asks: “What moves it?” A peasant says the devil moves it. Another man says the locomotive moves because its wheels go around. A third asserts that the cause of its movement lies in the smoke that the wind carries away.

The peasant is irrefutable. He has devised a complete explanation. To refute the peasant someone would have to prove to him that there is no devil, or another peasant would have to explain to him that it is not the devil but a German, who moves the locomotive. Only then, as a result of the contradiction, will they see that they are both wrong. But the man who says that the movement of the wheels is the cause refutes himself, for having once begun to analyze he ought to go on and explain further why the wheels go round; and till he has reached the ultimate cause of the movement of the locomotive in the pressure of steam in the boiler, he has no right to stop in his search for the cause. The man who explains the movement of the locomotive by the smoke that is carried back has noticed that the wheels do not supply an explanation and has taken the first sign that occurs to him and in his turn has offered that as an explanation.

The only conception that can explain the movement of the locomotive is that of a force commensurate with the movement observed.

The only conception that can explain the movement of the peoples is that of some force commensurate with the whole movement of the peoples.

Yet to supply this conception various historians take forces of different kinds, all of which are incommensurate with the movement observed. Some see it as a force directly inherent in heroes, as the peasant sees the devil in the locomotive; others as a force resulting from several other forces, like the movement of the wheels; others again as an intellectual influence, like the smoke that is blown away.

So long as histories are written of separate individuals, whether Caesars, the Tzars, Luthers, or Voltaires, and not the histories of *all*, absolutely *all* those who take part in an event, it is quite impossible to describe the movement of humanity without the conception of a force compelling men to direct their activity toward a certain end. And the only such conception known to historians is that of power.

This conception is the one handle by means of which the material of history, as at present expounded, can be dealt with, and anyone who breaks that handle off, as Buckle did, without finding some other method of treating historical material, merely deprives himself of the one possible way of dealing with it. The necessity of the conception of power as an explanation of historical events is best demonstrated by the universal historians and historians of culture themselves, for they professedly reject that conception but inevitably have recourse to it at every step.

In dealing with humanity's inquiry, the science of history up to now is like money in circulation—paper money and coin. Biographies and special national histories are like paper money. They can be used and can circulate and fulfill their purpose without harm to anyone and even advantageously, as long as no one asks what is the security behind them. You need only forget to ask how the will of heroes produces events, and such histories as the historian Thiers' will be interesting and instructive and may perhaps even possess a tinge of poetry. But just as doubts of the real value of paper money arise either because, being easy to make, too much of it gets made or because people try to exchange it for gold, so also doubts concerning the

real value of such histories arise either because too many of them are written or because in his simplicity of heart someone inquires: by what force did Napoleon do this?—that is, wants to exchange the current paper money for the real gold of actual comprehension.

The writers of universal histories and of the history of culture are like people who, recognizing the defects of paper money, decide to substitute for it money made of metal that has not the specific gravity of gold. It may indeed make jingling coin but will do no more than that. Paper money may deceive the ignorant, but nobody is deceived by tokens of base metal that have no value but merely jingle. As gold is gold only if it is serviceable not merely for exchange but also for use, so universal historians will be valuable only when they can reply to history's essential question: what is power? The universal historians give contradictory replies to that question, while the historians of culture evade it and answer something quite different. And as counters of imitation gold can be used only among a group of people who agree to accept them as gold, or among those who do not know the nature of gold, so universal historians and historians of culture, not answering humanity's essential question, serve as currency for some purposes of their own, only in universities and among the mass of readers who have a taste for what they call "serious reading."

Having abandoned the conception of the ancients as to the divine subjection of the will of a nation to some chosen man and the subjection of that man's will to the Deity, history cannot without contradictions take a single step till it has chosen one of two things: either a return to the former belief in the direct intervention of the Deity in human affairs or a definite explanation of the meaning of the force producing historical events and termed "power."

A return to the first is impossible, the belief has been destroyed, and so it is essential to explain what is meant by power.

Napoleon ordered an army to be raised and go to war. We are so accustomed to that idea and have become so used to it that the question: why did six hundred thousand men go to fight when Napoleon uttered certain words, seems to us senseless. Napoleon had the power and so what he ordered was done.

This reply is quite satisfactory if we believe that the power was given to him by God. But as soon as we do not admit that, it becomes essential to determine what is this power of one man over others.

It cannot be the direct physical power of a strong man over a weak one—a domination based on the application or threat of physical force, like the power of Hercules; nor can it be based on the effect of moral force, as in their simplicity some historians think who say that the leading figures in history are heroes, that is, men gifted with a special strength of soul and mind called genius. This power cannot be based on the predominance of moral strength, for, not to mention heroes such as Napoleon about whose moral qualities opinions differ widely, history shows us that neither a Louis XI nor a Metternich, who ruled over millions of people, had any particular moral qualities, but on the contrary were generally morally weaker than any of the millions they ruled over.

If the source of power lies neither in the physical nor in the moral qualities of him who possesses it, it must evidently be looked for elsewhere—in the relation to the people of the man who wields the power.

And that is how power is understood by the science of jurisprudence, that exchange bank of history which offers to exchange history's understanding of power for true gold.

Power is the collective will of the people transferred, by expressed or tacit consent, to their chosen rulers.

In the domain of jurisprudence, which consists of discussions of how a state and power might be arranged were it possible for all that to be

arranged, it is all very clear; but when applied to history that definition of power needs explanation.

The science of jurisprudence regards the state and power as the ancients regarded fire—namely, as something existing absolutely. But for history, the state and power are merely phenomena, just as for modern physics fire is not an element but a phenomenon.

From this fundamental difference between the view held by history and that held by jurisprudence, it follows that jurisprudence can tell minutely how in its opinion power should be constituted and what power—existing immutably outside time—is, but to history's questions about the meaning of the mutations of power in time, it can answer nothing.

If power is the collective will of the people transferred to their ruler, was Pugachëv a representative of the will of the people? If not, then why was Napoleon? Why was Napoleon's nephew, Napoleon III, a criminal when he was taken prisoner at Boulogne, and why, later on, were those criminals whom he arrested?

Do palace revolutions—in which sometimes only two or three people take part—transfer the will of the people to a new ruler? In international relations, is the will of the people also transferred to their conqueror? Was the will of the Confederation of the Rhine transferred to Napoleon in 1806? Was the will of the Russian people transferred to Napoleon in 1809, when our army in alliance with the French went to fight the Austrians?

To these questions three answers are possible:

Either to assume (1) that the will of the people is always unconditionally transferred to the ruler or rulers they have chosen, and that therefore every emergence of a new power, every struggle against the power once appointed, should be absolutely regarded as an infringement of the real power; or (2) that the will of the people is transferred to the rulers conditionally, under definite and known conditions, and to show that all limitations, conflicts, and even destructions of power result from a

nonobservance by the rulers of the conditions under which their power was entrusted to them; or (3) that the will of the people is delegated to the rulers conditionally, but that the conditions are unknown and indefinite, and that the appearance of several authorities, their struggles and their falls, result solely from the greater or lesser fulfillment by the rulers of these unknown conditions on which the will of the people is transferred from some people to others.

And these are the three ways in which historians do explain the relationship of the people to their rulers.

Some historians—those biographical and specialist historians already referred to—in their simplicity failing to understand the question of the meaning of power, seem to consider that the collective will of the people is unconditionally transferred to historical persons, and therefore when describing some single state they assume that particular power to be the one absolute and real power, and that any other force opposing this is not a power but a violation of power—mere violence.

Their theory, suitable for primitive and peaceful periods of history, has the inconvenience—in application to complex and stormy periods in the life of nations during which various powers arise simultaneously and struggle with one another—that a Legitimist historian will prove that the National Convention, the Directory, and Napoleon were mere infringers of the true power, while a Republican and a supporter of Napoleon will prove: the one that the Convention and the other that the Empire was the real power, and that all the others were violations of power. Evidently, the explanations furnished by these historians being mutually contradictory can only satisfy young children.

Recognizing the falsity of this view of history, another set of historians say that power rests on a conditional delegation of the will of the people to their rulers, and that historical leaders have power only conditionally on carrying out the program that the will of the people has by tacit agreement

prescribed to them. But what this program consists of these historians do not say, or if they do they continually contradict one another.

Each historian, according to his view of what constitutes a nation's progress, looks for these conditions in the greatness, wealth, freedom, or enlightenment of citizens of France or some other country. But not to mention the historians' contradictions as to the nature of this program—or even admitting that one general program of these conditions exists—the facts of history almost always contradict that theory. If the conditions under which power is entrusted consist of the wealth, freedom, and enlightenment of the people, how is it that Louis XIV and Iván the Terrible end their reigns tranquilly, while Louis XVI and Charles I are executed by their people? To this question, historians reply that Louis XIV's activity, contrary to the program, reacted to Louis XVI. But why did it not react on Louis XIV or on Louis XV—why should it react just on Louis XVI? And what is the time limit for such reactions? To these questions, there are and can be no answers. Equally little does this view explain why for several centuries the collective will is not withdrawn from certain rulers and their heirs, and then suddenly during a period of fifty years is transferred to the Convention, to the Directory, to Napoleon, to Louis XVIII, to Napoleon again, to Charles X, to Louis Philippe, to a Republican government, and to Napoleon's nephew, Napoleon III. When explaining these rapid transfers of the people's will from one individual to another, especially in view of international relations, conquests, and alliances, historians are obliged to admit that some of these transfers are not normal delegations of the people's will but are accidents dependent on cunning, on mistakes, on craft, or on the weakness of a diplomatist, a ruler, or a party leader. So that the greater part of the events of history—civil wars, revolutions, and conquests—are presented by these historians not as the results of free transferences of the people's will, but as results of the ill-directed will of one or more individuals, that is, once

again, as usurpations of power. And so these historians also see and admit historical events which are exceptions to the theory.

These historians resemble a botanist who, having noticed that some plants grow from seeds producing two cotyledons, should insist that all that grows does so by sprouting into two leaves, and that the palm, the mushroom, and even the oak, which blossom into full growth and no longer resemble two leaves, are deviations from the theory.

Historians of the third class assume that the will of the people is transferred to historic personages conditionally, but that the conditions are unknown to us. They say that historical personages have power only because they fulfill the will of the people which has been delegated to them.

But in that case, if the force that moves nations lies not in the historic leaders but in the nations themselves, what significance have those leaders?

The leaders, these historians tell us, express the will of the people: the activity of the leaders represents the activity of the people.

But in that case, the question arises whether all the activity of the leaders serves as an expression of the people's will or only some part of it. If the whole activity of the leaders serves as the expression of the people's will, as some historians suppose, then all the details of the court scandals contained in the biographies of a Napoleon or a Catherine the Great serve to express the life of the nation, which is evident nonsense; but if it is only some particular side of the activity of a historical leader which serves to express the people's life, as other so-called "philosophical" historians believe, then to determine which side of the activity of a leader expresses the nation's life, we have first of all to know in what the nation's life consists.

Met by this difficulty historians of that class devise some most obscure, impalpable, and general abstraction which can cover all conceivable occurrences, and declare this abstraction to be the aim of humanity's movement. The most usual generalizations adopted by almost all historians

are freedom, equality, enlightenment, progress, civilization, and culture. Postulating some generalization as the goal of the movement of humanity, the historians study the men of whom the greatest number of monuments have remained: kings, ministers, generals, authors, reformers, popes, and journalists, to the extent to which in their opinion these persons have promoted or hindered that abstraction. But as it is in no way proved that the aim of humanity does consist in freedom, equality, enlightenment, or civilization, and as the connection of the people with the rulers and enlighteners of humanity is only based on the arbitrary assumption that the collective will of the people is always transferred to the men whom we have noticed, it happens that the activity of the millions who migrate, burn houses, abandon agriculture, and destroy one another never is expressed in the account of the activity of some dozen people who did not burn houses, practice agriculture, or slay their fellow creatures.

History proves this at every turn. Is the ferment of the peoples of the west at the end of the eighteenth century and their drive eastward explained by the activity of Louis XIV, XV, and XVI, their mistresses and ministers, and by the lives of Napoleon, Rousseau, Diderot, Beaumarchais, and others?

Is the movement of the Russian people eastward to Kazán and Siberia expressed by details of the morbid character of Iván the Terrible and by his correspondence with Kúrbiski?

Is the movement of the peoples at the time of the Crusades explained by the life and activity of the Godfreys and the Louis-es and their ladies? For us, that movement of the peoples from west to east, without leaders, with a crowd of vagrants, and with Peter the Hermit, remains incomprehensible. And yet more incomprehensible is the cessation of that movement when a rational and sacred aim for the Crusade—the deliverance of Jerusalem—had been clearly defined by historic leaders. Popes, kings, and knights incited the peoples to free the Holy Land; but the people did not go, for the

unknown cause which had previously impelled them to go no longer existed. The history of the Godfreys and the Minnesingers can evidently not cover the life of the peoples. And the history of the Godfreys and the Minnesingers has remained the history of Godfreys and Minnesingers, but the history of the life of the peoples and their impulses has remained unknown.

Still less does the history of authors and reformers explain to us the life of the peoples.

The history of culture explains to us the impulses and conditions of life and the thoughts of a writer or a reformer. We learn that Luther had a hot temper and said such and such things; we learn that Rousseau was suspicious and wrote such and such books; but we do not learn why after the Reformation the peoples massacred one another, nor why during the French Revolution they guillotined one another.

If we unite both these kinds of history, as is done by the newest historians, we shall have the history of monarchs and writers, but not the history of the life of the peoples.

The life of the nations is not contained in the lives of a few men, for the connection between those men and the nations has not been found. The theory that this connection is based on the transference of the collective will of a people to certain historical personages is a hypothesis unconfirmed by the experience of history.

The theory of the transference of the collective will of the people to historic persons may perhaps explain much in the domain of jurisprudence and be essential for its purposes, but in its application to history, as soon as revolutions, conquests, or civil wars occur—that is, as soon as history begins—that theory explains nothing.

The theory seems irrefutable just because the act of transference of the people's will cannot be verified, for it never occurred.

Whatever happens and whoever may stand at the head of affairs, the theory can always say that such and such a person took the lead because the collective will was transferred to him.

The replies this theory gives to historical questions are like the replies of a man who, watching the movements of a herd of cattle and paying no attention to the varying quality of the pasturage in different parts of the field, or to the driving of the herdsman, should attribute the direction the herd takes to what animal happens to be at its head.

“The herd goes in that direction because the animal in front leads it and the collective will of all the other animals is vested in that leader.” This is what historians of the first class say—those who assume the unconditional transference of the people’s will.

“If the animals leading the herd change, this happens because the collective will of all the animals is transferred from one leader to another, according to whether the animal is or is not leading them in the direction selected by the whole herd.” Such is the reply of historians who assume that the collective will of the people is delegated to rulers under conditions that they regard as known. (With this method of observation it often happens that the observer, influenced by the direction he himself prefers, regards those as leaders who, owing to the people’s change of direction, are no longer in front, but on one side, or even in the rear.)

“If the animals in front are continually changing and the direction of the whole herd is constantly altered, this is because in order to follow a given direction the animals transfer their will to the animals that have attracted our attention, and to study the movements of the herd we must watch the movements of all the prominent animals moving on all sides of the herd.” So say the third class of historians who regard all historical persons, from monarchs to journalists, as the expression of their age.

The theory of the transference of the will of the people to historic persons is merely a paraphrase—a restatement of the question in other

words.

What causes historical events? Power. What is power? Power is the collective will of the people transferred to one person. Under what condition is the will of the people delegated to one person? On condition that that person expresses the will of the whole people. That is, power is power: in other words, power is a word the meaning of which we do not understand.

If the realm of human knowledge were confined to abstract reasoning, then having subjected to criticism the explanation of “power” that juridical science gives us, humanity would conclude that power is merely a word and has no real existence. But to understand phenomena man has, besides abstract reasoning, experience by which he verifies his reflections. And experience tells us that power is not merely a word but an actually existing phenomenon.

Not to speak of the fact that no description of the collective activity of men can do without the conception of power, the existence of power is proved both by history and by observing contemporary events.

Whenever an event occurs a man appears or men appear, by whose will the event seems to have taken place. Napoleon’s nephew, Napoleon III, issues a decree and the French go to Mexico. The King of Prussia and Bismarck issue decrees and an army enters Bohemia. Napoleon I issues a decree and an army enters Russia. The Tzar gives a command and the French submit to the Bourbons. Experience shows us that whatever event occurs it is always related to the will of one or of several men who have decreed it.

The historians, in accord with the old habit of acknowledging divine intervention in human affairs, want to see the cause of events in the expression of the will of someone endowed with power, but that supposition is not confirmed either by reason or by experience.

On the one side reflection shows that the expression of a man's will—his words—are only part of the general activity expressed in an event, as for instance in a war or a revolution, and so without assuming an incomprehensible, supernatural force—a miracle—one cannot admit that words can be the immediate cause of the movements of millions of men. On the other hand, even if we admitted that words could be the cause of events, history shows that the expression of the will of historical personages does not in most cases produce any effect, that is to say, their commands are often not executed, and sometimes the very opposite of what they order occurs.

Without admitting divine intervention in the affairs of humanity we cannot regard “power” as the cause of events.

Power, from the standpoint of experience, is merely the relation that exists between the expression of someone's will and the execution of that will by others.

To explain the conditions of that relationship we must first establish a conception of the expression of will, referring it to man and not to God.

If God issues a command and expresses His will, as ancient history tells us, the expression of that will is independent of time and is not caused by anything, for the Divinity is not controlled by an event. But speaking of commands that are the expression of the will of men acting in time and in relation to one another, to explain the connection of commands with events we must restore: (1) the condition of all that takes place: the continuity of movement in time both of the events and of the person who commands, and (2) the inevitability of the connection between the person commanding and those who execute his command.

Only the expression of the will of God, not dependent on time, can relate to a whole series of events occurring over a period of years or centuries, and only the Deity, independent of everything, can by His sole

will determine the direction of humanity's movement; but man acts in time and himself takes part in what occurs.

Reinstating the first condition omitted, that of time, we see that no command can be executed without some preceding order having been given rendering the execution of the last command possible.

No command ever appears spontaneously, or itself covers a whole series of occurrences, but each command follows from another, and never refers to a whole series of events but always to one moment only of an event.

When, for instance, we say that Napoleon ordered armies to go to war, we combine in one simultaneous expression a whole series of consecutive commands dependent one on another. Napoleon could not have commanded an invasion of Russia and never did so. Today he ordered such and such papers to be written to Vienna, to Berlin, and to St. Petersburg; tomorrow such and such decrees and orders to the army, the fleet, the commissariat, and so on and so on—millions of commands, which formed a whole series corresponding to a series of events which brought the French armies into Russia.

If throughout his reign Napoleon gave commands concerning an invasion of England and expended on no other undertaking so much time and effort, and yet during his whole reign never once attempted to execute that design but undertook an expedition into Russia, with which country he considered it desirable to be in alliance (a conviction he repeatedly expressed)—this came about because his commands did not correspond to the course of events in the first case, but did so correspond in the latter.

For an order to be certainly executed, it is necessary that a man should order what can be executed. But to know what can and what cannot be executed is impossible, not only in the case of Napoleon's invasion of Russia in which millions participated, but even in the simplest event, for in either case millions of obstacles may arise to prevent its execution. Every order executed is always one of an immense number unexecuted. All the

impossible orders inconsistent with the course of events remain unexecuted. Only the possible ones get linked up with a consecutive series of commands corresponding to a series of events, and are executed.

Our false conception that an event is caused by a command which precedes it is due to the fact that when the event has taken place and out of thousands of others those few commands which were consistent with that event have been executed, we forget about the others that were not executed because they could not be. Apart from that, the chief source of our error in this matter is due to the fact that in the historical accounts a whole series of innumerable, diverse, and petty events, such for instance as all those which led the French armies to Russia, is generalized into one event in accord with the result produced by that series of events, and corresponding with this generalization the whole series of commands is also generalized into a single expression of will.

We say that Napoleon wished to invade Russia and invaded it. In reality in all Napoleon's activity we never find anything resembling an expression of that wish, but find a series of orders, or expressions of his will, very variously and indefinitely directed. Amid a long series of unexecuted orders of Napoleon's, one series, for the campaign of 1812, was carried out—not because those orders differed in any way from the other, unexecuted orders but because they coincided with the course of events that led the French army into Russia; just as in stencil work this or that figure comes out not because the color was laid on from this side or in that way, but because it was laid on from all sides over the figure cut in the stencil.

So that examining the relation in time of the commands to the events, we find that a command can never be the cause of the event, but that a certain definite dependence exists between the two.

To understand what this dependence consists it is necessary to reinstate another omitted condition of every command proceeding not from the Deity

but from a man, which is, that the man who gives the command himself takes part in the event.

This relation of the commander to those he commands is just what is called power. This relation consists of the following:

For common action, people always unite in certain combinations, in which regardless of the difference of the aims set for the common action, the relation between those taking part in it is always the same.

Men uniting in these combinations always assume such relations toward one another that the larger number take a more direct share, and the smaller number a less direct share, in the collective action for which they have combined.

Of all the combinations in which men unite for collective action one of the most striking and definite examples is an army.

Every army is composed of lower grades of the service—the rank and file—of whom there are always the greatest number; of the next higher military rank—corporals and noncommissioned officers of whom there are fewer, and of still-higher officers of whom there are still fewer, and so on to the highest military command which is concentrated in one person.

A military organization may be quite correctly compared to a cone, of which the base with the largest diameter consists of the rank and file; the next higher and smaller section of the cone consists of the next higher grades of the army, and so on to the apex, the point of which will represent the Marshal.

The soldiers, of whom there are the most, form the lower section of the cone and its base. The soldier himself does the stabbing, hacking, burning, and pillaging, and always receives orders for these actions from men above him; he himself never gives an order. The noncommissioned officers (of whom there are fewer) perform the action itself less frequently than the soldiers, but they already give commands. An officer still less often acts directly himself, but commands still more frequently. A general does

nothing but command the troops, indicates the objective, and hardly ever uses a weapon himself. The Marshal never takes a direct part in the action itself, but only gives general orders concerning the movement of the mass of the troops. A similar relationship of people to one another is seen in every combination of men for common activity—in agriculture, trade, and every administration.

And so without particularly analyzing all the contiguous sections of a cone and of the ranks of an army, or the ranks and positions in any administrative or public business whatever from the lowest to the highest, we see a law by which men, to take associated action, combine in such relations that the more directly they participate in performing the action the less they can command and the more numerous they are, while the less their direct participation in the action itself, the more they command and the fewer of them there are; rising in this way from the lowest ranks to the man at the top, who takes the least direct share in the action and directs his activity chiefly to commanding.

This relation of the men who command to those they command is what constitutes the essence of the conception called power.

Having restored the condition of time under which all events occur, we find that a command is executed only when it is related to a corresponding series of events. Restoring the essential condition of relation between those who command and those who execute, we find that by the very nature of the case those who command take the smallest part in the action itself and that their activity is exclusively directed to commanding.

When an event is taking place people express their opinions and wishes about it, and as the event results from the collective activity of many people, some one of the opinions or wishes expressed is sure to be fulfilled if but approximately. When one of the opinions expressed is fulfilled, that opinion gets connected with the event as a command preceding it.

Men are hauling a log. Each of them expresses his opinion as to how and where to haul it. They haul the log away, and it happens that this is done as one of them said. He *ordered* it. There we have command and power in their primary form. The man who worked most with his hands could not think so much about what he was doing, or reflect on or command what would result from the common activity; while the man who commanded more would evidently work less with his hands on account of his greater verbal activity.

When some larger concourse of men direct their activity to a common aim there is a yet sharper division of those who, because their activity is given to directing and commanding, take less part in the direct work.

When a man works alone he always has a certain set of reflections which as it seems to him directed his past activity, justify his present activity, and guide him in planning his future actions. Just the same is done by a concourse of people, allowing those who do not take a direct part in the activity to devise considerations, justifications, and surmises concerning their collective activity.

For reasons known or unknown to us, the French began to drown and kill one another. And corresponding to the event its justification appears in people's belief that this was necessary for the welfare of France, for liberty, and for equality. People ceased to kill one another, and this event was accompanied by its justification for the necessity for a centralization of power, resistance to Europe, and so on. Men went from the west to the east killing their fellow men, and the event was accompanied by phrases about the glory of France, the baseness of England, and so on. History shows us that these justifications of the events have no common sense and are all contradictory, as in the case of killing a man as the result of recognizing his rights, and the killing of millions in Russia for the humiliation of England. But these justifications have a very necessary significance in their own day.

These justifications release those who produce the events from moral responsibility. These temporary aims are like the broom fixed in front of a locomotive to clear the snow from the rails in front: they clear men's moral responsibilities from their path.

Without such justification, there would be no reply to the simplest question that presents itself when examining each historical event. How is it that millions of men commit collective crimes—make war, commit murder, and so on?

With the present complex forms of political and social life in Europe can any event that is not prescribed, decreed, or ordered by monarchs, ministers, parliaments, or newspapers be imagined? Is there any collective action that cannot find its justification in political unity, in patriotism, in the balance of power, or in civilization? So that every event that occurs inevitably coincides with some expressed wish and, receiving a justification, presents itself as the result of the will of one man or of several men.

In whatever direction a ship moves, the flow of the waves it cuts will always be noticeable ahead of it. To those on board the ship, the movement of those waves will be the only perceptible motion.

Only by watching closely moment by moment the movement of that flow and comparing it with the movement of the ship do we convince ourselves that every bit of it is occasioned by the forward movement of the ship, and that we were led into error by the fact that we ourselves were imperceptibly moving.

We see the same if we watch moment by moment the movement of historical characters (that is, re-establish the inevitable condition of all that occurs—the continuity of movement in time) and do not lose sight of the essential connection of historical persons with the masses.

When the ship moves in one direction there is one and the same wave ahead of it, when it turns frequently the wave ahead of it also turns

frequently. But wherever it may turn there always will be the wave anticipating its movement.

Whatever happens, it always appears that just that event was foreseen and decreed. Wherever the ship may go, the rush of water which neither directs nor increases its movement foams ahead of it, and at a distance seems to us not merely to move of itself but to govern the ship's movement also.

Examining only those expressions of the will of historical persons which, as commands, were related to events, historians have assumed that the events depended on those commands. But examining the events themselves and the connection in which the historical persons stood to the people, we have found that they and their orders were dependent on events. The incontestable proof of this deduction is that however many commands were issued, the event does not take place unless there are other causes for it, but as soon as an event occurs—be it what it may—then out of all the continually expressed wishes of different people, some will always be found which by their meaning and their time of utterance are related as commands to the events.

Arriving at this conclusion we can reply directly and positively to these two essential questions of history:

(1) What is power?

(2) What force produces the movement of the nations?

(1) Power is the relation of a given person to other individuals, in which the more this person expresses opinions, predictions, and justifications of the collective action that is performed, the less his participation in that action.

(2) The movement of nations is caused not by power, nor by intellectual activity, nor even by a combination of the two as historians have supposed, but by the activity of *all* the people who participate in the events, and who

always combine in such a way that those taking the largest direct share in the event take on themselves the least responsibility and vice versa.

Morally the wielder of power appears to cause the event; physically it is those who submit to the power. But as the moral activity is inconceivable without the physical, the cause of the event is neither in the one nor in the other but in the union of the two.

Or in other words, the conception of a cause is inapplicable to the phenomena we are examining.

In the last analysis, we reach the circle of infinity—that final limit to which in every domain of thought man's reason arrives if it is not playing with the subject. Electricity produces heat, heat produces electricity. Atoms attract each other and atoms repel one another.

Speaking of the interaction of heat and electricity and of atoms, we cannot say why this occurs, and we say that it is so because it is inconceivable otherwise, because it must be so and that it is a law. The same applies to historical events. Why war and revolution occur we do not know. We only know that to produce the one or the other action, people combine in a certain formation in which they all take part, and we say that this is so because it is unthinkable otherwise, or in other words that it is a law.

If history dealt only with external phenomena, the establishment of this simple and obvious law would suffice and we should have finished our argument. But the law of history relates to man. A particle of matter cannot tell us that it does not feel the law of attraction or repulsion and that that law is untrue, but man, who is the subject of history, says plainly: I am free and am therefore not subject to the law.

The presence of the problem of man's free will, though unexpressed, is felt at every step of history.

All seriously thinking historians have involuntarily encountered this question. All the contradictions and obscurities of history and the false path

historical science has followed are due solely to the lack of a solution to that question.

If the will of every man were free, that is, if each man could act as he pleased, all history would be a series of disconnected incidents.

If in a thousand years even one man in a million could act freely, that is, as he chose, it is evident that one single free act of that man's in violation of the laws governing human action would destroy the possibility of the existence of any laws for the whole of humanity.

If there is a single law governing the actions of men, free will cannot exist, for then man's will is subject to that law.

In this contradiction lies the problem of free will, which from most ancient times has occupied the best human minds and from most ancient times has been presented in its whole tremendous significance.

The problem is that regarding man as a subject of observation from whatever point of view—theological, historical, ethical, or philosophic—we find a general law of necessity to which he (like all that exists) is subject. But regarding him from within ourselves as what we are conscious of, we feel ourselves to be free.

This consciousness is a source of self-cognition quite apart from and independent of reason. Through his reason man observes himself, but only through consciousness does he know himself.

Apart from a consciousness of self, no observation or application of reason is conceivable.

To understand, observe, and draw conclusions, man must, first of all, be conscious of himself as living. A man is only conscious of himself as a living being by the fact that he wills, that is, is conscious of his volition. But his will—which forms the essence of his life—man recognizes (and can but recognize) as free.

If observing himself, man sees that his will is always directed by one and the same law (whether he observes the necessity of taking food, using

his brain, or anything else) he cannot recognize this never-varying direction of his will otherwise than as a limitation of it. Were it not free it could not be limited. A man's will seems to him to be limited just because he is not conscious of it except as free.

You say: I am not free. But I have lifted my hand and let it fall. Everyone understands that this illogical reply is an irrefutable demonstration of freedom.

That reply is the expression of a consciousness that is not subject to reason.

If the consciousness of freedom were not a separate and independent source of self-consciousness it would be subject to reasoning and to experience, but in fact, such subjection does not exist and is inconceivable.

A series of experiments and arguments proves to every man that he, as an object of observation, is subject to certain laws, and man submits to them and never resists the laws of gravity or impermeability once he has become acquainted with them. But the same series of experiments and arguments proves to him that the complete freedom of which he is conscious in himself is impossible, and that his every action depends on his organization, his character, and the motives acting upon him; yet man never submits to the deductions of these experiments and arguments. Having learned from experiments and arguments that a stone falls downwards, a man indubitably believes this and always expects the law that he has learned to be fulfilled.

But learning just as certainly that his will is subject to laws, he does not and cannot believe this.

However often experiment and reasoning may show a man that under the same conditions and with the same character he will do the same thing as before, yet when under the same conditions and with the same character he approaches for the thousandth time the action that always ends in the same way, he feels as certainly convinced as before the experiment that he can act as he pleases. Every man, savage or sage, however incontestably

reason and experiment may prove to him that it is impossible to imagine two different courses of action in precisely the same conditions, feels that without this irrational conception (which constitutes the essence of freedom) he cannot imagine life. He feels that however impossible it may be, it is so, for without this conception of freedom not only would he be unable to understand life, but he would be unable to live for a single moment.

He could not live, because all man's efforts, all his impulses to life, are only efforts to increase freedom. Wealth and poverty, fame and obscurity, power and subordination, strength and weakness, health and disease, culture and ignorance, work and leisure, repletion and hunger, virtue and vice, are only greater or lesser degrees of freedom.

A man having no freedom cannot be conceived of except as deprived of life.

If the conception of freedom appears to reason to be a senseless contradiction like the possibility of performing two actions at one and the same instant of time, or of an effect without a cause, that only proves that consciousness is not subject to reason.

This unshakable, irrefutable consciousness of freedom, uncontrolled by experiment or argument, recognized by all thinkers and felt by everyone without exception, this consciousness without which no conception of man is possible constitutes the other side of the question.

Man is the creation of an all-powerful, all-good, and all-seeing God. What is sin, the conception of which arises from the consciousness of man's freedom? That is a question for theology.

The actions of men are subject to general immutable laws expressed in statistics. What is man's responsibility to society, the conception of which results from the conception of freedom? That is a question for jurisprudence.

Man's actions proceed from his innate character and the motives acting upon him. What is conscience and the perception of right and wrong in actions that follows from the consciousness of freedom? That is a question of ethics.

Man in connection with the general life of humanity appears subject to laws that determine that life. But the same man apart from that connection appears to be free. How should the past life of nations and of humanity be regarded—as the result of the free, or as the result of the constrained, activity of man? That is a question for history.

Only in our self-confident day of the popularization of knowledge—thanks to that most powerful engine of ignorance, the diffusion of printed matter—has the question of the freedom of will been put on a level on which the question itself cannot exist. In our time the majority of so-called advanced people—that is, the crowd of ignoramuses—have taken the work of the naturalists who deal with one side of the question for a solution to the whole problem.

They say and write and print that the soul and freedom do not exist, for the life of man is expressed by muscular movements, and muscular movements are conditioned by the activity of the nerves; the soul and free will do not exist because at an unknown period of time we sprang from the apes. They say this, not at all suspecting that thousands of years ago that same law of necessity which with such ardor they are now trying to prove by physiology and comparative zoology was not merely acknowledged by all the religions and all the thinkers, but has never been denied. They do not see that the role of the natural sciences in this matter is merely to serve as an instrument for the illumination of one side of it. For the fact that, from the point of view of observation, reason and the will are merely secretions of the brain, and that man following the general law may have developed from lower animals at some unknown period of time, only explains from a fresh side the truth admitted thousands of years ago by all the religious and

philosophic theories—that from the point of view of reason man is subject to the law of necessity; but it does not advance by a hair's breadth the solution of the question, which has another, opposite, side, based on the consciousness of freedom.

If men descended from the apes at an unknown period of time, that is as comprehensible as that they were made from a handful of earth at a certain period of time (in the first case the unknown quantity is the time, in the second case it is the origin); and the question of how man's consciousness of freedom is to be reconciled with the law of necessity to which he is subject cannot be solved by comparative physiology and zoology, for in a frog, a rabbit, or an ape, we can observe only the muscular nervous activity, but in man, we observe consciousness as well as the muscular and nervous activity.

The naturalists and their followers, thinking they can solve this question, are like plasterers set to plaster one side of the walls of a church who, availing themselves of the absence of the chief superintendent of the work, should in an access of zeal plaster over the windows, icons, woodwork, and still unbuttressed walls, and should be delighted that from their point of view as plasterers, everything is now so smooth and regular.

For the solution of the question of free will or inevitability, history has this advantage over other branches of knowledge in which the question is dealt with, that for history this question does not refer to the essence of man's free will but its manifestation in the past and under certain conditions.

In regard to this question, history stands to the other sciences as experimental science stands to abstract science.

The subject of history is not man's will itself but our presentation of it.

And so for history, the insoluble mystery presented by the incompatibility of free will and inevitability does not exist as it does for

theology, ethics, and philosophy. History surveys a presentation of man's life in which the union of these two contradictions has already taken place.

In actual life, each historic event, each human action, is very clearly and definitely understood without any sense of contradiction, although each event presents itself as partly free and partly compulsory.

To solve the question of how freedom and necessity are combined and what constitutes the essence of these two conceptions, the philosophy of history can and should follow a path contrary to that taken by other sciences. Instead of first defining the conceptions of freedom and inevitability in themselves, and then ranging the phenomena of life under those definitions, history should deduce a definition of the conception of freedom and inevitability themselves from the immense quantity of phenomena of which it is cognizant and that always appear dependent on these two elements.

Whatever presentation of the activity of many men or of an individual we may consider, we always regard it as the result partly of man's free will and partly of the law of inevitability.

Whether we speak of the migration of the peoples and the incursions of the barbarians, or of the decrees of Napoleon's nephew, Napoleon III, or of someone's action an hour ago in choosing one direction out of several for his walk, we are unconscious of any contradiction. The degree of freedom and inevitability governing the actions of these people is clearly defined for us.

Our conception of the degree of freedom often varies according to differences in the point of view from which we regard the event, but every human action appears to us as a certain combination of freedom and inevitability. In every action we examine we see a certain measure of freedom and a certain measure of inevitability. And always the more freedom we see in any action the less inevitability do we perceive, and the more inevitability the less freedom.

The proportion of freedom to inevitability decreases and increases according to the point of view from which the action is regarded, but their relation is always one of inverse proportion.

A sinking man who clutches at another and drowns him; or a hungry mother exhausted by feeding her baby, who steals some food; or a man trained to discipline who on duty at the word of command kills a defenseless man—seem less guilty, that is, less free and more subject to the law of necessity, to one who knows the circumstances in which these people were placed, and more free to one who does not know that the man was himself drowning, that the mother was hungry, that the soldier was in the ranks, and so on. Similarly, a man who committed a murder twenty years ago and has since lived peaceably and harmlessly in society seems less guilty and his action more due to the law of inevitability, to someone who considers his action after twenty years have elapsed than to one who examined it the day after it was committed. And in the same way, every action of an insane, intoxicated, or highly excited man appears less free and more inevitable to one who knows the mental condition of him who committed the action, and seems more free and less inevitable to one who does not know it. In all these cases the conception of freedom is increased or diminished and the conception of compulsion is correspondingly decreased or increased, according to the point of view from which the action is regarded. So that the greater the conception of necessity the smaller the conception of freedom and vice versa.

Religion, the common sense of mankind, the science of jurisprudence, and history itself understand alike this relation between necessity and freedom.

All cases without exception in which our conception of freedom and necessity is increased and diminished depend on three considerations:

- (1) The relation to the external world of the man who commits the deeds.

(2) His relation to time.

(3) His relation to the causes leading to the action.

The first consideration is the clearness of our perception of man's relation to the external world and the greater or lesser clearness of our understanding of the definite position occupied by man in relation to everything coexisting with him. This is what makes it evident that a drowning man is less free and more subject to necessity than one standing on dry ground, and that makes the actions of a man closely connected with others in a thickly populated district, or of one bound by family, official, or business duties, seem certainly less free and more subject to necessity than those of a man living in solitude and seclusion.

If we consider a man alone, apart from his relation to everything around him, each action of his seems to us free. But if we see his relation to anything around him, if we see his connection with anything whatever—with a man who speaks to him, a book he reads, the work on which he is engaged, even with the air he breathes or the light that falls on the things about him—we see that each of these circumstances has an influence on him and controls at least some side of his activity. And the more we perceive these influences the more our conception of his freedom diminishes and the more our conception of the necessity that weighs on him increases.

The second consideration is the more or less evident time relation of the man to the world and the clearness of our perception of the place the man's action occupies in time. That is the ground that makes the fall of the first man, resulting in the production of the human race, appear evidently less free than a man's entry into marriage today. It is the reason why the life and activity of people who lived centuries ago and are connected with me in time cannot seem to me as free as the life of a contemporary, the consequences of which are still unknown to me.

The degree of our conception of freedom or inevitability depends in this respect on the greater or lesser lapse of time between the performance of the action and our judgment of it.

If I examine an act I performed a moment ago in approximately the same circumstances as those I am in now, my action appears to me undoubtedly free. But if I examine an act performed a month ago, then being in different circumstances, I cannot help recognizing that if that act had not been committed much that resulted from it—good, agreeable, and even essential—would not have taken place. If I reflect on an action still more remote, ten years ago or more, then the consequences of my action are still plainer to me and I find it hard to imagine what would have happened had that action not been performed. The farther I go back in memory, or what is the same thing the farther I go forward in my judgment, the more doubtful becomes my belief in the freedom of my action.

In history, we find a very similar progress of conviction concerning the part played by free will in the general affairs of humanity. A contemporary event seems to us to be indubitably the doing of all the known participants, but with a more remote event, we already see its inevitable results which prevent our considering anything else possible. And the farther we go back in examining events the less arbitrary they appear.

The Austro-Prussian war appears to us undoubtedly the result of the crafty conduct of Bismarck, and so on. The Napoleonic wars still seem to us, though already questionably, to be the outcome of their heroes' will. But in the Crusades, we already see an event occupying its definite place in history and without which we cannot imagine the modern history of Europe, though to the chroniclers of the Crusades that event appeared as merely due to the will of certain people. In regard to the migration of the peoples, it does not enter anyone's head today to suppose that the renovation of the European world depended on Attila's caprice. The farther back in history the object of our observation lies, the more doubtful does

the free will of those concerned in the event become and the more manifest the law of inevitability.

The third consideration is the degree to which we apprehend that endless chain of causation inevitably demanded by reason, in which each phenomenon comprehended, and therefore man's every action, must have its definite place as a result of what has gone before and as a cause of what will follow.

The better we are acquainted with the physiological, psychological, and historical laws deduced by observation and by which man is controlled, and the more correctly we perceive the physiological, psychological, and historical causes of the action, and the simpler the action we are observing and the less complex the character and mind of the man in question, the more subject to inevitability and the less free do our actions and those of others appear.

When we do not at all understand the cause of an action, whether a crime, a good action, or even one that is simply nonmoral, we ascribe a greater amount of freedom to it. In the case of a crime we most urgently demand the punishment for such an act; in the case of a virtuous act, we rate its merit most highly. In an indifferent case, we recognize in it more individuality, originality, and independence. But if even one of the innumerable causes of the act is known to us we recognize a certain element of necessity and are less insistent on punishment for the crime, or the acknowledgment of the merit of the virtuous act, or the freedom of the apparently original action. That a criminal was reared among malefactors mitigates his fault in our eyes. The self-sacrifice of a father or mother, or self-sacrifice with the possibility of a reward, is more comprehensible than gratuitous self-sacrifice, and therefore seems less deserving of sympathy and less the result of free will. The founder of a sect or party, or an inventor, impresses us less when we know how or by what the way was prepared for his activity. If we have a large range of examples, if our observation is

constantly directed to seeking the correlation of cause and effect in people's actions, their actions appear to us more under compulsion and less free the more correctly we connect the effects with the causes. If we examined simple actions and had a vast number of such actions under observation, our conception of their inevitability would be still greater. The dishonest conduct of the son of a dishonest father, the misconduct of a woman who had fallen into bad company, a drunkard's relapse into drunkenness, and so on are actions that seem to us less free the better we understand their cause. If the man whose actions we are considering is on a very low stage of mental development, like a child, a madman, or a simpleton—then, knowing the causes of the act and the simplicity of the character and intelligence in question, we see so large an element of necessity and so little free will that as soon as we know the cause prompting the action we can foretell the result.

On these three considerations alone is based the conception of irresponsibility for crimes and the extenuating circumstances admitted by all legislative codes. The responsibility appears greater or less according to our greater or lesser knowledge of the circumstances in which the man was placed whose action is being judged, and according to the greater or lesser interval of time between the commission of the action and its investigation, and according to the greater or lesser understanding of the causes that led to the action.

Thus our conception of free will and inevitability gradually diminishes or increases according to the greater or lesser connection with the external world, the greater or lesser remoteness of time, and the greater or lesser dependence on the causes in relation to which we contemplate a man's life.

So that if we examine the case of a man whose connection with the external world is well known, where the time between the action and its examination is great, and where the causes of the action are most accessible, we get the conception of a maximum of inevitability and a

minimum of free will. If we examine a man little dependent on external conditions, whose action was performed very recently, and the causes of whose action are beyond our ken, we get the conception of a minimum of inevitability and a maximum of freedom.

In neither case—however we may change our point of view, however plain we may make to ourselves the connection between the man and the external world, however inaccessible it may be to us, however long or short the period of time, however intelligible or incomprehensible the causes of the action may be—can we ever conceive either complete freedom or complete necessity.

(1) To whatever degree we may imagine a man to be exempt from the influence of the external world, we never get a conception of freedom in space. Every human action is inevitably conditioned by what surrounds him and by his own body. I lift my arm and let it fall. My action seems to me free; but asking myself whether I could raise my arm in every direction, I see that I raised it in the direction in which there was the least obstruction to that action either from things around me or from the construction of my own body. I chose one out of all the possible directions because in it there were the fewest obstacles. For my action to be free it was necessary that it should encounter no obstacles. To conceive of a man being free we must imagine him outside space, which is evidently impossible.

(2) However much we approximate the time of judgment to the time of the deed, we never get a conception of freedom in time. For if I examine an action committed a second ago I must still recognize it as not being free, for it is irrevocably linked to the moment at which it was committed. Can I lift my arm? I lift it, but ask myself: could I have abstained from lifting my arm at the moment that has already passed? To convince myself of this I do not lift it the next moment. But I am not now abstaining from doing so at the first moment when I asked the question. Time has gone by which I could not detain, the arm I then lifted is no longer the same as the arm I now

refrain from lifting, nor is the air in which I lifted it the same that now surrounds me. The moment in which the first movement was made is irrevocable, and at that moment I could make only one movement, and whatever movement I made would be the only one. That I did not lift my arm a moment later does not prove that I could have abstained from lifting it then. And since I could make only one movement at that single moment in time, it could not have been any other. To imagine it as free, it is necessary to imagine it in the present, on the boundary between the past and the future—that is, outside time, which is impossible.

(3) However much the difficulty of understanding the causes may be increased, we never reach a conception of complete freedom, that is, an absence of cause. However inaccessible to us may be the cause of the expression of will in any action, our own or another's, the first demand of reason is the assumption of and search for a cause, for without a cause no phenomenon is conceivable. I raise my arm to perform an action independently of any cause, but my wish to perform an action without a cause is the cause of my action.

But even if—imagining a man quite exempt from all influences, examining only his momentary action in the present, not evoked by any cause—we were to admit so infinitely small a remainder of inevitability as equaled zero, we should even then not have arrived at the conception of complete freedom in man, for a being uninfluenced by the external world, standing outside of time and independent of cause, is no longer a man.

In the same way, we can never imagine the action of a man quite devoid of freedom and entirely subject to the law of inevitability.

(1) However we may increase our knowledge of the conditions of space in which man is situated, that knowledge can never be complete, for the number of those conditions is as infinite as the infinity of space. And therefore so long as not *all* the conditions influencing men are defined, there is no complete inevitability but a certain measure of freedom remains.

(2) However we may prolong the period of time between the action we are examining and the judgment upon it, that period will be finite, while time is infinite, and so in this respect too there can never be absolute inevitability.

(3) However accessible may be the chain of causation of any action, we shall never know the whole chain since it is endless, and so again we never reach absolute inevitability.

But besides this, even if, admitting the remaining minimum of freedom to equal zero, we assumed in some given case—as for instance in that of a dying man, an unborn babe, or an idiot—complete absence of freedom, by so doing we should destroy the very conception of man in the case we are examining, for as soon as there is no freedom there is also no man. And so the conception of the action of a man subject solely to the law of inevitability without any element of freedom is just as impossible as the conception of a man's completely free action.

And so to imagine the action of a man entirely subject to the law of inevitability without any freedom, we must assume the knowledge of an *infinite* number of space relations, an *infinitely* long period of time, and an *infinite* series of causes.

To imagine a man perfectly free and not subject to the law of inevitability, we must imagine him all alone, *beyond space, beyond time, and free from dependence on cause.*

In the first case, if inevitability were possible without freedom we should have reached a definition of inevitability by the laws of inevitability itself, that is, a mere form without content.

In the second case, if freedom were possible without inevitability we should have arrived at unconditioned freedom beyond space, time, and cause, which by the fact of its being unconditioned and unlimited would be nothing, or mere content without form.

We should in fact have reached those two fundamentals of which man's whole outlook on the universe is constructed—the incomprehensible essence of life, and the laws defining that essence.

Reason says: (1) space with all the forms of matter that give it visibility is infinite, and cannot be imagined otherwise. (2) Time is infinite motion without a moment of rest and is unthinkable otherwise. (3) The connection between cause and effect has no beginning and can have no end.

Consciousness says: (1) I alone am, and all that exists is but me, consequently I include space. (2) I measure flowing time by the fixed moment of the present in which alone I am conscious of myself as living, consequently, I am outside time. (3) I am beyond cause, for I feel myself to be the cause of every manifestation of my life.

Reason gives expression to the laws of inevitability. Consciousness gives expression to the essence of freedom.

Freedom not limited by anything is the essence of life, in man's consciousness. Inevitability without content is man's reason in its three forms.

Freedom is the thing examined. Inevitability is what examines. Freedom is the content. Inevitability is the form.

Only by separating the two sources of cognition, related to one another as form to content, do we get the mutually exclusive and separately incomprehensible conceptions of freedom and inevitability.

Only by uniting them do we get a clear conception of man's life.

Apart from these two concepts which in their union mutually define one another as form and content, no conception of life is possible.

All that we know of the life of man is merely a certain relation of free will to inevitability, that is, of consciousness to the laws of reason.

All that we know of the external world of nature is only a certain relation of the forces of nature to inevitability, or of the essence of life to the laws of reason.

The great natural forces lie outside us and we are not conscious of them; we call those forces gravitation, inertia, electricity, animal force, and so on, but we are conscious of the force of life in man and we call that freedom.

But just as the force of gravitation, incomprehensible in itself but felt by every man, is understood by us only to the extent to which we know the laws of inevitability to which it is subject (from the first knowledge that all bodies have weight, up to Newton's law), so too the force of free will, incomprehensible in itself but of which everyone is conscious, is intelligible to us only in as far as we know the laws of inevitability to which it is subject (from the fact that every man dies, up to the knowledge of the most complex economic and historic laws).

All knowledge is merely a bringing of this essence of life under the laws of reason.

Man's free will differs from every other force in that man is directly conscious of it, but in the eyes of reason it in no way differs from any other force. The forces of gravitation, electricity, or chemical affinity are only distinguished from one another in that they are differently defined by reason. Just so the force of man's free will is distinguished by reason from the other forces of nature only by the definition reason gives it. Freedom, apart from necessity, that is, apart from the laws of reason that define it, differs in no way from gravitation, or heat, or the force that makes things grow; for reason, it is only a momentary undefinable sensation of life.

And as the undefinable essence of the force moving the heavenly bodies, the undefinable essence of the forces of heat and electricity, or of chemical affinity, or of the vital force, forms the content of astronomy, physics, chemistry, botany, zoology, and so on, just in the same way does the force of free will form the content of history. But just as the subject of every science is the manifestation of this unknown essence of life while that essence itself can only be the subject of metaphysics, even the manifestation of the force of free will in human beings in space, in time,

and in dependence on cause forms the subject of history, while free will itself is the subject of metaphysics.

In the experimental sciences what we know we call the laws of inevitability, what is unknown to us we call vital force. Vital force is only an expression of the unknown remainder over and above what we know of the essence of life.

So also in history what is known to us we call laws of inevitability, what is unknown we call free will. Free will is for history only an expression for the unknown remainder of what we know about the laws of human life.

History examines the manifestations of man's free will in connection with the external world in time and in dependence on cause, that is, it defines this freedom by the laws of reason, and so history is a science only in so far as this free will is defined by those laws.

The recognition of man's free will as something capable of influencing historical events, that is, as not subject to laws, is the same for history as the recognition of a free force moving the heavenly bodies would be for astronomy.

That assumption would destroy the possibility of the existence of laws, that is, of any science whatever. If there is even a single body moving freely, then the laws of Kepler and Newton are negated and no conception of the movement of the heavenly bodies any longer exists. If any single action is due to free will, then not a single historical law can exist, nor any conception of historical events.

For history, lines exist of the movement of human wills, one end of which is hidden in the unknown but at the other end of which a consciousness of man's will in the present moves in space, time, and dependence on cause.

The more this field of motion spreads out before our eyes, the more evident are the laws of that movement. To discover and define those laws is the problem of history.

From the standpoint from which the science of history now regards its subject on the path it now follows, seeking the causes of events in man's free will, a scientific enunciation of those laws is impossible, for however man's free will may be restricted, as soon as we recognize it as a force not subject to law, the existence of law becomes impossible.

Only by reducing this element of free will to the infinitesimal, that is, by regarding it as an infinitely small quantity, can we convince ourselves of the absolute inaccessibility of the causes, and then instead of seeking causes, history will take the discovery of laws as its problem.

The search for these laws has long begun and the new methods of thought that history must adopt are being worked out simultaneously with the self-destruction toward whichever dissecting and dissecting the causes of phenomena—the old method of history is moving.

All human sciences have traveled along that path. Arriving at infinitesimals, mathematics, the most exact of sciences, abandons the process of analysis and enters on the new process of the integration of unknown, infinitely small, quantities. Abandoning the conception of cause, mathematics seeks law, that is, the property common to all unknown, infinitely small, elements.

In another form but along the same path of reflection the other sciences have proceeded. When Newton enunciated the law of gravity he did not say that the sun or the earth had a property of attraction; he said that all bodies from the largest to the smallest have the property of attracting one another, that is, leaving aside the question of the cause of the movement of the bodies, he expressed the property common to all bodies from the infinitely large to the infinitely small. The same is done by the natural sciences: leaving aside the question of cause, they seek laws. History stands on the same path. And if history has for its object the study of the movement of the nations and of humanity and not the narration of episodes in the lives of individuals, it too, setting aside the conception of cause, should seek the

laws common to all the inseparably interconnected infinitesimal elements of free will.

From the time the law of Copernicus was discovered and proved, the mere recognition of the fact that it was not the sun but the earth that moves sufficed to destroy the whole cosmography of the ancients. By disproving that law it might have been possible to retain the old conception of the movements of the bodies, but without disproving it, it would seem impossible to continue studying the Ptolemaic worlds. But even after the discovery of the law of Copernicus the Ptolemaic worlds were still studied for a long time.

From the time the first person said and proved that the number of births or of crimes is subject to mathematical laws, and that this or that mode of government is determined by certain geographical and economic conditions, and that certain relations of the population to soil produce migrations of peoples, the foundations on which history had been built were destroyed in their essence.

By refuting these new laws the former view of history might have been retained, but without refuting them it would seem impossible to continue studying historic events as the results of man's free will. For if a certain mode of government was established or certain migrations of peoples took place in consequence of such and such geographic, ethnographic, or economic conditions, then the free will of those individuals who appear to us to have established that mode of government or occasioned the migrations can no longer be regarded as the cause.

And yet the former history continues to be studied side by side with the laws of statistics, geography, political economy, comparative philology, and geology, which directly contradict its assumptions.

The struggle between the old views and the new was long and stubbornly fought out in physical philosophy. Theology stood on guard for

the old views and accused the new of violating revelation. But when truth conquered, theology established itself just as firmly on the new foundation.

Just as prolonged and stubborn is the struggle now proceeding between the old and the new conception of history, and theology in the same way stands on guard for the old view and accuses the new view of subverting revelation.

In the one case as in the other, on both sides the struggle provokes passion and stifles truth. On the one hand, there is fear and regret for the loss of the whole edifice constructed through the ages, on the other is the passion for destruction.

To the men who fought against the rising truths of physical philosophy, it seemed that if they admitted that truth it would destroy faith in God, in the creation of the firmament, and in the miracle of Joshua the son of Nun. To the defenders of the laws of Copernicus and Newton, to Voltaire for example, it seemed that the laws of astronomy destroyed religion, and he utilized the law of gravitation as a weapon against religion.

Just so it now seems as if we have only to admit the law of inevitability, to destroy the conception of the soul, of good and evil, and all the institutions of state and church that have been built up on those conceptions.

So too, like Voltaire in his time, uninvited defenders of the law of inevitability today use that law as a weapon against religion, though the law of inevitability in history, like the law of Copernicus in astronomy, far from destroying, even strengthens the foundation on which the institutions of state and church are erected.

As in the question of astronomy then, so in the question of history now, the whole difference of opinion is based on the recognition or nonrecognition of something absolute, serving as the measure of visible phenomena. In astronomy it was the immovability of the earth, in history it is the independence of free will.

As with astronomy, the difficulty of recognizing the motion of the earth lay in abandoning the immediate sensation of the earth's fixity and of the motion of the planets, so in history, the difficulty of recognizing the subjection of personality to the laws of space, time, and cause lies in renouncing the direct feeling of the independence of one's own personality. But as in astronomy, the new view said: "It is true that we do not feel the movement of the earth, but by admitting its immobility we arrive at absurdity, while by admitting its motion (which we do not feel) we arrive at laws," so also in history the new view says: "It is true that we are not conscious of our dependence, but by admitting our free will we arrive at absurdity, while by admitting our dependence on the external world, on time, and on cause, we arrive at laws."

In the first case, it was necessary to renounce the consciousness of an unreal immobility in space and to recognize a motion we did not feel; in the present case, it is similarly necessary to renounce a freedom that does not exist and to recognize a dependence of which we are not conscious.